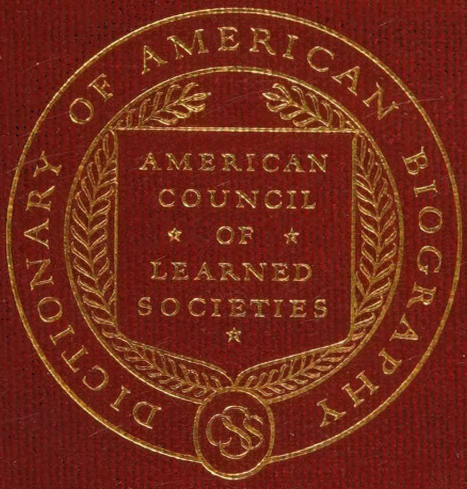
DICTIONARY OF AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY
AMERICAN
COUNCIL
OF
LEARNED
SOCIETIES

BABSON INSTITUTE,

WELLESLEY HILLS, MASS.

BABSON COLLEGE
LIBRARY

BABSON PARK, MASSACHUSETTS

BABSON INSTITUTE,
WELLESLEY HILLS, MASS.
2.92
V.1
Diction

DICTIONARY OF AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/dictionaryofamer0001alle_q7o2

Ref.
E
176
D56
Vol. 1

DICTIONARY OF AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

UNDER THE AUSPICES OF THE
AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

EDITED BY
ALLEN JOHNSON

Abbe — Barrymore

VOLUME I

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
NEW YORK
1928

Prompted solely by a desire for public service the New York Times Company and its President, Mr. Adolph S. Ochs, have made possible the preparation of the manuscript of the Dictionary of American Biography through a subvention of more than $500,000 and with the understanding that the entire responsibility for the contents of the volumes rests with the American Council of Learned Societies.

*R
Z920

COPYRIGHT, 1928, BY
AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

Printed in the United States of America

The Dictionary of American Biography is published under the auspices of the American Council of Learned Societies and under the direction of a Committee of Management which consists of J. Franklin Jameson, *Chairman*, John H. Finley, Allen Johnson, Frederic L. Paxson, Mrs. Arthur H. Sulzberger, Carl Van Doren, Charles Warren.

The editorial staff consists of Allen Johnson, Harris E. Starr, Ernest S. Bates, George H. Genzmer, H. W. Howard Knott.

The American Council of Learned Societies consists of the following societies:

American Philosophical Society
American Academy of Arts and Sciences
American Antiquarian Society
American Oriental Society
American Philological Association
Archaeological Institute of America
Modern Language Association of America
American Historical Association
American Economic Association
American Philosophical Association
American Political Science Association
American Sociological Society
Linguistic Society of America
History of Science Society
Mediaeval Academy of America

INTRODUCTION

THE lack of an authoritative dictionary of national biography has been often deplored by American scholars. Encyclopedias and dictionaries of biography abound, but none are comparable in either scope or scholarship to the British *Dictionary of National Biography* edited by Sir Leslie Stephen and Sir Sidney Lee. It was this need that moved the newly organized American Council of Learned Societies to appoint a committee in 1922 to consider such a project. This committee, consisting of Dr. J. Franklin Jameson, chairman, Professor John Erskine, Professor Thomas W. Page, Professor Frederic L. Paxson, Professor Frederick J. Turner, and Dr. Robert S. Woodward, formulated plans for a comprehensive Dictionary of American Biography, contingent upon the raising of adequate funds. It was estimated that at least half a million dollars would be required to cover the cost of preparing the manuscript. Various plans to defray this initial cost were considered, but were found impracticable.

The committee then laid the whole project before Mr. Adolph S. Ochs, controlling owner and publisher of the New York Times. Mr. Ochs at once appreciated its significance and agreed on behalf of the New York Times Company to supply the required five hundred thousand dollars. This volume, therefore, and those that are to follow, owe their existence to his public spirit and generosity. Upon his initiative the New York Times Company entered into an agreement with the Council whereby ten yearly payments were to be made for the preparation of the manuscript of the Dictionary. The direction of the undertaking was vested in a Committee of Management of seven members, four of whom were to be appointed by the Council, two by the New York Times Company, and the seventh, to be editor-in-chief, by the other six. In February 1926 editorial offices were opened in Washington.

The selection of names for a dictionary of biography offers greater difficulties in the United States than in European countries. The very term American is not free from ambiguities. To restrict the term to persons resident in the original colonies and to citizens of the United States by birth or naturalization, would exclude many individuals of foreign birth who have identified themselves with the country and contributed notably to its history. The Committee of Management decided against any such limitation. Three other restrictions, however, were adopted: first, that no living persons should have biographies in the Dictionary; second, that no persons who had not lived in the territory now known as the United States should be eligible; and third, that no British officers serving in America after the colonies had declared their independence should appear in the Dictionary.

Positive qualifications were less easily defined. In general, only those are included in the following pages who have made some significant contribution to American life in its manifold aspects. The Dictionary cannot find space for average or merely typical figures, however estimable they may be. The observation of Sir Sidney Lee is quite to the point: "Actions, however beneficent or honourable, which are accomplished or are capable of accomplishment by many thousands of persons are actions of mediocrity, and lack the dimension which justifies the biographer's notice. The fact that a man is a devoted husband and father, an efficient school-master, an exemplary parish priest, gives him in itself no claim to biographic commemoration."

Earlier collections of biographies stressed, naturally enough, the lives of soldiers, statesmen, and clergymen whose conspicuousness, aside from their services, made them objects of interest. Physical science, however, has increased immeasurably the importance of the engineer, the technician, and the chemist in modern warfare; the new social sciences have bred ministering and administrative agents who now share the cure of

souls; and even politicians now recognize the important rôle of the statistician and the economist in law-making. The modern age with its greater complexity and dependence upon new arts and sciences has brought into view less spectacular, and possibly less heroic, but certainly not less significant, figures. Within a half-century, industry, science, the fine arts, and literature have produced men and women whose special significance is not indicated by such traditional designations as merchant, naturalist, artist, and author. The currents of American life and expression have both widened and deepened.

A tentative list of names was first compiled from earlier works of reference, but it was deficient in the particulars just noted. A classification was then devised on the basis of occupations, trades, and professions, as likely under American conditions to bring to light significant figures in specialized fields of human endeavor. For each of these groups some authority was asked to supply a tentative list. Every such list was submitted to other specialists, or to groups of specialists, who dropped some names, added others, and attempted to make a rating of all. To avoid the possibility of names slipping through the meshes of this drag-net, necrologies of all sorts were carefully searched; and the proposed list of names in the first volume was printed and circulated three months before the volume was sent to the printers, in order to discover serious omissions.

Every effort has been made to secure fresh independent accounts of even well-known national figures and not mere compilations of preceding sketches. Contributors have been instructed to base their articles wherever possible upon original sources of information and to list their chief authorities in carefully considered bibliographies. They have been urged also not only to state but to appraise the circumstances and influences which shaped careers. So far as space and material permit, they have stressed such matters as ancestry, parentage, childhood experiences, educational advantages, physical and social environment. In the present chaotic condition of vital statistics in the United States, reliable information about the parentage and ancestry of lesser personages is often wanting; but wherever possible the names of parents and of husband, or wife, are given in each article. To insure accuracy in such details, a staff has been maintained at the Library of Congress to verify names, dates, and titles. To Dr. Herbert Putnam and his associates at the Library of Congress, contributors and editors alike have been under constant obligation for counsel and unremitting service. The American Antiquarian Society of Worcester, Massachusetts, through its Librarian, Mr. Clarence S. Brigham, has placed the resources of its library and its staff freely at the disposal of contributors to the Dictionary. Acknowledgment should be made, also, of the coöperation of many local historical societies and libraries, which have not only furnished detailed information at the cost of much time and effort, but have also directed contributors to unpublished manuscript sources. The Dictionary owes much to the generous interest of the publishers, who have desired to make it in form as well as substance a notable contribution to American scholarship and letters.

Finally, contributors have been urged not to rest content with a bare narrative of events, but so far as possible to leave the reader with a definite impression of the personality and achievements of the subject of each biographical sketch. At every point, however, limitations of space have necessitated terse, compact, direct statement, without rhetorical ornament. The length of an article has not been determined solely by the relative importance of the man, but also by the amount of available authentic material, by the nature of his career, and by the completeness of biographies already published. Quite apart from its usefulness as a general work of reference, the Dictionary should throw light upon the careers of men and women who, by the caprice of fortune, have been lost from view. A scarcely less important function is the re-interpretation of character and career made necessary by new sources of information and new points of view. So far as knowledge permits the Dictionary has endeavored to re-create and re-interpret the lives of the makers of American life and culture.

CONTRIBUTORS TO VOLUME I

Wilbur Cortez Abbott . . . W. C. A.
James Truslow Adams . . . J. T. A.
Randolph Greenfield Adams R. G. A—s.
Robert G. Albion . . . . . R. G. A—n.
Carroll Storrs Alden . . . C. S. A.
Edmund Kimball Alden . . . E. K. A.
Edward Ellis Allen . . . . E. E. A.
Horace Newton Allen . . . H. N. A.
William Henry Allison . . . W. H. A.
Dinsmore Alter . . . . . D. A.
Charles Henry Ambler . . . C. H. A.
Joseph Sweetman Ames . . . J. S. A.
John Clark Archer . . . . . J. C. A.
C. A. Bach . . . . . C. A. B.
Benjamin Wisner Bacon . . . B. W. B.
Theodore D. Bacon . . . . . T. D. B.
Ray Palmer Baker . . . . . R. P. Ba—r.
Hayes Baker-Crothers . . . H. B-C.
Charles Montague Bakewell
C. M. B.
Eugene Campbell Barker . . E. C. B.
Viola Florence Barnes . . . V. F. B.
Claribel Ruth Barnett . . . C. R. B.
Harry McWhirter Barrett . H. M. B.
John Spencer Bassett . . . . J. S. B.
Ernest Sutherland Bates . . E. S. B.
Louis Agricola Bauer . . . . L. A. B.
Arthur Grandville Beach . A. G. B.
Carl Lotus Becker . . . . . C. L. B.
Elbert Jay Benton . . . . . E. J. B.
Ralph Paul Bieber . . . . . R. P. Bi—r.
Frank Wilson Blackmar . . F. W. B.
Edwin Howland Blashfield . E. H. B.
Theodore C. Blegen . . . . T. C. B.
Roger S. Boardman . . . . . R. S. B.
Theodore Bolton . . . . . T. B.
Beverley W. Bond, Jr. . . . B. W. B—d.
Sarah G. Bowerman . . . . . S. G. B.
Charles N. Boyd . . . . . C. N. B.
William Kenneth Boyd . . . W. K. B.
Lilian Brandt . . . . . L. B.
Frederick Edward Brasch . F. E. B.
Edward Breck . . . . . E. B.
Howard Allen Bridgman . . H. A. B.
Albert Perry Brigham . . . A. P. B.
Clarence Saunders Brigham C. S. B.
Robert Preston Brooks . . R. P. B—s.
Roscoe Conkling Ensign Brown
R. C. E. B.
Philip Alexander Bruce . . P. A. B.
Solon Justus Buck . . . . . S. J. B.

James Aloysius Burns . . . J. A. B.
Walter Lincoln Burrage . . W. L. B.
Charles Henry Butler . . . C. H. B.
Robert C. Canby . . . . . R. C. C.
Clarence Edwin Carter . . C. E. C.
Hardee Chambliss . . . . . H. C.
Frank H. Chase . . . . . F. H. C.
Stanley P. Chase . . . . . S. P. C.
Francis Albert Christie . . F. A. C.
Hubert Lyman Clark . . . . H. L. C.
Robert Glass Cleland. . . . R. G. C.
Frederick W. Coburn . . . . F. W. C.
Charles F. Cochran . . . . C. F. C.
James Fairbanks Colby . . . J. F. C.
Fannie L. Gwinner Cole. . . F. L. G. C.
Ellis Merton Coulter . . . E. M. C.
Stanley Coulter . . . . . S. C.
Avery O. Craven . . . . . A. O. C.
Nelson Antrim Crawford . . N. A. C.
Laurence Murray Crosbie . L. M. C.
William James Cunningham . W. J. C.
Harrison Clifford Dale . . H. C. D.
Arthur Burr Darling . . . . A. B. D.
Herman J. Deutsch . . . . . H. J. D.
Fred H. Dewey . . . . . F. H. D.
Theodore Diller . . . . . T. D.
Charles Allen Dinsmore . . C. A. D—e.
Gilbert H. Doane . . . . . G. H. D.
Eleanor Robinette Dobson . E. R. D.
Raymond Smith Dugan . . . R. S. D.
Clyde Augustus Duniway . . C. A. D—y.
William Frederick Durand . W. F. D.
Harrison Griswold Dwight . H. G. D.
J. H. Easterby . . . . . J. H. E.
Edwin Francis Edgett . . . E. F. E.
Brother Edward . . . . . B. E.
Samuel Atkins Eliot . . . . S. A. E.
Charles R. Erdman, Jr. . . . C. R. E., Jr.
Lawrence Boyd Evans . . . . L. B. E.
Harold Underwood Faulkner
H. U. F.
John Alfred Faulkner . . . J. A. F.
Gustave Joseph Fiebeger . . G. J. F.
Mantle Fielding . . . . . M. F.
G. Clyde Fisher . . . . . G. C. F.
Walter Lynwood Fleming . W. L. F—g.
Alexander Clarence Flick . A. C. F.
Worthington Chauncey Ford
W. C. F.
Harold North Fowler. . . . H. N. F.
Douglas Southall Freeman . D. S. F.

Contributors to Volume I

William Little Frierson . . . W. L. F—n.
Claude Moore Fuess . . . . C. M. F.
Raymond Garfield Fuller . R. G. F.
John F. Fulton . . . . . J. F. F.
Francis Pendleton Gaines . F. P. G.
George H. Genzmer . . . . G. H. G.
W. J. Ghent . . . . . W. J. G.
Frank A. Golder . . . . . F. A. G.
Colin B. Goodykoontz . . . C. B. G.
Armistead Churchill Gordon, Jr. A. C. G., Jr.
Walter S. Grant . . . . . W. S. G.
Charles Graves . . . . . C. G.
Warren Grice. . . . . W. G.
George Gorham Groat. . . . G. G. G.
Byrne Hackett . . . . . B. H—t.
LeRoy R. Hafen. . . . . L. R. H.
Robert Hale . . . . . R. H.
Robert Edmond Ham. . . . . R. E. H.
J. G. de Roulhac Hamilton . J. G. de R. H.
Peter Joseph Hamilton . . . P. J. H.
Talbot F. Hamlin . . . . . T. F. H.
John Louis Haney . . . . . J. L. H.
Isaac S. Harrell . . . . . I. S. H.
Benjamin Harrow . . . . . B. H—w.
Louis C. Hatch . . . . . L. C. H.
George Henry Haynes. . . . G. H. H.
Marshall DeLancey Haywood M. DeL. H.
John Donald Hicks . . . . . J. D. H.
Frank L. Hise . . . . . F. L. H.
A. A. Hopkins . . . . . A. A. H.
Arthur Hornblow . . . . . A. H.
Walter Hough . . . . . W. H.
Leland Ossian Howard . . . L. O. H.
M. A. De Wolfe Howe . . . M. A. DeW. H.
William Jackson Humphreys . W. J. H.
Theodore Henley Jack . . . T. H. J.
Joseph Jackson . . . . . J. J.
Edward Hopkins Jenkins . . E. H. J.
Allen Johnson . . . . . A. J.
Edgar A. J. Johnson . . . . . E. A. J. J.
J. Wesley Johnston . . . . . J. W. J.
David Starr Jordan . . . . . D. S. J.
Jessie Knight Jordan . . . . J. K. J.
Hope Frances Kane . . . . . H. F. K.
Marie A. Kasten . . . . . M. A. K.
Herbert A. Kellar . . . . . H. A. K.
Louise Phelps Kellogg . . . L. P. K.
William Joseph Kerby . . . W. J. K.
Alfred Vincent Kidder . . . A. V. K.
Felix M. Kirsch. . . . . F. M. K.
Edgar Wallace Knight . . . E. W. K.
H. W. Howard Knott . . . . H. W. H. K.
Conrad H. Lanza . . . . . C. H. L—a.
Charles Lee Lewis . . . . . C. L. L.
Charles H. Lincoln . . . . C. H. L—n.
Charles Ramsdell Lingley . C. R. L.
L. Leland Locke . . . . . L. L. L.
Frederick William Loetscher F. W. L.
Henry Miller Lydenberg . . H. M. L.
Lee Sullivan McCollester . L. S. M.
Thomas Denton McCormick . T. D. M.
Roswell Cheney McCrea . . R. C. M.
P. B. McDonald . . . . . P. B. M.
Walter Martin McFarland . W. M. M.
John Hanson Thomas McPherson J. H. T. M.
William Harrison Mace . . . W. H. M.
Dumas Malone . . . . . D. M.
Mary E. Manchester . . . . M. E. M.
Louis Leopold Mann . . . . L. L. M.
Frederick Herman Martens . F. H. M.
Thomas L. Masson . . . . . T. L. M.
Frank Jewett Mather, Jr. . F. J. M.
Shailer Mathews . . . . . S. Ma—s.
David M. Matteson . . . . D. M. M.
Emil Mayer . . . . . E. M—r.
Lawrence Shaw Mayo . . . . L. S. M.
Stewart Means . . . . . S. Me—s.
George Perkins Merrill . . G. P. M.
Edwin Mims . . . . . E. M—s.
Broadus Mitchell . . . . . B. M.
Carl W. Mitman . . . . . C. W. M.
Robert E. Moody . . . . . R. E. M.
Charles Moore . . . . . C. M.
Samuel Eliot Morison . . . S. E. M.
William Alfred Morris . . . W. A. M.
Richard L. Morton . . . . . R. L. M.
Montrose J. Moses . . . . . M. J. M.
George Fulmer Mull . . . . G. F. M.
Paul H. Musser . . . . . P. H. M.
H. R. Mussey . . . . . H. R. M.
Edwin G. Nash . . . . . E. G. N.
J. H. Nelson . . . . . J. H. N.
Allan Nevins . . . . . A. N.
Jeannette P. Nichols . . . . J. P. N.
Charles Noble . . . . . C. N.
Henry Fairield Osborn . . H. F. O.
James Harvey Osborne . . . J. H. O.
Frank L. Owsley . . . . . F. L. O.
Francis Randolph Packard . F. R. P.
Victor Hugo Paltsits . . . . V. H. P.
Stanley M. Pargellis . . . . S. M. P.
William Belmont Parker . . W. B. P.
Fred Lewis Pattee . . . . . F. L. P—e.
Frederic Logan Paxson . . . F. L. P—n.
C. C. Pearson . . . . . C. C. P.
Theodore Calvin Pease . . . T. C. P.
Donald C. Peattie . . . . . D. C. P.
Frederick Torrel Persons . F. T. P.
A. Everett Peterson . . . . A. E. P.
James M. Phalen . . . . . J. M. P.
Henry Augustus Pilsbry . . H. A. P.
J. A. Pollard . . . . . J. A. P.

Contributors to Volume I

Julius W. Pratt . . . . . J. W. P.
Waldo Selden Pratt . . . . W. S. P.
Edward Preble . . . . . E. P.
Herbert Ingram Priestley . H. I. P.
Richard J. Purcell . . . . . R. J. P.
Milo Milton Quaife . . . . M. M. Q.
Arthur Hobson Quinn . . . A. H. Q.
Charles Henry Rammelkamp C. H. R.
Charles William Ramsdell . C. W. R.
P. Orman Ray . . . . . P. O. R.
Jesse Siddall Reeves . . . . J. S. R.
Charles Dudley Rhodes . . C. D. R.
Irving Berdine Richman . . I. B. R.
Franklin Lafayette Riley . F. L. R.
William Alexander Robinson W. A. R.
Lindsay Rogers . . . . . L. R.
George Rose, III . . . . . G. R.
Frank Edward Ross . . . . . F. E. R.
Henry Kalloch Rowe . . . H. K. R.
Robert R. Rowe. . . . . R. R. R.
Dunbar Rowland . . . . . D. R.
Dorothy Scarborough . . . D. S.
Joseph Schafer . . . . . J. S.
Montgomery Schuyler. . . . M. S.
Jonathan French Scott . . . J. F. S.
Frank Hayward Severance . F. H. S.
George Dudley Seymour. . . G. D. S.
William Bristol Shaw . . . W. B. S.
Arthur MacC. Shepard . . . A. MacC. S.
Richard H. Shryock . . . . . R. H. S.
Kenneth C. M. Sills. . . . . K. C. M. S.
William Adams Slade . . . . W. A. S.
Charles Forster Smith . . . C. F. S.
David Eugene Smith . . . . D. E. S.
Edgar Fahs Smith . . . . . E. F. S.
Gerald Birney Smith . . . . G. B. S.
Ralph C. Smith . . . . . R. C. S.
George Franklin Smythe . . G. F. S.
John Kimball Snyder . . . . J. K. S.
Sherrod Soule . . . . . S. S.
Charles L. Souvay . . . . . C. L. S.
James Alfred Spalding . . . J. A. S.
Thomas Marshall Spaulding T. M. S.
Mary Newton Stanard . . . M. N. S.
Harris Elwood Starr . . . . H. E. S.
Martha Tucker Stephenson M. T. S.
Nathaniel Wright Stephenson N. W. S.
William Oliver Stevens . . . W. O. S.
Witmer Stone . . . . . W. S.
William Seneca Sutton . . . W. S. S.
Eben Swift . . . . . E. S.
Edwin Platt Tanner . . . . E. P. T.
Frank A. Taylor . . . . . F. A. T.
John R. M. Taylor . . . . . J. R. M. T.
Herbert Thoms . . . . . H. T.
Charles Franklin Thwing . C. F. T.
Caroline Ticknor . . . . . C. T.
Wilbur Fisk Tillett. . . . . W. F. T.
Alfred Charles True . . . . A. C. T.
Roland Greene Usher . . . R. G. U.
Paul van Dyke . . . . . P. V–D.
Henry R. Viets . . . . . H. R. V.
Jonas Viles . . . . . J. V.
John Donald Wade . . . . . J. D. W.
Raymond Weaver . . . . . R. W.
Frank Weitenkampf . . . . F. W.
Allan Westcott . . . . . A. W.
George F. Whicher . . . . . G. F. W.
Charles Harris Whitaker . . C. H. W.
R. J. Wickenden . . . . . R. J. W.
E. V. Wilcox . . . . . E. V. W.
Harvey W. Wiley . . . . . H. W. W.
Stanley Thomas Williams . . S. T. W.
Samuel Williston . . . . . S. W.
James Southall Wilson . . . J. S. W.
Otto Wilson . . . . . O. W.
George Edward Woodbine . G. E. W.
Carter Godwin Woodson . . C. G. W.
Thomas Woody . . . . . T. W.
William Loring Worcester . W. L. W.
Herbert F. Wright . . . . . H. F. W.
John J. Wynne . . . . . J. J. W.
Edna Yost . . . . . E. Y.
Clarence Clark Zantzinger C. C. Z.
Andrew C. Zenos . . . . . A. C. Z.
Theodore A. Zunder . . . . T. A. Z.

DICTIONARY OF

AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

Abbe — Barrymore

ABBE, CLEVELAND (Dec. 3, 1838–Oct. 28, 1916), astronomer, meteorologist, was descended from John Abbe, an Englishman born in 1613, who settled in Salem, Mass., in 1635. The latter's descendants were rather numerous, especially in New England. Joshua Abbe of the fourth generation was a leader of a Baptist sect that became known as Abbeites. One of the seventh generation, George Waldo Abbe, also a Baptist and a merchant in New York City, married Charlotte Colgate. Their eldest son, Cleveland, was born in New York City and received his education there in private schools, in the David B. Scott Grammar School, and in the New York Free Academy, now the College of the City of New York, where he was granted the degree of B.A. in 1857 and M.A. in 1860. During 1857–58 he was tutor of mathematics in Trinity Latin School, New York. In 1859 he was assistant professor of engineering in the Michigan Agricultural College, and in 1859–60 tutor in engineering at the University of Michigan, where, under the influence of Prof. Brünnow, he became an enthusiastic student of astronomy. In 1861 he tried to join the army in response to Lincoln's first call for volunteers, but after a few weeks' test at a training-camp was rejected because of excessive myopia. He then assisted Dr. B. A. Gould of Cambridge, Mass., in work, 1861–64, on longitude determinations for the United States Coast Survey. The next two years, during which he was a guest or supernumerary astronomer at the Observatory of Pulkowa in Russia, were, he said, among the happiest of his life. Here he felt the scientific urge of the famous Otto Struve, the charm of a hospitable home, and the courage of intellectual companionship. In 1867 he returned to the United States and accepted the position of aid in the United States Naval Observatory. On Feb. 1, 1868, he became director of the Cincinnati Observatory, Cincinnati, Ohio, and drew up for it the following plan of work: "If the director be sustained in the general endeavor to make the observatory useful, he would propose to extend the field of activity of the observatory so as to embrace, on the one hand, scientific astronomy, meteorology and magnetism, and, on the other, the application of these sciences to geography and geodesy, to storm prediction, and to the wants of the citizen and the land surveyor" (Humphreys, p. 473). All these things needed to be done, but the work outlined had no practical relation to the capacity of a one-man observatory that was used mainly to entertain the public. It was the plan of a dreamer who dreamed his life long, planning and often beginning things good within themselves but beyond the possibility of accomplishment with the means and time available. One of his friends says: "I remember, when living at his home, seeing him very early in the morning sitting in his library reading the *Encyclopædia Britannica*. He told me that he was reading it through consecutively" (*Ibid.*, p. 471). Such a remark gives a typical picture of Cleveland Abbe so universally interested as to be unmindful of time and obstacles.

Despite the comprehensiveness of his plans for the work of the Cincinnati Observatory, his interest turned more and more to meteorology, and especially to the issuing of warnings, based on telegraphic reports, of approaching storms. His weather reports or bulletins began to be issued on Sept. 1, 1869. Hence when the Weather Service of the United States was authorized on Feb. 9, 1870, and placed under the direction of the Signal Service, Abbe, and he alone in this country, was already experienced in drawing weather maps from telegraphic reports and in making forecasts therefrom. Naturally, he was offered an important position in this new service. This he accepted, beginning Jan. 3, 1871, and of course was often the official forecaster of the weather. His success in this rôle was indifferent. He was

not one of the few that see a weather map in its entirety and quickly perceive its probable changes during the next twelve to thirty-six hours. He expected to resign at the end of three years, the term of appointment, but he had found his life's work and remained with it until forced to retire by protracted illness on Aug. 3, 1916. From August 1893, his chief duty was the congenial one of editing the meteorological journals of the United States Weather Bureau. This caused him to write to hundreds of scholars the world over—a pleasure to him, but a task to those who had to decipher his difficult chirography.

Abbe was not essentially a creative scholar. He made no important discovery, and published but little that contained anything new and original. He was primarily a teacher and a propagandist. He compiled in form convenient for use the best that was known about meteorological instruments, about climate and crops, and about the mechanics of the earth's atmosphere; published nearly 300 papers on meteorology and kindred subjects; and wrote many thousands of letters encouraging others to contribute something to our knowledge of the atmosphere and its phenomena. He was also one of the most active of those who worked for the adoption of standard time. He was a member of the National Academy of Sciences, and of many other organizations; and the recipient of the Symons Memorial Gold Medal bestowed by the Royal Meteorological Society of Great Britain in 1912 for eminence in meteorology, and the Marcellus Hartley Medal awarded by the National Academy of Sciences Apr. 18, 1916, for contributions to human welfare. His side interests were many: oriental archæology and ethnology, geology, botany, and music. His house in Washington entertained many guests. He was twice married: on May 10, 1870, to Frances Martha Neal of Cincinnati, Ohio, who died July 24, 1908, after their three sons had grown to manhood; and on Apr. 12, 1909, to Margaret Augusta Percival of Basseterre, St. Christopher, B. W. I.

[W. J. Humphreys, "Biog. Memoir of Cleveland Abbe," in *Nat. Acad. Sci. Biog. Memoirs,* VIII (1919); Cleveland Abbe and Josephine G. Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy* (1916); *Lowell Courier-Citizen,* Mar. 1, 1928.]

W. J. H.

ABBETT, LEON (Oct. 8, 1836–Dec. 4, 1894), lawyer, governor of New Jersey, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Ezekiel and Sarah (Howell) Abbett. After graduating from the Central High School of Philadelphia in 1853, he entered a law office and was admitted to the bar in 1858. On Oct. 8, 1862, he married Mary Briggs of Philadelphia, moving immediately to Hoboken, N. J. In 1866 he moved to Jersey City, where he resided until his death. He began his political career in 1863, being appointed corporation attorney of Hoboken. The next year he was elected to the New Jersey Assembly, serving two terms, during both of which he was chairman of the Democratic caucus. In 1869 and again in 1870, he represented Jersey City in the Assembly. Elected Speaker both terms, he gave great satisfaction to the Democratic majority by his rulings. Senator from Hudson County 1875–77, and chosen as president of the Senate in 1877, he became a prominent candidate for the Democratic nomination for governor in 1877. He was defeated, however, by the tactics of his bitter political rival, Orestes Cleveland, who had the name of Gen. McClellan brought forward at the last minute, thereby stampeding the convention. Abbett retaliated three years later, preventing the nomination of Cleveland for governor by his audacious, if not unscrupulous, manipulation of the machinery of the convention from his vantage point of chairman.

Abbett's greatest public service was undoubtedly his successful fight to secure laws taxing railroad corporations. His fidelity to his party and the recognition of his services in the struggle to subject the railroad corporations to their share of the public tax burdens, led to his nomination for governor in 1883. His party platform contained among other things the proposal for equal taxation "on all properties within the state, whether that of individuals or corporations." Abbett was elected by a plurality of 6,800 and in his inaugural message struck out boldly at the railroads. "Our tax laws," he said, "demand immediate and radical reform. They impose unequal burdens. The only true rule in taxation is equality." Public opinion was aroused by the inaugural, and the legislature, in the face of bitter opposition, passed the famous tax laws (*New Jersey Public Laws,* 1884, pp. 142, 232), which imposed a state tax on railroad and other corporations, and to some extent equalized the burden of taxation.

On retiring from the governorship Abbett was nominated for the United States Senate by the Democratic caucus. The Democrats had a majority on joint ballot, so his election seemed certain. In one of the stormiest legislative sessions in the history of the state, however, the railroad lobby worked its revenge on Abbett. Four Democrats united with the Republicans to elect Rufus Blodgett, the superintendent of the Long Branch Railroad. Although defeated, Abbett came out of the contest stronger than ever, many Democrats feeling that he had been deprived of a reward

justly due him. A mark of his popularity was shown in 1889 when he was again nominated for governor by acclamation, no other name being mentioned. He was elected by the unprecedented majority of 14,253. Abbett accepted a second term as governor with the view of winning the United States senatorship in 1893 and undoubtedly would have done so, had he not alienated the stanchest of his party supporters by his veto of a bill which would have legalized the combination of the Port Reading Company and the Jersey Central. Abbett's career was practically ended with this second defeat of his lifelong ambition. Appointed to the supreme court in 1893 by Gov. Werts, he served till his death a year later.

[*Docs. of the N.J. Leg.*, 1884–87, 1890–93, for Gov. Abbett's messages; W. E. Sackett, *Modern Battles of Trenton, 1868–94* (Trenton, 1895), for account of N.J. politics during this period; *N.J. Law Jour.*, XVII, 381, XVIII, 28; *The Record of Leon Abbett as Assemblyman, Senator and Governor* (Jersey City, 1889); F. B. Lee, *New Jersey as a Colony and as a State* (1902), IV.]

C. R. E., Jr.

ABBEY, EDWIN AUSTIN (Apr. 1, 1852–Aug. 1, 1911), historical and mural painter, was born at Philadelphia. To the father, William Maxwell Abbey, who passed unsuccessfully from business to business, little of the son's ability may be traced. The paternal grandfather, Roswell Abbey, was a pioneer in the application of electrotyping to printing and in the invention of the internal-explosion engine. Here we may suspect the origins of Edwin A. Abbey's executive and mechanical capacity. The paternal line is lost in the veteran of the Revolutionary War, Samuel. It was the family tradition that the stock was French. In the line of Abbey's mother, Margery Ann Kiple, English, Irish, and German blood mingled. She was a woman of fine taste in reading and of understanding disposition. The artist in Abbey apparently derives chiefly from her.

From mere infancy Edwin Abbey sketched what he saw. In the hope of making an Episcopal clergyman of him, the family put him in Henry D. Gregory's School, one of the best of its time in Philadelphia. In his fifteenth year they yielded to his evident vocation by giving him Saturday drawing lessons with Isaac L. Williams. At sixteen he was allowed to quit school and to study the art of drawing on box-wood for engraving, with Van Ingen and Snyder. At seventeen he was following the antique and life class of Christian Schussele at the Pennsylvania Academy. Sketches of this period reproduced in Lucas's biography show that Abbey's hand was already light and his sense of humorous characterization keen. As a correspondent to *Our Boys and Girls* he had shown signs of intellectual precocity. The episode brought him into relations with the future painters, Walter L. Palmer and Will H. Low. During this practice time Abbey fixed his taste permanently. It was paging over the English illustrated journals at Van Ingen's and Snyder's that brought before him as models, Millais, Rossetti, Pinwell, Arthur Boyd Houghton, and others. Abbey loved the precision of the work, as he did its frankly emotional content, and throughout his life, in a time when French and chiefly technical ideals were imposing themselves in America, Abbey remained unshaken in these early and fruitful admirations. He had also begun, under the influence of Eastlake's books, to frequent the old furniture shops.

Every ambitious young illustrator of the moment wished to get into *Harper's Weekly*. Abbey's début, preluded probably by many rejections, was the full-page picture "The Puritans' First Thanksgiving," published on Dec. 3, 1870. It was an appropriate beginning for an illustrator who was to make the British seventeenth and eighteenth centuries peculiarly his own field. The next year, being nearly nineteen, Abbey joined the illustrators' staff of Harper & Brothers, in Franklin Square, New York, with a salary of fifteen dollars a week. To the heavy duties of journalistic illustration young Abbey set himself resolutely under the kindly chieftainship of Charles Parsons and casual tutelage of the versatile C. S. Reinhart, an intelligent assimilator of the current English style. The work at Harper's was relentless. The big drawings, often worked up in the office by several draftsmen, had to be ready for the many woodcutters who collaborated on the big block regardless of the clock or the sun. It was a task to harden and coarsen the fibre of a young illustrator. In Abbey's case only the hardening resulted. For about five years with Harper's he made little impression. In these years he often did the hack work of redrawing other men's designs. The gusto and conscience he put into such work is well shown in the fantasy "Fire, Fire: A New Yorker's Nightmare" (from a sketch by Gray Parker), in the *Weekly* for Feb. 8, 1873.

His illustrations for several years still were uncharacteristic, mostly travel sketches from photographs, as in "Round by Propeller" (1872), where the sketches were his own. Indeed, we come upon the true Abbey rather suddenly in *Harper's Magazine* for May 1874, in the design for Herrick's poem "Corinna's Going A-Maying." It is charming, but Abbey, not finding it fit for the book, replaced it with another drawing. In 1874 he withdrew from Harper's, because they would not raise his salary from thirty-five to forty dol-

lars a week, and set up as a free lance, sharing his studio with the most brilliant draftsman among the young illustrators, J. E. Kelly. The shift marks a considerable change in Abbey's manner of life. For four years he had been leading as much of a home life as a young artist could. His Brooklyn boarding-house was near his cousins, the Potters and Curtisses. There was good music and abundant merriment at their evening reunions, but Abbey's artist acquaintance was pretty well limited to Harper's staff. The move to his own studio, 35 Union Square, soon changed for the old University Building on Washington Square, brought Abbey into contact with many older artists and with the younger progressives who were one by one returning from Paris. His gift of friendship and charm soon won him that just affection and popularity among his peers which only increased to the end.

Abbey's year and a half of free-lancing were eventful. Working for *Scribner's,* he moved toward his true field, the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. Such were his illustrations for Bryant and Gay's *Popular History of the United States* (1876–81). For its magazine appearance he did the drawing "John Nixon Reading the Declaration of Independence in the State House Yard, July 8th, 1776." It was not carried over into the book, but thirty-five years later Abbey repeated the theme in monumental form for the Pennsylvania State House. Again his illustrations for E. E. Hale's story "Philip Nolan's Friends," in *Scribner's,* marked a more accomplished antiquarianism. Already Abbey's lifelong habit of drawing true to his period was fixed. He bought, hired, or designed old costumes lavishly, at times spending on such archæological preparations as much as he got for the drawing. The Harpers continued to employ him and in the illustration of Dickens's *Christmas Stories,* a series used in part in the magazine, and in a volume of Harper's Household Edition of Dickens, they gave him the most congenial commission he had yet had. The *Christmas Stories,* Abbey's first illustrated book, was copyrighted in 1875. The English influence already pronounced was probably enhanced by a notable exhibition of British figure-painters in water-colors,—Fildes, Woods, Pinwell, and Du Maurier, in that year. The year before, Abbey exhibited at the American Water Color Society his painting, "Rustics Dancing in a Barn," and had the chagrin of being praised at the expense of his veteran colleague on *Harper's Weekly,* Winslow Homer. Characteristically, Abbey promptly paid him a visit of disavowal and homage.

Having tried his wings successfully, Abbey, in 1876, returned to the security of fifty dollars a week with Harper's. His position was still that of a valued general-utility man. For any kind of a short story he would make an acceptable illustration, while, when the popular C. S. Reinhart was not available, he did excellent decorations for poetry. He was pretty sure to appear in any article on American history. On the whole, Abbey's work from 1876 to 1878 is even and respectable, rather than brilliant, but now and then a fine cut heralds the coming master. He did much to improve the practice of Harper's art department, winning his associates to his own habit of working so far as possible from nature. In 1876 he did his first mural, a view of red roofs from a window, for a little panel in Harper's reception-room. He visited the Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia, where he stood off from the general admiration for the French fine painters, preferring as ever the English. The next year he joined the Tile Club, that joyous band of young artists home from Europe—F. Hopkinson Smith, Augustus Saint Gaudens, J. Alden Weir, William M. Chase, Stanford White. Abbey's geniality made him a beloved member. Harper's now saw the expediency of giving Abbey the actual experience of that England which he had grasped only in imagination. The plan was for a simple visit, to sketch about Stratford-on-Avon and complete the Herrick drawings. Abbey hesitated to make the move. The financial arrangements were vague, and he now had his parents to support. With reassurances from Harper's he made what was probably his most momentous decision. In a commission for *Scribner's* just before he sailed, he first essayed what was to be a later specialty, the illustration of plays. He drew Charles Coghlan and others of Wallack's stock company in their costumes in the *School for Scandal.* In the same year he had done a fine illustration in *Harper's* for Thomas Bailey Aldrich's tragedy, *Mercedes.* On Dec. 7, 1878, the Harpers gave Abbey a breakfast at Delmonico's and delivered him alongside the *Germanic* in a four-in-hand.

To the English scene Abbey brought an extraordinary professional training, but in the new surroundings he found himself rather slowly. The sketches of Stratford-on-Avon for an article by William Winter, the ostensible reason for his trip, duly appeared in *Harper's Magazine* in April 1879. In New York they still regarded him as a general-utility man, proposing such tasks as the illustration of sketches by Mrs. Lillie; *The English Lakes,* by Moncure D. Conway; George H. Boughton's *An Artist's Rambles in Holland;* William Black's unsuccessful historical novel, *Judith Shakespeare;* James de Mille's trashy ro-

mance, *A Castle in Spain.* At least this hack work kept Abbey on from month to month, and meanwhile he made good friends. Early in 1879 we find him in Bloomsbury, and, after several moves, joining forces with his friends, the Lillies, at South Kensington. He met Fred Barnard, George H. Boughton, and Alfred Parsons, whose decorative head and tail pieces were to grace many of his own books. He became a familiar of good drawing-rooms where he heard Brahms and George Henschel play. In June 1879, he saw the paintings at Paris, chiefly the old masters, opining of the most celebrated moderns that "Their subjects are not worth the immense amount of clever painting they put into them."

With the home office, relations were long unsatisfactory. It reproduced his delicate drawings badly, paid him by space,—extraordinary measure for a work of art,—and reduced his designs cruelly. Such issues were reasonably adjusted during a visit of some months to New York in 1881 and 1882. The year 1881 saw the appearance in *Harper's* of many of Abbey's best Herrick drawings, and the first mention of him in the table of contents. The next year he agreed to do twelve illustrations for Goldsmith's *She Stoops to Conquer.* Still the next year he made the first and perhaps the best designs—the drawings for "Sally in Our Alley"—for his loveliest book *Old Songs.* In 1882 had appeared the long-postponed *Selections from the Poetry of Robert Herrick,* surely the finest illustrated book that had appeared in America up to its time. Early in 1886 he undertook to illustrate the Comedies of Shakespeare. In 1889 the sixteen drawings for *Old Songs,* published that year as a book, won Abbey a first-class medal at the world's exhibition at Paris, and Joseph Pennell in a generous footnote to *Pen Drawing and Pen Draughtsmen* acclaimed him as "the greatest living illustrator."

Abbey's delicate and somewhat complicated lines usually suffered in the hands of the wood-engraver, and he frequently requested Harper's to be "processed." This was done in the case of *She Stoops to Conquer* (1886), and all his later books. The drawings for *She Stoops,* which had been in progress for four years, are larger in scale, less decorative, more fully pictorial than the Herrick illustrations. They reflect Abbey's growing interest in painting. The pen drawings are perhaps Abbey at his best, carefully studied without loss of grace and geniality. The evocation of the past is remarkable even for Abbey. Several large wash drawings were made for this book. They are highly competent, even brilliant, but they lack the compelling charm of the pen drawings. They suggest that Abbey's supremacy was with the pen, and that with any other instrument he was merely prominent among many able contemporaries. The Goldsmith drawings, published when he was thirty-four, made Abbey famous at home. They were really the occasion of his most lucrative commission, the Shakespeare illustrations, arranged with the Harpers during a brief visit to New York early in 1886. At the end of that year the Goldsmith sketches were successfully exhibited at the Grolier Club, New York, Abbey's first one-man exhibition.

Abbey

Most collectors limited to a single book of Abbey would choose *Old Songs* (1889). Through six years of tranquil preparation he had culled these seventeenth and eighteenth century songs and thought over them. The illustrations represent many sure and happy moods. With one exception, the cuts are from pen drawings excellently processed. The variety of tone is amazing and always faultless. Lyrical rapture, mere waggishness; delicate sentiment, overt gallantry; dolor of lover offset by acid common sense or simple playfulness—such is the repertory. Abbey's pen moves with the exquisite assurance of a flutist's fingers, wreathing an appropriate visible music about these old words and melodies. No earlier book had been so fully his own.

Even more quintessential for Abbey is *The Quiet Life* (1890). To the handful of humorous or meditative poems from Marvell, Cowley, Pope, Praed, etc., Austin Dobson contributed a prologue and epilogue, while Abbey and Alfred Parsons fairly punctuated the stanzas and couplets with the most enticing drawings. The mood of a wise and genial serenity is perfectly maintained. The drawings are not only Abbey's sweetest but also his strongest. At times the line stands almost alone without shadow and again there is new and splendid massing of the lines in velvety structural blacks. The whole book well deserves Mr. Lucas's praise as "one of the most beautiful and satisfying works that the hand of man has devised."

From 1889 Abbey was fitfully engaged on the illustration of Goldsmith's *Deserted Village.* These plates were well printed in *Harper's* for 1902 and issued in an unsatisfactory book the same year. What should have been Abbey's maturest work was never adequately published. The beauty of the drawings may be appreciated from the selections in Mr. Lucas's biography.

Abbey's passage to the greater theme of Shakespeare's plays seems to mark a declension in his career as an illustrator. He began in 1886 with the Comedies. They were published ten years later in four handsome volumes. About Abbey of the *Old Songs* there can be only one critical opinion; about Abbey of the Shakespeare illustrations opinions

will differ widely. While in the Comedies we have many of the old delightful pen drawings, we also have many paintings done in oils on a rather large scale. The work is highly skilful, the mood strenuous and self-conscious; one feels, what was absent from the previous work, a distinct sense of effort. Abbey continued with the Tragedies and Histories till his death, these illustrations, often in color reproduction, appearing in Harper's, but not in book form. As the task proceeded, it got farther and farther from book illustration. The pictures were conceived as units in many mediums and had no decorative relation to any conceivable book. We may evade the criticism of these very famous illustrations, made when Abbey's interest had passed from drawing to painting, because they are really only an aspect of his painting and subject to whatever appreciation it deserves.

Abbey was now thirty-seven years old. His ten English years had brought him wide fame and the beginning of fortune, and in these ten years virtually all of his best illustrations had been created. He had definitely chosen England as his home, and it had chosen him. In 1883 he was elected a member of the Royal Institute of Painters in Water-colours. In 1885 he moved to the charming Worcestershire village of Broadway, where he shared Russell House with Mr. and Mrs. Frank D. Millet, and had as close neighbors John S. Sargent and Henry James. There were occasional plunges into London gaiety from his own studio at 56 Bedford Gardens or from Sargent's at 33 Tite St., Chelsea, rarer European trips, short visits to New York in 1886 and 1889, and that longer and momentous visit to America, in 1890, whence he brought back Mary Gertrude Mead as his bride and the commission for the Grail series in the Boston Public Library. It was the beginning of a more spacious and ambitious life, if perhaps less complete from the point of view of art. The Abbeys set up their home in the delightful little country estate Morgan Hall, near Fairford, Gloucestershire. Abbey had his vast studio, which for a time he shared with his associate in the Boston work, John Sargent, his remarkable wardrobe of historic costumes, his chosen procession of guests, even his cricket team. His wife, a learned, cultured, and ambitious woman, aided in every way the new adventure in monumental painting.

In May 1890 Abbey signed the contract for a frieze 180 feet by 8 for the delivery-room of the Boston Public Library, the subjects to be of his own choice; the pay, a pittance, $15,000. An opportune chat between his fiancée and Saint Gaudens, the broad-minded response of Charles F. McKim to the sculptor's suggestion, and a noble confidence on the part of the trustees in an illustrator untried in monumental painting combined to give Abbey his great opportunity. He first considered an equal division of the four walls between panels celebrating the eight national poets. This was rejected in favor of that international legend of aspiration, the Quest of the Holy Grail. This he worked out in fifteen panels which were set up in 1902 after eleven years of unremitting labor. The setting, studied with archæological painstaking, was the twelfth century, and French. Early in the work Abbey described his intention with characteristic lucidity. "My idea is to treat the frieze not precisely in what is known as a decorative fashion, but to represent a series of paintings, in which the action takes place in a sort of procession (for lack of a better word) in the foreground. The background is there all the same but I try to keep it without incidental interest. Galahad's figure, in scarlet, is the brilliant recurring note, all the way around the room."

We may note the extraordinary care, not to say literalism, of procedure. Nothing was improvised. The many angels were a difficulty, humanity not supplying the type. Abbey writes: "I have a number of small lay figures—these are dressed in carefully cut dresses of thin white (old) cambric handkerchiefs, white pigeon wings, dried and stiffened in the right position and tacked to them; and drapery stiffened with stiff starch and arranged in folds." In all such matters Abbey developed an extraordinary efficiency. It is told that John Pettie advised the addition of the seated jester to the panel of the Round Table. Within a morning, Abbey tried out the new idea, designed a jester's costume, had it made in his wardrobe, and painted in the life-sized figure from the costumed model on the mural canvas.

It is doubtless the partial waiver of decorative quality, the retention of illustrative emphasis, and the plausibility of all the details that made the popular success of the Grail frieze. From the time that the first part of it was exhibited in Chicago in 1893 until the whole was in place in 1902 there had been no doubt of the popularity of these decorations. With the possible exception of Puvis's legend of St. Genevieve, no modern decorations are so much loved. All this makes criticism difficult. Abbey's own second thoughts are instructive. He came to regret the rigid twelfth-century setting, wishing he might have done it fifteenth-century, and more or less in Burne-Jones's manner. It never seems to have occurred to him that a remote legend need not have any period in an archæological sense. Later he wrote of the Grail frieze that he wished he might have it back in order that he might "make it simpler from begin-

ning to end." One may share these critical reflections and yet be glad that the Grail frieze is what it is—an extension of Abbey's idealistic illustration to a mural scale and into a mystical field. A certain forcing of the idealism was almost inevitable. Abbey's twelfth century lacked the solid credibility of his seventeenth and eighteenth, and there had to be compensation in a general insistence on the emotional note. This has ever delighted the public, and the critics less so. In his later decorations Abbey set the scene either in nearer pasts or in no man's land, never desiring to repeat this greatest adventure in archæology.

In all this period honors were showered upon him. He was made an associate of the Royal Water Colour Society, an associate of the Société Nationale des Beaux Arts, a knight of the Legion of Honor, and a corresponding member of the Institute of France. Our National Academy, ever gingerly toward the expatriate artist, made him an associate in 1901, and an N.A. in 1902. Of all his honors Abbey especially valued his honorary membership in the Institute of American Architects, 1895, given in recognition of the Grail decorations.

While the Boston decorations were in progress Abbey steadily built up for himself a great reputation as a historical painter in oils. There was no abrupt break with the idyllic water-colors. His first oil painting at the Royal Academy, 1890, "Mayday Morning," was in the old vein. His decoration of the same year for the New Amsterdam Hotel, New York, merely renewed old studies of Knickerbocker Manhattan. Again the mural panel, "Fiammetta's Song," and its companion, "A Poet," with the similar canvas, "A Pavane," show Abbey merely extending the idealistic manner of the drawings for the Shakespeare Comedies to the decoration of New York houses. After the exhibition of the first half of the Grail series, in 1895–96, Abbey deals by preference with great and tragic themes. "Richard of Gloucester and the Lady Anne" was shown in the Royal Academy in 1896, the "Play Scene in Hamlet," which was to win Abbey gold medals at Paris, Vienna, and Berlin, in 1897, "King Lear's Daughters" in 1898, the "Trial of Queen Katharine" and the "Penance of Eleanor Duchess of Gloucester," in 1900. By his forty-eighth year, Abbey's claim to be regarded as the best historical painter of his day seemed incontestable. It was with entire logic that the Royal Exchange commissioned him in 1896 to do the mural panel, "The Reconciliation of the Skinners and Merchant Taylors before Richard III." And when in 1902 King Edward requested Abbey to do the Coronation picture, it was as much an act of artistic discretion as of international tact.

Abbey

Abbey's capacity for work was extraordinary, and the vast studio at Morgan Hall saw an output comparable to that of a factory. "I have at least twenty paintings large and larger begun," he wrote in his fiftieth year. Among them must have been some of the preliminary studies for the decoration of the Pennsylvania State Capitol at Harrisburg. These were his last works. By 1907 the rotunda was complete. In the spandrels were four medallions, female figures on gold ground symbolizing Art, Law, Science, and Religion. The medallions are fourteen feet in diameter. In the collar of the dome are four lunettes 38 by 22 feet depicting the main industries of the state and her tradition of religious liberty:—"Science Revealing the Treasures of the Earth," "The Spirit of Vulcan," "Oil," "The Spirit of Religious Liberty Leading the Ships towards America." For these decorations Abbey adopted a blend of symbolism and actuality which has its precedent in Rubens and the Venetians. The light-bearing spirits rise in a flock across the tall scaffoldings of real oil wells. Vulcan presides over a modern steel works. Science with her attendants hovers over an actual mine opening. Behind Religious Liberty advancing in air, big square riggers swing easily over great favoring waves. In 1896 Abbey had offered this splendid design in competition for the Common Council Hall of Philadelphia and had lost to Joseph Decamp. In the four lunettes at Harrisburg he seems to have found the fit convention for his idealism, and they are certainly his finest achievement in mural painting. Oddly the historical subjects in the Hall of Representatives seem relatively a failure. The round ceiling, "The Hours," is decoratively perhaps his best piece, but the huge Apotheosis of Pennsylvania, the panels, "Penn's Treaty with the Indians" and "The Reading of the Declaration of Independence," exhibit a painful literalism. The "Washington at Valley Forge" is at best an oversized illustration. In short, the ambition to make decoration out of letter-perfect historical painting failed signally at the end as it had only partially succeeded all along. Which may suggest that the great illustrator in Abbey is what will longest be remembered.

Abbey did not live to finish the Harrisburg panels. After the rotunda was finished in 1906, he suffered a serious breakdown. He drew force from a trip to the Dolomites to keep going. He even continued his cricket week at Morgan Hall with elevens made up of artists. He developed characteristically clever ways of handling his great compositions, such as moving a figure about with the stereopticon and tracing the figure rapidly from the lantern image. He found energy to complete one of his most picturesque of historical paintings,

"Columbus in the New World," with its effective heraldic flight of flamingoes, and one of his most studied, "The Education of Isabella the Catholic."

Abbey had grown portly with the years, but carried his weight well and retained all of his old alertness and charm. One of his assistants, Mr. F. C. Cooper, writes: "Latterly I thought his expression became very noble looking, and he reminded me curiously of the portraits of Ingres at that age." His last illness came upon him in July 1911 in his Chelsea home, 42 Tite St. For ten days his bed was moved into the studio, where he directed his assistants. He died Aug. 1, 1911, aged fifty-nine years and four months. His body was cremated and the ashes buried in Old Kingsbury churchyard.

[The essential source is E. V. Lucas, *Edwin Austin Abbey, Royal Academician. The Record of His Life and Work* (1921), in two volumes, with 200 illustrations. Mr. Lucas fully exhausts all biographical matter, and his illustrations, being made from the original drawings by superior processes, are indispensable. Among critical estimates the most important are the following: Samuel Isham, *Hist. of Am. Painting* (1905), pp. 420–27, 550; Henry James, "Our Artists in Europe," *Harper's*, June 1889, pp. 54–57; N. N. (Mrs. Pennell), *Nation*, XCIV, 69, Jan. 18, 1912. On the Harrisburg murals: Royal Cortissoz, *Scribner's*, Dec. 1908, Jan. 1912. A few honors that have escaped Mr. Lucas are recorded in the *Am. Art Annual*, 1911, p. 307. The reader should be warned against the entirely apocryphal picture drawn by the late Elbert Hubbard in *Little Journeys to the Homes of Eminent Artists* (1902).] F.J.M.

ABBEY, HENRY (July 11, 1842–June 7, 1911), poet, was born in Rondout, now a part of Kingston, N.Y., where doubtless he would have died, had not illness sent him in his last days to a sanitarium in Tenafly, N.J. All his life, except when a student, and the year 1862–63, when he was clerk in the office of the New York *Leader* and, later, editor of the Orange, N.J., *Spectator*, he made his native town his home, never journeying many miles beyond its borders. Kingston has beauty of situation and a lively trade in farm products, coal, cement, grain, and lumber. Abbey was destined to give the most of his time to its commerce, and what remained to enjoying its beauty, to study, and to writing poetry. He was the son of Stephen Abbey and Caroline Vail. Among his ancestors were the Scotch reformer, John Knox, and, according to tradition, the Indian chieftain, Massasoit. With the intention of entering college he attended Hedding Institute, and the Hudson River Institute. Financial reverses which came to his father about 1859 destroyed his hopes of a college education, but for a time he studied with the noted lawyer, John Norton Pomeroy, then practicing in Rochester, N.Y. After a period of editorial work on the Rondout *Courier* and the journalistic experiment in New York and Orange already mentioned, Abbey became teller in the Bank of Rondout, but soon left that institution to enter the feed, flour, and lime business conducted by his father and his brother. Thereafter, until his later years, he was closely identified with the commercial and banking activities of the town, making poetry his pastime and finding congenial companionship and literary inspiration in the New York Shakespeare Society and Authors Club. He is described as a quiet, square-headed, kindly-looking gentleman who talked nearly as well as he wrote, generously friendly at heart, but of a shy modesty and excessive fear of intrusion which often obscured his real sweetness and worth. He married in 1865 Mary Louise Dubois of Kingston. She died Nov. 3, 1889.

Abbey's first volume of poems *May Dreams* was published in 1862, when he was but twenty years old, and was dedicated by permission to William Cullen Bryant. This was followed by *Ralph and Other Poems* (1866); *Stories in Verse*, dedicated "to Richard Grant White with gratitude for his friendship, and with admiration for his elegant scholarship" (1869); *Ballads of Good Deeds*, dedicated to George William Curtis (1872); English edition of same with a few additions (1876); *Poems* (1879); *The City of Success and Other Poems* (1884); *Bright Things from Everywhere, Poems, Paragraphs, Wit and Wisdom selected by Henry Abbey* (1888); *Phaëthon* (1901); *The Poems of Henry Abbey* (1885), (1895), (1904); *Dream of Love* (1910).

Abbey's poetry was widely known in its day, being favorably received in England as well as in America. The simplicity, rhythm, and wholesomeness of his earlier poems won them a place in home papers and school readers, but the later and more elaborate did not achieve a like popularity. In form and sentiment both are typical of the last half of the nineteenth century. Often obtrusively didactic, they are permeated with the spirit of democracy, pride of country, and love of honor, justice, and kindness. They never rise to any great height of beauty, imagination, passion, or thought; neither do they sink very low. Some of them doubtless will live on in anthologies; the most of them will probably be forgotten.

[G. F. Bacon, *Kingston and Rondout, Their Representative Business Men and Points of Interest* (1892); *Biog. Dir. State of N.Y.* (1900); obituary notices of the Authors Club of N.Y. for 1911, *Bookman*, May 1912; *Who's Who in N.Y. City and State* (1904); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Manual of the Authors Club, N.Y.* (1912).] H.E.S.

ABBEY, HENRY EUGENE (June 27, 1846–Oct. 17, 1896), theatrical and operatic manager, was the son of Elizabeth (Smith) Abbey and Henry Stephen Abbey, a Connecticut clockmaker, who migrated in 1835 to Akron, Ohio, then only a small village. After his son's graduation, with

honors, from the Akron High School, the father tried to interest him in his jewelry business, but the younger Abbey's thoughts were turned toward the popular amusement field. Beginning as ticket-seller for the local opera house, of which, after two years, he became lessee, in 1869 he brought, from the Cleveland Academy of Music, John Ellsler's company, then playing *London Assurance* with Clara Morris as ingenue. The next year he took out his first "road company"—the Susan Galton Opera Troupe. In succeeding years Abbey brought to many of the smaller cities a better class of performances than they had customarily seen. Under his management Lotta, Adams, and Raymond made extended tours. In 1876 he left Akron, formed a partnership with John B. Schoeffel, and acquired the Academy of Music at Buffalo, N.Y. After a year's trial the partners decided that New York City was to be their field of operations and undertook the management of the Park Theatre. That was the initial effort in a series of theatrical and operatic enterprises, some brilliantly successful and others disheartening failures, covering a period of twenty years. It was Abbey who brought together the actors William H. Crane and Stuart Robson, who starred successfully for many seasons. In New York the elder Sothern played a long engagement in *The Crushed Tragedian* under Abbey's management. After managing several theatres in New York for three or four seasons, Abbey went to Europe in 1880 and made a contract with Sarah Bernhardt, then at the apex of her career, to give performances in the United States. It was a bold venture, but proved successful. Bernhardt played 164 times for $100,000 as her share of the proceeds, while Abbey, Schoeffel & Grau received an equivalent amount. This engagement gave Abbey his national reputation as a manager. Within three years he was in control of the Metropolitan Opera House, just opened in New York. The first two seasons of opera showed a loss of $250,000, which was quickly repaid to the creditors of the lessees; but Col. Mapleson's attempt to offer New York a rival program of grand opera made the success of either venture impossible. In 1889–90 Abbey managed the American tours of Adelina Patti and the London Gaiety. Among the popular players who appeared under his management were Barrett, Sothern, Henry Irving, Coquelin, and Jane Hading. For one season, in the earlier part of his career, he had Booth's Theatre and presented Edwin Booth himself in a Shakespearian repertoire. In 1891–92 he brought to the Metropolitan stage Jean and Edouard De Reszke and Emma Eames. The same year he secured Italian opera. The next year he introduced Calvé to America. He opened Abbey's Theatre in 1893, retaining the management of various other amusement places. In the season of 1895–96 he brought over a remarkable group of European opera singers, but financially the enterprise ended in failure. Before his death, however, a settlement had been obtained with the creditors of Abbey, Schoeffel & Grau. Abbey's distinction as an American impresario was twofold: he was one of the first theatrical managers to present costly entertainments before audiences outside the largest cities and he was remarkably successful in capturing the best European talent, both histrionic and operatic, even when the financial investment seemed to make the undertaking hopeless. He was twice married, in 1876 to Kate Kingsley, who bore him two children and died in 1883, and in 1886 to Florence Gerard.

[S. A. Lane, *Fifty Years and Over of Akron and Summit County* (1892); H. E. Krehbiel, *Chapters of Opera* (1908); *N.Y. Times*, *N.Y. Tribune*, Oct. 18, 1896.]

W.B.S.

ABBOT, BENJAMIN (Sept. 17, 1762–Oct. 25, 1849), educator, was descended from George Abbot, who left Yorkshire, England, in 1640, to settle in Andover, Mass., where for five generations the eldest son of the family was named John and farmed the original acres wrested from the wilderness. Benjamin, son of the fourth John Abbot, entered Phillips Academy, Andover, in 1782. Here he was taught by Jeremiah Smith, later a prominent jurist of New Hampshire. From Andover he went to Harvard, where he was graduated with the degree of M.A. in 1788, delivering the salutatory oration. On Oct. 8, 1788, he was appointed to the principalship of Phillips Exeter Academy, a position which he held for fifty years. Although assisted by young graduates from Harvard, he carried the burden of the teaching in Latin, Greek, and mathematics. He was an enthusiastic classical scholar and aroused the enthusiasm of his students while at the same time he was very insistent on accuracy and thoroughness. As principal, he maintained a high standard of morals and manners in the school. Without resorting to corporal punishment,—the usual penalty for misdemeanor being merely to carry wood or sweep the hall,—he nevertheless held his pupils under strict control. The father of Lewis Cass [*q.v.*], a rather unruly boy, said to Abbot, "If Lewis was half as afraid of the Almighty as he is of you, I should never have any more trouble with him." Other distinguished pupils were Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, Jared Sparks, and Francis Bowen. On the occasion of Abbot's retirement, Aug. 23, 1838, hundreds of his old students were present, and Daniel Webster, in as brilliant a speech as he ever delivered, paid eloquent tribute to Ab-

bot's training (Cunningham, pp. 29–30). Abbot was a man of medium height, dark complexion, and quiet manner. He was twice married: on Nov. 1, 1791, to Hannah Tracy Emery of Exeter, who died Dec. 7, 1793, at the age of twenty-two, leaving him with an infant son; and five years later to Mary Perkins of Boston, by whom he had two daughters and one son. His chief recreation was gardening. It is said that every year when the birds robbed his cherry trees, he would seize his gun and rush out, crying, "Those robins must be killed!" to return after a mild "Shoo! Shoo!" without having fired a shot. He lived on in the quiet of Exeter for eleven years after his retirement from teaching, and died there at the age of eighty-seven.

[J. G. Hoyt, "The Phillips Exeter Academy" in *North Am. Rev.*, July 1858; F. H. Cunningham, *Familiar Sketches of the Phillips Exeter Academy* (1883); C. H. Bell, *The Phillips Exeter Academy* (1883); *Exercises at the Centennial Celebration of Phillips Exeter Academy 1883* (1884); L. M. Crosbie, *The Phillips Exeter Academy: A History* (1923).]

L. M. C.

ABBOT, EZRA (Apr. 28, 1819–Mar. 21, 1884), stands preëminent as a devoted, accurate scholar among those of American birth who have given themselves to the textual criticism of the New Testament. It was in a period marked by the famous discoveries of Tischendorf, no less than the patient industry of Tregelles, that Abbot made American scholarship for the first time deserving of recognition in this domain. Ultimately European scholars of the first rank recognized and gladly welcomed him as their peer. He was the eldest child and namesake of his father, a farmer of Jackson, Waldo County, Me. His mother, Phœbe Abbot, died when the child had reached the age of six. But to her influence may well be traced something of the character of the precocious lad, distinguished throughout life by Christian gentleness no less than scholarly attainment. During her married life of only seven years the young mother, besides forming her own little collection of theological works, acquired a knowledge of Greek sufficient for reading the New Testament.

Impressed, like the lad's teachers, with his "wonderful accuracy of knowledge," his mother's brother, Rev. Abiel Abbot of Peterboro, prevailed on his father to send the boy, at first destined to continue his father's calling, to Phillips Academy at Exeter, and subsequently to Bowdoin. At college his course was marked, as before, by a deeply religious spirit no less than by devotion to study, though throughout life he never lost his childhood's love of nature and out-door activity. After graduation in 1840 Abbot found a position as school-teacher in Maine, but continued his studies, receiving in 1843 the degree of M.A. from his alma mater. His first definite step toward an academic career was unconsciously taken at this time. Andrews Norton, professor of sacred literature at Harvard Divinity School, best known by his *Genuineness of the Gospels* (1837–44), was then reaching the summit of his fame as a fearless representative of the "liberal" school. His *Statement of Reasons for not believing the Doctrines of Trinitarianism concerning the Nature of God and the Person of Christ* (1833) reached the hands of the young school-teacher, who wrote to the author expressing delight in the work, stating that he had made an index of it, and adding some discriminating remarks. Pleased with the letter, Norton invited the writer to visit him. The result was that Abbot went to Cambridge, assuming in 1847 the position of teacher in the high school at Cambridgeport, and rendering years of editorial service to Norton.

The high-school task proved irksome. Abbot found relief from its monotony by preparing for the benefit of his pupils a work of some 250 printed pages entitled *A Classed Catalogue of the Library of the Cambridge High School*, published privately in 1853. This opened the doors to a new career. The *Catalogue* revealed surprising thoroughness and skill in dealing with the librarian's most difficult problem. It was a subject catalogue, dividing the 1,600 books of the high-school library according to their scientific or philosophical relations into thirty-one classes, with subdivisions, combining alphabetical arrangement with logical classification. It won for the author immediate recognition. He received a position on the library staff of the Boston Athenæum and of Harvard College, of which he became assistant librarian in 1856.

Long years of private study as teacher, editor, and librarian intervened before Abbot's services to New Testament research became fully known. In 1852 he became a member, in 1853 recording secretary, of the American Oriental Society, and in 1861 a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. But it was not till 1871 that he at last obtained from Harvard an appointment as lecturer on the Textual Criticism of the New Testament, leading in 1872 to an election to the newly founded Bussey Professorship of similar title in the Divinity School. Meantime, in 1871, he had been chosen a member of the New Testament Committee for the Revision of the English Bible, where his services as a textual critic were invaluable; the papers which he prepared on disputed passages had great influence in determining the text finally adopted. His published work is largely hidden under others' names, as in the editing with

copious notes and bibliography of several works for Prof. Norton, besides similar service for Alger's *Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life* (1864), and Lamson's *Church of the First Three Centuries* (1865). He also coöperated with his pupil, Prof. Caspar René Gregory, in bringing out the *Prolegomena* to Tischendorf's last critical edition of the Greek New Testament (1884), to which he contributed the chapter *De Versibus;* and with Prof. H. B. Hackett in the editing of the American edition of Smith's *Dictionary of the Bible* (1888), to which he contributed over 400 initialed additions. His signed work consists mainly of articles in various periodicals on subjects of biblical interest. Twenty of these were collected and published in 1888 by his successor, Prof. J. H. Thayer, under the title *Critical Essays selected from the Published Papers of Ezra Abbot.* They include his one venture into the field of the higher criticism, the well-known essay in defense of the traditional authorship of John entitled *The Authorship of the Fourth Gospel: External Evidences* (1880). This essay, however harmless against more recent critical views, had its effect against the overbold assertions of Tübingen critics. It still remains a model of scientific argument. But Abbot's best title to fame rests elsewhere. For a full generation he remained America's one great critic of the New Testament text. The *American Revised Version* is his chief monument.

[Obituaries in the leading religious periodicals at the time of Abbot's death, especially the *Unitarian Review* and the *Andover Review* for May 1884. *Ezra Abbot* (1884), containing memorial addresses by J. H. Thayer and others, gives biographical data and full bibliography.]

B.W.B.

ABBOT, FRANCIS ELLINGWOOD (Nov. 6, 1836–Oct. 23, 1903), Unitarian clergyman, philosopher, was the son of Joseph Hale Abbot, a teacher in Boston, and Fanny Ellingwood (Larcom) Abbot, descendant of Roger Conant of Salem. Bred in a family of intellectual energy and strenuous Puritanism, his youth was marked by brilliant scholarship and austerity of conscience. Prepared in the Boston Latin School and by private tuition, he graduated from Harvard College in 1859. He then married (Aug. 3) Katharine Fearing Loring, of Concord, Mass., and in November joined the Harvard Divinity School, but left it, in September 1860, to take charge of a girls' school in Meadville, Pa. At the same time he attended the Meadville Theological School, graduating from it in 1863. After a year in Beverly, Mass., he became pastor of the Unitarian church in Dover, N. H., June 1864. Basing faith on free present intuition, in the spirit of Emerson's Divinity School Address, he found a creedal limitation in the constitution of the National Unitarian Conference of 1865 which referred to its members as "disciples of the Lord Jesus Christ," and he strove in vain for the adoption of freer terminology. In 1867 he led in creating The Free Religious Association. Though an ardent theist sharing the main Christian ethical ideals, he held that historically "Christianity" meant subjection to the authority of Christ as Messiah and found definitive form in the authoritative system of Roman Catholicism. Free Religion must replace "God in Christ" by "God in Humanity" (*Freedom and Fellowship in Religion,* 1875, pp. 223–64). Doubting his ministerial prospects, he sought a chair of philosophy in the new Cornell University, failing despite strong recommendations. A similar appointment in Harvard, urged by Francis Bowen, 1866, had been barred by theological opposition. Constrained by logic and conscience, Abbot resigned his pastorate, Mar. 15, 1868, but a parish majority sought to retain him by changing their name from "The First Unitarian Society of Christians" to the "First Independent Religious Society." Legal action by the minority caused the majority, however, under legal advice, to claim the property under the former name, whereupon Abbot again resigned, Oct. 1. For a time he supported himself by tutoring, yet giving free public discourses in the City Hall. In September 1869 he accepted a call to the Independent Church in Toledo, Ohio, when to secure him it dropped the name Unitarian. There he edited the *Index,* a weekly journal championing Free Religion. This enterprise involving him in debt, he removed to Cambridge, Mass., 1873, editing the *Index* from Boston until 1880. After a teaching enterprise in New York, 1880, he established a classical school for boys in Cambridge, 1881, but relinquished it in 1892, when a legacy enabled him to devote his time to philosophical writing. From 1872 he had ardently fought a proposed amendment of the national constitution which would declare Christ the ruler and the Bible the control of the national life, organizing local resistant groups in 1876 into a National Liberal League. Of this he was president until 1878, resigning then because the League favored freedom of the mails for literature obnoxious to his ethical principles. In 1894 he became estranged also from The Free Religious Association on its refusal to avow independence of all historical religions (Abbot, *Free Church Tracts, No. 1,* Tacoma, Wash., 1895).

His philosophical power was early shown by widely admired articles in the *North American Review* (July, Oct. 1864, Oct. 1868), and by a thesis for a Harvard doctorate in 1881. His *Scientific Theism* (1885, 3rd ed. 1888) won European

attention and appeared in a German translation (1893). This work sharply condemns the subjectivism of Idealism and on the basis of a realistic theory of knowledge argues that since science finds a self-existing, self-determining system of objectively real relations of objectively real things, and since only intelligence can create such relational systems, the universe must be itself intelligent, an infinite living self-consciousness. (For a valuable discussion of *Scientific Theism* see L. Carrau, *La Philosophie religieuse en Angleterre depuis Locke jusqu'à nos jours.*) Having served as substitute for Josiah Royce [*q.v.*] in Harvard in 1888, Abbot published a condensation of his lectures in *The Way Out of Agnosticism* (1890), an argument that philosophy compels faith in real personality, finite and relative in man, infinite and absolute in Nature. This was attacked by Royce in the *International Journal of Ethics* (Oct. 1890) with "a professional warning" against Abbot as an incompetent pretender in philosophy who, without logical ability or historical scholarship, based his thought on a crude misunderstanding of Hegel's theory of universals. This wound to a proudly conscientious man evoked from Abbot an indignant response which was denied publication. Without success he asked redress from the university authorities as being libeled by their appointee in his "professorial" capacity (*Prof. Royce's Libel, a Public Appeal to the Board of Overseers,* 1891, and *A Public Remonstrance to the Board of Overseers,* 1892). The episode was vigorously discussed by others in the *Nation* (Nov. 12, 19, 26, Dec. 3, 1891), and Royce's attitude evoked Mrs. Jack Gardner's celebrated remark that "One should be sure of his own manners before attacking another's morals." The next ten years Abbot devoted to the final elaboration of his thought in abstruse technical form in *The Syllogistic Philosophy.* Shortly after completing it, on the tenth anniversary of his wife's death, he was found dead upon her grave with signs of poison self-administered. *The Syllogistic Philosophy* was published in two volumes in 1906, was reviewed unfavorably in *Mind* (July 1907), the *Philosophical Review* (July 1907) and *Science* (May 31, 1907), and quickly dropped out of notice. Abbot's misfortune was to be twenty years ahead of his due time. His keen and subtle critique of idealism, so offensive to his American contemporaries, would later have proved most acceptable, while his insistence upon the unity of reason and experience, the inseparability of genus and specimen, and the objectivity of the syllogism would have received the attention they deserved. He undoubtedly owed more to Hegel than he himself supposed, and he was wont to underestimate the difficulties of his own view-point, but, for all that, he was a philosopher of parts.

[*Universal Religion*, vol. XI, no. 9 (Dec. 1903, memorial addresses); *Index*, June 24, 1880, Abbot's review of his career; *Ibid.*, June 10, 17, 1880; *Boston Transcript*, Oct. 24, 1903; *Christian Reg.*, Nov. 12, 1903.]

F.A.C.

ABBOT, GORHAM DUMMER (Sept. 3, 1807–Aug. 3, 1874), clergyman, educator, was the fourth in a family of seven children. Two brothers, Jacob Abbott [*q.v.*] and John Stevens Cabot Abbott [*q.v.*] preceded him, and two others, Charles Edward and Samuel Phillips, were born later. The last of these died at a comparatively early age, but the other four all achieved considerable eminence as teachers and writers. They were strikingly alike in gifts and tastes, but each had marked individuality of character, indicated in the case of the three oldest by the saying, "Jacob for advice; John for a speech; and Gorham for a prayer." When in college, for the sake of distinction, Jacob added a "t" to the family name, and the younger brothers adopted the same form, but Gorham soon returned to the original spelling. They were descended from a Yorkshire Puritan, George Abbot, who had emigrated to New England as early as 1640. Their father, Jacob Abbot 2nd, a pioneer in the development of southern Maine, moved from Concord, N. H., to that state in 1800, two years after his marriage to his second cousin, Betsey, daughter of Joshua and Elizabeth Chandler Abbot. Gorham was born in Brunswick, but spent his boyhood in the family home at Hallowell. He graduated from Bowdoin College in 1826, and studied at Andover Theological Seminary, but did not graduate. On Feb. 11, 1834, he married Rebecca S. Leach, daughter of Joseph Leach of South Natick, Mass. He was ordained in New York, Dec. 25, 1837, and from 1837 to 1841 was pastor of a Presbyterian church in New Rochelle, N. Y. The next two years he was connected with the literary department of the American Tract Society.

His chief interest, however, was in education, and especially in the higher education of women. After leaving the theological seminary, he had made a horseback journey for his health through the South, and had been impressed with the needs of public education. As a result, while pastor at New Rochelle, he was prominent in a movement to supply schools with libraries, suitable text-books, and educational journals. From 1831 to 1833 he had been associated with his brother Jacob in conducting the Mount Vernon School for girls in Boston, and in 1843 Gorham persuaded him to join with their other two brothers and himself in establishing a girls' school in New York. The enterprise "was a surprising success from the

very beginning—one of the earlier movements for woman's better education which later led up to the woman's colleges, and woman's admission to the great universities" (Lyman Abbott, *Reminiscences,* 1923, p. 24). Charles withdrew in 1846 to open a boys' school in Norwich, Conn., and a little later Gorham took forty of the pupils and started what became known as Spingler Institute, which he conducted until 1870. It became widely known and drew students from all over the country and from Canada. The great aim of the institution, according to the catalogue of 1861, was "to provide for *daughters,* privileges of education equal to those of *sons* in our Universities, Colleges, and Halls. It had its origin in a careful examination of endowments, both in Europe and America. In many instances *hundreds of thousands of dollars,* and in some, MILLIONS, were invested in providing educational appliances, of every variety, and on the most ample scale, for *sons.* It did not appear that there was in the world a single institution for the education of *daughters,* with a well distributed endowment of *a hundred thousand dollars.*" Abbot's favorite text of Scripture, according to his students, was: "That our daughters may be as corner stones, polished after the similitude of a palace." He founded the school, he says, in the hope that such an institution in the metropolis would be imitated in every city of the Union. The soundness of his educational theories was widely recognized, and when Matthew Vassar was searching for some object to which he might devote his wealth, he met Abbot, who imbued him with his ideals of education for women (*New York Tribune,* May 19, 1899). His health failing he retired to South Natick, Mass., in 1870, where he died.

His publications include *Memoir of Nathan W. Dickerman,* American Tract Society (1830); an American edition, with improvements, of William Carpenter's *Scripture Natural History* (1833); *The Family at Home; or, Familiar Illustrations of the Various Domestic Duties* (1834); and *Mexico and the United States, Their Mutual Relations and Common Interests* (1869), a historical work of no great importance, strongly influenced by the author's political and religious views.

[Abiel Abbot and Ephraim Abbot, *Geneal. Reg. of the Descendants of George Abbot, etc.* (1847); Emma H. Nason, *Old Hallowell on the Kennebec* (1909); *Gen. Cat. Bowdoin Coll.* (1916); *Andover Theol. Sem. Cat. 1808–1908; N.Y. Evening Post,* Aug. 5, 1874.]

H. E. S.

ABBOT, HENRY LARCOM (Aug. 13, 1831–Oct. 1, 1927), army engineer, was a descendant of George Abbot, who emigrated from England in 1640 and of Mordecai Larcom, who came from France twelve years later. Two of his great-grandfathers served in the Revolutionary War: Maj. Abiel Abbot and Lieut. Joseph Hale. Henry L. Abbot was born at Beverly, Mass., the son of Joseph Hale and Fanny Ellingwood (Larcom) Abbot, and brother of Francis Ellingwood Abbot [*q.v.*]. He attended the Boston Latin School and then West Point Military Academy, where he was graduated in 1854. He was married in April 1858 to Mary Susan Everett of Cambridge, Mass. For two years after his graduation from West Point Abbot was assistant on the survey for a Pacific railroad, in command of the party which surveyed the route through California and Oregon which was later adopted. In 1857, then a lieutenant, he was appointed to the task of assisting Capt. A. A. Humphreys [*q.v.*] of the Corps of Engineers in an investigation of the questions of flood protection and channel improvements along the lower Mississippi. Their joint *Report upon the Physics and Hydraulics of the Mississippi River* (1861), which advocated the partial control of floods by means of levees, "was received by the engineers of the world as a most valuable contribution to the science of hydraulics, and remains a standard authority on the regimen of the Mississippi River" ("The Problem of the Mississippi," by Major-General W. M. Black, *North American Review,* December 1927). In 1869 further reports were submitted by Humphreys and Abbot on the same question.

During the Civil War Abbot served in the Eastern armies first as an engineer and later in command of the 1st Connecticut Heavy Artillery. He was wounded at the first battle of Bull Run, where he was serving on Gen. McDowell's staff. He acted as chief topographical engineer for Gen. Banks's New Orleans expedition. In the campaigns of 1864–65 he commanded the siege artillery brigade of both United States armies at Petersburg and Richmond. During the war he received seven brevets, the highest being that of major-general of Volunteers, "for gallant and meritorious conduct during the Rebellion." In September 1865 he was mustered out of the volunteer service and resumed his regular rank of major of the Corps of Engineers, U.S.A.

Following the war, Abbot was placed in command of the Engineer Battalion at Willett's Point, N.Y., where, with the encouragement of Gen. Humphreys, he developed the Engineer School of Application, making of it not only a post-graduate school, but a center of research in the problems of military engineering. At Willett's Point, during a period of some twelve years, he carried on the experiments in high explosives which resulted in the system of coast defense by submarine mines

adopted for the United States. His voluminous *Report* was published in 1881 as No. 23 of the Professional Papers of the Corps of Engineers. He served on many engineering boards including the Board of Ordnance and Fortification. Three times he was sent to Europe as a member of special commissions: in 1870 to the Island of Sicily to observe the solar eclipse; in 1875 to make contracts for submarine mining cable and examine systems of torpedo defense adopted in Great Britain, Germany, Austria, and France; and again in 1883 as a member of a joint Army and Navy board to report on providing large steel cannon. His promotion as colonel in the Corps of Engineers came in 1886 and after his retirement in August 1895 he was promoted by Act of Congress to brigadier-general, U.S.A., retired.

After his retirement from active service he became consulting engineer (1895) to the company which built the harbor at Manitowoc, Wis., and established the much-used car ferry connecting that harbor with the Pere Marquette railroads in Michigan. He served as a member of the Comité Technique of the New French Panama Canal Company and later as its consulting engineer, residing in Paris and at the Isthmus part of the time. When in 1904 this property passed into the hands of the United States, he became a member of the American board of consulting engineers appointed by President Roosevelt to determine the plan of the Canal. The majority of the board recommended a sea-level canal, but the minority favored a lock-canal. Abbot's report was influential in the adoption by the Government of the minority's recommendation. He published in engineering journals numerous articles on the Canal question, and in 1905 *Problems of the Panama Canal* (2nd ed., London, 1907). He was also a member of the Panama Canal Slide Committee appointed by the National Academy of Sciences in 1915 at the request of the President. He was chairman of the Jury of Awards at the Atlanta Exposition in 1895. From May 1905 to July 1910 he was professor of hydraulic engineering on the faculty of graduate studies at George Washington University. Throughout his career he was a prolific writer; his articles and reports are scattered through the Professional Memoirs of the Corps of Engineers, the Printed Papers of the Essayons Club, the publications of the Engineer School, and periodicals.

[No adequate sketch of Abbot has yet been written. The record of his work is to be found in his publications and in the reports of the Chief of Engineers. His own account, *Early Days of the Engineer School of Application*, was published by the Engineer School in 1904 as No. 14 of its Occasional Papers. Biographical data are found in *Who's Who in America*, *Who's Who in Engineering*, and G. W. Cullum's *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed. 1891).]

E. Y.

Abbot

ABBOT, JOEL (Jan. 18, 1793–Dec. 14, 1855), naval officer, son of Joel and Lydia (Cummings) Abbot, of old Colonial stock, was born at Westford, Mass., and was bred to the sea. Volunteering for service at the outbreak of the second war with Great Britain, he was appointed a midshipman in the navy, June 18, 1812, and three days later, under Commodore John Rodgers in the frigate *President*, took part in the first action of the war, in which the British ship *Belvidera* escaped by superior speed after a sharp fight. In 1813, while acting as an officer in a prize ship, he was captured and taken to England, but was soon exchanged and attached to the squadron of Commodore Macdonough on Lake Champlain. His eagerness to serve is illustrated by a letter requesting that his exchange be quickly effected, to the end "that I may be enabled to return immediately to actual service, as I hope not always to remain a Midshipman." Ordered on a most hazardous and difficult duty, he entered the enemy's lines, disguised as a British officer, and succeeded in destroying a large number of spars and implements sorely needed by the British in the construction of vessels. He took part in the battle of Lake Champlain on Sept. 11, 1814, and was included in the thanks of Congress given to Macdonough and his officers, receiving at the same time one of the swords of honor conferred by Congress on the midshipmen of the victorious squadron. His promotion to lieutenant, Apr. 1, 1818, was no doubt partly in consequence of his conduct in this battle. In March 1822, while on duty at the Charlestown Navy Yard, he discovered a series of frauds upon the government, and, actuated in great measure by resentment at not having received leave of absence to visit his dying wife, he made very serious charges against the personal character of his commandant, Capt. Isaac Hull. Failing to prove these accusations when brought before a court-martial, Abbot was suspended from the naval service for the period of two years, after which he continued his otherwise distinguished career. He was commissioned captain, Oct. 3, 1850 (*United States Navy Register*, 1851), and in 1852 was chosen by Commodore M. C. Perry to command the frigate *Macedonian*, one of the vessels composing the fleet which carried out the famous expedition to Japan. During the fleet's sojourn in Pacific waters, Abbot was called upon by his chief to visit and report upon the Japanese, Bonin, and Philippine island groups, as well as Formosa. Upon Perry's return to the United States, Abbot became commanding officer of the fleet, in which position he gave proof of firmness and diplomatic qualities. He died at Hong Kong on Dec. 14, 1855, from the effects of the climate. He was twice married: in January 1820 to Mary

Wood of Newburyport, by whom he had one child, and who died Apr. 15, 1821; and on Nov. 29, 1825 to Laura Wheaton of Warren, R. I., by whom he had nine children.

[The chief sources of information concerning Joel Abbot are contained in the Office of Naval Records and Library, in the Navy Department at Washington, from which an account of his court-martial was published at Boston in 1822.]

E. B.

ABBOTT, AUSTIN (Dec. 18, 1831–Apr. 19, 1896), lawyer, author, was the second son of Jacob Abbott [*q.v.*] and brother of Benjamin Vaughan Abbott [*q.v.*], Edward Abbott [*q.v.*], and Lyman Abbott [*q.v.*]. He was born at Boston, his early education being obtained there and at Roxbury, Mass., and Farmington, Me. He became a student at New York University in 1847, where he graduated with high honors in 1851, delivering the English oration on that occasion. He then studied law, was admitted to the bar of New York City in 1852, and commenced practice there in partnership with Benjamin Vaughan Abbott under the firm name of "Abbott Brothers." Of his earliest literary efforts, two works of fiction, *Cone Cut Corners; the Experiences of a Conservative Family in Fanatical Times* (1855) and *Matthew Caraby* (1859), were written in collaboration with his brothers, Benjamin and Lyman, and published under the pseudonym "Benauly." In 1855 Austin and Benjamin jointly prepared the first volume of a series of *Reports of Practice Cases Determined in the Courts of the State of New York,* and thereafter for fifteen years, working in collaboration, produced legal text-books, reports, and digests, notable for variety, accuracy, scientific arrangement, and utility. During all this period Abbott continued in active practice and acquired a reputation for exceptional knowledge of legal principles combined with consistent untiring application. In 1865 he assisted the commissioners in preparing the codes of New York State. On the retirement of Benjamin Vaughan Abbott from the firm he practiced alone, and, after 1870, the brothers ceased to collaborate. Austin Abbott's first independent effort was *Reports of Decisions of the Court of Appeals of New York, 1850–69* in four volumes (1873–74), followed by the first volume of *New Cases, Courts of the State of New York* (1877), which ultimately extended to thirty-one volumes, covering the period 1876–94, the last volume appearing in 1894. He prepared a new edition of *Abbott's Digest of New York Statutes and Reports* in six volumes (1873), which he kept up to date by eight supplements, the last of which appeared in 1896. He published in 1880 *Trial Evidence, The Rules of Evidence Applicable on the Trials of Civil Actions*—"the most useful and

widely circulated of his works"—according to W. I. Washburn. Then in succession he wrote a series of "Briefs," material for which he had been accumulating for years: *Brief for the Trial of Civil Issues before a Jury* (1885), *The Principles and Forms of Practice in Civil Actions* (2 vols., 1887–88), *Brief for the Trial of Criminal Cases* (1889), *Brief on the Mode of Proving the Facts most Frequently in Issue or Collaterally in Question on the Trial of Civil or Criminal Cases* (1891), and *Brief for the Argument of Questions Arising upon the Pleadings on the Trial of Issues of Law or Fact in Civil Actions* (1891), all of which obtained a wide circulation which was not confined to New York state. Supplementing these, he compiled *Select Cases on Code Pleading* (1893) and *Select Cases on the Law of Evidence as Applied During the Examination of Witnesses* (1895), thus completing his texts on the incidents of trials. He was retained in much heavy litigation, appearing in many notable cases. He was of government counsel in the prosecution of Guiteau for the assassination of President Garfield, and held a brief in the action brought by Madison Avenue Congregational Church, New York, which resulted in the ejection of Bishop Newman from its pastorate. He was of counsel for the defense in Tilton *vs.* Beecher, and his success in this celebrated case procured for him a national reputation. See his *Official Report of the Trial of Henry Ward Beecher* (2 vols., 1875). A lawyer's lawyer, as it was termed, his advice was frequently sought in conference by other members of the bar when they were faced with serious difficulties.

In 1891 he accepted the position of dean of the Law School of the University of New York with the professorship of Pleading, Equity, and Evidence. In this post he exercised a lasting influence. He altered the curriculum, making the courses less academic and more practical, instilled new vigor into the teaching, and materially raised the standard of the school. He died in New York City, Apr. 19, 1896. At the time of his death he had in preparation *Forms of Pleadings in Actions,* which was completed by C. C. Alden (1898–99).

Abbott was tall of stature, slender in physique, unobtrusive, and somewhat nervous in manner, a man of "undeviating integrity and lofty sense of duty" always interested in philanthropic movements. He was fond of music, played the organ, had a good t nor voice, and indulged at times in musical composition. As his life history shows he was a prodigy of systematic, indefatigable industry. He was married twice, in 1854 to Ella E. D. Gilman, and in 1879 to Mrs. Anna Rowe Worth.

[The "Memorial of Austin Abbott," prepared by W. I. Washburn in *Ass. of the Bar of N.Y.C., Report,* 1898,

p. 103, is authoritative, as is the obituary notice contained in *Am. Bar Ass., Report,* 1896, p. 668. Well-balanced appreciations will be found in *Case and Comment,* VII, 37, XIX, 70; *Am. Law Rev.,* XXX, 581, and *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N.Y.,* ed. by D. McAdam *et al.* (1897), II, 8. See also Lib. Cat., Harvard Law School. For particulars of ancestry, see biography of Jacob Abbott.] H.W.H.K.

ABBOTT, BENJAMIN (1732–Aug. 14, 1796), religious enthusiast, was an evangelist of unusual power, who "ploughed and seeded to Methodism much of southern New Jersey." His grandfather, James, had emigrated to Long Island from Somersetshire, England; his father, after whom he was named, upon becoming of age went to New Jersey and there married the daughter of John Burroughs, sheriff of Hunterdon County. Afterward, he returned to Long Island, but finally settled in Pennsylvania, where he bought a plantation of four hundred acres of good land, and lived with credit. Benjamin's birthplace is generally given as Long Island, but G. A. Raybold states that he was born in Pennsylvania (*Reminiscences of Methodism in West Jersey,* 1849, p. 15). His mother died of a nervous complaint when he was a lad, and six weeks later an attack of smallpox ended his father's career. In his will the latter stipulated that his sons should all be taught trades; accordingly, Benjamin was apprenticed to a hatter in Philadelphia. Breaking away from his master after a time, he went to work for his brother on a farm in New Jersey, and upon coming into possession of his share in his father's estate, he hired a farm and worked it. In Philadelphia he had fallen in with evil companions and had become addicted to card-playing, cock-fighting, and drinking. Being of powerful frame, and keenly relishing a fight, he went to fairs and other gatherings to display his prowess. When he had been drinking he was apt to be quarrelsome, and sometimes got into trouble with the authorities. There was nothing petty in his nature, however, and he was industrious and good to his family. He continued this manner of life until he was about forty, but professed himself a Presbyterian, attended meetings, and was often alarmed for his soul. From his mother, perhaps, who the night before she died startled the household by her hysterical cries for God's mercy upon it, he inherited a tendency to religious excitability. He was subject to fits of fear and remorse, and to vivid dreams in which he sometimes found himself in hell. Finally, after fearful mental struggles, influenced by the preaching of Abraham Whitworth, he was converted on Oct. 12, 1772, and became a Methodist.

Throughout the remaining years of his life he went about admonishing and exhorting with an effect seldom equaled; first, as a local preacher, speaking in homes chiefly, and later, having been made a deacon in 1790, and ordained elder in 1793, as a circuit preacher. With fanatical passion he attacked Calvinism and presented Methodism as teaching the only way of salvation. His appeal was to fear, and he so impressed his hearers that frequently they fell to the floor or shrieked in terror. Soldiers and others who came to molest him always changed their minds under his spell. He soon wore himself out and died in Salem, N.J., where he is buried. An ignorant zealot though he was, and possibly, as has been charged, on the verge of madness, he turned many from evil ways and contributed not a little to the spread of Methodism in this country.

[John Ffirth, *Experience and Gospel Labours of the Rev. Benjamin Abbott* (1820); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* VII (1861); John Atkinson, *Hist. of the Origin of the Wesleyan Movement in America* (1896); J. M. Buckley, *Hist. of Methodists in the U.S.* (Am. Ch. Hist., vol. V, 1896); Robt. Southey, *Life of Wesley,* ed. by M. H. Fitzgerald (1925).] H.E.S.

ABBOTT, BENJAMIN VAUGHAN (June 4, 1830–Feb. 17, 1890), lawyer, author, the eldest son of Jacob Abbott [*q.v.*], and brother of Austin Abbott [*q.v.*], Edward Abbott [*q.v.*], and Lyman Abbott [*q.v.*], was born at Boston. His early education was acquired under the supervision of his father, and in 1846 he entered New York University, graduating in 1850. He then spent a year at the Harvard Law School, completing his legal studies in New York City. On admission to the New York bar in 1852, he commenced practice in that city in partnership with his brother Austin. Of his earliest literary efforts, two works of fiction, *Cone Cut Corners; the Experiences of a Conservative Family in Fanatical Times* (1855) and *Matthew Caraby* (1859), were written in conjunction with his brothers, Austin and Lyman, and published under the pseudonym "Benauly." In 1855, at the instigation of John S. Voorhies, the law publisher, he and Austin Abbott prepared the first of a series of New York practice reports which developed into *Abbott's Reports of Practice Cases in the Courts of the State of New York,* in nineteen volumes covering the period 1854–65, and continued to 1876 in *Reports of Practice Cases, New Series,* in sixteen volumes, the last nine volumes being by Austin Abbott alone. For fifteen years the two brothers, in collaboration, assiduously wrote treatises, compiled digests, and prepared reports which placed them in the front rank of contemporary legal authors. In rapid succession they produced a volume of *Reports of Cases in Admiralty, United States District Court for Southern New York, 1847–50* (1857) and *A Collection of Forms of Pleadings in Actions* (1858). In 1860 appeared their *Digest of New York Statutes and Reports,* in five volumes, which in ar-

rangement and method of treatment departed entirely from the form hitherto universally used. The cases were fitted into an analytical framework, showing the history of the law as developed by them; the addition of the state statutes was another novel feature. The work met with immediate success, and its plan has been followed in all subsequent legal digests. The first edition embraced cases and statutes to 1860, three supplements bringing it to November 1869, after which Austin Abbott continued it to January 1896. Their next joint production was *A Collection of Forms of Practice and Pleading in Actions* (1864), in two volumes, followed by a book of forms, *The Clerk's and Conveyancer's Assistant* (1866). In 1867 they issued the first volume of a work designed to do for the federal courts and laws what they had achieved for New York, *viz.*, a *Digest of the Reports of the United States Courts and Acts of Congress*, the first four volumes only of which were compiled by them jointly. Subsequently B. V. Abbott prepared four additional volumes bringing the work to 1880. Contemporaneously they prepared a volume of *Enactments Relative to the Federal Courts* (1869). The last works in which they collaborated were *General Digest of the Law of Corporations* (1869) and *A Treatise upon the United States Courts and their Practice* (1869), Volume II being by B. V. Abbott alone. In 1864, having withdrawn from active practice, he had been appointed secretary of the New York Code Commission and drafted a penal code which was placed before the legislature and became the basis of the existing law. In June 1870 he was appointed one of the commissioners to revise the Statutes of the United States, a work which occupied three years and resulted in the consolidation of sixteen volumes into one large octavo. The major part of this work was undertaken by him and he was recognized as the real author of the revision. He had the same year issued a *Digest of Reports of Indiana to the Year 1871*, followed by *Reports of Decisions Rendered in the Circuit and District Courts of the United States 1863–71* in two volumes (1870–71). He now devoted six years to a new *United States Digest*, which was issued in 1879 in fourteen volumes and subsequently kept up to date by nine annual supplements, the last being published in 1889. The year 1879 also saw the publication of his *Dictionary of Terms and Phrases used in American or English Jurisprudence* and *General Digest of English and American Cases on the Law of Corporations 1868–78*. His *Judge and Jury*, a popular exposition of leading legal topics, and *The Year Book of Jurisprudence*, a compend of general information, appeared in 1880, and a lighter work, *The Travelling Law School*, first lessons in government and law, four years later. In 1884 he also issued his *National Digest* of the decisions of United States courts up to that year in four volumes, subsequently continuing the digest to 1888 in a supplementary volume (1889). His last works were *The Patent Laws of all Nations* in two volumes (1886), *Decisions on the Law of Patents for Inventions, English Cases, 1662–1843* (1887) in three volumes, and *Addison on Contracts* with American notes (1888). For many years he contributed articles to the daily and weekly press and current periodicals, in addition to occasional editorial work for the Lawyers Co-operative Publishing Company of Rochester in connection with the *Central Reporter*, volumes I to III. The magnitude of his literary output necessarily engaged his undivided attention continuously, and he never actively interested himself in public life. Apart from his legal avocations his only interest was music, for which he had a discriminating taste, and which formed his only relaxation. He married in 1853 Elizabeth, daughter of John Titcomb of Farmington, Me., lived for the greater part of his life in Brooklyn, and died there Feb. 17, 1890.

[The fullest details of his life and work are contained in the *Green Bag*, II, 142, III, 1, where an excellent explanation of the novel features of his Digests is given. Notices will also be found in *Am. Law Rev.*, XXIV, 469 and *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N.Y.*, ed. by D. McAdam *et al.* (1897), I, 245. Other information may be obtained from the various introductions to his works. The Lib. Cat. of the Harvard Law School contains a good and detailed (but not complete) list of his writings. For particulars of his ancestry see biography of Jacob Abbott.]

H.W.H.K.

ABBOTT, CHARLES CONRAD (June 4, 1843–July 27, 1919), naturalist, archæologist, and author, was the son of Timothy Abbott and Susan Conrad, both of Quaker stock, the ancestors of the former having come from England in 1680 and those of the latter from Germany, at about the same time. The family, however, in later years had left the Society of Friends. Charles Conrad, one of four children, was born at Trenton, N. J., and spent almost his entire life in that neighborhood, coming into possession in 1874 of the old Abbott homestead, "Three Beeches," a few miles south of the city on the banks of the Delaware. He was educated at the Trenton Academy (1852–58) and in 1860 began the study of medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, graduating in 1865, though he never practiced. He was married in 1867 to Julia Olden and was survived by a son and two daughters. From his earliest days Abbott was a devoted student of nature, inheriting this interest, perhaps, from his maternal grandfather, Solomon W. Conrad, a botanist of note. Much of his time in early life being spent

at the Academy of Natural Sciences in Philadelphia, his contact with many scientists doubtless also had its influence upon his after life. He early became deeply interested in local archæology and Indian history of the Delaware Valley, and as early as 1875 was appointed field assistant to the Peabody Museum of Cambridge, Mass., to which institution he presented his extensive collection of early Indian material, numbering many thousand specimens. His volume on *Primitive Industry or Illustrations of Handiwork in Stone, Bone and Clay of the Native Races of the North Atlantic Seaboard* (1881) constitutes his most important contribution to science. Later he was connected for a time with the Museum of Science and Art of the University of Pennsylvania. The majority of his publications were short papers of a semi-popular character and more than one hundred of these appeared in the *American Naturalist, Popular Science Monthly, Science Gossip,* etc. In 1884 appeared *A Naturalist's Rambles about Home,* dealing with nature study in the vicinity of his delightful home on the Delaware, followed by *Days Out of Doors, Recent Rambles, Upland and Meadow, Travels in a Treetop,* etc. It is in connection with these works, which recall White's *Selborne,* that Abbott's name is most widely known. He also published, in later life, a number of sketches in *Lippincott's Magazine* and attempted some short stories and novels which were unsuccessful.

Abbott was short in stature with a square head, heavy drooping sandy mustache, deep-set eyes, and contracted brows. He was of rather combative disposition, expressing contempt for what he termed the "dry-as-dust-ical" closet naturalist. He stubbornly maintained his views in any argument even to insisting upon certain observations which subsequently were shown to be practically impossible. Perhaps this peculiarity of character came from his bluff Yorkshire antecedents or possibly from a certain embitterment due to the rejection of some of his earliest writings by scientific editors to whom they were submitted. To those who enjoyed the hospitality of the "Three Beeches" and who tramped with him over his home acres, where every spot was identified with some interesting meeting with beast, bird, or wild flower, he was an entirely different personality, and that is the Abbott whom one sees in his nature writings. His death occurred in Bristol, Pa., whither he had moved after the burning of his old home a few years before.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1920–21; biog. sketch, *Pop. Sci. Mo.,* Feb. 1887, p. 547; additional information from many years of personal acquaintance.]

W.S.

ABBOTT, EDWARD (July 15, 1841–Apr. 5, 1908), Congregational and Episcopal clergyman, author, was the youngest son of Jacob Abbott [*q.v.*] and brother of Austin Abbott [*q.v.*], Benjamin Vaughan Abbott [*q.v.*], and Lyman Abbott [*q.v.*]. Born at Farmington, Me., he prepared for college there and in the city of New York, where he graduated with honors from New York University in 1860. He then took the three years' course in theology at Andover Seminary, spending some months during that period in the service of the United States Sanitary Commission with the Army of the Potomac. He entered the Congregational ministry in 1863. After acting as chaplain to various public institutions in Boston for two years, he organized and became pastor of the Pilgrim Congregational Church in Cambridgeport, Mass. Four years later he resigned and became assistant editor of the *Congregationalist* in Boston. While holding this position he published *The Baby's Things: a Story in Verse for Christmas Eve* (1871), *A Paragraph History of the United States* (1875), *A Paragraph History of the Revolution* (1876), and other writings of a popular character. He resigned in 1878 to become editor of the *Literary World,* a position which he held until 1888, and again from 1895 to 1903. He was disturbed by the current liberalism; and in Lent of the same year (1878) in which he left the *Congregationalist* he was confirmed in the Episcopal Church. "He believed in it, not as a merely human, but as a Divine Institution, with a divinely appointed threefold ministry, and divinely constituted Sacraments" (*St. James's Parish,* p. 118). The separation from his former fellowship was without bitterness on either side, and "he held always to many of the religious and doctrinal traditions of his Puritan ancestry" (*Ibid.,* p. 118). Almost immediately after his confirmation he was brought into service as a lay-reader in Episcopal churches. As such he was soon placed in charge of the parish of St. James in North Cambridge, then a home-missionary enterprise. As soon as the regulations of the Church permitted he was made rector, and here he remained, successful and beloved, for the rest of his life, becoming rector emeritus in 1908. In addition to the works already mentioned he published *Revolutionary Times; Sketches of Our Country, Its People and Their Ways One Hundred Years Ago* (1876); *Long Look Books* (3 vols., 1877–80); a memoir of his father, Jacob Abbott, included in the "Memorial Edition" of Jacob Abbott's *The Young Christian* (1882); and various other memoirs, sketches of places, and the like.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1906–07; *St. James's Parish, Cambridge,* by Edward Abbott, with Memorials on the Author (1909).]

T.D.B.

ABBOTT, EMMA (Dec. 9, 1850–Jan. 5, 1891), dramatic soprano, was the daughter of Seth Abbott, son of Dyer Abbott, taverner of Concord,

N. H., and director of its Old South Choir. Seth married Almira Palmer of Woodstock, Vt., and eventually established himself as a vocal and instrumental teacher in Chicago, where his daughter Emma was born. In 1859 the child made her début in Peoria as a guitar-player and singer, before an audience of coal-miners, though she did not, as was later said, walk barefoot to the concert because of her family's extreme poverty. Giving lessons and singing in public, Emma in 1867 met Clara Louise Kellogg in Toledo, Ohio, and was by her encouraged to go to New York. There, about 1870, she studied with Errani, became the soprano of the Church of the Divine Paternity, and sang in concert with Ole Bull. In 1872, with the aid of the congregation and the blessing of Henry Ward Beecher (Martin, p. 28), she went to Europe to prepare herself for an operatic career, studying with Sangiovanni (Milan) and Delle Sedie (Paris), and appearing as Marie, in the *Daughter of the Regiment,* at Covent Garden, London, in 1876. After singing with Mapleson she returned to New York and formed her own company, managed by Eugene Wetherell of New York, whom she married in 1878. Thereafter, until her death in Salt Lake City, she toured the country, singing leading rôles in the Abbott English Opera Company. She began her operatic career with pietistic inhibitions which she was perforce obliged to drop by the way; tights in page rôles were justified by being "worn modestly"; her conscience finally allowed her to sing the "immoral" part of Traviata as "a woman who tried to be good"; proper motivation also sanctioned the fervor of the "Abbott kiss," renowned in its day though James Huneker (*Steeplejack,* 1920, II, 155) said, "Emma Abbott and her famous 'kiss' do not impress me." Originally not very flexible, her voice, praised by Gounod, was pure and pleasant, but her singing was often mannered. George P. Upton's statement (*Musical Memories,* 1908, p. 117) that "she manufactured a very fluent technic out of this unbending voice by the hardest kind of work" may be accepted as valid. Among her famous leads were those in *Traviata, Romeo and Juliette, Paul and Virginia, Pinafore, Martha,* and *Sonnambula.* She was sincere, kind-hearted, impetuous, and though she committed artistic solecisms, did her share in popularizing opera in the United States. Clara Louise Kellogg (*Memoirs of an American Prima Donna,* 1913, p. 2) insists that Emma's "thirst for profits was the indirect means of her death," a cold caught in a primitive dressing-room in Ogden, Utah Territory, developing into pneumonia. But the initial friendship between the singers had cooled, and the opinions of one prima donna regarding another must always be taken with a grain of salt.

Abbott

[Sadie E. Martin, *The Life and Professional Career of Emma Abbott* (1891), though sentimental and overlaudatory in describing the singer's achievement, may be accepted as generally reliable regarding the fact data. In addition to the works mentioned in the text, *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians, Am. Supp.* (1920), *Baker's Biog. Dict. of Musicians* (3rd ed., 1919), and *De Bekker's Music and Musicians* (rev. ed., 1925) contain brief notices.]

F. H. M.

ABBOTT, FRANK (Sept. 5, 1836–Apr. 20, 1897), dentist, was born in Shapleigh, York County, Me., of an English family which settled in Andover, Mass., in 1640. He was a farm boy, attending the schools of his native town until the age of sixteen, after which he "knocked about" the country for three years. At nineteen he began the study of dentistry with Dr. J. E. Ostrander, Oneida, N. Y., and three years later set up in practice in Johnstown, N. Y. In the Civil War, he served as first lieutenant in the 115th New York Volunteer Infantry, and was captured at Harper's Ferry in September 1862. On being exchanged, he returned to his practice in Johnstown. A year later he removed to New York City, where he matriculated as a medical student in New York University, receiving his M.D. degree in 1871. In 1866 he was appointed clinical lecturer in New York College of Dentistry; in 1868 professor of operative dentistry; in 1869 dean, serving until his death. At the close of the session of 1894–95 he demanded that the trustees establish a chair of pathology and bacteriology, with his son as incumbent. This was refused. He then sought to have the regents of the University of the State of New York withdraw the act of incorporation of the college and substitute a new charter from the regents. This also failed, as did other moves subsequently initiated.

Abbott will be remembered longest through the operative instruments he invented. These embraced forms for almost every phase of the dentist's work,—scalers, chisels, excavators, pluggers,—some of which still survive. His automatic mallet (patented Aug. 16, 1887) was the first with an effective back-action. He was the author of a text-book *Dental Pathology and Practice* (1896), was active in dental-society work, read many papers, and was president of the American Dental Association (1888) and of the National Association of Dental Faculties (1895). He was also a notable collector of rare prints, specializing in American history. Positive in his convictions, aggressive and imperious, he became a zealot in any cause he embraced. Something of a *poseur,* he liked applause. At a meeting of the New Jersey State Dental Society, at which the views he presented weer rather badly manhandled, he seized his papers and, snapping out something about a "nest of hornets," left precipitately. (The mem-

bers proudly adopted the epithet and for years termed themselves "hornets.")

Abbott was tall and was inclined to portliness; a decided blond, with regular features, luxuriant side-whiskers and mustache, a rather impressive figure. He was married in Johnstown to Catharine Ann Cuyler, who with three children survived him. A few of the more important papers he contributed were: "Light *vs.* Heavy Gold Foil and Crystal Gold," *Transactions of the American Dental Association,* 1870, pp. 130–33; "Indigestion, its Causes and Effects," *Transactions of the State Dental Society of New York,* 1875, pp. 39–48; "Caries of Human Teeth," *Dental Cosmos,* XXI, 1879, pp. 57–64, 113–25, 177–84; "Pericementitis (Periostitis), Its Causes and Treatment," *Dental Cosmos,* XXV, 1883, pp. 418–23; "Microscopical Studies upon the Absorption of the Roots of Temporary Teeth," *Transactions of the State Dental Society of New York,* 1884, pp. 45–53; "Hyperostosis of Roots of Teeth," *Transactions of the American Dental Association,* 1886, pp. 105–24; "Odontoblasts in Their Relation to Developing Dentine," *Ibid.,* 1888, pp. 112–22; "Growth of Enamel," *Ibid.,* 1889, pp. 39–53.

[*Trans. Am. Dental Ass.,* 1897, pp. 31–32; *Dental Cosmos,* 1897, pp. 514–15; *N.Y. Times,* Apr. 22, 1897; see also *Hist. of Dental Surgery* (1910), ed. by C.R.E. Koch.]

F.L.H.

ABBOTT, FRANK FROST (Mar. 27, 1860–July 23, 1924), classical scholar, was born at Redding, Conn., the son of Thaddeus Marvin and Mary Jane (Frost) Abbott. His father was a considerable landowner and a man of varied interests, who was actively concerned with religious and political questions, was probate judge at Redding, deacon in the Congregational church, and a representative in the state legislature. His mother was born and brought up in the city of New York and attended Miss Willard's School at Troy, N. Y. The son of these parents was brought up in an atmosphere of broad culture and in a region of much natural beauty. After obtaining the degree of A.B. at Yale University in 1882, he continued his studies and obtained the degree of Ph.D. at the same university in 1891. He was married, June 21, 1888, to Jane Harrison, of New Haven, a descendant of early settlers of Connecticut. Among her ancestors were soldiers of the Revolutionary War and several graduates of Yale College. In the year 1888–89 Abbott studied at the Universities of Berlin and Bonn and spent some time in Rome. He was tutor in Latin at Yale from 1884 to 1891, when he was chosen as the first member of the faculty of the newly founded University of Chicago. Here he drew up the first curriculum of the university, and his scholarship and

constructive ability caused him to exert great influence upon the plans and policies of the young institution. He remained at Chicago as associate professor of Latin until 1894, then as professor of Latin until 1908, when he left Chicago to accept the Kennedy Professorship of Latin at Princeton University, a position which he retained until his death. He was professor of Latin in the American School of Classical Studies in Rome for the year 1901–02, and president of the American Philological Association in the year 1917–18. At the time of his death he was a trustee of the American Academy in Rome. He died at Montreux, Switzerland.

Professor Abbott was tall,—about six feet in height,—slender, and of delicate appearance, with dark hair and mustache. He was never robust, as he suffered from pulmonary trouble, and at one time, while he was in Chicago, he was obliged to give up teaching for a year; but he endured his long and discouraging illness cheerfully and without complaint, though it forced him to forego most of the social pleasures which he enjoyed. He was a delightful companion, a lover of literature and art with a keen appreciation and wide knowledge of both, full of delicate humor, and gifted with a keen but always kindly wit. One of his distinguishing characteristics was his invariable courtesy to every one with whom he came in contact.

As a scholar he was diligent, accurate, and conscientious. The trend of his mind was historical, and his chosen field was the life of the ancient Romans, its unbroken continuity through the centuries, and its connection with the life of the modern world. He devoted himself to the study of the political and social life of the Romans as expressed in their language, literature, political and social institutions. Though he was an original investigator he did not disdain to publish the results of his investigations, often combined with those of others, in such form as to appeal to those who are not professional scholars. He was an inspiring teacher, especially for the more mature students. His published works include, in addition to articles in American and foreign classical and philological periodicals, an edition of *Selected Letters of Cicero* (1897); *Repetition in Latin* (1900); *A History and Description of Roman Political Institutions* (1901); *The Toledo Manuscript of the Germania of Tacitus* (1903); *A Short History of Rome* (1906); *Society and Politics in Ancient Rome* (1909); *The Common People of Ancient Rome* (1911); *The Spanish Pleas of Alberico Gentili,* Volume I, Latin text with introduction; Volume II, Translation with introduction (1921); *Roman Politics* (1923); *Municipal*

Administration in the Roman Empire, published after his death with the aid of Allan Chester Johnson (1926).

[*Who's Who in America,* XII; *N.Y. Times,* July 28, 1924; private correspondence.] H.N.F.

ABBOTT, HORACE (July 29, 1806–Aug. 8, 1887), iron manufacturer, descended from George Abbott, who died in Rowley, Mass., 1647, was born in Sudbury, Mass., the fifth child of Alpheus and Lydia (Fay) Abbott. His opportunities for book education were of the slightest, and at the age of sixteen he was apprenticed to a blacksmith in Westboro, Mass. Here he served out his apprenticeship, after which he spent two years as a journeyman and then set up for himself as a country blacksmith at Westboro. In 1836, at the age of thirty, Horace and his equally capable brother, Edwin Augustus Abbott, moved to Baltimore. There he turned his attention to the manufacture of iron, secured the Canton Iron Works, then owned by Peter Cooper of New York, and for fourteen years specialized in the production of wrought-iron shafts, cranks, axles, and other necessities for steamboats and railroads. It was during this period that he forged the first large steamship shaft made in this country, a shaft designed for the Russian frigate *Kamtschatka,* built in New York for the Emperor Nicholas I. This and other manufacturing feats brought to his foundry well-deserved prestige. In 1850 Abbott constructed a rolling-mill which was believed to be capable of turning out the largest rolled plate in the United States. A second rolling-mill of the same size and capacity as the first was erected in 1857, a third large mill in 1859, and a fourth in 1861.

Abbott's rolling-mills proved of great value to the federal government during the Civil War. In them were made the armor plates for the *Monitor* and for nearly all of the vessels of the *Monitor* class built on the Atlantic coast. Ericsson when he designed the first monitor believed that it would be necessary to order the plates in Europe, and the ability of Abbott to produce them considerably speeded their completion. So essential was the service rendered by the Abbott mills that the employees were exempted from the draft, and Abbott himself was especially commended by Secretary of the Navy Welles for the rapidity of his execution of government orders. At the conclusion of the war in 1865 a group of capitalists purchased the Canton Iron Works, organized a stock company under the corporate name of the Abbott Iron Company of Baltimore, and elected Horace Abbott president. Abbott's interests, however, were not confined to iron manufacturing. He was a leader in the establishment of national banks in Baltimore, being one of the originators of the First National Bank, of which he was either a director or vice-president until his death, and a director of the Second National Bank. He was also a director of the Baltimore Copper Company and the Union Railroad of Baltimore.

Abbott was a man of distinguished presence and tireless industry. He lived to be eighty-one years of age, but partial paralysis had incapacitated him for eight years before his final collapse at "Abbottsford," his country seat on the outskirts of Baltimore. He had married in 1830 Charlotte Hapgood, by whom he had seven children, only one of whom survived him.

[Lemuel A. Abbott, *Descendants of George Abbott of Rowley, Mass.* (2 vols., 1906) II, 731–33, and the *Baltimore Sun,* Aug. 9, 1887.] H.U.F.

ABBOTT, JACOB (Nov. 14, 1803–Oct. 31, 1879), Congregational clergyman, educator, writer of children's books, son of Jacob Abbot 2nd and Betsey Abbot, and brother of Gorham Dummer Abbot [*q.v.*], and John S. C. Abbott [*q.v.*], was descended from George Abbot of Andover, who came to New England from Yorkshire as early as 1640. Jacob was born in Hallowell, Me., and after attending school in Brunswick, Me., and the Hallowell Academy, entered Bowdoin College, where he showed a leaning toward the physical sciences. While here he added an extra "t" to his name. He graduated in 1820, and in 1820–21 taught at Portland Academy, where Longfellow was one of his pupils, and in 1823 at Beverly, Mass. He studied theology at Andover Seminary in 1821–22 and 1824. In 1824–25 he was tutor, and in 1825 became professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Amherst College. After being licensed to preach by the Hampshire Association, May 3, 1826, he occasionally supplied the pulpit in the college chapel and in the Congregational church of the neighboring town of Hatfield. He married Harriet Vaughan of Hallowell, Me., May 18, 1828, and removed soon afterwards to Boston, where he founded the Mount Vernon School, one of the pioneer institutions in America for the education of young women. Abbott here showed his unusual talent for the instruction and government of the young, and introduced many innovations which have now become part of our educational system. Throwing over traditional disciplinary methods, he appealed to the honor and conscience of his pupils by making the school largely self-governing. After several very successful years as principal of this school, Abbott found his interests turning more to preaching and authorship, and in 1833 he resigned and the following year became minister of the Eliot

Congregational Church in Roxbury, Mass. In 1835 he gave his pastoral charge to his brother, John S. C. Abbott, and, except for associating himself with his brothers in the founding and conducting of Abbott's Institution in New York City, from 1843 to 1851, and the short-lived Mount Vernon School for boys (1845–48), he devoted the remainder of his life to literary endeavor.

In 1832 Abbott published his first important work, *The Young Christian.* Its success was immediate, and it remained probably his most widely known book, went into many editions in America and the British Isles, and was translated into French and Dutch. The next volume in the same series, *The Corner Stone* (1834), raised considerable outcry in quarters hostile to Unitarianism, especially in England, where Abbott's emphasis upon practical Christianity was mistakenly thought to cover Arian leanings. The book even became the subject of one of the famous Oxford *Tracts for the Times* (No. 73) by J. H. Newman, although, after their meeting in the course of Abbott's first trip to Europe in 1843, the two men became cordial friends. In later editions of *The Corner Stone* Abbott changed certain equivocal passages to prevent further misapprehension of his views, which were substantially those of the more liberal Evangelicals of his period. He was a most prolific writer. A bibliography of his works lists 180 volumes of which he was sole author and thirty-one more of which he was joint author or editor, not to mention many articles in current periodicals. A number of these books were republished in England, Scotland, Ireland, Germany, Holland, France, and India, and secured for their author a wide contemporary reputation. They show a great diversity of subject-matter in religious, educational, literary, and historical fields. His famous *Rollo* series alone, begun in 1834, comprised twenty-eight volumes—*Rollo at Work, Rollo at Play, Rollo's Travels,* etc.—in which, in the form of simple stories, he attempted to provide rudimentary instruction for children in daily ethics, religion, natural science, travel, and similar subjects. Rollo and his companions belong to that inquisitive and edifying company in juvenile fiction which followed the Rousseauistic *Sandford and Merton* of Thomas Day and preceded the cheerful unregenerates of Thomas Bailey Aldrich and Mark Twain. Abbott thought of his books, not primarily as literary creations, but as instruments for the accomplishment of certain definite results in human life and character. With all their quaint formality and unconscious humor, these stories were read by an entire generation of American children, who were presumably benefited by the exemplary patterns of conduct, as they were certainly pleased by the author's gift for homely anecdote and illustration.

After his years of teaching and school management, Abbott continued to live in New York City until 1870, making several trips to Europe and writing many of the later *Rollo* books, the *Red Histories,* the *Science for the Young* series, etc. His wife had died in 1843, and in 1853 he married Mrs. Mary (Dana) Woodbury. The last years of his life were spent in quiet retirement at "Fewacres" in Farmington, Me., where he died.

[Short biog. by his son, Edward Abbott, prefixed to the Memorial Edition of *The Young Christian* (1882), bibliography appended; essay by Lyman Abbott, "Jacob Abbott, Friend of Children," in *Silhouettes of My Contemporaries* (1921); many manuscripts, journals, personal papers, etc., in the Abbott Room of the Bowdoin Coll. Lib.]

S. P. C.
J. K. S.

ABBOTT, JOHN STEVENS CABOT (Sept. 18, 1805–June 17, 1877), Congregational clergyman, historian, son of Jacob Abbot 2nd and Betsey Abbot, and brother of Gorham Dummer Abbot [*q.v.*] and Jacob Abbott [*q.v.*], was born in Brunswick, Me. Jacob and John added a "t" to the family name. The Abbot household represented the best and gentlest tradition of New England Puritanism. The boy received his schooling at Hallowell and Portland Academies, and entered Bowdoin College in the class of 1825, which included Nathaniel Hawthorne and Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. Upon graduation, he served for a year as principal of the academy in Amherst, Mass., and then for three years pursued a theological course at Andover Seminary, engaging also in the establishment of Sunday-schools along the southern shore of Cape Cod. Immediately following his graduation at Andover (1829), he entered upon his first pastorate, in Worcester, Mass., where he was ordained Jan. 28, 1830. On Aug. 17, 1830 he was married to Jane Williams Bourne of New Bedford, Mass. He held pastorates, successively, at the Central Calvinistic Church, Worcester (1829–34); the Eliot Congregational Church, Roxbury (1835–41); and the First Congregational Church, Nantucket (1841–43). A restless energy unfitted him for long-continued service in one place; it appeared also in his type of pulpit oratory—strongly evangelistic, little philosophical, but well supplied with historical illustrations and aiming chiefly at practical piety. His career as an author had begun, in 1833, with the publication of *The Mother at Home, or the Principles of Maternal Duty Familiarly Illustrated,* a compilation of a series of lectures before the mothers' association of his parish. In 1843 Gorham D. Abbot, with the coöperation of Jacob and Charles, founded a seminary for young ladies in New York

City. It was called by various titles—usually "Abbott's Institution" (*New York Tribune,* May 19, 1899). In December they were joined by John S. C. Abbott, who devoted himself chiefly to the affairs of this school for the next eight or ten years of his life. In 1853 he returned to Brunswick, to educate his son at Bowdoin, and to make use of the college library in completing his life of Napoleon, which was appearing in *Harper's Magazine* (1851–54) and was achieving for that periodical its initial success. The book, *The History of Napoleon Bonaparte,* was published in 1855 and enjoyed an enormous popularity, though it was also the most severely censured of his writings. It is marked by extravagant eulogy of Napoleon, whom Abbott portrays as "more than a hero, more than an Emperor," and again as "a man to whose name alone is attached inexhaustible admiration and imperishable remembrance." This strain of hero-worship, characteristic of Abbott's enthusiastic temperament, antagonized many American editors and critics,—among them, Horace Greeley and Charles A. Dana; it was even hinted that he had been bribed by French gold!

Returning to the active ministry in 1861, Abbott held for five years the pastorate of the Howe Street Church, New Haven, Conn. Meantime he continued with great energy his course of historical writing and publication. Of the numerous works which followed the life of Napoleon, the best-known were: *The Empire of Austria* (1859); *The Empire of Russia* (1860); *Italy* (1860); *Civil War in America* (2 vols., 1863, 1866); *History of Napoleon III* (1868); *Romance of Spanish History* (1869); and *History of Frederick the Great* (1871). In search of material, Abbott made two trips to France (the first before 1859, and the second in 1867), where he came into friendly relations with the Emperor Napoleon III. Although his principal effort was put into his European histories, he wrote copiously in other fields,—American history, biography, ethics, religion, popular science, and juvenile literature. Of his ethical works, *The Mother at Home* had a very considerable vogue both in the United States and in Europe, where it was translated into many languages; and *Practical Christianity* (1862) also was widely read. A didactic purpose is hardly less pervasive in the histories. In a late preface he says, "I have written fifty-four volumes. In every one it has been my endeavor to make the inhabitants of this sad world more brotherly,—better and wiser." His last literary work, a series called *Pioneers and Patriots of America,* was written at Fair Haven, Conn., where he was minister of the Second Church. In this his last pastorate (1870–74), his health began to fail, and after a prolonged illness he died, at Fair Haven, in his seventy-second year.

In Abbott's historical works quotations from such writers as Thiers, Alison, Napier, and Carlyle are numerous and extensive. His own writing abounds in exuberant rhetoric and melodramatic incident. To the discerning among his contemporaries it was plain that he was a florid writer, overfond of moralizing, and lacking independent authority; but to a large public who cared more for picturesque narrative than for sober interpretation the books were of absorbing interest, and undoubtedly they did much to popularize the reading of history.

[*Memorial of John S. C. Abbott,* by Rev. Horatio O. Ladd, his son-in-law (1878). The bibliography on pp. 24–25 is incomplete and inaccurate. Personal papers, etc., in the Abbott Room of the Bowdoin Coll. Lib.]

S. P. C.
R. E. H.

ABBOTT, JOSEPH CARTER (July 15, 1825–Oct. 8, 1881), journalist, politician, son of Aaron and Nancy (Badger) Abbott, was a descendant, in the seventh generation, of George Abbot of Andover, who came to New England from Yorkshire as early as 1640. He was born in Concord, N. H., graduated from Phillips Academy, Andover, and was admitted to the bar in Concord. He entered New Hampshire politics by the road of journalism. For five years he owned and edited the *Manchester Daily American.* His success in this venture brought him the editorship of the distinguished old "Whig organ of New England," the *Boston Atlas and Bee,* from 1859 to 1861. As adjutant-general of New Hampshire he was among the first to offer troops to President Lincoln in April 1861 (*Official Records,* ser. III, vol. I). By December he had become lieutenant-colonel of the 7th Regiment of New Hampshire Volunteers, and two years later he was made its colonel. In the operations around Petersburg he several times received favorable mention (*Ibid.,* ser. I, vol. XXXVI, pt. II). He commanded a brigade in the attack on Fort Fisher, and for his "gallant and meritorious service" there was brevetted brigadier-general, Jan. 15, 1865 (*Ibid.,* ser. I, vol. XLVI, pt. I). Thus far his public career had been marked by correct and well-balanced conduct and by remarkably good fortune.

Settling in North Carolina, at Wilmington, he reëntered journalism and politics and was soon recognized as a leader in the new Republican party of the state. His strength came primarily from the negroes, in whose capacity he apparently believed and whom he organized and counseled in ways that brought him blunt warnings from white Wilmingtonians. In the constitutional conven-

tion of 1868 he manifested neither chivalry nor idealism. His chief interests, aside from politics, were internal improvements and state finance. Next year, while in the legislature, he entered into the pay of a "ring" that had similar major interests (Wm. M. Shipp, *North Carolina Fraud Commission Report* (1872), p. 316). Elected to the federal Senate in 1868, he at once became, as was his custom, attentive and busy in that body. He spoke orthodoxly on suffrage matters (*Congressional Globe,* 40 Cong., 3 Sess., p. 980). He was helpful in handling the details of army administration. He strove earnestly for the improvement of the Wilmington harbor and hoped for a federal charter consolidating the railroads of the Carolinas and making them the eastern part of a southern transcontinental system. But his claim of altruistic service in the rebuilding of North Carolina obtained no favorable response. A duty on peanuts was his utmost achievement in the Senate (*Ibid.*, 41 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 2052, 3518, 3683, 4898). His party did not renominate him. For ten years more (1871–81) he lived on in Wilmington, a short, stout man of soldierly bearing and speech, thrice married but childless. Most of this time, as previously, he conducted a lumber manufacturing business and edited the *Wilmington Post.* The latter, a Republican weekly newspaper, compared favorably with its contemporaries. But, although during this period he was given campaign funds to disburse by political sympathizers outside the state and received federal office in Wilmington from Hayes as well as from Grant, he never recovered party leadership. The historians of the state even now mention him only to condemn him.

[J. G. de Roulhac Hamilton, *Reconstruction in N.C.* (1914) covers Abbott's Reconstruction activities thoroughly and mercilessly. An obituary was published in the *Wilmington Post,* Oct. 9, 1881, and reprinted in the *Raleigh Evening Visitor,* Oct. 10, 1881. There is a fairly accurate sketch in the *Cyc. Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas of the Nineteenth Century* (1892).]

C. C. P.

ABBOTT, LYMAN (Dec. 18, 1835–Oct. 22, 1922), Congregational clergyman, editor, author, was born in Roxbury, Mass., the son of Jacob Abbott [*q.v.*] and Harriet (Vaughan) Abbott. Before he was three years old, his parents transferred their residence to Farmington, Me. There, directly opposite the home of his paternal grandfather, on a pleasantly located ten-acre estate known as "Little Blue," Lyman Abbott, his two older brothers, and a younger brother, lived until the death of their mother in 1843, which led to the family's removal to New York City. Lyman prepared for college, first under his uncle Samuel, who, having acquired "Little Blue," had opened it as a school for boys; and then under his uncle Charles, in a similar school in Norwich, Conn. In 1849, at the age of fourteen, he entered New York University, where he was chiefly influenced by C. S. Henry, professor of philosophy, and Howard Crosby, professor of Greek. On graduation in 1853, he accepted the invitation of his brothers, Austin and Vaughan, to join their law firm already established in New York City. On Oct. 14, 1857 he married his second cousin, Abby Frances Hamlin. During the two following years, despite the fact that his reputation as a lawyer and the income from his practice were increasing, boyhood aspirations for the ministry revived. After much deliberation, he decided, July 13, 1859, to abandon the law. He prepared himself to preach, chiefly through his own reading and study, and through suggestions from his father and his uncle John S. C. Abbott [*q.v.*]. He was ordained at Farmington, Me., Mar. 12, 1860, and on Mar. 31 took charge of the Congregational church in Terre Haute, Ind. He remained there during the stirring years of the Civil War, adapting himself to the atmosphere of a mid-western city and ministering effectively to a church in which he was allowed a freedom of utterance somewhat unusual in those days, but essential to a man of his liberal spirit. He played an important part in clarifying the issues of the great contest and in comforting anxious and bereaved hearts. As the war drew to its end he, like Lincoln, sought to heal the wounds caused by internecine strife and to assist in the physical and moral reconstruction of the South, with whose peculiar problems Abbott sympathized keenly then and in all subsequent years. Despite the protests of devoted parishioners and other citizens of Terre Haute, he was led to resign his pastorate Feb. 27, 1865, and to become corresponding secretary of the American Union Commission, formed by a group of New York ministers and laymen to coöperate with the government in the work of reconstruction. He held this position four years. In connection with it he was pastor from 1866 to 1869 of the New England Congregational Church, just organized, on Forty-first St., New York City. Meanwhile, he had begun book reviewing for *Harper's Magazine,* and the connection thus made with the house of Harper & Brothers provided in considerable part, as it developed, the resources needed for the maintenance of his family during the early seventies. He also had charge of a church in Cornwall, where he built the home which was the center of the family's life during subsequent years.

His labors in the field of journalism and authorship grew more extensive and lucrative and led to his appointment in 1870, by the American Tract Society, as editor of its new periodical called

The Illustrated Christian Weekly. In this office he continued till 1876, when he became associated with Henry Ward Beecher in the editorship of the *Christian Union.* He had always been an admirer of Beecher, by whose vehement utterances in opposition to slavery he had been greatly influenced in pre-war days. With Beecher's withdrawal from the paper in 1881, Abbott became editor-in-chief and so continued after the name of the paper, in 1893, was changed to the *Outlook.* When Beecher died, Mar. 8, 1887, his great church, Plymouth Congregational in Brooklyn, turned to Abbott as his successor. Invited at first to act as temporary pastor, he was extended a call to the permanent pastorate on May 26, 1888 by a vote of 400 to 60 and was installed on Jan. 16, 1890 by a large council, unusual in that it included representatives of various denominations. He retired early in 1899, temporarily wearied with his double load as pastor and editor, but having maintained throughout the ten years the high pulpit standards of Plymouth Church and its prestige, membership, and influence. Henceforth he devoted himself chiefly to the development of the *Outlook* and to preaching and speaking in colleges and universities, on many platforms and on many different public occasions, where he advocated effectively important movements and reforms. The *Outlook* under his guiding hand became a powerful journal, the exponent of progressive and practical Christianity, distinguished for its enterprise, fairness, and literary qualities. Its success was furthered by Abbott's judicious selection, as associate editors, of Hamilton Mabie and Lawson Valentine. In 1912 it was one of the outstanding journals which supported, even at the cost of losing subscribers, the presidential candidacy of Theodore Roosevelt and the platform of the Progressive party. Later it advocated the early participation of the United States in the World War.

Slender, erect, energetic, of about the average height, Abbott impressed one as a man of force well under control and directed to definite ends. His long, flowing beard, whitening with the years, gave to his countenance a patriarchal appearance. His style was quiet and unadorned, though not lacking in fervor when emotions and convictions were deeply aroused. His strength was in his gift of analysis, comparison, and clear statement. Few equaled him in the ability to draw sharp and effective contrasts. He was a rapid and prolific writer, and his books were numerous. One of the most influential was *The Life and Literature of the Ancient Hebrews* (1901), in which while accepting the verdicts of modern Biblical scholarship he pointed out the abiding moral and spiritual values of the Old Testament. In his *Theology of an Evolutionist* (1897) he interpreted sympathetically the scientific conclusions of such men as Huxley, Tyndall, and Spencer and yet supported the essentials of the historic Christian faith. Two of his most widely circulated devotional books were *The Other Room* (1903) and *The Great Companion* (1904). His *Henry Ward Beecher* (1903) and *The Spirit of Democracy* (1910) represent other phases of his literary activity.

[Abbott's *Reminiscences* (1915), new ed. with an introduction by his son Ernest Hamlin Abbott covering his last years (1923), and *What Christianity Means to Me* (1921); the *Outlook,* Nov. 8, 1922, biographical number with character sketches by his associates and tributes from many distinguished Americans; the Abbott manuscript collection at Bowdoin Coll.]

H. A. B.

ABBOTT, SAMUEL WARREN (June 12, 1837–Oct. 22, 1904), physician, statistician, a pioneer leader of the American public health movement, was born in Woburn, Mass., the son of Ruth (Winn) and Capt. Samuel Abbott. He attended the Phillips Andover Academy and Brown University, taking his A.M. degree at the latter institution in 1858. He then began the study of medicine, first with Dr. Benjamin Cutter of Woburn, and later at the Harvard Medical School, where he received the M.D. degree in 1862. He was immediately appointed assistant surgeon in the federal navy, served in that capacity for two years, and was then transferred to the army. He saw much active service in Virginia as surgeon of the 1st Massachusetts Cavalry, 1864–65. In 1864 he returned temporarily from the front to marry Martha W. Sullivan of Woburn. At the conclusion of the Civil War he began the practice of medicine at Woburn and Wakefield. He established a moderate general practice but soon became especially interested in community health problems. He was probably the first physician in the state to establish standards for the production of a pure and reliable vaccine for use against smallpox; and in this connection he published a study of the "Uses and Abuses of Animal Vaccination" in the *Public Health Papers and Reports* (1882, vol. VIII). In 1886 he was appointed secretary of the Massachusetts Board of Health, the first real state board of health in the United States, and in this capacity he served until his death. Here his reputation as an outstanding leader of the public health movement was established. It was his good fortune to direct the board through the period when demography and bacteriology were first making a reality of preventive medicine. Abbott proved to possess, besides general medical ability, one notable characteristic of peculiar value to a man in his position; namely, a genius for the study of vital statistics. The science of demography was then making rapid progress in

Great Britain, and Abbott's potential ability in this field was doubtless stimulated by his contacts with the able British statistician, William Farr, whom he visited in England soon after his appointment to the Massachusetts State Board. Farr's standard work entitled *Vital Statistics* was published in London in 1885, and Abbott began in the following year to edit the annual *Report to the Legislature of Massachusetts Relating to the Registry and Return of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* (1887–91). He also edited *A Summary of the Vital Statistics of the New England States for the Year 1892* (1895). These two works became the model American statistical studies for the period. Some of the reports were of considerable value to the entire medical profession, notably the study of the "Influenza Epidemic of 1889–90," which appeared in the *Twenty-First Annual Report of the State Board of Health* (1890). Abbott's best-known work, however, was the fruit of his growing interest in the whole field of public health. This was his *Past and Present Condition of Public Hygiene and State Medicine in the United States* (1900). It was perhaps the first serious study of the development of the public health movement in this country.

[W. B. Atkinson, *Physicians and Surgeons of the U.S.* (1878); R. D. Leigh, *Federal Health Administration in the U.S.* (1927); R. F. Stone, *Biogs. of Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons* (1894); G. C. Whipple, *State Sanitation* (1917), containing photograph of Abbott, I, 207; personal recollections of Dr. Henry Walcott, of Cambridge, Mass., former president of the Mass. State Board of Health.]

R. H. S.

ABBOTT, WILLIAM HAWKINS (Oct. 27, 1819–Jan. 8, 1901), pioneer petroleum producer and refiner, the son of David and Hannah (Hawkins) Abbott, was born on his father's farm in Middlebury, New Haven County, Conn., the eldest of a family of twelve children. Until he was eighteen years of age Abbott helped with the farm work and completed the common-school curriculum, attending during the winter months. Then, with the approval of his father, he became a clerk in a general store at Watertown, Conn. He remained in this position until 1844, gaining a considerable amount of business experience and developing a character recognized for its industry and ambition. In September 1845 he was married to Jane Wheeler. When twenty-five years old, he removed to Newton Falls, Trumbull County, Ohio, where he entered the employ of a large general mercantile business. A year later, when the partners for whom he worked gave up this business relationship, Abbott joined with one of them and continued the store as Bronson & Abbott for another year. This partnership was dissolved a year later, both members continuing separate businesses. Another year passed and Abbott bought out his former partner as well as an established real estate business in Newton and continued the two on his own account with marked success until 1862. In 1859 Col. E. L. Drake had brought in the first oil well near Titusville, Pa., and partly from curiosity but mainly as a matter of business, Abbott visited there the following spring. What he saw prompted him to take a part interest in the lease of the near-by Parker farm, on which a well was being drilled. When this came into production some months later, Abbott, still a resident of Ohio, went to New York to establish a market for this oil and succeeded in selling 200 barrels at thirty-five cents a gallon to Schieffelin Brothers, an extensive drug and chemical house in New York. This deal may be said to mark the beginning of the oil trade. Abbott, too, was the moving spirit in the construction of the first refinery at Titusville, the plant beginning operations in January 1861. Throughout this year Abbott carried on his oil interests chiefly from his Ohio home, but in 1862 he moved with his family to Titusville, and during the same year brought the first coal for domestic use to Titusville and thus established the first retail coal business. Three years later he leased a large acreage of coal lands in Mercer County, Pa., and for years thereafter engaged successfully in coal mining. In 1865 he organized a company and built at a cost of $200,000 the Titusville and Pitt-Hole plank road. Meanwhile he was expanding his oil interests. In 1867 he formed with Henry Harley the Pennsylvania Transportation Company, the first of the great oil pipe-line consolidations, and finally in 1870 he was instrumental in reviving active interest in the earlier projected Union & Titusville Railroad Company, with the result that the road was opened in 1871. Thereafter until his death, Abbott divided his time generally amongst his various interests, including the presidency of the Citizens Bank of Titusville. From the time of his permanent residence in Titusville, because of his business ability, reliability, and far-sightedness, he was prominently identified with almost every civic development of the city.

[Lemuel A. Abbott, *Descendants of Geo. Abbott, of Rowley, Mass.* (1906); J. T. Henry, *The Early and Later Hist. of Petroleum* (1873); correspondence with Benson Memorial Lib., Titusville, Pa.]

C. W. M.

ABEEL, DAVID (June 12, 1804–Sept. 4, 1846), missionary of the Dutch Reformed Church, was born in New Brunswick, N.J., the son of Capt. David Abeel, U.S.N., "a man of strict morality and worth," and Jane Hassert, "a lady possessed of deep piety" and gentleness. At fifteen he applied for admission to West Point, but, owing to

the number of prior applications, he shortly withdrew his own and turned toward medicine. Hardly had he entered upon his course of training for a medical career when religion thrust its claim upon him. He became overwhelmed by a sense of sin and the need of his complete surrender to the will of God. This conversion turned him toward the Christian ministry and he entered in 1823, without previous college training, the New Brunswick Seminary of his church. In 1826 he graduated, and in October of the same year was ordained at Athens, N. Y., where he entered upon a pastorate of two and one-half years. Ill health was destined to play a leading part in his ministry. It shortened his pastorate at Athens and went far toward determining the schedule and character of all his subsequent service. His affliction was early diagnosed as pulmonary tuberculosis. During the winter of 1828–29, which Abeel spent on the West Indian Island of St. John in quest of health, his mind turned definitely toward foreign missionary work, and he sought and received appointment as a chaplain of the Seamen's Friend Society, with an understanding also with the American Board. On Oct. 14, 1829, he sailed from New York on the ship *Roman,* arriving in Canton, Feb. 25, 1830. He took up the duties of his chaplaincy and set about the study of the Fukien colloquial. Having a good ear for tones he gradually acquired a fair control of the Chinese dialect. He later learned some Malay and Siamese in connection with his travels. After a year in the chaplaincy, he joined by previous agreement the service of the American Board and remained therein until his death in his forty-third year.

For various reasons, the times and his own health included, Abeel was not permitted to stay long at any one post. Leaving Canton at the end of December 1831, he visited Java, Malacca, Siam, and Singapore until finally ordered home to recuperate. Sailing from the East early in 1833 he found sufficient renewal of energy to allow him to tarry in England, Switzerland, France, Germany, and Holland, giving addresses and attending conferences in behalf of missions. While in England he helped to found the Society for Promoting Female Education in China and the East. He spent the years from 1835 to 1838 in America in efforts to renew his health and to enlist among the members of his own denomination enthusiasm and volunteers for missionary service. By the spring of 1839 he was again in the Far East. Finding the work in Canton hindered by the first Anglo-Chinese War, he journeyed again to the south visiting familiar fields and others in the Malay Archipelago. In October 1841 he returned northward along the China coast, establishing himself at Kolongsou, an island near Amoy. Upon the opening of Amoy as a treaty port he gave himself to the founding of the mission-station there. In January 1845 he was forced to leave Amoy on his last journey home. On arrival in America he lingered in rapidly failing health until his death in Albany, N.Y. Abeel's presence and his writings combined to make him an unusually influential figure in the early days of modern missions. Among his writings are: *To the Bachelors of India, by a Bachelor* (1833); *A Narrative of Residence in China* (1834); *The Claims of the World to the Gospel* (1838); various pamphlets and tracts, and many articles in the *Chinese Repository.*

[G. R. Williamson, *Memoir of the Rev. David Abeel* (1848); H.W.Pierson, *Am.Missionary Memorial* (1853); L. E. Smith, *Heroes and Martyrs of the Modern Missionary Enterprise* (1853); W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Reformed Dutch Pulpit* (1869); E. T. Corwin, *Manual of the Reformed Church in America* (1879); J. I. Good, *Famous Missionaries of the Reformed Church* (1903); Extracts from Abeel's Journal may be found in the *Missionary Herald,* vols. XXVII–XLII.]

J.C.A.

ABELL, ARUNAH SHEPHERDSON (Aug. 10, 1806–Apr. 19, 1888), journalist, was descended from Robert Abell, who came from England about 1630 to Rehoboth, now Seekonk, Mass. His father, Caleb, a quartermaster in the War of 1812, married Elona, daughter of Arunah Shepherdson; their son, named for his maternal grandfather, was born at East Providence, R. I. At fourteen the boy left school and worked for two years in the store of a dealer in West India goods. He wanted, however, to be a printer, and in October 1822 was apprenticed by his father to the *Providence Patriot.* After attaining his majority he worked as a journeyman and foreman in Boston. Later in New York he worked in the same office with William M. Swain and Azariah H. Simmons. The *New York Sun,* started as a one-cent paper in 1833, had set a new fashion in journalism. The three printers determined to found another "penny paper." Abell persuaded his associates that the New York field was occupied and that they should try Philadelphia, where all the newspapers sold for six cents. There they started the *Public Ledger,* which first appeared on Mar. 24, 1836. It consisted of four pages, fifteen-and-a-half by twenty-one-and-a-half inches, with meager general news and little local news, except police reports, but it furnished reading for artisans and in a year was paying dividends. Abell then proposed to start a similar paper in Baltimore, and his partners agreed on condition that he manage it. Accordingly on May 17, 1837, he issued the first number of the *Baltimore Sun,* of which he was to be the guiding spirit for the rest of his life, while the Philadelphia paper was chief-

ly managed by his partners, and after the death of Simmons, in 1855, by Swain alone.

With the *Sun* Abell made a departure. Avoiding the trivial and personal note of many of the early penny papers, he created a condensed but accurate and comprehensive journal, editorially independent without neutrality, free from religious or partisan political controversy, and never intemperate, vituperative, or wantonly disregardful of individual privacy. His paper always maintained sound business methods. When the managers of a fair for Southern relief after the Civil War objected to an advertising bill of $1,800, he insisted on payment, but then gave the money to the fund on condition of secrecy while he lived. He was a pioneer of modern impersonal journalism, and a pioneer in classification, in the systematic gathering of local news, and in the development of speedy general news service. In 1838 he brought the President's message by pony express from Washington a day in advance of his neighbors, who depended on copying it from the Washington papers. He repeated this exploit with President Harrison's inaugural address, issuing it the day of delivery. He established a pony express from Boston for foreign news; and when the Oregon question became acute, he organized with New York papers a special service from Halifax, covering the distance in less than sixty-three hours. His enterprise in the Mexican War increased the prestige of the *Sun*. He brought dispatches by a relay of riders from New Orleans in sixty hours, outstripping the mail by thirty hours, and frequently giving the government its first news of important movements, among them the fall of Vera Cruz. He scrupulously safeguarded his advance news from speculative use, instantly giving its substance to the government and the public. In 1847 he established a daily pony express from New Orleans, and he also used carrier pigeons for short distances, keeping between four and five hundred birds on Hampstead Hill. He assisted Samuel F. B. Morse in introducing the telegraph, and used it freely from the first. The President's message of May 11, 1846 on the Mexican War was telegraphed to the *Sun* and printed the next morning. His firm also invested in the enterprise of extending the subsidized Washington-Baltimore wire to Philadelphia. It was also eager for improvements in printing, and bought Hoe's first type-revolving cylinder press for the *Public Ledger* in 1846 (Robert Hoe, *Short History of the Printing Press,* 1902), and installed one in the *Sun* in 1853.

In the Civil War Abell had Southern sympathies. He printed the news and maintained editorial silence, but the *Sun* was watched by the authorities, and once an order to close it and arrest Abell was issued only to be withdrawn. He believed this attempt was incited by politicians, who presently offered to buy the paper on the plea of his precarious position. Increasing costs of publication caused disagreement in the firm. Since Swain was unwilling to increase the price of the *Public Ledger,* it was sold in 1864 to George W. Childs and Joseph W. and Anthony J. Drexel. The partners retained the *Sun,* with Abell in charge, and he raised the price to two cents. After the war he supported President Johnson's reconstruction policy and led in restoring the Democrats to power in Maryland, though he kept the *Sun* independent of the party organization. On the death of Swain, Feb. 16, 1868, Abell purchased his Baltimore interests and continued as sole proprietor of the *Sun* until its fiftieth anniversary, when he took into partnership his three sons, who inherited the paper by his will. He died in Baltimore on Apr. 19, 1888. In 1838 he married Mary, daughter of John Fox of Baltimore. She died in 1859, leaving three sons and five daughters. Abell was impressive in appearance, genial in disposition, and quietly masterful in execution.

[The Abell family records; H. E. West, *Hist. of the Sun,* published as a supplement to the *Sun,* May 14, 1922; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Baltimore City and County* (1881), pp. 617 ff.; Scharf and Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884), III, 2000; a sketch in the *Mag. of Western Hist.,* Jan. 1889; obituaries in *Baltimore Sun, Phila. Press,* and *N.Y. Tribune,* Apr. 20, 1888.]

R. C. E. B.

ABERCROMBY, JAMES (1706–Apr. 23, 1781), British general, belonged to a good Scottish family, the Abercrombys of Glassaugh, Banffshire, a cadet branch of the Abercrombys of Birkenbog. In his youth he followed the path blocked out for him by the career of his father, Alexander Abercromby, the previous laird of Glassaugh; he entered the army, was active in Banff affairs as commissioner of supply and justice of the peace, and was chosen member of parliament for Banff in 1734, a seat he held for twenty years. His mother was Helen, a daughter of George Meldrum of Crombie; he married his third cousin, Mary Duff of Dipple and Brace. Throughout his life he enjoyed two minor posts, as King's Painter in Scotland, and as deputy-governor of Stirling Castle. After passing through the lower ranks of the army, he became, in 1746, lieutenant-colonel of the first battalion of the Royal Scots, with the rank of colonel. He served in the same year as quartermaster-general in St. Clair's expedition, which was first designed for an attack upon Canada, but was diverted to a descent upon Port l'Orient. There he gained the intimate friendship of David Hume. The following year he was

wounded in the fierce fighting at the relief of Hulst.

His military experience and his close friendship with Loudoun led to his selection in 1756 as second in command of the British forces in America. He was given the 44th Regiment, and promoted to the rank of major-general. Reaching Albany a month before his superior, Loudoun, he acted during that brief period as commander-in-chief, but took no decisive steps towards settling the various problems confronting him. As second in command, Abercromby proved himself an obedient and trustworthy officer. Loudoun put him in charge of the troops at Albany, where he performed his work adequately, since it involved no decisions of primary importance. He incurred no one's dislike; he won no one's admiration. He was a disciplinarian of the European school, and he gave his opinion upon colonial affairs, when asked, in favor of the most rigid interpretation of the royal prerogative.

Upon Loudoun's recall, Abercromby assumed, in March 1758, the supreme command of all British forces in America, and the colonelcy-in-chief of the Royal American Regiment. With Amherst's successful expedition against Louisburg, and Forbes's slow advance towards Fort Duquesne, he had nothing to do, for both offensives were planned by Pitt in England. To him was left the assault upon Ticonderoga, where his incapacity for chief command became apparent. His own second, Lord Howe, was unfortunately killed in a preliminary skirmish, and Abercromby, unable to make a decision by himself, trusted to the recommendations of his chief engineer, young Matthew Clarke, and attempted to carry by assault the almost impregnable French position. His forces were beaten back in one of the bloodiest battles in the history of British arms. So unnecessary a defeat turned both his own army and the provincials against him, and he was recalled in the fall of 1758. The provincials named him "General Nabbycromby." One of his medical officers wrote a succinct summary: "The General returns to Europe as little regretted as any man that ever left America. He had no resolution, no will of his own, was bullied into the favours he bestowed, made few friends thereby, created some enemies, and in short fell into universal contempt."

After his return to England, the usual rules of seniority brought him, in 1759, the rank of lieutenant-general, and in 1772, that of general. He spent a great portion of his last twenty-two years at Glassaugh. His daughter Jane succeeded to the property.

[For Abercromby's early career, some information may be found in A. and H. Tayler, *Book of the Duffs* (1914); *Records of the County of Banff* (1922), comp. by Jas. Grant; Jos. Foster, *Members of Parliament, Scotland* (2nd ed., 1882); and J. Hill Burton, *Life and Correspondence of David Hume* (1846). The chief sources for his commands in America are the Loudoun and Abercromby Papers in the possession of the Henry E. Huntington Lib. and Art Gallery, at San Marino, Cal. Some important letters are printed in the *Correspondence of Wm. Pitt* (1906), ed. by Gertrude Selwyn Kimball; while references are found in most of the chief collections of colonial source material.] S. M. P.

ABERNETHY, GEORGE (Oct. 7, 1807–May 2, 1877), merchant, churchman, administrator, was born in New York City, not, as sometimes stated, in Aberdeen, Scotland. He was probably the son of William Abernethy, a shoemaker listed in the New York Directory of 1807. At any rate, he was trained for commercial pursuits, which he followed from an early age. On Jan. 21, 1830, he was married to Anne Cope (1811–84). In 1839, Rev. Jason Lee, superintendent of the Methodist mission of Oregon, while in the east to recruit the mission's funds and also its personnel, arranged with Abernethy to go to Oregon and assume the financial management of the mission's affairs. With his family, Abernethy sailed around the Horn on the *Lausanne*, which arrived in Oregon June 1, 1840, bringing also Mr. Lee and a strong reinforcement. This included farmers and craftsmen as well as mission workers. The *Lausanne* party may be said to have begun the American colonization of Oregon. They cultivated land to a considerable extent, opened an academy, built a mill, and started commercial activity in competition with the Hudson's Bay Company. In all of these enterprises Abernethy bore a leading part and remained for some years the outstanding American business man of the Pacific Northwest. His center of operations was Oregon City, where he is said to have erected, for warehouse purposes, the first brick structure built in the state. He also secured a printing-press and aided in establishing the first newspaper in Oregon. He encouraged lumbering and the fisheries, bought the settlers' wheat, and established commercial connections with Hawaii, California, and the Atlantic coast ports. Then came reverses. Some of his projects proved financially disastrous, and an unprecedented freshet in 1861 destroyed the bulk of his physical property, reducing him to very limited circumstances.

Until after the middle of the century, however, Abernethy, to most Oregonians, represented, on a smaller scale and under American auspices, what Dr. John McLoughlin and James Douglas represented, as agents of the British Fur Company, at Fort Vancouver. Yet, such was his address, courtesy, and business fairness that these magnates regarded him more in the light of a friend than a rival. Similarly, his conspicuous position with

the mission failed to alienate from him the good will of those Americans, whose numbers rose with the successive annual overland immigrations, who were distrustful of the missionary influence in public affairs. His conciliatory disposition, his quiet dignity and ability to keep his own counsel, made him the natural compromise candidate for governor when, in 1845, the provisional government, begun in 1843, was reorganized with a single executive in place of the former executive committee. The election, though taking place during Abernethy's absence in Hawaii, resulted in giving him a majority of 98 out of a total of 504 votes cast. No adequate analysis of that vote is possible. At the election in 1847, however, when he was again a candidate, it was the votes from the district north of the Columbia, dominated by the Hudson's Bay influence, which secured him his small majority and enabled him to continue in the office until the provisional government was supplanted by the territorial government under Gen. Joseph Lane.

In November 1847 occurred the Whitman massacre, followed by the war against its perpetrators, the Cayuses, and the determined efforts to overcome the apathy of Congress in its attitude toward the Oregon region. The governor's responsibilities were thereby greatly increased, but he met them in a manner to win from his contemporaries, almost universally, the fame of being a just, wise, and capable public officer. Criticisms of Abernethy's character published in H. H. Bancroft's *History of Oregon* have been vigorously protested by pioneers who knew him intimately (especially Medorem Crawford, *Transactions of the Oregon Pioneer Society for 1886*), and these strictures fail of support in the public record of his words and acts. The criticisms implied, rather than stated, in Rev. George Gary's Diary (*Oregon Historical Quarterly*, XXIV, 270-71, 276) may be disregarded. When he died, Harvey W. Scott said of him (*Oregonian*, May 3, 1877): "Faithful, gentle, and obliging, devoted always to duty, and recognized as the impersonation of uprightness and honor, no man could be his enemy." Though written under circumstances which tempted to eulogy, these words are a truer index of his character than either the over-subtle inferences of the Bancroftian writer or the fault-finding of a harassed missionary.

Abernethy was a familiar figure in Portland, where he spent his declining years. In appearance he was at once unimpressive and decidedly pleasant. Short of stature, with kindly eyes, "soft brown hair," prominent sloping forehead, smooth upper lip and Quaker beard, he passed among western men for a Yankee and he had many of the traits

which are common to Yankee and Scotchman alike. His letters and public papers disclose not only a good command of English but some skill in composition—as well as sound judgment in practical matters, and high motives.

[Dates of birth and marriage are given in a sketch of Wm. Abernethy, son of George, in Jos. Gaston, *Centennial Hist. of Ore.* (1912), IV, 72. La Fayette Grover, *Ore. Archives* (1853), and J. H. Brown, *Polit. Hist. of Ore.* (1892), contain Abernethy's public papers. One volume of his letter-press copy-book is in the Ore. State Hist. Soc. Lib. It deals with his business affairs in the years 1847 to 1850. For an account of the Ore. provisional government see Jos. Schafer, *A Hist. of the Pacific Northwest* (1918), pp. 156–97, and W. C. Woodward, *The Rise and Early Hist. of Polit. Parties in Ore. 1843–68* (1913).]

J. S.

ABRAMS, ALBERT (Dec. 8, 1863–Jan. 13, 1924), physician, was the founder of a system of universal diagnosis and treatment of disease, termed by him the Electronic Reactions of Abrams (E.R.A.), which was to prove "either a miracle or the greatest of fakes," and is at best regarded as an illusion well suited to commercial exploitation. Born in San Francisco, the son of Marcus and Rachel (Leavey) Abrams, he took his medical degree at Heidelberg (1882) and after extensive postgraduate studies in Europe settled in his home city, where he was sometime chief of the medical clinic at Cooper Medical School. His published works for this period comprise: *Manual of Clinical Diagnosis* (1891); *Diseases of the Heart* (1900); *The Blues* (*Splanchnic Neurasthenia*) five editions (1904–14); *Man and his Poisons* (1906), and *Diagnostic Therapeutics* (1910). Known for original research and prolific authorship he acquired an international reputation through his discovery of "Abrams's visceral reflexes." In 1910 his *Spondylotherapy; Spinal Concussion,* which went through five editions, sought to harmonize these discoveries with the claims and results in practice of the spinal-adjustments healing cults but departed more or less from the rigor of scientific medicine. In 1913 the assertion that disease causes changes in the electrical skin potential (see Arthur E. Baines and F. H. Bowman, *Electropathology and Therapeutics,* 1914) gave him the germ of the conception of electronic diagnosis and treatment, and his *New Concepts in Diagnosis and Treatment* (1916) maintained that the electron, the new unit of matter in general, was to supplant the cell as a biological unit; that disease is a disharmony of the electronic oscillations; that diagnosis must detect and measure the alteration—each disease has its own vibratory rate—and that treatment must restore equilibrium. Since all cures make use of this principle the new method must supplant all others. A drop of blood represents the entire individual and suffices

for diagnosis, although it is necessary to place a healthy control subject in the electrical circuit and test his skin reactions, which conform to the vibratory rate of the disease. The apparatus comprised under fanciful names a condenser and a rheostat and ohmmeter for diagnosis, and for treatment a magnetic interrupter (oscilloclast). The book abounded in fantastic dogmatism to such an extent that the author's colleagues at first thought him unbalanced. But he was of established reputation, it was not easy to disprove his basic claims, and, as in all new systems of treatment, remarkable cures were not lacking. There was a possible crude foreshadowing of a revolutionary discovery.

After the interlude of the war Abrams seems to have abandoned professional for commercial methods, incidentally giving brief instruction courses and leasing apparatus, both at exorbitant prices, to physicians and laymen alike; so that by 1923 there were no less than 3,500 electronic practitioners in the world. He made increasingly extravagant claims in diagnosis, going far beyond the limits of disease, and his methods became more and more open to ridicule and exposure. The *Scientific American* began an investigation of E.R.A. in October 1923, not long before Abrams's death, which occurred with dramatic suddenness at the most critical period of his career. There has been considerable posthumous interest in Abrams in England, and the Royal Society of Medicine gave his doctrines an independent investigation; and despite his professional apostasy British medical men of the caliber of Sir James Barr insist that he was not only a genius but one of the outstanding medical figures of the last half-century.

[For the adverse report of the *Scientific American* committee, see the files of that journal from Oct. 1923 to Sept. 1924. Of recent British reports consult G. Laughton Scott, *"The Abrams Treatment" in Practice* (1924); *A Preliminary Communication Concerning the Electronic Reactions of Abrams* (the report of the Royal Society of Medicine Committee, Sir T. Horder, chairman, 1925) and *Abrams' Methods of Diagnosis and Treatment* (1925), ed. by Sir James Barr; biographical data from *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23.] E. P.

ACCAU (ACCAULT), MICHEL. [See Aco, Michel, fl. 1680–1702.]

ACKER, CHARLES ERNEST (Mar. 19, 1868–Oct. 18, 1920), inventor and manufacturer, was of Dutch descent. His parents were William James and Mercia (Grant) Acker, and his birthplace was Bourbon, Ind. He was educated at Wabash College and Cornell University, and, after his graduation (Ph.B., 1888), practiced as an electrical engineer in Chicago (1888–93). Here he began his career as an experimenter and inventor in electro-chemistry, perfecting in 1896 his process for producing caustic soda and chlorine from the electrolysis of molten salt, which won him the Elliott Cresson Gold Medal of the Franklin Institute in 1902. This invention was the basis of the Acker Process Company of Niagara Falls, of which Acker was vice-president and general manager for a number of years. His inventions, which were protected by over forty patents, American and foreign, covered a wide range in electro-chemistry and electro-metallurgy. They included processes for producing alkali metals, metallic alloys, and caustic alkalis, in 1899; three patents on caustic alkali and halogen gas processes, in 1900–01; patents on methods for producing stannic and stannous chlorids, other chlorine compounds of tin, with apparatus, in 1906; carbon-tetrachlorid process, in 1908; processes for nitrogen and other compounds, and for nitrides, in 1909; for producing oxygen, in 1911; for producing compounds of nitrogen and cyanogen, in 1912 and 1913; for obtaining various gases, in 1913; and for the electrolytic production of alkali and alkali-earth metals and nitrogen compounds, in 1915. He was the patentee, also, of improved electrodes and conductors for electric furnaces, in 1903, and of detinning processes and methods for treating detinned iron and residue, in 1907. He was the first in America to produce carbon and tin tetrachlorids on a commercial scale, as well as the actual founder of several special branches of electro-chemistry and electro-metallurgy. He was director of the American Electro-chemical Society (1905-10), a member of the American Institute of Electrical Engineers, the American Chemical Society, the Faraday Society, and the Society of Chemical Industry of London, and also a member of the New York State Historical Association. For a number of years he was a resident of Ossining, N. Y., where he was director of the Westchester County Bureau of Municipal Research, and where he died. His wife was Alice Reynolds Beal, whom he married in 1892.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *N.Y. Times*, Oct. 19, 1920; records of the U.S. Patent Office.]

ACO, MICHEL (fl. 1680–1702), French explorer, was a native of Poitiers who in 1679–80 came into the Mississippi Valley in the train of La Salle. He is said by La Salle to have known the tongues of the Iroquois and of the Illinois tribes, and to have been able to communicate with the Iowa, the Oto, the Chippewa, and the Kickapoo. He, furthermore, says La Salle, was a man "prudent, courageous, and cool." In 1680 La Salle, who had determined to reconnoiter the upper Mississippi, sent on this errand three men, Aco, Antoine du Gay Auguel, called "the Picard"

because of his home in Picardy, and Louis Hennepin, a Recollect friar, appointing Aco leader of the group. Near the Falls of St. Anthony the three men were seized by a large body of Sioux, who then left the river with their captives and struck out overland toward the Sioux villages about the Mille Lac. Hennepin was a man of large frame and it was hard for him to keep up with the rapidly moving Indians. To spur his steps, the friar relates that the "Indians set fire to the grass behind him and then taking him by the hands hurried him along in front of the flames." Aco and the Picard being smaller were able to proceed with less difficulty. While the Sioux were conducting their three captives to the Mille Lac neighborhood, they were encountered by the French *coureur de bois* and explorer, Du Lhut (Duluth). The latter, a man of power with the Sioux, rescued the three captives and escorted them down the Mississippi to the mouth of the Wisconsin River; thence they proceeded up the Wisconsin and down the Fox River to Green Bay and Mackinac. In the spring of 1681 the three men proceeded to Montreal. Here Aco and the Picard left Friar Hennepin (for whom Aco had little stomach) and busied themselves in disposing of a valuable store of furs which they had with them.

We now lose sight of Aco; but by the year 1693 he was again in the Mississippi Valley as a business partner of La Salle's associates, Tonty and La Forest. After the death of La Salle, Tonty built a fort in Illinois near the outlet of Lake Peoria. The fort became a center of trade and connected with this trade was Michel Aco. Near the fort lay a village of the Kaskaskia tribe under the chief Rouensa. Rouensa had a daughter seventeen years old, a devout convert to the Catholic faith. She took the name of Mary, and with her Aco fell desperately in love. At first Mary would not wed the white man, but in the end consented to do so in order to help forward conversions among her people to the Christian faith. In 1693 Aco and the Indian maiden were united by the local priest, Father Gravier. In 1695 there was born to Aco and Mary a son, named Pierre. In February 1702, another son was born, and named Michel after his father. Of the further life of Aco record is wanting.

[Margry, *Découvertes* (1877) II, 251 ff.; Louise P. Kellogg, *French Regime in Wis.* (1925); Tonty, "Memoir on La Salle's Discoveries" in Louise P. Kellogg's *Early Narratives of the Northwest, 1639–99* (1917); Francis Parkman, *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West* (1869); J. C. Parish, "Michel Aco—Squaw Man" in the *Palimpsest*, June 1921; R. G. Thwaites, *The Jesuit Relations and Allied Documents*, LXIV, 280. Aco's name is spelled variously; the form given in this sketch is that which he himself used.]

I. B. R.

ACRELIUS, ISRAEL (Dec. 4, 1714–Apr. 25, 1800), Lutheran clergyman and author, was born in Öster-Åker, Sweden, the son of the local pastor Johan Acrelius and Sara Gahm. Before he was quite thirteen years old he began his studies at the University of Upsala, where he remained till his ordination in 1743. After serving for a while as a domestic chaplain he was appointed in 1745 to the pastorate of Riala, Kulla, and Norra Ljusterö.

Ever since 1696 the Swedish government had been sending missionaries to the expatriated Swedes who were settled in America along the Delaware River. These missionaries, their records show, were men of unusual character and ability. In the spring of 1749 Acrelius was appointed minister of the parish of Racoon and Pennsneck in the province of New Jersey. Before he was ready to leave for his post, news of the death of the Rev. Peter Tranberg, pastor at Christina (now Wilmington, Del.), reached the authorities, and at his own request Acrelius was named to the new vacancy. He sailed from Stockholm on July 20 and reached Christina early in November. He found that the Rev. Peter Tranberg had been revered as a saint—a fact that did not make the path easy for his successor. The congregation, too ignorant and illiterate to manage its own affairs, had entrusted its business to a Quaker, who possessed a decided talent for embezzling both money and real estate. Church discipline, during the absence of a regular pastor, had become indecently lax, and the "language difficulty," already a problem to the Lutheran Church in America, was acute. Acrelius set to work immediately. He put his own church in order. As provost of the Swedish clergymen he exercised a quickening influence over all the Swedish congregations. That he might minister to others besides his own countrymen he learned English, and one of his sermons, published by Benjamin Franklin in 1756, shows him the master of a chaste English style. He gave active help and sympathy to the German Lutherans of Pennsylvania and was on a friendly footing with their leader, the Rev. Henry Melchior Muhlenberg [*q. v.*]. His leisure he spent in making botanical, zoölogical, and geological collections for the Swedish chamberlain, Charles de Geer, and in gathering materials for his own excellent *History of New Sweden* (1759). Overwork, the miasmal climate, and perhaps the pioneer cuisine told severely on his health. After four years he requested to be relieved, but this action was delayed for several more years, and he did not leave until his successor was actually on the ground. His departure caused widespread sorrow. He preached fare-

well sermons in six different towns, and many followed him from one to another, "sorrowing most of all that they should nevermore behold his face."

He sailed for home Nov. 9, 1756, and after a sojourn of several months in England arrived in Stockholm in July 1757. Next year he was appointed pastor in Fellingsbro in the diocese of Westeras. His *annus mirabilis* was 1759: in that year he married Katarina Elisabet Strangh, the daughter of his predecessor at Fellingsbro, was made a rural dean, and published his history.

Scholarship, first-hand knowledge, and an admirably equitable temper made Acrelius a trustworthy historian of New Sweden. Three-fifths of his work treats of matters purely ecclesiastical, but the rest is a general history of the region under Swedish, Dutch, and English rule and a description of the land and people. His book is the chief literary monument of the Swedes on the Delaware.

[The best account of Acrelius is the article by the editor-in-chief in Bertil Böethius' *Svenskt Biografiskt Lexikon* (Stockholm, 1918). The *Hist. of New Sweden*, ably translated with valuable introduction and notes by W. M. Reynolds, forms vol. XI of the *Memoirs of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.* (Phila., 1874). *A Sermon Explaining the Duties of Christian Subjects to Their Sovereign* and another, *Der Todt als eine Seligkeit für diejenige, die in dem Herrn sterben* were published in Phila. by Benjamin Franklin in 1756. Cf. also A. L. Gräbner, *Geschichte der Lutherischen Kirche in America* (St. Louis, 1892).]

G. H. G.

ADAIR, JAMES (*c.* 1709–*c.* 1783), pioneer Indian trader, author, is said to have been born in County Antrim, Ireland. The dates given above are merely conjectural. The known facts of his life are few, gathered in the main from the personal incidents narrated in his book, *The History of the American Indians* (1775) and occasional references in South Carolina chronicles. A recent book, *Adair History and Genealogy* (1924), by J. B. Adair, gives many biographical details purporting to be based on family tradition, but few of them are verifiable by any available records. It is certain that Adair was highly educated. By 1735 he had come to America, probably entering at the port of Charleston, S. C. In that year he engaged in trade with the Catawbas and Cherokees, continuing with them until 1744. He then established himself among the Chickasaws, whose villages were on the headwaters of the Yazoo, in Mississippi, where he remained for about six years. During the latter part of this period he frequently visited the Choctaws, in an effort to counteract the influence of the French and to win them to an alliance with the English. The effort was successful, but it involved him in difficulties with other traders and with James Glen, royal governor of South Carolina from 1743 to 1756, which resulted, he asserts, in his financial ruin. In 1751 he moved to District Ninety-six (the present Laurens County), S. C., and resumed trade with the Cherokees, remaining there until about the end of 1759. His activities during these years covered a wide range. He was several times called in counsel by Gov. Glen, with whom he could never agree and whom he heartily detested. Among the Indians he was a diplomat and a peace-maker, but he was also a fighter—"a valiant warrior," says Logan; and when he could not compose their quarrels he not infrequently took sides in their wars. At various times he was engaged in conflicts with the French. In the Indian war of 1760–61 he commanded a band of Chickasaws under a commission as captain. From 1761 to 1768 he was again trading with the Chickasaws, receiving his supplies by way of Mobile. In 1769 he visited New York City. Either then or a few years later he probably voyaged to London. Of his later life nothing authentic is recorded. He was, as the conclusion of his book amply shows, a vigorous defender of the rights of the colonies, but there appears to be no mention of him in Revolutionary annals. He is said to have been married and to have had several children and also to have died in North Carolina shortly after the close of the Revolution.

Adair is chiefly known through his history of the Indians. Primarily it is an argument that the Indians are the descendants of the ancient Jews. The theory was accepted by Elias Boudinot, one-time president of the Continental Congress, who gave it hearty support in his book, *A Star in the West* (1816). Adair's work has outlived its thesis. Its account of the various tribes, their manners, customs, and vocabularies, its depiction of scenes and its narration of incidents in his own eventful career, give it a permanent value. It is a record of close and intelligent observation, and its fidelity to fact has been generally acknowledged. The book must have required many years of toil. In his preface he says that it was written "among our old friendly Chickasaws" (doubtless during his second period of residence with them) and that the labor was attended by the greatest difficulties. Though some passages may subsequently have been added, it was probably finished by the end of 1768. In the *Georgia Gazette*, of Savannah, Oct. 11, 1769, appeared an item dated Feb. 27 of that year, apparently copied from a New York newspaper, announcing the arrival of Adair in New York and saying that "he intends going to Europe in the ensuing summer where he proposes to print the Essays." The care with which the book is printed indicates that he gave it personal supervision through the press. From the dedication it is evident that he had the friendship of the

noted Indian traders, Col. George Galphin and Col. George Croghan (with the former of whom he may for a time have been in partnership) and of Sir William Johnson; and from various references it is certain that he was highly respected by those who knew him. Logan credits him with the quick penetration of the Indian, audacity, cool self-possession, and great powers of endurance, and Volwiler says that he was one of the few men of ability who personally embarked in the Indian trade.

[J. H. Logan, *A Hist. of the Upper Country of S. C.* (1859); John Thos. Lee, letter in the *Nation*, Aug. 27, 1914; manuscript notes supplied by Robt. L. Meriwether; brief references in A. T. Volwiler, *Geo. Croghan and the Westward Movement, 1741–1782* (1926) and Edward McCrady, *Hist. of S. C. Under the Royal Government* (1899).]

W. J. G.

ADAIR, JOHN (Jan. 9, 1757–May 19, 1840), soldier, politician, was the son of a native-born Scotchman, Baron William Adair, who settled in the up-country of South Carolina. There, in Chester County, John was born in time to take part in the Revolutionary War, which devastated so thoroughly this part of the South. In the course of the struggle he was made prisoner and harshly treated. Following the inevitable course of the restless frontiersman, he migrated westward and settled in Mercer County, Ky., in 1786. In this restless and rapidly developing community he found a congenial atmosphere. In 1791 he enlisted in the enterprises against the Northwest Indians, conducted by Arthur St. Clair and James Wilkinson, and was made a major. From this time on until the Indians were definitely crushed by "Mad Anthony" Wayne he was much in evidence in fighting these scourges of Kentucky. In 1791, while in command of about a hundred men, he ran into a band of Indians near Fort St. Clair, led by the famous Miami chieftain Little Turtle, and was finally worsted in the engagement that took place. Despite this reverse he was recognized as a brave fighter and for his reward he was made a lieutenant-colonel the next year. Since a military record was the surest road to military preferment among vigorous frontiersmen, he was chosen as a representative from Mercer County in the legislature in 1793 and was frequently reëlected thereafter up to 1817, serving in all nine terms. He was the Speaker of the House from 1801 to 1803. His popularity at this time was attested by the fact that a county was laid off and named for him. In 1799 he served in the constitutional convention which made a second constitution for the state.

In 1805 Adair with other Kentuckians such as John Brown and Henry Clay became a willing listener to Aaron Burr on his trip through the state. To Adair, Burr was a patriotic advance-

agent of the Federal Government on his way to arouse the West to take part in the contemplated war with Spain for the purpose of seizing the Southwest. Correspondence with James Wilkinson confirmed him in this view (Humphrey Marshall, *History of Kentucky*, II, 430). When therefore Burr was apprehended in Frankfort in 1806, a persistent but ineffectual effort was made to indict Adair also. In the hysteria that followed, Adair's reputation temporarily suffered. In 1805 he had been elected to fill out the unexpired time of John Breckinridge, but when in November of 1806, in the midst of the Burr trouble, he was defeated for the full term of six years, he immediately resigned.

The mellowing effect of a half-dozen years and the glamour of another war were necessary to restore Adair to the full affections of his fellow Kentuckians. On the outbreak of the War of 1812 he immediately volunteered and in the battle of the Thames the following year he served as an aide to Gov. Shelby. He received the praise of his superior officer and was rewarded with a brigadier-generalship in the state militia. But his particular glory came out of the battle of New Orleans, not so much because he led 1,100 Kentucky riflemen in the main conflict, as because when the struggle was over he defended another group of Kentuckians who were involved in the battle, against the charges of cowardice made by Gen. Jackson. For two years afterwards he fought Jackson in a heated correspondence and made himself an outstanding hero with Kentuckians (James Parton, *Life of Andrew Jackson*, II, 383–91). The people now proceeded to give him almost every important honor within their gift. In 1820 he was elected governor over three of the strongest men in the state, William Logan, Joseph Desha, and Anthony Butler. He was aided not only by his general popularity but by the position he took in the bitter struggle between the relief and anti-relief parties which had grown up during the past two years. He knew little about banks and money, but he was sure of his love for the common man. For the next four years, as the leader of the relief party, he helped to drag his state to the brink of destruction; but his broad sympathy for the people also led him into a strong advocacy of higher education, prison reform, and the abolition of imprisonment for debt. From 1831 to 1833 he was a member of the House of Representatives. He made only one speech during the two sessions and it was so inaudible that no one knew what he was advocating. The reporter guessed it was in favor of mounting some federal troops. Adair's career was not characterized by sound statesmanship but his genuine sym-

pathy with the common people and his military exploits made him long a favorite. In 1872 the State brought his remains from Mercer County to the Frankfort Cemetery and there erected a marker to his memory.

[The facts concerning the life of Adair are scattering. In Lewis and Richard H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.* (1882), there is a short sketch of his life. Humphrey Marshall, in his *Hist. of Ky.* (1824), a biased work in many respects, gives the best account of the Burr episode. Other works concerning his life are Jas. Parton, *Life of Andrew Jackson* (1860), vol II, and W. E. Connelley and E. M. Coulter, *Hist. of Ky.*, 2 vols. (1922).] E.M.C.

ADAMS, ABIGAIL (Nov. 11, 1744-Oct. 28, 1818), noted letter writer, wife of John Adams, second President of the United States, was born at Weymouth, Mass., where her father, the Rev. William Smith, was minister of the Congregational church. Her mother was Elizabeth Quincy, daughter of Col. John Quincy and grand-daughter of the Rev. John Norton. Of her childhood she writes: "I never was sent to any school. I was always sick" (*Familiar Letters,* preface, p. xi). Much of her time was spent in seclusion at the home of her grandparents at Mount Wollaston. Her grandmother, with a "happy method of mixing instruction and amusement together," took the place of school. The distance separating the homes of her relatives and friends was too great to permit of frequent social intercourse, so that letter writing became habitual among the young people. On Oct. 25, 1764 she was married to John Adams, and during the next ten years their four children were born—John Quincy, Thomas, Charles, and Abby. In the early part of the Revolution, when John Adams was much of the time in Philadelphia, Abigail was left with the entire care of the young family, exposed to many dangers. From the top of Penn's Hill, at the foot of which her house stood, she with her seven-year-old son watched the smoke of burning Charlestown. Later, she wrote, "The constant roar of the cannon is so distressing that we cannot eat, drink, or sleep" (*Letters,* pp. 31–32). She went through the trials of an epidemic and wrote her husband that there was sickness and death in nearly every household. During John Adams's absence in Europe she managed his affairs with great ability, at the same time attending to the farm, keeping up her keen interest in politics, and perpetuating in her letters a vivid picture of the times. After the signing of the treaty of peace, she joined her husband to spend the next eight months in Paris and then three years in London. Her letters during this period show her inimitable gift for brief and vivid description. Those from France are the more amiable; the English letters are thickly sprinkled with rather vindictive comments upon the people —although as she came to know the English better she liked them more, and long afterward could write to her son, "England, you know, is the country of my greatest partiality" (*Ibid.,* p. 368). With her return to America in 1787, and the election of Adams as vice-president, came what was perhaps the happiest period of her life. Her health, though delicate, had not yet given way, her husband was the second man in the nation, and about her was a remarkable society. But during the twelve years of public life in America her letters lose something of their sprightliness, due perhaps to increasing ill health. She was forced more and more to withdraw from the gayeties of the capital, and much of her time was spent at Quincy, as her home was now called. Nevertheless it was reported that she exercised great political influence over her husband. She fully shared the violent social and political feelings of the Federalist party. Gallatin, with a touch of malice, after Adams had become president, sneered at "Her Majesty," and interpreted her conversation as hostess to the effect that she was "Mrs. President not of the United States, but of a faction" (Henry Adams, *Life of Albert Gallatin,* 1879, p. 185). After 1801 practically all of her remaining life was spent in Quincy. There she and her family passed the years as tranquilly "as that bald old fellow, called Time" would permit. She wrote her son, "You will find your father in his fields, attending to his haymakers, and your mother busily occupied in the domestic concerns of her family." She resumed her "operations of dairy-woman" and she might be seen at five o'clock in the morning, skimming the milk, or going about the house with her pet dog Juno at her heels. The death of her daughter in 1813 cast a shadow over her last years, but as she said of herself, "My disposition and habits are not of the gloomy kind." Her grandson records that her cheerful nature "enlivened the small social circle around her." The key-note of this sunset of her life was her serene religious faith, joined with a never-failing disillusion about herself. "I bear no enmity to any human being; but, alas! as Mrs. Placid said to her friend, by which of thy good works wouldst thou be willing to be judged?" (*Ibid.,* p. 411). She died of typhoid fever in her seventy-fourth year.

[A proposal late in her life to publish her letters was laughed aside by Mrs. Adams. Her grandson, Charles Francis Adams, published two collections—*Letters of Mrs. Adams, the Wife of John Adams,* and *Familiar Letters of John Adams and his Wife During the Revolution;* each is prefaced by a memoir. A charming portrait of her as a young woman, by Blythe, is engraved in each collection. There is also a sketchy biography, *Abigail Adams and Her Times* (1917), by Laura Elizabeth Richards.] M.T.S.

ADAMS, ABIJAH (*c.* 1754–May 18, 1816), journalist, born in Boston, married Lucy Ballard,

a widow, on July 11, 1790, and died in Boston, aged sixty-two years. His parents, and the exact date of his birth are not known; his relationship with the famous Braintree branch has not been traced. Trained as a tailor, he first came to public notice in 1799 when he was clerk and bookkeeper in the office of the *Independent Chronicle*, which since 1784 his younger brother, Capt. Thomas Adams, had controlled. The journal was the chief supporter in New England of Jeffersonian principles. When the General Court refused to support the Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions condemning the Alien and Sedition Acts because it had no right to decide upon the constitutionality of an act of Congress, the *Chronicle* declared (Feb. 18, 1799): "As it is difficult for common capacities to conceive of a sovereignty so situated that the sovereign shall have no right to decide on any invasion of his constitutional power, it is hoped for the convenience of those tender consciences who may hereafter be called upon to swear allegiance to the State, that some gentleman skilled in federal logic, will show how the oath of allegiance is to be understood, that every man may be so guarded and informed, as not to invite the Deity to witness a falsehood." Both brothers were arrested for libeling the General Court. Thomas was already under federal indictment for violating the Sedition Act. He was ill and was never tried on either charge. Abijah had merely sold the papers, but under the English common law was convicted of "publishing" the libel, and was sentenced to jail for thirty days. Thomas died shortly after and in 1800 the newspaper passed into the joint control of Abijah and Ebenezer Rhoades. Adams was called senior editor. Such a staunch supporter of the Virginia Dynasty and Mr. Madison's War was certain to continue in hot water in Boston. He was again convicted of libel in 1811, this time for comment upon the official conduct of Chief Justice Parsons. He was pardoned. His office was a gathering-place for federal office-holders and other prominent Republicans, men like Perez Morton and Benjamin Austin. The latter wrote often for the *Chronicle*. After Adams's death, his paper (May 23, 1816), after calling him an honest man, harked back to the libel suit as his chief reason for remembrance. "Mr. Adams displayed an heroism which nothing but his virtues could sustain.—One month he was imprisoned, . . . suffering under the utmost rigors of the Common Law, while others of the same profession were daily committing crimes of a more aggravated nature with impunity." In 1819 the paper was sold to Davis C. Ballard, his stepson.

[The few facts of Adams's private life are found in the local records only. The files of the *Independent Chronicle* are the main source on his position as a public man. Joseph T. Buckingham's *Specimens of Newspaper Literature with personal memoirs, anecdotes, and reminiscences* (1850), I, 248–87, deals with the paper and Adams's connection with it.] D.M.M.

ADAMS, ALVA (May 14, 1850–Nov. 1, 1922), governor of Colorado, the son of John Adams of Kentucky and of Eliza (Blanchard) Adams of New York, was born in Iowa County, Wis., where he received the limited education of a common district school. On account of the ill health of a brother of Alva the family drove across the plains to Colorado in 1871, settling first near Colorado Springs. Alva Adams there obtained employment with a contractor engaged in hauling ties for the Denver & Rio Grande Railroad. Later he was employed as a clerk in a hardware store. He quickly showed his mettle by arranging to buy out the business with a partner. In 1872 he moved to Pueblo to open a branch of the business, separated from his partner, and continued by himself with success. He was married to Ella Nye in the same year. When the city government of South Pueblo was organized in 1873 he was elected a member of the first city council. He gave evidence of enterprise by establishing branch houses of his expanding business in Del Norte and Alamosa. The local prominence he had won brought about his election to the first legislature of the State in 1876. His qualities of leadership next made him the nominee of the Democratic party for governor in 1884. Defeated in that campaign, he was renominated and elected in 1886. His administration was signalized by constructive measures in the development of the young State's institutions of learning and correction. From 1889 to 1896 his attention was chiefly given to his business enterprises, during which time he became also a banker. In 1896 the Democrats of Colorado joined with the Silver-Republicans in nominating Adams for governor against a fusion of the local Populists and the National Silverites. Adams was elected by a large plurality. He was instrumental in bringing about the settlement of a long and disastrous strike of miners in Leadville. His last message before retirement in January 1899 made an earnest plea for radical reformation of the system of assessment and taxation under control of a state equalization board with adequate powers. He advocated an inheritance tax, an income tax, and royalties on corporate and municipal privileges. A third time, in 1904, he was a successful candidate for governor, taking office on Jan. 10, 1905. His rival, the retiring governor, Peabody, filed a contest, alleging gross frauds in city precincts. A partisan committee of the legislature, in a majority report, sustained Peabody. Enough Republicans dissented to block action

until a "deal" was worked out to seat Peabody on his agreement to resign immediately and give place to the lieutenant-governor. Adams rejected the counsel of party friends who wished him forcibly to resist being supplanted. The remainder of his life was spent as a business man, but one interested in public matters. He was a member of the Democratic National Committee in 1908, and was a commissioner of the United States in 1915 to procure the participation of Australia, Java, Siam, Cochin China, New Zealand, and China in the Panama-Pacific exposition.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; Frank Hall, *Hist. of Colo.*, III (1891), pp. 52 ff.; *Rocky Mt. News*, Nov. 2, 3, 1922. For the election of 1904 see *Lit. Digest*, XXIX, 831, XXX, 85, 426; *World Today*, Mar. 1905; for that of 1896 see *Rocky Mt. News* and *Denver Republican*, Sept.–Nov. 1896.]

C. A. D—y.

ADAMS, ALVIN (June 16, 1804–Sept. 1, 1877), pioneer in express business, was the ninth of eleven children born to Phebe (Hoar) Adams and Jonas Adams, descendant of Henry Adams of Braintree. Left an orphan at an early age, the boy was cared for by a guardian and older brothers who gave him a common schooling in his native town of Andover, Vt. At the age of sixteen, he set out to seek his fortune, working several years for a stage and hotel proprietor of Woodstock, Vt. Turning his hand to numerous employments, young Adams gained considerable experience, including marriage and bankruptcy, the former to Ann Rebecca Bridge of Boston, Nov. 10, 1831, the latter in the produce business during the bad year of 1837. Undaunted, he attempted the same business in New York City only to fail again. In 1840, associated with Ephraim Farnsworth, he established Adams & Company by purchasing two season railway tickets from New York to Boston and return. One day he would start from Boston to New York and his partner from New York to Boston, and vice versa on the following day. They contracted to carry valuables, securities, and bundles for delivery to either city and soon to intermediate points. Thus the express business began. As the ordinary delivery of valuables and parcels was tardy, unsafe, and unprotected, the convenience of Adams's service was appreciated by banks, merchants, and individuals making valuable shipments, and won general confidence which increased its clientage. The idea took hold, and Adams had the genius to develop it and the aggressive push to advance the business to large proportions. Farnsworth soon gave way to William B. Dinsmore, who struggled along with Adams in the creation of the huge express company. Their business union was cemented by the marriage of William B. Dinsmore, Jr., to Adams's daughter. In 1841 Adams & Company bought the Norwich route to Boston from William F. Harnden [*q.v.*] and four years later all his routes between Boston and New York. In 1842 Adams extended his agencies to Philadelphia, and later to Baltimore, Washington, Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, Louisville, and St. Louis, where he met the competition of Wells and Fargo. In 1849 he entered the California field, establishing within a year thirty-five offices in the towns and mining-camps and at least one station in Oregon. Three years later he started branch agencies and banking houses in Melbourne and Sydney, Australia. As this extension did not prove wise, the Australian houses were discontinued and the coast business was abandoned to such stout competitors as Wells and Fargo and the heavily capitalized Western freighters. Adams found competition in the East keen enough, but an amalgamation of express companies remedied the situation. The Adams Express Company was incorporated, 1854, with $10,000,000 capital and with Adams and Dinsmore in control as president and secretary-treasurer. The smaller concerns of Thomson & Company and Kingsley & Company were absorbed, as well as Harnden & Company, which through agencies in Liverpool, Paris, and Havre had developed a lucrative business with immigrants destined for America in the transfer of parcels and sale of money-orders and steamship and railway tickets. This combination was henceforth able to compete on equal terms with the American Express. During the Civil War the Adams Express Company reaped large profits in shipping arms, munitions, and supplies for the government, in delivering parcels from their homes to soldiers in camp or hospital, and in forwarding soldiers' pay and messages from the battle-field to the families at home probably in some out-of-the-way village or isolated Western farm. This was a service which won appreciation and merited reward. Aside from some interest in art during his late years and in his beautiful estate at Watertown, Mass., which he opened to the public one day a week, Adams apparently promoted no hobbies or charities. On his death he left few friends other than business associates, and no monument save the great express business which he founded and to which he gave his whole being.

[A. C. Hemenway, *Hist. of Andover, Vt.* (1886) containing an autobiographical account; Appleton's *Ann. Cyc.*, 1877; T. C. Quinn, *Mass. of To-day* (1892), p. 246; *Boston Transcript*, Sept. 3, 1877.]

R. J. P.

ADAMS, ANDREW (Dec. 11, 1736–Nov. 27, 1797), jurist, the fourth son of Samuel and Mary (Fairchild) Adams, was born in Stratford, Conn. After attending Yale College, where he received his bachelor's degree in 1760, he studied law and

began to practice in Stamford but in 1764 removed to Litchfield, which was his home for the rest of his life. He became a justice of the peace, judge of probate *pro tempore,* and king's attorney, for Litchfield County. In 1776 he was elected to the Connecticut General Assembly, of which he was Speaker during four sessions. The Colonial Records of the State indicate his prominence, as he was frequently placed on committees to investigate petitions to the Assembly. He was also a member of the Council of Safety; major, later colonel, in the militia; and, for a short time, served in the army under Gen. Wooster. In October 1777 he was appointed a delegate to the Continental Congress, and held this position for three years. He signed the Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union. He was first nominated to the upper house of the Connecticut General Assembly in 1779, and three years later elected a member, holding this office until 1789, when he became an associate judge of the superior court, rising in 1793 to the position of chief justice which he held until his death. Learned in theology, as well as in law and in military affairs, he was a deacon of the church, and, in the absence of the minister, filled the pulpit on several occasions. He was married to Eunice, youngest daughter of Judge Samuel and Abigail (Peck) Canfield, of New Milford, Conn.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll. 1745–63* (1896), p. 640; P. K. Kilbourne, *Biog. Hist. of the County of Litchfield, Conn.* (1851); Forrest Morgan, *Conn. as a Colony and as a State* (1904), II, 204; G. H. Hollister, *Hist. of Conn.* (1855), II, 624; Dwight Loomis and J. G. Calhoun, *Judicial and Civil Hist. of Conn.* (1895), p. 478; *Cat. of the Officers and Grads. of Yale Univ., 1701–1924* (1924).]

M. E. M.

ADAMS, BROOKS (June 24, 1848–Feb. 13, 1927), historian, youngest son of Charles Francis Adams and Abigail Brown (Brooks) Adams, was born at Quincy, Mass. After some years in English schools he entered Harvard College, graduated in 1870, and after a year in the Law School accompanied his father to Geneva, serving as his secretary during the Alabama Claims Arbitration. On his return he opened a law office in Boston, but like his brothers soon turned to historical investigation. His first work, *The Emancipation of Massachusetts* (1887), by its vigorous assault upon the accepted manner of dealing with early New England history, attracted attention, caused retort, and served as a wholesome protest against a somewhat blind acceptance of ancestor-worship. He then turned to a study of trade-routes and their influence upon the history of peoples and nations and published the *Law of Civilization and Decay* (1895), a work of a high order as history which laid down the principle that human societies differed among themselves in proportion as they were endowed by nature with energy, a principle later developed by Henry Adams. Since he supported the side of silver when the question of the free coinage of that metal was dividing the country, the merits of the book as an economic study were overshadowed by its political aspects. Having announced his principle that civilization follows exchanges, or commercial growth and decay, he sought to apply it to modern history and conditions. Could success have been attained, a means of forecasting the march of empire might have been given to the student of social movement; but his generalizations, brilliant and far-reaching as they were, did not lead to a universal law or even a suggestion of one, such as he desired. The domination of the bankers and the approaching collapse of social institutions were ever present to him and this neutralized in great part the usefulness of his work. In a series of volumes he stated and restated the problem and carried his "law" into a new field of experience. In *America's Economic Supremacy* (1900) he predicted the moving of the center of empire to America; in *The New Empire* (1902) he set forth the supremacy of America and in *Theory of Social Revolutions* (1913) he pointed out the ineffectiveness of the capitalist class in the United States in matters of government.

Becoming a lecturer in the Boston University School of Law in 1904, for seven years he illustrated the legal aspects of his economic studies and wrote with force on trusts and railroads as public agents. Elected a member of the Massachusetts constitutional convention in 1917, he favored the initiative and referendum. After the beginning of the World War, in which he saw a fulfilment of his predictions of the collapse of modern civilizations, he returned to social studies in his "Revolt of Modern Democracy against Standards of Duty" (*Proceedings of the American Academy of Arts and Letters,* vol. IX). He then wrote an elaborate preface to Henry Adams's "Letter to American Teachers of History," and published both, with additional material, under the title, *The Degradation of Democratic Dogma* (1920). He received recognition abroad, and *The Law of Civilization* was translated into French and German, the *Economic Supremacy* into German, and *The New Empire* into German and Russian. In whatever he wrote he showed a gift for generalization with a tendency to carry it beyond reasonable bounds. His chapters have substance and show sound and wide research, his explanations of social movement and disturbance are suggestive. He never held public office, nor did he ever seek it. He was the last to occupy the Adams

house at Quincy, which on his death was devoted to public service as a memorial of the Adams family. He married, Sept. 7, 1889, Evelyn Davis, daughter of Admiral Charles Henry Davis and Harriette Blake Mills. She died Dec. 14, 1926. He himself died, at Boston, less than two months later.

[Memoir by W. C. Ford in *Harvard Grads. Mag.*, June 1927; also memoir in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, LX, 345.]

W.C.F.

ADAMS, CHARLES (Dec. 19, 1845?–Aug. 19, 1895), soldier, diplomat, began life as Karl Adam Schwanbeck, son of Karl Heinrich and Maria J. (Markman) Schwanbeck of Pomerania, in Germany. Just prior to leaving the Old World he was graduated from the gymnasium with an enviable record. Soon after arrival in the United States he enlisted in a Massachusetts regiment and continued in service through the war, being twice wounded in battle. He then went west, joined the 3d United States Cavalry, and served two years against the Kiowa and Comanche Indians in New Mexico and Texas. In 1870 he was appointed brigadier-general of the Colorado militia by Gov. McCook and was subsequently appointed Ute Indian Agent upon recommendation of the same official. Before taking up his work at the Los Pinos Agency, Colorado, he was married to Mrs. Margaret Thompson Phelps, a sister of the wife of Gov. McCook. It was at her instance that his name was changed. Arriving at the Agency in June 1872, Adams and his wife found the Utes uneasy and fearful of attack, as reports were being circulated of Indian outrages. He succeeded in dispelling their suspicions and won their confidence. Soon he had a saw-mill running, hay being cured, their cattle cared for, and as winter approached he inaugurated a little school (*Report of Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1872*, p. 289). During his two years at the Agency he became the warm personal friend of the great Ute chief, Ouray, and was respected by all the tribes,—factors of importance at a later date. In 1874 he resigned from the Indian service to become post-office inspector. When the Ute uprising of Sept. 29, 1879 resulted in the murder of Agent Meeker and his employees and the captivity of the white women, an emergency existed which called for a man of tact and of acknowledged influence among the Indians. Adams was called upon by the government. He proceeded immediately to the scene of hostilities and in coöperation with Chief Ouray secured the release of the white women. As one of a commission of three he investigated the tragedy and obtained the surrender of some of the leaders for trial. A delegation of Utes was then escorted to Washington, where they were induced to sign a treaty surrendering their land in Colorado and agreeing to remove to a reservation in Utah. President Hayes appointed Adams in 1880 minister to Bolivia. War then existed between Bolivia and Chile, and Adams acted as an arbitrator on the part of the United States in the conferences at Arica. In 1882 he left Bolivia and again became a post-office inspector. From this position President Cleveland removed him in 1885 for "offensive partisanship." Thereafter he engaged in business in Colorado, being interested in mining, glass manufacture, and mineral-water development. He met his death in an explosion at the Gumry Hotel, Denver.

[Sidney Jocknick, *Early Days on the Western Slope of Colo.* (1913) contains excellent material on Adams's dealings with the Utes, as does Frank Hall, *Hist. of Colo.* (4 vols., 1889–95). An excellent appraisal of his life-work appeared in the *Rocky Mt. News*, Aug. 20, 1895. Sidney Jocknick, Charles Tarbell, and Nathaniel Hunter have supplemented written data with their personal recollections of intimate associations with Adams.]

L.R.H.

ADAMS, CHARLES BAKER (Jan. 11, 1814–Jan. 18, 1853), naturalist, was born in Dorchester, Mass., the son of Charles J. Adams, and a descendant of Henry Adams of Braintree. As a boy he manifested a taste for scientific studies, and his parents, who had removed to Boston in 1818, gave up a room for his natural-history museum and chemical laboratory. Prepared for college at the Phillips Academy, Andover, he entered Yale in 1830, but transferred to Amherst the following year. He graduated at the head of the class of 1834. The average ability of that class should have been high, as Henry Ward Beecher stood at the foot! After spending some time at the Theological Seminary at Andover, Adams realized that science, not theology, was his vocation. He became assistant to Edward Hitchcock, then, in the summer of 1836, engaged in the geological survey of New York. Ill health caused Prof. Hitchcock to relinquish this work, and Adams became a tutor and lecturer on geology at Amherst. In 1837, recommended by Hitchcock to a new college that was being started at Marion, Mo., by Rev. Dr. Ely of Philadelphia, Adams went out there and taught for several months but received no salary and was obliged to send to his father for money on which to return home. In 1838 he was appointed professor of chemistry and natural history at Middlebury College, Vermont, and in 1845 he became state geologist. Four Annual Reports were published (1845–48) as well as an excellent chapter on invertebrate animals of the state in Zadock Thompson's *History of Vermont* (1842). In 1847 Adams was made professor of natural history and astronomy at Amherst, a position he held until his death.

He was popular and successful as a teacher, and is said to have been a terror to indolent students. He was married in February 1839 to Mary Holmes, daughter of Rev. Sylvester Holmes of New Bedford.

Adams's interest in tropical zoölogy began in the winter of 1843–44, which he spent in Jamaica. He had happened upon practically a virgin field, and was enchanted with the richness and diversity of the fauna, particularly the mollusks. Further visits were made in 1848–49, and in the following year Adams made a collecting trip by way of Jamaica to Panama. In December 1852 he sailed for St. Thomas, where he contracted yellow fever and died. His two chief works, *Contributions to Conchology* (1849–52) and *Catalogue of Shells collected at Panama* (1852) are counted among the classics of American conchology. They are still standard manuals, indispensable in the study of Antillean and Panamic mollusk faunas. While chiefly to be classed as descriptive zoölogy, the *Contributions* contain several essays dealing with major zoölogical problems. Adams was groping for the meaning of the varying degrees of relationship among species of animals, and for some rational explanation of their geographic distribution. He recognized the breakdown of the old concept of species—the immutable, specially created species of those pre-Darwinian days. He argued against the Lamarckian hypothesis of direct modification by environment, but he missed the explanation which Darwin was to give the world some years later.

[Thos. Bland, "Memoir of Chas. B. Adams," *Am. Jour. of Conchology*, July 1, 1865, with portrait; H.B. Adams, *Hist. of the Thos. Adams and T. Hastings Families of Amherst, Mass.* (1880), p. 18; Edward Hitchcock, *Reminiscences of Amherst Coll.* (1863), pp. 90–100; Wm. S. Tyler, *Hist. of Amherst Coll. during its first Half Century* (1873), pp. 366–68.]

H. A. P.

ADAMS, CHARLES FOLLEN (Apr. 21, 1842–Mar. 8, 1918), dialect poet, the ninth of ten children of Ira and Mary Elizabeth (Senter) Adams, was born in Dorchester, Mass. Though named after a German patriot and destined to become well known for his writings in German dialect, he was not of German descent. Both his parents were of pure New England stock, his father's and mother's families having been among the first to settle in the villages of Meredith and Center Harbor, N. H. Adams received a common-school education in Dorchester, and from his fifteenth to his twentieth year was employed by a firm of dry-goods merchants in Boston. In August 1862 he enlisted for a term of two years in the 13th Massachusetts infantry. He served with his regiment from the second battle of Bull Run until, on the first day of Gettysburg, he was wounded and taken prisoner. Three days later he was released by Union troops. After a period of convalescence, he was detailed for hospital duty in Washington for the remainder of his term of enlistment. He then returned to Boston and established himself for life as a dealer in dry and fancy goods. On Oct. 11, 1870 he married Harriet Louise Mills, daughter of James Mills of Boston. They had one son and one daughter. During the latter years of his life Adams made his home in Roxbury.

Authorship was never more than a diversion in Adams's busy life. About 1870 he commenced writing poems in German dialect, following the lead of Charles Godfrey Leland, whose "Hans Breitmann" ballads were then at the height of their vogue. He, however, should not be considered a mere imitator of Leland. He knew "scrapple English" from his own personal experience with Pennsylvania Dutch and German emigrant soldiers among the Union troops. Moreover, in place of the satire and extravaganza of the "Breitmann" ballads, he substituted the quieter humor and sentiment of familiar domestic happenings. If he followed Leland in the use of German dialect, he no less anticipated Field and Riley in his devotion to the nursery. His first poem in print, "The Puzzled Dutchman," was accepted by J. T. Trowbridge for *Our Young Folks* in 1872. Its favorable reception by the press paved the way for the appearance of other verses in the same vein contributed to various publications from Boston newspapers to *Scribner's Monthly*. In 1876 "Leedle Yawcob Strauss," first printed in the *Detroit Free Press* and copied over the length and breadth of the land, made Adams famous in his own right—he had often previously been confused with Charles Francis Adams—and created a steady demand for all the verse he cared to produce. A number of his later poems appeared in *Harper's Magazine;* others were sold to a newspaper syndicate and widely circulated. He was frequently called upon to give public readings in the vicinity of Boston, and the real sincerity and pathos of his recitation never failed to delight his hearers. Oliver Wendell Holmes wrote that "Leedle Yawcob Strauss" had "moistened thousands of eyes—these old ones of mine among the rest." Two collections of Adams's verses appeared in book form: *Leedle Yawcob Strauss, and Other Poems* (1877) and *Dialect Ballads* (1888). Both together were reprinted as *Yawcob Strauss and Other Poems* (1910).

[*Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; *One of a Thousand*, ed. by J. C. Rand (1890); *New Eng. Mag.*, n.s. XXXIII, 675–77, portr.; *N.Y. Times*, Mar. 9, 1918.]

G. F. W.

ADAMS, CHARLES FRANCIS (Aug. 18, 1807–Nov. 21, 1886), diplomat, was born at Bos-

ton, Mass., the son of John Quincy Adams [*q.v.*] and Louisa Catherine (Johnson) Adams. At the age of two years he was taken by his father to St. Petersburg and there he remained for six years, under no regular schooling but mastering French so thoroughly that he preferred to speak it rather than English. In the winter of 1815 his mother brought him by carriage from St. Petersburg to Paris, where they joined the father, recently appointed to the English mission. He was at Paris during the "Hundred Days" and remembered incidents of Napoleon's return. Two years followed at an English boarding-school, an experience of great value later, and, when the father returned to the United States to be secretary of state, the son passed through the Boston Latin School into Harvard College, where he graduated in 1825 at eighteen years of age. The following three years were spent in Washington without occupation. Determining to study law he returned to Boston and passed some weeks in the office of Daniel Webster, was admitted to practice in January 1829, and on Sept. 5, 1829, married Abigail Brown, daughter of Peter Chardon Brooks of Boston. He thus became closely connected with Rev. Nathaniel L. Frothingham and Edward Everett, who had also married daughters of Mr. Brooks. He early showed interest in the papers of John Adams and on John Quincy Adams's escape from the presidency urged him to undertake their arrangement and possible publication; but, not a little to his son's dislike, John Quincy determined to accept a nomination to Congress and for eighteen years continued to represent the Quincy district. Intensely engrossed in public affairs he could not turn to such a task, for which, indeed, he was not fitted, and the publication of John Adams's papers was postponed for a number of years. Charles Francis assumed the care of what little property his father possessed and by his deep devotion and unselfish service enabled the older man to accomplish what he did, freed from business anxieties. The younger Adams also turned to literature and wrote on American history for the *North American Review*, the leading literary quarterly in that day. At the suggestion and with the aid of the ex-President he wrote on presidential patronage, the question having arisen between Jackson and the encroaching Senate. Printed in two Boston journals, the essay was later issued as a pamphlet, *An Appeal from the New to the Old Whigs, by a Whig of the Old School* (Boston, 1835). The general political views of John Quincy Adams strongly influenced him, though he was not attracted by the example and methods of the older man.

On the supreme importance and general bearing of the slavery question he could not feel as did his father, nor could he accept the ideas of the abolitionists, then coming into sufficient prominence to alarm the South. Garrison and the *Liberator* in Boston provoked mob violence, but nothing of this drew the interest of Adams. He even disapproved of the course his father was pursuing in opening what was to be an intense struggle of thirteen years, though he noted "as he is in it, I must do my best to help him out" (Adams, *Charles Francis Adams*, p. 31). The victories gained by John Quincy Adams in the House came to have an attraction for the son and exerted an influence in gradually leading him to a better understanding of the issues at stake. He wrote upon slavery for the *Boston Advocate*, without taking a decided attitude, and as the contest at Washington over petitions became more severe his interest developed. Attending the meeting in Faneuil Hall in 1837 on the Lovejoy murder, the gross attack of Attorney General Austin on the abolitionists revolted him and "from that moment, I went with the meeting" (*Ibid.*, p. 36). On national questions connected with finance, the measures leading up to the crisis of 1837, he wrote much and independently without, as he felt, recognition or encouragement. Turning to the family papers in 1840, he published the letters of Abigail Adams with a brief biography which met with unlooked-for success.

Without strong party attachments, in 1840 he was elected to the Massachusetts legislature, receiving the highest vote on the Whig ticket, and served three years in the House and two years in the Senate. Not attracted by local questions, he devoted himself to the larger issues of policy such as the northeastern boundary, districting bill, the salary bill, the Latimer (slave) case, and the annexation of Texas, preparing elaborate statements showing the law and principles involved. A Democrat in 1836, he had become a Whig largely because of his views on slavery. Before he left the legislature he had placed the state in full opposition to slavery, a result which gave him much satisfaction.

Not pleased with the attitude of the Whig leaders, with Stephen Phillips, John G. Palfrey, Henry Wilson, and Charles Sumner, he established the *Boston Whig*, intended to express a form of opposition to slavery and Southern policy of which the recognized leaders of the Whig party in Massachusetts did not approve—leaders like Webster, Choate, and Winthrop; it pointed out that unless some great and unlikely change intervened the country must face the alternative of the total abolition of slavery or the dissolution of the Union. He was now one in sentiment with his father. Adams thus gave voice to the "conscience" against

the "cotton" Whigs. Defeated in 1846, the "conscience" Whigs in 1848 could not support Taylor for president, a candidate without qualification for the office and selected merely for his military record. In Cass the Democrats had presented no better leader. An independent nomination seemed the only alternative. At Buffalo, in August, delegates from seventeen states met. With Adams as chairman they named Van Buren for president and Adams for vice-president, on a platform asserting a resolve to maintain the rights of free labor against the aggressions of the slave power, and to secure free soil for a free people. However high the character of the convention the candidates represented policies that could not be reconciled. The 291,263 votes they received, of which one-eighth came from Massachusetts, defeated Cass, which was all the Van Buren following desired.

Adams now took up seriously the publication of the *Works of John Adams* in ten volumes (1850–56), and prepared a biography which, quite apart from its merits, still holds a place for its wide reading and broad treatment. A wholly unbiased weighing of character could not be expected, but as written by a grandson the work has unusual qualities. Had more attention been given to the correspondence of John Adams and less space to his political writings, which had ceased to have interest, the contribution to history would have been greater. For eight years this work engrossed Adams and his participation in politics hardly went beyond the writing of a public letter (June 12, 1851) to the "Freedom Convention" at Ravenna, Ohio.

Meanwhile the changes in political parties gave him a new opportunity to enter public life. The compromise of 1850 had not settled the question of slavery and the breaking up of the Whig party gave rise to the Republican party. In 1858 Adams was nominated for Congress in his father's district and won the election by a handsome majority against two opposing candidates. As the presidential election of 1860 approached its importance increased, and the sectional contest between North and South became more bitter. Not burdened by engrossing committee appointments, Adams took measure of the House, in which the Republicans did not have a majority, observed his colleagues, on whom by his courtesy and moderation he made a marked impression, and studied the course of events. On May 31, 1860 he addressed the House, but the matter was intended for the campaign and was so circulated under the title "The Republican Party a Necessity." The immense property value of the slaves and the power of the owners to control all the political agencies of the government called, in Adams's judgment, for protective measures which only the Republican party as the party of reform could supply. The studied moderation of his speech in a time of violent passions was its strongest commendation. He favored the nomination of Seward for the presidency and, like so many leaders in the party, was not greatly pleased with Lincoln, though admitting his honesty and fair capability.

He campaigned in the Northwest with Seward, and, renominated in his own district without opposition, was elected to Congress by a majority more than twice as large as he had received two years before. In his second session he found himself admitted to the councils of the party and a recognized leader. The South had taken its stand, but the limit of its action could not be foreseen, and the border states hesitated. Without a definite policy the Republicans were divided and a part looked to Seward for leadership. Both houses appointed important committees on the state of the Union, and Adams took the lead in that of the House as Seward did in that of the Senate. The part assumed by Adams was to oblige the Southern members of the committee publicly to declare what they proposed to demand. So well did he accomplish this that the winter passed in proposals and discussion, with no more action than the secession of the Southern members from the committee. The Northern members were more united, the South had not gained advantage, and the new President was peaceably inaugurated. Misrepresented at the time as weak and yielding, Adams's management of the situation has come to be accepted as judicious and successful. His single speech, that of Jan. 31, 1861, received high praise for its statesmanship and its spirit of conciliation. One of its results was the termination of a long friendship with Sumner, who looked upon it as concession and therefore wholly wrong—unforgivable. Adams's friends pressed him upon Lincoln for a cabinet position—the Treasury being suggested—but at Seward's instance he was made minister to the Court of St. James's, at the time the diplomatic post of greatest importance. Visiting Washington to confer with Secretary Seward, Adams had his only meeting with the President and received an unfavorable impression that was lasting.

While he waited for his instructions the fall of Sumter brought on war. Leaving Boston, May 1, 1861, he arrived in London on the evening of the 13th, to learn from the newspapers of the following day that Great Britain had recognized the Confederacy as a belligerent, the very act which his predecessor, Dallas, and Adams himself were instructed to prevent by every means possible. Necessary from the British point of view for the

safety of British commercial interests in the face of blockade and privateers, the step constituted for the United States a real grievance, which Seward pressed on every occasion. He regarded it as a measure hostile to the North and taken too hastily. The interval between the nomination and arrival of Adams at his post had allowed the British minister for foreign affairs to interview the Confederate commissioners, gain some knowledge of the Southern purpose, and in the face of events formulate a plan of action which would be neutral in theory and in fact, should no new circumstance —such as the dissolution of the Union—compel the adoption of a more active policy. Adams could not know that France and Great Britain had already agreed to act together, though he soon guessed the existence of such an agreement. Without means of judging how far it bound the two nations, he quickly recognized that the center of European relations with America would be in London.

His first meeting with Lord John Russell established personal relations which were permanent and on the whole favorable. Adams's English schooling came to his aid. He not only understood the English character, so much like his own, but his manner resembled their manner, reserved, logical, unimpassioned, and intelligent. In a frank interview between Russell and Adams each was gratified to see that he had a worthy opponent—for differences there were bound to be. Russell expressed later, what was for him a favorable judgment, that Adams was a "reasonable man." This reasonableness was a quality which events were to prove most essential in meeting the unexpected difficulties as they arose.

On his part Adams found a deep-rooted distrust of Seward in English official circles, due to a careless or jocose remark of his, interpreted as hostile to England. He also found English society quite pronounced in sympathy for the South, and, supported by material interests, ready to go to the full length of recognition. The Confederate agents, confident that time and the need of cotton would win the war, and for the moment content with the recognition given, worked against Adams by seeking influence which might embarrass his relations with the ministry. The general situation pointed to an almost assured eventual recognition of Southern independence. Adams shared in the opinion that the recognition of belligerency was ill-timed and ill-considered, but the very act gave him a certain advantage in his subsequent dealings, for under his protests the ministry was put on the defensive. At first the greater embarrassments came from America. Seward suggested a general war with Europe as a cure for the domestic civil strife, and but for the intervention of the President might have succeeded in producing serious international complications and possibly war. Even in its modified form the language of his dispatch to Adams of May 21 awakened in the latter the gravest apprehension in regard to the foreign policy of his government. It increased his sense of responsibility. He obeyed his instructions and read the dispatch to Earl Russell, softening as well as he could "its sharp edges." The leading point, that further intercourse with the Southern commissioners would be regarded as indication of a hostile spirit, was communicated and called out the statement from Russell that he did not expect to see them again. Seward's instructions had been fulfilled, and Adams had closed the door to any further intercourse between the British ministry and the Southern commissioners.

On another matter Adams was not so successful, more from a misunderstanding than from any neglect on his part. With other American ministers in Europe he was instructed to propose to the British government the accession of the United States to the Treaty of Paris of 1856, by which privateering would be abolished, neutral goods made exempt from capture, and blockades defined. The Buchanan administration had offered to accede to the treaty, if still further protection were given to private property on the seas in time of war; but the offer had not been accepted. As the United States was at war and the South threatened to send out privateers, the new offer made Europe suspect that another motive than the one apparent on the surface lay concealed in the offer. Adams made the proposal and understood that the question would be dealt with in Washington, as indeed it had been, for a chance capture of letters showed that the British government, through Lord Lyons in Washington, had approached the Confederacy on that very question and had secured its adhesion to the treaty. The British and French ministers at Washington then sought to interview Seward, but were rebuffed, and the question returned to Europe, accompanied by warnings from the French and British representatives. Adams, believing that negotiations were on foot in Washington, made no move until further instructions from Seward told him of the true situation. He then found Russell unwilling to enter into an agreement without an express exception applying to the Confederacy. The subject was allowed to drop and was not renewed during the war. It appeared later that Great Britain and France would have gladly accepted the adhesion of the United States, even with concessions on their own part. The delay and Seward's conduct produced a change of pol-

icy, but American interests did not suffer. The result made Adams more cautious in his dealings with Earl Russell, for he could not but interpret some of the steps taken as "miserable shufflings" showing strange "divergencies of recollection." Between the annoyance of this unsuccessful negotiation and the want of military success at home Adams did not find his position growing stronger.

In November the *Trent* affair aroused England almost to the point of war. The ministry, having in view the possibility of such an incident, had learned from its law advisers that the United States would be within its rights if it should stop and search the vessel on which the Southern emissaries to Europe were passengers, examine the mail, and even seize the vessel and take her into port for adjudication; but it could not take from her the emissaries and allow the ship to pursue her voyage. An American war-ship entered Southampton and the captain, Marchand, talked enough to lead the authorities to believe that he was there to intercept the *Nashville,* on which Mason and Slidell had intended to sail. The *Nashville* had taken and burned an American merchant ship in the British channel. Palmerston, in a friendly interview with Adams, asked about Marchand's purpose and strongly intimated the inexpediency of an attempt so offensive to the national flag. He could not see that any real advantage could be gained, for the Confederate ministers could not alter the policy already adopted by the British government. On the other hand, it could hardly fail to occasion much prejudice. Adams then told of Marchand's instructions, which were to look for the *Nashville,* and added that on his advice Marchand was watching a ship taking on arms and ammunitions for the South. Soon after, the news came of the seizure and the violation, through Capt. Wilkes's ill-judged act, of the protection offered by the British flag. The burst of jubilation that passed through the Northern States was met by the evidently serious protest of the British, accompanied by a demand for a suitable apology. When knowledge of the seizure reached London, Adams was passing a week-end with Richard Monckton Milnes at Fryston, in Nottinghamshire. On receiving a note from the legation announcing the fact, Adams realized the great danger of the crisis but made no move. He knew that Wilkes had placed the United States in opposition to its long-accepted policy of recognizing the rights of neutral nations in war-time; he was, indeed, one of the few Americans in public life who realized the extent of the crisis thus precipitated. On Dec. 14 the Prince Consort died, and on the 17th Adams received from Seward a statement that Wilkes had acted without instructions and the expression of a hope that the British government would consider the matter "in a friendly temper, and it may expect the best disposition" (*Ibid.,* p. 227) on the part of the American government. On the 19th Adams in a long interview with Russell learned that war might not follow, even if Lord Lyons should be recalled, and in a friendly spirit impressed himself on the British minister so far as to elicit the remark that if all matters were left to them Russell had little doubt they should soon agree. Adams added in his dispatch to Seward, "I expressed my assent" (*Ibid.,* p. 229). By no means relieved of his anxiety and fully aware of the excited condition of English opinion he could only await the issue, quite convinced that his stay in England would probably be short. Unaware of what was taking place in Washington, where almost to the last day concession was deprecated and a war-like outcome probable, he had done as much as could be done by writing confidentially to Seward that he hoped the United States would not invite the ill-will of Europe by not surrendering Mason and Slidell. On Jan. 8, 1862, he learned that the two emissaries had been surrendered. "The danger of war is at present removed," he noted in his diary, "and I am to remain in this purgatory a while longer" (*Ibid.,* p. 238).

The sentiment against the United States did not subside after the *Trent* affair but ebbed and flowed with the success or failure of the Federal military operations. Russell's colleague and chief, Palmerston, surprised the American minister by a personal note, characterizing in terms the opposite of diplomatic Butler's general order intended to put an end to the insults offered to the Federal troops by the women of New Orleans. Ignorant of the real situation and misinterpreting the scope of the order, Palmerston stated that "if the Federal government chooses to be served by men capable of such revolting outrages, they must submit to abide by the deserved opinion which mankind will form of their conduct" (*Ibid.,* p. 249). Adams's first thought was that Palmerston wished a quarrel; his second, that it might be connected with a desire for mediation, which had been rumored and which French activities seemed to confirm. Wishing not to give offense but to ascertain the real purpose of the criticism, Adams asked Palmerston whether it was "addressed to me in any way officially between us, or purely as a private expression of sentiment between gentlemen" (*Ibid.,* p. 251). He also took Palmerston's note to Russell, speaking of it as "entirely unprecedented"; but those words were not needed to impress Russell with its impropriety. What passed between him and Palmerston can only be conjec-

tured, but Palmerston's further communications with Adams placed him still more in the wrong. He had written as prime minister to the American minister and thus made it a public transaction; but he had by marking it "private and confidential" laid an injunction of secrecy on Adams, without his consent. A half-apology from Palmerston and the withdrawal of the implications contained in his note enabled Adams to close the incident in a manner greatly advantageous to himself, and to serve notice on the Premier that "I must hereafter, as long as I remain here in a public capacity, decline to entertain any similar correspondence" (*Ibid.*, p. 260). His position was distinctly stronger and once more he had shown his ability to handle a delicate situation to the credit of his government and himself. Russell throughout the incident had favored Adams and seemed more friendly. Speaking of an interview with Russell on June 19, 1862, Adams says: "I think it was the most kindly interview I have had" (*Ibid.*, p. 255).

Something more than kindness was needed. When Adams had arrived at his post in 1861, he had known no one in public life in England, and had met no one except Richard Cobden. While English feeling in general was against slavery and proved a strong obstacle to any connection with the South other than commercial, the cause of the North made no strong appeal to the ruling class in Great Britain or to the mercantile and industrial interests. A contest to preserve a union already in their opinion dissolved gave them no real issue. Neither trade nor industry had suffered to a marked degree as yet because of the war. The test of the feeling of the people was yet to come. London society reflected the official attitude and the American minister had little social recognition outside of a few who had volunteered acquaintance. Thurlow Weed and other well-intentioned Americans sought to aid him in fulfilling his duties, but they proved of little moment. The leading journals were hostile to the North and supercilious in their denial of any moral question in the contest. But W. E. Forster, a member of Parliament from Bradford, sought Adams, and throughout the contest was the firm defender of the United States and a warm friend of Adams. Cobden and Bright also came to his support, as did the Duke of Argyll, one of the few members of the government who were friendly to the North. Small as the number of such supporters might be, the weight in character influenced the result. The Southern commissioners, Mason and Slidell, and the Southern organ in London—the *Index*—attacked Adams by every means in their power, without gaining more than temporary success

Adams

The length and nature of the war in the South and the need of raw cotton in French and British manufactures brought about a crisis which Adams could feel without being able to measure its gravity. Mediation in any form had been excluded by Seward's firm policy, and interference with the blockade would bring a prompt declaration of war from the United States. The long lists of vessels that had run the blockade, prepared by Mason for use in Parliament, appeared formidable until the nature of the vessels was explained by the American minister. More difficult to combat was the growing conviction that the North could not win and that a further continuance of the war would be against humanity and the best interests of civilization. Still more potent arguments for ending the struggle were found in the suffering caused by the cotton famine. The large crop of 1860 and the large stocks of manufactured goods on hand in 1861 had given a certain appearance of prosperity to the industry, which speculative features tended to heighten as well as to discount. What could not be made good was the supply of raw cotton, for the South held almost a monopoly in that product and the growing need developed no other sources of supply. The great inducements the market offered (the price of raw cotton reaching sixty cents a pound) did not draw from all possible sources an appreciable fraction of the quantity hitherto supplied from the United States. A union of moral, political, and economic forces at this moment threatened to bring about the recognition of the Confederacy, the consequent raising of the blockade, and the undoing of all that had been so painfully secured in the foreign relations of the States.

Adams knew the influence which Mason had on certain members of Parliament, such as Roebuck and Lindsay, the one of whom had taken up the cause of the South for political and the other for commercial reasons. He had seen in the journals the speeches of members of Parliament to their constituents, utterances that became bolder in advocating interference in the American war and calling upon the government to act. He knew that the Emperor of the French was urging upon the British government positive measures of intervention or recognition which would quiet the real distress of the French cotton industry and pave the way for his own American projects in Mexico. Finally, Adams knew that the question had been formally raised in Parliament and a day appointed for taking a vote upon it. He could not know what had taken place between Slidell and Napoleon and the heavy inducements in cotton and alliance and Mexican policy offered by the South in return for Napoleon's aid. Nor could he know that Palm-

erston, Russell, and Gladstone, the three strong men in the cabinet, had resolved that the time had come to intervene, and, if the North rejected the offer, to recognize the Southern Confederacy. Adams had his instructions from Washington and used them indirectly so that their purport would be known to the ministry without the threat which a direct communication would carry. The cabinet took no action and the British and French policy remained as before. Yet in October and November 1862 the danger of intervention had been greater than ever before.

While Southern sympathizers had in that matter almost attained the end of their desire and had lost by so small a margin, the Emancipation Proclamation of President Lincoln reached England. The hatred of slavery, which the British so often, and even the French, had boasted was at the root of their own policy, should have led them to welcome the proclamation as a full indorsement of the long effort to suppress the slave trade and extend emancipation. But opinion in England had concluded that the North could not be successful and in that case the South certainly would pay no attention to so futile if not foolish an act. To Adams, who had led the anti-slavery policy in Massachusetts, the proclamation came as the consummation of his wishes. The war and its evils appeared to his mind "a just judgment upon the country for having paltered with the evil so long" (*Ibid.*, p. 295). He saw that in time emancipation would be accomplished and, as was his wont, he waited. After some weeks the force of abuse diminished and addresses to the President began to come to Adams, first from the workingmen, accompanied by deputations to give additional weight, then from societies and organizations, and early in February from the great meeting in Exeter Hall, London, proof to the minister that the sympathies of the middle classes had been aroused. He thought there could be little doubt that the popular current was in favor of the North, and noted the effect on newspapers and politicians. "It has closed the mouths of those who had been advocating the side of the South," wrote Cobden to Sumner, and he added assurance that no unfriendly act on the part of the government toward the cause of the North was to be apprehended (*Ibid.*, p. 301). The reception given to the proclamation in England proved to Adams the hollowness of the denunciations of America in the past for upholding slavery. "It is impossible for me to express the contempt I feel for a nation which exhibits itself to the world and posterity in this guise," he wrote in his diary. "It is a complete forfeiture of the old reputation for manliness and honesty" (*Ibid.*, p. 305).

Adams

While Adams was experiencing the sensation of victory, for such it was in reality, still another crisis was at hand, more serious than any he had yet met. That the government of Great Britain intended to remain neutral during the war until obliged or sufficiently interested to change its policy may be admitted as true. Yet from the beginning the South insisted that neutrality existed only in form; in effect the North had been greatly favored by Great Britain's accepting, however reluctantly, the fact of the blockade, and by the facilities which the North enjoyed in obtaining arms and munitions. The Confederates could buy, but they could not land arms in Southern ports. But in spite of the Foreign Enlistment Act, which prohibited the "fitting out, equipping, and arming of vessels for warlike operations" (*Ibid.*, p. 307), they could buy or build vessels in England, place guns and munitions upon them on the high sea or in a foreign port, and prey upon the commerce of the North. The *Nashville* had been such a cruiser and the *Florida* had been built for a Confederate agent. Their success led to another contract with the Lairds for a commerce-destroyer known officially as *290,* later as the *Alabama.* Launched in May 1862, time only was needed to man and equip her for service against Northern commerce. The purpose of the vessel was well known in Liverpool, and the United States consul at that place reported the progress made in the shipyard to Adams, who in turn laid the evidence before Russell. The depositions and other statements submitted by Adams to the Foreign Office were clear and conclusive and he had obtained opinion of leading counsel on the correctness of his position, that under the law the government could detain the vessel. The opinion of the law officers of the Crown rejected the evidence as insufficient to call for action, while the authorities at Liverpool were sympathetic with the Confederates and, when the ship was nearly completed, warned them of possible danger. Papers from the Foreign Office were sent to the Queen's Advocate, Sir John Harding, but he happened just then to have a nervous break-down ending in insanity, and they were overlooked. The ship under the name *Enrica* sailed from Liverpool on July 26 and five days later received her crew and guns and began her career as a privateer.

The Confederates in England had also contracted with the Lairds for two iron-clad vessels of the ram type, so greatly improved in destructiveness that no vessel in the Northern navy could meet them. Once released on the sea they could at their convenience raise the blockade and levy tribute upon Northern ports. The Confederacy saw in them a means of securing European recog-

nition and of final success, and the authorities at Washington showed their sense of the situation by sending two representatives to England in an attempt to outbid the Confederates and purchase the rams for the United States. Of that intention Adams was not informed; a knowledge of it would have embarrassed him. He again bombarded the Foreign Office with detailed evidence of the serious nature of the violation of the intention of the Foreign Enlistment Act, and was again told by Russell that the government could not interfere. Not discouraged by his want of success in stopping the *Alabama,* Adams let no opportunity pass of calling attention to actual conditions, to the neglect in the past, and to the heavy responsibilities and damages likely to be incurred by a repetition of that neglect. In his long correspondence on the subject with Russell he proved his knowledge of essentials, his skill and force of statement, and his ability to construct a case against inaction. Seward had given him support by clearly outlining what might happen. If the British government, he wrote, could not enforce the plain intent of its law, the United States would protect its commerce at all hazard, and, should a "partial war" become a general one between the two nations, the responsibility would not fall upon the United States. The battle of Gettysburg and the opening of the Mississippi by the fall of Vicksburg greatly strengthened Adams's hand. At this juncture came the visit to Emperor Napoleon of the leading two parliamentary sympathizers with the South, Roebuck and Lindsay, their apparent success, and their misfortune when stating in Parliament that success. They awakened a temporary anxiety in Adams, who thought he could trace in that adventure the hand of Slidell, but by their own discomfiture they cleared the way for the outcome of Adams's duel with Russell. By September 1863 the rams were approaching completion and the operations of the *Alabama* were such as to leave little doubt as to what the rams could accomplish. To protect themselves from possible interference, the Confederates placed the ships in the name of a French firm ostensibly acting for the Egyptian government.

Steadily denying its power to act and leaving Adams in much the same position which he had occupied in the *Alabama* matter, the British government put him to the full test. He met it and knowing the responsibility of his act he wrote, Sept. 5, the dispatch containing the sentence "It would be superfluous in me to point out to your lordship that this is war" (*Ibid.,* p. 342). Three days later Russell notified him that orders had been given to prevent the departure of the rams. In the moment of this his greatest triumph Adams remained calm and merely noted: "I know not that even in the *Trent* case I felt a greater relief" (*Ibid.,* p. 344).

The narrative of these events does not measure the extent of the victory. With the stopping of the rams the efforts of the Confederacy in Great Britain ended and Mason withdrew to France. Peace with Europe ceased to be uncertain. The position of Adams was assured and the confidence of the American administration in his judgment and abilities was almost equaled by that of the British Foreign Office. In March 1868 when his name was mentioned in debate on the *Alabama* claims in the House of Commons, the House broke into cheers (*London Times,* Mar. 7, 1868). He had made the American representative more respected than he had been for many years and in so doing added reputation to the American name throughout Europe. The outcome of his mission has been compared to the military victories over the South and has not suffered by the comparison. He now conducted a long correspondence with the British government on its liability for losses to American commerce through rebel cruisers of British origin. He constructed the foundation of claims for which the British had made themselves liable morally and which stood the test of arbitration. With the end of war his anxieties were almost completely at rest. Diplomatic questions remained, but they had no such weight as those of the wartime. The activities of Fenians from America, claiming protection from the punishment of their crimes of violence on the ground of American citizenship, caused no little annoyance; and no little prejudice was aroused in political circles in the United States by the assumed neglect of Adams to do what the laws, treaties, or his position forbade.

Adams resigned and returned to the United States in June 1868. Parties and leaders had changed much, and no opening appeared for him in public life. Nor did he desire further service. He was offered the presidency of Harvard University, but declined it, and at Quincy resumed the life he had led before going on his mission. The unsettled disputes with England led to the negotiation of the Treaty of Washington and under it the reference of the *Alabama* claims to arbitration. Of five arbitrators two were to be chosen by the two nations concerned. The United States named Adams and Great Britain designated Sir Alexander Cockburn, chief justice of the Court of Queen's Bench. After a preliminary meeting at Geneva in December 1871, six months were given for study of the cases, and Adams traveled in Europe only to be recalled to Washington for consultation. Difficulties had arisen on the kind

and limit of damages for which reparation was sought. In his correspondence with Russell, Adams had rested with direct damages. Sumner had developed claims for indirect damages of such an amount that they had ceased to be taken seriously, yet he had succeeded in having them inserted in the American case presented to the arbitration. The claims, impossible as they were, threatened to bring the arbitration to an end. Adams had knowledge of English feeling and its manifestation and had taken counsel at Washington. Cockburn, determined in his opposition to the indirect claims, could prevent arbitration. Adams took upon himself to have the indirect damages rejected as contrary to the principles of international law and thus prepared the way for a true arbitration on the direct damages. It was a personal as well as a national victory; for without such action arbitration would have failed.

While on the board of arbitration he was considered by the liberal Republicans—those who had been alienated from the party by the administration of Grant—as their candidate for the presidency. The final choice of Horace Greeley by the convention saved Adams, as his son expresses it, "from either a political defeat, or a presidency predestined from its commencement to failure." Adams turned to his family papers and published the full and untouched text of his father's diary, as *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams* (1874–77). This closed his active life. He died in Boston, Nov. 21, 1886.

With a mind less active and an experience less varied than his father's, Charles Francis Adams possessed a judgment better fitted to deal with the situations raised by the Civil War. Henry Adams speaks of his father as "singular for mental poise—absence of self-assertion or self-consciousness—the faculty of standing apart without seeming aware that he was alone—a balance of mind and temper that neither challenged nor avoided notice, nor admitted question of superiority or inferiority, of jealousy, of personal motives, from any source, even under great pressure" (*The Education of Henry Adams,* 1918, p. 37). In everything that Adams did this balance was shown and produced notable results. His directness and evident sincerity won the confidence even of his opponents. Greater than any office, elective or appointive, entrusted to him, he met the requirements of all in a manner to attract attention; but he had no capacity for political leadership and his following rested upon qualities above those required in party management. National in feeling, his highest accomplishments were on a national scale.

Apart from the volumes of family papers and diplomatic papers, Adams's published writings are as follows: *Appeal from the New to the Old Whigs* (1835); *Reflections upon the Present State of the Currency of the United States* (1837); *Further Reflections,* etc. (1837); "Report on North Eastern Boundary," *House Document, No. 44, Feb. 1841;* "Report on Petition of George Latimer," *House Document, No. 41, Feb. 1843; Report* of Massachusetts Committee on the Annexation of Texas, Massachusetts Senate, *No. 27* (1844); *Texas and the Massachusetts Resolutions* (1844); *How to Settle the Texas Question* (published anonymously, 1845); *What Makes Slavery a Question of National Concern* (1855); *Address on the Occasion of Opening the New Town Hall in Braintree, July 29, 1858;* "Republican Party a Necessity," speech in House of Representatives, May 31, 1860; *Conservatism and Reform* (1860); "On the Union," speech in House of Representatives, Jan. 31, 1861; *The Union and the Southern Rebellion, Farewell Address to His Constituents* (printed in London, 1861); *Struggle for Neutrality in America* (1871); *Address on Life, Character, and Services of William H. Seward* (1873); *Address before the Phi Beta Kappa* (1873); *Address at Amherst College before the Social Union* (1875); *Address before the Literary Societies of Colby University* (1875); and "Orations" on July 4, at Boston, 1843; Quincy, 1856; Fall River, 1860; and Taunton, 1876.

[*Charles Francis Adams,* by his son, Charles Francis Adams (1900); Frederic Bancroft, *Life of W. H. Seward* (1900); *Diplomatic Correspondence,* 1861–68; *Parliamentary Papers,* 1861–68; *Index,* London, 1862–64; E. D. Adams, *Great Britain and the American Civil War* (1925); Brooks Adams, "The Seizure of the Laird Rams," *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.,* vol. XLV, Dec. 1911.]

W. C. F.

ADAMS, CHARLES FRANCIS (May 27, 1835–Mar. 20, 1915), railroad expert, civic leader, historian, was born at Boston, Mass., the son of Charles Francis Adams [*q.v.*] and Abigail Brown (Brooks) Adams. His earlier years were passed between Boston and Quincy and by a preference for the latter he became identified with its history as a town. He remembered his grandfather, John Quincy Adams, as an old man, "always writing . . . with a perpetual inkstain on the forefinger and thumb of his right hand" (*Autobiography,* p. 9), and was impressed by his industrious and somewhat solitary life. From private schools the boy went through the Boston Latin School, entered Harvard University in the sophomore year, and graduated in 1856. Critical of his education and career, he looked back with pleasure on his Harvard days as a "period of rapid development and much enjoyment" (*Ibid.,* p. 31). After leaving college he studied law in the office of Richard

Henry Dana and Francis E. Parker, leading lawyers of their day; but though he was admitted to practice in 1858, he soon discovered that he had no great liking for the law. As what practice he had occupied but a small part of his time, he was in a position to form relations that developed his as yet unformed aptitudes. In 1848 he had accompanied his father to the Buffalo convention, and during the session of the convention Charles Sumner took him to Niagara Falls. He formed a close and admiring friendship for Sumner and later for Seward, with whom he and his father made a tour in the West in the campaign of 1860, where the young man made some speeches, which were well received. In Dana's office he met the best and took what was offered in the association. He grew up in an atmosphere of political discussion. His hours gave him time to write and he began, as had his father, with newspaper communications on public questions. Visiting his father in Washington in the winter of 1860, he eagerly made use of his opportunity to meet prominent men and gained in assurance as well as knowledge. Seeking a wider audience, he offered to James Russell Lowell, then editor of the *Atlantic Monthly,* an article on "The Reign of King Cotton," a subject of living interest. Its acceptance gave him encouragement. At this time he kept a diary, as his three forebears had done. Of this a few extracts only have been preserved, enough to cause regret that he destroyed the record in later years.

In February 1861 he again went to Washington, remained for nearly a month, and witnessed the inauguration of Lincoln, still widening his acquaintance with public men, observing, and studying the situation, only to admit in after years that, with almost every one concerned, he had failed to grasp the situation. His father and Seward seemed to him to have a policy "eminently sensible" (*Ibid.,* p. 73), that of holding the border states loyal until the secession movement should recede, the new administration be in power, and the Union reaction encouraged. Adams's vivid account of this interval, with its uncertainties, doubtings, and lack of coöperation, the coming of the President-elect and his loose utterances on the way, and the sentiments of Seward and Sumner, give proof of his gift of description.

Returning to Boston in March, the appointment of his father to the English mission laid upon him the care of the family property, and the outbreak of war made this a heavy responsibility. As all young men were in the militia, he was a member of the 4th Battalion of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, learned the manual and how to march, and was in garrison in Fort Independence in Boston harbor. The training was elementary yet

Adams

serviceable. He saw the first regiments leave for the South without a strong wish to follow them; he had five weeks of playing soldier at Fort Independence in April and May 1861; and in the following months he watched his friends take service. By the end of October his course of action was determined and he applied for a captaincy in the 1st Massachusetts Cavalry. He received a commission as first lieutenant in December and on the 28th of that month he started for South Carolina with his regiment. To Adams it proved a service of three and a half years, and five years passed before he was again a resident of Boston. Summing up his experience, he was inclined to regard his military life as educationally incomparably more valuable than his years in the university; it would have been even more valuable had he been a staff officer, as he more than once had the opportunity to become. A regimental officer, he records, "no matter how high his grade, sees nothing and knows nothing of what is going on—obedience, self-sacrifice, and patient endurance are the qualities most in demand for him; but as for any intelligent comprehension of the game in progress, that for the regimental officer is quite beyond his ken" (*Ibid.,* pp. 135–36). His family letters during his service have been printed in *A Cycle of Adams Letters, 1861–65* (1920) and have a quality of their own. Vivid in description, natural in expression, frank in opinion on men and events, they are shot through with the vein of introspection natural to an Adams. Sharing in two of the great battles, Antietam and Gettysburg, he gives a picture of camp and garrison service that is unmatched. Conscientious in the performance of duty and learning by experience the essentials of routine, he held an enviable reputation and Gen. Humphreys offered him the highest position on his staff. Adams, now a colonel, declined, feeling obliged to remain with his negro regiment—the 5th Massachusetts Cavalry. In August 1864 his health began to break down and in May 1865 he was a physical wreck. Mustered out in June of that year, he received the brevet of brigadier-general. He married at Newport, Nov. 8, 1865, Mary Hone Ogden, daughter of Edward and Caroline Callender Ogden of New York.

After eleven months in Europe in 1865–66 he returned, restored in health but without occupation. Realizing his unfitness for the law as a source of livelihood, he took to his pen and wrote on railroads, then the important feature in the economic growth of the country. The transcontinental lines were being built with government aid, and in Wall Street the greatest speculators were fighting for control of eastern roads. Adams, seeking for the broad principles that should apply to the develop-

ment of railroad construction and management, had before him the best of examples. From 1866 to 1873 the building of roads had been overdone. They had been recklessly financed and made the object of stock gambling, involving good as well as doubtful undertakings. Adams analyzed the acts and intentions of the men seeking to gain possession of the Erie road, while wrecking it, and in a series of articles fearlessly attacked them and exposed the criminal acts to which they resorted. The papers attracted as great attention by their courage as by their grasp of some railroad problems of general application. Gathered into a volume—*Chapters of Erie and Other Essays* (1871)—they have kept a place in the literature of railroads and stock speculations. He also wrote a series of articles on the Tweed Ring, which were printed under the title, "An Episode in Municipal Government," in the *North American Review* (October 1874, January and July 1875, October 1875) over the name of C. F. Wingate, who had supplied some of the material and to whom Adams characteristically gave the full credit.

When Massachusetts took the lead in establishing a Board of Railroad Commissioners in 1869 Adams because of his evident fitness was appointed one of the three members. The youngest and most active, he performed the labor, controlled the proceedings, and in 1872 became the chairman. This position he held until 1879, producing a series of reports on railway accidents and policy that drew attention to the methods and utility of the board and led to the creation in other states of boards closely modeled after that of Massachusetts. The success of his administration rested upon a full and impartial public examination of facts and a frank presentation to the public of conditions and conclusions. He won the confidence of both operators and public; and the handling of the engineers' strike in 1877 proved the efficacy of his principles, for no other strike among railway operatives in Massachusetts occurred for twenty-five years. The subject was treated by him in 1902 in *Investigation and Publicity as opposed to Compulsory Arbitration* and his methods found favor but not acceptance. He left records of his railroad experience in *Railroads: Their Origin and Problems* (1878) and *Notes on Railroad Accidents* (1879). In 1878, through the influence of Carl Schurz, he became chairman of the government directors of the Union Pacific Railroad, visited the Pacific coast, and prepared the report. Later, in 1884, he became president of that road, a position forced upon him, only to be ousted from it after six years by Jay Gould and his following, who were none too friendly to Adams because of his exposure of the Erie. Adams foresaw the future importance of the road and from the verge of bankruptcy he raised it to a solvent and efficient system. The later financial situation and legislative measures hindered the completion of his administrative reforms. Through no fault of his own he was unable to meet the maneuvers of the speculative railroad wrecker. Still another recognition of his abilities in railroad affairs was his appointment to the Board of Arbitration of the Trunk Line Railroads, but he held the position for only three years, convinced that the time was not ready for such a board.

Adams

Living in Quincy, Mass., he and his brother John Quincy Adams served as moderators in town meetings for twenty years and directed the proceedings of the town government at a time when the place by its size was outgrowing that form of administration. Charles Adams had the more suggestive mind and the greater capacity for labor, but the two brothers left their impress in permanent form. Adams was a member of the school committee, a trustee of the public library, a park commissioner, and a commissioner of the sinking fund. In each of these positions he accomplished results that in retrospect pleased him. He found the school system antiquated and the methods of teaching so imperfect as to be of little value. The average graduate of the grammar school in 1870 could not read with ease, nor could he write an ordinary letter in good English in a legible hand. Uncertain what reforms were necessary, Adams proposed the employment of a trained superintendent and in 1875 gained his end. Out of this came the "Quincy System," which was widely studied and imitated throughout the land and for which Adams was almost wholly responsible. It substituted new methods for the old mechanical ones. In place of memorizing rules, children were to learn to read, write, and cipher as they learned to walk and talk, naturally and by practice. In reading and writing, a geography or history took the place of speller, grammar, and copybook. By 1880 the success of the system seemed assured and Adams's account of the reform—*The New Departure in the Common Schools of Quincy*—passed through six editions.

As the town possessed no public library, provision for one was made in 1871, the cost to be met by town and private subscription. Opened in that year, it proved a great success, and nine years later, through Adams's agency, the town gained the Thomas Crane library building, dedicated in 1882, Adams making the address. In 1874 the town had a debt of $112,000; after nine years of the Adams brothers' management this was reduced to $19,000 and disappeared shortly after. Owing to Adams's plans the town received Wol-

laston Park, historic as the site of Thomas Morton's Merry Mount. The union of the suggestive and the practical in Adams which had benefited the town by application trained him for wider fields, and in 1892 he was appointed to the state commission to devise a system of parks and public reservations in the vicinity of Boston. The work of this commission has surrounded the city with beautiful connecting roadways, saved Blue Hill from the quarrymen, and preserved the Middlesex Fells as public parks. He also served as chairman of a state commission to report upon the relations of street railways and municipalities, which caused him to study the subject in European cities and produced useful general legislation based upon his recommendations, which again was copied in other cities.

For twenty-four years from 1882 he was a member of the Board of Overseers of Harvard University and was prominent in many lines of its development. The nomination of visiting committees fell to him and he himself gave special attention to the English department. His elaborate reports on conditions produced some changes, but he was never satisfied that he had fully understood the situation and the remedy. To him the Harvard system was "radically wrong," and he expressed his views in two addresses which called out much controversy. His ideas on the education to be given by college and university were developed in *A College Fetich* (1883), a protest against the compulsory study of dead languages; and, in 1906, near the term of his long service as overseer, in *Some Modern College Tendencies,* in which he pointed out the complete separation of teacher and individual student and the absence of direction in studies and of the personal influence of instructors. A remedy he found in a group of colleges, each independent and each having its specialty, where the master should know every student. The university should supplement college training. Both papers were constructive in their suggestion and served their purpose of causing reëxamination of accepted methods.

Meanwhile another field had opened to him, by accident as he thought, when the citizens of Weymouth asked him to deliver an address on the 250th anniversary of its settlement. Without experience in historical investigation he accepted and in so doing entered upon forty years of historical writing, essentially his "aptitude," from which he derived his greatest pleasure and most lasting reputation. The address was given in 1874, and in the following year he was elected a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, became a vice-president of it in 1890 and president in 1895, a position he held until his death. In that

Adams

period he contributed many papers, broadened the scope of the society, and added greatly to its reputation. In 1883 he printed some six copies of *Episodes in New England History,* a study of the history of Quincy, which in 1892 appeared in an extended form in two volumes as *Three Episodes of Massachusetts History* and remains a model local history in its form and treatment. In the same year (1883) appeared his edition of Morton's *New English Canaan* and in 1894 his *Antinomianism in the Colony of Massachusetts-Bay, 1636–38,* elaborately annotated. He ventured into a somewhat new field in a biography of Richard Henry Dana (1890), and in a life of his father, Charles Francis Adams (1900), both of which have taken a high place in American biography.

Wishing to write a full biography of his father, Adams for a number of years gave close study to the political history of Massachusetts and the War of Secession and its results. Not a little of his material was used in occasional papers and addresses, the more important of which were side studies of his principal theme. In a group of papers he expressed his conception of secession and particularly the conduct of Gen. Lee: *"Shall Cromwell have a Statue?"* (1902), a plea for a statue to Lee in Washington; *Lee at Appomattox,* etc. (1902); *Constitutional Ethics of Secession* (1903); and *Lee's Centennial* (1907), a series that marked the waning of the animosities which had survived the war. Beginning with 1899 and for fifteen years thereafter he prepared a number of papers on the diplomatic history of the War of Secession, the larger part of which appeared in the *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society.* Drawing largely from the family papers, he was able to give valuable material hitherto unknown, and he enriched it by an interpretation which, always original and individual, often ran counter to accepted conclusions. In 1899 he printed "The Laird Rams," in the *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* vol. XXXIII; in 1901 he made an address in New York on *Before and after the Treaty of Washington* (published in 1902), and followed it by a number of essays on the British Declaration of Neutrality, the *Trent* Affair, the Rams, and British and French mediation. Becoming convinced that the story could not be fully told without having the contemporary English and French diplomatic papers, he went twice to England in 1913, the first visit being due to his appointment to deliver three lectures on American history at Oxford University. These lectures were printed in 1913 as *Trans-Atlantic Historical Solidarity.* He gained access to important collections in England, obtained much material, and returned to complete

the life of his father. The new material led to a revision of his earlier studies in diplomatic history, but was never fully utilized.

All this does not measure the extent of his activities. He engaged in large business enterprises and with a measure of success. In the town of Lincoln, Mass., whither he removed from Quincy, he showed the same interest in town government as he had in Quincy. Throughout his whole career he was keenly alive to the course of political events, took an active share in reform and independent movements, and was an eager participant in the discussions of public policy, both state and national. He began as a Republican, but later became independent of party and remained so to the end. Except for the positions held in Quincy he never was a candidate for nor held an elective office. In 1883 he was offered a nomination for the governorship, but declined it on the ground that a third candidate would divide the party and make the defeat of Gen. Butler less certain. In dealing with public questions, he acted and wrote not as a partisan but in a large way—as had his ancestors before him. He spoke and published on ballot and electoral reform, proportional representation, free trade (he was in favor of a tariff for revenue), civil service reform, currency and finance, taxation, the abuses of the pension system, Panama tolls, the Philippines, and imperialism. To the end he remained active, individual, and suggestive. He died in Washington, Mar. 20, 1915.

"Always independent, sometimes recalcitrant . . . by nature inclined to believe that long-established practices of governments, institutions of education, and financial or industrial organizations were likely to be wrong, or at least capable of great improvement," was President Eliot's summary of his life-work (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, XLVIII, 387). "Inheriting a great tradition of public service, he felt the obligations which it imposed, and to that patriotism which was born in the descendant of men who had done so much to found and preserve this nation was added the consciousness of what was due from the members of his family," added Moorfield Storey (*Ibid.*, XLVIII, 387). In his writing, so much of which was for special occasions, he has left a record of his own acts, opinions, and experience, expressed with detachment and independence. Possessing an inquiring and historical mind, with pronounced ability to investigate and present social and historical problems, progressive in matters of political or administrative improvement, yet conservative in action, he showed that he was near to John Quincy Adams in qualities of mind but wanting in the aggressiveness that distinguished the elder statesman. Passing a life largely in controversy, his absolute honesty of purpose and conviction was never questioned.

In addition to what has been mentioned Adams printed a number of historical addresses, of which the following are the more important: *Double Anniversary, '76 and '63* at Quincy (1869); *An Oration before the Authorities of Boston, July 4, 1872* (1872); *History of Braintree* (1891); *The Centennial Milestone, Quincy* (1892); *Massachusetts: its Historians and its History* (1893); *Sifted Grain and the Grain Sifters* (1900); and *"'Tis Sixty Years Since"* (1913). On politics he published *Individuality in Politics* (1880) and *Emancipation of the Voter* (1894). In 1911 he gathered into a volume a number of his papers—*Studies: Military and Diplomatic, 1775–1865*—and before 1912 he prepared an autobiography, published the year after his death.

[The chief sources are *Charles Francis Adams 1835–1915: an Autobiography*, with a "Memorial Address" by Henry Cabot Lodge (1916) and tributes in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, XLVIII.]

W.C.F.

ADAMS, CHARLES KENDALL (Jan. 24, 1835–July 26, 1902), historian, college president, only son of Charles and Maria Shedd Adams, was born in the township of Derby, Vt. His grandfather was David E. Adams, and his earliest known ancestor William Adams, who emigrated from England in 1635. His father was a farmer and was assisted by his son. The latter attended the district school, and at the age of seventeen taught in a district school. In 1856 the family emigrated to Iowa, and there father and son worked together on a farm. His preparation for college, received at Denmark Academy, was so meager that when he applied for entrance at the University of Michigan he was admitted only, as he himself stated, through the leniency of his examiners. He was poor and had to work his way through college, but he was always diligent. In his freshman year he bought with his hard-earned savings a dozen good books in general literature. "By his maturity and weight of character, rather than by his scholarship, which was hampered by his slender preparation, he wielded a decided influence over his classmates," said President Angell. The chief influence of his college days was undoubtedly Andrew D. White[*q.v.*], professor of history, to whom, in the dedication of a book, he wrote: "To the inspiration of your lectures and your advice, more than to any other cause, I owe my fondness for historical study." It was due to the same influence that he was appointed to carry on the work in the chair of history when White resigned. After four years as

assistant professor of history (1863–67), he was advanced to the full professorship, with leave of absence of a year and a half to study in German and French universities. He had been married Aug. 13, 1883, to a widow, Abigail Disbrow Mudge, and it was through her assistance chiefly, it was said, that he was enabled to study abroad.

His most important innovation at the University of Michigan was the introduction of the seminary method of instruction for advanced students. He was a stimulating and popular teacher, his lectures attracting citizens from the town until there was no longer space to receive them, and he was prominent on building committees and in other university activities. It was doubtless his success as a university lecturer and his general influence in the faculty that caused President White to invite him to give several successive courses of lectures at Cornell University (1881–85), and his success in these probably led to his nomination by White to succeed him in the presidency of Cornell (1885). Adams's first wife died at Cornell July 5, 1889, and July 9, 1890, he married Mary Mathews Barnes, the widow of Albert S. Barnes.

His seven years in the presidency of Cornell University were distinguished in several directions: the erection of the library and the chemical laboratory, the establishment of the law school, the President White School of History and Political Science, and the departments of architecture, civil engineering, and archæology. But the chief distinction of his administration was the appointment of eminent professors. Of sixty-three professors constituting the faculty when he left Cornell in 1892, thirty-two had been appointed during his administration. He was an extraordinary judge of character, and he never showed jealousy in having able scholars about him. He resigned from Cornell with the intention of devoting himself to literary work, but found the offer of the presidency of the University of Wisconsin too tempting to resist. This offer was doubtless due again to Andrew D. White, who, when his opinion was asked, is said to have replied: "My first choice would be Charles Kendall Adams, my second choice would be Charles Kendall Adams, my third choice would be Charles Kendall Adams."

His most successful work was done at Wisconsin. He was a building president, and had the gift of winning liberal appropriations from the legislature. Appropriations for three new buildings at Wisconsin had just been secured by his predecessor, but he set to work at once to secure a new library. This was completed at a cost of $750,000. It was the third university library he had helped to erect, and in many respects it may be considered the memorial of his administration. It is no wonder that at its dedication, as he walked along the white Ionic-columned front, he was heard to exclaim, "At last we have done something worthy of the state!" Altogether about a million and a half was expended in building during his ten years, and appropriations for other university needs were in proportion. He believed strongly in graduate work, and during his incumbency the Graduate School doubled its numbers.

After eight years of service his health broke down in January 1900, and after that he was never at the helm more than a day or two consecutively. His physicians sent him finally to Italy and Germany for recuperation. He returned from Europe in September 1901 seemingly much improved in health, but in the opening convocation address to the students the collapse came. His old trouble returned and serious illness followed. He realized that his health was broken, and as soon as the regents could be assembled he resigned (Oct. 11, 1901) and went to California. On the whole, his health seemed to improve there and he built a house at Redlands. "My wife looks forward with much pleasure to the new life," he wrote, "and I hope it will be in every way beneficial." They moved into their new residence on July 13, 1902, but on July 26 he died. His love of the University of Wisconsin was shown most significantly in the bequest of his whole property to it as a fellowship fund to promote graduate work in English, Greek, and history.

Adams was a man of distinguished presence; about six feet in height, one hundred and eighty pounds in weight, with steel-gray eyes and heavy eyebrows. His leonine head, that somewhat reminded one of Tennyson's, always attracted attention. Dean Birge described him as one of the first men of this country to catch the spirit and temper of true university work. Adams used to say, "The university is for the students," and "A university is chiefly an inspiration and an opportunity." These were key-notes of his policy, and he was always proud to feel that he "kept the team pulling together."

His first book was *Democracy and Monarchy in France* (1874). It was based on a university course of lectures, and attracted considerable attention, being translated into German. His *Manual of Historical Literature* (1882) passed through several editions. He edited also a collection of representative British orations, in three volumes, with biographical sketches and explanatory notes. After he assumed the presidency of Cornell University executive work left little time for writ-

ing except baccalaureate and other occasional addresses. To the Cornell period belongs his little volume, *Christopher Columbus* (1892). He was editor-in-chief of the revision of Johnson's *Cyclopædia. A History of the United States,* by Charles Kendall Adams and W. P. Trent, was published in 1903.

[Charles Forster Smith, *Charles Kendall Adams, a Life Sketch,* published by the Regents of the University of Wisconsin, 1924.]

C. F. S.

ADAMS, CHARLES R. (Feb. 9, 1834–July 4, 1900), opera singer, was born in Charlestown, Mass., the son of Charles and Eliza Ann (Runey) Adams—the father, who was a farmer, being a *Mayflower* descendant and the mother being descended from at least two previous generations of American-born. Both families had fought in the Revolution. Several of the eight children became choir singers and frequently sang together at home. Since Charles, the eldest, manifested unusual musical ability and possessed a voice of natural beauty, he began his musical studies at an early age, having as teachers, Edwin Bruce, Madame Arnault, and R. Mulder, all of Boston. His smooth, strong tenor voice made him a favorite concert singer and he decided to follow music as a profession. In 1856 he sang the tenor part in *The Creation* with the Handel and Haydn Society of Boston, and for the next five years he appeared in oratorio, as well as in concert, touring not only this country but the West Indies, where he sang also in opera. Mulder, recognizing the possibilities of his student, induced him to accompany him to Europe, where he studied with Barbière in Vienna and made such progress that he was called to the Vienna Opera to sing the tenor rôle in *La Sonnambula* with Mlle. Artot. He learned his rôle in three days and achieved a notable triumph. He toured Holland and Russia, after which he was given a three-year engagement at Budapest, though he did not complete the full period of his contract because of being called to a larger field—the Royal Opera in Berlin, where he remained three years. In 1867 he became the principal tenor at the Imperial Opera (Hofoper) in Vienna, where he remained until 1876—nine years. Besides this Vienna engagement he sang in opera for two seasons in Covent Garden, London, one season at the Royal Opera in Madrid, also one season at La Scala, Milan, and in the principal German opera houses. After gaining great success he came to America with the Strakosch Company for the season of 1877–78. He appeared in German opera with Madame Pappenheim and in Italian opera with Clara Louise Kellogg, Marie Litta, and Annie Louise Cary. He sang in the first American performance of *Rienzi.* His greatest rôles were Tannhäuser, Lohengrin, Rienzi, and Manrico. George Upton writes of him: "He was the most accomplished native tenor of his time and had not merely a very powerful voice, but a very sweet one and one of great range. He sang with dramatic expression and a peculiarly refined and artistic finish. His Tannhäuser and Lohengrin had made him a famous reputation both in this country and in Europe." He was without doubt the greatest American singer of his time. His naturally beautiful voice was excellently trained and under absolute control. Added to this, he had a splendid physique, regular, clear-cut features, and a commanding stage presence. He was as great an actor as he was a singer. From 1879 until his death he lived in Boston, devoting the last twenty years of his life to teaching, in which field he was also eminently successful. He taught many distinguished singers, among them Grace Hiltz, Nellie Melba, and Emma Eames. He died at his summer home at West Harwich, on Cape Cod, Mass.

[H. C. Lahee, *Famous Singers of Today and Yesterday* (1898); Geo. P. Upton, *Musical Memories* (1908); *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians, Am. Supp.* (1920); G. L. Howe and W. S. B. Mathews, *A Hundred Years of Music in America* (1889); additional information from Adams's intimate friend, Mr. Jacob Wachenheimer.]

F. L. G. C.

ADAMS, DANIEL (Sept. 29, 1773–June 8, 1864), physician, educator, was one of the many early New England doctors of broad interests, who were as active in serving the intellectual and moral needs of their communities as in ministering to the physical ailments of their patients. He was born in Townsend, Mass., the son of Daniel and Lydia Taylor Adams. His father was deacon in the church, a justice of the peace, and financially able to give his children ample educational advantages. Young Adams graduated from Dartmouth College in 1797, studied medicine under Dr. Nathan Smith of the Dartmouth Medical School, and is recorded as having received the degree of Bachelor of Medicine in 1799, and that of Doctor in 1822. Immediately upon receiving the first degree he began practicing in Leominster, Mass. Here at the memorial service for Washington, held Feb. 22, 1800, he delivered the eulogy, which the town ordered printed and "served to every legal voter." On August 17 of this year he married Nancy, the only daughter of Dr. Mulliken of Townsend. Together with Salmon Wilder he began publishing a weekly newspaper, called the *Telescope,* the first issue of which appeared Jan. 2, 1800. For want of sufficient encouragement it was discontinued, Oct. 14, 1802.

In the meantime he had become impressed by the lack of adequate text-books in the schools. The commonly used arithmetic, for example, was difficult and expensive. Accordingly, in 1801, Adams published *The Scholar's Arithmetic,* comparatively simple and reasonable in price. For many years it was used throughout New England. He also published not later than 1803, for a third edition with a preface of that date was issued in November 1805, *The Understanding Reader or Knowledge before Oratory.* In the preface he asks: "Do you who are parents wish for nothing more than that your children should acquire an easy volubility of tongues while their heads are left uncultivated as the bells in your churches?" His own reader was designed to arrest attention, excite curiosity, encourage reflection, and so cultivate understanding. This also had wide use. About 1805 he removed to Boston, where he taught a private school, and for a time edited the *Medical and Agricultural Register,* a monthly periodical designed to give "practical information in husbandry, cautions and directions for the preservation of health, management of the sick, etc."

His own health becoming somewhat impaired, Adams removed in 1813 to Mont Vernon, N. H., and resumed the practice of medicine. Soon he was one of the most prominent consulting physicians in that part of the state. His interest in schools and civic affairs continued, however, and it is said of him that he "wielded a controlling influence in behalf of temperance, education, and morality" (Chas. J. Smith, *History of the Town of Mont Vernon,* 1907). In 1838, 1839, and 1840, he was a member of the New Hampshire Senate. In 1846 he removed to Keene, N. H., where he died. Besides the text-books mentioned, he published: *Geography, or a Description of the World* (1814, 2nd ed., 1816); *The Thorough Scholar, or the Nature of Language* (1817, 4th ed.); *The Agricultural Reader* (1824); *Adams' New Arithmetic* (1827); *The Monitorial Reader* (1841); *Primary Arithmetic* (1848); *Bookkeeping* (1849). Biographical notices mention also a *Mensuration.*

[David Wilder, *Hist. of Leominster* (1853); Frank H. Whitcomb, *Vital Statistics of the Town of Keene, N. H.* (1905); Simon G. Griffin, *Hist. of the Town of Keene* (1904); *Dartmouth Coll. Gen. Cat.* (1900); G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll. 1791–1854* (1867); *Records N. H. Med. Soc.* (1911).]

H. E. S.

ADAMS, DANIEL WEISSIGER (1820–June 13, 1872), lawyer, soldier, entered the Confederate Army from private life at the beginning of the Civil War, was a commanding officer in several of its severest battles, and at its close, having been three times wounded, returned to private life to survive but a few years. The son of George and Anna (Weissiger) Adams, he was born in Lynchburg, Va., but, while he was still a child, his father moved to Mississippi. Here the elder Adams was United States district attorney from 1830 to 1836, and United States district judge from 1836 to 1839. He is described by Reuben Davis, a member of the Mississippi bar (*Recollections of Mississippi and Mississippians,* 1890, p. 153), as "not great as to legal learning but was for justice and right, and his fine practical sense and good judgment enabled him to give general satisfaction." Young Adams was educated at the University of Virginia and became a lawyer, practicing in Louisiana, where he gained some reputation. In 1843 as a result of a quarrel over accusations of his father he killed editor James Hagan of Vicksburg under circumstances which suggested self-defense. He was tried for murder and acquitted.

In 1861 the governor of Louisiana appointed him one of three members of the military board to organize the state for war. Two regiments were formed, one of cavalry and one of infantry. Of the latter Adams was appointed lieutenant-colonel, and on Oct. 30, 1861 was commissioned colonel. The regiment was then at Pensacola, Fla., where preparations were being made to take Fort Pickens on Santa Rosa Island. The enterprise was abandoned, however, and in the spring of 1862 Adams and his men took part in the operations of the West. At Shiloh they were in Wither's division of the 2nd Corps under Gen. Bragg. Early in the first day's fighting, Apr. 6, the brigade commander was killed, and Adams succeeded him, leading his troops in the attack which, in spite of a heroic resistance, finally drove back and broke Prentiss's division on the Union left. In this engagement Adams lost an eye. On May 23 he was commissioned brigadier-general. Recovering from his wound sufficiently to take part in the Kentucky campaign, he commanded the Louisiana brigade of the Army of the Tennessee, in the wing under Gen. Hardee at Perryville, Oct. 8, 1862. Again, at Stone's River (Murfreesboro), Dec. 31 of the same year, Adams saw fierce fighting, his brigade being a part of the force sent to the support of Gen. Polk, and one of the two which attacked a Union force of fifteen guns supported by infantry. The Confederates were repulsed, having lost about a third of their men, and he was again wounded. He was able, however, to be at the battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863, where his brigade was the first in contact with the Union army. On the second day, in the attack of Breckinridge's division, he fought his way to the rear of the Union intrenchments, but

when reinforcements came up was driven back. Once more he was wounded. Gen. D. H. Hill, commenting on his gallantry, said, "It was difficult for me to decide which the most to admire, his courage in the field or his unparalleled cheerfulness under suffering" (quoted in biographical sketch of Adams in *Louisiana*, p. 23). Soon after recovering from his wounds, Adams was placed in command of a cavalry brigade operating in northern Alabama and Mississippi, and on Sept. 24, 1864, of the district of central Alabama. The conditions were those inevitable in the rear of any army when defeat is impending. Adams had to collect supplies, gather in deserters and malingerers, and suppress bushwhackers. On Mar. 11, 1865 he was given command of the entire state north of the Gulf department. He took part in the defense of Selma against Gen. Wilson, Apr. 2, 1865, and having evacuated Montgomery, fought a battle at Columbus, Ga., Apr. 16. He was paroled at Meridian, Miss., May 9, 1865, and resumed the practice of his profession at New Orleans, where he died. He left a widow, but no children. Brigadier-General Wirt Adams [*q.v.*] was his brother.

[*Official Records; Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1893–99); Alcée Fortier, *Louisiana*, sketches of parishes, towns, events, institutions and persons (1914); Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907); *National Republican*, New Orleans, June 14, 1872.]

J. R. M. T.

ADAMS, DUDLEY W. (Nov. 30, 1831–Feb. 13, 1897), horticulturist, and leader in the "granger movement," was born in Winchendon, Mass., the son of Joseph Boynton and Hannah (Whitney) Adams, and a descendant in the eighth generation of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass. When he was four years old his family moved to a small rocky farm, where he spent his boyhood and youth. He was bright and eager to learn, and after passing through the public schools became a teacher. When he was twenty-one years old he went west, and with his small savings took up a piece of government land, becoming one of the first settlers of Waukon, Ia. He learned surveying, and was for ten years the assessor of the county. In 1856 he established Iron Clad Nursery, and in a comparatively short time developed an orchard of 4,000 trees, which was one of the best in that section of the country. When the National Grange of the Patrons of Husbandry was organized he became one of its most active promoters, and in 1873 was elected its Master. He was the father of the first attempt at railroad-freight legislation, and had a hand in framing some of the proposals for fixing rates and forbidding discriminations, which were introduced into the Congress of 1873–74. No federal legislation was secured at that time, owing to opposition on the ground of unconstitutionality, but in Iowa a law embodying the ideas of the Grangers was passed, which was held constitutional. The result of the agitation which Adams helped to stimulate was the establishment of nation and state regulation of railroads. In 1875 he went to Florida, where he planted an extensive orchard of orange and other fruit trees, and did much to develop intelligent horticultural industry, as he had previously done in Iowa. He organized the State Horticultural Society and became its president, holding that office until his death. He was studiously inclined, of progressive tendencies, and a man of great energy. His service in organizing the farmers, awakening them to self-consciousness, and uniting them in efforts to promote their interests, especially with relation to railroad transportation, was of great importance.

[A. W. Adams, *Gen. Hist. of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass., and his Descendants* (1898); L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. of Am. Ag.* (1904), IV, 548; O. H. Kelley, *Origin and Progress of the Order of Patrons of Husbandry in the U. S. 1866–73* (1875); E. W. Martin (James D. McCabe), *Hist. of the Grange Movement; or, the Farmers' War against Monopolies* (1874); T. C. Atkeson, *Semi-Centennial Hist. of the Patrons of Husbandry* (1916).]

E. H. J.

ADAMS, EBENEZER (Oct. 22, 1765–Aug. 15, 1841), educator, was reared on a farm in New Ipswich, N. H., the son of Ephraim and Rebecca Locke Adams. There were eighteen other children, and his father was a man of only moderate means. Opportunities for anything but work were therefore few, but he was an ambitious lad and not easily discouraged. A singing-school teacher once told him that his voice was so rasping that he "better save it to saw wood with"; nevertheless, he continued practicing and in time became a fairly good singer. He showed the same persistency in the matter of an education. Though he had to wait until he was twenty-one years old, he then began preparing for college at the local academy, the principal of which, John Hubbard, he was afterward to succeed as professor in Dartmouth College. Had he been born a hundred years later, his athletic prowess might have opened an academic career for him earlier, for at the age of nineteen he was chosen to defend the honors of New Hampshire in wrestling against three brothers who came over the line from Ashburnham, Mass. This he did conclusively. At the age of twenty-two he entered Dartmouth and graduated with honors in the class of 1791. The following year he became preceptor of the academy at Leicester, Mass., where he remained until 1806. He was no mere pedant, but a leading citizen of the town, serving as justice of the

peace and as its first postmaster. On July 9, 1795, he married Alice, daughter of Dr. John Frink of Rutland, Mass., who died June 20, 1805, leaving five children. From Leicester he went to Portland, Me., where he taught in an academy. While here he married, May 17, 1807, Beulah, daughter of Timothy Minot of Concord, Mass., by whom he had two children. In 1808 he became the first professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H. Apparently the trustees of Dartmouth had had their eyes on him for some years, for in 1804 when they elected his former teacher, John Hubbard, professor of mathematics and philosophy, they stipulated that in case Hubbard declined, the chair was to be offered to Adams. In 1809 they elected the latter to the chair of languages, and at Hubbard's death, a year later, Adams became his successor. He remained at Dartmouth the rest of his life, relinquishing his chair to his son-in-law, Ira Young, in 1833, and becoming professor emeritus.

He is described by a pupil as "well-proportioned, broad-shouldered, with a commanding presence and amiable countenance. He was bold, earnest, energetic; persevering, artless, and honest as the day. He said exactly what he meant. His vision was clear, strong, and accurate. Imagination was never active; oratory was not his forte. Demonstrative evidence suited him best" (B. P. Smith, *History of Dartmouth College*, 1878, p. 244). During his term of service occurred the celebrated dispute between the State and the college. In 1816 the legislature passed an act amending the original charter, changing the name of the college to "Dartmouth University," increasing the number of trustees, and providing for state control through a board of overseers. Under the new arrangement certain of the old trustees were removed, President Francis Brown [*q.v.*] and Professors Adams and Shurtleff, the only two permanent professors, were deposed, and the "University" organized and opened. Although excluded from the college buildings, the old faculty held its ground and continued the college in a hired hall, contending that the action of the legislature was illegal. They were finally upheld by the United States Supreme Court in the famous "Dartmouth College Case." During this critical period Adams with his indomitable spirit and persistency was a tower of strength. Had he or his colleagues weakened, it is said, the original trustees would have surrendered. A hint at the extent of his activity may be derived from an entry in the diary of the Massachusetts printer, Isaiah Thomas (*Transactions and Collections of the American Antiquarian Society*, IX, 373–74), "Mr. Ebenr. Adams, one of the Professors of Dartmouth College, called on me. He is on a mission to collect a sum to enable the government of the College to defend their claims in the S. C. of the United States in Washington against the government of Dartmouth University." For more than two years during President Brown's sickness and after his death, he filled the office of president, although administrative work was not congenial to him. In addition to his varied services to the college, he found time for philanthropic and religious work, being president of the Bible Society in New Hampshire, interested in the Colonization Society, which he judged the only hope of removing the evil of slavery, and active in the cause of foreign missions and temperance.

[Geo. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867); Emory Washburn, *Hist. Sketches of the Town of Leicester, Mass.* (1860); *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, I; Chas. H. Chandler and Sarah F. Lee, *Hist. of New Ipswich, N. H.* (1914); Frederic Kidder and A. A. Gould, *Hist. of New Ipswich* (1852); John K. Lord, *Hist. of Dartmouth Coll.* (1913).]

H. E. S.

ADAMS, EDWIN (Feb. 3, 1834–Oct. 28, 1877), one of the most popular actors of his day and considered one of America's best light comedians, was born at Medford, Mass. He adopted the stage career in 1853, making his first appearance at the National Theatre, Boston, on Aug. 29 of that year, as Stephen in Sheridan Knowles's play *The Hunchback*. Two months later he appeared in the same city, at the Athenæum, as Bernardo in *Hamlet*. The following year, on Sept. 20, he acted the part of Charles Woodley in *The Soldier's Daughter* at the Chestnut Street Theatre, Philadelphia. But it was not until he was seen in Baltimore a few years later, when he scored a big hit, that he attracted any particular attention. His reputation now established, he became a star, making appearances in all the principal cities of the country. He was seen in *Hamlet* with Kate Bateman in 1860, and on Feb. 3, 1869 he played Mercutio to Edwin Booth's Romeo at the inauguration of the new Booth Theatre, New York City. During the engagement at Booth's Theatre, he was seen in *Narcisse*, as Raphael in *The Marble Heart*, and as Iago to Booth's Othello. The following week he played the Moor to Booth's Iago. Later, he was seen as Rover in *Wild Oats* and as Claude in *The Lady of Lyons*, and for some time continued as leading man at Booth's, his repertory including all the chief rôles in tragedy. On June 21 he was seen for the first time as Enoch Arden, in a dramatization of Tennyson's pathetic narrative poem. The play proved an enormous success and he appeared in it all over the United

States. Joseph Jefferson in his *Autobiography* writes concerning Adams's interpretation: "The animation of his face, the grace of his person, and, above all, the melody of his voice well fitted him for the stage. While he could not fairly be called a great artist, he was something more highly prized—a born actor, a child of nature if not of art, swayed by warm impulse rather than by premeditation. His Enoch Arden, so far as the character is related to the stage, was a creation entirely his own, and one, too, that touched the sympathies of his audience" (p. 323). Adams was the original in America of Ivan Khorvitch in Tom Taylor's drama *The Serf*, first performed at Philadelphia in September 1865, and he was also seen as Robert Landry in *The Dead Heart*. His last appearance as an actor was at the California Theatre, San Francisco, May 27, 1876, when he played Iago to the Othello of John E. McCullough. In 1877, when he was overtaken by ill health and misfortune, a series of benefit performances was given for him at the Academy of Music, New York City, in which McCullough participated, and netted $10,000. His last appearance in public was at the California Theatre, Feb. 12, 1877, when, at another benefit, he was unable to act himself but occupied a chair in the centre of the stage. William Winter writes of him: "Everybody loved Adams. Sothern (Edward A. Sothern) was devotedly attached to him. In his day he was one of the blithest spirits in all the bright world of the stage" (*Other Days*, pp. 192-93).

[William Winter, *Other Days* (1908); T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1870); T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the N.Y. Stage* (1903).]

A.H.

ADAMS, ELIPHALET (Mar. 26, 1677–Oct. 4, 1753), clergyman, was an early New England divine of high standing and influence. He was born in Dedham, Mass., where his father, Rev. William Adams, was pastor. His mother was Mary, daughter of William Manning of Cambridge, Mass. A journal which Adams kept for a brief period opens with the following statements: "Anno 1677, March 26. I was born a sinner into an evil world. 1679, June 24. My mother died. 1685, August 17. My father left this evil world and left me an orphan to God's Providence and a wide world." Friends assisted him in getting an education and in 1694 he graduated from Harvard College. Where he received his theological training is not known, but under date of Nov. 20, 1696, his journal states: "I came first to Little Compton to preach among ym." The next two entries disclose the nature of the work in which he was next engaged: "1698, July 12. I was put in to be an Indian preacher by the Gentlemen who have the oversight of yt work. 1699, May. I preached my first sermon to the Indians in their own language with fears lest I should be a Barbarian to ym, but yy told me yy understood it well and accepted it thankfully." From 1701–3 he was assistant to Rev. Benjamin Colman at Brattle Street Church, Boston. His reputation became such that when Rev. Gurdon Saltonstall was elected governor of Connecticut, he was chosen to succeed him as pastor at New London, and was ordained to take charge of the church there on Feb. 9, 1708/9. In this capacity he continued for forty-three years. On Dec. 15, 1709, he married Lydia, daughter of Alexander and Lydia Pygan of New London, by whom he had six children. She died Sept. 6, 1749, and on Sept. 21, 1751 he was married by Mather Byles in Boston to Elizabeth Wass.

He was a man of discretion, well-balanced mind, and great stability of character, often resorted to for counsel by the churches of the colony when troubles arose. His own church he guided successfully through a stormy period. During it the Baptists founded their first society in New London; the Episcopalians formed a church out of his congregation; and the New Lights created much unrest; but with quietness, tact, and firmness he held to his course, stigmatized by the New Lights as "a dumb dog that would not bark." In addition to his pastoral duties, he took youths into his home and prepared them for the ministry. He also continued his activities among the Indians, acting as a missionary to the Pequots, Mohegans, and Niantics. From 1720 to 1738 he was a trustee of Yale College, and his influence upon the institution is said to have been great. In 1724 (F. B. Dexter, *Biographical Sketches of the Graduates of Yale College with Annals of the College History, 1701–1745*, 1885, pp. 289–90) the rectorship of Yale was offered him, and he was strongly urged to accept it. He laid the matter before a meeting of the town, Apr. 16, 1724, and declared his willingness to abide by its decision. The townspeople voted that they could not let him go, and he declined the appointment. He died in New London in his seventy-seventh year and was buried there.

[*Colls. Mass. Hist. Soc.* (1852), vol. I, 4th ser.; W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit* (1857), vol. I; Frances M. Caulkins, *Hist. of New London* (1852); W. H. Starr, *A Centennial Hist. Sketch of New London* (1876).]

H.E.S.

ADAMS, FREDERICK UPHAM (Dec. 10, 1859–Aug. 28, 1921), inventor, author, was born in Boston, Mass., and died at Larchmont, N. Y. His parents were John Spencer and Emeline

(Smith) Adams, the former a veteran of the Civil War and a mechanical engineer. To a general education in the public schools of Elgin, Ill., was added a thorough mechanical training under his father, which qualified him for several years' service (1880–83) as a machine designer in Chicago. In 1884, in collaboration with his father, he was granted letters patent on an electric-light tower—a lofty mast supporting a battery of arc-lamps—which for several years was widely used in the illumination of cities. His interest in street lighting led to his invention of an electric-lamp support in 1885, and of an electric-lamp post in 1889, the latter the standard structure since generally adopted. From electric lighting he turned to railroads, with special reference to designing rolling-stock for speed, and in January 1893 was granted seven letters patent on a railroad car and train, with suitable equipment and special housing for locomotive and tender. In 1900 an experimental train constructed from his designs for the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad proved capable of a sustained speed of over 100 miles per hour. A discussion of his theory and designs is found in his work, *Atmospheric Resistance and its Relation to the Speed of Railway Trains* (1892). In the meantime, Adams had established a reputation in journalism and authorship, but reappeared in the Patent Office, in 1914–15, with applications for an improved road-bed and leveler and a new type of vehicle tire.

Early in his journalistic experience, he developed marked interest in sociology and labor problems, which led to his service, during several years, as labor editor of the *Chicago Tribune*. He reported the anarchist uprising of 1886, and numerous labor strikes following it, and in 1893 founded a reform magazine, *The New Time*, which he conducted for several years. He was western press representative of the Democratic National Convention of 1892, and chief of the Democratic Library and Press Bureau in 1896. His only public service was in the office of chief of smoke inspection of Chicago, during 1894–97. As a writer on social and economic subjects, he early espoused the theory of direct legislation, which he advocated in his book, *The Majority Rule League of the United States* (1898). His other books, dealing principally with sociologic and political matters, are: *President John Smith* (1897), "the story of a peaceful revolution"; *The Kidnapped Millionaires* (1901), "a tale of Wall Street and the Tropics"; *John Burt* (1903), "a study of masterful character"; *Colonel Monroe's Doctrine* (1903); *How Cities are Governed in Great Britain* (1904); *John Henry Smith* (1905), a novel; *The Bottom of the Well* (1906), a tale of smugglers and anarchists; *The Revolt* (1907); *The Waters-Pierce Case in Texas* (1908); *The Oil War in Mexico* (1909); *The Plot that Failed* (1912), dealing with the alleged bribery activities of Edward Hines in securing the election of William Lorimer to the United States Senate; *The Conquest of the Tropics* (1914), the story of the United Fruit Company; *Woodrow Wilson vs. Woodrow Wilson* (1919); and *The Open Shop* (1919). In his later years, Adams gained recognition as an authority on aviation, a subject discussed by him in several series of newspaper articles. He was an expert, also, on bridge and other games of cards (see Stephen B. Ayres, *Bridge*, 1909). His wife was Alice Mary Whitaker, whom he married in 1884.

[*Who's Who in America* and general biog. colls.; *Bookm.*, July 1905, portr.; *N.Y. Times*, *N.Y. Tribune*, Aug. 30, 1921; records of the U. S. Patent Office.]

ADAMS, GEORGE BURTON (June 3, 1851–May 26, 1925), college professor, historian, was born at Fairfield, Vt. He was of old New England ancestry, a son of Emeline Nelson and Rev. Calvin Carlton Adams, a Congregational clergyman. He attended district schools but was prepared for college by his father, entering Beloit, where he took his A.B. in 1873, and his A.M. in 1876. Intending to enter the ministry, he took his B.D. at Yale in 1877; but went at once into teaching and was professor of history at Drury College from 1877 to 1888. With leave of absence from that post, he studied abroad, taking his Ph.D. in history at Leipzig in 1886. Two years afterward, in 1888, he was appointed professor of history in Yale College, where he spent the remainder of his life. He married Ida Mary Clarke of Beloit, July 1, 1878.

Adams's earliest publications did much to promote the study of medieval history in the United States. After editing Duruy's *History of the Middle Ages* (1891), he published in 1894 his own admirable survey of that period, *Civilization during the Middle Ages*, which went through many editions and greatly influenced the teaching and conception of the subject. He had earlier issued a preliminary study on *Mediæval Civilization* in 1883; and in 1899 he published a text-book of *European History*. Besides these he issued in 1896 a sketch of the *Growth of the French Nation*, which had wide circulation and influence. Interested at all times in the development of the imperial federation movement in the British Empire, he published *Rise of Imperial Federalism* (1896), *Origin and Results of Imperial Federation Movement in England* (1899), and *The British Empire and a League of Peace* (1917). But his main con-

cern and contribution lay in the field of the English constitution. In 1905 he published his *History of England from the Norman Conquest to the death of John, 1066–1216,* as volume II of Hunt and Poole's *Political History of England*—the only American contribution to that series. After his retirement from the active work of instruction in 1917, he summed up the study of a lifetime in a series of volumes: a *Constitutional History of England* (1920); the *Origin of the English Constitution* (1920); an *Outline Sketch of English Constitutional History* (1918); and the summation of his studies in medieval English legal and constitutional history, *Council and Courts in Anglo-Norman England,* published posthumously in 1926. In this series of works lies his chief contribution to historical knowledge and his chief claim to the eminent position he achieved in scholarship in England and the United States.

His influence was not confined to his writings. He was an active and useful member of various learned bodies—corresponding member of the Royal Historical Society; Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; member of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts and of the Massachusetts Historical Society; a leading member of the American Historical Association, a member of its executive council, an editor of the *American Historical Review* (1895–1913), and president of the Association (1907–8). Above all, perhaps, he was a great teacher. An admirable lecturer, clear, accurate, forcible; an exceptional and inspiring conductor of the work of more advanced students in his seminary, which was one of the chief centers of graduate instruction in his field in the United States; a most helpful and judicious adviser; had he written nothing his influence on his students would still have marked him as a leader of scholarship. Through many years he was a leading figure in Yale University, in whose affairs he took an absorbing interest, and in whose counsels he was one of the most weighty advisers. He was possessed of an unusually clear, logical, and analytical mind, extraordinary industry, wide and accurate knowledge. His scholarship within his chosen field was of the highest order; and, though no "literary historian," his writing partook of the quality of his mind in striking degree. His influence was great both upon scholarship and education in the field of history. Belonging as he did to the school of constitutional historians, he none the less, especially in his work on medieval civilization and that on imperial federation, entered the wider fields of cultural and political affairs, where he carried the same qualities which distinguished his special work, a peculiar sanity of judgment and clarity of exposition, which contributed to his eminent place in his profession.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1924–25; *Yale Alumni Weekly,* June 5, 1925; *New Haven Jour. Courier,* May 27, 1925; *N.Y. Times,* May 28, 1925.] W.C.A.

ADAMS, HANNAH (Oct. 2, 1755–Dec. 15, 1831), compiler of historical information, was one of the Massachusetts Adamses, fifth in descent from Henry Adams of Braintree, and a distant cousin of President John Adams. She was born in Medfield, and from her father, Thomas, Jr., only son of a wealthy farmer, she seems to have derived many of her traits. He cared for nothing but books. Poor health deprived him of a college education, however, and he remained at home, marrying, in 1750, Elizabeth Clark. At his father's death he rented the farm to a man who sadly defrauded him, and opened a store for the sale of "English goods" and books. At storekeeping he was a failure, and he was soon reduced to poverty. A contemporary writes that he was a man of no thrift, but such a greedy devourer of books that he was commonly called "Book Adams." "He was altogether a curiosity, a locomotive library. He was much better than an index, for he could not only tell one where to find any fact in the multitude of voyages, travels, histories, and books of antiquities which he had read, but could recite for hours and days their various details. . . . His lean image on his lean walking or ambling pony, with a volume open before his eyes, and with his saddle-bags stuffed with his daughter's books to be distributed or vended, is still fresh in our recollections" (*American Monthly Review,* May 1832).

From childhood, Hannah had a frail constitution. She had also her father's avidity for knowledge, and his retentive mind. "I remember that my first idea of the happiness of Heaven," she writes, "was of a place where we should find our thirst for knowledge fully gratified." Though not quite so unpractical as her father, she was ridiculously absent-minded, and many stories circulated regarding her peculiarities. Her mother died when she was eleven and her father married again. She was too frail to go to school, but theological students whom her father boarded grounded her in Latin, Greek, geography, and logic. Thrown largely upon her own resources, she earned money during the Revolutionary War by making lace, and did some tutoring. A theological student introduced her to Broughton's *Dictionary of Religions,* which incited her to read widely on the subjects with which it deals. Disgusted with the lack of candor in the authors, she began to compile information about religion and

sects and to attempt descriptions of them which would be accurate and unbiased. The result was her *Alphabetical Compendium of the Various Sects Which Have Appeared from the Beginning of the Christian Era to the Present Day* (1784). The book was a success, but the publisher got most of the proceeds. Encouraged, however, she determined to devote herself to similar work, and was probably the first woman in America to make writing a profession. "It was poverty," she says, "not ambition, or vanity, that first induced me to become an author, or rather compiler." A second edition, appearing in 1791, brought the author a considerable emolument. In 1799 she published *A Summary History of New England,* and in 1805 an abridgment of the same for school use. In the meantime her eyesight had failed, and she labored thereafter under this handicap. Her school history had been anticipated by one written by Rev. Jedediah Morse, who, she claimed, had infringed upon her rights. A controversy ensued which enlisted many disputants and extended over a period of ten years (see *A Narrative of the Controversy Between the Rev. Jedediah Morse, D.D. and the Author,* by Hannah Adams, 1814, and *An Appeal to the Public,* etc., by Jedediah Morse, 1814). A number of prominent people, including Hon. Josiah Quincy, Stephen Higginson, and William S. Shaw, appreciating her literary services, settled a life-annuity upon her. In 1804 Miss Adams published *The Truth and Excellence of the Christian Religion.* This contains sketches of eminent laymen who have written in defense of Christianity and extracts from their writings. In 1812 appeared her *History of the Jews,* and in 1826, *Letters on the Gospels.* A portrait of her was painted by Chester Harding, and hung in the Boston Athenæum. She died in Boston and is buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery. While her works contain nothing original, they are compilations from many sources, carefully made, and woven together with skill, clear and readable. The usefulness of her *Dictionary of Religions* in its day is attested by the fact that it went through four editions in this country and was republished in England.

[The chief source of information is *A Memoir of Miss Hannah Adams,* written by herself and edited with additions by Mrs. Hannah F. Lee (1832). See also *A Geneal. Hist. of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass., and his Descendants* (1898); Olive M. Tilden, "Hannah Adams," in the *Dedham Hist. Reg.,* July 1896; and Wm. S. Tilden, *Hist. of the Town of Medfield, Mass.* (1887). On the Adams-Morse controversy, in addition to references given, see Samuel T. Armstrong, *Remarks on the Controversy between Dr. Morse and Miss Adams* (1814).] H. E. S.

ADAMS, HENRY BROOKS (Feb. 16, 1838–Mar. 27, 1918), historian, was the great-grandson of John Adams, the grandson of John Quincy Adams, and the son of Charles Francis Adams who married Abigail Brown, third daughter of Peter Chardon Brooks. Though Henry Adams, for reasons best known to himself, dropped the Brooks from his name in the course of the seventies, that side of his ancestry was by no means negligible. At the time of his death Peter Chardon Brooks was reputed to be the wealthiest man in Boston and he left a goodly estate to be divided among his children. Henry Adams owed much to his maternal grandfather. Although he was born under the shadow of Boston State House on Beacon Hill, he always felt as a child that he belonged to Quincy, where his grandfather Adams lived and where the family spent their summers. He was less favored physically than his three elder brothers, falling behind them in stature "and proportionally in bone and weight"; and perhaps in consequence was less aggressive in temper. There may have been compensations, however, in greater emotional capacity and more delicate perceptions. He always believed his early education to have been singularly defective; but an education which permitted a boy of ten to hear the table-talk of men like John G. Palfrey, Richard Henry Dana, and Charles Sumner, frequent visitors at the house on Mt. Vernon St. when his own father was candidate for the vice-presidency on the Free-Soil ticket, was hardly defective, at least on its political side. In the intimate family circle there was much reading aloud—the emphasis falling rather heavily on political literature, though the children heard their father read also Longfellow and Tennyson. Dickens and Thackeray they read for themselves, and Henry found his father's library shelves full of the works of eighteenth-century poets and historians which he devoured. His happiest moments were those when he lay on a dusty heap of Congressional documents in the old homestead at Quincy, reading Walter Scott's romances. Of hours spent at Mr. Dixwell's School he had only bitter recollections. For Harvard College, where he matriculated as a matter of course—all young men of good families in Boston did—he had no particular aversion. It was a good school as schools went, he conceded, but it did not give him what he most needed. As for social contacts, Harvard contributed nothing which an Adams did not already possess.

Looking back through the haze of years, Henry Adams could recall only two potent influences at Harvard—Louis Agassiz, who lectured on glaciers and paleontology, and James Russell Lowell, who permitted him to read in his study. Lowell had brought back from the continent some per-

ception of the educational value of friendly and intimate converse between instructor and student; and the alert mind of this Boston lad could hardly have failed to respond. The reading he did in Lowell's study counted for far less than this stimulating conversation on all manner of subjects. Small wonder that the routine of formal instruction in the class-room irked the boy. He made little effort to win scholastic honors; and, as he afterward learned, he was graded precisely in the middle of his class (*Education,* edition of 1918, pp. 59–60). He preferred to win distinction elsewhere and in a measure he succeeded. He wrote for college periodicals, made some addresses in literary societies, won a second prize for a dissertation in his senior year, and to his great surprise was chosen class orator.

It may have been one of those unscheduled conversations with Lowell that turned his thoughts to post-graduate study in Germany. He thought he would like to study the civil law in Berlin. Thither he went in November 1858 by way of London and Antwerp and matriculated at the university, only to find himself helpless for want of any mastery of the language. In the end German methods of instruction appealed to him as little as the ways of Harvard, and his enthusiasm for the civil law rapidly evaporated. He spent a second winter in Dresden and then, in the spring of 1860, frankly turned tourist and crossed the Alps to Florence and to Rome. At Naples the spirit of adventure took possession of him. Learning that Garibaldi and his thousand were threatening Palermo, he made up his mind to see these red-shirted revolutionists. He managed to secure permission from the American minister to serve as dispatch-bearer to the captain of an American war vessel in the harbor of Palermo, and so actually met Garibaldi face to face. In letters to the *Boston Courier* he has described this meeting and the *mise en scène* of this extraordinary revolution (two of these are reprinted in the *American Historical Review,* XXV, 241 ff.). A few more months spent in Paris with no very serious purpose completed this first European sojourn. In November he was back in Quincy again, not much wiser about the civil law, but richer by a good many emotional experiences.

Again putting the *Institutes* and *Pandects* aside, he went to Washington as his father's secretary during that memorable session of Congress in the winter of 1860–61. It was not his first visit to the Capital. As a boy of ten he had been taken to visit his grandmother Adams, and incidentally he had been taken to see President Taylor, feeling all the time, he said in after years, as though the White House belonged to the Adamses and never doubting that he himself would live there some day. He was less sure of his destiny in the Washington of 1861. Of the currents and counter-currents that swirled through the Capital in these winter months he wrote a vivid description, which, however, did not appear in print for fifty years (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* XLIII, 656–87). Nevertheless life was not all politics and Adams had his part in the frivolities of the Capital. After the end of the session he returned to Boston and his lawbooks and might have found his vocation at the bar but for the firing on Fort Sumter.

While his brother Charles and many of his friends were enlisting in Massachusetts regiments, he yielded with no little reluctance to his father's wishes and set out for London as his secretary. He consoled himself with the thought that after all he was probably not cut out for a soldier, but the rout at Bull Run, which he took almost as a personal disgrace, made him think otherwise. He wrote passionately to Charles that he must have a commission—he could reach home in three weeks—he wishes it to be understood that he is in earnest—if Charles can't get a commission for him, he will try to get it by other means. To which the older brother replied coldly, "You are not particularly well-fitted for the army. Here is your field right before your nose . . . and you want to rush away to do what neither education nor nature fitted you for" (*Cycle of Adams Letters,* I, 30–31). This advice was so sound that Henry's bellicose mood vanished, leaving him dejected and despondent. His life seemed to him a failure. He had not found a career and he saw no prospect of finding one. He was tired of life. He had lost faith in himself (*Ibid.,* I, 112–13, 195–96). To which outpouring the elder brother replied, "I do wish you took a little more healthy view of life." By the time this letter reached its destination Henry was taking a more healthy view of life. Some months later, in almost a jubilant mood, he wrote to Charles that he had been in a party of eleven—Lytton, Browning, and others. "I had a royal evening; a feast of remarkable choiceness, for the meats were very excellent good, the wines were rare and plentiful, and the company was of earth's choicest" (*Ibid.,* II, p. 9). Doors opened to this young American on his own account and not merely because he was his father's son. He was a welcome guest in Devonshire House, at Sir Charles Trevelyan's where he met Sir Charles Lyell, and especially at Wenlock Abbey in Shropshire where the Gaskells dispensed a gracious hospitality.

As secretary his work was exacting and con-

Adams

fining so long as the war continued. "My candles are seldom out before two o'clock in the morning," he wrote in July 1863, "and my table is piled with half-read books and unfinished writing" (*Ibid.*, II, 62). Yet he must have done a surprising amount of solid reading. John Stuart Mill and De Tocqueville he studied assiduously as "the two high priests of our faith," and he became an ardent follower, for a time, of Auguste Comte whose determinism fitted in well with his mood. The end of the Civil War and the prospect of an early return to the United States brought Adams face to face with the choice of a career. He was now twenty-seven and he had lost precious time if he were to continue the study of law. Occasionally he had written articles of timely interest for newspapers. He had a mind to try his hand at more serious writing. A chance meeting in London with John G. Palfrey, an old friend of his family, who had been editor of the *North American Review,* gave direction to his half-formed purpose. At Palfrey's suggestion he wrote the article on Captain John Smith which was published in the *North American Review,* January 1867. Encouraged by this success, he wrote two other articles, each costing several months of hard labor, which were accepted by the editor and published in successive numbers—"British Finance in 1816" (April 1867) and "The Bank of England Restriction of 1797–1821" (October 1867).

Meantime, Minister Adams was not recalled and his secretary stayed loyally by his side. An intimacy with the Lyells brought him inevitably into touch with the evolutionary views associated with Darwin and his *Origin of Species* and with the problems of geology. When Sir Charles Lyell brought out a new edition of his *Principles of Geology,* Adams undertook to review it for American readers. This article, too, was printed in the *North American Review* (October 1868). For the first time Adams caught the significance for human history of the evolutionary concept. As an old man he recalled how he had wrestled with these problems as he rambled over the hills of Shropshire, where Roman roads and ruins bore witness to the supersession of one civilization by another, and where fossils under foot told the tale of the evolution of vertebrates. Never again could Henry Adams return to absolute standards, as his Puritan forebears had held them. Seven years of English life had put him out of touch with American ways, as he found on his return in midsummer of 1868. After London, American society seemed to him "a long, straggling caravan, stretching loosely toward the prairies, its few score of leaders far in advance and its millions of immigrants, negroes, and Indians far in the rear" (*Education,* p. 237). Washington seemed on the whole the best substitute for London and a strategic point for a young journalist. Thither Adams went in the fall of 1868 to pick up what copy he could for an occasional letter to the *Nation* and for more substantial contributions to the reviews. He spent months preparing an article on finance which was finally published in the *Edinburgh Review* (April 1869) and then set himself to writing a review of the last Congress, borrowing his title from Lord Robert Cecil's annual review in the London *Quarterly.* "The Session" appeared in the *North American Review* of April 1869 and a second article in July 1870. Meantime, he had also written a trenchant article on Civil Service Reform (*North American Review,* October 1869), and an historical account of the Legal Tender Act (*Ibid.,* April 1870).

The attempt of Jay Gould to corner gold in 1869, and the political ramifications of the plot offered an intriguing subject which he wrote up in "The New York Gold Conspiracy" and sent to his friend Henry Reeve, never doubting that he would publish it in his *Edinburgh Review.* Shortly afterward he himself crossed the Atlantic again to enjoy the London season. Reeve declined to publish "The Gold Conspiracy"; so, too, did the editor of the *Quarterly,* but it was finally accepted by the editor of the *Westminster Review.* It was while he was in England that Adams received a letter from the new president of Harvard inviting him to become assistant professor of history. His first instinct was to decline the honor as wholly beyond the range of his interests and capacity. On reaching home, however, he found that he was to teach medieval history and at the same time to conduct the *North American Review.* An interview with President Eliot convinced him that he should try the new rôle. Either post alone would have conferred distinction; and, after all, what prospect was there for a young man of his training and intelligence in the stodgy world of Washington under the Grant régime? In *The Education of Henry Adams* (p. 332) he alludes to Senator Don Cameron as belonging to "the very class of American politician who had done most to block his intended path in life." It is the only intimation that as a young man he had looked forward to a political career. American politics in 1870 offered no career to talent; and Adams, partly from natural sensitiveness and shyness and partly from long residence in England, could not, or would not, make the necessary advances to those in party conclave who had offices and favors to confer. In July 1870 the *North American Review* printed his second article on

"The Session," essentially an indictment of the Grant administration. It was promptly reprinted by the Democratic National Committee and widely circulated as a campaign document.

In after years Adams had a poor opinion of his work as a college teacher. It was probably true, as he intimated, that nine out of ten students successfully withstood the impact of knowledge; but the tenth man responded, and Adams deliberately sought to cultivate this tenth mind. The little group that he interested in the origins of English constitutional law was the first historical seminar in the United States, though he would have repudiated the German appellation. One of this group recalls with satisfaction the meetings at the house which Adams subsequently occupied on Marlboro St. in Back Bay—"in the well-walled library with its open fire" (J. Laurence Laughlin in *Scribner's Magazine,* May 1921). These studies were printed in 1876 in *Essays in Anglo-Saxon Law.* The first of these, on "The Anglo-Saxon Courts of Law," was prepared by Adams. He looked back upon his life in Cambridge as "a social desert that would have starved a polar bear"; but he must have found compensations elsewhere, for, on June 27, 1872, he married Marian Hooper, a daughter of Robert William and Ellen Sturgis Hooper of Boston. Granted leave of absence for a year, he went abroad with his bride and on his return took up his residence in Boston.

After seven years of "laborious banishment" in Boston, Adams gave up his post at Harvard and once more turned to Washington, partly to write history, but chiefly to find companionship among his own kind. "So far as he had a function in life, it was as stable-companion to statesmen," he afterward said ironically. There he found his old friends William M. Evarts, now secretary of state, and John Hay, whom he had learned to know and love in the memorable winter of '61. Thither, too, for longer or shorter intervals, came Clarence King whom Adams had met in the Rockies in the summer of 1871. King, Hay, and Adams became inseparable. Some one named the little coterie of the Adamses, the Hays, and King "the Five of Hearts" (Thayer, *Life of John Hay,* II, 58). Never had there been a *salon* in the Capital, if Hay may be believed, like that over which Mrs. Adams presided with such rare charm (*Letters of Hay,* II, 98–99). Some one in this inner circle, so all Washington believed, must have written the novel *Democracy* which was published anonymously in 1880—some one who knew intimately the interlocking of politics and society at the National Capital. First King was suspected; then Hay; but the paternity belongs unquestionably to Adams (statement of the publisher, Henry Holt, in the *Unpartizan Review,* no. 29, p. 156; information from Mrs. Ward Thoron). From a literary point of view *Democracy* has no great merit, but it was a best-seller in its day, and is still read as a presentation of Washington life in the decade following the Civil War. Less known and seldom read is *Esther,* which Adams published in 1884, under the pseudonym Frances Snow Compton. Adams thought this the better of the two novels, but his opinion was not shared by the buying public. Meantime Adams was studying the beginnings of national government at Washington. The first fruits of this study were *The Life of Albert Gallatin* and *The Writings of Albert Gallatin* (3 vols.), published in 1879. A wealth of material had been put at his disposal by Gallatin's only surviving son and his greatest problem was one of selection. So far as possible Adams let Gallatin's own writings carry the narrative, reserving for himself only the task of clarifying the political background and of maintaining the sequence of events. The biography is marked by a fine restraint and an admirable sense of proportion. Restraint and proportion, however, are both wanting in *John Randolph,* which Adams wrote for the American Statesmen Series in 1882. Randolph was not a congenial subject and should never have been assigned to him. Having no liking for this wayward and eccentric Virginian, he took what material he could from Garland's biography and guessed at what information he did not find about Randolph's youth (see Wm. C. Bruce, *John Randolph of Roanoke,* 1922, preface and chapter III).

Freed from the tyranny of the class-room, possessed of an ample fortune, leisure, and social position, Adams could now follow his own bent and collect material for a thorough-going study of the Jeffersonian régime—that period in which his grandsire had played an unpopular but resolute rôle. Some of this material he edited and published in 1877—*Documents Relating to New England Federalism, 1800–1815.* It was a congenial task, and life was very agreeable, at Washington in winter and at Beverly Farms in summer. Both he and Mrs. Adams were fond of riding, and hours over books alternated with long rides in the country. The summer of 1885 bid fair to be one of more than ordinary interest, for H. H. Richardson was building adjoining houses for Adams and Hay on H St., which they would occupy in the course of the winter. Throughout the summer, however, Mrs. Adams suffered from ill health and on Dec. 6, 1885 she died suddenly under peculiarly tragic circumstances, leaving him to occupy the new house alone and to read-

just his life as best he could. To escape from his grief and loneliness Adams went to Japan in the spring of 1886 with John La Farge as a companion. The Orient interested him mildly and diverted his mind after a fashion, but it only accentuated the mystery of life and death and hardly assuaged his grief. It gave him, however, the idea which he commissioned Saint-Gaudens to embody in bronze. The monument in Rock Creek Cemetery which Saint-Gaudens executed after five years is the most tangible result of Adams's contact with the East. "The whole meaning and feeling of the figure," he wrote in reply to a letter from R. W. Gilder (Oct. 14, 1896) "is in its universality and anonymity. My own name for it is 'The Peace of God.' La Farge would call it Kwannon."

Manfully he returned to Washington and began the task of completing his *History of the United States.* His friends rallied about him; his nieces ministered affectionately to him in their frequent visits; he was bound to admit, as time began its silent alchemy, that life was "not so disagreeable." Once again men of distinction and women of charm sought his house; and happy was he who was privileged to breakfast at 1603 H St. These breakfasts became almost an institution in Washington (Thayer, *Hay,* II, 61). Little by little the manuscript of the history grew under his hand, page after page written in a script that was as beautiful and perfect in its way as any that medieval chronicler ever penned. Following the custom he had begun with the first volumes, he had the manuscript privately printed as it was completed and sent these copies, interleaved and bound, to a few intimates in whose critical judgment he had confidence. (Two sets of these with marginal notes by George Bancroft and Charles Francis Adams are in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society.) The first two volumes covering the first administration of Jefferson were published in 1889; the next four including the second administration of Jefferson and the first of Madison were published in 1890; and the last three on the second administration of Madison appeared in 1891. By general consent these volumes placed Adams in the first rank among American historians. What gave them an authoritative character was his mastery of the diplomatic background, based upon a first-hand acquaintance with the documentary material in foreign archives. Measured by latter-day standards, the history as a whole is deficient on the economic side. The emphasis is always on politics as they found expression in the conduct of the national government. Exception must be made, however, of the first six chapters of the first volume which described economic, social, and intellectual conditions in the United States at the turn of the century. Nothing better had been written and Adams himself never did any better historical writing.

Adams

The history finally off his hands, Adams sought rest and recreation in travel. With La Farge again as his companion he journeyed to Hawaii and thence from island to island in the South Sea, sketching a little under La Farge's tutelage and writing much to the friends and nieces at home. At Tahiti, he picked up many of the legendary tales of the island from the former Queen, which he printed privately in 1893 as the *Memoirs of Marau Taaroa, Last Queen of Tahiti.* This collection of tales he amplified and printed at Paris in 1901 (the binders' title is usually *Tahiti*). For many years he wandered whither the spirit listed, without any very clearly defined purpose. He spent a winter with Clarence King in Cuba, a summer with John Hay in the Yellowstone, several summers with the Camerons and with the Cabot Lodges in Europe. He traveled alone through Mexico and the islands of the Caribbean, and repeated the visit with the Camerons the following year. He went to Russia with the Lodges and then wandered off by himself through Sweden. He accompanied John Hay and his wife to Egypt and tried to enjoy Wagner at Baireuth with the Lodges. Always, however, he spent part of the year at his house in Washington, and more and more frequently he sought out Paris and France for seven or eight months of each year. Outwardly this was a singularly unproductive period in his life; spiritually it was the most significant and it bore fruit in the two works for which he will be longest remembered.

The current of Adams's life shifted, if we may trust his own account, after a summer (1895) with the Lodges in Normandy. Strangely enough, he seems never before to have visited Caen, Coutances, and Mont-Saint-Michel. "Through the medium of younger eyes and fresher minds," he now caught the atmosphere and spirit of the twelfth century, as his study of Anglo-Saxon law through German spectacles had never revealed it. He "drifted back to Washington with a new sense of history" (*Education,* p. 355). More and more dissatisfied with the sequences that are called history he sought some unit of measure for the movement of human society. The Paris Exposition of 1900 was a revelation to him. Facing the huge dynamo in the Gallery of Machines, "his historical neck," as he expressed it, "was broken by the irruption of forces totally new." As an expression of energy the dynamo was terrifying and mysterious, but not more mysterious than the

Virgin, he reflected, "the greatest force the western world ever felt." What if all life and thought could be measured in terms of Force? To measure man as a force, motion must be reckoned from a fixed point. Why not take that point of time "when man held the highest idea of himself as a unit in a unified universe"—the twelfth century? He then began what he called "a methodical survey of the century" (*Education,* p. 369), thinking later to make a study of twentieth-century multiplicity, so as to fix the acceleration of movement in human society between these points (*Education,* p. 423).

Such is Adams's own account of the origin of the folio which he printed privately in 1904 under the title *Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres.* Few if any of his readers, however, suspected this underlying motive. The book was read, and is still read, by people of widely different interests, as a unique interpretative study of medieval life and philosophy, without a thought of its bearing on any dynamic theory of history. Only those who knew Adams intimately could understand the circumstances that deflected his inner life and turned him from the age of Jefferson to that of Abelard and Saint Thomas Aquinas. He always gave La Farge credit for whatever emotional awakening he experienced in these latter years of his life. La Farge would often say, "Adams, you reason too much." "He should have blamed him," comments Adams, "for being born in Boston." La Farge had taught him much about color values, in the South Seas; and during a sojourn in France he had given Adams his first sense of values in medieval glass and a new interest in life (private letters). Summer after summer he had wandered among the cathedrals of Northern France, letting the Virgin reveal to him the creative spirit of the thirteenth century and then withdrawing "in ignorance and silence" to reflect upon "the eternal mystery of Force."

Adams never supposed that *Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres* would have any wide appeal (*Letters to a Niece,* pp. 117-18). He printed only a limited number of copies which he presented to friends and to selected libraries (letter of July 19, 1910, in the *Yale Review,* October 1920). Request for copies became increasingly frequent, however, so that he was persuaded to reprint the book, which he did in 1912 after careful revision. By this time it had found so many readers among students of Gothic architecture that the American Institute of Architects through Mr. Ralph Adams Cram asked permission to publish an edition for general sale. Adams consented and the smaller quarto edition of 1913 was put within the reach of the general public. He did not take himself too seriously as a student of architecture or of medieval glass and literature. He acknowledged frankly his indebtedness to Viollet-le-Duc for what he knew about the structure of Gothic cathedrals; and he was equally ready to acknowledge the aid of scholars who knew far more than he did about the origin of the *Chanson de Roland,* the philosophy of Abelard, and the theological system of Saint Thomas Aquinas. To him *Chartres* was not a treatise on any of these subjects but a study of thirteenth-century unity—of the spirit that created Chartres, "the Court of the Queen of Heaven," Amiens, and the "Church Intellectual" of Saint Thomas Aquinas. There are informing chapters on towers and portals, roses and apses, twelfth-century glass and legendary windows, but also chapters of rare beauty and insight on "The Virgin of Chartres" and "The Miracles of Notre Dame." The unique value of the book does not consist in its scholarship, in the ordinary sense of that term, but rather in its interpretative quality, its suggestion of atmosphere, its intuitive glimpses into the medieval soul. "We are not studying grammar or archæology," Adams warns his readers, "and would rather be inaccurate in such matters, if, at that price, a finer feeling of the art could be caught."

Two years after the printing of *Chartres,* Adams presented his intimates with another privately printed folio bearing the title *The Education of Henry Adams.* When published by the Massachusetts Historical Society after his death, it carried the subtitle *An Autobiography.* Autobiography in the ordinary sense of the word it is not, however, and Adams would not have condoned the use of the word. To him it was "a study of twentieth-century multiplicity"—the correlative study to *Chartres* (Editor's Preface to the edition of 1918, which sounds indeed more like Adams than Henry Cabot Lodge). Henry Adams is to be regarded as no more than a manikin on which the toilet of education is draped, so that young men may see the faults of the patchwork fitted on their fathers (Preface). Nearly every one, nevertheless, persisted—and persists—in reading the intriguing volume as biography rather than as a contribution to the philosophy of history. Judgments of the book ran the whole gamut of emotions. There were those who took Adams at his word—adjudged him as indeed a failure, a disappointed Adams possessed of an inferiority complex and grown cynical of all the world; others were repelled by what they called his egotism, his dogmatism, his lack of faith in American democracy; still others were baffled by his reticences—his failure to record twenty years of his life, and mystified by his paradoxes. The younger genera-

tion sensed that he was one of them, a rebel against the conventions of education and an intrepid spirit daring to face this "sorry scheme of things entire." There was a degree of justification in all these points of view. Those who thought him self-contained and self-centered, however, found it hard to reconcile this characteristic with his fondness for children and with his capacity for enduring friendship. He was at his best at his own table. There, with those who knew him well, he could indulge his fondness for paradox, for exaggeration, for heresies of all sorts, with a twinkle in his eyes that encouraged retort and laughter. One who was frequently in this circle has said that Adams and his friends loved to play with ideas, to follow a lead regardless of consequences and often of logic—a game that had more of Gallic than American associations. All these characteristics appear in *The Education.* Any one who had seen Adams play with ideas knew that he was not always to be taken literally or even seriously. He exaggerated to provoke reaction. When he declared his education ended in 1871 and his life complete in 1890, he was obviously playing with ideas about life and education. Why fourteen more chapters, if futility is to be written across all the pages? Those who pronounce him a cynic and a misanthrope quite overlook his own statement that "he had enjoyed his life amazingly" (*Education,* p. 316). Yet there is an ironic quality in the book which is characteristic of the man. It is not the irony of an embittered soul, but the irony of one to whom "life was a cosmic exploration" (Thayer, *Life of Hay,* II, 54). He treated it as a great adventure, bore the buffetings of fate as best he could, laughed where he might, but never pretended to understand the meaning of it all.

The concluding chapters of *The Education* trace the steps by which he evolved his dynamic theory of history. The theory was more clearly formulated in the "Rule of Phase applied to History," an essay which he wrote in 1909 (printed by Brooks Adams in *The Degradation of the Democratic Dogma* in 1919). In 1910 Adams published and scattered widely a little volume which he called *A Letter to American Teachers of History.* Its style was designedly colloquial and its tone provocative. Assuming the validity of the second law of thermodynamics, that there is a universal tendency to the dissipation of mechanical energy, he pointed out the dilemma of teachers of history if they postulated a progressive evolution in human history toward some state of perfection, or tried to exempt mind from the operation of this law. What did they propose to do about it? Human thought should be considered as a substance passing from one phase to another, through a series of critical points which are determined by attraction, acceleration, and volume—the equivalents of pressure, temperature, and volume in mechanical physics. In short, the future historian who would interpret the movement called history would have to seek his education in the world of mathematical physics.

It was the fate of Adams to outlive both King and Hay. He closed the story of his education when Hay died in 1904. "It was time to go. The three friends had begun life together; and the last of the three had no motive—no attraction—to carry it on after the others had gone." Yet he lived on for fourteen years, not the least productive years of his life. In 1908 he helped Mrs. Hay make a selection of John Hay's letters which were privately printed; and in 1911 he published a little volume, *The Life of George Cabot Lodge,* an affectionate tribute to Bay Lodge, one of the group to whom he was always "Uncle Henry." In this same year, too, he made a careful revision of *Chartres.* In the following spring he suffered a shock which incapacitated him for some months and left him with impaired vision and strength. It was in these last years that he turned for diversion to the study of medieval songs, still intent upon wresting from life all that it had to offer. The end came while war clouds hung heavy in the spring of 1918. The newspapers of March 28, filled with reports of casualties, could find space only for the bare announcement that Henry Adams, a historian, had died.

[Whether or no *The Education of Henry Adams* (1907) was written as an autobiography, it remains the chief source of information about his intellectual life. It may be supplemented here and there by *A Cycle of Adams Letters* (2 vols., 1920), edited by W. C. Ford; by *Charles Francis Adams, 1835–1915; An Autobiography* (1916); by *The Degradation of the Democratic Dogma* (1919); by "A Niece's Memories" in *Letters to a Niece* (1920), by Mabel La Farge; by *The Life and Letters of John Hay* (2 vols., 1915), by W. R. Thayer. Letters of Henry Adams have been published by Mabel La Farge (*op. cit.*), by F. B. Luquiens and by A. S. Cook in the *Yale Review,* Oct. 1920. Access has been given to collections of letters owned by Joseph H. Schaffner and by Mr. and Mrs. Ward Thoron. To these sources of information should be added the personal recollections of Prof. J. Laurence Laughlin and of Mrs. Ward Thoron.] A. J.

ADAMS, HENRY CARTER (Dec. 31, 1851–Aug. 11, 1921), economist, statistician, was descended from William Adams, who came from Shropshire in 1628, and was the ancestor of a worthy succession, of which the fifth generation settled in New Ipswich, N. H., about the middle of the eighteenth century and developed a sturdy line of farmers, Congregational deacons, and selectmen. Of the eighth generation from the Shropshire yeoman, Ephraim Adams emerged in 1835 as a student at Phillips Academy, Ando-

ver, Mass., and was one of a group of fifty to leave the institution when the formation of an anti-slavery society in the Academy was forbidden. Graduated from Dartmouth in 1839, he studied for the ministry at Andover Theological Seminary and on completing his work there joined ten fellow students in 1843 in what became known as the Iowa Band—a group of leaders who devoted their lives to the erection of a Christian commonwealth west of the Mississippi. Marrying Elizabeth Douglass two years later, the young missionary preacher became identified with the building of Iowa (Grinnell) College. At Davenport, on Dec. 31, 1851, a son was born who was named Henry Carter Adams. The boy grew up in the new state without the kind of schooling that most of the youth of that day had, because delicate health made an outdoor life imperative. He did not know what the confinement of a schoolroom was until he was nineteen years of age. In due time, having been tutored by his father, he was ready to avail himself of such inspiration as the faculty of the struggling prairie college could impart, and in 1874 he received his A.B. degree. A year at Andover Seminary having sufficed to convince him that his father's profession was not for him, a mere chance turned his attention to the Johns Hopkins University, just opening at Baltimore, where he was awarded a fellowship. He devoted himself with enthusiasm to the studies in history and economics which he had begun in college. Within two years he received the degree of Ph.D., the first conferred by the young university, and one of the most significant, for it meant that American youths were beginning to think of careers in a field that had been neglected on this side of the Atlantic. He then spent two years in Europe, studying at Berlin and Heidelberg and also in France and England. Returning to America with an unusual equipment, for those days, he was appointed, in 1879, to a Cornell University lectureship in economics. Later he received a similar appointment at the University of Michigan and alternated courses of lectures between the two institutions.

During the strike on the Gould railroad system in 1886, Adams gave expression to views on the relations of capital and labor that displeased an influential member of the board of Cornell trustees and led to his separation from the university. His opinions, if voiced twenty years later, would have been accepted without serious question. They had chiefly to do with the principle of collective bargaining, in which he believed and which later was generally accepted as a basis of relations between corporations and their employees. Indeed within four years the Cornell trustees invited

Adams

Adams to return, but by that time he had become unwilling to give up the professorship at the University of Michigan to which President Angell had called him immediately on the severance of his relations with Cornell. Meanwhile he had brought out a monograph on "The Relation of the State to Industrial Action" (*Publications of the American Economic Association,* vol. I, 1887), one of the early and effective protests from a growing group of American economists against the hitherto sacrosanct English dogma of laissez faire. In essential agreement with him were the younger men, headed by Prof. Richard T. Ely, of Johns Hopkins, who in the eighties were active in organizing the American Economic Association. Possibly realizing that his thinking in the field of social reform was in advance of his time, he devoted himself for several years to constructive work in public finance. His *Public Debts* appeared in 1887, *The Science of Finance* in 1898. Through Prof. Charles H. Cooley he was enabled to direct the statistical activities of the Interstate Commerce Commission almost from the beginning. He kept up his association with this work until 1911, a period of twenty-four years. He was in charge of the division of transportation of the Eleventh Census. For four years, beginning in 1913, he served as adviser to the Chinese Republic on the standardization of railway accounts. His book, *American Railway Accounting,* appeared in 1918.

In his development of economic theory Adams had ever in mind the progressive advancement of the race. He was far from being a pessimist. Yet his discussions of finance were free from any vague idealism. He was one of the first economists to write fully and authoritatively on the peculiar administrative conditions that exist in America. His influence, direct and indirect, on the students and teachers of economics did not seem to wane during the four decades of his active career. The small group of pioneers among whom he was a leader in 1881 had become by 1921 a great company, in which his primacy was still acknowledged. He was a man of fine presence and bearing, with a personal charm that won for him many warm friendships both within and without the circle of his colleagues and students. He was a lover of music and of good paintings. His artistic tastes, always ready to assert themselves but more or less repressed by the environment of his early years, found gratification in his mature life. He was married in 1890 to Bertha H. Wright of Port Huron, Mich.

[The Adams genealogy is given by Charles H. Chandler and Sarah F. Lee in *Hist. of New Ipswich, N. H., 1735–1914.* Within a few months after Adams's death, a tribute from his colleagues was published, *Jour. Pol.*

Econ., Apr. 1922. Addresses by members of the American Economic Association appeared in the *Am. Econ. Rev.*, Sept. 1922. In addition to the books noted in this article, Adams wrote many reviews and magazine articles. His official reports as statistician of the Interstate Commerce Commission were published continuously from 1887 to 1911. A bibliography of his publications (forty-one titles) compiled by Prof. I. L. Sharfman appeared in the *Jour. Pol. Econ.*, Apr. 1922.] W.B.S.

ADAMS, HENRY CULLEN (Nov. 28, 1850–July 9, 1906), congressman, was born in Oneida County, N.Y., the son of Caroline Shepard and Benjamin Franklin Adams, a professor of the classical languages in Hamilton College. During his early youth the family moved to southern Wisconsin. The boy, who was never vigorous, grew up in the midst of farm influences and thus acquired the devotion to the fields which was the *leit motif* of his whole life. Educated in country schools, he entered Albion College for one year and then spent three years in the University of Wisconsin. His fragile health gave way under the stress of study. On the advice of his physician he left and went to Colorado, where his health temporarily improved. On Oct. 15, 1878 he married Anne Burkley Norton, great-grand-daughter of Mary Smith, sister of Abigail Smith, the wife of President John Adams. Returning to his father's farm near Madison, Wis., he entered with enthusiasm into farm life. He was a leader in farmers' institutes under the auspices of the Wisconsin Agricultural College and became president of the State Horticultural Society and of the Dairymen's Association of Wisconsin. He was a member of the state legislature for two terms and was Dairy and Food Commissioner from 1895 to 1902. In the latter year he was elected to Congress by a plurality of 3,034 votes; in 1904 he was reëlected by a plurality of 7,508.

Adams's most important achievements occurred during his second term in Congress, when, with sadly weakened health and confined to his bed for days at a time, he nevertheless took a leading part in securing the passage of four great constructive measures. These were: the act admitting to statehood New Mexico and Arizona, the National Food and Drugs Act, the Meat Inspection Law, and the Adams Act, providing funds for agricultural researches. At that time the question of whether Arizona and New Mexico should be admitted into the Union as separate states or as one state was before Congress. In the vacation preceding the meeting of the Fifty-ninth Congress Adams made a journey to these two territories for the purpose of studying in person the problems of statehood. He became convinced that the two territories were so different in the character of their inhabitants and in the nature of their prospective duties as states that a combination of the two would be unwise. He therefore espoused dual statehood, and it was largely through his influence that the Fifty-ninth Congress admitted New Mexico and Arizona to the family of states as two distinct entities. The Meat Inspection bill was at first opposed by the packers, who hardly realized the benefit which would accrue to them as well as to the consumers through having at the time of slaughter a regular meat inspection which would insure the absence of trichina. Adams took an active part in bringing the packers and the proponents of the measure into harmony, and the prompt adoption of this measure was largely due to his good judgment in bringing the warring factions to one common purpose. There was no inherent opposition of any consequence to his pet measure, the Adams Act, but the United States had recently appropriated one hundred million dollars a year for the construction of new battleships, and the proposal to spend an additional million for the benefit of agriculture seemed to many a gross extravagance. But Adams succeeded so well in overcoming this opposition that, when the vote was taken, in both the House and the Senate practically unanimous approval was given to his plan. It is small wonder that all this extraordinary activity in legislation should have exhausted his vitality. In the full enjoyment of his victories he died on his way home at the end of the first session of the Fifty-ninth Congress.

[*Wis. Dairy and Food Commission Reports*, 1885 to 1902; *Jour. of Proc. of the Wis. Leg.* for 1883 and 1885; *Cong. Record*, 58 Cong. and 59 Cong., 1 Sess., debates on the Food and Drugs Act and the Adams Ag. Experiment Station Act; the *U.S. Office of Experiment Stations Bull. 184*, pp. 36 ff.; *U.S. Dept. of Ag. Year Bk.* (1906).] H.W.W.

ADAMS, HERBERT BAXTER (Apr. 16, 1850–July 30, 1901), college professor and promoter of historical studies, was born in Shutesburg, Mass., of farmer lineage. His father, Nathaniel Dickinson Adams, a descendant of Henry Adams of Braintree, moved to Amherst and died there in 1856, leaving a widow, Harriet (Hastings) Adams, and three sons with a small income for their support. Herbert Baxter, the youngest, graduated at the head of the class of 1872 at Amherst College, and took the degree of doctor of philosophy *summa cum laude* at Heidelberg in 1876. In that year Johns Hopkins opened its doors, a university founded on the Continental plan, led by a progressive president, and officered by European-trained instructors. It was Adams's good fortune to become one of these professors. He began his teaching by organizing a seminar on the German model. Soon afterwards he organized a "Johns Hopkins Historical and Polit-

ical Science Association," and soon after that he began the publication of the *Johns Hopkins Studies in Historical and Political Science,* which Prof. Ely calls "the mother of similar series in every part of the United States"; and a few years later he planned and began to write a series of monographs on the history of education in the United States under the auspices of the federal Bureau of Education. He had a genius for organization and was happy when he could give it rein.

Many of his students became greater scholars than their master, and this despite his excellent record in college and university; but none of them had better than he the power to convert a new provincial into an aspiring and assured research student and writer of history. He never lost sight of his old students, writing many letters to them, always giving advice and making suggestions. None of them ever wrote book, pamphlet, or magazine article that he did not send a copy to the Master; nor was the copy received that was not duly presented to Adams's seminar with friendly comment.

Adams was more of a political scientist than historian. Although he took lectures at Heidelberg under Ihne on Roman institutions, Ihne did not attend his examination, which was conducted by Bluntschli and Knies, a political scientist and an economist. Adams's first writings in Baltimore show Bluntschli's influence. "The community," said Bluntschli, "is a preparatory school for the state. The structure of republics has its foundations in the independence of communities." This idea he instilled into Adams's mind, where it developed a new theory of New England social history. The Massachusetts town, Adams said, was but a development out of the English towns and parishes, which were in turn of Germanic origin. "These little communes," said Adams, following his teacher all too faithfully, "were the germs of our state and national life." He added that they were "the primordial cells of the body politic." These views he announced and expanded in three monographs, "The Germanic Origin of New England Towns," "Norman Constables in America," and "Saxon Tithingmen in America," all published in the first volume of the *Johns Hopkins Studies in Historical and Political Science* in 1882 and 1883. The treatment was quite objective and it shocked the old-school historians in New England, who were in the habit of regarding their history as an emanation of Puritan reverence. Others objected on the ground that what they called Adams's "germ theory of American history" did not sufficiently recognize the influence of "Americanism" in our history.

Adams was too much a man of action to devote himself to research, and he was too much interested in the life around him to find a chief interest in the past. The years 1883 and 1884 showed little literary activity, and after that he is seen turning to educational subjects, a phase of history that kept his interest as long as he lived. He wrote on the study of history, on university extension, on boys' schools, on civil service reform, and on the development of libraries,—sometimes in monographs, more often in shorter articles or reports. It was in this way that he wrote *The Study of History in American Colleges and Universities* (1887) with separate publications on history in Harvard, Yale, Columbia College, and William and Mary; also an interesting monograph on *Thomas Jefferson and the University of Virginia* (1888). In 1893 he published his *Life and Writings of Jared Sparks* in two volumes, the only long book that came from his pen. It was generally criticized for prolixity and lack of the critical spirit. Sparks was presented with a tender care of his frailties, of which he had many. Adams was not entirely able to defend his position; for as a leader of the new and more critical historians he could not be expected to apologize for Sparks's methods of softening or otherwise changing the text of letters Sparks edited. The diffuseness of Adams's style in this book, his glaring lack of perspective, aroused another group of critics. It was, they said, prepared by the "coal-shoveling method," notes and facts shoveled into the hopper without much idea of how they would sound or seem to the reader. The book, however, is replete with information about Sparks.

Next to his organization of the historical work at the Johns Hopkins University, and the training there of a corps of efficient students who soon distributed themselves among other institutions of learning, Adams's best work was the organization of the American Historical Association in 1884. It was he who suggested the idea, he who persuaded Moses Coit Tyler and Charles Kendall Adams to sign the call for the first meeting. He got it signed also by the president and secretary of the American Social Science Association, under whose "auspices" the proposed organization was to exist. But when the men came together their first act was to declare for an independent association. Adams became secretary of the association and held that position, so full of labor and opportunity, until declining health forced him to resign in 1900; and by his will he left it $5,000, its first considerable bequest.

[*Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies in Hist. and Pol. Sci.*, series 20, extra number, including, among other tributes, "The Life and Services of H. B. Adams," by R. T. Ely, and a biog. sketch by J. M. Vincent. The latter, revised

and enlarged, is in H. W. Odum, *Am. Masters of Social Sci.* (1927). A bibliography of Adams's writings is in the Johns Hopkins volume cited above.] J. S. B.

ADAMS, ISAAC (Aug. 16, 1802–July 19, 1883), inventor of printing machinery, was born at Adams Corner, Rochester, N. H., the son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Horne) Adams. His parents were poor and his chances of education were slight. His first work was in a cotton factory, and it is probable that the machinery in this mill gave him ideas which were later to prove of value in his inventions. At the age of eighteen he went to Sandwich, N. H., where he learned the trade of cabinet making. After a few years he went to Dover, where he remained until 1824, when he found work in a machine shop in Boston. Three years later he invented the famous printing-press which was to carry his name to every country where printing was carried on. With his brother, Seth Adams, he formed the firm of I. & S. Adams in 1836. Upon leaving Sandwich he had said that he would not return until he had money enough to buy the town, and he kept his word. When he ultimately retired from business he had a fortune variously estimated as from one to two millions. He bought up many farms and planted them with white pines.

The press of Isaac Adams went a long way toward developing the mechanical side of the art of printing. The machine was known as the "Adams Power Press." For more than fifty years it was the machine preferred for book printing, and as late as 1902, Theodore L. De Vinne stated that many Adams presses were still in use. The first ones had a wooden frame, but iron was later substituted. These presses would print sheets thirty by forty inches, printing this, then relatively large, surface beautifully at considerable speed. They sounded the death-knell of the hand press. When stereotyping began to be displaced by electrotyping, the cylinder press in time displaced the Adams press; for the speed was greater, the contact stronger, and an even larger sheet could be used.

[Robt. Hoe, *Short Hist. of the Printing Press and of the Improvements in Printing Machinery from the Time of Gutenberg to the Present Day* (1902); T. L. De Vinne, "Perfecting the Press," *Sci. Am. Supp.*, No. 1380, June 14, 1902, p. 22122; W. Kaempffert, *Pop. Hist. of Am. Invention* (1924), I, 247. For early accounts see Franklin McDuffee, *Hist. of Rochester* (1892); *Am. Encyc. of Printing*, ed. by J. L. Ringwalt (1891); *Am. Mech. Dict.*, ed. by E. H. Knight (1882).] A. A. H.

ADAMS, JAMES HOPKINS (Mar. 15, 1812–July 13, 1861), governor of South Carolina, was the grandson of one of the hardy Welsh pioneers who migrated from Virginia to the Carolinas during the latter half of the eighteenth century. He was the only child of Henry Walker Adams and Mary (Goodwyn) Adams. While he was still an infant both of his parents died, and he came under the care of his maternal grandparents, whose means were sufficiently ample to enable them to afford him unusual educational advantages. He first attended school at Minervaville Academy in Richland County near the place of his birth. At the age of fourteen he was sent to Capt. Partridge's Academy, Norwich, Conn., where he was prepared for Yale College, from which he graduated in 1831. Returning to South Carolina he engaged in cotton planting, by means of which he was able to augment considerably a substantial competence which had come to him through inheritance (E. D. English and B. M. Clark, "Richland County," *Bulletin of the University of South Carolina*, no. 136). In April 1832 he married Jane Margaret Scott.

Adams entered almost at once upon a long and somewhat turbulent career in politics. In 1832 he attached himself to the State-Rights party by warmly supporting the doctrine of nullification which was then under test. Thenceforth the chief tenet of his political creed was fixed; namely, a firm belief in the principles of state sovereignty. He came accordingly to act with that party in South Carolina which turned from nullification to secession, demanded disunion without success in 1851, and at length effected its purpose in 1860. He was a member of the local House of Representatives 1834–37, 1840–41, 1848–49, and of the Senate 1850–53. His affiliation with the Whig party after 1838 greatly increased the difficulty of securing election in his constituency, which was ordinarily Democratic, and competition between his own and the opposing faction became so keen that both were reduced to a frequent and open use of illegal methods. Adams himself confessed that he had spent $10,000 in the campaign of 1854 and had lost only because his opponent had spent $50,000.

Like the majority of those who followed a political career in *antebellum* South Carolina, he sought preferment in the state militia service, in which he rose to the rank of brigadier-general of cavalry when still in his twenties (*Charleston Mercury*, July 16, 1861). B. F. Perry, who personally admired Adams in spite of their political differences, describes him as "the finest-looking horseman in saddle, when in full uniform, that I ever saw, and the best rider."

In 1854 after his defeat for the state Senate, Adams was elected governor by a handsome majority (*Charleston Mercury*, Dec. 12, 1854). His administration, otherwise eminently conservative, was given a radical character at its very

close by his proposal to reopen the African slave trade (T. D. Jervey, *The Slave Trade*, 1925, pp. 114–16). In spite of the presence in the South of a considerable sentiment in favor of the proposition, this official pronouncement shocked public sensibility, and the South Carolina legislature refused to indorse it (W. J. Carnathan, "The Proposal to Reopen the Slave Trade," in *South Atlantic Quarterly*, XXV, 410–30). In consequence of this and his advanced stand on the question of secession, Adams was defeated in his candidacy for the United States Senate in 1858 (E. Merritt, *James Henry Hammond*, 1923, p. 128). In the secession convention of 1860 he spoke eloquently in favor of immediate disunion. After the passage of the Ordinance of Secession he was elected one of three "Commissioners to the Federal Government at Washington" to negotiate for the transfer of United States property in South Carolina to the state government (*Journal of the Convention of the People of South Carolina, held in 1860–61*, pp. 59 ff.). His death occurred shortly after his return from this mission and while he was still a member of the convention.

[The nearest approach to an adequate account of the life of J. H. Adams is a brief but valuable sketch by B. F. Perry in his *Reminiscences of Public Men* (1883). A few of his private letters have been preserved in the Jas. H. Hammond MSS. in the Lib. of Cong., and two open letters on public questions were printed among papers by others in a pamphlet entitled, *An Appeal to the State Rights Party of S. C.* (1858). A eulogy by James D. Tradewell was published in the *Charleston Mercury*, July 22, 1861; obituaries in the *Columbia Guardian*, July 13, 1861, and *Charleston Courier*, July 15, 1861. A genealogy of the Adams family of South Carolina has been compiled by James Hopkins Adams, but has not been published.]

J. H. E.

ADAMS, JASPER (Aug. 27, 1793–Oct. 25, 1841), college president, was a good scholar, an unusually able administrator, and a man of great practical wisdom, energy, and determination, but a frail constitution necessitated his living in the South, where he worked under conditions which did not afford opportunity and recognition commensurate with his abilities. He was one of the numerous descendants of Henry Adams of Braintree, and was born in East Medway, Mass. His father was Major Jasper Adams, and his mother, whose first name is variously given as Ama, Anna, Amy, and Emma, was the daughter of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Rounds. He prepared for college under Rev. Luther Wright, graduated from Brown University in 1815, and then taught at Phillips Andover Academy for three years, during two of which he also studied at Andover Theological Seminary. After serving as tutor at Brown for a year, he was appointed, in 1819, professor of mathematics and natural philosophy. In 1820 he was ordained priest in the Episcopal Church. On May 16 of the same year he was married to Mercy D. Wheeler of Medway, who died Nov. 11, 1821. Some three years later he married a Miss Mayrant of Charleston, S. C. His principal educational work was done in connection with Charleston College, of which he was president from 1824 to 1836, except for an interim of about eighteen months. "From his accession the real greatness and true fame of the college seems to date" (*History of Charleston College*, 1896). It was then little more than a preparatory school, nearly bankrupt, without suitable buildings, and in ill repute. Almost single-handed, in the face of the pessimism and indifference of its trustees, he raised its standards, restored its reputation, and secured funds for an adequate building. Apparently discouraged by lack of support, in 1826 he accepted a call to become the first president of Geneva (Hobart) College, N.Y. The loss of his services awakened the trustees to an appreciation of his value, and in 1828 they summoned him back, offering him a practically free hand. Their assurances and the warmer climate led him to return, and he still further raised the standard of the institution, organized it into departments, put it on a business basis so that the tuition of students met all the expenses, and greatly increased its enrolment. After his resignation, in 1836, he engaged in literary work, and from 1838 to 1840 was chaplain and professor of geography, history, and ethics at the United States Military Academy, West Point. Returning to the South, he took charge of a seminary in Pendleton, S. C., in 1840, but died the following year. He published *Elements of Moral Philosophy* (1837), a practical rather than speculative work, based on the prevailing theology, and numerous sermons and addresses.

[Andrew N. Adams, *Geneal. Hist. of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass., and His Descendants* (1898); E. O. Jameson, *Biog. Sketches of Prominent Persons in Medway, Mass.* (1886); *Hist. Cat. of Brown Univ.* (1905); *Hobart Coll. Gen. Cat.* (1897); *Am. Quart. Reg.*, XII, 164 (1829); Colyer Meriwether, "Hist. of Higher Educ. in S. C.," in *Contrib. to Am. Educ. Hist.*, vol. II (1889), U. S. Bureau of Educ.]

H. E. S.

ADAMS, JOHN (Oct. 19, 1735–July 4, 1826), second president of the United States, was of the fourth generation from Henry Adams, the first of the family to emigrate to America. This Henry was of yeoman stock, copyholder of the manor of Barton St. David, Somerset County, England. He married (*c.* 1609) Edith, daughter of Henry Squire of Charlton Mackrell, Somerset County, and for three generations after he came to Mount Wollaston (Braintree), Mass., about 1636, his descendants remained in that town, a line of "vir-

tuous, independent New England farmers" (Morse, p. 4), undistinguished beyond the place where they lived. In the third generation John Adams (1691–1760) married Susanna Boylston, of a family prominent in the medical history of Massachusetts, and their eldest son was John, born at Braintree. On graduating from Harvard College in 1755 he taught school at Worcester with thoughts of becoming a minister; but "frigid John Calvin" was not to his liking and he had growing doubt on some "disputed points" of doctrine. So he took up the study of law under James Putnam, in the conviction that "the study and practice of law . . . does not dissolve the obligations of morality or of religion" (*Works,* I, 32). He was presented for admission to the Boston bar, Nov. 6, 1758, by Jeremiah Gridley, a leader in the profession, and attorney general of the province. His law practice grew slowly; he took an interest in town matters; and he wrote for the newspapers on public affairs. He married, Oct. 25, 1764, Abigail, daughter of Rev. William and Elizabeth (Quincy) Smith, of Weymouth, a marriage which greatly widened his connections with prominent families of Massachusetts. In mind and character Mrs. Adams was a worthy partner throughout his career. In 1765 he contributed to the *Boston Gazette* a number of essays, "written at random, weekly, without any preconceived plan," which were published as "A Dissertation on the Canon and Feudal Law" (*Ibid.,* IX, 332). The Stamp Act gave him his first real opportunity and the resolutions of protest he prepared for Braintree were followed throughout Massachusetts. This led to his association with Gridley and James Otis in presenting Boston's memorial against the closing of the courts and opened his long contest with the lieutenant-governor, Thomas Hutchinson. Adams disapproved of the Stamp Act riots, but opposed the act on legal grounds, arguing that it was invalid because the colonists had never consented to it. Early in 1768 he removed to Boston, occupying the "White House," Brattle Square, and was engaged to defend John Hancock, charged with smuggling; Corbet, on a question of impressment and manslaughter; and Capt. Preston, on a technical charge of murder. Such important cases connected him with the patriotic cause, and he declined an appointment as advocate general in the court of admiralty, rightly regarding it as a step to draw him from that association. His conduct was guided by law and he boasted that he had the only complete set of the British statutes-at-large in Boston, or even in the colonies.

Elected to the General Court as a representative of Boston he served a year and for reasons of health removed to Braintree in the spring of 1771, to pursue law and farming, but found it advisable again to take a house in Queen Street, Boston. Devoting himself to the law he soon occupied a leading place at the bar, but political events forced him into public life. The destruction of tea in Boston harbor he considered "the grandest event which has yet happened since the controversy with Britain opened" (*Ibid.,* IX, 333), yet he was again opposed to mob outbreaks. The Boston Port Act he condemned, and because of his general attitude on the controversy with Great Britain, he was chosen, June 17, 1774, one of the delegates from Massachusetts to the first Congress of the colonies, known later as the Continental Congress. His position on measures to be taken had not become fixed, though he saw independence as a possibility, and dreaded it. Before reaching Philadelphia he learned that Massachusetts was regarded as inclined to be dictatorial and infected with independence. Recognizing that the Congress would not take an extreme position and restraining publicly his impatience while recording it in his private letters, he served as a member of the committee to prepare a petition to the King; on a second to draft a declaration of rights, in which he urged unsuccessfully a recognition of "natural rights," and wrote the fourth section on taxation, representation, and consent to the regulation of external commerce; he favored non-importation. With not a little disappointment at the outcome of the Congress, Adams returned to Massachusetts, sat in the provincial congress, was chosen to the council, and for some months, indeed until the battle of Lexington, as "Novanglus" carried on a controversy in the press with Daniel Leonard ("Massachusettensis") on the origin of the dispute with Great Britain. "The language is rather energetic than elegant," wrote the grandson of Adams, "and the feeling is more cherished than the rhetoric" (*Ibid.,* I, 166).

In this interval he had opportunity to learn the disadvantages under which the province suffered from the want of an organized government, and in the second Congress, supported by instructions from the Massachusetts Assembly to concert measures for establishing American liberty on a permanent basis, secure from attack from Great Britain, he pointed out the probable necessity of forming a confederacy of separate states, each with its own government; but he found the Congress, while feeling the "spirit of war" more intimately than before, conservative and suspicious of New England, especially of Massachusetts. He opposed unsuccessfully another petition to the King, and served on com-

mittees to prepare an address to the people of Ireland, to draft instructions to Washington, for whose appointment to command he was largely responsible, to reply to Lord North's resolution of Feb. 20, 1775, and to consider equipping vessels to take enemy ships—the beginning of a navy. In July his policy had taken form: "We ought immediately to dissolve all Ministerial Tyrannies and Custom houses, set up Governments of our own like that of Connecticut in all the colonies, confederate together like an indissoluble Band for mutual defence, and open our Ports to all Nations immediately" (*Warren-Adams Letters,* I, 75). Encountering opposition, both in Congress and in his own delegation, he could not gain all he desired, and, accepted and feared by the conservatives as a leader for independence, he could only await the march of events which seemed to favor his propositions. His impatience became known through two intercepted letters, which proved for a time embarrassing without in the end reducing his influence. As colony after colony applied to Congress for advice on government Adams used the opening to advance his views, suggesting the adoption of a form as nearly resembling that which had existed as circumstances would permit, to be framed by colony conventions and submitted to the people if necessary. A governor, council, and representatives were familiar instruments and easily adaptable. In October he was appointed chief justice of the superior court of Massachusetts and accepted; but he never sat upon the bench and from pressure of occupation, Feb. 10, 1777, he resigned the office.

Early in December 1775 he obtained leave to return to Massachusetts, where he sat in the council and gained a knowledge of local opinion. He returned to Congress, Feb. 9, 1776. In that month appeared Paine's *Common Sense,* advocating a plan of government which Adams sought to counteract by his *Thoughts on Government,* originally prepared for the delegates of North Carolina, but published, at first anonymously, to meet a wider demand. In March he secured the adoption of recommendations to promote the production of flax, cotton, and wool, the establishing of societies for the improvement of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce, and for making steel and sail-cloth. By May Congress was persuaded to make a general recommendation, that where no adequate government had been established such a one should be adopted as in the opinion of the representatives of the people should "best conduce to the happiness and safety of their constituents in particular and America in general" (*Works,* I, 217). To this recommendation Adams prepared a preamble (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* IV, 357–58), which Duane called a "machine for the fabrication of independence," and which Adams thought was independence itself (*Works,* I, 18). The way was now open for the final act. Richard Henry Lee's motion for independence, foreign alliances, and a confederation was laid before Congress June 7 and seconded by Adams. Committees were provided for on June 11 to prepare a declaration of independence and a plan of treaties with foreign powers, and Adams was appointed on both. Of the plan of treaties, for trade and not alliance, he was the author, but not of the instructions to a negotiator under it. To the text of the declaration he contributed nothing of importance, but to him fell the severer task of defending it in its passage through Congress. "He was the pillar of its support on the floor of Congress," Jefferson wrote in 1813, "its ablest advocate and defender against the multifarious assaults it encountered" (*The Writings of Thomas Jefferson,* ed. by P. L. Ford, 1898, IX, 377–78). Stockton, of New Jersey, called him "the Atlas of American independence."

Meantime (June 13) he had been placed on the newly created Board of War, with engrossing duties; reported the (British) Articles of War, and rules for the navy; met Lord Howe at the Staten Island conference. He also drafted the credentials of the Commissioners to France and secured a committee to establish a military academy in the army. Worn down by continual application, anxious for the condition of his family, and wishing to confer with his constituents, he left Philadelphia Oct. 13, returning Feb. 1, 1777, when Congress was sitting in Baltimore. He served on a number of important committees—appeals, neutrality, Du Coudray, evacuation of Ticonderoga, Saratoga convention—and took part in the debates on currency, regulation of prices, French loan, foreign officers and confederation, trusted as a member free from the divisions which pervaded and hampered the Congress. Wearied by the disputes over promotions in the army, he expressed the hope to Greene that Congress would elect annually all the general officers, so that some great men should be obliged to serve their country in some other capacity, better adapted to their genius, a proposition cited against him many years after. The news of Burgoyne's surrender reached Congress Nov. 3, eight days after Adams had left that body never, as it proved, to return. He was not involved in the Conway cabal against Washington, but believed it wise to have a general ready, should any chance remove or incapacitate Washington.

On Nov. 21 Deane was recalled from France, and on the 28th Adams was elected commissioner to France. That did not prevent his reëlection on Dec. 4 to Congress. On Feb. 13, 1778, he embarked on the frigate *Boston* with his son, John Quincy Adams, then ten years old. After six weeks at sea they landed at Bordeaux, to learn that France had recognized the American States, entered into treaties of amity and commerce with them, and that war between France and Great Britain was regarded as inevitable. Adams reached Paris, Apr. 8, and took quarters in the same house with Franklin. He found the commissioners much divided by disputes which the recall of Deane had not ended, and sought to be neutral. "It is no part of my business to quarrel with anybody without cause; it is no part of my duty to differ with one party or another, let it give offence to whom it will" (*Works,* III, 139). He took upon himself to introduce orderly system in correspondence and accountability in money matters, lived simply, taking a somewhat exaggerated view of the expense of the other commissioners, and in May explained to Samuel Adams the need of an entirely new organization of the foreign mission of the States, framing a plan which would, if adopted, in all probability deprive him of office. Franklin agreed in his recommendations.

In the meantime a loan in France or Holland was considered necessary and Adams began the long series of letters on European affairs that form so large a part of his dispatches to Congress. In spite of the good resolutions he had brought with him to France, he conceived a jealousy—to ripen later—of French policy and its dangers to America, which colored his relations with that court, with his colleagues, and with their followers. Yet he confessed that the French ministry was reserved to all three of the commissioners and therefore could have no personal animus toward him. He became restive and distrustful of his associates. "There is no man here that I dare trust" (February 1779, *Works,* III, 188). Believing that common report belittled him, he belittled himself, and Deane's *Address to the People of America* (November 1778) roused him to fury; he wished to carry the matter to the French ministry, when he learned that Franklin had been appointed sole plenipotentiary, and that he himself had become a private citizen, his own suggestion having been adopted by Congress. Unwilling to remain in Europe without appointment, he embarked (Mar. 22, 1779), at Nantes on the *Alliance,* but was detained by the French government until the middle of June, that he might accompany the French minister to the United States in the *Sensible.* They arrived at Boston, Aug. 2, and seven days later he was chosen to represent Braintree in the convention called to frame a constitution for Massachusetts. The plan submitted to the convention was largely his, but he was called away before final action was taken. Congress, in response to an intimation from Gérard, the French minister, had spent much time on instructions for a minister to negotiate peace. On Sept. 25 both Adams and Jay were nominated, and on Sept. 26 both were also nominated to negotiate treaties with Spain; but on Sept. 27 Jay, believed to be not opposed to French plans, received the Spanish mission, and Adams, aided by a commendation of his conduct by Vergennes, the peace negotiation. Adams was also appointed to negotiate a commercial treaty with Great Britain and to represent the United States of America at the Court of St. James's.

Adams

Embarking on the *Sensible,* Nov. 13, with his two sons John and Charles, he landed at Ferrol Dec. 8, making the journey to Paris by land. He reached that city, Feb. 5, and the French ministry advised him, against his own judgment, to keep his mission secret for a time. Presented to the King, Mar. 7, Adams was again disappointed in not being publicly recognized. In his enforced inaction he wrote freely to Congress on European politics, contributed American news to the *Mercure de France,* and, at the instance of Vergennes, gave intelligence of American affairs direct to the minister. Neither Congress nor Adams had informed Franklin of the peace mission, and when Vergennes took exception to Adams's defense of a financial measure of Congress, deemed hostile to the interests of French holders of Continental paper, Adams found himself in a delicate situation, acting overzealously and independently of Franklin, and disavowed by Vergennes. He thought that Franklin had interfered with him instead of giving support, and his jealousy of French intentions increased. On his asking again that public announcement of his commission be made, Vergennes threatened to carry the question to Congress, thus strengthening Adams's suspicions of bad faith, since he knew that Vergennes could reach Congress through the French minister at Philadelphia and work against him. Adams gave to Vergennes his reasons for believing that Great Britain desired peace and added his conviction that greater naval and military exertions on the part of France would favor the Americans. So indiscreet a suggestion, made without instructions and on a matter clearly within Franklin's province, had the result that Vergennes ended all intercourse with Adams and sought to have his mission, at least

in part, revoked. Without doubting his attachment to independence and the alliance, Vergennes thought a less unbending commissioner would be more promising in peace parleys.

Adams went to Holland (July 27) without the indorsement of the French court, to test the possibility of a loan for the States. A threat of war from Great Britain put an end to any hope of success; but he formed wide connections, wrote much on the situation of the Dutch, and gained useful knowledge of banking methods in that country. Congress had long been divided on foreign affairs and, while it indorsed the opinion of Vergennes on the inexpediency of communicating Adams's powers to Great Britain, refused to accede to the minister's wish that Adams be curbed and placed under the direction of France. On Dec. 29, 1780, it made Adams minister to the United Provinces in place of Laurens, and authorized him to join the newly formed league of armed neutrality. He could at that time hold out no hope of assistance in any shape from the Dutch republic, for he could not be recognized, French influence was against him, and his memorials were returned. Nor could the Americans expect any present advantage from the armed neutrality—a "sublime bubble" he termed it—however useful the principle of free ships making free goods might prove to a neutral America in the future.

Summoned to Paris by Vergennes in July 1781, he learned of a proposed peace or armistice with Great Britain through the mediation of Russia and Austria, and looked upon it as a clumsy trick. For Great Britain asked two preliminary and impossible conditions: that the United States should break with France, and that they should return to their obedience to their former ruler. Adams believed that the powers offering mediation should first acknowledge the independence of the States, or at least receive a minister plenipotentiary from them. Returning to Amsterdam in August, he received a new commission for peace (dated June 15, 1781), naming four associated commissioners; and later came a revocation (July 12) of his commission to treat with Great Britain on commerce. Welcoming the larger commission he regretted the revocation of his commercial powers as ill-judged, making it impossible in 1782 to take advantage of a liberal trade policy in the British ministry. The revocation had been moved in Congress by Madison and carried with only New England opposed. Adams was now laid low for weeks by a nervous fever and on recovery learned that Congress had, Aug. 16, commissioned him minister plenipotentiary to the United Provinces, with instructions to negotiate a treaty of alliance, but enjoining him on all occasions to confer in the most confidential manner with the French representative at The Hague. The peace commissioners were also directed ultimately to govern themselves by the advice and opinion of the French minister (Wharton, *Diplomatic Correspondence,* IV, 505). The measures in Congress and these instructions show how far Vergennes had succeeded in making the negotiations for peace subservient to French influence, and led Adams to consider resigning his mission. The surrender of Cornwallis and the arrogance of Great Britain turned the favor of the Dutch toward America, without, however, furthering a loan by the Dutch bankers. In October 1781, after months of effort, less than three hundred pounds had been subscribed and the bonds were held by not more than three persons. Encouraged by improved political conditions and with full sympathy of the French minister at The Hague, in January 1782 Adams demanded of the ministers of the republic and the deputies of the city a reply to his memorial of Apr. 19 asking for recognition. Three months later he was formally recognized, whereupon he submitted a plan of a treaty, which was signed in October, and made proposals for and secured the first loan.

While he was thus engaged, Great Britain had made at Paris advances toward peace, and, since June, Franklin and Jay had been in what they called the "skirmishing business" of their commission. Not until the end of September did the British representative, Oswald, show satisfactory powers to treat with the thirteen United States of America. Adams was then summoned to Paris. He arrived Oct. 26, and Jay, whose Spanish experience had made him suspicious of French designs, found him "a very agreeable coadjutor." Jay was willing and anxious to treat separately with Great Britain; Adams agreed with him; and Franklin, with some proper reluctance because of his closer ties with the French minister, accepted the decision. The articles of a treaty had been agreed upon before Adams's arrival, but his contributions to an agreement were essential. On the questions of boundaries, especially on the northeast, the claims of indemnity to the Loyalists and the fisheries, he prepared articles, and it was he who suggested that Congress recommend to the States to open their courts for the recovery of just debts, a suggestion welcomed by the British negotiators. Refusing to sign articles which did not meet his requirements as to the fisheries, he established, nevertheless, rights and liberties that were important for the new nation and essential to New Eng-

land. On Nov. 30 the provisional articles were signed without the knowledge of the French court and in the event proved no hindrance to a general pacification or to the peace treaties of France or Spain. Not until August 1783 were the provisional articles ratified by Great Britain. Offered without change as a definite treaty, thus making any new concessions by the British ministry improbable, they were signed Sept. 3, 1783. Had a minister of the United States been then in London a fair agreement on a treaty of commerce might have been reached. Adams, with Jay and Franklin, had been appointed (May 1, 1783) to negotiate such a treaty, but a change of ministry prevented a favorable issue, and Adams, in England for his health, was obliged to return to Holland to negotiate a new loan, in which he was successful in spite of less favorable conditions. The return of Jay to America made a new commercial commission necessary and on May 7, 1784, Jefferson was added.

In the summer of 1784, Mrs. Adams and their daughter joining him, Adams took a house at Auteuil and on Feb. 24, 1785, he was appointed envoy to the Court of St. James's. He went to London in May, was received by the King, and had interviews with the Minister for Foreign Affairs on questions arising from the treaty—such as surrender of the Western posts, compensation for slaves and property, recovery of debts, and the treatment of refugees or Loyalists. The attitude of court and ministry discouraged advances, and the divided interests of the United States made it difficult for the British to have confidence in the execution of the treaty of 1783 or in the permanence of the confederation. The serious divisions in the States led Adams to study principles of government. Taking his text from a letter of Turgot to Dr. Price referring to the American States, he wrote in three volumes *Defence of the Constitutions of the United States of America against the Attack of Mr. Turgot* (1787). The first volume appeared in America while the convention for framing a constitution was assembling. Its timeliness gave it vogue; but it is chiefly remembered for the unjustifiable partisan interpretation given to it in later years as an attempt to favor a monarchy. Seeing no prospect of further success in England, Adams asked to resign and letters of recall were sent in February 1788. Congress thanked him for his "patriotism, perseverance, integrity, and diligence" (*Works*, I, 438).

Hardly had he landed in Massachusetts when he was elected to the Congress, but never took his seat in that dying body. In the new government under the Constitution Washington was unanimously chosen president, but the votes for vice-president were for political reasons scattered, and Adams, receiving 34 out of 69 votes, was chosen. Only after some years did Adams complain of the stratagem and of Hamilton's conduct of it. "My country has in its wisdom," he wrote to his wife, "contrived for me the most insignificant office that ever the invention of man contrived or his imagination conceived" (*Ibid.*, I, 460). An eager debater, he was reduced to silence, and he could exert influence only through the casting vote in a Senate equally divided, a vote he had occasion to exercise more frequently than any of his successors in office—no less than twenty times—and though not a party man, always on the Federalist side. Thus he decided the president's power of removal from office, commercial reprisal on Great Britain, and the policy of neutrality; supported Washington's administration; and aided Hamilton's financial measures, winning to that extent the favor of the Secretary of the Treasury, who had not concealed a certain want of confidence in the Vice-President. Watching the progress of the French Revolution Adams could see only failure in the want of proper government and in *Discourses on Davila*, published in the *United States Gazette* in 1791, he drew lessons from the past history of France. Not only did Hamilton disapprove of these essays, as tending to weaken the government, but Jefferson saw in them a leaning to hereditary monarchy and aristocracy, and to counteract the effect indorsed Paine's *Age of Reason*. Unknown to his father, John Quincy Adams answered Paine and widened the separation between Jefferson and John Adams, to whom the authorship of the reply was generally ascribed. In the second election (1792) Adams received the Federalist vote, becoming again vice-president; and in the election of 1796 Hamilton once more intervened, intending to make Thomas Pinckney president and to keep Adams in the vice-presidency. The plan failed of its purpose, but it drew sufficient votes to mortify Adams and to make Jefferson vice-president. Unnecessary as the act was, it exasperated Adams beyond possible reconciliation with Hamilton and was an unfortunate beginning for Adams's administration, which seemed to encounter Hamilton's hostility at every turn.

No change of cabinet officers followed Adams's accession to the presidency, nor was there made any sweeping change in the minor offices. The election brought Adams nearer to Jefferson than to Hamilton, for Adams had shown a sensibility to the candor of Jefferson's friends during the contest, and had learned of personal sentiments

of Jefferson toward him of a conciliatory nature. Indeed Jefferson had written a friendly letter to Adams (Dec. 28, 1796. Jefferson, *Writings,* VII, 94) which Madison, to whose discretion it was entrusted, never delivered, though he allowed its general terms to become known. Hamilton compared this approach to the lying down together of the lion and the lamb, and was skeptical of the result; but added that he trusted Adams's real good sense and integrity would be a sufficient shield against his possible vanity (Hamilton, *Works,* 1851, VI, 206).

Adams's inaugural speech gave pledges to maintain the policy of his predecessor, but seemed "temporizing" to the Federalists. Relations with the French republic demanded immediate attention. Jay's treaty and the recall of Monroe had so worked upon the French Directory that it refused to receive or even to permit his successor, Charles C. Pinckney, to remain on French territory. Sincerely desirous of renewed relations between the two countries, Adams called upon Jefferson the day before inauguration to offer him the mission. Jefferson declined, nor did he warm to the suggestion of Madison in his place. The President immediately after inauguration consulted Wolcott and found that to pursue his plan would mean a break in his cabinet and its reorganization. Later Hamilton made the same suggestion, naming Jefferson or Madison, Pinckney, and Cabot, and favored an extraordinary mission as necessary to learn what redress the French expected. In spite of this apparent harmony in plan the Republicans felt that the administration of Adams might turn against them, surrounded as he was by ministers who had been made by Hamilton and who looked to him and not to the President as the leader of the party and of Federalist policy. Jefferson thought the followers of Hamilton to be only a "little less hostile" to Adams than to himself; but it cannot be shown that the Jeffersonians excited Adams's suspicions against Hamilton, nor that they were to be held responsible for Pickering's dismissal, as the latter claimed. At the same time the Jefferson party became more and more antagonistic to Adams's administration and almost from its beginning opposed its measures and the man held responsible for them.

A special session of Congress was called for May 15, but before it assembled news came that the French Directory had declared pirates all Americans serving on British vessels. On Apr. 14 Adams framed questions for his cabinet on the situation with France, and on the 15th other questions on his message to be submitted to Congress (Gibbs, I, 501, 502). McHenry sent both

Adams

lists to Hamilton who prepared replies (Steiner, *Life and Correspondence of James McHenry,* 1907, pp. 216, 213), which McHenry practically made his own (*Ibid.,* p. 222). The cabinet was against war, and united in support of a new mission and measures of defense in case negotiation should fail. The message to Congress was firm and dignified, favoring peace and means of defense in militia and navy, and received general approbation. Adams wished one member of the mission to be taken from the opposition and suggested Gerry, but met with no support from his cabinet. The names first sent to Congress were Pinckney, Marshall, and Dana; when Dana declined to serve, Gerry was added. William Vans Murray was appointed minister to The Hague in place of John Quincy Adams, a measure later to prove important. The commission sailed for France, there not to be admitted to an audience with the Directory, and to be met by a demand of a bribe and loan, impossible conditions which led to the return of Marshall and Pinckney; Gerry remained. Wishing to be prepared for a failure of negotiation, the President, Jan. 24, 1798, asked his cabinet to advise on war, an embargo, or changed relations with European powers. McHenry, as before, sent the questions to Hamilton and his reply seems to have formed the opinion of Wolcott, Pickering, and McHenry (*McHenry,* p. 291), recommending a vigorous policy and also closer connections with Great Britain. The latter Adams could not accept. The first intimation of the situation in France reached the United States in March 1798; the failure of the mission was announced to Congress Mar. 19, and Gerry was directed to return but delayed. On June 21, after Marshall's arrival, Adams sent a message to Congress saying: "I will never send another minister to France, without assurances that he will be received, respected and honored, as the representative of a great, free, powerful and independent nation" (Adams, *Works,* IX, 159). The country was aroused.

Without declaring war, Congress declared the treaties with France null and void, increased the army, ordered the construction or purchase of new ships, and created a navy department. The President, having in mind a defensive system, favored a navy, but Congress, under the influence of Hamilton, planned a large provisional army in case of actual invasion (May 28), and, in imitation of British acts, passed the Alien (July 6) and Sedition (July 14) laws, of doubtful expedience or necessity. For the command of the provisional army only one person was considered. On July 2 the President nominated Washington, and the Senate confirmed the nomination on the

following day. The Secretary of War went to Mount Vernon with the commission and arranged that the general officers should be such as were acceptable to Washington. Pickering urged Hamilton for the second place and, after some hesitation between Pinckney and Knox, Washington named the three in the following order, Hamilton, Pinckney, Knox, and the Senate so confirmed them. The President believed that by right Knox should come first and Pinckney second, and sought to rank them thus. On Washington's threat to resign, Adams yielded, but from that time he distrusted the two members of the cabinet—Pickering and McHenry—who were closest to Hamilton. By defeating the appointment of Adams's son-in-law, William S. Smith, to the army, Pickering did not fail to invite the displeasure of the President. While this difference continued—it was not settled till the end of September—addresses from all parts of the country poured in upon the President, and his replies, all of his own composition, kept the public feeling awakened to the dangers of the situation.

Gerry landed at Boston, Oct. 1, and made report of his mission to Adams, then at Quincy. Not only did he convince the President that he was without blame in remaining, but he brought intimation of a wish on Talleyrand's part to renew diplomatic intercourse. From Murray, at The Hague, was received about the same time a message to the same effect, which had been sent by Talleyrand to Pichon, the French representative in the Netherlands, and was intended for Murray's notice. Not yet willing to meet these indirect advances, the President asked Pickering to consult the cabinet on two points: whether it would be expedient for the President to recommend to the consideration of Congress a declaration of war against France; and whether any further proposals of negotiation could be made with safety, or with any advantage, in Europe or America. Might not the President say, in order to keep the channels of negotiation open, that he would nominate a minister to the French republic, ready to embark on proper assurances from that country? The President wished in his message to say that he was ready at all times to appoint or receive a minister to treat of the differences between France and the United States. The cabinet note, prepared in consultation with Hamilton, sought to shut off all possibility of a new mission. Adams modified his wish so as to read: "But to send another minister without more determinate assurances that he would be received, would be an act of humiliation to which the United States ought not to submit" (*Ibid.*, IX, 130), and outlined in general terms the steps necessary to restore intercourse. The door was left open for a peaceful solution, but vigorous preparations for war were essential. Not satisfied with this outcome, Hamilton exerted his influence on Congress. By this time Adams was quite conscious of Hamilton's dominance in the party, cabinet, and Congress, and of his effort to bring about war with France, a large standing army, and an attack upon Spanish America. Without consulting any one, but acting wholly within his right, on Feb. 18, Adams sent to the Senate the nomination of W. Vans Murray, then minister to the Netherlands, to be minister to the French republic. The cabinet felt outraged. The Senate intended to reject the nomination and Sedgwick, of the committee reporting on it, took the unusual step of personally remonstrating with the President, a step he was unable to defend on correct principles. To meet some of the objections raised and before action was had on Murray, Adams proposed a peace commission of three members, not to depart on their mission without further instructions. This bold and unexpected act brought to his support the press of the country and neither Hamilton nor Congress could oppose it, however ardently the Federalists resented it. Adams realized that he could place little confidence in two of his cabinet—Pickering and McHenry—now completely under the influence of Hamilton, and for his own good he should have replaced them. Instead of this he said he counted upon their coöperation and to his cost permitted them to remain in office. By his long absence at Quincy he gave them full opportunity to work against his policy. Fries's rebellion in March was a local incident which in the event produced feeling against Adams; and the Alien and Sedition laws, for which he had no direct responsibility and which he refused to enforce as the Federalists wished, added to his unpopularity. To be prepared for probable concessions by France, in August he agreed with his cabinet on instructions to the commissioners, but in his absence the cabinet determined to suspend the mission until he could be personally consulted. They believed the restoration of the Bourbons at hand; Adams had no faith in such a prediction. Arriving, Oct. 10, at Trenton, to which place the government had retired because of the infection at Philadelphia, the President found there his cabinet, Ellsworth of the French mission, and Hamilton, and felt that a struggle for control was at hand. Knowing that France would receive the mission, he went over the instructions with his cabinet on the evening of the 15th, and the next

day gave orders for the completion of the papers and for the departure of the mission by Nov. 1. Again he had surprised his advisers through an independent act by which they believed themselves to have been deceived and outraged. By so doing he antagonized Hamilton's influence, prevented a war with France, preserved the neutrality of the United States, and lost a renomination, which he did not then desire and for which he had laid no plans. Regarding him as a traitor to the party, the leaders sought means to win the election without him. At last convinced that he could no longer retain certain members of his cabinet bent upon thwarting his policy and plotting his exclusion, Adams had a stormy interview with McHenry, the least efficient member, who promptly resigned. A few days later, Pickering, the chief sinner in disloyalty to his chief, was given an opportunity to resign, but refused it and on May 12 was discharged from office. Wolcott, as much involved as his colleagues, was not suspected and remained, serving as an informer. In the appointment of John Marshall and Samuel Dexter the cabinet gained, but nothing could prevent the bitter war made upon Adams by the Federalist leaders, now implacably bent not only upon defeating but upon discrediting him to the limit of their power. The pardon of three men condemned to death for participation in the Pennsylvania "insurrection" increased the Federalist animus. Hamilton's illogical and ill-judged *Letter concerning the Public Conduct and Character of John Adams* displayed at large his own animosity and the division in the party. It was based upon information derived from Wolcott, had been first submitted for his revision, and appeared in the last week of October, too late to permit of reply before election. Adams, with no party behind him, received 65 to Jefferson's 73 votes, and Hamilton was obliged to admit that the body of the people of New England favored him. Hamilton's tactics had merely resulted in the election of Jefferson whom he disliked far more than Adams. Immediately after the election Wolcott sent in his resignation, to take effect at the close of the year; but he in no wise abated his intrigues against the President, to serve under whom, he said, would be "incompatible with honor and a suitable respect" to his own character (Wolcott to Pickering, Dec. 28, 1800, Gibbs, II, 461). He even obtained from the State Department material to enable Pickering to attack his chief. Adams never knew or suspected Wolcott's hostility, or treachery, and appointed him to a judgeship in the circuit court of the United States. Peace with France was concluded at Morfontaine, Sept. 30, 1800, and was, with the exception of one article, accepted by the Senate. One of the last acts of Congress reorganized the national judiciary system and created a large number of life appointments. The President made the appointments on grounds of public policy and by so doing incurred the increased enmity of Jefferson.

On the expiration of his term of office and after twenty-six years passed in public employment, in a great variety of important services, Adams retired to Quincy under a weight of odium which he could not accept as merited. The legislature of Massachusetts welcomed him, however, as did the town of Quincy. Never a strong partisan, he saw the Federalists lose their influence as a party and their opponents attain almost unquestioned power, and he was held to be the cause of the defeat of the one and the success of the other. After a quarter of a century of great and varied activity he was doomed to as long a period of almost complete isolation from public affairs. His active mind refused to rest, retaining an interest in public questions, which grew in strength as he sympathetically watched the career of his son, John Quincy Adams. At times he was aroused to take part in political discussions and corresponded freely with a few of his friends. The affair of the *Chesapeake* in June 1807 brought both the Adamses to the support of the administration in maintaining the rights of America, and from the elder a vigorous examination of *The Inadmissible Principles of the King of England's Proclamation of Oct. 16, 1807,* on the impressment of seamen from neutral vessels. The younger Adams's vote for the embargo proved that the son was no more of a partisan than the father, and led to a series of letters from the latter to the *Boston Patriot,* a newspaper recently established, in explanation and defense of his own past acts, diplomatic and executive. A part of this correspondence, which extended over a period of three years, was gathered into a volume, *Correspondence of the late President Adams* (1809). Loosely constructed and carelessly printed in the columns of a newspaper at a time when party feeling ran high, and without arrangement or fit explanation, the series did preserve, nevertheless, important documents; but it is marked by intemperate denunciation of Hamilton and others as unjust to them as to the writer. The appointment by Madison of John Quincy Adams, regarded by the Federalists as a Republican, to be minister of the United States at St. Petersburg seemed to John Adams almost a recognition of himself, who had been so harshly dealt with by the party in power. Through the agency of Benjamin Rush he renewed relations with Jefferson, and the letters

which passed between these men whom political circumstances had so often placed in opposition have an extraordinary interest. Adams turned to the history of the past and wrote on the men and events of his day, with uncertain memory, but with much that is valuable for personal characters and historical fact. Though the death of Mrs. Adams, Oct. 28, 1818, deprived him of a loved companion and saddened his later years, he was made happier by the changing public attitude. In 1820 he attended the state constitutional convention and was received with honors. As the years passed he gained in general estimation; Quincy became a place of visit, with him as its leading character. He died, July 4, 1826, a few hours after Jefferson.

His grandson, Charles Francis Adams, has described John Adams as "not tall, scarcely exceeding middle height, but of a stout, well-knit frame, denoting vigor and long life, yet as he grew old, inclining more and more to corpulence. His head was large and round, with a wide forehead and expanded brows. His eye was mild and benignant, perhaps even humorous, when he was free from emotion, but when excited, it fully expressed the vehemence of the spirit that stirred within. His presence was grave and imposing, on serious occasions, but not unbending. He delighted in social conversation, in which he was sometimes tempted to what he called rhodomontade. . . . His anger, when thoroughly roused, was, for a time, extremely violent, but when it subsided, it left no trace of malevolence behind." In 1783, on learning of Adams's appointment on the peace commission, Jefferson wrote: "He has a sound head on substantial points and I think he has integrity. . . . His dislike of all parties and all men, by balancing his prejudices, may give the same fair play to his reason as would a general benevolence of temper" (Jefferson, *Writings,* ed. by Ford, III, 309–10). Four years later and after more than seven months of intimacy, he added: "He is vain, irritable, and a bad calculator of the force and probable effect of the motives which govern men. This is all the ill which can possibly be said of him. He is as disinterested as the being who made him; he is profound in his views and accurate in his judgment, except where knowledge of the world is necessary to form a judgment. He is so amiable, that I pronounce you will love him if ever you become acquainted with him. He would be, as he was, a great man in Congress" (*The Writings of Thomas Jefferson,* ed. by H. A. Washington, 1871, II, 107). Men most hostile to Adams have united in praise of his abilities, integrity, high intentions, and unquestioned patriotism. His diplomacy showed initiative clogged by influences he had himself aroused; his administration showed statesmanship and independence. His mind was stored with much learning, usable at will; though often intemperate and extravagant in language, he was cool in action. Of undoubted courage and ambition, careful of his independence and jealous of others, he stood much alone, and so largely lost the benefit of acting with others.

Of his published writings the following are the more important: 1. *Essay on Canon and Feudal Law* (London, 1768) appended to *The True Sentiments of America;* also to *Collection of State Papers* (The Hague, also London, 1782; reprinted at Philadelphia, 1783). 2. *Thoughts on Government* (Philadelphia, 1776; Boston, 1776 and 1788). 3. *Mémoire à leurs Hautes-Puissances les Seigneurs États-Généraux des Provinces-Unies des Pays-Bas* (1781; also in English, Leyden, 1781). 4. *A Collection of State Papers* (The Hague, 1782; reprinted at London, 1782). 5. *History of the Dispute with America,* an abridgment of his replies to Leonard (written in 1774, published at London, 1784. Both series were not printed in full until 1819, as *Novanglus and Massachusettensis.* A Dutch edition of the *History* appeared at Amsterdam, 1782). 6. *Letters* (to Dr. Calkoen, privately printed, 1786; reprinted as *Twenty-Six Letters, upon Interesting Subjects,* in two editions, New York, 1789). 7. *A Defence of the Constitutions of Government of the United States of America* (the first volume, London, 1787, reprinted, Boston, New York and Phila., 1787; with Volumes II and III, London, 1787–88; again in two editions, London, 1794, one with title *History of the Principal Republics of the World;* Paris, 1792; Phila., 1797). 8. *A Selection of the Patriotic Addresses to the President of the United States, together with the President's Answers, presented in the year 1798* (Boston, 1798). 9. *Four Letters* (John and Samuel Adams, Boston, 1802). 10. *Discourses on Davila* (Boston, 1805). 11. *The Inadmissible Principles of the King of England's Proclamation* (Boston, 1809). 12. *Correspondence . . . concerning the British Doctrine of Impressment* (Baltimore, 1809). 13. *Correspondence of the late President Adams* (originally published in the *Boston Patriot,* Boston, 1809). 14. *Correspondence between the Hon. J. Adams and the late William Cunningham* (Boston, 1823. This publication was a gross violation of decency, by the son of Cunningham, who sought favors of Adams and, when denied, printed in 1811 *A Letter to a Great Character* abusive of the former President and based upon the letters to the father). 15. *Letters of John Adams, addressed to his Wife* (1841, being Volumes III and

IV, supplementing *Letters of Abigail Adams,* 1841; the two series republished as *Familiar Letters of John Adams and his wife Abigail Adams,* Boston, 1876). 16. *Works,* 10 vols. (1850–56). 17. "Letters to Mercy Warren," *5 Massachusetts Historical Society Collections,* IV, 1878. 18. "Letters" in *Bulletin of the New York Public Library,* April 1906. 19. "Warren-Adams Letters," 2 vols., *Massachusetts Historical Society Collections,* LXXII, LXXIII (1917, 1925). 20. *Correspondence of John Adams and Thomas Jefferson,* 1812–26, selected by Paul Wilstach (1925). 21. *Statesman and Friend,* letters to Dr. B. Waterhouse (1927).

[Charles Francis Adams, *Life,* being vol. I of the *Works;* John T. Morse, Jr., *John Adams* (1885); John Wood, *Hist. of the Administration of John Adams* (1802, repub. 1846), and *A Correct Statement of the various Sources from which the Hist. was compiled* (1802), being a reply to James Cheetham's *A Narrative of the Suppression by Col. Burr of the Hist. of the Administration of John Adams* (1802); Geo. Gibbs, *Memoirs of the Administration of Washington and Adams,* 6 vols.; J. H. A. Doniol, *Histoire de la Participation de la France à l'Établissement des États Unis d'Amérique* (1886–99); Correa M. Walsh, *Political Science of John Adams* (1915); C. Warren, *John Adams and Am. Constitutions* (1927). A catalogue of his library was printed by the Boston Public Library in 1917.] W.C.F.

ADAMS, JOHN (Sept. 18, 1772–Apr. 24, 1863), fourth principal of Phillips Academy, Andover, was born in Canterbury, Conn., the eldest of ten children of Capt. John Adams, a Revolutionary soldier, and Mary (Parker) Adams. His forebears were simple farming folk, but he traced his ancestry back to Henry Adams, from whom the two Presidents of the United States were also descended. As a boy, he worked hard in the fields, but he was enabled, through the painful economy of his parents, to enter Yale College, where he graduated in 1795. After some experience in teaching at Canterbury, at Plainfield Academy, and at Bacon Academy, Colchester, Conn., he was offered in 1810 the principalship of Phillips Academy, then at the lowest point in its history. There he found only twenty-three pupils and a complete lack of discipline. Under his firm rule, however, conditions quickly improved, and the academy was soon in good standing. The number of students gradually increased until in ten years it was over a hundred, the faculty having meanwhile been enlarged to four. Although he was naturally conservative and did not disturb the predominance of Latin and Greek, he somewhat modified the curriculum; of the twenty subjects required for a diploma in 1820, however, thirteen were classical and two mathematical. He set a high standard of scholarship, and his boys did well in college. Among his pupils were Nathaniel P. Willis, Josiah Quincy, and Oliver Wendell Holmes.

Adams's influence was exerted most vigorously in the field of morals and religion. He was "by all his views, habits, and impulses a *revival* man," and he aimed "to lay as securely as possible in the character of every pupil the foundation of Christian manhood." He held frequent prayer-meetings and accomplished many conversions; indeed he boasted that one out of every five of his pupils later entered the ministry. He was a handsome and imposing figure, with the bearing of an autocrat. As he walked down the aisle in church, his ivory-headed cane ringing against the floor, he seemed to dominate the assemblage. Holmes, in his poem *The School Boy,* gave his impression of Adams in the lines:

"Supreme he sits. Before the awful frown
That bends his brows the boldest eye goes down."

After 1825 Adams seems to have loosened his grip on school affairs, with the result that the attendance gradually fell off and he lost the confidence of the trustees; in 1832, when he was sixty, he resigned at their request. During the remaining thirty-one years of his life, he struggled bravely against poverty, first as principal of an academy in Elbridge, N. Y., then as president of a female seminary in Jacksonville, Ill., and finally as agent of the American Sunday-school Union in the Middle West; for twelve years he drove from village to village in an open carriage, organizing Sunday-schools and winning the title of "Father Adams." In 1854 Yale made him a Doctor of Laws.

Adams was twice married, first to Elizabeth Ripley, in 1798, by whom he had ten children. After her death, in 1829, he married Mrs. Mabel Burritt, of Troy, N. Y. One of his sons, William Adams, became president of Union Theological Seminary. Principal Adams is commemorated at Andover by a tablet in the Chapel, the gift of his grand-daughter, Mrs. John Crosby Brown, and also by a dormitory, erected in 1912 and known as Adams Hall. He was buried in Jacksonville, Ill., under a granite monument with the epitaph, "A Lover of Children, A Teacher of Youth, A Sinner Saved by Grace."

[*The Story of John Adams* (1890), by M. E. B. (Mrs. J. C. Brown) and H. G. B. (Helen Gilman Brown); *An Old New Eng. School,* by Claude M. Fuess (1917); articles in the *Phillips Bull.,* the quarterly publication of Phillips Acad., Andover.] C.M.F.

ADAMS, JOHN (July 1, 1825–Nov. 30, 1864), Confederate soldier, was the son of parents who came to the United States in 1814 from Ulster, Ireland, following the example of a relative, John Adams, who had prospered as a banker in New York City. In 1817 they moved to Nashville, Tenn., and there John Adams was born. Shortly

afterwards his father moved to Pulaski, where he died before his son entered the U. S. Military Academy at West Point in 1841. Adams graduated in the class of 1846 and was appointed second lieutenant in the 1st Dragoons, United States Army. He served in that regiment during the Mexican War and was brevetted for gallantry in the assault of Santa Cruz de Rosales, Chihuahua, Mar. 16, 1848. Duty on the frontier followed. In 1848–49 he served at Santa Fé and Taos, N. Mex. Then came expeditions against the Utah and Apache Indians with the consequent skirmishes and hard marching. In 1850–51 he served at Rayado and Las Vegas, N. Mex., and reached his first lieutenancy. The following year he was stationed at Fort Snelling, Minn., where he married Georgia McDougal, the daughter of a distinguished army surgeon. In 1853 he acted as aide-de-camp for the governor of Minnesota with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. During 1854–56 he served at Fort Leavenworth, Kan.; Fort Craig, Fort Union, and Santa Fé in New Mexico; Fort Massachusetts in Colorado. In 1856 he received his captaincy in the Dragoons, and this was followed by two years of recruiting duty. The outbreak of the Civil War found him serving at Fort Crook, Cal. This life in command of small units, of operations against Indians, and of incessant movement, all under the most general instructions, had given him, like so many of his contemporaries, a military training whose results were to be made manifest in the coming conflict.

Capt. Adams resigned from the army May 31, 1861 and proceeded to New York by sea, arriving there in August. Gen. Scott, in command of the army, ordered his arrest as a political prisoner but he avoided this and made his way back to Tennessee, where he was appointed a captain of cavalry in the Confederate Army and placed in command of Memphis. By May 1862 he had reached the grade of colonel and was assigned to duty as acting brigadier-general, commanding a force operating about Huntsville. On Dec. 29, 1862 he was appointed brigadier-general. On May 16, 1863, on the death of Gen. Lloyd Tilghman, Gen. Johnson placed him in command of Tilghman's brigade of six regiments of Mississippi infantry. In command of this force, which served at least in part as mounted infantry, he took part in the operations for the relief of Vicksburg and in those about Jackson, Miss. Then he marched under Gen. Polk to Resaca, Ga., where his brigade joined the Army of the Tennessee and participated in the battles of the campaign from Dalton to Atlanta, where it especially distinguished itself. After the fall of Atlanta, he led the advance of Gen. Hood's army much of the time, and grew to be marked as one of those men who, like Gen. Forrest of the same army, compelled devotion. At the battle of Franklin, Nov. 30, 1864, he was wounded early in the day but refused to give up his command. In the great assault which, like a wave, swept upon the Union works, Adams, still mounted, led his brigade, cheering on his men charging behind him. When the wave broke and drew back, he was found mortally wounded, beneath his dead horse on the crest of the Union parapet.

[*Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), VIII; *Official Records*; W. W. Clayton, *Hist. of Davidson County, Tenn.* (1880); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (1891), II.]

J.R.M.T.

ADAMS, JOHN COLEMAN (Oct. 25, 1849–June 22, 1922), Universalist clergyman, author, was a descendant of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass., and numbered among his ancestors John Alden and Col. James Barrett, who commanded the militia at Concord Bridge. His father was John Greenleaf Adams, also a Universalist clergyman and author; and his mother, Mary Hall (Barrett) Adams. He was born in Malden, Mass., prepared for college in the public schools, graduated from Tufts, in 1870, and from the theological school connected with that college in 1872. He then became pastor of the Universalist church in Newton, Mass., where he remained until 1880, leaving there to take charge of the First Universalist Church in Lynn. On July 18, 1883 he married Miriam P. Hovey of Newton, Mass. In 1884 he was called to St. Paul's Church, Chicago. In 1890 he began an eleven years' pastorate in Brooklyn, N. Y., at the close of which he went to All Souls' Church, Hartford, Conn., and remained there until his death.

He was a man of cultivation, fine taste, and transparent sincerity. During his long pastorate in Hartford his intellectual strength and personal charm caused his professional associates to give him the title "Dean of the Hartford Ministry." A progressive liberal, firm in his convictions, he had great charity, nevertheless, for all who differed with him. Young men were especially attracted to him, and in his later years he became the beloved champion of those whose interpretations of theology and life were at variance with those of their fathers. He had an irenic spirit and a quiet humor which always quieted a conference excited over questions of theology, ecclesiastical policies, or the attitude of the church toward matters of state. He was fond of out-of-door life and found much time for recreation. His nature studies show keen appreciation of beauty, an eye for delicate details, and originality of description. The following is a list of his publications: *The Fatherhood of God* (1888); *Christian Types of Hero-*

ism (1889); *The Leisure of God* (1895); *Nature Studies in Berkshire* (1899); *William Hamilton Gibson* (1901); *Hosea Ballou and the Gospel Renaissance of the Nineteenth Century* (1902); *An Honorable Youth* (1906); *Short Studies in the Larger Faith* (1907); *Santa Claus's Baby and other Christmas Stories* (1911); *Universalism and the Universalist Church* (1915); "The Universalists," in *The Religious History of New England* (1917).

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; O. F. Adams, *Dict. of Am. Authors* (4th ed., 1901); *Men of Mark in Conn.*, II (1906), ed. by N. G. Osborn; *Hartford Daily Courant*, June 23, 1922; personal information.] L. S. M.

ADAMS, JOHN QUINCY (July 11, 1767–Feb. 23, 1848), eldest son of John and Abigail (Smith) Adams, was born at Braintree (now Quincy), Mass. With little early schooling he accompanied his father to France in 1778, already keeping a journal which developed into one of the most famous of diaries. He had a short training in French and Latin in an academy at Passy. Returning to America he went to France again in 1779 and attended the Latin School at Amsterdam. He matriculated into Leyden University in January 1781, but soon went to St. Petersburg as secretary to Francis Dana, United States minister to Russia. In 1783 he returned to The Hague and resumed his classics under Dumas, the editor of Vattel, again to be called away to serve as secretary to his father during the peace negotiations. On the father's appointment to the London mission the son determined to return to America, entered Harvard College a junior sophister, graduated in 1787, studied law at Newburyport under Theophilus Parsons, afterwards chief justice of Massachusetts, and was admitted to practice July 15, 1790. Law as a profession did not attract him and he readily turned to political discussion. In 1791 he wrote, under the name of "Publicola," a reply to Paine's *Rights of Man*, and the authorship was ascribed to his father in London and Edinburgh reissues. He contributed to and translated for a French newspaper in Boston and in a series of essays signed "Marcellus," "Columbus," and "Barneveld," he so dealt with Genet and neutrality as to attract the notice of Washington, who commissioned him (May 30, 1794) minister to the Netherlands. He arrived at his post as the French occupied the country, but remained to study, observe, and report upon European conditions. On July 26, 1797, while in England on diplomatic business he married Louisa Catherine, daughter of Joshua Johnson, of a Maryland family. He was named for the mission in Portugal, but his destination was changed to Berlin, where he negotiated a treaty and found abundant leisure for reading. He made a visit to Silesia and printed a volume of letters describing it. His foreign mission ended in September 1801, he resumed his law practice in Boston. He was nominated for Congress, but was defeated on Nov. 3, 1802, by W. Eustis, who received a majority of 59 votes in a total of 3,699. Though without party affiliations, Adams had been previously elected to the state Senate in April 1802. On the first opportunity he showed his want of respect for party lines by proposing in caucus that two or three of the governor's council be "of opposite politics to our own, by way of conciliatory procedure," but his suggestion was rejected. In February 1803 he was elected to the United States Senate, with Timothy Pickering as a colleague, and took his seat in October while the bill for taking possession of Louisiana was under consideration. On Oct. 26 he asked its supporters where in the Constitution they found authority for vesting in persons appointed by the President the military, civil, and judicial powers exercised "by the existing government of Louisiana." He proposed to amend the bill "consistently with the Constitution," but his motion, not being in order, could not be considered. On Nov. 3 he voted in favor of an appropriation for carrying into effect the purchase treaty, which other Federalist senators opposed, and on Jan. 10, 1804 he introduced two resolutions against taxing the inhabitants of Louisiana without their consent, neither of which was accepted by the Senate. He also opposed a bill for the temporary government of the territory. He was never reconciled to the course of legislation taken at that time, but believed the acquisition of Louisiana to have been "accomplished by a flagrant violation of the Constitution."

His report on Senator John Smith, who was implicated in the Burr plot, his attitude on the impeachment of Judge Pickering, his apparent support of the administration in regard to British aggressions against neutrals and the affair of the *Chesapeake*, and finally his votes on the Embargo of 1807, where he chose to favor embargo as an alternative to war, proved his want of party allegiance and aroused the full hostility of Pickering. The latter denounced him at home, secured a premature election of a new senator from Massachusetts, and thus forced Adams to resign, on June 8, 1808. He was now regarded by the Federalists as an apostate, was shunned by his old associates, and shared in the odium heaped upon his father. He had in 1806 been appointed to the chair of rhetoric and oratory in Harvard College and even in that position was made to feel the dislike of his social equals. During his term as senator the tendency of the Federalists to condone the in-

sults and injuries inflicted upon American commerce, that peace might be kept with Great Britain, had led Adams to draw away from that party; and its secret maneuvers, with Pickering as a leader, to form closer relations, if not more, with England shocked his devotion to the Union. Unable to induce the Federalists of Boston to pledge full support to the government after the affair of the *Chesapeake,* he accomplished his end in a meeting of Republicans. Yet he was not a Republican nor a full supporter of the administration, and refused an offer from Republicans of a nomination to Congress. An independent, he was regarded with suspicion by both parties.

When Madison became president he nominated Adams to be minister at St. Petersburg, and in October 1809 the new minister was at his post. His experience at other capitals proved of service in Russia, the only country of Europe which refused to comply with the commercial decrees of Napoleon and thus the only outlet for the trade of the United States. On friendly terms with the Tsar, respected by his diplomatic colleagues, participating in the social life of the capital though without being able properly to reciprocate favors, he widened his knowledge and, even against the English representative, furthered the interests of his country with results that were to be gratefully remembered fifty years later. During his absence (February 1811) he was nominated and confirmed to the Supreme Court of the United States, an appointment which he immediately declined. He saw Russia invaded by Napoleon because of her refusal to close her ports and he saw the United States declare war against Great Britain at the very time when Russia was combining with that nation against France. An offer from Russia to mediate the differences between England and the United States led to the appointment of peace commissioners by the latter, and Adams, James A. Bayard, and Albert Gallatin were named (Apr. 17, 1813) and dispatched, too hastily, it proved, as Great Britain had not agreed to the mediation, and the Senate rejected Gallatin (July 19, 1813). Growing weary of the war, Great Britain expressed a willingness to negotiate, but not under Russian mediation, and the United States again named the same agents and added to the mission Jonathan Russell and Henry Clay (Jan. 18, 1814). In a commission composed of such incongruous personalities differences in opinion were certain to arise. Adams was the first in authority by his appointment, but he required Gallatin's tact and criticism to temper his too ardent sensibility and in the end the credit for success may be divided between those two members. The British commissioners were by no means the equal in ability of the Americans, and by their demands and arrogant manner of making them created a situation unfavorable to agreement. Adams drafted the papers of the American commissioners and complained somewhat overmuch that his colleagues revised them in a hostile spirit. Clay specially irritated him, for they differed in temperament as well as in interests. To Adams the fisheries were immeasurably important; to Clay the navigation of the Mississippi. Clay favored a continuance of war, Adams looked for peace. The course of the negotiation and the part played by each commissioner are related in Adams's diary. While failing to obtain all their instructions called for, they succeeded in making peace (Dec. 24, 1814) and either postponed undetermined questions or provided for their settlement in future instruments.

Adams was in Paris on the return of Napoleon and during the greater part of the "Hundred Days." He was made minister to the Court of St. James's, thus repeating the father's experience in being the first minister to that court after a war, and, still in succession, took part in discussing a commercial treaty. For two years Adams had abundant opportunity to complete his diplomatic education. Never quite congenial with the English, he carried on negotiations with the cabinet of the King on questions still at issue between the two countries, without reaching agreement. He lived at Ealing, in the neighborhood of London, and took but little part in the social life around him, though he formed many agreeable connections, and educated his sons in English schools. Official functions he endured, rather than enjoyed, and he indulged his tastes as a reader and student.

He was invited by Monroe, in March 1817, to be secretary of state in his cabinet and took up his duties Sept. 22. No more congenial office could have fallen to him, and his previous training and experience eminently fitted him to fill it. Politically, it was a period of calm. The war for independence and the organization of a federal government had been accomplished; a new generation, with new problems, had come forward and Adams, though inheriting and easily imbibing prejudices, brought to the conduct of his office wide experience and knowledge, great industry, and political independence. At times, it is true, his direct method seemed aggressive and unnecessarily forceful in cabinet discussion. He soon learned, too, that the apparent "era of good feeling" was largely neutralized by a contest among many for the presidency, in succession to Monroe. Clay had opposed Adams's appointment to the State Department, deeming that he had him-

self better claims and he opposed the administration because of his disappointment. Crawford and Calhoun, in the cabinet, laid their plans for succession and the last four years of Monroe's term were passed in maneuvering for political position.

The questions before the Department of State were many and of grave moment. The revolting Spanish colonies in America fitted out many privateers in the United States, a practice defended by Clay, who severely criticized both Monroe and Adams for their more cautious and correct policy. The Floridas, still Spanish territory, afforded a refuge for Indians and malefactors, and Spain could not protect the United States from raids and retreats, accompanied by murder and rapine. Jackson, placed in command, went against the Seminole Indians, pursued them into Spanish territory, hanged some of them, executed two British subjects, deposed one governor and named another, and left a garrison in occupation. Thus to invade the territory of a nation in time of peace created serious liabilities. Monroe and all his cabinet, except Adams, believed the general had exceeded his instructions and had done what could not in law be defended. Calhoun would have punished him. Adams took the ground that, as Spain had proved incapable of policing her territories, the United States was obliged to act in self-defense, and so far and so ably justified Jackson's conduct as to silence protests either from Spain or Great Britain. Congress debated the question, with Clay as the leading opponent of Jackson, but would not disapprove of what Jackson had done. It was strange that Jackson's later hatred of Adams, his ablest defender, should have been greater than his hatred of Clay and Calhoun, his critics.

The most delicate and important negotiation conducted by Adams was the treaty for the cession of the Floridas by Spain. Not only were the western bounds of the territory in doubt, but the delays and trickiness of Spanish diplomacy complicated the agreement. Huge grants of land to court favorites, not mentioned, or concealed by false dates, nearly trapped Adams in serious errors. He had secured(1818)a postponement of the Oregon question by an agreement with Great Britain for a joint occupation for ten years, and to obtain Florida and quiet Spanish claims he gained an acknowledgment from Spain of a line of boundary to the South Sea, a proposal wholly his, in which he took natural pride. Giving up Texas with the consent, if not at the instance of Monroe, he obtained a treaty of cession (1819) which later was declared by his opponents a deliberate sacrifice of territory. Jackson approved

Adams

of the treaty, and Clay again opposed what had been done, but without success.

While the Spanish treaty was in the making Missouri applied for statehood and a struggle arose on the exclusion of slavery. Adams approved of the Missouri Compromise and believed the measure excluded slavery in territories and in states formed from territory north of the dividing line. He saw clearly that the principle involved momentous possibilities, and might even lead to the dissolution of the Union. To him the controversy over Missouri was the "title-page to a great tragic volume." His opposition to slavery was pronounced and in his diary he pictured a life devoted to the problem of emancipation as "nobly spent or sacrificed."

The Spanish colonies in America obtained recognition of their independence from Monroe in March 1822. Already Adams had questioned the claims of Great Britain on the Pacific Ocean, and soon after, in contesting a Russian ukase regarding the same ocean, he laid down the principle that "the American continents are no longer subjects for any new European colonial establishments." Russia acquiesced. Great Britain feared that the United States would take Cuba and that France, if allowed to interpose in Spain, might control the Spanish empire in America. Acting on a suggestion of Adams that the interests of the United States and Great Britain were the same, Canning proposed a joint declaration against a forcible subjection of the colonies to Spain and against acquisition by cession or conquest of American territory by any European power. Both Jefferson and Madison favored this proposal, though it recognized the leadership of England and opposition to the Holy Alliance; but Adams wished to remonstrate against interference of European powers by force with South America, to disclaim all interference with Europe, and to make an American policy. The President's message of Dec. 2, 1823, embodied those principles. Striking out his own references to European questions, such as the invasion of Spain by France and the Greek revolt, Monroe asserted that the American continents "are henceforth not to be considered as subjects for future colonization by any European power"; that "any attempt on their part to extend their system to any portion of this hemisphere" would be regarded as "dangerous to our peace and safety," and "we could not view any interposition for the purpose of oppressing them [the late Spanish possessions], or controlling in any other manner their destiny, by any European power in any other light than as the manifestation of an unfriendly disposition toward the United States."

Known as the Monroe Doctrine, and with credit equally divided between the President and the Secretary, it has proved of great importance in the history of American diplomacy.

As the time of the presidential election approached Adams was one of four candidates. His office had by custom come to be regarded as the stepping-stone to the presidency, but in his term of service he had done little directly to advance his prospects by conciliating his rivals or the politicians. He stood upon his public services, and was the only Northern candidate. When the returns were known Jackson had received 99 votes; Adams, 84; Crawford, 41; and Clay, 37. Adams's support had come from New York and New England. With Crawford broken in health the decision in the House rested with Clay and his pronounced dislike of Jackson made a support of Adams natural. Adams, receiving the votes of thirteen states to Jackson's seven, was declared elected. The contest left a long train of consequences materially affecting the later careers of the two candidates, and Adams himself wished that a nearer approach to unanimity could have been reached, even had it been necessary for him to refuse the office in order to permit a new choice. Before the House had acted it was charged that Clay had entered into a corrupt bargain with Adams by which Adams would be president and Clay secretary of state. Though without any basis of truth the charge gained plausibility when Clay was appointed secretary. In the hands of Jackson and his followers it became a weapon which served to check Clay's success during his life and to defeat Adams in 1828. Three years before that election Jackson was again nominated for the presidency by the legislature of his State; he accepted and announced his platform, the essence of which was the denunciation of the alleged bargain between Clay and Adams.

President Adams in his inaugural stated his broad plan of internal improvements, and, in his annual message, his ideas of directing government powers to promote the arts and sciences, a national university, astronomical observatories, and scientific enterprises, in short, to whatever would improve the people. Not only were Northern strict constructionists astonished at the proposal that the federal government should exercise such extensive powers but Southerners were alarmed, fearing slavery might be abolished under them. Opposition in Congress took shape and was first directed against the proposed Panama mission—the sending of commissioners to attend a congress of the republics, lately Spanish colonies. In the course of the debate John Randolph uttered his famous characterization of the "coalition of

Blifil and Black George—the combination, unheard of till then, of the Puritan with the blackleg." Adams's own faith in any success from the Congress was not strong and he gauged the weakness of the republics better than did Clay. In the end circumstances prevented the United States from being represented.

The mid-term elections of 1827 to Congress gave, for the first time in the history of the government, a large majority against the administration. By the union of the Crawford and Jackson forces the South was consolidating its influence against Adams. With no great difference in policy to justify contests of parties the agitation for political vantage turned upon personalities. Adams removed no man for political opinion or even for political activity against himself, and so little of the politician did he have in his make-up that he wished to retain Crawford in the cabinet and to appoint Jackson to the War Department. He refused to break with McLean, the postmaster general, though cognizant of his activities in behalf of Jackson. Such restraint in the exercise of a power to secure followers by the use of patronage alienated friends and encouraged enemies. During his administration only twelve removals from office were made, yet in 1826 he was arraigned for abuse of patronage and an effort was made to transfer a good share of the appointments from the President to congressmen. Few campaigns have equalled that of 1828 for its license and bitter personalities. For want of a party of his own to check the attacks of the well-organized opposition, Adams and his policy of centralized government were defeated. In the electoral college he received only 83 votes while to Jackson were given 178.

He returned to Massachusetts, where the old-time Federalists showed much the same opposition to him that they had shown to his father. By the publication of a Jefferson letter in the last days of the campaign Giles of Virginia fixed upon Adams the charge of giving Jefferson knowledge of the disunion proposals by the leaders of the party in 1804. To a demand for names and particulars by thirteen leading Federalists of Massachusetts Adams made a reply which did not satisfy, and the questioners published a letter (expressive of their deep resentment against him) which they believed to be conclusive (see *Correspondence between John Quincy Adams and Several Citizens of Massachusetts*, 1829). Keenly feeling the attitude and language of his opponents, among whom were some of the most influential men in the state, he prepared a reply, which was first published in 1877 (*Documents*

Relating to New England Federalism, ed. by Henry Adams). As a controversial document it stands high and as an explanation of the somewhat obscure movements of Pickering and others, it must be accepted as final.

Retiring to Quincy, ostracized by the Federalists and deeming his defeat an unjust return for his long public service, Adams expected to repeat the years of practical banishment endured by his father. Books, of which he had collected many in Europe, offered some refuge from memories of the past, his farm required attention, and he planned writing history or biography. Before he could fall upon any settled and engrossing task, however, he was asked to be the representa tive in Congress from the Plymouth district. Without definite party support he was elected to the Twenty-second Congress (Mar. 4, 1831) by a large majority and was returned for eight successive Congresses—a period of seventeen years lacking ten days. At the time of his election no member had sat in the House who possessed such varied experience and appropriate qualities. He was familiar with the inside political history of forty years abroad and at home. His remarkable memory of events was supplemented by a remarkable diary, the general accuracy of which could hardly be questioned, however colored it might be by temperament and prejudice. Industrious and conscientious in the discharge of his public duties in Congress, he served on many important committees and prepared reports which covered many questions of public policy. As a debater he was listened to with respect and, when aroused, with nearly as great fear; for his integrity was unquestioned, his information vast and ready, and his utterances direct, forceful, and at times tipped with gall. Altogether he entered upon years of influence and combat which made his congressional service unique and quite the most important part of his career.

His first appointment, chairman of the committee on manufactures, which he held for ten years, brought him into indirect connection with South Carolina nullification. For Calhoun he had no warm feeling, having received no support from him in Monroe's cabinet and only opposition in the presidency; but he thought that some concessions in the protective tariff might be made to placate South Carolina. Though it was not his committee that devised tariffs, he presented from it a minority report censuring the course of the administration. Jackson's proclamation he commended, but he believed in the event too much had been yielded to the nullifiers by a compromise which postponed instead of deciding the issue. To him any compromise on that particular question would lead to "final and irretrievable dissolution of the Union," an ever present thought in his view of public affairs.

Adams

In the discussion of the question of slavery Adams did not take a prominent part before 1835 and even then leadership was thrust upon him by force of circumstances. In 1805 he had proposed to lay a duty upon imported slaves, but only four senators had voted with him. As secretary of state he had dealt with the suppression of the slave-trade and not with the question of slavery. Atrocious as he considered that traffic, he considered the right of search by foreign officers of American vessels upon the seas in time of peace a still greater evil (*Memoirs,* VI, 37). When Haiti had become free and could be recognized in 1826, as president he had acted with caution and had found reasons for withholding an acknowledgment of independence. Clay's influence had led him to evade the question in the proposed Panama Congress, as both Haiti and Cuba furnished "near and dangerous examples," against the contagion of which "all means necessary to the security" of the United States should be employed. Now in Congress the question assumed a new form. In the first weeks of his first session he had presented petitions on slavery. In 1834 the attempts of the upholders of slavery to suppress the right of petition had been successful. For Congress to refuse to receive appeals from individuals and associations was bad enough from any point of view; to treat with contempt resolutions from the legislature of a State, no matter what the subject, involved an extraordinary exercise of power, even more indefensible. Adams, whether armed with resolutions of the legislature of Massachusetts, or with his "bundles" of petitions, kept the question before the House, greatly exasperating the majority, who were always ready to enforce the gag principle.

When president he had made a fruitless attempt to obtain Texas from Mexico by cession; but now when the annexation of Texas was first brought forward he opposed it and in a speech delivered May 25, 1836—"by far the most noted speech that I ever made," he wrote in the following year—he "opened the whole subject of the Mexican, Indian, negro, and English war." A Spanish translation was printed in Mexico and Miss Martineau used it in her volume upon America. On the general reception given to it, assailed in the South and West and applauded in the North and East, he felt that his opportunity had come. "This [the extension of slavery] is a cause upon which I am entering at the last stage of life, and with the certainty that I cannot advance in it far; my career must close, leav-

ing the cause at the threshold. To open the way for others is all that I can do. The cause is good and great" (*Memoirs,* IX, 298). His position, the same as that he had taken on the admission of Louisiana, was on the broadest lines. In June 1838, it was expressed in the following language: "That the power of annexing the people of a foreign government to this Union has not been delegated to the Congress nor to any Department of the Government of the United States, but has been reserved to the people. That any attempt by Act of Congress or by treaty to annex the republic of Texas to this Union would be an usurpation of power, which it would be the right and the duty of the free people of the Union to resist and annul" (*Memoirs,* V, 20). On that proposition he occupied the "morning hour" from June 16 to July 7, 1838, preventing a vote on annexation; and in 1843 he united with twelve other members of Congress in a protest declaring that annexation would mean the dissolution of the Union (*Niles' Register,* LXIV, 173–75). Territory, they held, could be acquired by treaty, but there was no power to transfer a man from one country to another without his consent. Adams embodied the conviction that the Texas question involved the sacrifice of Northern freedom to slavery and the South, and the purchase of Western support by the plunder of the public lands. His opposition to annexation and to the war with Mexico brought to him petitions against annexation as well as on slavery in the District of Columbia and on slavery in general and they came to him in increasing numbers. His management of these "incendiary papers" was at first guided by the unanimous support of the Massachusetts members of the House of Representatives (*Memoirs,* IX, 443), but he acted more and more independently.

Wearied if not frightened by the number of petitions relating to slavery, some of which had been presented through Adams, the House entertained a proposition (December 1836) that no such petitions should be read, printed, committed, or in any way acted upon by the House. This took final shape in the rule that all such petitions should, without reading or printing, or any other action of the House upon them, be laid upon the table. As a motion to lay on the table admitted no debate, all discussion was precluded. Each year, from 1836 to 1844, Adams opposed without success the adoption of this rule. Such a "gag" on free discussion, he charged, was a direct violation of the Constitution, of the rules of the House, of the rights of his constituents, and, as he said in after years, of his right to freedom of speech as a member of the House. On Dec. 3, 1844, the "gag" resolution was at last defeated. While the right of petition was to Adams the real issue, he became the channel through which petitions on slavery streamed in large numbers. He was not an abolitionist, and suffered from the attacks of the abolitionists as well as from their opponents; but he recognized, as few of his day did, that a denial of the right to discuss a public question of such character threatened the continuance of the Union. Further, he early expressed (1836) the conviction that should the South become the seat of a war, "civil, servile, or foreign, from that instant the war powers of the Congress [would] extend to interference with the institution of slavery in every way by which it can be interfered with" (*Register of Debates in Congress,* vol. XII, pt. IV, p. 4047), a sweeping proposition which implied an assertion of an even stronger power; *viz.,* that slavery could be abolished by the exercise of the treaty-making power (1841) and still later, that in a state of war the military authority—president or commander of the army—might order the universal emancipation of slaves (Apr. 14, 1842. See C. F. Adams, "John Quincy Adams and Emancipation through Martial Law" in *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* 2nd ser., vol. XV). To check Adams's continued presentation of petitions, Southern members proposed to discipline and even to expel him, but he proved capable of holding his positions and of putting his critics in the wrong. Thus in February 1837 he asked if the gag resolution would cover a petition he had received from twenty-two persons who declared themselves to be slaves, and in the confusion that followed various motions from censure to expulsion were offered. When permitted to speak, Adams, by stating that the petition favored slavery, turned the tables on his opposers, who rounded out a somewhat ridiculous policy of suppression by gravely proposing to censure Adams for "creating an impression and leaving the House under that impression" that the petition in question was for the abolition of slavery (*Letters from John Quincy Adams to his Constituents,* 1837, p. 16); also for "giving color to the idea that slaves have the right of petition" and for being ready to serve as their organ (*Ibid.,* p. 19). The petition was probably a hoax, intended to embarrass Adams. His final speech silenced his critics and proved his ability to meet, almost single-handed, the forces of the South.

His course in the House showed what was regarded at the time as strange inconsistency. He debated and voted with complete independence, to the great confusion of those who counted upon his support. When assurance was made by those

in charge of the bill for the admission of Arkansas as a State that no proposition concerning slavery would be made in the debate, Adams remarked that if no other member would offer such a proposal he would, and kept his promise. The fact that he had not been on speaking terms with President Jackson and had received insult at his hands did not prevent his supporting him—"at the hazard of my own political destruction"—in Jackson's quarrel with France, in his controversy with South Carolina, and in other critical periods of his administration. Yet he opposed Jackson's bank policy, submitting a minority report in protest against the proceedings of the committee of inquiry of which he was a member. A speech upon Jackson's removal of the public moneys from the Bank of the United States was not delivered but was published and served its purpose. From the committee on manufactures he also submitted (February 1833) a report which reviewed the claims of the South for the protection of slavery, the proposed disposal of the public lands, and the doctrine of nullification. To none of these would he yield a particle. Only one other member of the committee signed this report.

His personal influence and ability to deal with a crisis were shown in December 1839, when the House assembled to find itself unable to organize because of the arbitrary action of its clerk. So equally were parties divided in it that the members from New Jersey, whose election was contested, would decide the political complexion of the House, the Speaker, and the committees. The clerk, himself the clerk of the last House, without authority to do anything but list the members offering proper credentials, and depending for his own reëlection on the issue of the contest, refused to name the contested seats, producing a state of complete inaction difficult to meet. After three days of futile effort, Adams appealed to the members to organize and stated his determination himself to put to the meeting the question of ordering the clerk to read the names of the New Jersey members holding the governor's credentials. He was elected chairman, and for eleven days presided over a body not yet formally organized and torn by a partisan difference, on which depended the large rewards of committee appointments and their influence on legislation. Belonging to no party and entirely familiar with parliamentary practice, he controlled the stormy sessions and brought the extraordinary situation to a successful issue.

When the Whigs controlled the House in the Twenty-seventh Congress Adams was made chairman of the Committee on Foreign Affairs, for which he was eminently fitted. He could not escape attack, however, and his position in the matter of the *Creole,* a vessel captured by its cargo of slaves and taken to Nassau, where the slaves were set free by the authorities, invited it. A petition from Georgia for his removal engaged the House for some days; the Southern members of the Committee on Foreign Affairs resigned from it, unwilling, as they said, to serve with a chairman in whom they had no confidence, and others appointed asked to be excused. If the objectors planned to replace Caleb Cushing in the chairmanship, they failed; but Adams was not reappointed to that committee in the next Congress.

In January and March 1841, for the first time since 1809, Adams appeared before the Supreme Court of the United States. On the earlier occasion he had argued in defense of certain rights in which many of his fellow citizens had much property at stake; on the later he presented an elaborate argument vindicating the right to freedom of the *Amistad* captives, fifty-three negroes who had been taken at sea by a vessel of the United States, after they had revolted, killed the captain, and obtained possession of the vessel in which they and their masters were sailing for their destination. They were charged with murder and piracy. The Spanish owners claimed the negroes, the Spanish minister claimed both ship and negroes under the treaty of 1795, and the United States officer called for salvage. The United States circuit court held that it had no jurisdiction of a crime committed on the high seas in a Spanish vessel, but would not release the negroes claimed as property by the Spaniards. Adams was asked to defend the slaves and made an argument which Justice Story described as "extraordinary, for its power, for its bitter sarcasm, and its dealing with topics far beyond the record and points of discussion" (W. W. Story, *Life and Letters of Joseph Story,* 1851, II, 348). The decision of the Court declared the negroes to be free. Adams's published argument was a plea for justice, but it also served once more to express his views upon slavery.

In 1842 another occasion arose in the House of Representatives for action against Adams. He had presented (Jan. 24) a petition from citizens of Haverhill, Mass., praying that for sectional reasons the Union of the States be peaceably dissolved, and moved its reference to a select committee with instructions to report against it. The document may be regarded as a satire on the proposed dissolution of the Union. Days were spent in discussing resolutions prepared in a caucus of Southern members and presented by Marshall of Kentucky, stating that Adams had

disgraced his country, might well be expelled from the national councils, and should receive their "severest censure." After eleven days of excitement, with Adams as the center of the storm, he offered to drop the subject if the resolution of censure were tabled, ending a scene that was dramatic and sensational and ending also all attempts to suppress the offender by threats of censure.

Science had interested him, though he was too absorbed in public duties to be able to pursue the study. When in Russia he had given some attention to Russian weights and measures and, shortly after becoming secretary of state, the Senate (March 1817) called upon him for a full report. The House did not act until December 1819, when it made the same requisition. On receiving the Senate's call Adams began a report, but had made little progress before that of the House was received. Devoting six months to the subject he completed the document—"a fearful and oppressive task"—and in February 1821 it was printed by Congress. Elaborate and thorough for the time and containing definite recommendations for permanent and universal uniformity of standards, it remained without influence in legislation or in advancing an agreement among nations on the subject. It was reprinted in 1871 and is still of value for reference. In another direction he left a permanent record. He was chairman of the committee to report upon the power of Congress to accept the fund left by the Englishman, James Smithson, to the United States, to establish at Washington an institution for the "increase and diffusion of knowledge." Adams not only reported that Congress was competent to accept the bequest, but he made recommendations for employing it and was instrumental in preventing its diversion to local and temporary objects. He wished to establish in the United States "the most complete astronomical observatory in the world," but Congress was unwilling to act. From the receipt of the fund in 1838 until 1846 Adams jealously watched the proposed uses, made four elaborate reports upon its disposition, provided for restoring the fund when wasted by bad investment in state bonds, and saw success in the end—a permanent fund and a national observatory. In the Smithsonian Institution his foresight and labor have been justified. It was in recognition of his efforts to encourage the study of astronomy that he was invited in 1843 to lay the corner-stone of the Cincinnati Observatory.

On Sept. 17, 1842, Adams gave to his constituents a full statement of his conduct during his service in Congress in the form of an examination of the administration under the successive presidents in that time (*Address of John Quincy Adams to his Constituents of the Twelfth Congressional District*). It embodied his conception of what the South and the slave power had done or wished to do, and how far their policy had been aided by a sacrifice of principle by the North. Entirely characteristic in form and expression it contains an excellent picture of the great political acts of twelve years by a leading actor in them. It was the last political paper prepared by Adams and may serve as his political testament. A minority report supporting resolves of the legislature of Massachusetts which proposed to amend the Constitution of the United States so as to abolish the representation of slaves was made by him in April 1844, signed also by Giddings. Occasional addresses, of more or less political cast, and debates in Congress on the annexation of Texas and the Oregon question, occupied his attention and called out his accustomed vigor and acumen. On Nov. 19, 1846, he was stricken with paralysis while walking in the streets of Boston, but recovered sufficiently to take his seat in the House on Feb. 16, 1847. A year later, Feb. 21, 1848, shortly after responding to the call of his name he fell in a second stroke and, carried to the Speaker's room in the Capitol, he died there on the evening of Feb. 23 without having recovered consciousness. Mrs. Adams died on May 15, 1852.

Of unquestioned patriotism, Adams believed that the nation should contribute to the happiness of all, and that no nation should "regulate its conduct by the exclusive or even the paramount consideration of its own interest." He saw and criticized the faults of policy or administration even more readily than he praised conduct that was based on the performance of duty. From his early years he studied political institutions, especially those of his own country, applying his knowledge to national and international questions as they came before him. Too much engrossed by immediate problems, he did not formulate a policy and thus appears inconsistent in his conduct, as if swerved by temporary considerations. Yet it was recognized in his day that one sentiment ran through all his life, an intense love of freedom for all men, and an invincible belief in the inalienable rights of man. The American Constitution was to him but a stage in the political development of those rights, not creating but accepting them, and must itself, therefore, be interpreted as a means rather than an end. As his father had done before him, he went back to natural law for the origin of rights, and, because the Constitution embodied

"compromises," he accepted and defended it only so far as its principles rested upon natural right. In his long and bitter controversy over slavery this conception of the Constitution and its failure to embody the higher forms of freedom and rights of man gave him a weapon of great power. "Slavery and democracy," he wrote, "especially a democracy founded, as ours is, on the rights of man—would seem to be incompatible with each other; and yet, at this time, the democracy of the country is supported chiefly, if not entirely, by slavery."

In the contest with the slave power he acted almost alone. Independence of party was a "duty" imposed upon him, for his service belonged to the nation. Even as a representative in Congress from Massachusetts he was not influenced by the peculiar interests of that State, unless support of a protective tariff can be instanced to the contrary, a tariff that in form was framed for the whole country. To him a majority meant nothing, unless it acted oppressively—and he worked for the individual or a number, for the slave or the free man, for women or men, with the same zeal and detachment, intent only on defending the cause he had at heart. No other man of his day came to represent as he did the essence of the right of petition, and his persistence and courage won admiration even from those who thought him a madman or incendiary, and condemned his methods and the principle for which he was contending.

His many writings and speeches contain much that is autobiographical and much that is historical, for he dwelt on past and present history, and both utilized his own experience to the full and rested upon documents. His state papers and controversies suffered from the wealth of reference which his early studies, wide reading, extraordinary memory and application supplied. His readiness in debate and his bitterness of speech, which seemed at times almost too strongly colored by vindictiveness, made his attack something to be feared. Fond of combat and of controversy, his career was marked by an assertiveness amounting to pugnacity. Conscientious to a fault, he left no argument without exhausting its possibility. From his early days surrounded by enemies, as he believed, his gift of contention was developed and leaned toward offense. Yet he kept himself under restraint in the face of great provocation. He avoided the mean and tricky: he was always an honorable foe. No man judged his own acts more severely than he, and his diary, described as a "treasury of damnations," dealt with his own thoughts and acts more contritely than the occasion demanded. Harsh as his judgments on men and deeds appear, they show an ability to touch upon character and motives that makes them in part true. He had a deeply religious feeling and became a Unitarian, but never worked out a system of theology, any more than he did a system of politics. Only in his great fight on freedom did he approach a philosophy of the latter subject.

To him his generation gave the title of "the old man eloquent." Yet Theodore Parker thought him "seldom eloquent" and what oratorical ability he had to be of late development. In his manner of speaking there was little dignity and no grace, though sometimes there was a terrible energy and fire and "invective was his masterpiece of oratoric skill." Emerson, who heard him in his later years, spoke of his reputation as a fine reader: "No man could read the Bible with such powerful effect" (*Works,* 1904, VIII, 122). Of the fine voice broken by age he declared that the "wonders he could achieve with that cracked and disobedient organ showed what power might have belonged to it in early manhood" (*Ibid.*).

Simple in his tastes, and disliking the exposure to flattery that high position in the state brings, Adams was known as a man of social talent, a good talker, admired for his richness of recollection and apt illustration. Even his enemies, of whom he had an abundance, recognized that side of him and wondered. His family letters are of a quality different from his public papers, and his admiration for his father and his ambitions for his son, Charles Francis Adams, led to free confidences which reveal a softer and more lovable nature and a conscience that smote him when he thought himself most obliged to oppose or punish. Theodore Parker, not sparing in his opinion of others, wrote on the death of Adams, "The one great man since Washington, whom America had no cause to fear" (*Works,* 1908, vol. VII).

The more important writings of John Quincy Adams are: *Memoirs,* 12 vols., edited by Charles Francis Adams (1874–77); *Life in a New England Town,* diary as a law student, 1787–88, edited by Charles Francis Adams, Jr. (1903); *Documents Relating to New England Federalism,* edited by Henry Adams (1877); *Writings,* edited by W. C. Ford, 7 vols. (1913); *Oration at Plymouth, Mass.,* Dec. 22, 1802 (repr., 1820); *Letters on Silesia* (London, 1804; Paris, trans. by J. Dupuy, 1807); *Inaugural Oration* (1806); *Letter to H. G. Otis* (1808); *American Principles, a Review of the Works of Fisher Ames* (1809); *Lectures on Rhetoric and Oratory,* 2 vols. (1810); *Correspondence, 1811–14* (1913); *Report on Weights and Measures* (1821); *Duplicate Letters, the Fisheries and the Mississippi* (1822; 2nd

ed., Louisville, 1823); *Correspondence between John Quincy Adams and Several Citizens of Massachusetts, concerning the Charge of a Design to Dissolve the Union* (1829); *Eulogy on James Monroe* (1831); *Dermot MacMorrogh, or the Conquest of Ireland* (1832); *Letters to Wm. L. Stone . . . upon the Subject of Masonry and Antimasonry* (1833); *Letters to Edward Livingston* [on Freemasonry] (1833); *Oration on Lafayette,* Dec. 31, 1834 (1835); *Eulogy on James Madison* (1836); *Letters to his Constituents* (1837); *Character of Hamlet: a letter to J. H. Hackett* (1839); *Speech upon Right of Petition,* June–July, 1838; *Jubilee of the Constitution* (1839); *China Question* (1841); *New England Confederacy of MDCXLIII* (1843); *Oration, Cincinnati Astronomical Society* (1843); *Letters on the Masonic Institution* (1847); *Poems of Religion and Society* (1848); and *Orations,* 4th of July, at Boston, 1793; Quincy, 1831; and Newburyport, 1837.

[W. H. Seward, *Life and Public Services of John Quincy Adams* (1849); Josiah Quincy, *Memoir of the Life of John Quincy Adams* (1858); John T. Morse, *John Quincy Adams* (1882).]

W.C.F.

ADAMS, JOSEPH ALEXANDER (1803–Sept. 11, 1880), wood engraver, inventor, was born in New Germantown, Hunterdon County, N.J. He was largely self-taught, under the encouragement of Dr. Alexander Anderson, America's first wood engraver. His apprenticeship to the printing business, which took place at an early age, was directed by three successive masters. When he became twenty-one, he went to New York, where he worked for three weeks as a journeyman printer. While still an apprentice, he had made his first attempt at engraving, a cut of a boot which could be used for a newspaper advertisement. In his own words he worked as follows: "I intensely blackened the block with India ink, then marked the outlines of the subject with a point and cut away at it. I had not then even heard of finished drawings being made on the wood. In this manner I worked for about six months" (Linton, p. 12). One day Samuel Wood, a publisher of juvenile works, advised him to go to see Dr. Alexander Anderson. "After walking several times to and fro in front of his house," Adams wrote, "I ventured to knock at the door. I found him very pleasant and communicative. He showed me a block he was then working upon and to my astonishment I found the whole design was neatly washed on the block complete with India ink alone. This was entirely a new idea to me. The Doctor gave me many hints, such as lowering parts of the block after the manner of Bewick, so as to print faintly. He also sent me customers occasionally. He laid before me several of Bewick's works which I had never heard of before and also showed me many other specimens of cuts done by English and old German artists" (*Ibid.,* p. 12). Books were not profusely illustrated in Adams's time, and what illustration was used was generally copperplate: nevertheless, in 1831, he was financially able to make a voyage to England, probably incited to do so by the coming to this country in 1829 of Abraham J. Mason, an English engraver on wood, from whom he may have had introductions to Thompson, Bonner, and others.

In 1833 some of his work appeared in the *Treasury of Knowledge* and in the *Cottage Bible.* His "Last Arrow" was engraved in 1837 for the *New York Mirror.* But it was his sixteen hundred illustrations for Harper's *Illuminated Bible,* published in 1843, which constituted his greatest achievement. He is said to have been the first electrotyper in America and to have invented several improvements in the process. Linton commends his work for its firm, honest exactness and clearness, and for his graver drawing, mechanism of the art, disposition and perfection of lines. He died in New Jersey at the age of seventy-seven.

[William James Linton, *Hist. of Wood Engraving in America* (1882); J. Henry Harper, *The House of Harper* (1912), pp. 79–81; *Am. Art Rev.,* Oct. 1880.]

R.C.S.

ADAMS, NEHEMIAH (Feb. 19, 1806–Oct. 6, 1878), Congregational clergyman, was born in Salem, Mass., the son of Nehemiah Adams, deacon of the Tabernacle Congregational Church, and Mehitable Torrey Adams. He was educated at Salem Latin School, Harvard College, and Andover Theological Seminary; was ordained and installed as co-pastor with Dr. Abiel Holmes at the Shepard Church (First Congregational) in Cambridge, Mass., in 1829, and on the retirement of Dr. Holmes in September 1831 was made sole pastor. He served in this position until Mar. 14, 1834, and was installed pastor of the Essex Street or Union Congregational Church of Boston, Mar. 26, 1834. He remained pastor of the Boston church until his death. He was given the degree of D.D. by Amherst in 1847. In 1869 he suffered a paralytic shock from which he never fully recovered. Accompanied by his two daughters, he made a trip around the world, 1869–70, in the ship *Golden Fleece,* commanded by his son. The experiences of this trip are recorded in his book, *A Voyage Around the World* (1871), republished in enlarged form as *Under the Mizzen Mast* (1873). During the Unitarian controversy Adams figured prominently as an upholder of Evangelical orthodoxy. His works in this connection

are *Remarks on the Unitarian Belief* (1832), *A Letter to Rev. Ezra S. Gannett, occasioned by his tract on atonement* (1840), *Injuries done to Christ* (1841), a pamphlet in reply to Prof. Henry Ware for strictures on the same (1841), "Why am I a Trinitarian Congregationalist?" in *Pitts Street Chapel Lectures* (1858). He produced, in all, sixteen volumes and more than fifty other publications. Among his books are *The Life of John Eliot* (1847); *The Friends of Christ in the New Testament* (1853); *The Communion Sabbath* (1856); *Agnes and the Key of her Little Coffin* (1857); *Bertha and her Baptism* (1857). He edited the *Autobiography of Rev. Thomas Shepard* (1832), and compiled a hymnal, *Church Pastorals* (1864). In the winter of 1854 he visited the South and his hospitable treatment led him to write his best-known book, *A South-side View of Slavery* (1854). This was not a defense of slavery, but it recognized the better side of the institution and deplored the excesses of the Northern abolitionists. Its author believed that if unmolested the South would peacefully abolish slavery. The book subjected Adams to bitter criticism. A resolution of disapproval was offered at a meeting of his church, but it was laid on the table. In 1861 he replied to his critics in another book on slavery, *The Sable Cloud,* which was largely suppressed by his friends. His last work on this subject was a volume of sermons, *At Eventide* (1877), whose publication was requested by ten clergymen of Charleston, S. C., for the promotion of better feeling between North and South.

Hon. Rufus Choate, a parishioner and strong admirer of Adams, praised him for "the daily beauty of his life, his consistency, steadiness, affection, sincerity, taste and courage." Dr. James Hamilton of London called him "the Washington Irving of sermon writers." Dr. Austin Phelps commended "his broad reach in adaptation to different classes of mind." Addison and Jeremy Taylor are said to have been his models in literary style.

Adams married Martha Hooper of Marblehead, Mass., Jan. 11, 1832. She died Dec. 23, 1848. On May 15, 1850 he married Sarah Williston Brackett of Easthampton, Mass. He was the father of seven children by his first marriage and of two by his second. Two sons and three daughters survived him. He was a member of the American Tract Society, a corporate member of the American Board of Foreign Missions for forty-one years, and of its Prudential Committee for thirty-two years. Portraits of him are found in the *Memorial Volume,* issued by the Essex Street Church in 1860, and in *At Eventide;* there is also an oil portrait in Union Congregational Church, Boston.

[*Congregational Yr. Bk.* (1879); *Congregationalist,* Oct. 16, 1878; *N.Y. Observer,* Oct. 17, 1878; *Ministries that Never End,* by his successor, Rev. F. A. Warfield (1878); *Boston Advertiser, Statesman, Zion's Herald,* Oct. 9, 11, and 17, 1878; Anniversary publications of Union Church, 1860, 1897, and 1922.] F. T. P.

ADAMS, ROBERT (Feb. 26, 1846–June 1, 1906), lawyer, legislator, son of Robert and Matilda Hart Adams, was a native of Philadelphia. The family was important in Pennsylvania history as appears from the State's muster-rolls and Robert's membership in various colonial and Revolutionary societies. He began his education at Claymont, Del., prepared for college at the Philadelphia Classical Institute, and graduated from the University of Pennsylvania, with the degrees A.B. 1869, A.M. 1872. He studied law with George W. Biddle of Philadelphia and was admitted to the bar in 1872. While at college he had taken courses in geology under Prof. Ferdinand V. Hayden, who in 1867 began his explorations in the government's western territories, and in 1871 he joined Hayden in his Yellowstone researches leading to the withdrawal of 3,575 square miles for a national park. During these four years of investigation, Adams was special correspondent for two New York and two Philadelphia newspapers, and developed the ability to interest the average reader in subjects demanding intimate knowledge and accurate description. Upon the completion of this scientific work he resumed the study of law and politics, although retaining his membership in the United States Geological Survey. He graduated from the Wharton School of the University of Pennsylvania in 1884 with the degree B.F., and represented a Philadelphia district in the state Senate 1882–86. On Apr. 1, 1889 President Harrison appointed him minister to Brazil, where he remained until July 1, 1890, devoting much money and time to a thorough examination of consular work in Spanish America. Upon election to Congress in 1893 he framed a measure for consular reform, which after twelve years of vigorous support he was to see become law.

In Congress Adams represented an important business district of Philadelphia which returned him in 1904 by 41,724 votes to 7,393 for all other candidates. His particular fields of activity during his thirteen years of service were foreign relations, internal improvements, and Pennsylvania interests. He was familiar with the resources of Spanish America and saw clearly the effects of Spanish misgovernment in Cuba, from which he reasoned that Spain would not long hold her colonial empire together and that the United States could not guarantee her against loss. When therefore President McKinley on Apr. 11, 1898 asked Congress for authority to end hostilities in Cuba,

Adams, as acting chairman of the House Committee on Foreign Affairs, conducted through the House, and had charge in conference with the Senate, of the resolution by which at 3 a. m. Apr. 19 Congress declared Cuba independent. With like energy he drafted, introduced, and forced through the House in one hour the congressional resolution of Apr. 25 declaring war against Spain. After the power of Spain had collapsed, Adams, as a representative of America's commercial interests, favored the retention of the Philippines by the United States. At about this time he began to meet with increasing financial difficulties. Weakened by failing health, he was subjected to extra work as acting chairman of the House Committee on Foreign Affairs in the absence of his chief. Not until May 31, 1906 did his diplomatic and consular measure pass the House. Then, as he wrote Speaker Cannon, he felt warranted in abandoning his official position, and the next morning died by his own hand. Congress dispensed with the usual memorial addresses, as he had written: "I have never been in sympathy with the latter custom." Adams was never married but had been a bachelor leader in Philadelphia and Washington society.

[*Cong. Record*, 1893–1906; H. E. Flack, "Spanish-American Diplomatic Relations Preceding the War of 1898," in *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies in Hist. and Pol. Sci.*, ser. XXIV, nos. 1–2; Woodrow Wilson, *Hist. of the Am. People* (1918), esp. vols. IX and X; obituaries in *N.Y. Evening Post*, June 1, 1906, and *N.Y. Herald, Phila. Public Ledger, Phila. Inquirer*, June 2, 1906.]

C. H. L—n.

ADAMS, SAMUEL (Sept. 27, 1722–Oct. 2, 1803), Revolutionary statesman, was descended from Henry Adams, who came from England, and settled in Mt. Wollaston (Braintree), Mass. Of two grandsons of Henry Adams, one, Joseph Adams, was the grandfather of John Adams, second president of the United States. The other was John Adams, a sea captain, whose second son was Samuel Adams, born May 6, 1689, in Boston. Samuel Adams married Mary Fifield, and to them were born twelve children. One of these was Samuel Adams, who was born in Purchase St., Boston. Little is known of his mother, except that she was a woman "of severe religious principles" (Wells, I, 3). His father was of sufficient prominence so that in Harvard College his son ranked socially, fifth in a class of twenty-two. His Purchase St. residence was accounted a fine one, and besides other real estate he owned a thriving brewery. He was a deacon in Old South Church, and instrumental in establishing (1715–17) New South Church, one of the ministers of which, Samuel Checkley, was a relative and the father-in-law of his famous son. At different times Adams was justice of the peace, selectman, and member from Boston in the House of Representatives. William Gordon says, on what authority is not known, that as early as 1724 the elder Adams and others "used to meet, make a caucus, and lay their plans for introducing certain persons into places of trust and power" (*History of the Rise, Progress, and Establishment of the Independence of the United States*, 1788, I, 365).

Of the youth of Samuel Adams little is known. According to Wells (*Life of Samuel Adams*, I, 5), who probably relies on family tradition, he studied under Mr. Lovell, principal of the Boston Grammar School. In 1736 he entered Harvard College, where he acquired a knowledge of Greek and Latin, and learned to admire the classical heroes as seen through the eyes of Plutarch. It is said that the college authorities admonished him once—for over-sleeping. He graduated in 1740, and three years later came back to receive the degree of Master of Arts, arguing affirmatively the thesis: "Whether it be lawful to resist the Supreme Magistrate, if the Commonwealth cannot be otherwise preserved" (*Ibid.*, p. 10). Upon leaving college in 1740 he studied law to please his father, but gave it up to please his mother (*Ibid.*, pp. 11–12). He then entered the counting-house of Thomas Cushing, only to leave it after a few months in order to establish himself in a business of his own, for which purpose his father advanced him £1,000. Half of this sum Adams loaned to an impecunious friend who could not repay it; the other half he soon lost on his own account. He then joined his father in the brewery, where it may be supposed he did little good for lack of capacity, and little harm from lack of responsibility. His father died in 1748, and shortly after, upon the death of his mother, he inherited one-third of the property, including the Purchase St. house and the brewery. This fair estate was gradually dissipated, and Adams found himself embarrassed by obligations which he could not meet. In 1758 an attempt was made to serve a sheriff's attachment on the Purchase St. house for the benefit of the creditors of the Land Bank, dissolved by Act of Parliament in 1741 (*14 George II, ch. 37*), of which the elder Adams had been one of the principal stockholders. The action was successfully resisted (Wells, I, 26–27); but meantime, as tax collector from 1756 to 1764, Adams fell into arrears in his collections until he was obligated to the Town of Boston to the extent of about £8,000 for back taxes. During these years he was twice married: in 1749 to Elizabeth Checkley, who died in 1757, leaving two children, and in 1764 to Elizabeth Wells. In the latter year, the year of the Sugar Act and the beginning of

the quarrel with Great Britain, Adams was forty-two years old, in debt, living in the run-down Purchase St. house, his family often dependent for food and clothes upon the strict economies of his wife, or the casual gifts of neighbors.

Unable to manage his own affairs, Adams had already shown some talent for managing local politics. According to Wells (I, 15–16), he helped in 1747 to found a political club, dubbed by its opponents the "Whipping Post Club"; and he was probably one of the contributors to the *Independent Advertiser* which the club established in 1748 (Isaiah Thomas, *History of Printing in America,* 1810, II, 235). At least as early as 1763 he was a member of the influential "Caucus Club," which, according to John Adams, "meets . . . in the garret of Tom Dawes. . . . There they smoke tobacco . . . drink flip, I suppose, . . . choose a moderator, who puts questions to the vote regularly; and selectmen, assessors, . . . and representatives, are regularly chosen before they are chosen in the town" (*Works of John Adams,* II, 144). By 1764 Adams's influence in local politics must have been considerable, and his ability as a writer well known, since in that year he was given the task of drafting the instructions from the Town of Boston to its representatives (Cushing, *Writings of Samuel Adams,* I, 1). His effective career really began, however, with the year 1764; for it was the quarrel with Great Britain that first offered him both an adequate opportunity for the exercise of his political talents and an adequate excuse for neglecting the private business for which he had neither inclination nor capacity.

After 1764 Adams devoted even less time than formerly to making a living. He is a "universal good character," said his cousin, John Adams, "unless it should be admitted that he is too attentive to the public, and not enough to himself and his family" (*Works of John Adams,* II, 164). He told John Adams that "he never looked forward in his life; never planned, laid a scheme, or formed a design for laying up anything for himself or others after him" (*Ibid.,* p. 238). About the time of the first Continental Congress (1774) one unknown friend built him a new barn, another repaired his house; others fitted him out for his journey to Philadelphia with a new suit, new wig, new shoes, new silk hose; and one man "modestly enquir'd of him whether his finances want rather low than otherways. He reply'd it was true that was the case, but he was very indifferent about these matters, so that his *poor* abilities was of any service to the publick; upon which the Gentleman oblig'd him to accept of a purse containing about 15 or 20 Johannes" (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* VIII, 340). To a man who could receive so much for his services to the public and retain his self-respect, it was essential that the public business should be always pressing and of vital importance. Temperament and circumstances combined to give Samuel Adams but one occupation—the public business; temperament and circumstances combined to furnish him with a passionate and unquestioned faith in the virtue of the cause he served. This is perhaps the principal key to the quality and the success of all his labors.

Adams was associated with the popular party which for some years before 1764 had been opposed to that small group of wealthy, interrelated, and socially exclusive families that virtually governed the province. Of this group the outstanding figure was Thomas Hutchinson [*q.v.*], lieutenant-governor, member of the Council, and chief justice. Adams had personal reasons for disliking Hutchinson, because of the latter's part in getting the Land Bank dissolved, and because he regarded Adams as having "made defalcation" in failing to collect the taxes (so Hutchinson refers to Adams in his *History of Massachusetts Bay,* III, 294–95). Until 1764 the popular party had made but little headway against the "aristocracy"; but Adams and his friends seized upon the issue raised by the Sugar Act and the Stamp Act as admirably calculated to discredit them. Hutchinson was opposed to both the Sugar Act and the Stamp Act, it is true; but he regarded them as unwise merely, never as unconstitutional, and he was especially opposed to the radical scheme of resisting the application of the Stamp Act by "doing business as usual without stamps." The radicals therefore denounced the Hutchinsonian conservatives as "enemies of liberty" who secretly sympathized with British measures of oppression. Special odium fell upon Hutchinson, not only because of his resistance to the radical program, but also because his brother-in-law, Andrew Oliver, had accepted the office of stamp distributor. During the riots of 1765 Oliver was burned in effigy, and Hutchinson's town house was gutted by the mob.

Adams never openly countenanced violence, but he was a leading influence in turning popular hatred against the conservatives. In 1765 he again wrote the instructions for the "Boston Seat" (*Writings,* I, 7). On Sept. 27 he was elected to fill the vacancy in the House occasioned by the death of Oxenbridge Thatcher; and as a member of the House he prepared the "Answer...to the Governor's Speech" and the "Resolutions of the House" setting forth its theory of American rights (*Ibid.,* pp. 13, 23). Entrenched

in the Caucus Club and the "Sons of Liberty," Adams and his colleagues made political capital out of the popular hatred of the conservatives, with the result that in 1766 the radicals elected a majority of the House of Representatives and excluded from the Council five prominent conservatives, including Hutchinson and his relatives, Andrew and Peter Oliver. Adams himself was reëlected in 1766, and continuously thereafter until 1774, serving also during those years as clerk of the House. Thus from 1766 the General Court was largely controlled by the radical party, and of this party Samuel Adams rapidly rose to be the outstanding leader. Under cover of "restricting the executive power," he used his influence in the House and out of it to make the position of Gov. Bernard untenable, and when Bernard was recalled in 1769 he directed his hostility to Lieutenant-Governor Hutchinson (*Ibid.*, pp. 114 ff.). He directed the opposition to the Townshend Acts (*Ibid.*, pp. 134 ff.), helped to organize the Non-Importation Association of 1768, drafted the famous "Circular Letter" to the assemblies of the other provinces (*Ibid.*, p. 184) and that for the "Convention" of the patriot party held in Boston in 1768. Above all he kept up a running fire of opposition to the Commissioners of the Customs sent to Boston to collect the Townshend duties, and was probably more influential than any other person in stirring up the popular hatred of the British troops which ended in the Boston Massacre of 1770 (*Writings*, I, 248, ff.; Hosmer, *Adams*, pp. 109, 160 ff.)

Adams's influence was due, not only to his unrivalled skill as a local politician, but also to his skill as a polemical writer. As clerk of the House, he drafted most of the official papers of that body. He also wrote many letters on his own account to prominent persons in England and America, and contributed to the *Boston Gazette* and other journals numerous articles signed, according to the custom of the time, "Candidus," "Vindex," "Poplicola," etc. (*Writings*, I, *passim*). While it has been asserted that Adams aimed at separation from Great Britain as early as 1768 (Wells, I, 207; Hosmer, *Adams*, p. 119), there is no clear evidence in his contemporary writings that such was the case. But as early as 1765 he formulated the basic premises from which could easily be deduced the conclusions which Jefferson reached in the Declaration of Independence. "The leading principles of the British Constitution have their foundation in the Laws of Nature and universal Reason. Hence . . . British Rights are in great measure, unalienably, the Rights of the colonists, and of all Men else" (*Writings*, I, 64). Since the British Constitution accorded Englishmen the right of being taxed only by representatives of their own choosing, the Stamp Act was unconstitutional, inasmuch as the colonists were not, and in the nature of the case could not well be, represented in the British Parliament. In 1768 Adams went a step farther by maintaining that the colonial legislatures were "subordinate" but not "subject" to Parliament. (1) The British Constitution, like the constitution of all free peoples, is "fixed in the law of Nature and of God"; (2) The British Constitution provides for a "supreme," in the sense of a supervising, legislature (Parliament), and many "subordinate," in the sense of local, legislatures (colonial assemblies); (3) None of these legislatures, since they all derive their authority from the Constitution, can change the Constitution without "destroying their own foundations"; (4) Among the powers conferred by the Constitution upon the subordinate legislatures is that of guaranteeing the natural and constitutional rights of Americans (*Ibid.*, pp. 134, 150, 156, 161, 175, 185, 190). The theory is important, not only because its argumentative ingenuity (much needed at the time) gave Adams an intercolonial reputation, but because the underlying conception of many legislatures limited by a "fixed" constitution was later applied to the federal system of the United States.

For two years following the repeal of the major part of the Townshend duties (Apr. 7, 1770, *10 George III, ch. 17*), the controversy with Great Britain died down, and Adams's popularity and influence declined. The "Merchants" (conservative wing of the Patriot party) gladly abandoned the Non-Importation Association in its extreme form. Hancock, irritated by the rumor that he had been "led by the nose," quarrelled with Adams and devoted himself to commercial ventures. John Adams, incurring some unpopularity for having defended the soldiers implicated in the Massacre, retired in disgust from politics. When Hutchinson succeeded Bernard as governor in March 1771 the trend of opinion was distinctively conservative, and in November 1772 Adams himself was elected to the House by a much smaller vote than usual. Yet it was during these years of declining interest that Adams made what was perhaps his chief contribution to the Revolution by keeping the dying controversy alive. Finding the House less amenable than formerly, he turned to the press, contributing some forty articles to the Boston newspapers, in which he made a grievance of the facts that the General Court had been removed from Boston to Cambridge, that the judges held office by independent tenure, that Hutchinson received his

salary from the crown instead of the General Court. But the chief significance of Adams's writings in these years is not the matter but the manner. He wrote with concentrated bitterness, in the manner of a Jeremiah denouncing the sinister aims and wicked conduct of those in high places, warning the people of the concealed conspiracy intended to deprive them of their liberty, and repeatedly pointing out that the chief danger was in thinking that there was no danger. In the years when most people were disposed to think their liberties secure, it was the supreme rôle of Samuel Adams to proclaim that they were by insidious arts being made slaves unaware (*Writings,* II, *passim.* See especially pp. 172, 198, 245, 249, 250, 266, 270, 273, 287, 308).

Not content with warning the people against the approach of tyranny, Adams set about constructing an organization for resisting it. In November 1770 the House had appointed a committee, of which Adams was a member, to correspond with the similar committees in other colonies (Wells, I, 373). Although this committee was once renewed, in June 1771 (*Ibid.,* p. 406), nothing effective came of the project until it was revived by the Virginia House of Burgesses in 1773. But in 1772 Adams initiated what may be regarded as the origin of the revolutionary government in Massachusetts. On Nov. 2, 1772, the Boston Town Meeting, on Adams's motion, appointed "a committee of correspondence . . . to state the rights of the Colonists and of this Province in particular, as men, as Christians, and as Subjects; and to communicate the same to the several towns and to the world" (*Ibid.,* p. 496). On Nov. 20 the committee reported to the Town a declaration of rights, a list of grievances, and a letter of correspondence addressed to the several towns. As a member of the committee, Adams drafted the declaration of rights (*Writings,* II, 350). Meantime, by private correspondence, he had prepared the towns for the coming project, and now urged them to follow the lead of Boston in appointing committees (*Ibid.,* pp. 340, 346, 348).

Upon the publication of the Boston declaration of rights, in which Adams laid greater stress than formerly on natural rights and affirmed with less qualification America's legislative independence of Parliament, Gov. Hutchinson felt it necessary to take part in the controversy. He was alarmed at the apparently reviving influence of Adams, whom he regarded as the chief source of trouble. In 1771 he said of Adams: "I doubt whether there is a greater incendiary in the King's dominion or a man of greater malignity of heart" (Hosmer, *Hutchinson,* p. 215). He had already procured writers to answer Adams's articles in the newspapers (*Ibid.,* p. 224). The "correspondence Committees" he regarded as "glaringly unconstitutional," and the Boston declaration of rights as too mistaken in point of law to be allowed to pass without correction. Accordingly, on Jan. 6, 1773, the Governor presented to the General Court a carefully articulated argument on the thesis that no line could be drawn "between the supreme authority of Parliament and the total independence of the colonies" (*Ibid.,* pp. 363, 367). To this address the House made an elaborate reply which was probably in large part the work of Samuel and John Adams in collaboration (for the authorship of this paper, see Wells, II, 31 ff.; *Works of John Adams,* II, 310; Frothingham, *Joseph Warren,* p. 223; Hutchinson, *History,* III, 374). Hutchinson's address may have had some effect in temporarily checking the formation of the correspondence committees, as he himself thought (*Massachusetts Archives,* XXVII, 451); but whatever influence the Governor may have had was shortly lost by the publication of the "Hutchinson Letters."

Of all the "enemies of liberty" Adams had long regarded Hutchinson as the chief; had long believed that his private letters to friends in England would if known prove his hostility to the American cause. Fortunately for Adams, six letters, written by Hutchinson in 1768–69 to some one in England, came "by a singular accident" (R. H. Lee, *Life of Arthur Lee,* 1829, I, 233; P. O. Hutchinson, *Diary and Letters of Thomas Hutchinson,* I, 81 ff.; Hosmer, *Hutchinson,* p. 273) into the possession of Benjamin Franklin, and were by him transmitted to Cushing, Speaker of the Massachusetts House, with the statement that they might be shown to proper persons, but were to be neither copied nor printed. They were shown to Samuel Adams, John Adams, Hawley, and Hancock. On June 2, 1773, Samuel Adams read the letters to the House in secret session, first pledging the members to observe the conditions imposed by Franklin. Hutchinson, learning that letters of his, alleged to have been written with a design to "subvert the constitution," were in possession of the House, demanded to see them. The House gave the governor the dates of the letters, asking him to furnish copies of letters written by him on those dates (Hutchinson, *History,* III, 401–2). Hutchinson refused to furnish the copies, whereupon the House appointed a committee to consider means by which it could become honorably possessed of the letters; and on June 10 Hawley for the committee reported "that Mr. Adams had acquainted them that, having conversed with the gentleman from

whom he received the letters, he is authorized to inform the House that the said gentleman consents (as he finds that copies of said letters are already abroad, and have been publicly read) that the House should be fully possessed of them to print, copy, or make whatever use of them they please" (Wells, II, 76). The letters were then printed and circulated to the committees of correspondence (for the letters, see Hosmer, *Hutchinson,* p. 429). The letters were conservative in tone, and hostile to the radical fashion, but they revealed nothing of Hutchinson's views not already well known. Nevertheless, Hutchinson said, "had they been Chevy Chase, the leaders would have made them (the people) *believe* it full of evil and treason" (*Ibid.,* p. 278).

Meantime, on May 10, Parliament passed Lord North's Tea Act (*13 George III, ch. 44*). The traditional account is that Adams, perceiving the importance of the Tea Act, began at once to work for a continental congress (Wells, II, 81; Hosmer, *Adams,* p. 237). The Virginia House of Burgesses had already (Mar. 12) revived Adams's own former scheme for intercolonial committees. Adams welcomed the proposal (*Writings,* III, 25), and on May 28, on Adams's motion, the Massachusetts House responded by appointing a committee of fifteen of which Adams was a member (Wells, II, 71). An article in the *Boston Gazette* of Sept. 27, signed "Observation" and attributed by Wells to Adams, proposed that "a congress of American States be assembled as soon as possible; draw up a Bill of Rights; . . . choose an ambassador to reside at the British court to act for the united colonies; appoint where the congress shall annually meet," etc. (*Ibid.,* p. 90). Cushing did not include this article in Adams's collected works; and aside from this article there is little evidence that Adams was seriously interested in a continental congress at this time. Writing to Arthur Lee Apr. 9, 1773, he said: "Should the Correspondence proposed by Virginia produce a Congress; and that an *Assembly of States,* it would require the Head of a very able Minister to treat with so respectable a Body. This is perhaps a mere fiction in the mind of a Political Enthusiast" (*Writings,* III, 21). An ironical aside, rather than a serious proposal? If Adams did indeed appreciate the importance of the Tea Act and seriously desire a continental congress before October 1773, it is difficult to explain his inactivity as a member of the Massachusetts Committee of Correspondence appointed May 28. That committee did nothing until June 28, when it appointed a sub-committee of five, with Adams as chairman, to draft a circular letter to the various provinces. The letter was not reported until Oct. 20, and, as finally adopted the day following, it was a brief communication, mentioning the Tea Act only casually, making no suggestion for a congress (*Writings,* III, 62, 63, note).

By November, at all events, Adams was aware that the arrival of the tea ships might be used to precipitate a crisis. On Nov. 2, the North End Caucus, with the Boston Committee of Correspondence present by request, voted "that the tea shipped by the East India Company shall not be landed" (Frothingham, *Life of Warren,* p. 240). On Nov. 3, a committee of the Sons of Liberty, Adams being one, requested the consignees of the tea to resign (*Diary of John Rowe,* pp. 252–53). Failing to obtain their resignation, a Boston town meeting, Nov. 5, adopted resolutions, drafted by Adams, declaring all who aided in landing or selling the tea to be "enemies of America" (*Writings,* III, 69). On Nov. 29, the day following the arrival of the first of the tea ships (the *Dartmouth*), a mass meeting (not a legal Town Meeting, but a so-called "Body Meeting") assembled in Faneuil Hall and, on Adams's motion, resolved that the tea "shall be returned to the place from which it came at all events" (Wells, II, 111, quoting *Boston Gazette,* Dec. 6, 1773). Adams gives the number assembled at 5,000 (*Writings,* III, 74). John Rowe says 1,000 (*Diary,* p. 256). On Nov. 30 the body met again and appointed a directing committee, of which Adams was one (*Diary of John Rowe,* p. 256), and undoubtedly the leading influence. During the next two weeks there were frequent Body Meetings, excitement ran high, and there was some rioting. Adams and his associates endeavored to force the ships to return with the tea; and arrangements had been made, just how is not known (see Wells, II, 124–25; Hosmer, *Adams,* p. 245), to destroy the tea in case an attempt should be made to land it. On Dec. 16, the day on which the customs laws require the cargo of the *Dartmouth* to be either entered or confiscated, Adams presided at a mass meeting which assembled at ten o'clock and remained in session until about six in the evening, when Rotch arrived saying that Gov. Hutchinson still refused the clearance which would permit the ships to return to England. Adams then arose and said: "This meeting can do nothing more to save the country." It was doubtless a signal agreed upon, since the "Mohawks" present immediately repaired to the wharf and threw the tea into the harbor (Wells, II, 122, quoting *Boston Gazette,* Dec. 20, 1773; for Adams's account, see *Writings,* III, 75).

The tea episode brought on that crisis which Adams had helped to make inevitable by thinking it so. "If the British administration and government," he wrote, "do not return to the principles of moderation and equity, the evil which they profess to aim at preventing . . . will the sooner be brought to pass, viz.:—*the entire separation and independence of the colonies*" (*Writings,* III, 100). When the news of the Coercive Acts arrived, Adams took the lead in organizing resistance. On May 13 a Boston town meeting, with Adams as moderator, approved of the adoption of strict non-intercourse measures, and instructed Adams to transmit the vote to the "sister colonies," which he did with a request that they adopt similar measures (Wells, II, 162; *Writings,* III, 109). Personally, he thought an intercolonial congress could "not be had speedily enough to answer for the present emergency" (*Ibid.,* p. 115). On June 5 the Boston Committee adopted a "Solemn League and Covenant," effective Oct. 1, for the suspension of commercial intercourse with Great Britain, which was circulated by the correspondence committees and, in spite of opposition from the "Merchants," was generally subscribed to (Wells, II, 172, 183; Peter Force, *American Archives,* 4th series, I, 397). Meantime, learning that other colonies were unwilling to adopt non-intercourse measures except in concert (see letter from New York, May 23, *Ibid.,* p. 297), Adams concluded that a congress was an "absolute necessity" (*Writings,* III, 126). On June 17, in the House of Representatives, with the door locked to prevent Gage from dissolving the General Court, Adams moved to appoint delegates to the congress "to deliberate and determine upon all measures." With only twelve dissenting voices, five delegates, Adams being one, were chosen, whereupon the door was unlocked and the last General Court of Massachusetts Bay was dissolved (Wells, II, 176).

Before leaving for Philadelphia, Adams was active in organizing the convention which, by adopting the famous "Suffolk Resolves" on Sept. 9, virtually placed Massachusetts in a state of rebellion (*Ibid.,* pp. 206, 226–28). At Philadelphia the Massachusetts delegates, suspected of too great rashness, shrewdly kept in the background (*Works of John Adams,* II, 382, note) and Adams moved that Duché, an Episcopal clergyman of Philadelphia, be asked to offer the opening prayers (*Ibid.,* p. 369). He must certainly have used his influence to commit the Congress to the three crucial measures—approval of the Suffolk Resolves, repudiating of Galloway's Plan, and adoption of the Association. Galloway, at least, thought Adams played a decisive part (*Historical and Political Reflections on the Rise and Progress of the American Rebellion,* 1780, pp. 66–67). Elected to the second Congress, and avoiding arrest by the British troops sent to Lexington, Adams returned to Philadelphia in May 1775. He favored immediate independence, proposed (January 1776) a confederation of such colonies as were ready for independence, supported the resolution for the formation of independent state governments, and voted for and signed the Declaration of Independence (Wells, II, 296, 358, 432).

As Adams's effective career began only with the opening of the quarrel with Great Britain, so it may be said to have ended with the final breach. Essentially a revolutionary agitator, he possessed little talent as a constructive statesman. Nevertheless, for twenty-five years of declining popularity and influence he played his minor rôle without blemish if without distinction. He served in Congress until 1781, a member of many committees, notably the committee to draft the Articles of Confederation (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* ed. by W. C. Ford, 1906, V, 433). He seconded John Adams's speech in behalf of Washington as commander-in-chief (*Works of John Adams,* II, 417); favored giving him dictatorial powers (Wells, II, 458); and while often impatient with the General's Fabian tactics, he was not, as charged by Hancock, implicated in the Conway Cabal (*Ibid.,* pp. 505 ff.). Always suspicious of the concentration of power, he opposed the creation of the (undoubtedly needed) executive departments of Finance, War, and Foreign Affairs (*Ibid.,* III, 127 ff.).

In April 1781 Adams returned to Boston, where he lived in "honorable poverty" until his death. In his own state he never recovered his former influence. He was a delegate to the convention which drafted the Massachusetts Constitution (1779–80). He drafted the "Address of the Convention . . . to their Constituents"—a document which best expresses his mature reflections on government (*Ibid.,* pp. 80–97). Under the new government, Adams served as senator and member of the Council. In 1788 he was defeated for Congress by Fisher Ames; and the unrivalled popularity of Hancock, which astonished as much as it irritated him, precluded his being elected governor during Hancock's lifetime. Elected lieutenant-governor (1789–93), he became governor upon Hancock's death, and was subsequently elected to the office (1794–97). In spite of his popular sympathies, Adams was unable to appreciate the economic grievances which led to Shays's rebellion, and vigorously aided the suppression of that movement. His ingrained sus-

picion of Great Britain led him to sympathize with the "Jacobin" movement, and to oppose Jay's Treaty. As a member of the Convention called in 1788 to ratify the Federal Constitution, he was at first opposed to that instrument. "As I enter the building I stumble on the threshold. I meet with a National Government, instead of a Federal Union of Sovereign States" (*Writings,* IV, 324). But in the end he gave his support, or was by an ingenious maneuver (Wells, III, 260), induced to give his support to the Constitution, with proposed amendments (*Ibid.,* pp. 248 ff.)

Adams died Oct. 2, 1803. On the following day William Bentley wrote in his diary: "Samuel Adams persevered through life in his Republican principles without any conformity to parties, influence or times. He was feared by his enemies, but too secret to be loved by his friends. He did not put confidence in them, while he was of importance to them. . . . He preserved the severity of Cato in his manners, and the dogmatism of a priest in his religious observances" (*Diary of William Bentley,* III, 49).

[The chief sources of information about Samuel Adams are the following: *The Writings of Samuel Adams,* ed. by H. A. Cushing, 4 vols. (1904–8); *The Life and Public Services of Samuel Adams . . .,* by Wm. V. Wells, 3 vols. (1865); *Samuel Adams* (American Statesmen Series), by James K. Hosmer (1885). Wells was a grandson of Adams. His work is highly laudatory, but based on careful and full research. He attributed to Adams many unsigned articles in newspapers which Cushing rejected. Hosmer follows Wells in the main, but he is more discriminating, and would have been still more so if he had written this work after his life of Hutchinson. *Samuel Adams, Promoter of the American Revolution,* by Ralph Volney Harlow (1923) is a "Freudian" interpretation which aims to be realistic, but ends by being as biased against Adams as Wells is in favor of him; it is not always accurate in detail. Aside from the above, the most useful works are: vol. II of *The Works of John Adams,* ed. by C. F. Adams (1850–56); Hosmer's *Life of Thomas Hutchinson* (1896); vol. III of Hutchinson's *Hist. of the Province of Mass. Bay* (1828); Richard Frothingham, *Life and Times of Joseph Warren* (1865); Wm. Tudor, *Life of James Otis* (1823); M. C. Tyler, *Lit. Hist. of the Am. Rev.* (1897).] C. L. B.

ADAMS, WILLIAM (Jan. 25, 1807–Aug. 31, 1880), Presbyterian clergyman, was the son of John Adams and Elizabeth Ripley. On his father's side he was descended from Henry Adams of Braintree, and on his mother's from William Bradford of Plymouth. He was born in Colchester, Conn., where his father was preceptor of Bacon Academy, but in 1810, on the appointment of the latter to the principalship of Phillips Academy, he was taken to Andover, Mass. He was a precocious child, beginning the study of Latin at six. To earn money for his college expenses he taught in a private school in Norwich, Conn., where he succeeded admirably in spite of his extreme youth. Entering the sophomore class of Yale College in December 1824, he graduated in 1827, first in classical scholarship. Returning to Andover, while a student in the Theological Seminary where he graduated in 1830, he assisted his father in teaching. He was ordained and installed pastor of the Congregational church in Brighton (now a part of Boston) on Feb. 2, 1831. In July 1831 he married Susan P. Magoun of Medford, Mass. In 1834 he resigned his pastorate owing to the illness of his wife, who died on May 22. He was installed pastor of the Central Presbyterian Church, Broome St., New York, on Nov. 13. In August 1835 he married Martha B. Magoun, a sister of his first wife. In 1836 he was one of the group who founded Union Theological Seminary. In 1853 the major portion of his congregation established the Madison Square Presbyterian Church, taking their pastor with them. Having declined in 1840 and 1871 offers of the presidency of Union Theological Seminary, carrying with it the chair of sacred rhetoric, he accepted the position in 1874. Adams's last six years, spent at Union, constituted the most useful period of his life. He was influential in securing large endowments for the seminary, and the strength and independence of this institution were largely the result of his work (A. P. Stokes, *Memorials of Eminent Yale Men,* 1914, I, 105). In the interest of Presbyterian unity he favored the granting to the General Assembly a veto power in the appointment of professors, but was opposed to any greater measure of ecclesiastical control.

Adams is often rated as the leading Presbyterian clergyman of his time. At the division of that church in 1837, he became a leader of the New School party, being moderator of its General Assembly which met in Washington in 1852. He was also a foremost advocate of reunion, being chairman of the New School Committee of Conference from 1866 till the union was consummated in 1870. He was an eminent leader in the Evangelical Alliance, and his welcome to the representatives of foreign Protestantism at the Alliance meeting of 1873 is counted one of the ablest addresses of his life. He was a corporate member of the American Board of Foreign Missions with which the New School Presbyterians were largely affiliated, was president of the Presbyterian Foreign Board after the reunion, and was active in many other religious and philanthropic organizations. In 1871 he visited Russia at his own expense to plead the cause of the Protestant dissenters in the Baltic provinces. An orthodox Evangelical according to the theological standards of his day, he was nevertheless broad-minded and truly liberal.

Although an accurate scholar, he had little taste

for authorship. His most characteristic book is *Thanksgiving. Memories of the Day: Helps to the Habit* (1867). Others are *The Three Gardens, Eden, Gethsemane, and Paradise* (1856) and *Conversations of Jesus Christ with Representative Men* (1868). In addition he published many single addresses and sermons.

[*Obit. Record of the Grads. of Yale Coll., Deceased from June, 1880 to June 1881; New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1894; A. N. Adams, *A Geneal. Hist. of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass., and His Descendants* (1898). Adams's connection with Union Seminary is set forth in *The Union Theol. Sem. in the City of N.Y.: Hist. and Biog. Sketches of the First Fifty Years* (1889), by G. L. Prentiss. A sketch of his life appeared in the *N.Y. Observer* Sept. 2, 1880, and a funeral address by Dr. Roswell D. Hitchcock was published in the *Evangelist*, Sept. 9, 1880. There is an oil portrait of him in the possession of Union Theol. Sem.] F.T.P.

ADAMS, WILLIAM LYSANDER (Feb. 5, 1821–Apr. 26, 1906), Campbellite preacher, editor, physician, connected on the paternal side with the Adams family of Massachusetts, on the maternal with the Allens of Vermont, was born of Vermont parents, at Painesville, Ohio. His frontier-loving parents kept on moving, and the boy received his early education at Galesburg, Ill. His college training was secured at Bethany, W.Va. Under Alexander Campbell's instruction he became a Campbellite and planned to preach. Tradition says he excelled in the classics and in Hebrew. In 1848 he married Frances O. Goodell at Galesburg, Ill., went to Oregon, bought a farm, and for about seven years divided his time between farming and teaching school, doing much preaching on the side and also writing for the newspapers. One of Adams's contributions, "A Melodrame entitled 'Treason, Stratagems, and Spoils,' in five acts, by 'Breakspear,'" which was published in the Portland *Oregonian* in February and March 1852, and also in a thirty-two page pamphlet, constitutes his best title to distinction as literary artist and political satirist. In 1855 he bought the defunct *Spectator* at Oregon City and began the publication of the *Oregon City Argus*, of which he continued as editor till his appointment by Lincoln to be collector of customs at the port of Astoria (date of confirmation July 27, 1861). In 1873 he studied medicine at Philadelphia, afterwards practicing first in Portland and then for many years in connection with a sanitarium established by him at Hood River, Ore., where he died in 1906. To the last generation he was known as "Doctor Adams," to an earlier one as either "Parson Adams" or "Editor Adams." His intellectual brilliancy was manifested in all of these departments but his most permanent results were obtained as political editor and stump speaker. In these capacities he ranked among the leading public men of Oregon, and he is generally placed first among the founders of the Republican party in that state.

Adams's bitterest fight was against the so-called "Salem Clique" of which for some years Federal Judge O. C. Pratt was local boss and Asahel Bush, editor of the *Salem Statesman*, the foremost political writer and policy molder. The "Melodrame" mentioned above was a merciless caricature of the acts, plans, and supposed plots of that clique. The author imputes to them the treasonable design of detaching Oregon territory from the United States, and charges a secret purpose to adopt Mormonism, to conquer California, and to make Brigham Young king over a Pacific empire. Some of his avowed suspicions have hardly the usual partisan basis of fact or assumed fact; yet, by shrewd inference and innuendo he imparts to them a certain plausibility. As Republican editor he was more feared and more hated than any man in his day in Oregon, —"dreaded by his foes and not greatly beloved by his friends" (H. W. Scott, *History of the Oregon Country*, 1924, V, 292).

[The chief source of Adams's editorial career is the file of the *Argus* in possession of the Ore. Hist. Soc. The Society also has the only known original copy of the pamphlet edition of "Treason, Stratagems, and Spoils." A biographical sketch, approved by Adams, was published by Geo. H. Hines in the *Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, III, 356–58. There is also some biographical information in *An Illustrated Hist. of the State of Ore.* (1893).] J.S.

ADAMS, WILLIAM TAYLOR (July 30, 1822–Mar. 27, 1897), writer of juvenile stories under the name "Oliver Optic," the son of Capt. Laban Adams and Catherine (Johnson) Adams, and a descendant of Henry Adams of Braintree, was born in Bellingham, Mass. His father was proprietor of the Lamb Tavern, Boston. In 1838 the family moved to a farm in West Roxbury. Here the boy found it difficult to take time from farm work to keep up his schooling. Winter nights he studied late in a room so cold that he could hardly keep his blood in circulation and turned the pages with a mittened hand. But he succeeded in leading his classes in almost every subject, especially composition. His parents were so proud of his ability that they managed to have him continue his studies under a private tutor, for two years after leaving school. Then followed a period of travel through the Northern and Southern states during which he took voluminous notes, which later stood him in good stead. After a brief experience in helping his father manage the first Adams House, on the site of the Lamb Tavern, he turned to teaching. In 1846 he mar-

ried Sarah Jenkins of Dorchester, by whom he had two daughters. He continued to teach in the public schools of Boston for twenty years, resigning in 1865 to devote himself to writing. For fourteen years he served as a member of the school committee of Dorchester; and one year, 1869, he was a member of the state legislature, but declined a renomination.

He had already written for periodicals, chiefly without pay; but his first book (1853) was a story, *Hatchie, the Guardian Slave; or the Heir of Bellevue.* This brought him $37.50. His next venture, however, *Indoors and Out* (1855), a collection of stories, was more sucessful; and he then attempted a book for boys, *The Boat Club* (1855), which proved so popular that he followed it with five more in the *Boat Club* series. The initial volume, *The Boat Club,* ran through sixty editions. Other series followed fast: *Great Western, Lake Shore, Onward and Upward, Yacht Club, Riverdale Story Books, Woodville Stories,* etc. He made about twenty visits not only to all parts of Europe but to Asia and Africa as well. These furnished material for the *Young America Abroad* and *All Over the World* series, the latter comprising twelve volumes. The Civil War bore fruit in many stories grouped under *Army and Navy* and *Blue and Gray* series, besides a biography of Grant. Nothing, short of death, could stop his writing. The sum of all his output totaled 126 books, of which far over a million copies have been sold. As if these were not enough, he wrote about a thousand short tales for periodicals, edited at various times *The Student and Schoolmate, Oliver Optic's Magazine,* and *Our Little Ones.* He was most successful with the magazine that bore his pen name.

Although he is known as "Oliver Optic," it was not his only pseudonym. He took the name from a character in a play that appeared in Boston, "Doctor Optic," adding "Oliver." But he wrote love stories as "Irving Brown," travel sketches as "Clingham Hunter, M.D.," and he sometimes signed himself "Old Stager." He never wrote over his own name. He was most methodical, keeping "plot" books and other note-books crammed with incidents, anecdotes, and observations. He wrote regularly five hours a day. He had a real gift for story telling and his familiarity with boats, farming, and practical mechanics, to which must be added a genial personality that won friends among boys in every walk of life, gave him a wide range of knowledge. At first the public libraries refused his books because his heroes accomplished too many improbable feats. That, however, was no defect to his boy readers, whom he counted by the million. His motto in writing was, "First God, then Country, then Friends." He died at his home in Dorchester (Boston).

[Obituaries in *N.Y. Evening Post, N.Y. Herald,* and *N.Y. Press,* Mar. 27 and 28, 1897; F. A. Munsey, *Munsey's Mag.,* Oct. 1892; Allan Eric, *Midland Mo.,* Dec. 1897.]

W.O.S.

ADAMS, WILLIAM WIRT (Mar. 22, 1819–May 1, 1888), Confederate soldier, a son of Judge George Adams and Anna (Weissiger) Adams, was born at Frankfort, Ky. Judge Adams was an intimate friend and correspondent of Henry Clay. In 1825 he moved from Kentucky and located at Natchez, Miss.; from 1836 to 1839 he was judge of the United States court for Mississippi. William Wirt Adams was educated at Bardstown, Ky. On his return from college in 1839, he enlisted as a private in Col. Burleson's command for service to the Republic of Texas and soon afterwards was made adjutant of the regiment and was in the campaign against the Indians in northeast Texas. In the autumn of 1839 he returned to Mississippi. In 1850 he was married to Sallie Huger Mayrant at Jackson, Miss., and engaged in planting and banking at Jackson and Vicksburg. From 1850 to 1861 he was occupied in a successful business career and served two sessions in 1858 and 1860 as a member of the Mississippi legislature. When Mississippi withdrew from the Union in 1861, he was appointed commissioner from Mississippi to Louisiana and assisted in securing the withdrawal of that state from the Union. In February 1861, upon the formation of the Confederate States of America at Montgomery, Ala., he was called to Montgomery by President Jefferson Davis and offered the cabinet position of postmaster general, which he felt compelled to decline. As soon as he had settled his banking interests, he raised a cavalry regiment and enlisted it in the Confederate Army as the 1st Mississippi Cavalry. It was also officially known as Wirt Adams's Regiment of Cavalry. The regiment was organized at Memphis, in August 1861. The command was ordered to Columbus, Ky., in September, and in October to the headquarters of Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston at Bowling Green. The regiment was the rear-guard in the retreat from Kentucky to Nashville and Corinth. At the battle of Shiloh Adams's regiment was stationed upon the extreme right, near Greer's Ford of the Tennessee River, and accompanied the infantry line into battle. During the Corinth campaign the regiment was on outpost duty. After the retreat to Tupelo four companies of the regiment had a spirited engagement with the enemy near Booneville, "charging, routing, and pursuing two miles a Federal regiment" under command of Maj. Phil Sheridan (*Mississippi,*

I, 32). Col. Adams with his own and Slemons's Arkansas regiment was at Iuka with Gen. Price, and near Burnsville captured a train-load of Federal troops sent out from Corinth. He was then ordered to Washington County, Miss., guarding the plantations and observing the movements against Vicksburg. When Sherman advanced against Jackson after the fall of Vicksburg, Adams, with his regiment and the 28th Mississippi Cavalry, harassed his advance, skirmishing all the way. He was commissioned brigadier-general in September 1863, and in November was assigned to the command of a brigade composed of his own regiment and Col. Logan's command. In February 1864, he was ordered to meet Sherman's advance on Meridian. When the end came he was operating with Gen. Forrest in north Alabama. Adams's brigade was surrendered near Ramsey Station, Sumpter County, Ala., May 4, 1865. His farewell address was delivered to his command May 6, 1865. His parole is dated Gainesville, Ala., May 12, 1865. After the war Gen. Adams resided at Vicksburg and later in Jackson. He was appointed state revenue agent in 1880, and resigned in 1885 to become postmaster at Jackson by appointment of President Cleveland. On May 1, 1888, in a street encounter with John Martin, a Jackson editor who had bitterly criticized Adams in his paper, both Adams and Martin were killed.

[The best sources of information concerning William Wirt Adams are: his papers in the possession of Mrs. Norvelle Adams Beard of Jackson, Miss.; a sketch in *Mississippi* (1907) ed. by Dunbar Rowland, I, 31–35: "Mil. Hist. of Miss." in the *Miss. Official and Statistical Reg. of 1908*, pp. 770–82. A good oil portrait of Adams hangs in the Miss. Hall of Fame in Jackson.]

D. R.

ADDICKS, JOHN EDWARD O'SULLIVAN (Nov. 21, 1841–Aug. 7, 1919), promoter, political adventurer, was born in Philadelphia, the son of John Edward and Margaretta (McLeod) Addicks. The father was a local politician of some prominence and for a time held the place of health officer of the port of Philadelphia. The son attended the public schools until he was fifteen and then went to work in a wholesale dry-goods house. At nineteen he entered the flour business of Levi Knowles, and two years later, on attaining his majority, was made a partner in the firm. His next venture was in real estate. The panic of 1873 left him bankrupt, but he soon regained a commercial footing. He married Laura Butcher of Philadelphia, and in 1877 moved to Claymont, Del. He first came to the general notice of the business world when he introduced Minnesota spring wheat to the farmers of the east. He soon turned to the then infant industry

of producing water gas for illuminating purposes, and though occasionally speculating in railroad stocks, devoted most of his time to the promotion of gas companies. He built gas works in Jersey City, Brooklyn, and Chicago, making large profits through the manipulation of contracts. In 1882 he was the prime mover in organizing what was known as the Chicago Gas Trust. Two years later he organized and became president of the Bay State Gas Company, and by his subsequent legerdemain with its securities, according to Thomas W. Lawson, he "made Boston look like the proverbial country gawk at circus time" (*Frenzied Finance*, 1905, p. 65). His activities in this field caused him to be known as "Gas Addicks" and the "Napoleon of Gas." He was also associated with Lawson in the promotion of the Amalgamated Copper Company. In 1892 he bought a majority interest and became president of the Brooklyn Gas Company. Six years earlier he had moved to Boston, deeding his Claymont house to his wife, who in turn deeded it, at his suggestion, to a Mrs. Ida Carr Wilson, later to figure prominently in the Addicks romance.

In Philadelphia Addicks had dabbled lightly in local politics. He was now to enter the national field, in a long and fiercely contested effort to be elected senator from Delaware. It is said that the first prompting in this direction came to him in New York City on a day in December 1888, just after his return from Europe, where he had made a million dollars by a coup in Siberian railroads. Reading in a morning newspaper that the Delaware legislature was deadlocked in a contest over a senatorship, he immediately summoned his Boston political agent, and on the latter's arrival they started together for Dover. On Jan. 1, 1889, conspicuously overdressed, he appeared with this agent and two or three other followers at the Hotel Richardson, Dover, and announced to the newspaper correspondents that he was a candidate for senator. Then began a campaign unique in American history. He established a residence at the house of Mrs. Wilson, and for seventeen years thereafter, at a cost believed to have reached $3,000,000, he strove by every means that he could employ to obtain a majority of the Delaware legislature. His first move was to win supporters for himself by paying the tax bills of citizens, and as no delinquent taxpayer in the state could then vote he soon had a following. In time he built up a formidable faction, known as the Union Republicans, in the Republican party, and several times he came near to success. In 1895 the joint ballot resulted in a tie; in 1899 he obtained a plurality, and at other times, unable to win for himself, he prevented an election. In the Fifty-fourth and

Fifty-sixth Congresses Delaware was represented by but one senator, and in the Fifty-seventh, was unrepresented. This spectacular campaign aroused deep interest throughout the country, and denunciation of Addicks became a hackneyed theme in the press. The end came in 1906. The Republicans, reunited and led by the du Ponts, had obtained a large majority in the legislature. The vote for senator in the two houses on June 12 was 36 for Col. Henry A. du Pont and 2 for Addicks, the 18 Democrats expressing no choice.

Financial disasters to Addicks followed almost immediately. The decline in the price of copper had wrecked his fortune, and his operations in gas were now to entangle him in costly litigation. In 1907, on the plea of stockholders who alleged fraud, George Wharton Pepper, later a senator from Pennsylvania, was appointed receiver for the Bay State Gas Company. About the same time a federal court awarded a judgment against Addicks for $4,000,000. He was soon hiding from subpœna and attachment servers. At one time he was found in a cheap tenement in Hoboken without light or heat. He escaped and was not again apprehended until 1913. Taken into custody, he was released on $2,000 bail, which he forfeited. Two years later he was again arrested. The last four years of his life are believed to have been spent in extreme poverty. He died in an apartment-house in New York City.

Addicks was married three times. His second wife was Rosalie Butcher, a sister of his first wife. In 1894 she sued him for divorce, naming Mrs. Wilson as co-respondent. Addicks contested this divorce, but, on a change in the character of the complaint, made no further opposition. The divorce was granted in 1896 and Addicks thereupon married Mrs. Wilson.

There is no evidence that Addicks had any of the qualities fitting one for the office of United States senator. "Coarse" and "common" were the terms usually applied to him, and no responsible witness has recorded anything greatly to his credit. His idea of a senatorship was evidently that of a commodity that could be bought in the open market and is well illustrated by the declaration he is credibly reported to have made at a dinner in Georgetown, Sussex County, after the sweeping Republican victory of 1894: "Well, boys, we've won! . . . I've bought it; I've paid for it, and I'm going to have it. It has cost me $140,000" (*Outlook*, Feb. 14, 1903).

[Information regarding Addicks is scattered through the newspapers and periodicals over a period of many years. The three articles by George Kennan, "Holding Up a State: The True Story of Addicks and Delaware," in the *Outlook* of Feb. 7, 14, and 21, 1903, are especially valuable. Obituaries in N. Y. *Sun*, *N.Y. Herald*, and *N.Y. Times* of Aug. 8, 1919, of which the first-named is the most copious in details, give much additional information.]

W.J.G.

ADEE, ALVEY AUGUSTUS (Nov. 27, 1842–July 5, 1924), diplomat, a New Yorker accidentally born in Astoria, as he put it, was the fifth and youngest child of Fleet Surgeon Augustus Adee, U.S.N., and Amelia Kinnaird Graham. His father belonged to a solid Westchester family with a Huguenot strain. His mother's father was David Graham, Irish patriot of Scotch affiliations, Pittsburgh preacher, and New York lawyer, whose interest in Robert Emmet occasioned his removal to this country. Among other accidents of Adee's life, two of the earliest had a profound influence upon his career. An attack of scarlet fever permanently impaired his hearing; and the death of his father in 1844, followed in 1864 by that of his mother, left him a competency. Thus he who received an honorary A.M. from Yale in 1888 never went to school or college, and at an age when most young men seek a livelihood he was able to continue his studies. He happened to be of those uncommon mortals who combine a talent for letters and languages with a taste for mathematics. He traveled abroad, became an accomplished linguist and a distinguished Shakespearean, contributed prose and verse to the press (*e.g.* "The Life-Magnet," in vol. VIII of Scribner's *Stories by American Authors*, 1885), and set out to be a civil engineer—under the tutelage of his uncle Charles Kinnaird Graham, surveyor of the port of New York. It was through another uncle, however, that he stumbled upon his true profession. A firm friend and conspicuous client of the criminal lawyer John Graham was Major-General D. E. Sickles, whom President Grant in 1869 made minister to Spain. And the not too happy warrior invited Adee to go with him as his private secretary.

The eight years he spent in Madrid, where the congenial secretary of legation he succeeded in 1870 chanced to be a young man named John Hay, laid the foundation of Adee's vast diplomatic experience. At five different times during this stormy period he acted as chargé d'affaires *ad interim*. He was not in charge when the *Virginius* affair threatened war in 1873 (*Foreign Relations of the United States*, 1874–76). He was, however, when Boss Tweed of New York, having escaped from the guard in whose company he was enjoying an airing out of Ludlow Street Jail, set sail from Cuba in 1876, under an assumed name, for Vigo. We then had no extradition treaty with Spain. But the chargé who spoke Spanish so well and steered so tactfully between revolutions had established a position for himself; and at his request the Spanish authorities made him a present of the mysterious passenger on the *Carmen*—who

was promptly returned to Ludlow Street on board an American frigate. The tactful chargé was the first to suggest the Extradition Convention and Protocol of 1877 (Malloy's *Treaties, Conventions . . . and Agreements between the United States and Other Powers,* II, 1665).

In August 1877 Adee handed over his legation to James Russell Lowell and returned to America. He had intended to retire to private life, for his strenuous years in Spain had told upon his health and he now contemplated the care-free life of a banker. Among the dispatches on every conceivable subject which he signed at the rate of one a day for every day he was in charge, those on currency and exchange prove that a Shakespearean may not be incapable of fathoming the mysteries of high finance. But Madrid was not the only place where he had established a reputation. His tact, his diligence, his dignified style, not to speak of his skill in apprehending fugitives from justice, had been noted by Secretary Hamilton Fish, who doubtless mentioned them to his successor W. M. Evarts. At any rate, Secretary Evarts offered Adee a "temporary" position in the Department of State, where he would be relieved of responsibility and free to exercise his special talent for drafting state papers—or to resign. Thus began, accidentally once more, the second stage of a career which was to become legendary in the annals of Washington. In 1878 Evarts made him chief of the Diplomatic Bureau, in charge of correspondence with legations. In 1882 President Arthur appointed him third assistant secretary of state. In 1886 he was promoted to be second assistant secretary, which he was for thirty-six years. He might have gone higher yet. He preferred a post less conspicuous but less subject to political and social pressure. As it was he frequently assumed the duties of acting secretary, and in September 1898 spanned as secretary of state *ad interim* the interval between the departure of Justice Day and Hay's arrival. The only time he ever consented to appear at an international conference was in 1914. Happening to be in France, on his vacation, he accepted an emergency assignment to the conference on Spitzbergen, then sitting at Oslo. His credentials were dated the day before the assassination of the Archduke Ferdinand, and the conference rose on July 30 (*Foreign Relations,* 1914, p. 974). Unable to cross the German frontier, Adee spent a fortnight in helping disentangle the legation at Copenhagen from the confusion which beset every diplomatic establishment in those troubled days, and finally succeeded in making his way to the north of Scotland. He was then in his seventy-second year. He continued to serve the department for ten years longer, remaining at his desk until a week before his death.

During this unprecedented period of nearly fifty-five consecutive years of service, forty-seven of them in Washington, he set upon the department a stamp no other one man has left. Time worked in his favor, of course, as did his private circumstances. He never married; and his deafness, which gradually cut him off from general conversation, made official society irksome to him. He preferred that of his lawyer brother, with whom he lived, of his nephews and nieces, and of his books. It was, therefore, the easier for him, at seasons of special stress, to install a cot in his office and to remain at his post day and night. He was no mere official bookworm, however. To keep himself fit he long rode a bicycle, taking it nearly every spring to Europe for an unconventional tour, and in his later years he kept a canoe on the Potomac. He also took a scientific interest in lenses, acquiring the proficiency of a professional with the camera and the microscope. With their aid he became an expert in the study of diatoms, of which he discovered several new species. It was perhaps this interest in scientific and mechanical things which caused him who had spent so many painful hours with a pen, to introduce typewriters into the department in the eighties, and in the nineties to permit the innovation of typing a diplomatic note. But his conscientiousness and his versatility would have availed little without his wide reading, his immense experience, his prodigious memory, his intimacy with the records, workings, and personalities of the department, his quick wit, his gift for the turn and tone of a phrase. He was human enough to have a temper, as rash or stupid subordinates knew to their cost, and journalists found him a far from loquacious informant; yet no one could be more appreciative of good work, more urbane, or readier to turn off an importunate question with a laugh. At the time of the Boxer uprising he was asked what had passed at a momentous interview between the secretary and Wu Ting Fang. "Well," he replied, "Mr. Hay was rather hazy and Mr. Wu was rather woozy." Hay's nickname for him was "Semper Paratus"! Students often complained of the rigor with which he edited the annual volumes of *Foreign Relations* and controlled access to the archives of the department. It was not that he believed in secret diplomacy. It was rather that they had to pay for the indiscretions of yellow journalists, of petty politicians, of publicity-seekers, of sensation-mongers, for whom he had a profound distaste. He disliked the tendency of amateur diplomats to burst into print. He himself kept a diary for

years, but never entered in it a syllable that had to do with his official life. The only book he ever published was an edition of *King Lear* (1890), being Volume X of The Bankside Shakespeare (1888–1906), published by the Shakespeare Society of New York, of which he was long a member. On the other hand, in a government tender to the spoils system and to the theory of rotation in office, he gave consistency to the policies and methods of the State Department. And at a time when the tradition of English as written and spoken in America was undergoing radical changes, not always for the best, he set a standard of style and held the department to it. For thirty years scarcely a written communication went out until he had passed upon it. Of those communications a fabulous number were written by himself, although many of them were signed by other men. He drafted treaties, wrote notes and instructions, reprimanded the erring and commended the praiseworthy, composed proclamations, invented formulas, solved intricate problems of procedure or precedence. He had to a remarkable degree the ability to summarize a lengthy document in a paragraph, and to indicate in a word the manner of reply to be drafted. The department's files are full of the slips of green paper on which he wrote his comments or directions in red ink—sometimes tart, often witty, always informed and to the point. Of his facility in drafting, a classic example is President McKinley's reply to the ambassadors of the five Great Powers, who on the eve of the Spanish War counselled moderation and delay (*Foreign Relations,* 1898, p. 741). Having got wind of what was to come, Adee wrote it in ten minutes, while the ambassadors were all but at the door of the White House. And before the hastily penciled original could be put on record, it had to be retrieved from a presidential waste-basket. He also had a hand in the important correspondence relating to the Open Door in China and the situation resulting from the Boxer Rebellion (*Foreign Relations,* 1899–1902).

[No biography of Adee as yet exists. The records of his life, like his works, are scattered in the archives of the department, to which the writer has generously been allowed access. He has also drawn upon the recollections of relatives and associates. Outlines of Adee's career may be found in *Who's Who in America,* XIII, and in the *Reg. of the Dept. of State* (1924). *Foreign Relations,* from 1871 onward, contains much printed material by or relating to him, while Moore's *Digest of Internatl. Law* (1906) indexes five pages of state papers from his pen (VIII, 221; see also vol. II, p. 668). Among many press notices may be cited "Adee the Remarkable" by E. G. Lowry, *Harper's Weekly,* Nov. 18, 1911; "The Anchor of the State Department" by "Vieillard," the *Nation,* Aug. 5, 1915; and obituaries in the *N.Y. World* and *Tribune* and the *Phila. Public Ledger* for July 6, the *Outlook* for July 16, and the *World's Work* for September 1924. W. R. Thayer, *Life and Letters of John Hay* (1915) contains brief but interesting references, notably in vol. II, p. 186.] H. G. D.

ADGATE, ANDREW (d. 1793), musician, for about ten years prior to his death was an active and useful promoter of rudimentary musical education in Philadelphia. Nothing positive is known of his origin or training. But if he is to be identified (as by the bibliographer Charles Evans) with the "Absalom Aimwell" who purports to be the author of *The Mechanics Lecture* (1789) and also of *The Philadelphia Songster* in the same year, with an appended *Mechanic's Song* (words and music), he was "a native of the United States" and "the son of a mechanic." His importance lies in his having opened in 1784 an Institution for the Encouragement of Church Music, which in 1785 took the name of the Free School for Spreading the Knowledge of Vocal Music, and in 1787, under a more elaborate plan of organization, that of The Uranian Academy. Among the names on the board of directors of this last we find the lawyer-composer Francis Hopkinson and the physician Benjamin Rush. The Academy seems to have continued until after 1800. As early as 1785, if not before, Adgate set about giving occasional choral concerts, at which various tunes and anthems by Lyons, Billings, Tuckey, and others already active in America were given, besides even the Hallelujah Chorus from Handel's *Messiah.* His most ambitious undertaking in this line was on May 4, 1786, when for a concert at the German Church he gathered a chorus of 230 voices and a band of fifty players. A résumé of his extant programs, as well as of his plans for systematic instruction, is given in O. G. Sonneck's *Early Concert-Life in America, 1731–1800* (1907), pp. 103–120. Though the scope of his pedagogical work was naturally limited by the circumstances of the time, what he says of his projects implies enterprise and thoughtful purpose. For the Academy he published about a half-dozen books in 1785–88, of which the *Rudiments of Music* and the *Philadelphia Harmony* ran through eight editions from 1788 to 1803, and a *Selection of Sacred Harmony* through five before 1797, besides the *Lecture* and the *Songster* above named as possibly his. His death occurred in the yellow fever epidemic of 1793.

[The account in Sonneck is by far the fullest. It also gives many references to contemporary newspapers. Other references are: Charles Evans, *Am. Bibliog.* (1903–25), vols. VII and VIII; Gould, *Hist. of Ch. Music in America* (1853); Holyoke, *Harmonia Americana* (1791).] W. S. P.

ADLER, GEORGE J. (1821–Aug. 24, 1868), philologist, the son of John J. Adler, was born in Leipzig. He was brought to the United States in 1833, was valedictorian of the class of 1844 at New York University, and was appointed professor of modern languages in that institution in

1846. He had begun teaching in the college while still an undergraduate. During the next few years he published several excellent German text-books, but most of his time and energy was devoted to the *Dictionary of the German and English Languages* (1849) for which his name is remembered. The significance of this work as a scholarly achievement can be appreciated only when one recalls that it was written in the New York of Poe's *Literati,* by a scholar who was still in his twenties and before Sanders and the Grimms had laid the foundation of modern German lexicography. As his basis Adler used Flügel's dictionary, but he subjected the whole book to a thorough revision, adding almost 30,000 new terms (chiefly loan words) and several hundred brief articles on synonyms. He had nothing to do with the smaller English-German volume, which was a mere reprint "under the auspices of the publisher" of Flügel. Adler's dictionary, which has been a boon to several generations of American students of German, was for its author a calamity, for the unaided, unremitting drudgery of its compilation shattered his health, and he was thenceforward intermittently insane.

In October 1849, his health temporarily restored, he sailed for Europe for a year of study and travel. On the wharf George Duyckinck introduced him to a fellow-traveler, Herman Melville [*q.v.*]. The two instantly became friends, spending the long days of the voyage in discussing philosophy, and meeting again in London and Paris. In his diary Melville affords us a pleasant glimpse of his companion and characterizes him as "an exceedingly amiable man and a fine scholar, whose society is improving in a high degree."

On his return to New York, Adler resumed his duties at the university, meanwhile studying assiduously. In the summer of 1853 hallucinations and delusions of persecution began again to assail him; on Oct. 5 he had a violent outbreak and two days later was taken to the Bloomingdale Asylum. In the shelter of the asylum, he completed, among other text-books, an interesting Latin grammar on Ollendorfian principles (1858). Later he lectured on Roman literature, Arabian poetry, and Goethe's *Faust,* and supported himself by giving private lessons in Latin and German. Other able works from his pen were a translation of Fauriel's *History of Provençal Poetry* (1860), *Notes on Certain Passages of the Agamemnon of Æschylus* (1861), *Wilhelm von Humboldt's Linguistic Studies* (1866), and *The Poetry of the Arabs of Spain* (1867). He died at the Bloomingdale Asylum, and was buried from St. Michael's Episcopal Church in Bloomingdale Road.

[The few facts known about Adler must be pieced together from a brief account in Duyckinck's *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (rev. ed. 1875), a sketch in *Universities and Their Sons: N.Y. Univ.* (1901), ed. by J. L. Chamberlain, the *N.Y. Univ. Gen. Alumni Cat.* (1906), the prefaces to Adler's books and his pamphlet *Letters of a Lunatic* (privately printed, N.Y., 1854), Raymond Weaver's *Herman Melville* (1921), the death notice and editorial comment in the *N.Y. Times,* Aug. 25, 1868.]

G.H.G.

ADLER, SAMUEL (Dec. 3, 1809–June 9, 1891), rabbi, was born at Worms, Germany. He received his first instruction in Hebrew and Biblical literature from his father, Isaac Adler, rabbi at Worms, but when he was thirteen years of age, his father died, leaving his widow and five children destitute. Although very poor, Samuel carried on his studies assiduously at the Worms Yeshibot, or Talmudical Academy, and later at Frankfort-on-the-Main. Having completed his preliminary studies, he entered the University of Bonn in 1831, and from there went to Giessen, where the Ph.D. degree was awarded him in 1836. He was elected rabbi at Worms and remained there until 1842, when he became chief rabbi at Alzey. In 1843 he was married to Henrietta Frankfurter. During these years he toiled to lift the civil disabilities of the Jews and to introduce in the lower and higher schools the teaching of Jewish religion on a par with Protestant and Catholic teachings. In 1857 he was offered and accepted the position of rabbi of Emanu-El Congregation at New York. Entering upon his new duties in March 1857, he now had greater opportunity of giving full practical scope to his genius. He sought, above all, to lift the deadening weight of tradition from his people and to stimulate in them a higher Jewish consciousness. With this in mind, he devoted himself strenuously and ardently to the religious training of the young, to extending the fullest equality in all religious matters to women as well as men, to reconciling Jewish doctrines with the needs of modern life, particularly with reference to the Sabbath Day, and to reforming the ritual and making the liturgy more acceptable to the modern mind. He undertook the revision of the prayer-book, which his predecessor, Dr. L. Merzbacher, the first rabbi of Emanu-El Temple, had arranged, and so well was his work done that this book later became the pattern for most of the other reform prayer-books in American Judaism. He helped in the founding of the Hebrew Orphan Asylum of New York City and several other charitable institutions.

Adler was a man of vast learning concerning the life and literature of his people. He combined within himself the old Jewish training and viewpoint with the modern critical analysis and method, which he had learned at the German univer-

sities. He attended the three Rabbinical Reform Conferences, held in Brunswick in 1844, in Frankfort-on-the-Main in 1845, and in Breslau in 1846. These three conferences laid the foundation of Reform Judaism, and made it possible to build the Jewish faith for the future. In all of his work for reform, he sought to buttress his labors on the principles of Judaism as an everlasting revelation of God's purposes. His was a flaming passion for religion as an instrument in man's struggle for emancipation from ignorance and the forces which hinder progress. He left numerous monographs on subjects pertaining to Jewish learning, such as *The Day of Atonement According to the Bible—Its Origin and Meaning, A Biblio-Critical Study of the Passover, The Levitical Tithe, Karaitic Questions, Phariseeism and Sadduceeism.*

["Samuel Adler," by Rabbi Joseph Silverman, in the *Yr. Bk. of the Central Conference of Am. Rabbis,* XIX; *Sontagsblatt der New Yorker Staatszeitung,* June 21, 1891; *N.Y. Times, N.Y. Herald, N.Y. Tribune,* June 11, 1891.] L.L.M.

ADLUM, JOHN (Apr. 29, 1759–Mar. 1, 1836), pioneer in viticulture, the son of Joseph and Catherine Adlum, was born in York, Pa. He served as a soldier in the Revolution and as a major in the Provisional Army. Later he was appointed brigadier-general in the state militia. Experience as a surveyor led to his employment in various surveys undertaken by the state and to his appointment by state authority to study the navigation of the Susquehanna and Schuylkill rivers. In 1795 he became associate judge of Lycoming County, Pa., and served in this capacity for three years. But these various engagements were of only passing importance to him. His life-long interest and his greatest service were in the cultivation, study, and improvement of American grapes. He established a farm and nursery at Georgetown, D. C., which ultimately contained over 200 acres. A portion of it was on the present site of the Bureau of Standards. If not the first, he was among the first to urge the federal government to give support to research institutions for the special benefit of agriculture; a movement which, after repeated efforts, was successful some ninety years later. His effort to have the federal government establish an experimental farm being unsuccessful, he made his own farm experimental, as far as his limited means permitted. His correspondence with Thomas Jefferson and his earlier acquaintance and friendship with Dr. Joseph Priestley, the celebrated English natural philosopher, living at Northumberland, Pa., were of great value to him in applying their knowledge to his farming operations. His special interest lay in the study of the grape and of wine making, and in this work he became an American pioneer. At first he grew a considerable number of European and American varieties, but, sharing Jefferson's opinion that it was wiser to attempt the improvement of native sorts than to introduce those of foreign origin, he ultimately rejected the latter, confining his study to between twenty and thirty native varieties. From cuttings obtained from one of these he propagated what he first named the Tokay but later the Catawba grape. This variety he propagated extensively and secured its distribution and cultivation. It has maintained its wide use and popularity to this day. His work he summarized in two books. One of them, *A Memoir on the Cultivation of the Vine in America and the Best Mode of Making Wine,* was published in 1823. An enlarged edition was issued in 1828. The other publication, *Adlum on Making Wine,* was issued in 1826. In 1813 he married Margaret Adlum, a cousin, by whom he had two daughters. He died at "The Vineyard" near Georgetown, D. C.

Adlum devoted his energy and means to a worthy and useful public service more than to advancing his personal interests. The Catawba grape—and its products—is a fitting memorial to him. A more humble memorial is a plant, the climbing fumitory, *Adlumia,* which was named in his honor. Personally he was tall, a man of muscular frame and great energy, lovable himself and loving to help the needy and unfortunate.

[*Records of the Columbia [D.C.] Hist. Soc.,* X, 38; Bailey's *Cyc. of Am. Ag.,* IV, 549.] E.H.J.

ADRAIN, ROBERT (Sept. 30, 1775–Aug. 10, 1843), mathematician, was of Huguenot stock,—at any rate such is the tradition in the family. Born in Carrickfergus, Ireland, he received as good an education as his father could afford, but was thrown upon his own resources at the age of fifteen. He then began teaching, seemingly with success, but his Irish career was terminated when, having joined the Irish revolutionists, he was left for dead on the battle-field. He recovered, however, and with his wife (Ann Pollock) and child he escaped to America and here resumed his work as a teacher. He was successively a master in the academy at Princeton, N. J.; and principal in similar schools in York, Pa., and in Reading, Pa. In 1809 he became professor of mathematics at Queen's College (afterward Rutgers College) in New Brunswick, N. J. Four years later he became a professor in Columbia College (afterward Columbia University, New York City), his work there apparently including at different times mathematics, natural history, natural philosophy, and astronomy. After thirteen years at Columbia he resumed his former

professorship in New Brunswick, but a year later he was called to the University of Pennsylvania. In 1828 he became vice-provost, but apparently owing to his failure in matters of discipline he found it advisable to sever his connection with the university in 1834. Of the next nine years, four were spent in New York as teacher in the Columbia College grammar school, and the rest apparently on his farm in New Brunswick, N. J. Of his teaching, Dr. Benjamin Haight of the University of Pennsylvania, class of 1828, gave the following account: "If one was thoroughly prepared in his recitation, all was well, but if a student was in doubt or needed a word of explanation in a difficult problem, he not only did not get assistance, but was sent down with some remark of the sort, 'If you cannot understand Euclid, dearie (a term he frequently used when out of temper) I cannot explain it to you.' The consequence was that only a small portion of his class could keep up with his course . . . in my class not more than one-fifth of the number" (Coolidge, *post*).

Adrain was the most outstanding mathematician in America in his time. His contributions began in a humble way in 1804 by problems sent to the *Mathematical Correspondent.* He soon, however, suggested a curve which he called the *catenaria volvens* and which, upwards of a half-century later, was rediscovered and attracted much attention in mathematical circles. He also wrote upon Diophantine algebra; founded a short-lived journal, the *Analyst, or Mathematical Companion* (1808); prepared an American edition of Hutton's *Course of Mathematics* (1812); attempted to revive the *Analyst* (1814); established *The Mathematical Diary,* which ran irregularly from 1825 to 1833, and edited a revised edition (1832) of Keith's *A New Treatise on the Use of Globes,* which had first appeared in England in 1805. His greatest mathematical achievement, however, was his consideration of the exponential law of error which Gauss demonstrated a year later and which generally bears the latter's name. Adrain gave two proofs, each of which has often been surpassed in elegance and clearness, a fact which does not, however, lessen the honor of priority which is due to him. If, instead of being a self-made mathematician, he had come under the influence of men like Laplace, Legendre, and Gauss, he might have been a great leader. As chance had it, he was lost in a mathematical desert.

[The leading source of information is an address "Robt. Adrain, and the Beginning of Am. Math.," by Prof. Julian L. Coolidge of Harvard Univ., pub. in the *Am. Mathematical Mo.,* XXXIII, 61, where the earlier biographical articles are listed.] D.E.S.

AFFLECK, THOMAS (July 13, 1812–Dec. 30, 1868), agricultural writer, was born in Dumfries, Scotland, the son of Thomas Affleck, a merchant, and Mary (Hannay) Affleck. After finishing school he was employed in the National Bank of Scotland, in Dumfries, of which bank his uncle, Alexander Hannay, was the managing agent. In 1832 he gave up his position with this bank for the purpose of moving to the United States, where he felt there would be better opportunities for success in the agricultural vocation which he desired to follow and for which he had prepared himself by attending agricultural lectures under Prof. Low of Edinburgh. He set sail from Liverpool and arrived in New York on May 4, 1832, and a few months later declared his intention of becoming a citizen of the United States. After some months in New York and Pennsylvania, he went to Indiana, engaging in business there for a few years. In 1840 he became junior editor of the *Western Farmer and Gardener,* in Cincinnati, Ohio. The next year he made an extensive tour through Mississippi and Louisiana, an account of which was given in his paper. On Apr. 19, 1842, he married Mrs. Anna (Dunbar) Smith of Washington, Miss., daughter of Isaac Dunbar and Elizabeth (Wilkinson) Dunbar, and widow of Calvin Steven Smith. After his marriage he took up his residence at Ingleside, near Washington, Miss. Here he established a commercial nursery (one of the earliest in the South) called the "Southern Nurseries" and also entered business life as a planter on an extensive scale. He imported many plants from Europe and carried on an extensive series of experiments. At this time he gave up the editorship of the *Western Farmer and Gardener.*

Realizing the political unrest in the country and that the lower Mississippi River, in case war should come, would be the hotbed of contention, he disposed of his interests in Mississippi and in 1857 moved to Texas, where he bought land in the county of Washington. He lost no time in improving the holding which he acquired. In addition to constructing a commodious dwelling and large plantation quarters, he erected a saw-mill, grist-mill (the only one in Texas for a number of years), cotton-gin, corn-mill, and a large sorghum-mill. His energies were also devoted to the cultivation of the usual field crops grown in that section. He established a nursery under the name of the "Central Nurseries," most of the trees and plants for which were supplied from his former nurseries in Mississippi. He did much, too, for the development of the better grades of livestock. During the Civil War his saw-mill manufactured wheel-barrows and other

implements from lumber for the Confederate army. He was among the first in Texas to take the "amnesty oath" after peace was declared and he at once set to work in helping to rebuild the state. He made several trips to Europe for the purpose of encouraging English and Scotch emigrants to settle in Texas. One of his great undertakings, which failed, however, of materialization because of his death in 1868, was the establishment of a large beef-packing plant in Texas to be financed with European capital. European capitalists became interested in the project and it was planned that the proposed company should operate its own line of steamers between Texas and Europe. Affleck established an office in Galveston to look after this business in addition to his other interests. His death occurred just when these plans seemed on the eve of maturity.

Through his writings and his business undertakings Affleck did much for the agricultural advancement of the South. He was one of the early advocates of diversified farming in the Southern states. He edited *Norman's Southern Agricultural Almanac for 1848* (New Orleans, B. N. Norman) and later published for several years (beginning with 1851) an almanac entitled *Affleck's Southern Rural Almanac and Plantation and Garden Calendar*. He was the author of *Bee Breeding in the West* (1841) and *Hedging and Hedging Plants in the Southern States* (1869), as well as author of two useful and popular account-books, *The Cotton Plantation Record and Account Book*, and *The Sugar Plantation Record and Account Book*.

[The chief sources of information about Thomas Affleck are (1) his letters, diaries, books, etc., in the possession of his grandson, Mr. T. D. Affleck, of Galveston, Tex., and (2) his articles in various agricultural publications. A brief reference to him appears in an article by R. L. Allen in the *Cultivator*, vol. VIII, no. 7, July 1841, p. 114. An account of a visit to his plantation in Washington, Miss., is given by Solon Robinson in the *Ohio Cultivator*, vol. V, no. 7, Apr. 1, 1849, pp. 101–2. Obituaries in the *Am. Farmer*, Feb. 1869, *Cultivator and Country Gentleman*, Jan. 21, 1869, *Southern Planter*, Mar. 1869, and *Houston Telegraph*, Jan. 3, 1869.]

C. R. B.

AGASSIZ, ALEXANDER (Dec. 17, 1835–Mar. 27, 1910), zoologist, oceanographer, and mine operator, was the son of Jean Louis Agassiz [*q.v.*], the geologist and zoologist, and of Cécile Braun of Baden, Germany, sister of the eminent botanist Alexander Braun, for whom the younger Agassiz was named. She possessed marked skill as an artist, many of the finest plates in her husband's *Poissons Fossiles* being by her hand. Maximilian Braun, another brother, was an eminent mining engineer. Agassiz's paternal grandfather was a gifted pastor, of French Swiss Protestant stock, whose wife possessed a very strong, practical turn of mind, coupled with much Swiss astuteness.

Alexander Agassiz was born at Neuchâtel, Switzerland, a district which within a short span of time produced the elder Agassiz, the younger Agassiz, Pasteur, and Cuvier. The intellectual level of the times and the community was high, and was an excellent culture in which to produce a young man with a taste for natural history. From boyhood the younger Agassiz was trained to the study of animals, particularly aquatic animals, and was accustomed to observe and to draw practically anything he saw. His boyhood education was largely in his father's hands. Shortly after his mother's death and his father's departure for America, Agassiz left, in June 1849, for the New World. He was educated in the public high school at Cambridge, Mass., and graduated with the degree of A.B. from Harvard in 1855. Two years later he received the degree of B.S. in Engineering from the Lawrence Scientific School, where he had studied engineering and mining, neither of which led directly to a career as a naturalist, but ultimately proved of great worth to him in the practical side of marine exploration and in amassing a fortune. He returned immediately to Harvard to study chemistry, intermittently working there till he received the degree of B.S. in Natural History from Harvard in 1862.

In the meantime he had employed himself in teaching in the Agassiz school for girls, conducted by his stepmother, Elizabeth Cabot (Cary) Agassiz [*q.v.*], whom his father had married in 1850, and in 1859 he had attached himself to the United States Survey of the Washington Territory boundaries, and utilized the opportunity to collect marine animals from Panama to San Francisco, and north in the Columbia River and Puget Sound. In this year appeared his first scientific paper, on the mechanism of flight in the Lepidoptera (butterflies). In 1860, though having neither money nor very good health, he married one of the pupils from his mother's school for girls, Anna Russell of a well-known Boston family. Now began active publication in systematic zoology upon the marine invertebrates. His *North American Acalephae* (1865) was illustrated with 360 drawings by his own pen, and his *Embryology of the Starfish* (1865), not less completely illustrated, was the first of his embryological researches which shed so much light upon the phylogeny of the marine fauna.

In 1865 he was temporarily engaged in coal-mining in Pennsylvania, was in charge of the Harvard Museum during Louis Agassiz's ab-

sence in Brazil, and published with his stepmother a popular work, *Seaside Studies in Natural History*. In the following year he paid two visits to Calumet, on the Michigan shore of Lake Superior, through his interest in a copper mine, the existence of which was largely due to his father's geological reconnaissances in the Lake Superior districts. In March 1867, he became superintendent of the mine and took up his residence in Calumet. The mine was unprofitable when he came to it; at the time of his death, when he was its president, it was not only the greatest copper mine in the world in output, but declared the largest dividends for its investors which any metal mine in the world has ever divided. Agassiz in those early days of his mining career worked fourteen hours a day, was tireless in his energy and inventiveness, and made himself beloved by all the workers. He instituted pension and accident funds, safety devices, sanitary measures for the communities, modern and large mining machinery. On the occasion of a great fire breaking out in the mine he hastily produced from such chemicals as he had at hand enough carbonic acid gas to smother the flames immediately. Throughout his life he never lost touch with the industry under his ownership, making himself so highly regarded that the workmen raised over a thousand dollars as a gift to his museum. The years of mining experience were probably, however, permanently damaging to his health.

In search of rest and refreshment, and with the purpose of seeing all the specimens of Echini of value, Agassiz and his wife went to Europe in 1869, there forming social and scientific contacts of ultimate value. By 1872 he was able to begin issuing the great work of his life, from the point of view of systematic zoology, a *Revision of the Echini,* in which his father took great pride, and of which Jeffries Wyman said that it would live as long as anything the author's father ever did. The elder Agassiz was not to see the completion of this scientific monument, as he died in 1873, and the younger Agassiz's wife caught pneumonia while attending her father-in-law, and died eight days later. The double tragedy overwhelmed Agassiz, whose devotion to his father was almost religious, and to his wife was such that he was never able to speak of her death to his friends. His buoyant and genial nature was crushed by these losses. For a little while he carried on very unwillingly his father's summer school on the island of Penikese which the elder Agassiz had begun with such high hopes but about which his son had always had misgivings. The owner of the island lost interest in the school, an effort to subscribe public funds for its maintenance failed, and Agassiz paid out of his pocket its indebtedness and closed this first American experiment in a field laboratory. He immediately opened a private laboratory at Newport, R. I., however, and there, with everything in the way of the most modern and flawless equipment, he entertained ten biologists at a time, among whom were such famous men as Fewkes, Whitman, Brooks, and his warm friend Count Pourtalès whose marine faunal dredgings on the *Corwin* had already drawn Agassiz's attention to the delights and rewards of marine exploration. In 1874 he was made curator of the unfinished University Museum which his father had so optimistically begun to build, and he immediately set about its completion, giving $25,000, and raising $310,000 by popular subscription. Ultimately he devoted about $1,000,000 of his own to its construction and maintenance, dedicating the work to his father's memory.

Agassiz

Seeking distraction from his cares and sorrow he traveled along the west coast of South America in 1875. His letters at this time bear witness to terrible depression of spirit, but he found comfort in his studies. He discovered a recent coral reef at 3,000 feet above sea-level, which confirmed his suspicion that Darwin's theory of coral reefs and atolls as fringes around sinking volcanoes was untenable. His father had been a strong anti-Darwinian, and though the younger Agassiz was presumed to accept evolution as a fact, he carried on some of the hereditary opposition to Darwin's ideas, averring that Darwin had explained the survival of species, but not their origin. Against Darwin's theory of atoll formation Agassiz at this time began a vigorous attack, continuing his studies for twenty-five years. Before leaving South America, he chartered the only steamer on Lake Titicaca and collected all the animals and plants in that mysterious lake, making besides a complete chart of its deep bed.

In 1877, the year in which he issued his *North American Starfishes,* he embarked on the *Blake,* a government vessel under Lieutenant Commander S. D. Sigsbee, and began the first of his marine explorations. The government with great foresight authorized Sigsbee and subsequent commanders of the federal vessels on which Agassiz sailed to give the scientist free rein in directing the movements of the boats. The voluminous and costly reports of these expeditions, however, were published at Agassiz's expense, chiefly in the bulletins and memoirs of the Harvard Museum of Comparative Zoology. The *Blake* on its first voyage explored the course of the Gulf Stream in American waters. In 1878 Agassiz was again aboard her in a West Indian cruise, and in 1880

on a further exploration of the Gulf Stream's course. The coral reefs of the Hawaiian Islands were privately visited by Agassiz in 1885, and in 1891 he was aboard the *Albatross* when it explored the waters of the Pacific from Panama to the Galapagos and north to the Gulf of California. A friend loaned the *Wild Duck,* a small but excellent craft, for exploration of the waters and corals of the Bahamas in 1892, and as a result of this voyage Agassiz concluded that the Bahamas are formed of æolian rock, thinly overlaid with recent coral formation, a view then revolutionary. His private explorations of the Bermudas and the Florida barrier reefs in 1894 led him to the same conclusions, though probably he was in error as regards the mainland rocks about Miami, Fla.

The trip to the Great Barrier Reef of Australia in 1896 was largely a failure, owing to the fact that Agassiz had not counted on the trade winds which made navigation so difficult that science did not prosper, but in the years following he profited by this lesson and visited thousands of Pacific atolls in the hot still season. In 1899–1900 he was aboard the *Albatross,* Jefferson Moser commander, in its explorations of the region between San Francisco and the Marquesas. Over this vast basin, as large as the United States, which he named the Moser Deep, he made thousands of soundings and dredgings, bringing up siliceous sponges from 4,173 fathoms, the deepest haul that had ever been made. His survey of this marine desert, over which the British biologists in the *Challenger* had passed without solving the riddle of the countless sharks' teeth imbedded in concreted oozes, led him to the conclusion that not later than Tertiary times the floor had been raised nearly to the surface, providing the warm shallow sea in which sharks abound. Again with the *Albatross,* in 1904, he explored the sea from Peru to Easter Island and its mysterious monoliths, making a special study of the Humboldt current, showing that life abounded in its cold waters, but fell off rapidly on its western edges, though the waters of the bordering deep were warmer. While these marine explorations were not the first, they were the most extensive that had ever been made. The late Prince of Monaco attributed to Agassiz the larger part of the present knowledge of the configurations of the ocean beds and continental shelves, and Sir John Murray accredited him with making the marine fauna of the West Indies and the Gulf Stream better known than that of any similar area in the world. All of his findings were tirelessly reported and magnificently illustrated.

As he had an aversion to theories as such, and to speculation and metaphysics, he did not state his conclusions on the subject of his life work in the study of coral reefs, in any definitive, descriptive law. Indeed, a certain diffusion of purpose and even obscurity of meaning sometimes mark his work. He probably proved his negative conclusion—that Darwin was unsupported by the evidence in his theory of the formation of coral atolls. His own study of thousands of reefs and atolls prevented him from uttering any generalities on the subject; each case presented special problems to him, and it was his belief that the ordinary agencies of wind, wave, rain-water, and the normal habits of corals were sufficient to account for the varied structure of coral formations, without reference to elevation or subsidence of land or ocean level. A popular work on coral formations was three times written, and on the eve of his death was about to be scrapped in favor of a fourth beginning; as a consequence his final views will never be known. The close of his life was marked by his presiding over the International Congress of Zoologists at Boston in 1907, by his pleasure trip to the Great Lakes of Africa in 1908, and by his recreational visit to Europe in 1910. A few days from the coast of England, aboard the *Adriatic,* he died in his sleep. His honors were many, but Harvard University was the only American institution which signalized its recognition, by awarding him the degree of LL.D. in 1885. In 1898 he was made an Officer of the Legion of Honor. In 1902 he became a Knight of the Order of Merit of Prussia, though in his youth, with characteristic democracy, he had deliberately insulted a Prussian officer by refusal to salute him. The Victoria Research Medal was awarded him in 1909. He had previously (1878) been given the Prix Serres by the Paris Academy. At various times he was an Overseer of Harvard, at other times a Fellow. The only popularly elected office which he held was on the committee of the Cambridge public schools, a small duty into which he put much conscientious labor.

He ever remained something of a foreigner, thinking in French, though undoubtedly his simple and democratic temperament was well adapted to American life. In his relations to his employees in the mines he was a model of kindness and forethoughtfulness. His position in the Harvard Museum, and aboard the vessels in which his marine exploration was conducted, was that of a benevolent despot. His private wealth, his great generosity, his obvious superiority to his associates as a scientist and organizer quite naturally made him an autocrat in the museum as at sea. He did very little classroom teaching in his life, but his generosity toward young scientists and his interest in them gave him an influence which extended far beyond the classroom. From his mother per-

haps he inherited a swift anger, but he had no animosities or sullenness. He has been compared in features to Bismarck, and like that organizer he planned his trips with such precision that he knew exactly where he would be on almost every day in the following year. All mishaps were allowed for, the time of his return was known to the day and very hour, and punctually at that hour he was in his museum office, writing the first words of the report of his expedition. His previous reading and his collections were so highly organized that his writing could proceed with perfect sequence as soon as he returned.

[*Letters and Recollections of Alexander Agassiz* (1913) by his son George Agassiz. For more impersonal accounts, with extended notices of his works, see A. G. Mayer in *Ann. Rep. Smithsonian Inst.* for 1910, pp. 447–72 (reprinted from *Pop. Sci. Mo.*, vol. LXXVI, no. 5); H. P. Walcott in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts & Sci.*, XLVIII, 31–44; and Sir John Murray in *Bull. Mus. Comp. Zool. Harvard*, XLIV, 139–58.]

D. C. P.

AGASSIZ, ELIZABETH CABOT CARY (Dec. 5, 1822–June 27, 1907), educator, born in Boston, the daughter of Thomas Graves Cary and Mary (Perkins) Cary, grew up, one of a large family, in the intellectual group of the Boston of that day. In the letters of her girlhood there was revealed already a nature sprightly, humorous, and warm-hearted. The event of the year 1846 in Boston was the arrival of the naturalist, Louis Agassiz. Shortly after he came, his wife died in Europe, and in Boston, on Apr. 25, 1850, he married Elizabeth Cary. A year later the young wife accompanied him to Charleston, S. C., where she enjoyed the life of the seaside laboratory on Sullivan's Island. By 1856 she was back in Cambridge, Mass., with her husband, conducting a girls' school in order to increase the family income. As a pioneer in the higher education of women, she proved herself a tactful supporter of a cause highly unpopular in that conservative society. She taught little, but was rather the directress and the embodiment of the school's enthusiastic spirit. In 1863 the institution, for her, had fulfilled its mission and was abandoned, but in it there was the promise of later and greater achievement. A member of Agassiz's expedition to Brazil in 1865, Mrs. Agassiz kept a record of the trip and his daily lectures. *A Journey in Brazil* was published in 1868 as a collaboration, the final literary mold being Mrs. Agassiz's part in the book. In 1871 the two sailed around Cape Horn; the record she kept of this expedition has never been completely published. The blow of her husband's death fell on Dec. 14, 1873; courageously rallying, Mrs. Agassiz set about collecting all papers in regard to his life and work. In 1885 she published *Louis Agassiz: His Life and Correspondence*, admirably edited, pardonably eulogistic, but by its impersonal tone leaving the reader's interest rather unsatisfied concerning his private life. Nevertheless, her service to science as Agassiz's amanuensis and biographer cannot be exaggerated.

Her diary for Feb. 11, 1879 records a "meeting about Harvard education for women." With Mr. and Mrs. Arthur Gilman, William James, President Eliot, and others, she was a founder of the institution that ultimately became Radcliffe College in Cambridge. Her influence was thrown upon the side of granting to the students the same courses as were offered at Harvard and by the same instructors. At a time when the close proximity of a girls' college to an institution for men was viewed with doubt, her faith in the self-reliance of the women students was firm. From the outset she threw her heart into the enterprise and at the age of seventy-two accepted the presidency of the college, remaining until 1902 when she resigned. Her relation as stepmother to Agassiz's gifted children was one of great tenderness. To Alexander Agassiz she was especially close, and with him in 1865 published *Seaside Studies in Natural History*, in which her literary gift is evident. She died in 1907 at Arlington Heights, Mass., as a result of a paralytic stroke.

[*The Life of Elizabeth Cary Agassiz* was written by Lucy Allen Paton in 1919; it is highly satisfactory as a personal picture and as a record of Mrs. Agassiz's work and influence. For the founding of Radcliffe College see Arthur Gilman's account in the *Harvard Grads. Mag.*, Sept. 1907.]

D. C. P.

AGASSIZ, JEAN LOUIS RODOLPHE (May 28, 1807–Dec. 14, 1873) was born at Motier-en-Vuly, Canton Fribourg, near the edge of the Vaud, in French Switzerland. The house of his birth, then a pretty parsonage set amid orchard and vines, is still standing and bears a commemorative tablet. The family background must have been one of simple comfort and culture. From his father, the last of a line of Protestant clergymen, the boy seemingly inherited some of those traits which were to make him in after years the incomparable teacher. The life-long sympathy and understanding of his wise mother, Rose Mayor, many of whose charming qualities he also repeated, evoked in him a corresponding devotion. At Cudrefin, under the ample roof-tree of kind grandpapa Mayor, a country physician generally respected and beloved, Louis, his younger brother, Auguste, and two sisters passed many delightful holidays. His uncles, Dr. Mathias Mayor and Mr. François Mayor, were, respectively, a leading physician of Lausanne and a successful business man at Neuchâtel. The apparent

destiny of the lad, who must necessarily prepare to earn a livelihood, but who yearned for a scholar's career, thus hung for some time between business and medicine, with medicine temporarily winning. Nevertheless, Louis showed himself from the beginning an inveterate lover of nature, with wonderful gifts of observation,—an endowment not to be permanently denied.

At the age of ten he was sent to school at Bienne, and at fifteen to the College of Lausanne, where to his delight he had access to the natural history museum directed by Professor Chavannes, an entomologist. Wandering around Bienne and Lausanne, he especially studied the local fresh-water fishes and memorized their Latin names, even while still floundering (he said) "in the rudiments of many desperate studies at Bienne." In 1824 he entered upon his medical training at the University of Zurich, where he made warm friends among the professors carrying on original research. It was during this period also that a wealthy gentleman, attracted by his uncommonly engaging personality, proposed to adopt and educate him for life. Neither father nor son, however, felt it wise to accept the offer, though a friendly correspondence between Louis and his new acquaintance was kept up for years.

In the spring of 1826 he matriculated at Heidelberg; while there, his interest in natural history increased under the influence of Professors Leuckart, Tiedemann, Bronn, and Bischoff. In 1827, however, he turned to the University of Munich with its larger scope for his genius and sat at the feet of Ignaz von Döllinger, a pioneer embryologist. He once said, "I lived three years under Döllinger's roof and my scientific training goes back to him and to him alone." To be another like Döllinger was his great ambition, and he kept steadily at work. Frequently when a group of students were starting on a pleasure jaunt he would refuse to join them, saying, "Sie gehen alle mit den Anderen." ("They all go with the other fellows.") Agassiz never went with "the other fellows" when matters of his own occupied his attention.

At the same time, he had already made a few intimate friendships, notably with Alexander Braun and Karl Schimper, young botanists of brilliant promise, his inseparable comrades at Heidelberg. The early affection between him and Braun was further cemented in October 1833 by Louis's marriage to Alexander's sister, Cécile, a natural-history artist whose rare ability appears in some of the best drawings in her husband's two monumental series, the one on fossil fishes, the other on fresh-water fish forms. Early in 1828, also, he formed a close relationship with the gifted Joseph Dinkel, who for many years was constantly occupied in making most of the fine illustrations in the two great works just mentioned, as well as the pictures in lesser monographs and small papers by Agassiz. In Munich Dinkel passed many hours a day in the room shared also by Weber (another animal artist in Agassiz's employ) as well as by Schimper and Braun. This amazingly cluttered studio, Agassiz sometimes explained, "was bedroom, library, drawing-room, fencing-room, all together. Students and professors used to call it 'the little academy.'" In that "little academy" some of the most important discoveries of the time were made. There first were discussed the distribution of Baltic fishes, the anatomy of the lamprey and, most important (by Schimper and Braun), the law of phyllotaxy, "the marvelous rhythmical arrangement of the leaves of plants," as their host described it.

Agassiz's crowning effort at Munich was his work on Brazilian fishes dedicated to Cuvier. Two eminent naturalists, J. B. von Spix and K. F. Ph. von Martius, had returned from Brazil in 1821 loaded with rich booty. After the death of Spix in 1826, von Martius turned the fish collection over to Agassiz, then only twenty-one years of age. *The Fishes of Brazil* with many excellent colored plates appeared in 1829. It was an admirable piece of work and the most important account of a local fish-fauna which had been published to that time. In the spring of 1829 Agassiz took his Ph.D. degree at Erlangen—for reasons of convenience—partly because von Martius felt that it would lend dignity to the title-page of *The Fishes of Brazil.* During the following winter Agassiz planned and inaugurated his superb *Recherches sur les Poissons fossiles* (1833–44). Yet at the end of 1830, when he left Munich with his degree of Doctor of Medicine, he felt no confidence that a life of scholarly investigation rather than the practice of medicine could be realized. Nevertheless, at quiet Concise, where his parents were then living, he continued to carry on ichthyological pursuits, meanwhile looking after such few neighborhood patients as sought his help.

Happily, by the autumn of 1831, means had been found to take him to Paris, a center of zoological and medical research, where he arrived in December, accompanied as usual by Dinkel. Still pursuing medical studies, he also gave a portion of his long day to the fossil fish collection in the Museum of Natural History of the Jardin des Plantes, and won almost at once the affectionate interest of Cuvier, the master of comparative anatomy. Cuvier's mission was to make the classification of animals not an arbitrary scheme of

convenience but a reflex of their structure. Before him, each different kind, very uncritically described, had been called a species and flung into its particular genus as into a pigeonhole. In large degree Agassiz's attitude was a continuation of that of Cuvier, whose mantle was said to have fallen on him.

Up to that time only eight fossil-fish generic types had been even named in formal publications. Agassiz, however, had studied the problems involved since 1829, while Cuvier had been gathering notes and materials for a future work on the subject. Now, Cuvier graciously turned over to Agassiz the whole matter, including his own data and collections. Thus, though harassed by financial anxieties,—living on 200 francs a month, 125 of which went to Dinkel,—and without a presentable coat in which to make calls, Agassiz labored incessantly to reconstruct fossil forms from the rocks in which their skeletons were imbedded. Collateral investigations took him finally to all the other museums and important collections of Europe. His colossal monograph, when completed, contained descriptions of about 340 new genera, illustrated by 1,290 splendid plates. Begun in 1830, it appeared successively in five quarto volumes, with folio "atlas," and laid the foundation of our knowledge of the fish-fauna of primitive seas, even though the higher groupings were necessarily rather crude. Indeed, until after this work was finished, the fossil fishes of the rest of the world remained unrecorded.

Agassiz's workshop in the Jardin des Plantes was thus described by Theodore Lyman, one of his old students: "Those little low rooms, in the old building propped up at one end with timbers, they should be the Mecca of scientific devotees! Perhaps every great zoologist of the past hundred years has sat in them and discussed the problems which are always awaiting solution and are never solved. Cuvier, Humboldt, Johannes Müller, Von Baer—they have all gone. . . . Everywhere in these galleries and laboratories it is the same. You are surrounded by the traditions of science. The spirits of great naturalists still haunt these corridors and speak through the specimens their hands have set in order."

It was in Paris that Agassiz first met Humboldt, who had grown interested in the youth. On coming to Paris, the distinguished explorer sought him out in the Latin Quarter and took him to lunch at a celebrated café. The acquaintance afterward became one of sympathetic intimacy, and of enduring gratitude on the part of Agassiz. Indeed, Humboldt's spontaneous "advance" of a thousand francs in the spring of 1832 made it possible for Agassiz to continue his researches in Paris. Humboldt's interest was again shown by his help in securing for his young protégé, at Neuchâtel in 1832, a specially established professorship in natural history.

The inauguration of Agassiz's labors at Neuchâtel marks his definite entrance on the most compelling phase of his life. Up to that time he had been primarily student and investigator. Now, on a salary of only eighty louis (about $400) a year, he showed the same ardor for teaching and tireless energy which later characterized his career in America. With boundless enthusiasm he gathered about him a group of coöperating colleagues, students, and fellow-citizens, so that "the little town suddenly became a center of scientific activity." A Natural History Society was organized with Agassiz as secretary. For friends and neighbors he instituted a series of informal lectures on topics which interested him. He enticed to his side groups of children whom he led in fair weather about the country, instructing them in geology, physical geography, and botany. For indoor lessons every child had before him a specimen of the thing under discussion; and occasionally the meeting ended with a feast, even if meager, of bananas, dates, etc. More enduring material went home to build up each one's private collection. Mature students enjoyed the same methods of field instruction on frequent gay out-of-door excursions.

But for six years, unfortunately, the professorship remained on an insecure basis of three years' tenure only, once renewed with salary increase of $200. In 1838, however, the King of Prussia (under whose sovereignty the canton remained until 1846) guaranteed 10,000 louis yearly for a period of ten years for public instruction in Neuchâtel, at which time Agassiz's position was confirmed as professor of "the Academy."

Meanwhile the youthful professor's extraordinary achievements in zoological research brought him general fame in Europe, with offers of material and coöperation from workers and museum men in many quarters, including America. The great treatise on *The Fishes of Brazil* had been immediately followed by a study of those of the Lake of Neuchâtel, ultimately extended into a *History of the Fresh Water Fishes of Central Europe*. This publication, illustrated by many beautiful colored lithographic plates, was put out between 1839 and 1842 by Agassiz's own printing-press established at Neuchâtel in 1838. Between 1837 and 1845 Agassiz printed the results of his investigations on living and fossil mollusks, culminating (1840–45) in his *Études critiques sur les Mollusques fossiles*, with nearly 100 plates. His large quarto, *Nomenclator Zoologi-*

cus, appeared in successive instalments between 1842 and 1846. This tremendously laborious, invaluable work comprised years of patient research. In 1844–45 he published an important *Monograph on the Fossil Fishes of the Old Red or Devonian of the British Isles and Russia,* based mainly on the famous Hugh Miller's collection from Cromarty, Scotland. Other museum and private collections had also been generously placed at his disposal by friends in Britain, where he had visited in 1834 and again the following year. His life-long attachments for Buckland, Lyell, Sir Philip Egerton, Lord Cole, and others, began at this time. To them he was deeply indebted for financial aid as well as for scientific assistance.

With the close of 1835, Agassiz's modest home was gladdened by the birth of his son Alexander, named for his best friend and brother-in-law, Braun. Later came two daughters, Ida (1837) and Pauline (1841). To these children Madame Cécile gave the best of care. Manifestly it was impossible that she should at the same time, and hampered by desperately insufficient means, continue to assist her husband with drawings and work on manuscript.

The summer of 1836 was one of deep significance to Agassiz. Passing it with his wife and child at Bex, near the home of his friend Jean de Charpentier, "a rare and perfect type of savant," he now became a convinced adherent of the glacial theory previously expounded in several papers by the civil engineer Venetz and by de Charpentier. Not only so. With amazing perspicacity, his mind soon leaped to the conclusion that probably a portion of Europe far greater than the Rhône Valley had been subjected to a period of extreme cold. To designate this "glacial epoch," he afterward employed the brief term, "Ice Age," coined by Schimper,—with whom he had long discussions on the new problem. On returning to Neuchâtel he found plain evidences of glacial action in that region and about Bienne. During the winter he gave a public lecture on the subject and the following summer delivered his famous "Discourse" at Neuchâtel, at the opening of the conference of the Helvetic Society of Natural Science, of which he was president. The address contained some erroneous hypotheses, finally abandoned by their author; but it was of great value in that it extended and illuminated de Charpentier's observations, at the same time presenting a tremendous new idea, that of glacial action from the North Pole to the Mediterranean and the Caspian Seas.

Undismayed by the storm of criticism which ensued, Agassiz now inaugurated a notable series

Agassiz

of investigations of glacial phenomena in Europe. These continued throughout the succeeding decade, according to an elaborate plan in which his intimate friend, the noted geologist, Arnold Guyot, his secretary-collaborator, Édouard Desor, and several other associates were engaged. The combined results now confirmed in detail the debated general hypothesis of glacial action and distribution. To supplement these conclusions with more specialized data, Agassiz in 1840 established headquarters in the so-called Hôtel des Neuchâtelois on the great median moraine of the lower Aar glacier. This shelter had for roof the projecting surface of a large boulder, with a stone wall on one side and a blanket door. From that picturesque base and its more roomy successors were computed year after year the rate of motion of the glacier as a whole, the difference in rate of upper, middle, lower, and side portions, the amount of annual melting, and numerous allied phenomena. The changing relative positions of eighteen prominent rocks on the glacier and of a crosswise series of stakes set upright in the ice entered into many of the calculations. The huge mass, it was found, behaved somewhat like a viscid fluid, for the stakes in the middle of the glacier moved the most rapidly (even though very slowly) and as they moved they slanted forward. It was thus apparent that gravity controlled the glacier,—also that it traveled fastest in the middle and at the surface, and was not shoved on, as had been asserted, by the freezing of water underneath.

In the summer of 1841 Agassiz caused himself to be lowered into one of the glacier "wells," a perilous undertaking in which he was able to observe clearly the interesting blue-banded (laminated) structure of the ice to a depth of over eighty feet. Other observations of extreme interest were launched and completed. Agassiz's first comprehensive discussion of the subject as a whole, *Études sur les Glaciers,* in two volumes, appeared toward the end of 1840. This was followed in 1846 by the *Système Glaciare,* and in 1847 by *Nouvelles études et expériences sur les Glaciers actuels.* In 1844, also, Agassiz allowed Desor to publish a popular account of the work in the High Alps, with an excellent paper by the leader himself.

In the autumn of 1840, in company with his good friend, Dr. Buckland, Dean of Westminster, Agassiz started out on a "glacier hunt" in Great Britain. The resulting discoveries sufficiently vindicated his expanding theory of general glacial action wherever the earth's surface bears drift material and polished or striated erratic boulders. Buckland, hitherto in only partial

agreement, now publicly adhered to this doctrine, having also previously brought Lyell over to Agassiz's side. Humboldt, strangely, never became convinced; and he tried to induce Agassiz to abandon the "icy" researches, which nevertheless continued for many more years, proving the glaciation of a large part of both hemispheres, and leading finally to the tracing by others of several distinct glacial periods. The substance of Agassiz's permanent conclusions has now been universally accepted, although much additional information has since been gathered by others from mountain chains and plateaux the world over.

Certain matters, meanwhile, had been going badly at Neuchâtel. Affairs at the great lithographic establishment, too pretentious by far, had become increasingly involved, and in 1845 it was closed of necessity. In Agassiz's other multiform undertakings, also, his impetuosity, which for a time seemingly overcame all obstacles, much more than exhausted his slender resources, while frequent gifts from outside failed to ward off impending disaster. Dinkel and Vogt (the latter had acted as his assistant for five years) both left Neuchâtel in 1844. In 1845 the situation made it imperative for Agassiz's relatives to extricate him from serious financial embarrassment. In the meantime his wife, a frail, sensitive woman, overburdened by cares and sorely tried by the presence of Desor and Vogt in the household, longed to go back to her old home. The public announcement of a gift from the King of Prussia to defray Agassiz's expenses in a previously projected trip to America allowed this move to be made in May 1845. Except for a brief visit to Carlsruhe before his departure for the United States, Agassiz never saw his first wife again, for later when conditions might otherwise have permitted their reunion, she had already (1848) passed away, a victim of tuberculosis. In due time, however, the three children joined him in Cambridge, where, as will be seen, they grew up in fortunate surroundings.

During Agassiz's fourteen brilliant years at Neuchâtel he had refused several complimentary offers elsewhere, namely, to Heidelberg, Lausanne, and Geneva. Now, however, his departure in March 1846 was clouded in the minds of all by the well-founded conviction that, though ostensibly only temporary, his absence would be permanent, and it must have been with deep emotion on both sides that he took leave of the manifold associations into which he had prodigally poured himself. In Paris, at a meeting of the Geological Society of France, he so carefully and eloquently expounded the glacial theory as to

Agassiz

leave no ground for the former French opposition. At the Jardin des Plantes, at work as of old, this time on echinoderms, he conquered everything and every one by his enthusiasm, "sometimes raised to perfect rapture." In England he met again with pleasure the scientific leaders, among them especially Lyell, who had been the means of arranging for the Lowell Institute lectures he was to give soon after his arrival in Boston. At the end of September 1846, embarking from Liverpool, he left the Old World for the New with its untried fields—"a land," as he afterward said, "where Nature was rich, but tools and workmen few and traditions none." A great adventure it turned out to be, lasting until his death, and one that put America permanently in his debt. In the words of Jules Marcou, "American natural history had found its leader."

Though mentally despondent and burdened by financial obligations it took many years to fulfil, Agassiz threw himself with customary avidity into the new environment. The interval between landing and the beginning of his lecture engagement he employed in making the acquaintance of a number of scientific workers in Boston and along the Atlantic seaboard, his journeys taking him as far south as Washington. Institutions, collections, people, manners, and customs compelled his interest, frequently his admiration. On the other hand he was disappointed to find so little official scientific activity at Washington, where the Smithsonian Institution had not yet begun to function. His first lecture at once revealed to a large, enthusiastic audience those charms of intellect and personality which soon endeared him not only to Boston but to all New England. Again it was the same story. Absolute absorption in his calling, coupled with an engaging spirit of democracy, brought rich and poor alike to his side wherever he went. A contagious enthusiasm and warmth surrounded him like an atmosphere. The remark, "One has less need of an overcoat in passing Agassiz's house than by any other in Cambridge," expressed afterward a common feeling. His early establishment, however, shared by several old associates who now had joined him, assumed more the character of a laboratory than a home. It was again "a hive of industry," but to support it financially required too many lectures on the part of the host. As a result Agassiz soon suffered his first serious illness, an attack of nervous prostration.

The summer of 1847, with his first trip on a Coast Survey steamer as guest of the government, opened up a fascinating new world to the mountain-bred naturalist. It was followed

by many other similar excursions, including one from Boston around the Horn to San Francisco in 1872. The generous coöperation and friendship of Dr. Alexander Dallas Bache, then head of the Coast Survey and a founder of the National Museum, played a part in inducing Agassiz to remain in the United States. Disturbed political conditions abroad, with the ending of his service to the King of Prussia, were also important factors in the decision. In the spring of 1848 Agassiz accepted the chair of natural history in the recently organized Lawrence Scientific School at Harvard. From that time on, despite highly tempting though belated offers from Europe, this land increasingly claimed him for her own. The new position brought him into intimate relations with the distinguished circle of scholars, both literary and scientific, then grouped around the college. The *Evening Traveller* of Boston printed his local lectures of 1848–49, in full, the day following their delivery, reprinted each such issue, and finally published them in pamphlet form. A fortunate fact, for the expenses of his growing household made heavy demands upon his purse, always emptied in advance. His roof as usual sheltered a long succession of workers, twenty-three in all, twenty-two of whom came from Neuchâtel. Meanwhile he had taken his customary place in the scientific activities of the country at large. Almost immediately, moreover, he began to gather, in an old shanty set on piles by the Charles River, the collections which formed the basis of the great Harvard Museum of Comparative Zoology, his enduring monument.

In the summer of 1848 he led a party of seventeen to the northern and eastern shores of Lake Superior. At night Agassiz habitually talked upon some outstanding feature of the day; with a piece of black canvas, chalk, and a specimen he was always sufficiently provided for a lecture. The results of this important expedition were embodied in a fine volume, beautifully illustrated, which appeared in March 1850 and served in some sense as model for succeeding publications of the kind in America. Early in 1850, he married Elizabeth Cabot Cary of Boston, sister-in-law of his dear friend Prof. C. C. Felton, a woman of superior parts who proved a tower of strength and devotion to him and his. Young Alexander had already arrived in Cambridge; the two daughters were soon brought over by Agassiz's kindly cousin, Auguste Mayor, for many years a resident of Brooklyn. In 1856, feeling the pressing need of additional means for the household, Mrs. Agassiz, with her husband's enthusiastic coöperation, opened a select school for girls. In this highly successful

Agassiz

venture of eight years' duration, she had the help of his two older children. Not only did the enlarged income relieve Agassiz from the strain of public lectures but it also enabled him to pay off his European debts.

At the beginning of 1851, Agassiz headed a ten weeks' exploration of the Florida Reefs, inaugurated by Prof. Bache in the interests of the Coast Survey. The complete report of this investigation was published in 1882 by Alexander Agassiz. It was accompanied by very fine plates made under the author's supervision. In December 1851 Agassiz began his winter lectures as professor of comparative anatomy at the Medical College of Charleston, S. C. The climate, unfortunately, proved unsuited to him, and he therefore reluctantly resigned at the end of two years. On the way north in 1852 he gave a course of lectures at the Smithsonian Institution, with whose distinguished secretary, Prof. Joseph Henry, he was already on intimate terms. Later, as one of the board of regents of the institution, Agassiz interested himself deeply in its welfare.

Toward the close of his first decade in the United States, another work of colossal proportions began to shape itself in Agassiz's brain. This was to consist of *Contributions to the Natural History of the United States,* in ten volumes, each complete in itself. The response to an appeal for public subscription was astounding, 2,500 people promising to buy the set at a rate of twelve dollars a volume. Four only were finally completed, and of these only Part I, the *Essay on Classification,* had popular interest, the rest being of a highly specialized character. The *Essay* Marcou regards as "by far the most important contribution of Agassiz to natural history during his life in America," more exactly, to the philosophical aspects of the subject. But its most valuable point is the recognition that "the changes which animals undergo during their embryonic growth coincide with the order of succession of the fossils of the same type in past geological ages." Already Karl Ernst von Baer had shown that, as a rule, the life history of the individual repeats the history of the type. Agassiz now threw back this generalization into geologic time. The *Essay* may be regarded as the culmination of the thought of those who, with Cuvier, noted the succession of types in geological history but saw no genetic connection, one with another, between any of the four great classes then recognized—Vertebrates, Articulates, Mollusks, and Radiates. Later studies have broken down the supposed barriers between these types and between geological ages

as well. The four classes, we now know, are tied together in the simple basal forms from which they diverge; and one geologic era was not marked by the sweeping away of all living forms before the onset of the next.

Agassiz's championship of Cuvier's views, now wholly belated, led him to oppose persistently the Darwinian conception of evolution with natural selection as the moving force. Furthermore, always essentially an idealist, he regarded his own investigations not as studies of animals and plants as such, but as glimpses into the divine plans of which their structures are the expression. To his mind, divine ideas were especially embodied in animal life, the species being the "thought unit." The marvel of structural affinity—unity of plan—in creatures of widely diverse habits and outward appearance, he took to be a result of the association of ideas in the divine mind, not proofs of common descent. "Life seemed to him controlled by something more than the mechanism of self-adjusting forces." That "material form is the cover of the spirit" was to him "fundamental and self-evident."

Referring to his early work on fossil fishes, Agassiz once said to David Starr Jordan: "At that time I was on the verge of anticipating Darwinism, but I found that the highest fishes were those that came first." That is, the sharks, the most primitive in some respects, had the largest brains, the most specialized teeth and muscular system. Judging from the nervous system alone, therefore, they should be regarded as the highest of fishes. But he had fallen into the error of supposing that evolutionary divergence could be measured in terms of "progress." Sharks in most regards are primitive as compared with the welter of bony fishes which followed them. Natural selection while bringing about progress in certain lines—or increased specialization through more varied relation to environment—by no means involves universal or even general progress.

The four large quarto issues of *Contributions to the Natural History of the United States* included (besides the *Essay on Classification*) an exhaustive study of the embryology of American turtles, dedicated to Döllinger, as well as two volumes on "radiate" animals, all four illustrated by many extremely fine plates. These monographs constitute Agassiz's last elaborate additions to biological knowledge. The ravages of ill health, added to increasing absorption in other interests, put a stop to further undertakings in the great series projected. Agassiz's fiftieth birthday, May 28, 1857, saw the completion of the first volume—a consummation to which he had passionately devoted himself. The event was furthermore marked by a charming tribute on the part of his students. This consisted of a midnight program of delightful music, supplemented by flowers and affectionate congratulations. The following evening, at a special dinner given Agassiz by the famous "Saturday Club," to which he and many other distinguished men belonged, Longfellow contributed the well-known poem, "The Fiftieth Birthday of Agassiz," full of tender feeling. The summer of 1859 Agassiz passed in Europe with his wife and younger daughter, renewing family ties and professional associations. In London, Paris, and Geneva he was received with acclaim by the scientific groups; he refused a brilliant offer in connection with the Museum of Natural History in the Jardin des Plantes, and other glowing possibilities. In September he returned to America, having meanwhile secured important additions for the institution at Cambridge which had already begun to engross his attention. His plan was to establish a splendid zoological museum, where enormous working collections for the specialist, as well as scientifically arranged displays for general instruction, could be safely housed, with the specimens so placed as to reveal their comparative relations in structure, together with their distribution in time and space. During the prosecution of this scheme, Agassiz, by his iron determination in the face of difficulties, achieved the apparently impossible. The official attitude was strikingly emphasized in a remark by one of the members of the Massachusetts legislature: "I don't know much about museums but I, for one, will not stand by and see so brave a man struggle without aid." Harvard College gave the necessary site; the corner-stone was laid in June 1859; state appropriations and private gifts, a large part of the latter from members of Agassiz's own family, provided for the continuance and development of the museum until it was turned over to Harvard University. Its profound influence during all these years, as a center of scientific research and study, can hardly be estimated.

Agassiz's entrance into the faculty of Harvard College, moreover, marked the beginning of a new era in American education as a whole. He has been called our first university builder, because of his unprecedented emphasis on advanced and original work as factors in mental training. To know something well is "the backbone of education." He laid great stress on the direct study of nature; and the classes in biology became crowded with eager disciples. Some of

his associates took alarm at this. It was "making the college lop-sided," they complained. Even broad-minded Emerson suggested that "something should be done to check the rush towards natural history." Agassiz replied that "the remedy is not to cut off the vigorous growth, but to stimulate the rest. I, for one, would be willing to run a race with any of my colleagues." Each of his students spread his educational idea far and wide. Indeed, during the latter part of the last century there was hardly an active naturalist in America or Japan who had not either studied under Agassiz or been a pupil of one of his students. He also took a vigorous interest in the work of the lower schools. The science they taught was mostly of the routine order, "fourteen weeks" of memorizing in one subject after another. Whenever opportunity arose he strenuously urged a better method. In speaking before teachers he always displayed the actual material with which he had to deal. "There will never be good teaching in natural science," he said, "nor in anything else until similar methods are brought into use." He also insisted that a year or two of natural history would give the best kind of training for any sort of mental work. Referring to the prescribed "classical course," he used to say that "Harvard is a respectable high school where they teach the dregs of education."

The spring of 1865 brought to fulfilment the long-cherished dream of exploration in Brazil. The expedition of nineteen months, shared by Mrs. Agassiz, six assistants, and as many more volunteers, was primarily financed by Nathaniel Thayer of Boston, a close friend of the leader. Additional aid extended by government and steamship officials led Agassiz to say that he felt "like a spoiled child of the country" and that he hoped God would give him "strength to repay in devotion to her institutions, and to her scientific and intellectual development, all that her citizens had done for him." (As evidence of this desire, he had already, at the beginning of the Civil War, become a naturalized citizen of the United States.) In Brazil, distinguished courtesies from the enlightened Emperor, Dom Pedro, as well as other marked favors, lent an air of almost triumphal progress to the trip. Enormous collections were made and brought back to the Museum; certain observations, also, strengthened Agassiz's conception of the universality of the Ice Age, though his conclusions as to the Amazon Valley have not been accepted. A detailed account of daily doings is to be found in *A Journey in Brazil* (1868) written mainly by his wife, with certain additions by Agassiz.

Agassiz

The next few years were devoted to routine occupations broken, as always, by outside efforts. These included an opportunity (1868) to study glacial phenomena in the Rocky Mountain and contiguous regions; a course of lectures as non-resident professor at the infant Cornell University (1868), accompanied by observations on the interesting local ice-action; an important Coast Survey dredging-expedition (1869) in Cuban and adjacent waters under the leadership of the competent Count de Pourtalès, Agassiz's one-time pupil at Neuchâtel, now colleague and co-worker; and an admirably exhaustive memoir on Humboldt's life and influence, delivered at the Humboldt Centennial Celebration (1869) fathered by the Boston Society of Natural History. By the fall of 1869 the strain had been too heavy, and Agassiz suffered a serious attack of apoplexy which prevented his return to the Museum until November 1870. There, however, under the able administration (since 1865) of his son, assisted by a distinguished corps of adult workers, both American and foreign, and a group of ardent students, affairs had gone well. In December 1871 apparently quite restored, Agassiz, accompanied again by his wife, embarked on the Coast Survey vessel *Hassler* for the long trip to California. De Pourtalès and Dr. Franz Steindachner, the latter an authority on ichthyology from Vienna and a member of the Museum staff, served as scientific assistants on the voyage. Results from the deep-sea dredging, on which Agassiz had distinctly counted, were disappointing, because of defective apparatus. On the other hand, he was rewarded by acquaintance with the impressive glaciers and clear evidences of past glaciation around Magellan Strait and among the Chiloë Islands, remarking later that those observations alone amply repaid him for all his trouble and fatigue. This was far greater than had been expected. In San Francisco, for example, he felt too weary to undertake a trip to Yosemite Valley or to the Giant Sequoias of Calaveras County. What a pity that Nature's flaming apostle should have missed, by so narrow a margin, two of her finest manifestations!

It was to bring sound methods into general nature study in America that Agassiz, only a few months before his death, took up with old-time ardor the then novel idea of a summer school of science where teachers should be trained to see nature and to teach others how to see it. Through the generosity of John Anderson of New York, who deeded his island of Penikese in Buzzard's Bay and added an endowment of $50,000, the Anderson School of Natural History was opened in July 1873. From the hundreds

who applied for admission Agassiz selected about thirty men and twenty women—teachers, students, and naturalists of various grades. These fifty, he thought, would carry back to their schools and laboratories right views of scientific teaching. Each center would then radiate influence until proper methods in science should gradually spread throughout the educational system. The one new building on the island served a double purpose of laboratory and dormitory, while an old barn had been made into dining and lecture room. At the head of one of the tables Agassiz sat, a blackboard by his side, so that he would often lecture during the meal about a fish the remains of which lay upon the plates.

Agassiz's daily talks at Penikese covered a wide range of subjects: the personalities of European naturalists, the history of geology, the glacial system, methods of teaching. Eloquent in the best sense, though occasionally quaint in diction and aberrant in accent, they embodied to some extent his general confession of faith. He cared little for dogma and ceremonial, but found in Nature a constant revelation of his God. "I feel more vexed at impropriety in a scientific laboratory than in a church," said he. "The study of Nature is intercourse with the Highest Mind. You should never trifle with Nature. At her lowest her works are the works of the highest powers, the highest something in the universe, in whatever way we look at it. . . . This is the charm of study from Nature herself; she brings us back to absolute truth whenever we wander." Subtle distinctions of theology did not concern him in the least. "In Europe," he once remarked, "I have been accused of deriving my scientific ideas from the church. In America I have been called an infidel because I will not let my church-going friends pat me on the head."

His inherent friendliness captured every one. His robust, well-proportioned figure, somewhat above medium height though then slightly bent with years, was surmounted by a superb head. Beautiful, keen, brown eyes lighted up a large, round face, olive in color, while his rather sparse hair retained to considerable extent its original chestnut tone. One could still easily see that in youth he must have been extremely strong and handsome.

In October 1873 Agassiz commenced his final course of lectures at the Museum. His last article, one of several projected under the title, "Evolution and Permanence of Type," a justification of his attitude toward the current trend in biology, appeared shortly after his death, in the *Atlantic Monthly*. He died in Cambridge on Dec. 14, 1873. The funeral was attended by a large concourse of distinguished people and devoted friends, in addition to all of the great scholastic body he had honored by his presence. His grave at Mount Auburn is marked by a huge boulder taken from the Aar Glacier, not far from the site of the "Hôtel des Neuchâtelois," and is shaded by pines brought from the heights above Neuchâtel.

[Elizabeth Cary Agassiz, *Louis Agassiz, His Life and Correspondence*, 2 vols. (1885), especially important for the inclusion of many letters to and from eminent men of science; Jules Marcou, *Life, Letters, and Works of Louis Agassiz*, 2 vols. (1896), a comprehensive work, valuable for the range and accuracy of details, including an annotated list of American and European publications concerning Agassiz, also a complete catalogue of his scientific papers, 425 in number; Arnold Guyot, *Memoir of Louis Agassiz* (1879); Lane Cooper, *Louis Agassiz as a Teacher* (1917), a very useful little book especially for its inclusion of the testimony of early students as to Agassiz's methods; C. F. Holder, *Agassiz* (1910); B. G. Wilder, "Louis Agassiz, Teacher," *Harvard Grads. Mag.* (1907); Theodore Lyman, "Recollections of Louis Agassiz," *Atlantic Mo.*, XXXIII, 1874; David Starr Jordan, "Agassiz at Penikese," *Pop. Sci. Mo.*, XL, 1892, reprinted, with additions, in *Sci. Sketches* (1895); David Starr Jordan, "Anderson School at Penikese," in *Days of a Man*, I (1923); David Starr Jordan, "Louis Agassiz, Teacher," *Sci. Mo.*, Nov. 1923.]

D. S. J.
J. K. J.

AGATE, ALFRED T. (Feb. 14, 1812–Jan. 5, 1846), miniature painter, illustrator, was born at Sparta, N. Y., a son of Thomas and Hannah Agate, natives of England; he was a brother of the artist Frederick Styles Agate [*q.v.*]. Trained as a miniaturist at New York, he became in 1832 an associate of the National Academy of Design. He joined the scientific corps of the Wilkes Exploring Expedition, his name appearing on the roster of the *Relief* as "portrait and botanical artist." Capt. Charles Wilkes, writing of the personnel of the expedition, said: "To Messrs. Drayton and Agate, the Artists of the Expedition, I feel it due to make known how constantly and faithfully they have performed their duties. The illustrations of these volumes will bear ample testimony to the amount of their labors, and the accuracy with which they have been executed." Examination of the publications that followed the expedition, in which many of Agate's drawings of flora and fauna are included, show that Capt. Wilkes's appreciation of them was not fulsome; they are beautifully and delicately made. Agate's membership in the National Academy was changed from "associate" to "honorary" in 1840, probably on account of his change of residence. He died at Washington, D. C., according to the *Academy Register*, which, mistakenly, gave his age as twenty-eight. The Academy's permanent collection contains one of Agate's little pictures, "Cocoanut Grove," dated 1840 and given in 1902

by James D. Smillie. Agate was married to Elizabeth Hill Kennedy, but left no children.

[The chief sources of information regarding Alfred T. Agate are the *Reg. of the Natl. Acad. of Design* (N.Y.); the collections of the Naval Records and Library, Navy Dept., Washington, D. C.; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Westchester County, N.Y.* (1886). A sketch in the *Allgemeines Lexicon der Bildenden Künstler, von der Antike bis zur Gegenwart* (1907) by Edmund von Mach, is inadequate and inaccurate.] F.W.C.

AGATE, FREDERICK STYLES (Jan. 29, 1803–May 1, 1844), painter, brother of Alfred T. Agate [*q.v.*], was the son of Thomas and Hannah Agate, who were born at Shipley, England (manuscript letter of E. Agate Foster, M.D.) and settled at Sparta, Westchester County, N.Y. As a boy he made notable drawings of animals and at the age of fifteen he was sent to New York to study with John Rubens Smith, an English mezzotinter, who, settling in America, had become a popular teacher of drawing and painting. Agate at once showed himself a careful and correct draughtsman. In 1825 he and his fellow student Thomas S. Cummings [*q.v.*], afterwards treasurer of the National Academy and its historian, left Smith to paint in oil and copy from the antique under S. F. B. Morse at the Academy of Fine Arts. Finding at this academy "no liberal and accommodating spirit," they organized a coöperative class to meet at the members' rooms. The New York Historical Society soon extended to them the use of a room, and thus was the National Academy of Design "initiated and managed exclusively by the artists." In 1827 Agate set up at 152 Broadway as historical and portrait painter. He had already shown two pictures at the National Academy's first exhibition, May 1826. Thereafter, down to his death, he was a regular exhibitor, in 1829 contributing fifteen paintings, and in several other years ten or more. His "Ugolino" and the "Old Oaken Bucket" of 1834 were especially popular. His success with them encouraged Agate to go abroad. In 1834 he went to Paris and thence to Florence, where he made copies for his friend and patron James Boorman. He started a large canvas "Jesuit Missionaries among the Indians" on which he was working at Rome when seized with a severe and nearly mortal illness. His health continuing poor, he sailed from Leghorn to New York in 1835. Despite advancing tuberculosis, Agate continued to paint and send pictures to the National Academy exhibitions. In the winter of 1843–44 several New York artists met frequently to criticize each other's compositions. While attending one of these meetings on a stormy evening, Agate was fatally stricken, and was sent to his parents' home at Sparta, where "he lingered until about the beginning of May." On his death, the National Academy passed a resolution of regret in which it was stated: "We do not believe he ever had an enemy or was ever jealous of another's successes."

Agate's works belonged to a period in which the mission of art was generally held to be moralistic as well as esthetic, and he himself, a profoundly religious man, was "of opinion that mind should have precedence of mere skill and manner; that simple imitations of what is called nature, without aiming at that which awakens a responsive feeling in the heart, ought to be viewed in no other light than as a curious display of human dexterity." But his own compositions, earnestly fashioned in the light of this conception, have not stood the test of time. They are now regarded as of antiquarian rather than artistic interest.

[A comprehensive account by F. W. Edmonds, *Knickerbocker Mag.*, XXIV, 157 ff.; brief biog. by H. T. Tuckerman, *The Book of the Artists* (1867); references to Agate's professional activities and exhibition pictures in T. S. Cummings, *Hist. Annals of the Natl. Acad. of Design* (1865). The correct date of the artist's birth, sometimes given as 1807, is established by a headstone in the Sparta cemetery.] F.W.C.

AGNEW, CORNELIUS REA (Aug. 8, 1830–Apr. 18, 1888), New York ophthalmologist and medical organizer, was of Huguenot, Scotch, and North of Ireland ancestry. His grandfather came to America in 1786, settling first in Philadelphia but moving soon to New York City, where he was engaged in the tobacco and shipping business, a member of a firm which was continued by his son William, who married Elizabeth Thomson, daughter of a Pennsylvania surveyor. Their son Cornelius was educated in private schools and entered Columbia College at the age of fifteen. Upon graduating in 1849 he studied medicine with J. Kearny Rodgers, surgeon to the New York Eye and Ear Infirmary and professor of anatomy in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, the medical department of Columbia. Young Agnew went through this school, took his M.D. in 1852, served as "walker" or interne in the New York Hospital, and in 1854 began practice in a small mining settlement on Lake Superior. A year there and he returned to New York to accept the position of surgeon to the Eye and Ear Infirmary with the proviso that he first go abroad to make a special study of the diseases of the eye and ear. In Dublin he was under William Wilde; in London, William Bowman; in Paris, Sichel and Desmarres. When he returned to his native city he began general practice, married (1856) Mary Nash, daughter of Lora Nash, a merchant, and served as surgeon to the Eye and

Ear Infirmary until April 1864. Previous to the opening of the Civil War (1858) Gov. Morgan appointed Agnew surgeon-general of the militia of the state and when the war began, medical director of the New York State Hospital for Volunteers. It was in this position that he gave evidence of the unusual executive ability which characterized him through life. He was one of the organizers of the famous United States Sanitary Commission, which did so much for the soldiers during the war. In conjunction with Dr. Wolcott Gibbs and Dr. William H. Van Buren, Agnew prepared the plans for the Judiciary Square Hospital at Washington, the model for the pavilion system of hospitals. Other evidences of his gift for organization were the Union League Club in New York, which he and three others started; the School of Mines at Columbia (1864); an ophthalmic clinic at the College of Physicians and Surgeons; the Brooklyn Eye and Ear Hospital, and the Manhattan Eye and Ear Hospital. From 1869 until his death Agnew was clinical professor of the diseases of the eye and ear at the College of Physicians and Surgeons. As a lecturer he was fluent and practical. He wrote a moderate amount for the medical press; he devised an operation for divergent strabismus (squint) that was described in the *Transactions of the American Ophthalmological Society* for 1886, and his "operation for thickened capsule" was used widely by operators in this field of medicine. He was a man of medium height, of slender build, dark complexion, and black hair. He had a dignified bearing and an engaging smile.

[Sketches by R. French Stone in *Biogs. of Eminent Am. Surgeons* (2nd ed., 1898) and by Thos. Hall Shastid in *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920), ed. by Kelly and Burrage; W. B. Atkinson, *Physicians and Surgeons of the U.S.* (1878); *Universities and Their Sons* (1898–1900), ed. by J. L. Chamberlain, II (1899).] W.L.B.

AGNEW, DAVID HAYES (Nov. 24, 1818–Mar. 22, 1892), surgeon, teacher of anatomy and surgery, was born in Lancaster County, Pa., of a family which, it was said, could be traced through many generations of North of Ireland and Scotch ancestry to Norman progenitors. In America the Agnews had been prominent in the history of Pennsylvania for nearly two centuries. Agnew's father, Robert, was a physician, his mother had married as first husband the Rev. Ebenezer Henderson. The son was educated at Moscow College in Chester County, at Jefferson College at Canonsburg, and for a year at Delaware College, Newark, Del. He studied medicine with his father and was graduated from the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania in 1838, before he had attained his majority. He

then went into general practice near Nobleville, in Chester County. In 1841 he was married to Margaret, daughter of Samuel Irwin, an iron-founder in the same county. When he had been five years in a country practice, and had found his ambition to study anatomy and surgery ungratified, he joined with his brothers-in-law to establish the iron-founding firm of Irwin & Agnew; but it failed in 1846, through lack of proper transit facilities and a general business depression. He then returned to the practice of medicine in Chester and Lancaster Counties and after two years moved to Philadelphia, where in 1852 he bought and resuscitated the decadent Philadelphia School of Anatomy. There he worked early and late, sometimes being in the school from twelve to eighteen hours a day, lecturing and demonstrating to ever-growing classes who held him in affectionate regard. At one time when the quarters in Chant St. had been enlarged, the class numbered 267, the students coming from the University of Pennsylvania and from the Jefferson Medical College, near at hand, and from the South. Agnew had the capacity of the Scot for hard labor, and the pertinacity,—and he acquired the reputation of being the clearest and most practical lecturer and demonstrator of the time. For ten years he maintained this school—often personally securing much of the material for dissection—and eventually he organized a school of operative surgery. In 1854 he was made a surgeon to the Philadelphia Hospital where he could teach clinical surgery, and be assistant to Henry H. Smith, professor of surgery at the University. At the opening of the Civil War, Agnew, then at the age of forty-two, was known as an able operator and a sound consultant. During the war he served chiefly as surgeon in charge of the Hestonville Hospital and as consulting surgeon at the Mower General Hospital, though he was employed also by the government elsewhere. He became an expert in gun-shot wounds. In 1863 he was elected surgeon to the Wills Eye Hospital; in 1865, surgeon to the Pennsylvania Hospital; in 1867, surgeon to the Orthopædic Hospital; in 1870, professor of clinical surgery, and in the following year professor of surgery in the University of Pennsylvania, retaining the last position until 1889, when he retired as professor emeritus.

Agnew grew constantly in skill and reputation. His clinics were crowded, as was his waiting-room; he was the chief consultant in the case of President James A. Garfield when he was shot by Guiteau, in 1881; in 1888 he was given a complimentary banquet, attended by over 200 physicians, in the foyer of the Academy of

Music, at which J. M. Da Costa and Lewis A. Sayre spoke and Weir Mitchell read a poem; and next year he was elected president of the Philadelphia College of Physicians, a crowning honor. His writings comprise some sixty-six titles, including, besides addresses on sundry occasions, *Practical Anatomy; A New Arrangement of the London Dissector* (1856); *Anatomy in its Relations to Medicine and Surgery* (1859–64); *Clinical Reports* (1859–71); and his *magnum opus, Treatise on the Principles and Practice of Surgery,* the three successive volumes of which bear the dates 1878, 1881, and 1883. This book set forth his enormous experience, embraced every department of surgery, and was written in a clear, judicial manner so that his well-balanced consideration of points in diagnosis, his lucid explanations of the surgical anatomy of diseases and injuries were of the highest value to the student.

Agnew was six feet tall and possessed a splendid physique. As an operator he was calm, never flurried in the face of emergencies; he could handle the knife with either hand, ambidextrousness having been acquired early in life when a finger on his right hand had a runround; so that spectators marveled at the exactness of his operating and at his judgment. As a consultant he was most courteous to his brother practitioners, quickly ferreting out the important facts in the case, and advising appropriate treatment. His calm, well-balanced disposition endeared him to all, for he was never irritable, even in the operating-room. When he himself suffered acutely with angina pectoris in late life, he bore the pain with equanimity. Active to the last he died of arteriosclerosis of the heart complicated by kidney disease and diabetes, in his seventy-fourth year.

[J. Howe Adams, *Hist. of the Life of D. Hayes Agnew* (1892); J. Wm. White, "Memoir of D. Hayes Agnew," *Trans. Coll. of Physicians, Phila.* (1893), XV, 29–65; De Forest Willard, "Biog. Sketch of D. Hayes Agnew," *Internatl. Medic. Mag.* (1893), I, 1–8.]

W. L. B.

AGNEW, ELIZA (Feb. 2, 1807–June 14, 1883), missionary, daughter of James and Jane Agnew, was born in New York City, which was the place of her education and her residence for nearly thirty-two years. On Dec. 28, 1823, she was converted during a revival meeting and joined the Orange Street Presbyterian Church. From her school days she cherished the resolve to enter mission work, but until her thirty-third year she devoted herself to service in her home, in the "Sabbath-school," and in the distribution of Scripture and tracts. By 1839 her only close home ties had been severed by the death of her parents, and she turned to the American Board of Boston and secured appointment to their Ceylon Mission. She sailed from Boston on July 30, 1839, on the *Black Warrior,* and arrived at Jaffna, Ceylon, Jan. 17, 1840. In 1842 she was stationed at Oodooville (Uduvil), just north of Jaffna, as "teacher" in the Female Boarding School. Here she spent forty-three years without furlough, save for one brief vacation in South India. She was a pioneer in Ceylon in work for girls and women. *The Missionary Herald* (September 1883, p. 330) said of her, "It is largely owing to the work she was permitted to do that female education is more advanced here (Ceylon) than in almost any other heathen land." Owing to her presence the religious history of the school was truly remarkable. She was a woman of prayer and was much concerned for the spiritual welfare of her charges. They in turn trusted her and accepted her example and guidance. Out of 1,000 individuals of three generations who passed under her influence, more than 600 adopted the Christian faith. She visited the graduates and ex-pupils in their homes, counseling them in matters of housekeeping and in affairs of the spirit. In 1879 she resigned as principal of the school and removed to Manepay, a town to the west, to pass her remaining years with the Christians there. The last two years of her life were spent in the home of the Misses M. and M. W. Leitch, missionaries in Manepay of the American Board. In June 1883 she had a paralytic stroke and died. She was buried in Oodooville near the school over which she had presided.

[Annie Ryder Gracey, *Eminent Missionary Women* (1898); M. and M. W. Leitch, *Seven Years in Ceylon* (1890); *Missionary Review of the World* (1890–97).]

J. C. A.

AGNUS, FELIX (May 5, 1839–Oct. 31, 1925), Union soldier, newspaperman, was born in Lyons, France, the son of Étienne and Anne (Bernerra) Agnus. After attending for a while the College of Jolie Clair near Montrouge, he went to sea and in the course of four years sailed around the globe, visiting St. Helena, the west coast of Africa and the Cape of Good Hope, Madagascar, Chile, and Peru, and returning to France by way of Cape Horn. For three years he studied sculpture. During the war with the Austrians he served in the 3rd Regiment of Zouaves, took part, May 20, 1859, in the battle of Montebello, and later was detailed to Garibaldi's corps in the Italian lakes region. Then he came to America, settling first in Newport, R. I., and later finding a place with Tiffany & Co. in New York as a sculptor and chaser. On May 9, 1861, less than a month after the bombardment of Fort Sumter,

the young Frenchman donned the bright-hued uniform he had worn under Garibaldi and enlisted in the 5th New York Infantry. A month later, on June 10, he was in the battle of Big Bethel and distinguished himself by saving the life of Capt. Judson Kilpatrick. For this piece of gallantry he was shortly after made a second-lieutenant. At Gaines's Mill, June 27, 1862, he was shot through the right shoulder. The injury caused the loss of the joint. In Baltimore, where he was sent to recuperate, he was the guest of Charles C. Fulton, proprietor of the *Baltimore American*, whose daughter Annie he married Dec. 13, 1864. She died in March 1922. With other convalescent officers he raised the 165th New York Zouaves, in which he was captain of the color company. This regiment garrisoned New Orleans and Baton Rouge in the winter of 1862–63. On May 27, 1863, he was wounded during an assault on Port Hudson, and for his bravery during the action was later promoted to major. He was one of those who volunteered for the proposed final effort to take Port Hudson by storm. Still later, as lieutenant-colonel, he commanded the 165th New York in the Shenandoah Valley under Sheridan, was brevetted colonel and brigadier-general on Mar. 13, 1865, and was sent with his regiment to occupy Savannah and to dismantle various Confederate forts in South Carolina, Georgia, and Florida. He was then twenty-six years old. On July 26, 1865, he resigned his commission. Soon afterward he went to work for his father-in-law and on July 4, 1869, was made business manager of the *American*. He managed the property successfully and on Fulton's death in 1883 became, under a deed of trust, publisher and sole manager. Under his direction the paper was long a power in Baltimore and throughout Maryland. On Aug. 17, 1908, Agnus launched an evening paper, the *Star*. In November 1920 he sold both papers to Frank A. Munsey [*q.v.*] and retired from active business. In the controversy over the relative deserts of Admirals Sampson and Schley he attracted national attention by his ardent championship of his friend Schley, whom he had met in front of Port Hudson forty years before. He was active in Republican politics, though never a candidate for office, served twice as a member of the Board of Visitors to West Point, was chairman of the Chesapeake and Delaware Canal Commission, and was a member of the commission that made itself famous by building and furnishing the Baltimore Court-house with the money appropriated for the building alone. He wrote short stories and was fond of dispensing the hospitality of his country estate in Green Spring Valley.

[*A Hist. of the City of Baltimore* (1902); *Baltimore Sun*, Oct. 31, 1925; *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *Official Records*, ser. I, vols. II, XI, XXVI, XXXVII, LIII.]

G. H. G.

AIKEN, CHARLES AUGUSTUS (Oct. 20, 1827–Jan. 14, 1892), educator, was all his life prominent in academic circles, and as teacher, administrator, writer, and translator contributed both to the intellectual life of his day and to the development of its educational institutions. He was a precocious lad and early gave proof of unusual mental ability. No obstacles made difficult the preparation for his career. The surroundings of his boyhood were favorable, and the best which this country and Europe offered was within his reach. His father, John, of old New Hampshire Scotch-Irish stock, was a successful lawyer and man of means, a promoter of the textile industries of Lowell, Mass., and was associated with the management of several educational and religious organizations; his mother, Harriet, was the daughter of Prof. Ebenezer Adams [*q.v.*] of Dartmouth College. Although born in Manchester, Vt., his early years were spent in Lowell, Mass., where he attended the public schools. At the age of twelve he was ready for college, but his father put him into one of his mills, where he got a training in business which was of service to him later. In spite of this interruption he graduated from Dartmouth at nineteen. After three years' teaching in Lawrence Academy, Groton, Mass., and in Phillips Andover Academy, he entered Andover Theological Seminary in 1849. His course here was broken by two years' study at Berlin, Halle, and Leipzig, where his linguistic ability attracted notice. Returning to this country, he graduated from Andover in 1853. On Oct. 17, 1854, he married Sarah Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel and Eleanor Noyes of Andover, and two days afterward was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church, Yarmouth, Me., resigning five years later to become professor of Latin language and literature at Dartmouth. In 1866 he accepted a similar chair at the College of New Jersey, Princeton. From 1869 to 1871 he was president of Union College, Schenectady, N. Y. Relinquishing that office on account of his wife's health, he returned to Princeton to become the first Archibald Alexander Professor of Christian Ethics and Apologetics in the Seminary, where he remained until his death.

As a teacher he was uncommonly successful, having had the reputation at Dartmouth of being able to do twice as much with students in an hour as any one else could accomplish. His business ability was such that he was given a large share in the administrative work of the institu-

tions with which he was connected. The range of his scholarship may be inferred from the different names given to the chair he occupied at Princeton,—Christian Ethics, and Relations of Philosophy and Science to the Christian Religion. He was most distinguished in philology, and was a prominent member of the American Committee on the revision of the Bible, and the translator and editor of Zockler's "The Book of Proverbs" (1870), in Volume X of the Schaff-Lange series of commentaries. While he was not a maker of many books, his literary activity was unceasing. The first year the *Presbyterian Review* was founded, he acted with Dr. Charles A. Briggs [*q.v.*] as managing editor, and during the nine years of its existence, with the exception of the 1884 issues, there was no number to which he did not make a contribution. His association with the *Presbyterian and Reformed Review* was also practically that of editor. To the *Princeton Review* and *Bibliotheca Sacra* he was a frequent contributor. A portrait of him may be found in the first volume of Andrew V. Raymond's *Union University* (1907).

[*Princeton Theol. Sem. Necr. Reports*, 1892; *Andover Theol. Sem. Necrology*, 1890–91; *Presbyt. and Reformed Rev.*, Apr. 1892; *Cat. of the Class of 1846 in Dartmouth Coll.*; *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 15, 1892; *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 15, 1892.] H. E. S.

AIKEN, DAVID WYATT (Mar. 17, 1828–Apr. 6, 1887), Confederate soldier, agricultural editor, congressman, was born in Winnsboro, S. C. After establishing himself in South Carolina during the eighteenth century, William Aiken of Ireland persuaded his mother and his seven brothers and sisters to try their fortunes in America likewise. David, the youngest of these, ultimately settled in Winnsboro, where he became a prosperous merchant and farmer. He married Nancy Kerr, like himself a native of County Antrim, Ireland; and David Wyatt was the seventh of his nine children. David Wyatt Aiken was educated at Mount Zion Institute and at the South Carolina College, graduating from the latter in 1849. For the next two years he taught at Mount Zion Institute, but in 1852 turned to agriculture. He was married during the same year to Mattie Gaillard. Following her death, which occurred shortly after marriage, he married Virginia Smith of Abbeville. In 1858 he removed from Winnsboro to Cokesbury in Abbeville District, where he became the proprietor of Stony Point Farm. At the beginning of the Civil War he enlisted as a private, but was soon appointed adjutant of the 7th South Carolina Regiment of Volunteers, which subsequently became a part of the 4th (Kershaw's) Brigade, 2nd Division, Army of Northern Virginia. Upon the reorganization of the regiment in the spring of 1862, he was elected colonel. Being severely wounded in the battle of Antietam, Sept. 17, 1862 (for an account of his gallant conduct in this action see *Official Records*, ser. I, vol. XIX, pt. II, p. 866), he was unable to rejoin his command until June 1863. After participating in the Gettysburg campaign, he was declared unfit for further active service, and was assigned to duty as commandant of the troops and defenses at Macon, Ga. He held this post for one year and was then discharged on account of ill health (*Official Records*, see Index).

From 1864 to 1866 Aiken represented Abbeville District in the state House of Representatives (*Journals of the South Carolina Legislature*, 1864, 1865, 1866). After the establishment of the rule of the Republican party in South Carolina he zealously promoted the rehabilitation of Southern economy. Through the *Rural Carolinian* he defined the economic problems of reconstruction and discussed their solution. This agricultural journal was founded in Charleston, S. C., in October 1869. From January 1870 to December 1875 Aiken was part owner and correspondent, and during the last year of its publication (1876) he was sole owner and editor. The work of the *Rural Carolinian* was carried on for several years after its discontinuance, through an agricultural department in the *News and Courier* (Charleston, S. C.) of which Aiken was editor. In 1872 he was appointed deputy-at-large of the National Grange, Patrons of Husbandry, for the Southern States, and in the next year was made a member of its executive committee. By October 1872 he had succeeded in organizing a state grange in South Carolina, of which he was first made secretary and then master (1875–77). In the campaign which accomplished the overthrow of the carpet-bagger régime in South Carolina (1876), Aiken was elected to Congress from the third congressional district (J. S. Reynolds, *Reconstruction in South Carolina*, 1905, pp. 347, 361, 394). He continued during the last decade of his life to occupy a seat in the House of Representatives where he was a leading spokesman of the militant agrarian interests. His death occurred a few weeks after his retirement from public life.

[Yates Snowden, *Hist. of S. C.* (1920) and D. A. Dickert, *Hist. of Kershaw's Brigade* (1899) contain brief but fairly reliable sketches of Aiken's life. The most considerable body of printed material dealing with his career is contained in the *Rural Carolinian*. An obituary was published in the *News and Courier*, Apr. 7, 1887.] J. H. E.

AIKEN, GEORGE L. (Dec 19, 1830–Apr. 27, 1876), actor and playwright, was born in Boston, and made his début on the stage as Ferdinand in

The Six Degrees of Crime in Providence, R. I., in June 1848. His *Orion, the Gold Beater,* a dramatization of the novel, was produced at the National Theatre, New York, Jan. 15, 1851. A manuscript exists in the Players Club, New York. His chief claim to remembrance, however, is his dramatization of Mrs. Stowe's *Uncle Tom's Cabin.* After more than one unsuccessful attempt had been made by other hands, Aiken wrote his play at the suggestion of George C. Howard, manager of the Museum, Troy, N. Y., who believed that the characters of Eva and Topsy were suited to the talents of his daughter, Cordelia, and his wife, who was Aiken's cousin. Aiken acted the dual parts of George Shelby and of George Harris, the mulatto, in his own version, which opened at the Troy Museum, Sept. 27, 1852, ran 100 nights, and was taken to Purdy's National Theatre, New York, July 18, 1853, where it was performed 325 consecutive times. This version was played in Philadelphia in 1853–54, in Detroit in 1854, and in Chicago in 1858. When the play was revived on Nov. 24, 1924, at the Triangle Theatre, New York, the production was based on Aiken's version. Aiken followed the novel closely in his plot, beginning in Kentucky, then taking Uncle Tom to New Orleans and finally to his death at Legree's plantation. All the sentimental features of the novel are emphasized, and little Eva is taken almost bodily to a better world. Yet poor as the play is from a dramatic standpoint, it was one of the most potent forces in the abolition movement. According to H. P. Phelps (*Players of a Century,* 1880), Aiken dramatized a number of stories from the *Ledger,* including "The Gun Maker of Moscow" and "The Mystic Bride," during the season of 1856–57. He also continued to write for the National or Chatham Theatre in New York. On Nov. 3, 1856, his play of *The Old Homestead,* a dramatization of Ann S. Stephens's novel, was performed, and on May 18, 1858, *The Emerald Ring. The Doom of Deville; or The Maiden's Vow* had its production at Barnum's Museum, New York, Nov. 28, 1859. These seem to have perished. *Uncle Tom's Cabin; or, Life Among the Lowly. A Domestic Drama in Six Acts* was published by Samuel French, New York. The records of that house fail to reveal any date. A play, *Josie; or, Was He a Woman?* was copyrighted in 1870, by title. To Aiken have also been attributed stories, *The Household Skeleton* (1865) and *Cynthia, The Pearl of the Points,* a tale of New York (1867), *Chevalier, the French Jack Sheppard* (1868), and *A New York Boy among the Indians* (1872). He was acting in Philadelphia in 1860 at the Arch Street Theatre, and in 1859 and again in 1861 was house dramatist at Barnum's Museum in New York. In 1862 he was associate manager of the Troy Theatre. Aiken retired from the stage in 1867 but continued writing fiction and making dramatizations, living in Brooklyn, N. Y., until 1875. He died in Jersey City, N. J.

[A brief notice of Aiken appears in T. Allston Brown's *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1870), and another in F. C. Wemyss's *Chronology of the Am. Stage* (1852). A detailed account of *Uncle Tom's Cabin* appears in T. A. Brown's *Hist. of the N.Y. Stage* (1903), I, 312–19. The date of his death, given incorrectly by Brown, has been established by the Registrar of the Board of Health and Vital Statistics of Hudson County, N.J. Information has also been furnished by letters from Mrs. Cordelia Howard Macdonald, who created the part of Eva in 1852, and by Mrs. Viola Aiken Baker. Scattered references are also found in *Records of the N.Y. Stage,* by J. N. Ireland (1866). See also A. H. Quinn's *Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923).]

A. H. Q.

AIKEN, WILLIAM (Jan. 28, 1806–Sept. 6, 1887), planter, statesman, philanthropist, was born in Charleston, S. C. At about the time that the Articles of Confederation were being replaced by the "more perfect" plan of union embodied in the Federal Constitution, William Aiken, Sr., a native of County Antrim, Ireland, settled in Charleston. He became a merchant, sat for several years in the state legislature, and at the time of his death (1831) was serving as the first president of the South Carolina Canal and Railroad Company and was said to be one of the wealthiest men in Charleston (*Charleston Mercury,* Mar. 7, 1831). He married Henrietta Wyatt, and William Aiken was his only son. The latter received his early education in the schools of Charleston (*In Memoriam William Aiken,* 1887). He then entered the South Carolina College from which he graduated in 1825. After a period of extensive travel he returned to Charleston, and on Feb. 3, 1831, married Harriett Lowndes (G. B. Chase, *Lowndes of South Carolina,* 1876, p. 23). The untimely death of his father as the result of an accident the next month brought him at once into the possession of a large fortune and considerable business responsibilities. Agriculture, however, held more attractions for him than commerce, and he was soon developing a great rice plantation on Jehossee Island, near Charleston, which through his careful and skilful management came to be a model of its kind. (For a description of this plantation as it appeared in 1850 see *DeBow's Review,* IX, 201 ff.)

Aiken's political career began in 1838, when he was sent to the lower house of the legislature by the parishes of St. Philip's and St. Michael's (city of Charleston). He was reëlected in 1840, and two years later was elevated to the state Senate by the same constituency. In 1842, before the expira-

tion of his term in the Senate, he was chosen governor by the legislature after three ineffectual ballots (*Charleston Courier,* Dec. 9, 1842). His administration (1842–44) was marked by no unusual incident, and his efforts were mainly directed toward the development of the economic interests of the state, particularly the railroads (see his annual messages in the *Journals of the Legislature*). After a short period of retirement from public life, he was induced in 1850 to offer for Congress (*Charleston Mercury,* Oct. 12, 1850). He was elected by a handsome majority, and took his seat in the House of Representatives on Dec. 1, 1851. He was returned without opposition to the Thirty-third and Thirty-fourth Congresses. He seldom took part in debate, but through his position on leading committees he exerted an important influence on legislation. His freedom from violent party and sectional bias and his reputation as a man of sterling character admitted him to the councils of all factions (see Howell Cobb's estimate of him in "The Correspondence of Toombs, Stephens, and Cobb," *American Historical Association Reports,* 1911, vol. II, pp. 358–59). Accordingly, after the House of the Thirty-fourth Congress had spent two months in futile efforts to elect a Speaker, Aiken was brought forward as a compromise candidate. The resolution by which his name was proposed met with so favorable a response that it appeared that he might be elected. On the following day, Feb. 2, 1856, it was agreed that, if after three further ballots no candidate had secured a majority, then on the fourth the member receiving the largest number of votes should be declared Speaker. No decision was reached on the first three ballots in spite of the fact that Aiken gained the solid support of the Democrats and the votes of most of the Southern Know-Nothings. The final ballot, the 133rd since the beginning of the contest, was then taken. The count stood: 103 for Nathaniel P. Banks, the Republican candidate; 100 for Aiken; and 11 for all others. An effort to have this decision thrown out on technical grounds was defeated by Aiken and others, and Banks was escorted to the chair by his defeated rival and two other members (*Congressional Globe,* 34 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 334 ff.).

Aiken declined a fourth term in Congress and retired again to private life. He had steadfastly opposed disunion, and it was with regret and no little misgiving as to the consequences that he saw the Southern States secede from the Union in 1861. During the war which ensued, however, he contributed materially to the Southern cause by the donation of supplies and by making large subscriptions to Confederate loans. In June 1865 he was arrested by the federal authorities and taken to Washington, but was released on parole immediately upon his arrival. He was soon after elected to Congress by his old constituency, but was denied his seat by the action of the Northern members (J. S. Reynolds, *Reconstruction in South Carolina,* 1905, p. 20). He did not participate further in public life other than to perform the duties of a trustee of the Peabody Educational Fund. His death occurred at Flat Rock, N. C., ten years after his state had resumed its normal position in the Union.

[The private papers of William Aiken were lost in a fire which destroyed his plantation home at Jehossee Island, and no biographical sketch has ever been written. An excellent obituary, however, was published in *The News and Courier* (Charleston, S. C.), Sept. 8, 1887. A portrait of him in later life, painted by John Stolle after a photograph, is in the possession of the Rhett family of Charleston. Yates Snowden's *Hist. of S. C.* (1920) contains a brief account of the genealogy of the Aiken family.]

J. H. E.

AIKENS, ANDREW JACKSON (Oct. 31, 1830–Jan. 22, 1909), editor, publisher, was born among the Vermont hills, in the town of Barnard, to parents of rugged ancestry. His father, Warren Aikens, was of Scotch descent, while his mother, Lydia, was directly descended from John Howland of the *Mayflower.* At the age of fifteen, he started his life career by becoming a printer's apprentice. After some experience as editor of country newspapers in Woodstock and Bennington, Vt., and North Adams, Mass., he was employed in Boston in the state printing office. In 1853, he became the special western correspondent of the *New York Evening Post.* During his travels in connection with this position, he made the acquaintance, in Milwaukee, of Editor Cramer of the *Wisconsin* (still issued as the *Evening Wisconsin*) and was persuaded to assist in editing that paper, an evening sheet which was, according to a contemporary, "noted for its enterprise and generally popular for its miscellaneous intelligence and family reading" (A. C. Wheeler, *The Chronicles of Milwaukee,* 1861, p. 287). It gave its influential support to the Union during the Civil War. Aikens became its business manager in 1857 and one of its proprietors in 1868, continuing his connection with it until his death.

His chief claim to remembrance, however, is due to the fact that the Western Newspaper Union of to-day, with a central office in Omaha and branch offices in thirty-seven cities throughout the United States, is the outgrowth of his genius. In 1864, the proprietors of the *Wisconsin,* under Aikens's leadership, devised a plan of coöperative advertising, an adaptation of the "patent insides" idea. They furnished a ready-print page, the new and financially successful feature of which was the columns of advertising matter. This made an

immediate appeal to country weekly newspapers and, in 1870, Cramer, Aikens, and Cramer established the Chicago Newspaper Union. With his characteristic enterprise, Aikens, in the same year, carried his idea to New York and with George P. Rowell and Samuel French launched the New York Newspaper Union. The next step (*c.* 1874) was the formation of the American Newspaper Union, which included the Unions above mentioned, and branch offices in Fort Wayne, Ind., Sioux City, Ia., Nashville, and Cincinnati. Of the 1,700 country weeklies using ready-print pages in 1875, this Union claimed to be supplying 1,100. Aikens did not live to see the greater merger, in 1912, which brought into existence the present Western Newspaper Union.

[G. P. Rowell, *Forty Years an Advertising Agent* (1906); J. W. Watrous, *Memoirs of Milwaukee County* (1909); D. B. E. Kent, "One Thousand Men of Vermont," *Proc. Vermont Hist. Soc.*, 1913–14. A paragraph is given to the *Evening Wis.* (Aikens's paper) in *Cat. of Newspaper Files in the Lib. of the State Hist. Soc. of Wis.* (1911). Obituaries appear in the *Evening Wis.*, Jan. 22, 1909, *Fourth Estate*, Jan. 30, 1909, *Editor and Publisher*, Jan. 30, 1909, *Printers' Ink*, Feb. 3, 1909; in the first three portraits accompany the notices.]

A. E. P.

AIME, VALCOUR (1798–Dec. 31, 1867), pioneer sugar planter, was born in the parish of St. Charles in Louisiana. In spite of his boast that, like Napoleon, his "nobility" began with himself, the family was an old one in Louisiana, of sturdy French beginnings. His father, François Aime, came from a family long resident in Dauphiné and his mother was the daughter of one Col. Fortier, whose ancestors dwelt in St. Malo. Young Aime early acquired a plantation in the parish of St. James above New Orleans, married Josephine Roman, sister of André Roman, twice governor of the state of Louisiana, and by careful and skilful effort built for himself one of the great "refineries" of the state. On this plantation, under his supervision, sugar, for the first time, was refined in the United States. To-day in the old Cabildo in New Orleans Valcour Aime's portrait hangs beside that of Étienne de Boré, who established the sugar industry in Louisiana.

But Aime's contribution to the agriculture of his section was wider than this single accomplishment. His plantation diary, kept from the late 1820's, shows that he was continually experimenting with new things in the effort to improve both the growing and manufacturing ends of his business. And each improvement was passed on to his neighbors through the agricultural papers of the day. As early as 1829 he had applied steam power to his machinery; in 1831 he proved the superiority of the new Archibald's process to the old one; he quickly adopted new kinds of boiling-kettles as they appeared and was the leading advocate of the Rillieux apparatus from its first introduction. In 1845 he made a trip to Cuba to observe sugar methods there, and two years later sent one of his men to France and England "to take farther lessons" from their refiners. In the growing of sugar-cane he was equally progressive. He experimented with cane planted at varying distances; he used peas and clover on his lands; he early adopted fertilizers, especially guano, and ever urged the Southern planter to diversify his crops to the point of complete self-sufficiency.

Aime's own success justified his teachings. In 1852 his St. James plantation contained 9,500 acres, worked by 215 slaves and valued at over $700,000. The annual income ran well over $100,000 and his great house, surrounded by a garden filled with tropical plants, was instinctively called by a people familiar with seventeenth-century France, "The Little Versailles." A generous social life was matched by an equally generous charity, which became the dominating interest in the years following the death of the only son and heir. He gave freely to the churches of his own parish and New Orleans; to Jefferson College, also, he gave liberally; and common men, both black and white, constantly benefited by his generosity. But the keen business ability never slackened, and neither the losses suffered from the Civil War nor those from the freeing of his slaves threw him into debt or forced the division of the estate. Returning from Christmas mass in 1867 he contracted a sickness that brought him to his death on the last day of that year. He was buried in the little grave-yard of the St. James church near the great "refinery," which soon crumbled away in the hands of others less intelligent and less enterprising.

[*Plantation Diary of the Late Mr. Valcour Aime* (1878), and scattered writings in *DeBow's Rev.*, vols. IV and V.]

A. O. C.

AINSLIE, HEW (Apr. 5, 1792–Mar. 11, 1878), poet, was born at Bargeny Mains, Ayrshire, Scotland, a dozen miles from the birthplace of Burns. He was the only son of George Ainslie, a farmer employed on a large but somewhat barren estate. The boy grew up on the wild banks of the river Girvan and along the rocky southwestern coast of Scotland. This had been a famous smuggling shore, and in Ainslie's boyhood many of the old mariners were still living, though retired from their adventurous profession (notes to *Scottish Songs, Ballads, and Poems*, 1855, pp. 201–6). Young Ainslie had the poetic temperament, and reveled in the beauty of the region and in the romantic tales of the surroundings. His mother

sang many ballads to the boy. In his father's library he found the works of Ramsay, Fergusson, and Burns. He was first given private instruction at home, then attended the Ballantrae parish school and later the Ayr Academy, but he was taken from school because of fears as to his health. He participated in amateur plays, among other rôles taking the part of Jenny in Ramsay's dramatic pastoral, *The Gentle Shepherd.* This part, containing numerous lyrics, stimulated Ainslie's poetic faculties, and shortly thereafter he first began to write verse (notes to *Scottish Songs, Ballads, and Poems,* p. 210).

In 1809 the Ainslie family moved to Roslin. The eighteen-year-old youth was sent to Glasgow to study law, but, disliking it, returned home. A year later he was given a position as copyist in the Register House, Edinburgh, where he met Jamieson the translator, Pringle the poet, and other literary figures. He held this position for twelve years, except for a brief period when he acted as amanuensis to Prof. Dugald Stewart. In 1812 he was married to his cousin, Janet Ainslie. A trip through Ayrshire in 1820 with two friends resulted in his first book, *A Pilgrimage to the Land of Burns,* published anonymously in 1822. The work is an informal, somewhat exuberant travel diary, containing a number of original lyrics in Scottish dialect. "The Land of Burns," as a popular name for Ayrshire, is attributed to Ainslie's title (*Memoir of Hew Ainslie,* p. xiv).

In 1822, Ainslie sailed for America, leaving his family behind until he should make a new home for them. After three unsuccessful years of farming near Hoosick, N. Y., he went to New Harmony, Ind., and spent a year as a member of Robert Owen's colony. His family rejoining him, he entered the brewing business, but flood and fire successively destroyed his establishments. Thereafter he followed the business of erecting breweries and distilleries for others. His real interest, however, was in poetry, and he wrote numerous verses, principally in dialect. In 1855 a collection of some eighty of his poems was published in New York under the title, *Scottish Songs, Ballads, and Poems.* His work met with favor in his native country, and when he returned for a visit in 1862 he received a hearty welcome from literary people. After a trip through Europe, he returned to the United States and spent the rest of his life with his children, at Louisville, Ky. Here he devoted himself to gardening, writing little if any poetry. His tallness and his tousled hair and beard made him a conspicuous figure in the city, while his sociability endeared him to a wide circle of acquaintances. Ainslie's poetry is for the most part light verse. It possesses sentiment, humor, and often rollicking rhythm. Certain of his poems are invested with a vague humanitarianism. His work shows a joyous, honest spirit rather than emotional intensity.

[The only detailed biography of Hew Ainslie is the "Memoir," by Thomas C. Latto, prefixed to *A Pilgrimage to the Land of Burns,* published by Alexander Gardner, London, in 1892. There are certain autobiographical data in the notes written by Ainslie for *Scottish Songs, Ballads, and Poems* (1855). An obituary appeared in the *Louisville Courier-Journal,* Mar. 13, 1878.] N. A. C.

AITKEN, ROBERT (1734–July 15, 1802), printer, publisher, engraver, was born in Dalkeith, Scotland, and appeared in Philadelphia as a bookseller in 1769. He returned to Scotland the same year, but in 1771 he again opened a bookstore in Philadelphia, adding bookbinding, a craft he had learned in Edinburgh, to his business. Two years later he made his first venture as a publisher, issuing *Aitken's General American Register, and the Gentleman's and Tradesman's Complete Annual Account Book, and Calendar, for the Pocket or Desk, for the Year of Our Lord, 1773.* Sabin says this was "the first attempt of its kind in the American Colonies" (Joseph Sabin, *A Dictionary of Books Relating to America,* vol. I, p. 68); it must have proved successful, for it was issued again in 1774. From January 1775 to June 1776, Aitken published the *Pennsylvania Magazine, or American Monthly Museum,* having Hopkinson, Witherspoon, and Thomas Paine as contributors. Isaiah Thomas says that on at least one occasion Aitken found it necessary to seat Paine at a table, supply him with paper and brandy, and insist that he stay there until the contribution was forthcoming. Thomas adds that "what he penned from the inspiration of the brandy was perfectly fit for the press without any alteration or correction," and comments that "Aitken was a man of truth, and of an irreproachable character. This anecdote came from him some years before his death." (*History of Printing in America,* 2nd ed., 1874, II, 152.) For the *Pennsylvania Magazine* Aitken engraved the title-page vignette, after a design by Pierre E. du Simitière, and a number of maps, plans, and other illustrations, among them some of the first views ever engraved of military operations of the Revolution. The check-lists given by Fielding and Stauffer include: "A New and Correct Plan of the Town of Boston and Provincial Camp," "Exact Plan of General Gage's Lines on Boston Neck in America," "A Map of the Present Seat of War on the Borders of Canada," "Machine for Saving Life at Fires," "A Perspective View of the Salt Works in Salisbury, New England." While done on copper, the work is crude, plainly showing an unpracticed hand, though in the *Pennsylvania Eve-*

ning Post, May 22, 1777, he advertises "All Kinds of Engraving done in the Neatest Manner at R. Aitken's Book Store."

Aitken's single enterprise of greatest interest was "the Aitken Bible, the first complete English Bible printed in America and bearing an American imprint, and the only one authorized and approved by Congress to this day (June 1902)" (note in Library of Congress Catalogue). Numerous attempts to publish the Bible in America had been made previously, but none were successful. When the outbreak of war stopped the importation from England of the usual supply of Bibles the problem seemed grave enough to be brought before the Government. A memorial was presented to Congress by its chaplain and some others, asking that Congress import suitable types and paper for the production of an American edition of the Bible, or "import 20,000 Bibles from Holland, Scotland, or elsewhere, into the different parts of the States of the Union" (quoted by John Wright, *Early Bibles of America,* 1894, p. 55), and Congress resolved to direct its committee to make such an importation. The agitation of the subject encouraged Robert Aitken to issue an edition of the New Testament in 1777, followed by others in 1778, 1779, and 1781. The reception accorded them was such that in 1781 Aitken ventured to undertake the printing of an edition of the entire Bible, and presented a petition to Congress seeking support and sanction. A favorable report by the committee (Messrs. Duane, McKean, and Witherspoon) to whom the petition had been referred, and by the chaplains of Congress, whose advice had been sought, resulted in the passage on Sept. 21, 1782, of the desired authorization. The resolutions appear following the title-page of the Bible, which was issued in 1782, as a small duodecimo, usually bound in two volumes. The venture was not a success financially. In spite of organized encouragement—the Synod of Philadelphia in 1783 voted to buy none but Aitken Bibles for distribution among the poor—Aitken lost more than 3,000 pounds (Wright, p. 64).

By this time, however, he was a printer of repute. Jeremy Belknap, seeking a publisher for his *History of New Hampshire,* was advised by Ebenezer Hazard that "Robert Aitken has the most taste of a printer of any man in this city; and were I to have a book printed here it should be done by him" (letter of Apr. 10, 1782, "Belknap Papers," in *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* ser. V, vol. II). As a result of this and subsequent recommendations Aitken received Belknap's fourteen-year-old son as an apprentice in the autumn of 1783, and in 1784 published the first volume of Belknap's *History.* In 1783 he contemplated publishing a literary weekly which never materialized. Isaiah Thomas says of Aitken: "He was industrious and frugal. His printing was neat and correct. In his dealings he was punctual, and he acquired the respect of those who became acquainted with him." After his death "Jane Aitken, his daughter, continued his business. . . . She obtained much reputation by the productions which issued from her press." (Thomas, I, 267.)

[Additional references: D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907); *A Descriptive Cat. of an Exhibition of Early Engraving in America* (Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, 1904); Mantle Fielding, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1917).]

R. C. S.

AKELEY, CARL ETHAN (May 19, 1864–Nov. 17, 1926), taxidermist, inventor, naturalist, explorer, was born on a farm in Clarendon, Orleans County, N. Y., the son of Daniel Webster and Julia (Glidden) Akeley. "By all the rules of the game," he wrote, "I should have been a farmer, but for some reason or other, I was always more interested in birds and chipmunks than in crops and cattle." At about the age of thirteen he saw in the *Youth's Companion* an advertisement of a book on taxidermy and later he was able to borrow a copy from one of the older boys of the neighborhood. The book was probably a determining factor in his life. At the age of nineteen, he entered Ward's Natural Science Establishment at Rochester, N. Y., where he began work at three dollars and a half a week. At that time Ward's was a famous institution for the collection and distribution of specimens for museums and for the training of museum curators. It was the headquarters of taxidermy in America. In 1887 he obtained a position in the Milwaukee Museum and established a shop of his own in the town. In the Museum he made a group of a reindeer being driven by a Lapp in his sledge over the snow, the first habitat group he ever built. Later he mounted a group of orang-utans, and then a habitat group of muskrats, the latter of which still stands, after more than thirty-five years, as good as new. After eight years in Milwaukee, Akeley went to the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago. While here he made his first expedition to Africa, starting in 1896. After his return he spent a great deal of time for four years mounting the four seasonal groups of the Virginia deer, now in the Field Museum. These four years mark the period of greatest development in the Akeley method, which is now in use in all of the great museums of the world. Taxidermy had been hitherto merely a trade; Akeley raised it to the dignity of an art.

In 1905, he made his second expedition to Africa, when he collected the elephants for "The Fighting Bulls," now the dominant group in the Stanley Field Hall of the Field Museum of Natural History. In 1909 he started on his third expedition to Africa, this time for the American Museum of Natural History. Among other things he collected the elephants for the great group called "The Alarm." On this trip he formulated his dream of African Hall for the American Museum, which is now in the process of preparation. In 1921–22 he made his fourth expedition to Africa and collected the animals for the "Gorilla Group." At this time he made the first motion-pictures ever taken of wild gorillas in their natural surroundings. On his fifth and last expedition to Africa, he died and was buried on the slopes of Mount Mikeno.

As a sculptor Akeley produced among other pieces, "The Wounded Comrade," "Stung," "The Charging Herd," and "The Nandi Spearmen." While at the Field Museum he invented the Akeley Cement Gun, which is now widely used over the world. In recognition he received the Scott Gold Medal of the Franklin Institute. After his third expedition to Africa he invented the Akeley Camera, which is considered to be the best naturalists' motion-picture camera ever made. The first model was patented in 1916. In recognition of this invention he was voted the John Price Wetherell Medal by the Franklin Institute. When the World War came on, he was past the age to enlist, but he gave his entire time to the government in mechanical research and investigation, especially in his contribution to concrete construction and in his improvement of large search-lights. He was instrumental in securing the establishment by King Albert of Belgium of the Parc National Albert in the Belgian Congo, the first wild life sanctuary established in Central Africa. He was twice married: on Dec. 23, 1902, to Delia J. Denning of Beaver Dam, Wis., from whom he was divorced in March 1923; and on Oct. 18, 1924 to Mary L. Jobe of New York City.

[Carl E. Akeley, *In Brightest Africa* (1923); "Carl Akeley and His Work," by Clyde Fisher, *Sci. Mo.*, Feb. 1927; the entire number of the *Mentor* for Jan. 1926 is devoted to C. Akeley and includes autobiographical notes; the Akeley Memorial Number of *Natural History* (Mar.–Apr. 1927) contains articles by Baron de Cartier de Marchienne, Kermit Roosevelt, James Earl Fraser, F. Trubee Davison, George H. Sherwood, William M. Wheeler, Frederic A. Lucas, Mary Hastings Bradley, and Henry Fairfield Osborn.] G. C. F.

AKERMAN, AMOS TAPPAN (Feb. 23, 1821–Dec. 21, 1880), lawyer, public official, was one of a number of New England youths who, prior to 1860, settled in Georgia, became a part of the warp and woof of their adopted state, and gained honors in their new home. The son of Benjamin Akerman, a land surveyor, and Olive (Meloon) Akerman, he was born at Portsmouth, N. H. He attended Phillips Exeter Academy, and graduated from Dartmouth in 1842. Shortly thereafter he went to Georgia, at first teaching school near Augusta. In 1846 he was engaged by Hon. John McPherson Berrien of Savannah as tutor of the latter's children. While thus employed, he studied law under Berrien, and was licensed to practice at Clarksville, the summer home of his legal preceptor. Soon thereafter he located at Elberton, practicing in partnership with Robert Hester. He married Martha Rebecca, the daughter of Rev. Samuel Galloway, a native of Bethlehem, Pa., but then residing in Georgia. Though opposed to the wisdom of secession as a remedy for what the South considered her wrongs, he followed his state into the Confederacy, serving first in the brigade under Gen. Robert Toombs, and later in the quartermaster's department. In thus aligning himself with the new government, he did that which almost every son of the North did who at the time was a resident of the South. In early life an old-line Whig and a Union man, his political convictions made him a Republican during the political readjustments following the struggle, and he remained a firm adherent of that party.

Akerman's most valuable service to his adopted state was as a member of the state constitutional convention of 1868. It was held at a time when the greater part of the intelligence and character of the state was disfranchised by the federal authorities; fully a third of its membership was composed of ignorant negro ex-slaves, and nearly all of the others were mere adventurers—"carpet-baggers"—from the North who had drifted into the state following the close of hostilities. Fortunately there was a small minority of men of high character who acted as a check upon this irresponsible majority, and to Akerman and a few others like him was due the fact that the constitution was not more radical than it was. In 1869, he was appointed United States district attorney, and the Senate confirmed the appointment, but as he refused to take the test oath, his disabilities had to be removed by Congress before he would assume the office.

In July 1870 President Grant appointed him attorney general of the United States. Under certain bounties granted by Congress in 1862 and 1864 to certain trans-continental railways, one or more of these roads attempted to obtain large amounts of additional lands. The Secretary of the Interior, Columbus Delano, referred the mat-

ter to the Attorney General. He denied the right, and advised the Secretary to reject the claim. He was asked by the Secretary to reconsider the question, and did so, with the result that he became more convinced than ever that the claim of the railroads was illegal. The railroad magnates, Gould and Huntington, began a campaign against the Attorney General, and put heavy pressure on the President to remove him. Delano owned the *Baltimore American,* and that organ "opened fire" on Akerman. Finally, the President was persuaded to ask for his resignation, doing so in a letter dated Dec. 13, 1871, marking it "Confidential." The letter read: "Circumstances convince me that a change in the office you now hold is desirable, considering the best interests of the government, and I therefore ask your resignation. In doing so, however, I wish to express my appreciation of the zeal, integrity, and industry you have shown in the performance of all of your duties, and the confidence I feel personally by tendering to you the Florida Judgeship, now vacant, or that of Texas. Should any foreign mission at my disposal without a removal for the purpose of making a vacancy, better suit your tastes, I would gladly testify my appreciation in that way. My personal regard for you is such that I could not bring myself to saying what I say here any other way than through the medium of a letter. Nothing but a consideration for public sentiment could induce me to indite this. With great respect, Your obedient servant, U. S. Grant." Akerman resigned, and Laundalet Williams of Oregon, friendly to the Pacific railroad companies, was appointed to succeed him. Declining the sops offered by the President, Akerman retired to private life. He moved to Cartersville, Ga., about 1870, and continued actively in the practice of the law until his death ten years later.

[I. W. Avery, *Hist. of Ga.* (1881); *Memoirs of Ga.* (1895); L. L. Knight's *Ga. and Georgians* (1917); extended biographical sketch by (Mrs.) Ex-Senator Felton in the *Cartersville* [Ga.] *Courant;* unpublished diary of Akerman; additional information furnished by members of his family.]

W. G.

AKERS, BENJAMIN PAUL (July 10, 1825–May 21, 1861), sculptor, was the eldest of the eleven children of William Akers of Saccarappa, Me. When he was still a boy his family moved to Salmon Falls, where his father kept a wood-turning shop or, according to some accounts, a sawmill. Sent to school in Norwich, Conn., Benjamin was intensely homesick and only too glad when he could return to work with his father, showing considerable ability in ornamental woodwork. His youth was characterized by a tendency to reverie and by a love of nature, particularly of the scenery of his native district. In search of broader intellectual fields, he went to Portland to work as a printer and even considered taking up writing, an occupation he occasionally indulged in later, as essays in the *Atlantic Monthly* and the *Crayon* testify. His final choice of sculpture as a profession, whether inspired by a cast seen in Norwich, by a marble bust by Brackett in a Portland shop, or by Chantrey's "Washington," seems to date from this period. In 1849, at any rate, he went to Boston and learned plaster-casting from Joseph Carew, after which he returned home and tried his hand at a medallion, a bust, and a head of Christ. Some months later he and Tilton, a landscape painter, opened a studio in Portland. Among his commissions were busts of Longfellow, Samuel Appleton, and John Neal. After two years of this work he spent a year of study in Florence, there producing two bas-reliefs, "Night" and "Morning." On his return to Portland he made his first statue, "Benjamin in Egypt," which was later destroyed by fire. The winter he spent in Washington doing several busts—President Pierce, Judge McLean, Linn Boyd, Gerrit Smith, Edward Everett—and a medallion head of Sam Houston. He then went to Rome, where he produced his best-known works—"Una and the Lion," "St. Elizabeth of Hungary," the "Dead Pearl Diver" (now in Portland), and a head of Milton. His works exemplify the taste of the period—a cold neo-classicism with its accompanying meticulous finish. His Roman stay was broken by a trip through Switzerland, Germany, France, and England. Owing to failing health he returned home for a year. On his way back to Rome he was taken seriously ill at Lyons, but managed to continue his journey. He was again forced to return to America in 1860 and in August of that year married a minor poet, Mrs. Elizabeth (Chase) Taylor of Portland, Me. (See Elizabeth Chase Akers.) He was too ill to do much work, and his bust of John Frothingham was completed with the help of his brother Charles. Advised to go to Philadelphia for the winter, he died there of tuberculosis in the following spring.

[The most important notices of Akers, which are not always in agreement, are those of H. T. Tuckerman in his *Book of the Artists* (1867), and Leila Usher in the *New Eng. Mag.* for Dec. 1894.]

E. G. N.

AKERS, ELIZABETH CHASE (Oct. 9, 1832–Aug. 7, 1911), author, was born in Strong, Franklin County, Me., the daughter of Thomas Chase, a lawyer, whose grandfather, Thomas Chase, sea fighter under Paul Jones, came to Livermore, Me., from Tisbury, Martha's Vineyard, in 1790. One of her books, *Sunset Songs,* is dedicated "to the dear memory of my mother, who in her girl-

hood was Mercy Fenno Barton, who died in her youth." After her mother's death she lived in Farmington, Me., and in June 1851 she married Marshall S. M. Taylor, son of a Presbyterian minister of Sheldon, Vt. Their life together was not a happy one and they were divorced. In 1855 she became assistant editor of the Portland *Transcript*. Her first volume of poems, *Forest Buds from the Woods of Maine*, was published in 1856, under the pseudonym, Florence Percy. It proved a financial success, and enabled her to travel on the Continent, where, apparently, she met the sculptor, Benjamin Paul Akers[*q.v.*], also a native of Maine, whom she married in Portland in 1860. He was then in failing health, however, and died the following year. She resumed her former editorial position and in 1865 married E. M. Allen, a New York merchant. From 1866 to 1873 their home was in Richmond, Va. Returning to Maine, she became, in 1874, literary editor of the *Portland Daily Advertiser*, and served that paper in various capacities for about seven years. During the latter part of her life her home was near Tuckahoe, N. Y., where she died. Her body was cremated, and a funeral address was given by Mary Riley Smith, poet, and president of Sorosis.

Besides *Forest Buds*, her published works include *Poems* (1866–68); *Queen Catherine's Rose* (1885); *The Silver Bridge* (1886); *The Triangular Society, Leaves from the Life of a Portland Family*, prose (1886); *Two Saints, a Tribute to the Memory of Henry Bergh* (1888); *"Gold Nails" to Hang Memories on, a Rhyming Review Under Their Christian Names of Old Acquaintances in History, Literature, and Friendship* (1890); *The High-Top Sweeting* (1891); *The Proud Lady of Stavoren* (1897); *The Ballad of the Bronx* (1901); *The Sunset Song and Other Verses* (1902); *Sheaf of Acrostics*, privately printed (1914). Her poetry has fertility of fancy, but little originality of thought or form. The fact that it expresses the emotions which ordinary people experience, together with its melodiousness and sentimentality, made her one of the favorite household poets of her day. The only one of her poems now generally remembered is "Rock Me to Sleep," first printed anonymously in the Philadelphia *Saturday Evening Post* in 1860, and included later in *Poems*, but it should not be taken as a fair example of her best work.

[Only fragmentary accounts of her career are available. See Grael Washburn, Jr., *Notes, Hist., Descriptive and Personal of Livermore, Me.* (1874), pp. 25–28; *Lit. World*, XVI, 137; *N.Y. Tribune*, Aug. 12, 1911; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Portraits and Biogs. of Prominent Am. Women*, ed. by Frances E. Willard and Mary A. Livermore (rev. ed. 1901). Reviews of her work may be found in the *Nation*, Oct. 18, 1866, and Dec. 16, 1886. The authorship of "Rock Me to Sleep" was disputed. Mrs. Akers's claim is vindicated in the *N.Y. Times*, May 27, 1867. See also *Atlantic Mo.*, Aug. 1867. Information regarding her first marriage was furnished by the Me. Hist. Soc.]

H. E. S.

AKO, MICHEL. [See Aco, Michel, *fl.* 1680–1702.]

ALARCÓN, HERNANDO DE (*fl.* 1540), Spanish explorer, was perhaps born at Trujillo in 1500. He is first definitely heard of in 1540 in connection with the celebrated expedition of Coronado sent out by Antonio de Mendoza, Viceroy of New Spain, in search of the Seven Cities of Cíbola. By order of the Viceroy, Coronado pursued an overland course northward along the west border of Mexico. To support him two vessels under Alarcón were sent up the Mexican coast from San Blas (Santiago). At a port called Aguaiavale (Altata west of Culiacán), Alarcón was joined by a third ship with provisions. Entering the Gulf of California, he made his way, at times laboriously amid flats and shoals, until the gulf narrowed to a breadth of five or six miles. Ahead, the Colorado (Río del Tizón or Fire Brand River) entered the gulf through broad, low, mud bottoms. On Aug. 26, the expedition, coming to "the very bottome of the Bay," encountered the tidal wave or "bore" which rushes up and down the Colorado River with a thunderous noise. In order to make better progress, Alarcón now left his ships and proceeded up the river with twenty men in two boats. On the banks of the river he met some Cocopa Indians. From the Indians he heard reports of Cíbola, which, he was told, lay at a distance of thirty days' journey. A little later he heard that there had arrived at Cíbola men like himself, armed with "things which did shoote fire" and with swords, who called themselves Christians. These were the advance forces of Coronado. Alarcón sought to persuade his soldiers to carry to Coronado the news of his own proximity, but none of them would consent to go except a negro slave, who, however, was not sent. Later still Alarcón heard from the Indians further accounts of Coronado. Fearing now for his own safety, Alarcón set forth down the Colorado (which he names the Buena Guia or Good Guide) to his ships. The ascent of the river had taken over two weeks, but the journey back was accomplished in two days and a half. Determined, if possible, to join Coronado, he started up the river again on Sept. 14. He advanced farther than before, reaching about 34° (F. S. Dellenbaugh, *The Romance of the Colorado River*, 1902, pp. 27, 164), a point not far below the beginning of the Grand Canyon (Edward Channing, *History of the United States*, 1905, I, 83). Here he erected a cross, and at its foot secreted letters which were subsequently

found by Coronado's lieutenant, Melchior Diaz. Having rejoined his ships, Alarcón made frequent landings in a vain attempt to find Coronado. On reaching Colima, he delivered a report of his expedition and sailed away that night. The following year the Viceroy directed him to renew the attempt to communicate with Coronado, but the expedition never sailed. A substantial achievement of the expedition of Alarcón was a map of the Gulf of California by the pilot Don Domingo del Castillo (Winsor, *Narrative and Critical History of America,* II, 444). By this map (1541) the gulf was fully demonstrated to be a gulf and not a passage. So California was not an island as it was suspected of being. "But because your Lordship commanded mee," writes Alarcón, "that I should bring you the secret of that gulfe, I resolved that although I had knowen I should have lost the shippes, I would not have ceased for anything to have seene the head thereof" (Hakluyt, p. 279).

[Herrera, *Historia General,* and other sources not in English, as cited by F. W. Hodge, Introduction to "Narrative of the Expedition of Coronado," *Spanish Explorers in the Southern U. S., 1528–43* (1907); "Relation of Captaine Fernando Alarcon," Hakluyt, *Voyages* (MacLehose, 1904), IX; W. Lowery, *The Spanish Settlements in the U. S.* (1901), I; Justin Winsor, *Narr. and Crit. Hist. of America,* II (1886), 443, 481, 486.] I.B.R.

ALBEE, ERNEST (Aug. 8, 1865–May 25, 1927), philosopher, was born at Langdon, N. H., the son of Solon and Ellen Lucillia (Eames) Albee. He graduated from the University of Vermont in 1887. Specializing in psychology, he naturally went for his post-graduate work first to Clark University, where he held a fellowship in 1891. The ensuing year, as his major interest shifted to philosophy, he went to Cornell, where he also held a fellowship and where he obtained the degree of Ph.D. Already, in 1892, he had become a member of the faculty of the Sage School of Philosophy in which he continued to teach (instructor 1892–1902, assistant professor 1902–07, professor after 1907) until his death thirty-five years later. He was married in 1911 to Emily Humphreys Manly. From January 1903 to January 1909 he was associated with J. E. Creighton and James Seth as one of the editors of the *Philosophical Review,* and was again a co-editor of this magazine from 1924 to May 1927. Albee's most important work, however, was in the history of English Utilitarianism. Attracted early in his career to this relatively neglected field, he clung to it with singular tenacity. His doctoral thesis, *The Beginnings of English Utilitarianism,* which dealt with the movement in the eighteenth century, ran through the *Philosophical Review* between May 1895 and July 1897 and was later greatly expanded by the additional treatment of nineteenth-century writers until it became *The History of English Utilitarianism* (1902). Besides being far more comprehensive than Leslie Stephen's *The English Utilitarians* (1900), its only rival, it differed from the latter also in emphasizing the strictly philosophical rather than the social significance of the Utilitarian movement. Albee was the first duly to bring out the importance of Richard Cumberland as the founder of the movement and the first to establish the significance of Paley and the theological Utilitarians in the movement as a whole. Accurate, temperate, appreciative and yet keenly critical, his work was definitive for the period and school which it covered. It constitutes one of the few American contributions to the history of philosophy.

[*Who's Who in America,* vol. XIV; *Phil. Rev.,* July 1927; *N.Y. Times,* May 27, 1927.] E.S.B.

ALBRIGHT, JACOB (May 1, 1759–May 18, 1808), religious leader, was the son of Johann Albrecht and his wife, German immigrants who had settled near Pottstown, Montgomery County, Pa., where Jacob was born. They were Lutherans, and he was baptized, and later confirmed, in the Lutheran Church. He had but little education, and for a number of years followed his father's calling of brick-and-tile maker. When he was twenty he married one Catharine Cope and moved to Lancaster County, where he earned for himself the nickname of the Honest Tiler. His religious nature was not fully awakened until, in 1790, he was afflicted by the loss of several of his children. The sermon at their funeral awoke in him a sense of sinfulness, and, after a severe inward struggle, he was converted to the Methodist faith. In 1796 he began to preach as an "exhorter." He was particularly concerned about his fellow Germans, who were largely without pastoral care, and went about among them preaching with flaming enthusiasm, calling men to immediate repentance and conversion, and insisting on the duty of entire sanctification (sinlessness) for all believers. He traveled about through Eastern Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, preaching in barns, log-cabins, schoolhouses, and the like. He met with opposition but made converts here and there. As most of them spoke nothing but German, there were no churches in which they could find a congenial home; so, after nearly four years, he ventured to form three classes, Methodist fashion, each with its class-leader, for such of his converts as were near enough together for this purpose. There were but twenty all told. Two years later there were forty members and more classes, and in 1803 a council from these classes ordained him a minister. That he had but little education

and no theological training was a recommendation rather than a drawback in their eyes, as they regarded all education with suspicion and spoke of theological seminaries as "preacher factories." This was due, in large part, to what they felt to be the lethargy and lax moral standards of the Lutheran Church, which they ascribed to the rationalism with which their pastors had become imbued in German universities. Two young enthusiasts came to Albright's assistance, and in 1807 the number of converts was sufficient to admit of holding an Annual Conference, which adopted temporarily the name of "The Newly Formed Methodist Conference," and elected Albright as its bishop. It was Methodist in doctrine and polity, but it was an entirely independent movement, which the Methodists refused to recognize on the ground that the German language would not long continue in this country. The movement, however, continued, the name being changed, first to "The so-called Albrights," and later to "The Evangelical Association." But this, Albright himself did not live to see, for six months after his election as bishop he died, worn out with his exertions.

[R. Yeakel, *Albright and His Co-laborers* (1883); *Hist. of the Evangelical Ass.* (1892); S. P. Spreng, "The Evangelical Ass.," in the Am. Ch. Hist. Series (1894), vol. XII, pp. 385–439.] T. D. B.

ALBRO, LEWIS COLT (Feb. 6, 1876–Mar. 1, 1924), architect, son of Lewis Kinley Albro and Mary Lewis (Colt) Albro, was born in Pittsfield, Mass. While still a boy he became deeply interested in architecture and at the age of eighteen was sent by his parents to New York, where he studied for a year in the Metropolitan Art School. He then entered the office of McKim, Mead & White, first as student draftsman, and later as full draftsman and designer, remaining with the firm for nine years. He was closely associated with the design for the Columbia Library, and other Columbia work, and toward the end was in charge of such important commissions as the New York house of Charles Dana Gibson. It was through this connection that he decided to enter independent practise, his first commission being the Gibson house at Newport. In 1906 Albro and another graduate from the McKim, Mead & White office, Harrie T. Lindeberg, formed a partnership that lasted until 1914. They rapidly gained reputation as designers of the highest type of residential work, their houses being generally of English or Colonial inspiration, but never strictly archeological, and always characterized by freshness of conception, picturesqueness of outline, and a sensitive feeling for materials. In 1914 the partnership of Albro and Lindeberg was dissolved by mutual consent, and from then until his death Albro practised independently, producing a series of houses of marked distinction, in which his restraint, his delicacy of invention, and his inherent classicism received a continually growing expression. The most characteristic were those for George Arents, Jr., Rye, N. Y.; Jerome Mendleson, Albany, N. Y.; Dr. M. E. Johnston, Lexington, Ky.; John L. Bushnell, Springfield, Ohio; and that which was his favorite work, the group of Farm Buildings for Ernest Fahnestock, Putnam County, N. Y. In this group of houses Albro's genius attained a synthesis of originality, sensitiveness to tradition, simplicity and directness of plan, restraint sometimes almost austere, grace, and honesty of expression that rank him among the very best of modern American domestic architects. He knew styles, but was never a slave to stylism; without being fantastic or self-conscious, he infused freshness and personality into all of his designs. He was married in 1914 to Mrs. Groner of Richmond, Va. For the greater portion of his life he lived in New York City, but in his later years owned a small estate in Wingdale, N. Y., on which he lavished much affection.

[These facts of Albro's life are given on the authority of Mrs. Lewis Colt Albro, who based them upon manuscript notes prepared by herself and her husband shortly before his death. A short biography appeared in the *Architectural Rec.*, May 1924, which gives the date and place of birth as Feb. 4, 1876, Paris, France. Albro's work is illustrated in *Architectural Rev.*, Oct. 1911, Oct. 1912, and in *Lewis Colt Albro*, a monograph published by the Architectural Cat. Co., N. Y.] T. F. H.

ALCORN, JAMES LUSK (Nov. 4, 1816–Dec. 20, 1894), governor of Mississippi, senator, was descended from a poor immigrant from the North of Ireland, a lastmaker by trade, who settled in Philadelphia, Pa., in 1721. His grandson, William Alcorn, a native of Georgia, was a millwright. He and his wife (Sarah McLean Alcorn) with their son James and his wife (Louisa Lusk Alcorn) removed from South Carolina to Kentucky in 1810. The younger Alcorn became a boatman on the Mississippi River and was captain, first of a barge and then of a steamboat. He enlisted in the War of 1812 as lieutenant in a boatman's company and took part in the battle of New Orleans. Later, he was sheriff of Pope County, Ill., and of Livingston County, Ky. James L. Alcorn, eldest of eight children of James Alcorn, was born near Golconda, Ill., reared in Kentucky, and educated in Cumberland College. After teaching a short time in Jackson, Ark., he became deputy sheriff of Livingston County, Ky. Four years later (1843) he resigned this office and served one term in the Kentucky legislature. Meantime he was admitted to the bar, and in 1844 he began the

practise of law and the operation of a small plantation in Coahoma County, Miss. In his impressionable college days in Kentucky he became a convert to the political doctrines of Henry Clay, and was an ardent Whig as long as that party existed.

He was a member of the Mississippi Senate, 1848–56; representative, 1846, 1856, 1865; and author and foremost champion of the legislation establishing the levee system along the Mississippi River. He was for many years president of the Mississippi Levee Board. As a delegate to the Mississippi convention of 1851, called by Gov. Quitman to crystallize sentiment in favor of secession, Alcorn was among the majority who defeated the movement. In the presidential campaign of 1852 he was an elector at large on the Scott ticket. Five years later he declined a nomination for governor from the Whig and Know-Nothing parties, but accepted their nomination for representative in the lower house of Congress. He was defeated by his brilliant Democratic opponent, L. Q. C. Lamar, after a joint canvass of the district which was largely Democratic. Alcorn then returned to his law practise and planting interests, and soon accumulated great wealth. In the Mississippi secession convention (1861) he and Lamar again engaged in a spirited conflict, this time over the Ordinance of Secession, which was drafted and reported to the convention by Lamar as chairman of a special committee of fifteen. The result of this contest is given in Alcorn's own words on the floor of the convention: "I have thought that a different course . . . should have been adopted, and to that end I have labored and spoken. But the die is cast—the Rubicon is crossed—and I enlist in the army that marches to Rome." The convention elected him one of the brigadier-generals of the army of Mississippi, all of whom, except Alcorn, had been officers in the Mexican War and had gained military reputations. He raised a brigade and served under Generals Polk and Clark until he was taken prisoner at Helena, Ark. At the expiration of his parole he volunteered as a private, but was appointed colonel of a detached force for special service on the Mississippi River. His military career covered a period of about eighteen months, and was not at all conspicuous. After the fall of the Confederacy he was elected to the legislature that undertook to reorganize the state government. That body elected him and Judge William L. Sharkey to the United States Senate (1865), but they were not allowed to take their seats. He counseled his people to take no part in the Johnson convention that met in Philadelphia in 1866, and urged them to "make no alliances," and to

"stand aloof from all entanglements of party." Again in 1867 he admonished them not to resist congressional reconstruction. He entered the Republican party with the hope that he might utilize the negro vote for the best interests of his state, little realizing that carpet-bag leaders would bid for the same support. Most of the former leaders of the state not only opposed congressional reconstruction, but denounced Alcorn and his policies. On the other hand, Alcorn's contest for the colored vote and his defense of Republican rule led him far afield, and somewhat obscured his purpose to shield his people against the harsh policies of the radical leaders in Congress.

In 1869 he was elected governor of Mississippi by the radical party aided by many former Democrats. This office he resigned (Nov. 30, 1871) to enter the United States Senate, as the successor of Hiram R. Revels, the first colored man to occupy a seat in that august body. Senator Alcorn urged the removal of the political disabilities of his people and resisted all efforts to enforce social equality by federal legislation (*Congressional Globe*, 42 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 246–47); he denounced the federal cotton tax as robbery (*Ibid.*, pp. 2730–33) and defended separate schools for both races in Mississippi. Although a former slaveholder, he characterized slavery as "a cancer upon the body of the Nation" and expressed the gratification which he and many other Southerners felt over its destruction (*Ibid.*, p. 3424). His most bitter controversy in the Senate was with Gen. Adelbert Ames, his colleague, May 20–21, 1872 (*Ibid.*, pp. 3701–04, & app., pp. 393–96, 402–11). In 1873 they both sought vindication by entering the race for governor of Mississippi. Ames was supported by the extreme radicals, who controlled the colored vote, and was elected by a vote of 69,870 to 50,490. Although he had met the bitterest disappointment of his life, Alcorn remained in the Senate until Mar. 3, 1877. He then retired to his palatial plantation home, "Eagle's Nest," in Coahoma County. His last public service was rendered as a delegate to the Mississippi constitutional convention of 1890, in which he supported the disfranchising clause of the new constitution which broke the political power of the colored race in the state. He was twice married: in 1839 to Mary C. Stewart of Lexington County, Ky., who died in 1849; and in 1850 to Amelia Walton Glover of Alabama.

[The principal sources of information on the life of James L. Alcorn are the newspapers of Mississippi from 1846–94 and the *Cong. Globe* for 42nd to 44th Congresses, inclusive. Most of his public and private papers were lost in the burning of the home of Col. J. F. H. Claiborne, who at the time was putting the finishing touches

on the second volume of his *Miss. as a Province, Territory, and State,* which was also lost. A manuscript copy of Claiborne's preface, in which he passes judgment on Alcorn's reconstruction policies escaped destruction, and will be found, with a sketch of Alcorn's life in *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of Miss.* (1891), I, 291–95. Many important facts will be found in J. W. Garner, *Reconstruction in Miss.* (1901); Franklin L. Riley, *Pubs. of the Miss. Hist. Soc.*, vols. I–XIV (1898–1914); Edward Mayes, *Lucius Q. C. Lamar, His Life, Times, and Speeches* (1896); Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907), I, 62–71.]

F. L. R.

ALCOTT, AMOS BRONSON (Nov. 29, 1799–Mar. 4, 1888), educator, author, mystic, was the most transcendental of the Transcendentalists. His father was Joseph Chatfield Alcox, a corruption of Alcocke, the name borne by the earliest definitely known ancestor, who came to Massachusetts in 1630 with the elder Winthrop. His mother was Anna Bronson, a daughter of Amos Bronson, a Connecticut sea-captain. Alcott, who owed the spelling of his surname to his own choice, was born on a large farm at Spindle Hill near Wolcott, Conn., in the same log-house in which his father was born before him. His formal education was of the meagerest, derived mainly from the district school and a few months of private instruction under two clergymen of the neighborhood. He desired to go to Yale, but being the eldest of eight children felt that he must help support the family,—although throughout life he always turned out to be a financial liability rather than asset to those whom he would benefit. At nineteen he went to Virginia, hoping to teach school, but failing to secure a position he took up peddling. For four and a half years he offered his wares to Virginia and the Carolinas with as scant success as he was later to meet in offering ideas to the North. But his time was not wasted. To the example of the Virginia planters he owed something of the courtliness of manner for which he was later noted, and to the North Carolina Quakers he owed that faith in individual inspiration which became the corner-stone of his life and work. In March and April 1823 he read Penn, Barclay, Fox, Clarkson, and Law, and soon returned to New England with his mind bent on higher things than peddling.

The next ten years established Alcott's lifelong habit of spiritual success and temporal failure, the one largely the cause of the other. They were years of teaching—in the small Connecticut towns of Bristol, Wolcott, and Cheshire (1823–27), in Boston (1828–30), and in Germantown, Pa. (1831–33). Although recognized as personally an able teacher, he worked out an educational program too far in advance of anything then known in America for it to be permissible. It was directed toward the harmonious development of the physical esthetic, intellectual, and moral natures, with especial emphasis on the imagination. To this end Alcott introduced in his schools organized play, gymnastics, the honor system, and juvenile libraries; minimized corporal punishment; beautified the school-rooms; and presented instruction and study as activities pleasant in themselves rather than as the means to discipline or acquisition of learning. These extraordinary changes everywhere aroused doubts of the schoolmaster's fitness, which were increased by only too well-founded suspicions of religious heresy. In fact, during this period, Alcott was writing in his diary: "I hold that the Christian religion is the best yet promulgated, but do not thence infer that it is not susceptible of improvement; nor do I wish to confound its doctrines with its founder, and to worship one of my fellow-beings." Such sentiments, however guardedly expressed, were highly offensive to the majority of Alcott's countrymen and together with his radical educational views were sufficient to defeat his work.

The situation was made no easier by the development of Alcott's general philosophy. His stay in Germantown was marked by the reading of Plato and Coleridge, under whose influence, later intensified by that of the Neo-Platonists, Alcott reached an extreme transcendental idealism which viewed the world as the visionary creation of the fallen soul of man, itself a distant emanation of the deity. The notion of preëxistence, which most of the transcendentalists merely played with, became to Alcott a fundamental tenet. Spirit, temporarily imprisoned in the illusions of matter, could be freed, he thought, through its intuitive self-knowledge and utter devotion to its own inspirations. This philosophy Alcott integrated thoroughly with his personality, and without being given to trance or vision he lived in a state of quiet ecstasy which illuminated his whole being. Lacking all sense of humor, he was never willing, like Emerson, to compromise in the slightest degree with facts.

Thus when he opened a new school in the Masonic Temple in Boston on Sept. 22, 1834, it was of even more radical character than his previous ones. To his earlier reforms he now added great emphasis upon moral education cultivated by a conversational method of question and answer through which he endeavored to elicit from the children those rational ethical ideas which he believed innate in every one. The method was open to criticism as tending to develop habits of introspection far too early, but it was not this point which eventually aroused the wrath of Boston. *The Record of a School, Exemplifying the General Principles of Spiritual Culture* (1835), judi-

ciously edited by Alcott's assistant, Elizabeth Peabody, was followed by *Conversations with Children on the Gospels,* Volume I (1836), Volume II (1837), less judiciously edited by Alcott himself. These works made it all too plain that Alcott was stimulating his pupils to independent thinking in religious matters. A single passage, however, constituted the cardinal offense: "A mother suffers when she has a child. When she is going to have a child, she gives up her body to God, and he works upon it, in a mysterious way, and with her aid, brings forth the Child's Spirit in a little Body of its own" (*Conversations,* I, 229). This modest attempt to supplant the legend of the stork was promptly stigmatized as blasphemous and obscene by two prominent Boston newspapers, the *Daily Advertiser* and the *Courier.* Replies in Alcott's support by Emerson and James Freeman Clarke proved of no avail, and the attendance at the school dropped to one-third of its former numbers. Alcott fell deeply in debt, to cover which the furniture and school library were sold at auction in April 1837. The school itself lingered on, moving about from place to place until 1839 when it finally gave up the ghost owing to the refusal of various parents to permit their children to associate with a young colored girl who had been admitted.

He had married on May 23, 1830, Abigail May, sister of a distinguished Unitarian clergyman, and he was now the impoverished father of a growing family. Early in March 1840 the Alcotts moved their few belongings to Concord, where they took a small cottage at an annual rental of $50; with it went an acre of ground which Alcott proposed to till. The spectacle of a philosopher at the plough was very inspiring to Channing and others of Alcott's friends but less so to Alcott himself. Constant attendance at innumerable reform meetings—anti-slavery, vegetarian, temperance—interfered with his success as a farmer. For several years he had been in correspondence with a group of Englishmen, James Pierrepont Greaves, John Heraud, Charles Lane, and Henry Wright, who had founded near London a school which they called "Alcott House," and on May 8, 1842, with money supplied by Emerson, Alcott set sail to visit his spiritual offspring. He remained in England until October, during which time he had two interviews with Carlyle, who was plainly bored but sent to Emerson this immortal description: "The good Alcott; with his long, lean face and figure, with his gray worn temples and mild, radiant eyes; all bent on saving the world by a return to acorns and the golden age; he comes before one like a venerable Don Quixote, whom nobody can laugh at without loving." Alcott returned to America with a large collection of books on mysticism and with three living mystics, Henry Wright, Charles Lane, and his son William, who were to form the nucleus of a Utopian community.

The numerous coöperative communities which sprang up in America during the decade 1830–40 were largely inspired by a hatred of industrialism with its accompanying over-specialization and by a determination to return to larger and simpler modes of living. Their ultimate intent was sane, but they were ruined by the eccentricities so likely to develop in small minority movements. Of them all, however, none failed so swiftly and ignominiously as Bronson Alcott's Fruitlands. During the winter of 1843–44 he kept Wright and the Lanes at his house in Concord, where they worked out the plans for the new enterprise. In the spring Lane invested all his savings (about $2,000) in a hundred-acre tract near the village of Harvard, thirty miles south of Boston. Thither the party moved in June 1844. Others joined the community from time to time during the summer; at its largest it embraced eleven persons, for all of whom Mrs. Alcott acted as an unbelieving but faithful slave. The organization was based on strictly vegetarian principles; the eating of flesh, fish, or fowl, eggs, milk, cheese, or butter was forbidden; the labor of horses was dispensed with; the use of manure was disdained. In his zeal for spirituality, Alcott is said to have drawn a distinction between the "aspiring vegetables" which grow upward and those degraded forms which burrow in the earth; the former alone received the doubtful compliment of being eaten. The crops were planted late and carelessly; at harvest time the men left to attend a reform meeting, and Mrs. Alcott and her daughters rescued what they could from an impending storm. By winter the Lanes and Alcotts, sole remaining members of the community, were on the brink of starvation. In January 1845 the undertaking was finally abandoned.

The Alcotts returned to Concord to continue their long war with poverty, not to be ended until 1868, when the success of *Little Women* by Louisa M. Alcott [*q.v.*] placed her parents in comfortable circumstances. During the intervening years, in Concord 1845–47, in Boston 1848–54, in Walpole, N. H., 1855–57, and again in Concord after 1857, the family was supported mainly by the efforts of Mrs. Alcott and Louisa in sewing, teaching, or domestic service, supplemented by the assistance of various friends. Meanwhile Alcott gradually developed a system of attractive but not particularly remunerative "conversations"—informal lectures and discussions—with which after 1853 he repeatedly toured the old Northwest. He was

a brilliant, though rambling, talker, somewhat after the manner of Coleridge. On one occasion when Theodore Parker was present, he asked Alcott to define his terms. "Only God defines," replied the seer, "man can but confine." "Well, then, will you please confine," said Parker. But Alcott refused to confine or be confined; he soared above rational distinctions in the true mystic manner. Only in the field of education was he ever able to harness his inspiration to a definite program. Appointed superintendent of the dozen schools of Concord in 1859, he introduced into the curriculum singing, calisthenics, and the study of physiology, and advocated the introduction of dancing, hours of directed conversation, and a course of readings aloud. He organized an informal parent-teachers club. His three school reports were models of sane educational thinking. In 1879 the Concord Summer School of Philosophy and Literature was modestly started in Alcott's library. Later it was more adequately housed and continued to flourish as a center of belated transcendentalism until his death in 1888. Alcott's direct service in connection with it terminated in 1882, as on Oct. 24, while writing two sonnets on Immortality, he was stricken with paralysis from which he never fully recovered.

Alcott's publications included *Observations on the Principles and Methods of Infant Instruction* (1830); *The Doctrine and Discipline of Human Culture* (1836); the mystical "Orphic Sayings" contributed to the *Dial* (1840); *Tablets* (1868); *Concord Days* (1872); *Table Talk* (1877); *New Connecticut,* a poetical autobiography covering his boyhood and youth (privately printed in 1881, published 1887); *Sonnets and Canzonets,* in memory of his wife, who died in 1877 (1882); *Ralph Waldo Emerson* (privately printed in 1865, revised and published in 1882, together with Alcott's finest poem, "Ion"). Alcott's verse has ease and melody, while his prose, at its best, possesses an oracular quality almost equal to that of Emerson. But he was never able for long to communicate the glow of his personality to the printed page, and his writings as a whole are undoubtedly tedious. Hence a later generation has been at a loss to account for his influence over such men as Emerson, Thoreau, Hawthorne, Channing, and W. T. Harris. The loftiness which they found in his serene unworldly spirit can now only be glimpsed, as it were, between the lines; while it is also between, not in, his deeds, that one senses a nature much too sweet and simple for this complex world.

[F. B. Sanborn and W. T. Harris, *A. Bronson Alcott, His Life and Philosophy* (1893), containing copious excerpts from Alcott's letters and diary; R. W. Emerson, sketch in the *New Am. Cyc.* (1858); Clara Endicott Sears, *Bronson Alcott's Fruitlands* (1915), containing also a reprint of *Transcendental Wild Oats* by Louisa M. Alcott, whose personal animus against Lane is to be discounted; a brief but exceptionally discriminating estimate of Alcott by H. C. Goddard in *Cambridge Hist. of Am. Lit.* (1917), I, 336–39; a more diffuse but still valuable discussion by O. B. Frothingham, *Transcendentalism in New England* (1876), ch. X; a sympathetic account of Alcott's educational career by Honoré Willsie Morrow, *The Father of Little Women* (1927).]

E. S. B.

ALCOTT, LOUISA MAY (Nov. 29, 1832–Mar. 6, 1888), author, was the second daughter of Amos Bronson Alcott [*q.v.*] and Abigail (May) Alcott. She was born in Germantown, Pa., but her childhood and youth were passed mainly in Boston and Concord, Mass. She obtained her education almost entirely from her father, although Thoreau was an early instructor, and she received friendly guidance and inspiration from Emerson and Theodore Parker. At the age of sixteen she began to write for publication, and produced her first book, *Flower Fables,* which was not published for six years. In her efforts to assist her family she tried teaching, sewing, and even domestic service. At the age of seventeen, having shown some talent in amateur theatricals, she contemplated a stage career. "I like tragic plays, and shall be a Siddons if I can," she confided to her diary (Cheney, p. 63). She wrote a number of melodramatic plays, such as *The Bandit's Bride* and *The Captive of Castile; or, The Moorish Maiden's Vow,* one of which, *The Rival Prima Donnas* was accepted by Barry of the Boston Theatre, but never produced. She had more success, however, with poems and short stories and by 1860 her work began to be published in the *Atlantic Monthly.* During the Civil War she became a nurse in the Union Hospital at Georgetown where she rendered efficient service until her health broke down. Her letters to her family, in a revised form and under the title "Hospital Sketches," were published by Frank B. Sanborn in the *Commonwealth* in 1863 and later in the same year brought out in book form. They excited widespread interest, and were followed, in 1864, by her first novel *Moods.* In 1865 she visited Europe, and on this trip made the acquaintance of a Polish youth, who was the original of Laurie in *Little Women.* In 1867 she became editor of *Merry's Museum,* a magazine for children.

The first volume of *Little Women,* founded on her own family life, was written in 1868; its success was immediate and its popularity so great that she promptly produced a second volume (1869); both were translated into several languages and had a phenomenal sale. From this time she was able to make her family financially independent. In 1870 *An Old Fashioned Girl*

was published and she again visited Europe. It was during this sojourn that *Little Men* (1871) was written. *Work* (1873), which recounts her own early experience, was followed by *Eight Cousins* (1875); *Rose in Bloom* (1876); *Silver Pitchers* (1876); *A Modern Mephistopheles* (1877); *Under the Lilacs* (1878), written during her mother's last illness; *Jack and Jill* (1880); *Aunt Jo's Scrap-Bag* (6 vols., 1872–82); *Proverb Stories* (1882); *Spinning-Wheel Stories* (1884); *Lulu's Library* (3 vols., 1886–89); *Jo's Boys* (1886); and *A Garland for Girls* (1888). Much of her work was done in Boston where the climate suited her better than in Concord; there she spent her last years, and wrote her final books. She died on Mar. 6, 1888, two days after the death of her father.

In appearance she was striking, her well-proportioned figure indicating strength and activity. She possessed ardent sympathies. A born champion of persons and causes dear to her heart, she espoused both woman's suffrage and the temperance movement. Literature was to her always a means to moral edification rather than an esthetic end in itself. Nevertheless, her books, after half-a-century, still retain their appeal to youthful readers. Their charm lies in their freshness, humor, and true understanding of the feelings and pursuits of boys and girls. Her characters are full of the buoyant, free, and hopeful spirit characteristic of their creator.

[Ednah D. Cheney, *Louisa May Alcott, Her Life, Letters, and Journals* (1889); Maria S. Porter, *Recollections of Louisa M. Alcott, etc.* (1893); F. B. Sanborn, *Recollections of Seventy Years* (1909); Clara Endicott Sears, *Fruitlands* (1915); Gamaliel Bradford, *Portraits of Am. Women* (1919).]

C. T.

ALCOTT, WILLIAM ANDRUS (Aug. 6, 1798–Mar. 29, 1859), educator and pioneer in physical education, was born in Wolcott, Conn. His grandfather, John Alcox, was the original settler here in the year 1731, and his mother, Anna (Andrus) Alcox, was a descendant of William Andrus, a first settler in the adjoining town of Waterbury, Conn. He was educated at the district school with his cousin, Bronson Alcott (with whom he decided to change the spelling of his family name), and for a short time with the parish minister, who kept a sort of high school during the winter months. The interest of William Alcott in popular education manifested itself at an early age. When he was fourteen years old, he formed a juvenile library with several of the boys of his town. At the age of eighteen he was appointed to teach school in his district, and for four successive winters he was employed as a teacher in parts of Litchfield and Hartford counties. When he was twenty-two, he made a journey to the South with Bronson Alcott. Their plan was to teach school in the Carolinas, but this was unsuccessful, and after journeying on foot from Charleston to Norfolk, Va., they reached home the next year. At the age of twenty-four William Alcott was again teaching—boarding around, as was the prevalent custom. From this time on the serious purpose of his life continuously manifested itself. He became a true missionary of education. When not actually engaged at his school-house, he spent his time instructing the children—and incidentally the parents—in their own homes. One of his first school reforms was the bettering of the condition of the school-room. The crude benches for the smaller children were supplanted by seats with backs, and he inaugurated a system of ventilation,—a subject which, until that time, had been almost entirely neglected. His devotion and enthusiasm for his calling were such that every waking hour was spent in labor. He was literally on his feet from morning until night—arising at dawn, hastening away to school to sweep his own floor and light his own fire. His experiences at this time are portrayed in detail in his book *Confessions of a Schoolmaster*, written twenty years later. The effects of his strenuous life, however, brought on a serious decline in health, from which he never fully recovered. This illness, which was accompanied with emaciation, sweats, and fever, speaks only too clearly of tubercular infection. It was at this time that he determined to study medicine. His idea was not to relinquish teaching for medicine but to gain a knowledge of physiology and the laws of health that would aid his usefulness in his own profession.

During four months of the winter of 1824–25 he had charge of the Central School in Bristol, Conn., and in his spare hours studied medicine. During the next winter he attended a regular course of lectures at the Yale Medical School in New Haven, and in the following March he received a diploma to practise medicine and surgery. After leaving college, more determined than ever to devote his life to education, he made application for the Central School in his home, at Wolcott, Conn. It had long been his ambition to establish a model school and he now set out to do this. To the usual curriculum he added grammar and geography, and in his school-room were to be seen flowers, plants, maps, and other appurtenances designed to inculcate cultural habits in his pupils. Not long after the inception of this unique school, another setback to his health occurred. His pulmonary disturbance, which had no doubt been aggravated by his close attention

to study at the medical college, became so threatening that he was obliged to abandon his educational project. He became a sort of itinerant physician, practising medicine in his native district, making calls on horseback—a complete change to outdoor life, from which he was so benefited that he attempted once more to teach—this time in Southington, Conn. The attempt was followed by another serious decline in health. His discouragement at this time was so great that he made up his mind to give up all idea of teaching or practising medicine, and to devote his life to farming. While preparing to do this, he met Rev. William C. Woodbridge of Hartford. Woodbridge, who formerly had been associated with Pestalozzi, invited Alcott to assist him in establishing in the vicinity of Hartford a sort of "miniature Fellenberg school." The offer was accepted. It was during this engagement that Alcott began to write voluminously. His essay on the construction of school-houses was awarded a premium by the American Institute of Education. He began to publish small volumes on educational subjects, and by means of his pen and lectures his name gradually became known throughout this country. In 1831 he accompanied Woodbridge to Boston, where he assisted him in the work of the *Annals of Education,* and for the next two years he was also engaged as editor of the *Juvenile Rambler,* probably the first magazine for children published in this country. At the end of this time, S. G. Goodrich (Peter Parley) invited him to become editor of *Parley's Magazine.* This connection lasted four years, during which time he contributed to other publications. The *Annals of Education,* the *Watchman and Traveller* of Boston, and the *Boston Medical and Surgical Journal* all shared in his contributions. Unquestionably, there was no individual of his time better informed on educational subjects. Essay after essay, volume after volume issued from his pen, all preaching the betterment of education and the importance of healthful living. A classification of his works is as follows: educational—nineteen volumes; medical, physical education, and health—thirty-one volumes; books for the family and school library—fourteen volumes; books for the Sabbath-school library—forty-four volumes. Among these may particularly be mentioned: *Confessions of a Schoolmaster* (1839); *Lectures for the Fireside* (1852); *The Home Book of Life and Health* (1856); *Forty Years in the Wilderness of Pills and Powders* (1859). To one interested in the influence of Alcott's medical training upon his career, the medical writings are the most interesting. While written almost exclusively for the lay reader, with a view to popularizing the laws of health, they nevertheless give an excellent insight into the keen medical mind of the writer.

In 1836 Alcott married Phebe Bronson of Bristol, Conn., by whom he had two children. His last years were spent in the town of Newton, Mass. Here he died of pleurisy, and was buried in the Newton cemetery. His dying message to his son —then a college student—was characteristic of the man, "Tell William to live for others, not for himself."

[Amos Bronson Alcott, *New Conn.* (1887); T. Dwight, *Travels in New Eng. and N.Y.* (1821); S. Orcutt, *Hist. of Wolcott, Conn.* (1847); *Am. Jour. Ed.*, 1857, IV, 629–56.]

H. T.

ALDEN, EBENEZER (Mar. 17, 1788–Jan. 26, 1881), medical historian, bibliophile, and genealogist, born in Randolph, Mass., was an only son of Dr. Ebenezer Alden, Sr. (1755–1806), by his wife, Sarah Bass. Dr. Alden, Sr., was born in Stafford, Conn., and moved to Randolph in 1781. As a physician he is said to have been "remarkably prudent, attentive, and successful." Through both his father and his mother, Ebenezer Alden was descended from John Alden of the *Mayflower.* He was graduated from Harvard College with the class of 1808 and received the degree of M.B. from Dartmouth Medical School in 1811, and M.D. from the University of Pennsylvania (1812). At the latter institution he came under the stimulating influence of Benjamin Rush, Caspar Wistar, and Benjamin S. Barton. While at Dartmouth he had been a pupil of Nathan Smith. After completing his medical education he returned to his native town (Randolph) and there passed, almost without interruption, the remaining seventy years of his life. Little information is obtainable concerning his professional career other than that it was successful and that it brought him and his family a comfortable livelihood. He is chiefly noted for his interest in the history of American medicine. An active member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, he early attracted attention by writing an interesting and scholarly history of that venerable medical institution (*Historical Sketch of the Origin and Progress of the Massachusetts Medical Society,* 1838), which was read as the "Annual Discourse" for 1838. In 1847 he was offered the presidency of the society, but he declined to serve, though he was for many years a regular attendant at its meetings. Alden's second important historical contribution, *The Early History of the Medical Profession in the County of Norfolk, Mass.,* was published in Boston in 1853. It is a well-written account of early practitioners in the various towns of Norfolk County (including part of Boston).

Alden's professional contributions were not nu-

merous. The most notable, the *Medical Uses of Alcohol,* was read to the executive board of the Massachusetts Temperance Association in 1868. His conclusions may be set forth in his own words: "In view of the preceding facts and arguments, permit me to renew my adhesion to the principles of Temperance Reform; and, as a physician, to express my deliberate conviction, that in the treatment of disease in coming years, new and more successful methods will be discovered than we now possess, in which alcoholic narcotics will rarely find a place" (p. 16).

Alden was a great collector of books and pamphlets, and his library may be ranked among the important collections made in this country in the nineteenth century. It was especially rich in items relating to the Civil War and to the ecclesiastical history of New England. Alden had also strong antiquarian and genealogical interests, being an active member of the New England Historical and Genealogical Society. His memoir of his own ancestors (*Memorial of the Descendants of the Hon. John Alden,* 1867) is exemplary of careful genealogical research. In 1818 he married Anne, daughter of Capt. Edmund Kimball of Newburyport, and by her had six children, three of whom survived him. During the last six years of his life, he was totally blind owing to cataract.

[Obituary in the *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.*, CIV, 116–17; W. L. Burrage, sketch in *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); W. L. Burrage, *Hist. of the Mass. Medic. Soc., 1781–1922* (1923); *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.* for 1881, p. 213, portr.]

J.F.F.

ALDEN, HENRY MILLS (Nov. 11, 1836–Oct. 7, 1919), editor and author, was one of the last representatives in American letters of the old New England type. He was born in the small village of Mt. Tabor, Rutland County, Vt., the son of Ira Alden, eighth in descent from John Alden the Pilgrim, and Elizabeth Packard Moore, niece of Zephaniah Moore, second president of Williams and first president of Amherst. His father's small farm was located amidst the Green Mountains in a wild region where children went to school through woods still frequented by bears. In Alden's seventh year, however, the family moved to the manufacturing town of Hoosick Falls, N. Y. This was in the heyday of American democracy, when factory-labor and child-labor were alike respectable; Alden had two uncles employed in the cotton-mills, and he at once became a "bobbin-boy," working from dawn till eight at night. There were occasional bright vacations from work when he went to school, but most of his time up to the age of fourteen was spent as a factory hand. He then decided to prepare for college and entered Ball Seminary, where he earned his tuition by sweeping out the rooms and building fires. The principal, Rev. Charles J. Hill, encouraged his ambition and, in 1853, the lad left the Seminary in a blaze of valedictorian glory and entered Williams. It was at a time when Williams was particularly flourishing, under the presidency of Mark Hopkins; among Alden's fellow-students were James Garfield, Horace Scudder, and Washington Gladden; he found there abundant intellectual stimulus and sympathy. His trend of mind may be inferred from his nickname of "Metaphysics," although most of his actual study was in the classics, to which he sacrificed his chance of college honors rather than divert his attention to the necessary courses in mathematics. During this period he taught every year for a few months in various district schools of Vermont and New York.

Upon graduation from Williams in 1857, he went to Andover Theological Seminary in pursuance of his mother's desire that he enter the ministry and attracted by its large library of Greek literature. He was graduated in 1860, and occasionally supplied vacant pulpits for a time, but his voice was weak, the work was none too congenial, and he decided not to be ordained. At Andover he had made the acquaintance of Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, who had become interested in a manuscript poem, "The Ancient Lady of Sorrows," and through her kind offices two articles on the Eleusinian Mysteries were accepted by Lowell for the *Atlantic.* The next winter Alden spent at home caring for an invalid father, but April 1861 saw him arriving in New York to seek his fortune with two dollars in his pocket. When the Civil War broke out, he endeavored to enlist but could not pass the physical examination. He then found teaching positions, first in a girls', then in a boys' school, rooming meanwhile with his friend, Horace Scudder. By July he was making seven dollars a week and on the basis of this substantial income was married to Susan Frye Foster, whom he had met in Andover and by whom he later had four children. Further contributions to the *Atlantic* gained the attention of James T. Fields, Emerson, and Wendell Phillips, through whom Alden received an invitation to deliver twelve lectures on "The Structure of Paganism" before the Lowell Institute, Boston, in the winter of 1863–64. In August 1863 he accepted a position to collaborate with Dr. Alfred H. Guernsey in writing *Harper's Pictorial History of the Great Rebellion* and to assist him in editorial work. Thus began a connection with the Harpers which was to last for over fifty years.

Alden was managing editor of *Harper's Week-*

ly 1863–69 and editor of *Harper's Magazine* from 1869 until his death. His conscientiousness in reading manuscripts, his recognition of talent, his unfailing courtesy became a legend. Under his editorship *Harper's Magazine* was the most widely circulated periodical in the country. His colleague, W. D. Howells, said of him that he was "an editor perfect in his time and place." His function was not so much to initiate new policies as to maintain and improve the old. *Harper's Magazine* was committed to its rôle as a family magazine, refusing to publish anything which "could not be read aloud in the home." This limitation brought Alden into some embarrassing situations during the serial publication of Hardy's *Jude the Obscure* and Henry James's translation of Daudet's *Port Tarascon,* when he was forced to insist upon the omission of certain chapters that were quite justified from his own literary standpoint, but his tact and personal liberalism enabled him to accomplish the task without offending either authors or readers. Meanwhile, year after year, he had a medium for personal expression in the department of the Editor's Study. He also found time to publish three volumes: *God in His World* (1890); *A Study of Death* (1895); *Magazine Writing and the New Literature* (1908). There was a strong religious quality in all his literary work, expressing itself in devotion to the personality of Christ and in a mystical nature worship, two themes which he strove to blend poetically rather than rationally. He believed in the innate goodness of human nature and in the innate depravity of dogmas. Although vaguely perturbed by the growth of mediocrity in America, he remained loyal to his early faith in democracy and progress, and could write in 1908, "It is a fortunate era we have reached." Despite their dates, his writings express the spirit of New England of 1840, its vague but deep religiosity, its moral idealism, its innocence of evil.

In person, also, Alden was the late New Englander, rugged, angular, bearded, low of voice, deliberate of speech, animated always by an impressive kindliness. He was no ascetic; an inveterate smoker, fond of cards, and fond of people. He was twice married; his first wife died in 1895, and he was married again in 1900 to Ada Foster Murray, a Virginia poet. He died in New York City when almost eighty-three years old.

[A short biographical account in *The House of Harper* by J. Henry Harper (1912); obituaries by W. D. Howells, *Harper's Mag.*, CXL, 133, and by James Lane Allen, *Bookman,* L, 330;; *Reader Mag.,* IV, 96; *Rev. of Revs.,* LX, 542; *Lit. Dig.,* Oct. 25, 1919; *Nation,* CIX, 516; *Commemoration Tribute* by Robt. Underwood Johnson (Am. Acad. of Arts and Letters, 1922); private information from Mrs. Ada Murray Alden.] E. S. B.

ALDEN, ICHABOD (Aug. 11, 1739–Nov. 11, 1778), Revolutionary soldier, was born in Duxbury, Mass., a descendant of John Alden of Plymouth and the son of Samuel and Sarah (Sprague) Alden. Appointed lieutenant-colonel in 1775, he was assigned to the 25th Continental Infantry Jan. 1, 1776, and promoted to be colonel of the 7th Massachusetts on Nov. 1 of that year. A brave and honorable man but inexperienced in warfare and especially in Indian methods, he was appointed to command in Cherry Valley, N. Y. This was a prosperous frontier community south of the Mohawk. On this valley fell one of the most fearful blows of the war, due, it is said, to a desire for retaliation on the part of Butler and the Indians. Alden received on Nov. 8, 1778 a letter from Fort Schuyler giving warning of an attack, through information obtained from an Oneida Indian. He was unconcerned, discouraged those of the inhabitants who wished to take refuge in the fort, and promised assurance of safety. He commanded about 200 or 300 soldiers, and dispatched scouts in the direction of possible danger. The attacking party was led by Walter Butler and Brant, and consisted of about 600 Indians, and about 200 Tories and British. It proceeded from Tioga Point, and surprised Alden's scouts, who had imprudently built a fire and fallen asleep. Good information was obtained regarding the position of the officers and the general condition of affairs, and the attack on the valley—Nov. 11, 1778—had the usual features of an Indian surprise, and was marked by appalling acts of atrocity. A considerable number of the garrison and of the dwellers in the valley perished in the massacre or were made prisoners. Alden in attempting to escape from the house to the fort was killed by an Indian. The blame for his share in the disaster was only partially offset by the excuse of his unfamiliarity with frontier warfare. His body was buried within the fort.

[F. W. Halsey, *Old N. Y. Frontier* (1901); W. W. Campbell, *Annals of Tryon County* (1831, 4th ed. 1924); W. L. Stone, *Life of Joseph Brant* (1838).] E. K. A.

ALDEN, JAMES (Mar. 31, 1810–Feb. 6, 1877), naval officer, was born in Portland, Me., the son of James and Elizabeth (Tate) Alden. His father being a ship-owner and fifth in direct line from the *Mayflower* Pilgrim, John Alden, whose descendants numbered many merchant seamen in colonial and revolutionary times, young James quite naturally sought a career in the rising American Navy. Appointed midshipman in 1828, he made his first cruise on the *Concord* in the Mediterranean; and in 1838–42 served as a lieutenant in the Wilkes, or South Sea Exploring Expedition, which cruised along the Antarctic continent

and later among the Samoan, Hawaiian, and Fiji islands. In the latter group, a landing party was attacked by natives, and Alden led a boat expedition to the rescue; though arriving too late to save two brother officers, he averted the massacre of the rest. In 1844–46 he made a second voyage around the world, in the famous *Constitution,* and met another exciting adventure commanding a boat expedition which cut out several war junks under the guns of the fort in Zuron Bay, Cochin China. The Mexican War found him attached to the Home Squadron, with which he served at the captures of Vera Cruz, Tuspan, and Tobasco. Commissioned commander in 1855, at the outbreak of the Civil War he was put in command of the *South Carolina,* with which he reënforced Fort Pickens. He commanded the *Richmond* in the passage of Forts Jackson and St. Philip below New Orleans, as well as in the running of the Vicksburg batteries and the action at Port Hudson. He was promoted to the rank of captain in 1863, and commanded the *Brooklyn* at the van of the column of wooden ships in the battle of Mobile Bay. Appalled by the sudden sinking of the monitor *Tecumseh* and the report of torpedoes ahead, he stopped his ship and began backing. His action threw the fleet into disorder but evoked Farragut's decisive dash in the *Hartford* to the head of the column, and his historic profanity, "Damn the torpedoes! Go ahead!" Alden's conduct was the object of some courteous animadversion in Farragut's official report and aroused considerable controversy. There is little doubt that he was guilty of indecision and perhaps overcautiousness. Yet his fault has been kindly treated, and the matter is well summed up by a brother officer and naval historian: "A good seaman, a skilful officer, whose battle-record attests his bravery, his hesitation . . . must needs be ascribed to an error in judgment . . ." (F. A. Parker, *Battle of Mobile Bay,* 1878, p. 29). He rounded his war service by participating in the attacks on Fort Fisher, and was commissioned commodore in 1866. He rose to the rank of rear admiral, and after a brief command of the European Squadron retired in 1872. He was a man of fine appearance, and is described as courtly and accomplished. He died in San Francisco. The destroyer *Alden* was named after him.

[Official reports and correspondence by and relating to Alden may be found carefully indexed in the multi-volumed *Official Records.* See also Alden's official service record, Navy Dept., and a sketch in the *Army and Navy Jour.,* Feb. 10, 1877. For family history, see *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.,* July 1877, p. 363.] A. MacC. S.

ALDEN, JOHN (*c.* 1599–Sept. 12, 1687), one of the *Mayflower* Pilgrims, was born in or about 1599. There are no absolute proofs regarding his ancestry. A similar name occurs in Domesday Book, and Aldens have been found from early times in the eastern counties of England. The first definite statement concerning John Alden is the familiar one by Bradford, that he was hired at Southampton as a cooper; this was possibly due to the requirement of an Act of Parliament (1543), which provided that a vessel carrying beer beyond sea should have the services of a cooper, to make good the loss of "barrel-stock." He was one of the signers of the *Mayflower* Compact, and evidently gained an honorable standing in the community; for in 1627 he was one of the eight bondsmen or "undertakers," responsible for assuming the colonial debt. In this same year, or possibly a few years later, he removed from Plymouth to Duxbury, acquiring a farm of about 169 acres; and to this grant there was later added one in Bridgewater. Standish, his neighbor in Duxbury, was his friend and associate; the two were joint arbitrators in disputed claims between the Indians and settlers of Sandwich, and Alden was frequently engaged in determining bounds.

Alden was employed as an agent for the colony, for example at the trading-post on the Kennebec in 1634. He held various public offices; surveyor of highways; on the local committee for raising a force against the Indians; deputy from Duxbury —nearly continuously—from about 1641 to 1649; on the local council of war in 1675; and a member of the colony's council of war in 1646, 1653, 1658, and 1667; treasurer (elected for 1656–58). To the important position of governor's assistant he was first chosen on Jan. 1, 1632/33, and thereafter through 1640–41, and again continuously from 1650 to 1686. Twice he was "deputy-governor," in 1664–65, and in 1677 (following the critical King Philip's War).

Alden married Priscilla Mullens (or Molines), a daughter of one of the Pilgrims, about 1623, or possibly in 1621. Near the site of his Duxbury home a house has been occupied by his descendants from early colonial days, and is now owned by the Alden kindred. According to tradition he was tall, blond with blue eyes, of the Saxon type. Tradition also emphasizes his reputation as a speaker, and his interest in military matters. The famous story used by Longfellow in the *Courtship of Miles Standish* is unfounded, except as it rests on Timothy Alden's *Epitaphs and Inscriptions* (1812–14). Equally without foundation is the claim that Alden was the first of the Pilgrims to land on Plymouth Rock.

Alden died in Duxbury, the last surviving signer of the *Mayflower* Compact, and was buried in the little graveyard in South Duxbury, near his friend Standish, but the exact spot has not

been identified. There were—according to Bradford—eleven children, from whom are descended the greater number of those who bear the name Alden.

[Wm. Bradford, *Hist. of Plymouth Plantation* (edition of 1912); *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth* (1855–61); Augustus E. Alden, *Pilgrim Alden* (1902); Chas. H. Alden, *Eliab Alden, Ancestors and Descendants* (1905); Ebenezer Alden, *Memorial of the Descendants of the Hon. John Alden* (1867); Justin Winsor, *Duxbury* (1849); Azel Ames, *The Mayflower and Its Log* (1901.) For the date of his birth, see *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth*, VII, 256.]

E. K. A.

ALDEN, JOHN FERRIS (Mar. 19, 1852–Feb. 27, 1917), civil engineer, a direct descendant of John Alden and son of Sidney and Harriet Webster Alden, was born in Cohoes, N. Y. His early education was received at private schools in Albany and at the age of twenty he was graduated with honors from the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute with a degree in civil engineering. In 1885 he married Mary E. Bogue of Brooklyn. His life was devoted to bridge-building and iron and steel construction of other kinds. After serving as assistant engineer, under Charles Hilton, on the construction of a railroad bridge for the tracks of the New York Central over the Hudson River at Albany, he accepted a position with the Leighton Bridge & Iron Works at Rochester, N. Y. He became a member of the firm in 1878, but in 1881, with Moritz Lassig as partner, he leased the Leighton Bridge & Iron Works in both Rochester and Chicago, and they went into business for themselves. After four years the partnership was dissolved, and Alden purchased the interests of the firm in Rochester, reorganizing it under the name of the Rochester Bridge & Iron Works. In 1901 he sold his business to the American Bridge Company but retained an interest in this company until his death.

Many of the steel and iron bridges in use to-day in both the United States and Canada were built by Alden during his active connection with the Rochester Bridge & Iron Works. Among them are bridges for the Delaware & Hudson, the Chicago, Milwaukee & St. Paul, and the Buffalo, Rochester & Pittsburgh Railroads; also the bridge over the Columbia River at Pasco, Wash., the viaducts at Los Angeles, the Upper Suspension Bridge at Niagara Falls, the Driving Park Avenue Bridge at Rochester, and part of the elevated railroads in New York City. He constructed many large buildings in New York, Chicago, and other cities, including the tower and elevator in the Parliament Buildings at Ottawa, Ont., Canada; and he furnished most of the iron and steel work for the buildings at the Columbian Exposition in Chicago.

[Material for this biographical sketch has been obtained from the files of the Am. Soc. of Civil Engineers, especially from vol. LXXXI of their *Transactions*.]

E. Y.

ALDEN, JOSEPH (Jan. 4, 1807–Aug. 30, 1885), educator, author, began his career as a teacher at the age of fourteen in a district school and finished it with a fifteen-year term as principal of a normal school, having been in the meantime a professor and college president. He was a descendant in the sixth generation of John Alden of Plymouth, and was born in Cairo, N. Y., the son of Eliab and Mary (Hathaway) Alden. He entered Brown University but transferred to Union College, where he graduated in 1829 (*Union University Centennial Catalogue, 1795–1895*, elsewhere given as 1828). For two years he studied at Princeton Theological Seminary and was subsequently a tutor at Princeton. In 1834 he was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church, Williamstown, Mass., but resigned after a few months to accept a professorship at Williams College. Thereafter, although acting as a supply and as college pastor, he gave his entire time to educational work and writing. At Williams, where he served from 1835 to 1852, he was first professor of Latin, and then of English language and literature, political economy, and history. In the latter year he accepted the chair of mental and moral philosophy at Lafayette College, leaving there in 1857 to take the presidency of Jefferson College, which office he held for five years. From 1867 to 1882 he was principal of the State Normal School at Albany, N. Y. He was twice married: first, in 1834, to Isabella, daughter of Rev. Gilbert R. Livingston; and second, June 30, 1882, to Amelia, daughter of George W. Daly, of Tompkinsville, Staten Island. He left a son, William Livingston Alden [*q.v.*].

He was more highly regarded as a teacher than as an administrator and was best-known perhaps as an author. His success in the class-room was largely due to his ability to clarify a subject quickly and reveal the essential facts. A clear thinker himself, he trained his students to think logically. For generalities or splurge he had no tolerance, and was likely to make one who indulged in them feel ridiculous. His lesser success as an official was due to the impression of impatience and condescension he gave to those who had dealings with him, his habit of pointing out errors for the pleasure of correcting them, and a tendency to lose his balance and make ill-advised remarks. "He was a man of fine presence, about five feet ten inches tall, and well-proportioned, with massive head well-rounded, hair a little thinned on top and turned to iron grey, and whiskers of the Burnside order" (J. W. Wight-

man, *History of the Jefferson College Class of 1860,* 1911).

His published writings, which number more than seventy, disclose tireless industry and a wide range of interests. They are chiefly of a didactic nature, many of them books for Sunday-school libraries, others intended to be used in the classroom. His was the practical type of mind and he wrote with a view to getting results in every-day life, whether his subject was philosophy, government, or religion. Among these writings are: *The Aged Pilgrim* (1846); *Alice Gordon, or the Uses of Orphanage* (1847); *The Lawyer's Daughter* (1847); *Anecdotes of the Puritans* (1849); *Christian Ethics* (1866); *Elements of Intellectual Philosophy* (1866); *Elizabeth Benton, or Religion in Connection with Fashionable Life* (1846); *The Example of Washington Commended to the Young* (1846); *The Jewish Washington, or Lessons in Patriotism and Piety Suggested by the History of Nehemiah* (1846); *Studies in Bryant,* with introduction by W. C. Bryant (1876); *A Textbook of Ethics* (1867); *Thoughts on the Religious Life,* with introduction by W. C. Bryant (1879); *Self-Education: What to Do and How to Do It* (1880); *First Principles of Political Economy* (1879); *Introduction to the Use of the English Language* (1875); *Science of Government* (1866); *Normal Class Outlines* (1900).

[Calvin Durfee, *Williams Biog. Annals* (1871); *Gen. Cat. Wms. Coll.* (1910); *Princeton Theol. Sem. Necr. Report,* 1886; *An Hist. Sketch of the State Normal Coll. at Albany, N.Y., 1844–1894; N.Y. Herald, N.Y. Tribune* Aug. 31, 1885; *N.Y. Observer,* Sept. 3, 1885.]

H.E.S.

ALDEN, RAYMOND MACDONALD (Mar. 30, 1873–Sept. 27, 1924), philologist, was born at New Hartford, N. Y., the son of Gustavus R. and Isabella (Macdonald) Alden. His father was a Presbyterian minister; his mother was known to an army of Sunday-school scholars, with outposts in Armenia and Japan, as "Pansy," the author, ultimately, of about seventy-five volumes of juvenile fiction persuasively written to make "observance of the Golden Rule a pleasure." Over her son's education and literary taste she exercised a guiding influence, to which other influences were added later. Alden studied for a time at Rollins College at Winter Park, Fla., attended Columbian (now George Washington) University 1892–93, and for his last year went to the University of Pennsylvania. Apparently unhampered by these changes, he took active part in student affairs, made the winning speech in a Cornell-Pennsylvania debate, and graduated as valedictorian of the class of 1894. He then taught for a year at Columbian University, took his A. M. at

Harvard in 1896 and was assistant in English there 1896–97, took his Ph.D. at Pennsylvania in 1898 with a dissertation on *The Rise of Formal Satire in England under Classical Influence* (1899), and stayed on as fellow in English 1898–99 and as instructor 1899–1901. He then went to Leland Stanford Jr. University as assistant professor. He married Barbara G. Hitt of Alhambra, Cal., May 24, 1904, by whom he had five children. He was made associate professor in 1909, went to the University of Illinois as full professor in 1911, but returned to Stanford with full rank in 1914. He taught in summer sessions at Chicago in 1910, at Harvard in 1912, and at Columbia in 1916 and 1919. A man of unusual urbanity and charm, he was liked by most, and by those who could appreciate the range and accuracy of his knowledge, the lucidity and balance of his thinking, he was admired. As a prosodist and as a Shakespearean he had, at least in America, no indisputable superiors. The peculiar quality of his scholarship was its entire freedom from crotchets, from strained hypotheses, and from glimmering intuitions doing duty as ascertained facts. He was therefore eminently successful as the author of handbooks such as *English Verse* (1903), *An Introduction to Poetry* (1909), *Alfred Tennyson—How to Know Him* (1917), and *Shakespeare* (1922), and as the editor of *Beaumont's Knight of the Burning Pestle* and *A King and No King* (both in one volume, 1910), and of the *Sonnets* in the Tudor Shakespeare (1913). His full powers show best perhaps in his variorum edition of *The Sonnets of Shakespeare* (1916), a masterly performance, and in various shorter articles and reviews (*e.g.,* "The Punctuation of Shakespeare's Printers," *Publications of the Modern Language Association,* XXXIX, 557–80) in which whole batteries of fact and argument are deployed in order to demolish the structures of less cautious scholars. His diligence as a scholar and editor of text-books did not lead him to slight his work in classroom and seminar; he was an energetic and stimulating teacher. He also wrote verse, won a $1,000 prize in a short-story contest in 1905, and was the author of several children's books. In 1924, while absent on sabbatical leave from Stanford, he was visiting professor at Swarthmore College and at Columbia University. A disease of the nerves, long held in abeyance, at this time took an acute turn, but he persisted with his work until April, and in September after months of suffering bravely endured he died in Philadelphia.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1924–25; *Cat. of Columbian Univ. 1892–93* (1893); *Gen. Alumni Cat. of the Univ. of Pa.* (1917); *Stanford Univ. Bull., 34th Ann. Reg. 1924–*

Alden

25; F. E. Schelling, "Introductory Note" in R. M. Alden, *A Shakespeare Handbook* (1925); *Phila. Public Ledger*, Sept. 29, 1924; personal information.]

G. H. G.

ALDEN, TIMOTHY (Aug. 28, 1771–July 5, 1839), Congregational clergyman, college president, antiquarian, was a descendant in the sixth generation of John Alden of Duxbury, who came to this country in the *Mayflower* in 1620. He was the son of Sarah (Weld) Alden and of Timothy Alden, who graduated from Harvard in 1762 and was for fifty-nine years pastor of the Congregational church at Yarmouth. At the age of eight, he went to live with his uncle, Joshua Alden, a well-to-do farmer of Bridgewater. Here he remained seven years. He was, however, bent upon receiving a liberal education and was much more interested in his Latin grammar than in the tasks of the farm, and, on his uncle's advice, was allowed to give up farming and prepare for college. He began his preparatory studies with his father, continued them with the Rev. John Mellen, of Barnstable, and completed them at Phillips Academy, Andover. He then entered Harvard College, graduating with high rank in 1794, having distinguished himself especially by his proficiency in the classical and the oriental languages. After graduation, he began to study for the ministry under David Tappan, professor of theology, at Harvard. He then taught in an academy at Marblehead, at the same time completing his theological studies. It was here that he met and married Elizabeth Shepard Wormsted, daughter of Capt. Robert Wormsted. (She died in 1820 and in 1822 he married Sophia L. L. Mulcock.) In the fall of 1799 he accepted a call to the South Congregational Church of Portsmouth, N. H., as colleague pastor with the Rev. Samuel Haven. But his heart was always more in teaching than in preaching, and, even while serving as assistant pastor at Portsmouth, his time was largely given to teaching and historical research. His sermons were rather dull; he approached eloquence only when his subject gave him the opportunity to dwell on the history and heroes of his country; but he was an exceptionally gifted teacher. In 1805 he resigned his pastorate, and then for a number of years was engaged in teaching in various girls' schools.

On a trip to Cincinnati he had been much impressed by the opportunities of the West and the need of a higher institution of learning. He was caught by the vision of a college rising on the western frontier, a vision aptly portrayed in the original seal of the college he later founded, where (the description is Alden's) "the sun is represented as just rising and darting its beams across the distant Alleghany and other mountainous ridges by which it is flanked upon the wilderness of the west." He determined to bring about the realization of this vision and planned a settlement to be named Aldenburg in the Alleghany Valley about ninety miles from Pittsburgh with the college in its midst, but having a cousin, Maj. Roger Alden, living in Meadville, Pa., he selected that town, instead, as the site. The citizens of Meadville entered into the scheme with enthusiasm, subscribed $6,000 and then sent Alden to tour the East in search of further endowments, one of the many trips undertaken for that purpose. He came back with $461, some land of uncertain value, and a goodly collection of books, a collection soon to be augmented by further benefactions until it comprised 7,000 volumes, making it one of the most valuable college libraries of the time. Thus Allegheny College was launched. Alden was made president and professor of oriental language and of ecclesiastical history, and was inaugurated July 28, 1817. As there were for some years no college buildings, the president received the students in his own home. The years that followed were years of hardship and repeated disappointments. Often for lack of funds the entire burden of instruction rested on the shoulders of the president, who served without salary. In face of all obstacles, however, Alden held steadfastly to his high ideals of scholarship, and when in 1831, for lack of funds, he was forced to turn the key of the one building that had been erected, and close the college (which was to be opened two years later under the auspices of the Methodists), he had established high traditions which lived on in the reëstablished college.

His life on leaving Meadville was uneventful. For a time he kept a boarding-school at Cincinnati. Then he moved to Pittsburgh to take charge of an academy in the suburb known as East Liberty. In the last year of his life, he officiated as stated supply at Pine Creek Congregational Church in Sharpsburg.

While living at Meadville Timothy Alden devoted what time he could spare from college duties in the summer months to missionary work with the Seneca and Munsee tribes of Indians, being led to undertake this work as much from an admiration of their character as from a sense of their spiritual needs; and he left interesting and historically valuable records of his experiences. He had at first volunteered in this service, but later received an appointment from the Society for Propagating the Gospel among the Indians and Others in North America. He assisted in the organization of the American Antiquarian Society. It had been his habit from early youth, whenever he visited any town, to spend much

time in its old burial ground, transcribing the epitaphs of the worthies of former days and using these as texts for brief articles, giving such information as he could gather about their lives and characters, which he later published in five volumes as *A Collection of American Epitaphs and Inscriptions* (1814). During his sojourn in Boston, he was appointed librarian of the Massachusetts Historical Society and prepared for publication a catalogue of its books and pamphlets, and later performed the same service for the New York Historical Society.

[The chief sources of information are: *The Diary of William Bentley* (1905–14); Elisha Thayer, *Family Memorial* (1835); *Alleghany Mag.* (1816–17); E. A. Smith, *Allegheny—A Century of Education* (1916); Ebenezer Alden, *Memorial of Descendants of John Alden* (1867); and two unpublished MSS. accounts in the possession of his descendants. A sketch of his life was published in W. B. Sprague's *Annals of the Am. Pulpit*, vol. II (1857).]

C. M. B.

ALDEN, WILLIAM LIVINGSTON (Oct. 9, 1837–Jan. 14, 1908), journalist, was the son of Rev. Joseph Alden [*q.v.*], by his first wife, Isabella Graham, daughter of Rev. Gilbert R. Livingston of Philadelphia. He was born at Williamstown, Mass., where his father was pastor of the Congregational church and held the combined chairs of rhetoric, political economy, and history in Williams College. Alden's choice of an institution of higher learning was determined by his father's advancement in 1853 to the professorship of mental and moral philosophy in Lafayette College, Easton, Pa., and five years later to the presidency of Jefferson College (now Washington and Jefferson College) at Canonsburg, Pa. After three years at the former college, Alden completed his course at Jefferson with the class of 1858. He then went to New York City to study law in the office of William M. Evarts, was admitted to the New York bar on May 2, 1860, and practised until 1865. In that year he married Agnes M. McClure and gave up the law for journalism.

In a magazine article written late in life (*Putnam's Monthly*, III, 554–58), Alden sketched the state of literary society as he first knew it. Like Stedman and the Stoddards, whom he met at Anne Swift's boarding-house on Tenth St., he kept somewhat aloof from the Bohemian circle of Pfaff's and equally aloof from the well-established coterie of the Century Club, composed of writers of an older generation. Eventually he joined with others of the middle group in founding the Lotos Club. He was employed for a short time as editorial assistant on the *Citizen* under Charles G. Halpine, and then settled into harness as leader writer for the *Times*, *World*, *Graphic*, and other papers. His humorous skits in the "sixth column" of the *Times* won him reputation as a clever writer. The nature of these productions is indicated by one of his formulas for manufacturing them, which ran: "First invent a German and then let him invent something." Two collections appeared in book form. Alden also wrote, during the eighties, a popular life of Columbus and contributed half a dozen volumes to Harper's Young People's Series. After 1885 he lived much abroad. During Cleveland's first administration he held the post of United States consul-general at Rome, and upon his retirement, in 1890, he received the decoration of Knight of the Crown of Italy from King Humbert. Until 1893 he remained in Paris as leader writer for the Paris edition of the *Herald*. He then moved to London and for the last fifteen years of his life wrote humorous stories for a variety of magazines besides acting as literary correspondent for the *New York Times*. He died at the home of his daughter in Buffalo, N. Y.

Alden's favorite recreation was canoeing. Shortly after McGregor and Baden-Powell had popularized the sport in England, he introduced it into the United States. His articles on canoeing in the *Times* (1871) and in *Scribner's Monthly* (Aug. 1872) attracted wide attention. He designed a successful cruising canoe, the "Shadow," founded the New York Canoe Club in 1870, and was the first commodore of the American Canoe Association. One of the cruises in which he participated with three companions is described in *Canoeing in Kanuckia* (1878), by Charles Ledyard Norton and John Habberton. The list of his works includes such varied titles as *Domestic Explosives* (1877), *Shooting Stars* (1878), *The Cruise of the Canoe Club* (1883), *Trying to Find Europe* (1889), *Among the Freaks* (1896), *Cat Tales* (1905).

[*Who's Who in America*, 1908; *N.Y. Times*, Jan. 16, 1908; private information.]

G. F. W.

ALDRICH, EDGAR (Feb. 5, 1848–Sept. 15, 1921), jurist, was born at Pittsburg, N. H., the son of Ephraim and Adaline (Haynes) Aldrich, and a descendant of George Aldrich, who came from Derbyshire, England, in 1631. Having obtained his early education in the common schools, Edgar Aldrich went in 1862 to Colebrook Academy. In 1865 he commenced the study of law at Colebrook, subsequently proceeding to the University of Michigan, where he obtained his law degree in 1868. He was called to the New Hampshire bar in August 1868 and started practise at Colebrook. He was appointed solicitor for Coos County in 1872 and again in 1876. In January 1881 he removed to Littleton, which he made his perma-

nent home. In 1884 he was elected to the legislature as representative for Littleton. Though without legislative experience he was elected Speaker and displayed conspicuous ability in that position. This was his only term in the legislature. His law practise was extensive, but, having a distaste for office routine, he confined himself almost exclusively to court work, holding briefs in most of the important local litigation of his time. On Feb. 20, 1891, he was commissioned United States district judge of the district of New Hampshire, a position which he held for over thirty years. The judicial qualities he developed, combined with a natural dignity and courtesy, procured for him universal confidence and respect, and he was frequently called upon to sit in the circuit court of appeals for the first judicial district. In 1907, during the famous Eddy litigation, he was appointed Master to inquire whether Mrs. Eddy was capable of intelligently managing her financial interests (see Michael Meehan's *Mrs. Eddy and the Late Suit in Equity,* Concord, 1908). As a delegate from Littleton he attended the constitutional convention at Concord in December 1902. "His commanding presence, intimate knowledge of every subject which came before the assembled delegates, together with the great esteem and confidence in which he was held, made him a powerful factor" (*Granite Monthly,* XXXIV, 17). His impressive speech upon trusts and combinations and against "the slavery of criminal monopoly," had great influence in inducing the convention to propose an amendment empowering the legislature to regulate trusts, which was subsequently approved by the electorate and incorporated in the constitution. In his leisure moments Aldrich devoted much time to historical research, contributing papers to the New Hampshire Historical Society (see *Proceedings of the New Hampshire Historical Society,* vols. II, III).

[Sketches of his life are contained in Conrad Reno, *Memoirs of the Judiciary and the Bar of New Eng.,* pt. III (1901), and *Geneal. and Family Hist. of N. H.* (1908), ed. by E. S. Stearns, pp. 1157–58. A short notice of his career prior to his appointment to the bench appears in *N. H. Men,* by G. H. Moses (1893). The official *Report of the N. H. Constitutional Convention of 1902* contains full details of his participation and a valuable verbatim report of the discussions.]

H. W. H. K.

ALDRICH, LOUIS (Oct. 1, 1843–June 17, 1901), actor, was born in Ohio. His real name was Lyon. His youth, spent in Cleveland, was beset with hardship, but having some talent for recitation, he early took to the stage as a boy actor, appearing as Richard III with such success that he afterward toured the country as the "Ohio Roscius." Later, under the various names of Master Moses, Master McCarthy, Master Kean, he appeared as a boy star in such rôles as Richard III, Macbeth, Shylock, Claude Melnotte, Young Norval, and Jack Sheppard. In 1857 he left the stage and entered White Water College, Wayne County, Ind. The following year he returned to the boards as a star, using for the first time the name Aldrich. Becoming a member of the juvenile Marsh players in St. Louis, he remained with that organization five years and married Clara Shropshire, one of the members of the troupe. In 1863, the Marsh players having disbanded, he proceeded to San Francisco and joined the company at Maguire's Opera House, where he remained until 1866. The following year he was in Boston playing in *Leah the Forsaken,* in support of Kate Bateman. Later, he was seen in New York acting with Charles Kean during that player's farewell to America. Returning to Boston, he resumed his position at the Museum, where he remained seven seasons. While there, he gained a reputation as an actor of rare versatility, acting leading rôles in support of Forrest, Booth, Cushman, and other noted stars. During the season 1873–74 he was leading man in Mrs. John Drew's company at the Arch Street Theatre, Philadelphia. In 1877 he played the Parson in McKee Rankin's production of Joaquin Miller's play *The Danites,* and two years later, Sept. 16, 1879, he was first seen as Joe Saunders in Bartley Campbell's *My Partner,* one of the most popular American plays ever written. Aldrich continued to play this piece for six years and it brought him an independent fortune. His later ventures, *In His Power* (1877), *The Kaffir Diamond,* and *The Editor* (1890), were less successful. In June 1897 he was elected president of the Actors' Fund of America, a position he held for four years. Noted for his charities to his fellow actors, he was the first to suggest the building and endowment of a home for destitute aged players, a suggestion realized later in the present Actors' Home on Staten Island, N. Y. He died at Kennebunkport, Me.

[*Dramatic Mirror,* June 29, 1901; T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (1903).]

A. H.

ALDRICH, NELSON WILMARTH (Nov. 6, 1841–Apr. 16, 1915), statesman, financier, man of business, was the son of Anan E. Aldrich and Abby (Burgess) Aldrich. He was born in the town of Foster, R. I., on a farm that belonged to his mother's people, who were descended from Roger Williams. His temperament included a luxurious and art-loving bent that may well have come to him from his father, while from his mother he inherited an iron will, practical resourcefulness, and indomitable energy. As his character matured, he developed great personal charm,

which enabled him in later life to be on terms of close intimacy with confirmed political enemies. During his youth New England passed through the severe final stage of the industrial revolution when its fine old farming and seafaring communities were transformed into manufacturing communities. His parents were involved in the general hardship that overtook so many of the native stocks. Despite straitened circumstances, however, they gave him a common-school education in the town of East Killingly, and later a year at East Greenwich Academy. At seventeen he was at work in Providence. Soon afterward he entered the employ of the leading wholesale grocers of the state. His promotion was so rapid that at twenty-four he was a junior partner.

Meanwhile he had seen service in the 10th Rhode Island Volunteers, which was called to Washington when the capital was threatened in 1862. An attack of typhoid fever was followed by his discharge and return to Providence the same year. He was married in 1866 to a lovely and accomplished girl, Abby Chapman, who inherited what in that day was considered wealth. Aldrich showed his rooted independence of character by refusing to accept any of his wife's money as part of their family income. Mrs. Aldrich met his views in this respect and their scale of living was adjusted rigorously to what he could himself make. So successful was he that his business interests rapidly expanded; before many years had passed he was a millionaire. A fine natural taste was well served by his wealth, with the result that he became a discriminating if not an extensive collector of works of art. During his later years one of his chief interests was the beautiful estate which he developed near Warwick, R. I. In the full maturity of his fortunes he had extensive investments in banking, sugar, rubber, traction, gas, and electricity. His acumen as a man of business, had he not given most of his time to politics, would doubtless have placed him in the front rank of the millionaires of his day. His marked success led to bitter misrepresentation when subsequently his political power made him an object of attack.

Aldrich entered politics in 1869, standing for the common council of Providence as an independent Republican in a Democratic ward. He continued in the council until 1875. There followed two terms in the state legislature. At this time the Republican party in the state was divided into two factions, each bidding against the other for promising recruits. In 1877 the more powerful faction, headed by Senator Henry B. Anthony, offered Aldrich the nomination for governor. He declined it, fearing that it would merely put him on the shelf. The next year the Anthony faction

Aldrich

offered him a nomination to Congress which he accepted. He sat in the Forty-sixth Congress, an attentive, thoughtful legislative apprentice. In 1880 he was reëlected. Before the next Congress met, Gen. Burnside, who had been Anthony's associate in the Senate, died. Aldrich made an independent campaign for the vacant seat and despite the rather cool attitude of the regular machine captured the prize. In October 1881 Anthony formally introduced him to the Senate. From that day until he retired thirty years later he was the master in Rhode Island politics. His local position was strengthened by the death of Anthony three years later. The Anthony following became the Aldrich following. In the Senate he was promptly recognized as a coming man. In 1886, at forty-five, he had overridden all local competition and won a second election to the Senate.

During the next few years he was drawn into a group of senatorial leaders who eventually formed a singular inner coterie, acting almost like a privy council, hardly paralleled in our history. They were men who like himself were sure of their constituencies, who therefore could act without trimming in a way that the senators of more variable states could not. The older senators, around whom this coterie gathered, were attracted by Aldrich's personality—serene, unresentful, humorous, ironic, stedfast, masterful. His first term had established his reputation for having a mind of extraordinary range and grasp. A thoroughgoing protectionist, he took position among the ablest defenders of the doctrine in the discussions of 1883. Though an effective party man in all the controversies of the Cleveland administration, it was not until 1888 that he definitely stepped up out of the rank of the competent senators and into the rank of the distinguished senators. When the Mills Bill focused in Congress the tariff issue, Aldrich was one of those Republicans who rose immediately to the challenge. The counter bill brought forward in the Senate as a party program was largely his work. It was in this connection that he made the first complete exhibition of his genius as a parliamentarian—a rôle in which it is doubtful whether he has ever been excelled. He possessed a lucidity of mind, a sense of humor, and a perfect freedom from vindictiveness that rendered him a most unusual judge of human nature. He also had the gift of absorbing himself in parliamentary strategy as if it were a game pure and simple. Like the true whist-player, he judged his result not by the tricks taken but by the possibilities discovered in his hand. No one ever surpassed him in subtle use of the strategic retreat. As a consequence, in after days he would issue frequently from what had seemed to be

predestined ruin, with some measure of triumph.

Scope for these talents was found in the complicated bargaining and diplomacy of the famous measures of 1890—the Silver Purchase Act, the Anti-Trust Act, the Force Act, and the McKinley Tariff. In all his politics he had dealt directly with individuals—the senators, the party managers, the spokesmen of business interests. He had not dealt with crowds behind the men. His strength was not as a public speaker. The institutional influences that had contributed to form him had all worked in the same direction. He was the product of a stable state, of constant tendencies. His temperament had fitted him to respond to such influences. At fifty he stood revealed—the embodiment in politics of the creative business forces of his time. Furthermore, his temper was fixed in a smiling indifference both to the applause and the condemnation of the multitude. A splendid directness, joined with a contempt for changeable emotions which led him at times to miss the significance of mob psychology, was to be his characteristic to the end.

In the legislation of 1890 the Republicans were skating over thin ice. It broke under them in the elections at the close of the year. The Democrats swept the variable states and the Republican senators from those states began to disappear. In 1892, not content with their capture of the variable states, his opponents paid Aldrich the compliment of sending their strongest speakers into Rhode Island. This was the year of his third senatorial election. He was the conspicuous symbol of the stable states of the North, where the Republicans had a hold analogous to that of the Democrats in the South. But Aldrich was too well entrenched in his own field to be shaken by the storm. He was one of the few Republican senators who survived. It was inevitable that his group—the heart of the coterie of the elder statesmen—should become the sure foundation of Republican power in the upper house. All that had been needed to make them the inevitable masters of their party was the political execution by popular fickleness of their weaker brethren in the Democratic victories of 1892. From that time until the end of the chapter, eighteen years later, they were the irreducible minimum of Republican power. Among them, all that while, Aldrich was a major figure, and during most of the time the central figure.

Aldrich's strong position was due to personal and business connections as well as to political power in the narrow sense. He was now rich. This was made a charge against him in 1892. In framing the tariff of 1890 he had supported a rise in the duty on refined sugar. He had investments

in sugar. In the desperate efforts to unseat him, his opponents began that campaign of innuendo, which was to become still more reckless in after days, to develop from innuendo to vituperation. His scornful silence in 1892 on the subject of his investments was characteristic. It was at this period also that the Republican senatorial coterie drew together socially in an unusually close way. Aldrich was a leading member in a little card club that is certain to become historic. It was called playfully "The School of Philosophy." Composed at first entirely of senators, it included later a few important cabinet members. Senator McMillan is credited with being the incomparable host who held together this unique male salon. He and Aldrich became close friends and their friendship seems to have included business as well as political interests. In no other period of his senatorial career had Aldrich as much time for business as during the enforced inactivity of the party eclipse and he appears to have made good use of it.

A second event of marked significance in this period of Republican eclipse was the panic of 1893. Rhode Island weathered the panic comparatively well. Aldrich appears to have attributed this to its compact social-economic system which exemplified fairly completely the Hamiltonian conception of an industrial hierarchy with prosperity percolating automatically from the governing group at the top downward through all the layers. Such was his social conception ever after. The third significant event of the period of the eclipse was the breaking of party lines in the Senate over the repeal of the Silver Purchase Act, and still more surprisingly over the Wilson-Gorman Tariff, in 1894. It had long been evident that the parties were inconsistently based, partly upon actual economic interests, partly upon sentimental traditions of doubtful vitality. The fact of this double affiliation in both the parties was glaringly demonstrated when the protection Democrats under Gorman and the protection Republicans led by Aldrich coöperated to enact a tariff that was nominally a Democratic measure but essentially Republican.

The accident of the next two years enabled Aldrich and other Republican leaders of similar views to accomplish the great feat of bringing this double affiliation to an end. The silver movement gave them their opportunity. Aldrich did his full part in that relentless attack upon the silver Republicans which split his party, but served also indirectly to split the Democratic party, and divided the nation for the first time since the Civil War on a clear-cut issue based on true affiliations unclouded by sentimentality. With the election of 1896, the Republican party issued from its eclipse

and entered upon that period of unshakeable predominance which lasted until the disastrous schism of 1910. Its *pronunciamento* for the new day was the Dingley Tariff, in the adoption of which Aldrich became in the popular mind the protectionist senator *par excellence*.

There was an element of irony in the popular delusion. In his three great tariff battles, Aldrich stood twice, in 1897 and again in 1909, not so much for protection in and of itself as for the *status quo*. In both these instances he believed that a new chapter was beginning, that more important legislation lay immediately ahead, and that any radical interference with the existing conditions was dangerous. In 1897 the further legislation which he had in mind concerned those monetary issues which were not by any means settled with the election of McKinley. It seems clear that in 1897 he was on the whole in favor of slight reductions below the rates of 1890, rather than material increases. Here, however, as again in 1909, his chief purpose was the unification of the party. He was the target of such a bombardment by special interests that it filled him with contempt for "the trooping of the beggars" through his committee room. Having worked out a compromise tariff and thus solidified the party, he turned to the less distasteful but equally difficult task of final adjustment of monetary problems, which was at last accomplished in the Gold Standard Act of 1900. The delay in bringing this about was due to the fact that not until then could the Senate Finance committee be delivered from the domination of its silver majority.

In 1897 the Senate crossed a dividing line in its history. Of the Republican members who had disappeared in the dark days of the eclipse, few ever returned. Their places were taken by men who were new to the intricacies of senatorial procedure and who, with the exception of Hanna, were not sure of their position in national politics. Inevitably the small group of senators who had weathered the storm became the central figures in the transformed party, the authoritative link between its present and its past. Within this group there was still an inner group which might, with some justice, be called the heart of hearts in Republican policy from 1897 to 1905. It was composed of four senators—Allison of Iowa, Platt of Connecticut, Spooner of Wisconsin, and Aldrich. It is frequently asserted that Hale of Maine formed a fifth, but there is little evidence in support of the contention and much against it. The "Big Four," as they have been labeled (the "Big Five" by those who include Hale), formed a unique political coterie which acted with almost complete unanimity and may be said to have dominated the Senate until their fraternity was broken up by the death of Platt in 1905. Spooner withdrew from the Senate in 1907. The death of Allison in 1908 left Aldrich at the height of his power, master of the Senate, but without that sympathetic inner group to sustain him.

Aldrich

No statesman ever did less in the way of explaining his purposes than Aldrich. It seems to be safe, however, to attribute to him about 1897 a definite conception of American society. He appears to have perceived in it three large elements, to have concluded that two, capital and labor, had similar interests, while both were being threatened by the rise of a meddling and hysterical bourgeoisie. There was much to justify him in his estimate of that wave of hysteria which swept the country in 1898 and was the first popular manifestation with which the Four had to deal in the period of their eminence. They struggled hard to prevent the war with Spain. It seemed, almost to the last moment, that they were going to succeed, that they would bring about an amicable solution of the Cuban difficulties. And then President McKinley, hitherto their ally, suddenly changed front and threw them for a moment into the minority. War came. They gave to its conduct the support they considered obligatory, while deliberating what to do next. At this juncture the temper of Aldrich was a decisive factor. Nothing was more deeply rooted in him than a humorous acceptance of the accomplished fact; no attribute of his mind was more conspicuous than the power to discern just when the inevitable had arrived. His conclusion, ten months later, that the Spanish War had made imperialism unavoidable—specifically, that the President's peace treaty must be accepted, with its acquisition of the Philippines—became the conclusion of the Four. In the words of Spooner, they saw that they had to make the best of "the bitter fruits of victory." Following the peace, Aldrich became a member of Platt's committee on Cuban affairs. He visited Cuba in company with Platt and took a main part in enacting "the Platt Amendment" (to the Army Appropriation Bill of 1901) which established permanent relations between Cuba and the United States.

The peak of the influence of the Four was about the time of the reëlection of McKinley, with whom they were now entirely in accord. The accession of Roosevelt produced no apparent change in their position. They welcomed him cordially. He consulted them all in drawing up his first message, in which at places the hand of Aldrich seems to be apparent. The Four gave him steady support during his difficult first Congress. Roosevelt had inherited from McKinley a number of

reciprocity treaties which had been negotiated under a clause of the Dingley Act. Whether it was ever intended to take them seriously is a question. On the advice of Aldrich, Roosevelt let the treaties drop out of view. The Hay-Pauncefote treaty, which had come before the Senate the previous year, had been opposed by Aldrich in its original form. Since then, Hay had negotiated a new treaty. This was promptly sent to the Senate by Roosevelt and was ratified with Aldrich's support. The preëminent problem of the first half of 1902 was reciprocity with Cuba. The lobbies of conflicting sugar interests wrangled furiously at Washington. The matter was complicated by insidious charges against Gen. Wood, the temporary governor of the island. The Four stood firmly by the President in support of the policy which resulted eventually in the Cuban reciprocity convention.

By the summer of 1902, the Four appear to have concluded that it was desirable to reach a clear understanding with the President as to what should be the official position of the party in the approaching elections. In August the President visited New England and spent a day with Aldrich at his country place near Warwick. Almost immediately after returning to Washington, Roosevelt invited the Four, together with Lodge and Hanna, to an informal conference at Oyster Bay which took place Sept. 16 (Roosevelt Engagement Book, Library of Congress). The upshot of their deliberations was expressed in the speeches of the President on his western tour which immediately followed, especially in his speech at Logansport (Roosevelt to Allison, Sept. 27, 1902, Roosevelt Papers). During the remainder of Roosevelt's first administration, the Four may be ranked as, in the main, administration senators. They steadily supported the President with regard to Panama.

Aldrich's relations with Roosevelt fall into three distinct stages, and an aftermath. A second stage began with the election of 1904 and extended until the summer of 1906. Meanwhile, Roosevelt made his bold attempt at personal government—or something equivalent to that—and instantaneously converted Aldrich from the administration leader to the leader of opposition. In these eighteen months, he was the Senate's general in its battle royal with the President for the dominant place in the governmental system. The President boldly brought the matter to a head by his foreign policy of early 1905. His proposed arbitration treaties vesting in the Executive large powers of international negotiation, and his proposed receivership for San Domingo were promptly rejected by the Senate. Thereupon Roosevelt touched his peak in audacious defiance of the Senate, accomplishing his purpose without the formality of a treaty. It was this notice to the Senate that its wishes in foreign policy were to count for nothing, that formed the background of the great duel between Aldrich and Roosevelt in 1906.

The Hepburn Rate Bill had been designed with a view to giving the Interstate Commerce Commission the power to initiate railway rates and to make them binding until, if ever, the roads might bring about a reversal through the slow process of legal proceedings. To repair losses incurred by a road in the case of a rate finally abrogated by the Supreme Court, no provision was made. In fact the wording of the bill laid it open to the charge that it was designed to make appeal to the courts impossible. This famous measure, like so many of the measures of that day, has been all overclouded in popular apprehension by the significance imputed to it by its enemies. It was not—at least as it came before the Senate—an attempt at government management of railways; it was something which in the eyes of Aldrich was much more objectionable. It was an attempt to compel the railways to obey a dictation which did not accept any responsibility for the results it might produce, and which was vested in a commission not answerable to Congress. The bill contained other radical features, but the crux of it all was this creation of a dictatorship over business, with the hardship of its practices thrown altogether upon the corporations involved. It had the approval of the President and was hailed by a whole army of the literary propagandists as a revolutionary measure of first importance. Aldrich concentrated opposition upon this one phase of the bill. He drew in powerful Democratic support, and contrived to have Tillman report the bill from the Interstate Commerce Committee to the Senate. After a long and furious parliamentary battle, in which La Follette began his persistent denunciation of Aldrich, the administration forces were beaten and the dictatorship provision was eliminated by conferring "express jurisdiction upon the Circuit Courts in suits to enjoin, set aside, or suspend orders of the Commission" (Ripley, *Railway Problems,* p. 545). Aldrich then permitted the amended bill to pass.

Even in the height of their political duel, Aldrich and Roosevelt did not come to an open break. Concerning the tariff, at least, Roosevelt continued to take advice from "the Aldrich Group." In one respect, he and Aldrich were alike—in their genius for recognizing the inevitable. Their relations took on a new aspect with the Senate's

victory over the Rate Bill. Thereafter, Roosevelt, the radical, pursued his ends, broadly speaking, outside of Congress, while in his relations with Congress he blended radical temper with conservative purpose. Here we have the third stage of Aldrich-Roosevelt relations, when again Aldrich was virtually the administration leader in the Senate. At the close of the administration, these two strong men parted company with profound respect. "He is the greatest politician we have had," Aldrich said of Roosevelt, who wrote to Lodge, "My intercourse with Aldrich gave me a steadily higher opinion of him" (*Correspondence of Roosevelt and Lodge,* II, 337, 346).

In 1908, after contributing to the nomination of Taft, Aldrich went abroad in order to make a thorough study of modern banking. He was chairman of the National Monetary Commission. It had been created under an act he had sponsored,—the Aldrich-Vreeland Act, an emergency measure caused by the panic of 1907. Hitherto, he had accepted as a fixed American tradition the old system of the National Bank Act of 1862. Even the Aldrich-Vreeland Act did not show evidence of a change of front. Such a change took place with sweeping completeness in the course of the investigations which, in company with the Monetary Commission, he made this year. A leading New York banker, who had hitherto thought of Aldrich as wedded to the American tradition, was amazed shortly after the return of the Commission, when Aldrich said to him, "I am going to have a central bank in this country" (memorandum of Paul M. Warburg, *Warburg Papers*). He had discovered his final purpose which remained his inspiration until the day of his death. An omnivorous reader in economics and finance, he had gradually taken the career of Sir Robert Peel as the model that stirred him most. His aim henceforth was to close his own career by making a permanent contribution to the economic system of his country. He had ceased to think in terms of mere measures and had begun to think in terms of institutions.

The campaign promises of 1908 had committed the Republicans to a downward revision of the tariff. Bills to that end were in preparation when Taft called Congress in extra session in 1909. The ensuing controversy was an intricate tangle of party strategy, private ambition, and sectional and class fury. Confronting it, Aldrich, whose inner thought was on other things, made the crucial mistake of his career. He gave too much weight to the intrigues for place of a group of Republican senators from the West, and failed to realize that behind them were new popular forces he did not understand. These dissatisfied

Aldrich

Western senators were all young men, from the senatorial point of view, who had grown restless under Aldrich's domination. Some of them were genuine radicals, like La Follette, while others, like Dolliver of Iowa, were wavering between the main chance in obedience to Aldrich and the popular demands of their constituencies calling them to martyrdom, or at least to revolt. La Follette was the leader without, as yet, a following, who was trying to bring this group together to create an insurgent *bloc*. Hitherto his efforts had been futile. Whether he could have succeeded in 1909 if Aldrich had made no mistake in generalship is not certain. But Aldrich made his mistake and La Follette was quick to take advantage of it.

Aldrich considered the Western outcry over the tariff as of no importance, and looked upon the whole matter as merely a problem in party unity; he had no deeper purpose than to get the subject out of the way on any terms that would unite the party and would enable him to throw its massed strength behind the financial legislation upon which his real interest now centered. Believing Dolliver to be of little actual consequence, he contrived his exclusion from the Finance committee. Dolliver sought La Follette, and, after dwelling for three hours upon his wrongs, pulled himself together and vowed war to the knife upon Aldrich and all his works (La Follette, *Autobiography,* p. 433). An "Insurgent" *bloc* was quickly formed around these two. It was frankly sectional, as was the Eastern *bloc* with which it was soon at sword's points. Its aim was not a genuine reduction of the tariff but a rearrangement of rates in the interests of the West, the highest sort of protection for commodities which the West produced, with ruthless reduction of duties upon commodities which the East produced and the West had to buy.

The Insurgents allied themselves with the Democrats by proposing to splice upon the tariff bill an income tax. As Aldrich was known to be opposed to such a tax, this seemed to them a way of tying him up to an impossible program. They had reckoned without their host. Just when the opposition had become formidable, he took the wind out of its sails by bringing forward, with the support of the President, a proposed amendment to the Constitution, empowering Congress to lay income taxes. The Democrats deserted the Insurgents and the opposition began to melt away. By similar tactics he forced the voting upon various isolated provisions. The President coöperated with him and at last, as the conclusion of one of the most tortuous and apparently contradictory battles of Congressional his-

tory, the Payne-Aldrich Tariff was enacted. All the high rates demanded by the Westerners had been cut down, a few Eastern demands had been reduced; but in the main, duties had not been materially lowered.

Aldrich turned to the problem of a new system of banking and currency without apparently any suspicion how serious was the rift in the party which had been opened by his defeat of the Insurgents. They now started a campaign to drive the old leaders from power. It was a campaign of vilification. The authors of what has been called the literature of protest and certain powerful newspapers, eager to sow dissension among the Republicans, made common cause with La Follette and Dolliver, whose vindictiveness knew no bounds. As a consequence, the Democrats carried the elections of 1910. The senatorial prestige established in 1897 had crumbled to the dust. As early as 1906, Aldrich had made up his mind not to stand again for reëlection, and the next spring, after thirty years of continuous service, he left the Senate. He was now absorbed in his new line of institutional thinking. While the ground was being cut from under him by the schism in the party, he was holding private conferences with leading bankers and working gradually toward the formation of what was known later as "the Aldrich Plan." This was a scheme of banking reform that was published early in 1911, received a wide variety of criticism, and was republished in amended form late that same year. It provided for a system of emergency currency based on the rediscounting of commercial paper; it contemplated the creation of a national reserve association that was to have functions suggested at least by those of the great central banks of Europe, but which was to operate through fifteen regional branches. He became the central figure in a nation-wide campaign to convert the country to the general idea of sweeping reform in banking, with a view to creating a flexible currency that would expand and contract in volume as the necessities of business might dictate. In this he had the hearty coöperation of the American Bankers Association, of many of the ablest individual bankers of the country, as well as of the leading economists and of a specially formed organization, the National Citizens League. The campaign was brilliantly successful. In November 1911, the Convention of American Bankers, in session at New Orleans, indorsed the Aldrich Plan. A bill based upon it was drawn up by the Monetary Commission and submitted to Congress.

The Democrats had now taken possession of the House. Aldrich thus found himself in a position he had not foreseen when he left the Senate. The bill of the Monetary Commission was quietly set aside. Aldrich's last hope that he might participate in putting the new banking system into practise vanished with the election of 1912. Thereafter, he could do nothing but stand aside while the victorious party, laboring hard to make the country believe they were not continuing his work, brought the reform movement to a conclusion by establishing the system of the Federal Reserve. It was not altogether a conclusion he could approve. Woodrow Wilson, before election, had said that the Aldrich Plan was "sixty or seventy per cent correct" (Willis, *The Federal Reserve System*, p. 140). Apparently, almost every plan suggested by any one had just about that margin of the dubious in every mind except the author's. While the Federal Reserve Act was under discussion, both in Congress and in the press, Aldrich joined its critics. In an address before the Academy of Political Science, in October 1913, he praised the bill as being based, in the majority of its provisions, on sound economic principles. Such disapproval as he expressed was concentrated on two points: its provisions for the issue of government notes and the subjection of the entire system to the control of a political board to be appointed by the president. In publishing the address the next year, after the bill had assumed its final form as the Federal Reserve Act, he expressed still greater satisfaction, adding the comment, very significant of the man, "Whether the measure will meet the expectation of its friends will depend largely upon the manner in which it is administered."

His brief remaining time was spent in political retirement. Almost the last event of his life was a reconciliation with Roosevelt, whose course in 1912 had inevitably reproduced the relations of 1905 and 1906. In the bitter days of the first stage of the World War, Roosevelt and Aldrich met by prearrangement at the house of Mr. Cornelius Vanderbilt. They had a long conversation by themselves, and parted with great cordiality. Two days later occurred Aldrich's sudden death at the age of seventy-four.

[The reliable published materials, except for the episode of the Federal Reserve, which is comprehensively reviewed in H. P. Willis's *The Federal Reserve System* (1923), and in a sharply partisan way by Carter Glass, *An Adventure in Constructive Finance* (1927), are obvious and scant; they are scattered through the *Congressional Record*, hearings before committees of the Senate, memoirs and lives of contemporaries such as *La Follette's Autobiography* (1913), the *Correspondence of Theodore Roosevelt and Henry Cabot Lodge* (1925). H. Croly, *Marcus Alonzo Hanna* (1912), L. A. Coolidge. *An Old Fashioned Senator—Orville H. Platt of Conn.* (1910), etc. Newspapers and periodicals contain a great deal of Aldrich matter, but as a rule it is too partisan to be accepted at face value. His bitterest newspaper opponent

was the *N. Y. World,* while the N. Y. *Sun* might be almost regarded, at least for the Roosevelt and Taft administrations, as the Aldrich organ. The Aldrich Papers include a valuable collection of interviews with participants in the events of his career by J. P. Nicholls, who has also made an exhaustive exploration of numerous small bodies of private papers as well as the great manuscript collections that contain Aldrich matter. Chief among the latter are his own papers at Warwick, R. I.; the Allison Papers at Des Moines; the Andrew Papers at Gloucester; the Holls Papers at Columbia University; the Chandler Papers at Concord; the Foraker Papers at Cincinnati; the Platt Papers at Hartford; the Roosevelt Papers in the Library of Congress; the Taft Papers in the Library of Congress; the Warburg Papers in New York City. A biography by N. W. Stephenson is in progress.]

N.W.S.

ALDRICH, THOMAS BAILEY (Nov. 11, 1836–Mar. 19, 1907), poet, story-writer, editor, the son of Elias Taft Aldrich and Sarah Abba (Bailey) Aldrich, was born at Portsmouth, N. H. His ancestry on both sides was of New England colonial stock: on the father's side he was descended from George Aldrich who came to Massachusetts Bay in 1631; on the mother's side he traced his ancestry to a John Bailey who, about 1620, was living at Grantham, England. "I could boast," wrote Aldrich in 1854, "of a long line of ancestors, but won't. They are of no possible benefit to me, save it is pleasant to think that none of them were hanged for criminals or shot for traitors" (Greenslet, p. 6). His father's family were men with something of the wanderer in their blood; his mother came of a gentler and less adventurous stock. Elias Aldrich had all the restlessness of his race and, though he died when his son was only thirteen, he had wandered so actively that Aldrich used to say that as a child he had visited every state in the Union. During the earlier years of this period the family home was in New York and during the later years in New Orleans, where Mrs. Aldrich was living when the news came of her husband's death, Oct. 6, 1849. The boy had already returned to the maternal home in Portsmouth, known to all readers of *The Story of a Bad Boy* as the Nutter House, where he slipped with inherited ease into the ways of the New England household and there continued for three happy years. It seemed then and sometimes later as if the sojourn in the South had made no mark, but in the course of the years the effect showed deeply in his work and in his ways—in a fondness for subjects touched with a southern sun and in a blithe assurance of manner that never grew in a New England air.

When he was sixteen his uncle, Charles Frost, found him a clerkship in his office in New York, and there Aldrich and his mother went to live. It was the New York of N. P. Willis, Halleck, Bryant, and George P. Morris, and a group of literary bohemians—a New York where poetic

standards were far less severe than in the Boston of Longfellow, Lowell, Holmes, Emerson, and Whittier. Aldrich was probably fortunate in trying his poetic wings upon the lesser heights. Before he was fifteen, verses from his pen had appeared in the poet's corner of the *Portsmouth Journal,* and now, under the stimulus of the metropolis, he entered on a period of rapid and facile production which the duties assigned him in his uncle's office were not arduous enough to check. He declared afterward that he "wrote a lyric or two every day before going down town" (*Ibid.,* p. 21). By 1855, when he had been three years in New York, he had become known as a writer of graceful, sentimental, and ironical verse and had gathered enough work to make a volume which appeared under the title of *The Bells.* It is interesting to note that not a single title from this volume survived in his collected works. But in the same year he wrote *The Ballad of Babie Bell,* the first of his more lasting achievements.

He resigned his clerkship to give himself definitely to a literary career and was offered the modest post of junior literary critic of the *Evening Mirror,* thus beginning that career of editorship which was to last, with interruptions, for thirty-five years. The year had not closed before he moved on to be sub-editor of the *Home Journal,* then the popular literary journal of New York with N. P. Willis at its head. He had meantime been forming friendships with men of letters—Bayard Taylor, Stedman, William Winter, R. H. Stoddard, and a group of lesser figures who constituted the literary Bohemia of the time. When some of this group joined in 1858 to establish the *Saturday Press* he became associate editor. During its brief span of life it was a vivacious journal which enjoyed the admiration and support of the young literary men of the country. It expired in 1860, and with its death Aldrich returned for a period to the precarious but exhilarating life of authorship. The outbreak of the Civil War in the following year took the poet's mind for a time far from rhymes. He had ground for expecting an appointment, first in the army and then in the navy, but, his hopes in both services proving vain, in the fall he applied for work as a war correspondent. Thus, though he fired no shot, he saw some of the realities of war that gave convincing quality to the poems and stories which it inspired him to write. When he returned to New York in 1862 he resumed his editorial work first as literary adviser to a publishing firm and later as managing editor of the *Illustrated News.* This proved to have but a short span of life remaining to it, but its demise daunted Aldrich not a whit, though he had lately become engaged, to Lilian Wood-

man of New York. Rather he set himself more energetically to his poetry and produced within a year two of his longest poems, *Judith and Holofernes* and *Friar Jerome's Beautiful Book.*

The year 1865 marked not merely a turning point, but a complete dividing line in Aldrich's life, separating the earlier from the later period. In this year he changed his residence from New York to Boston, took a new post as editor of *Every Saturday,* and was married to Lilian Woodman. All the changes were validated by experience. He continued to edit *Every Saturday* for the seven years of its existence; he made Boston his home as long as he lived, and in 1905 he was writing, "Tomorrow Lilian and I shall have been married forty years! Forty happy years" (*Ibid.,* p. 77). He took quick root in Boston, as was proper to one of his birth and lineage. He was soon as much at home in its spiritual as in its physical atmosphere. His first poetic inspiration had been drawn from Longfellow; now he came under the immediate influence of the master and found him friendly. The genial Autocrat had already welcomed him to the company of poets; Lowell had not forgotten the author of that "fine poem" *Pythagoras,* which he had accepted in a generous note five years earlier. "I don't think," Aldrich wrote to Hamilton Mabie on Dec. 4, 1897, "that any four famous authors were ever so kind to an obscure young man as Hawthorne, Whittier, Lowell, and Holmes were to me" (*Ibid.,* p. 200). Aldrich was not merely a poet, he was young, handsome, graceful, witty, and the husband of a wife as young and charming as himself. It was as near Paradise as a mortal may expect to attain and in these idyllic conditions his powers expanded and matured. In 1868 he finished what is on the whole his best piece of prose work, *The Story of a Bad Boy* (1870), and in the same year were born his twin boys about whom the family life largely revolved for the next twenty years.

With the success of *The Story of a Bad Boy,* Aldrich was launched upon a course of prose in which he won a success hardly less than he had won in poetry. For some years to come his larger work was in prose and when in 1874 *Every Saturday* ceased and he was able to devote himself wholly to writing, it was chiefly in prose that he worked. His novels *Prudence Palfrey* (1874), *The Queen of Sheba* (1877), and *The Stillwater Tragedy* (1880) give the full measure of his achievement as a writer of fiction. But when the record is complete, the verdict must be that not the novel, but the short story was his proper medium. Nothing that he wrote in this form exceeded in charm the exquisite story, *Marjorie Daw,*

finished in 1873. For five years, from 1875 to 1880, Aldrich had freedom from editorial duties. The time came opportunely. He was now at the height of his powers. He had written much, and had enjoyed the inestimable advantages of a position at the editor's desk. He was equipped with the results of a long practise of criticism, was familiar with the requirements of editors, and had a sure knowledge of the literary market. Making the best of his advantages, he was able to turn all his efforts to good effect and to make this half-decade the most productive in his career. He found leisure for travel, too, and in 1875 he and Mrs. Aldrich made a journey to Europe, the first of many, visiting England, France, and Italy, whence he returned, as he wrote Fields, "chock-full of mental intaglios and Venetian glass and literary bric-a-brac generally" (*Ibid.,* p. 119). In 1878 the death of Bayard Taylor, a friend of a quarter-century, brought him one of the great sorrows of his life and drew from him the elegy which, like those on Holmes, Lowell, Wendell Phillips, and Booth, disclosed his capacity to express the deeper as well as the lighter emotions.

With 1881 began another period of Aldrich's life to which all that had gone before was a preparation. Howells retired from the editorship of the *Atlantic Monthly,* and Aldrich was chosen to succeed him. Then followed nine years, from 1881 to 1890, during which Aldrich exerted his greatest influence on American letters. The delicacy, charm, and precision of workmanship which were associated with his name gave him authority in the matter of literary taste which few Americans had possessed before him. It followed then that under his editorship, taste, distinction of form, excellence of craftsmanship became characteristic of the *Atlantic,* so that it was described by one of the London journals as "the best edited magazine in the English language" (*Ibid.,* p. 147). Though Aldrich, no more than his fellows, could bear comparison with the first editor of the *Atlantic,* lacking Lowell's scholarship and range of power, and though he lacked also Lowell's wide interest in affairs, it is probable that during his control of the magazine there was no truer touchstone of taste to be found on this continent. One has only to glance at the list of contributors to see how naturally he drew around him the best exemplars of literary taste and literary workmanship then living. In the field of poetry Longfellow and Lowell, Holmes and Whittier could still be called upon. There were Parkman, Fiske, Marion Crawford, Henry James, Thomas Hardy, George E. Woodberry, Edward Rowland Sill, and a score of others. In the long run, to be sure, Aldrich's somewhat restricted

field of interest, his lack of concern in great political, economic, and social movements resulted in a contraction of the circle of readers so that the Aldrich régime was not the most successful in the *Atlantic* history. It contributed greatly to fixing standards of taste, but it tended to make the famous monthly a miscellany rather than a magazine, and was for the cultivated rather than the general reader.

In 1890 Aldrich relinquished his editorial authority and for the rest of his life was a man of letters and leisure. There remained to him seventeen years of such lettered ease as is often dreamed of and seldom realized. He traveled, made several journeys to Europe and two voyages around the world, and, as the muse commanded, wrote. In fact the body of work produced in these years of professed idleness is substantial. It includes stories and essays which formed four volumes, *An Old Town by the Sea* (1893), *Two Bites at a Cherry* (1894), *A Sea Turn and Other Matters* (1902), and *Ponkapog Papers* (1903); it includes the preparation for the stage and the successful production of his dramatic poem, *Mercedes* (1894), as well as the more arduous task of dramatizing *Judith and Holofernes* for Nance O'Neill, who first appeared in it under its revised title, *Judith of Bethulia,* on Oct. 13, 1904. Finally it includes, in addition to the editing of his collected works, a group of new poems which enhanced his reputation—*Elmwood, Unguarded Gates, Santo Domingo,* the *Shaw Memorial Ode,* and *Longfellow,* the poem written for the Longfellow centenary. This was his last work; it was finished only a short time before his death, and, with touching appropriateness, was read at his funeral. It was singularly fitting that Aldrich's tribute to the master from whom he had drawn his earliest inspiration should have afforded his own requiem.

Aldrich died on Mar. 19, 1907, after a brief illness following upon an operation. The last few years of his life had been clouded with sorrow. On the 6th of March, 1904, his son Charles had died of tuberculosis after three years of the hopes and fears that characterize the course of the disease, and Aldrich never fully rallied from the blow. In 1905 he and Mrs. Aldrich went to Egypt and he returned in good health, but the zest was gone from life. Yet to one who knew him in his later years, Aldrich still seemed a peculiarly vital creature. His erect, alert figure, his jaunty step with a hint of a swagger rather of the sea than of the army, his eye, glinting with mischief, his manner of confident assurance, just short of arrogance, were signs of a magnetic personality that seemed possessed of inexhaustible youth. As a poet Aldrich was more craftsman than creator. He will not challenge the masters for a place on the heights. His level is rather with the Lovelaces, Sucklings, and Dobsons. But as a craftsman he deserves high rank. His ear for the felicitous word, the inevitable phrase, was true, and he was not sparing of toil to fit and finish his work. We may be sure that so long as there is a love of American verse of delicacy and charm there will be lovers of such poems as *Fredericksburg, Nocturne,* and *Elmwood.*

[Ferris Greenslet, *Life of Thomas Bailey Aldrich* (1908), containing bibliography; Lilian W. Aldrich, *Crowding Memories* (1920); personal recollections.]

W.B.P.

ALDRIDGE, IRA FREDERICK (*c.* 1805–Aug. 10, 1867), negro tragedian, was probably born in New York City, although his birthplace is also given as Belair, near Baltimore, Md. The accounts of his early life are conflicting. His father, Joshua Aldridge, is variously described as a negro ship-carpenter and as a full-blooded African chieftain who had been brought to the United States, educated, and settled as a pastor over a colored church. It is stated that young Aldridge was educated at Schenectady, N. Y., and Glasgow, Scotland (Fountain Peyton, *post*). According to the usual account, when Edmund Kean made his first visit to America, Ira Aldridge became his personal attendant and later accompanied him back to England, where, encouraged by Kean, he studied for the stage. He made his début in 1826 as Othello at the Royalty Theatre, London, with considerable success. Highly praised by Kean, and nicknamed the "African Roscius," he was next seen at the Coburg and other metropolitan theatres, afterward touring the English and Irish provinces. At Belfast, Charles Kean played Iago to his Othello. At some time subsequent to 1830 Aldridge appeared unsuccessfully at the "Mud Theatre" in Baltimore. Returning to London, he played at Covent Garden (1833), the Lyceum, and the Surrey. His last London engagements were in 1858 and 1865. Among his rôles were Othello, Lear, Macbeth, Aaron (*Titus Andronicus*), Zanga (*The Revenge*), Gambia (*The Slave*), Rolla (*Pizarro*), and Mungo (*The Padlock*). The critic of the London *Athenæum* in 1858 particularly drew attention to one novel feature of his performance of Othello: "He dispenses," says the writer, "with the black gloves usually worn by the Othello of the theatre and displays his own black hands with his finger-nails expressly apparent." He was generally regarded as one of the ablest and most faithful interpreters of Shakespeare of his day. In 1853 he went to the Continent, visiting Switzerland and Germany, in which latter

country he stayed three years. In Germany he acted in English, while his supporting players spoke their lines in German. Crowded houses greeted him everywhere, princes and people eager to see the colored tragedian. Honors, orders, and medals were showered upon him. The King of Prussia wrote him an autograph letter accompanying the first-class medal for art and science. The Emperor of Austria conferred on him the Grand Cross of Leopold. At Berne he received the Medal of Merit. He was a member of the Imperial and Archducal Order of Our Lady of the Manger in Austria, and an honorary member of the Imperial Academy of Beaux Arts in St. Petersburg. For the last ten years of his life he played mainly on the Continent, where he accumulated a considerable fortune. His wife was a white woman. He died in Lodz, Poland, while on his way to fill an engagement in St. Petersburg.

[Fountain Peyton, *A Glance at the Life of Ira Frederick Aldridge* (1917); memoir in *Theatrical News* (Lond.), Apr. 15, 1848; accounts of Covent Garden appearance in *London Times, Globe, Standard, Morning Post,* Apr. 11, 1833; mention in Tallis's *Drawing Room Table Book of Theatrical Memoirs and Anecdotes* (*c.* 1851), p. 14; T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1870); Dutton Cook, *On the Stage* (1883).] A.H.

ALEMANY, JOSÉ SADOC (July 13, 1814–Apr. 14, 1888), Dominican missionary, archbishop, was originally a Catalonian from Vich, in Spain, was educated partly in his native country, and, after taking the habit of the order of St. Dominic, studied in Italy. There at Viterbo he was ordained priest, Mar. 27, 1837. Four years later he became a missionary to the western states of America, where the Dominicans were established in Kentucky and Ohio. The extension of the West, at the close of the Mexican War, brought the former Mexican province of Upper California into the jurisdiction of the United States, while the secularization of the Franciscan missions in that region created a serious problem for the Catholic Church. While Alemany was at Rome on a pilgrimage he was consecrated bishop of Monterey, June 30, 1850. He immediately left for his diocese, taking with him a priest and nun of his order to begin educational institutions. Since he went by way of the Isthmus of Panama, then crowded with gold seekers, it was December before he reached San Francisco, where the Irish pioneers gave him a hearty welcome. At Monterey he found that his diocese contained about twenty-one adobe churches; some of them in the ruined mission premises, served by twelve secular and fourteen regular clergy. His knowledge of Spanish assisted him with the older population; while the white cassock of his order, which he always wore, was a harbinger of peace wherever he went. After two and a half years at Monterey, Alemany was called to the more exacting duties of the newly erected see of San Francisco, of which he was the first archbishop. The problem of support for the many churches needed to serve the rapidly growing population was a pressing one. While still bishop, Alemany had appeared before the United States commission for settling private land claims, and had successfully supported the cause of the missions, obtaining their land in fee simple. This emboldened him to a further effort to obtain church property. At the Monterey bishopric he had found a bundle of papers and documents relative to the "Pious Fund of the Californias," which had been begun in the seventeenth century for the benefit of the missions of lower and upper California. Upon the suppression of the Jesuits, the fund passed into the hands of the State, which held it in trust, and as such upon the independence of Mexico, it continued. In 1842 President Santa Anna sequestered the fund, promising to pay the interest thereafter to the missions. This had been paid rather irregularly until the cession of California to the United States in 1848. Alemany submitted the documents to a San Francisco lawyer, who aided him in an appeal to the Mexican government, which was denied. The case was then presented to the State Department at Washington, which after several years submitted the matter to the arbitration of the Mixed Commission. Sir William Thornton, the third arbitrator, then made a large award to the California church, consisting of one-half of the amounts of interest from 1848 to the date of the award. The successful issue of this case enabled Alemany to promote the cause of Catholicism on the Pacific coast, and to develop educational and charitable institutions. When Mexico refused to continue annual payments the final settlement of the case by the Hague Tribunal in 1902 did not come within the administration of Alemany; nevertheless it was due to his insistence that the case was presented and finally brought to a successful issue. In 1883 he received Father Patrick Riordan of Chicago as his coadjutor, and the next year, at his own earnest solicitations, he was permitted to retire and spend his last days in his native land. Singularly gentle and reposeful in manner, Alemany had the reverence of his subordinates, the affection of his people, and the respect of the entire community.

[Z. Engelhardt, *Missions and Missionaries of Cal.* (1915), IV, 666 ff.; J. P. Young, *Hist. of San Francisco* (*c.* 1912), vol. I, *passim.* On the Pious Fund see 57 Cong., 2 Sess., *House Doc.* I, app., Serial 4442 (1903). General conditions of the see are discussed in J. G. Shea, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (1892), IV, 356.] L.P.K.

ALEXANDER, ABRAHAM (1717–Apr. 23, 1786), Revolutionary patriot, was a member of one of the seven Scotch-Irish families, bearing the surname Alexander, who landed at New York during the eighteenth century. One family remained there, the others moving on to New Jersey and then to Maryland. About 1745 these six families left Maryland for North Carolina, settling on the Catawba River not far from the South Carolina boundary. Of one of these the head was Abraham Alexander, the others being his brothers, Adam, Charles, and Ezra, and two cousins, Hezekiah and John McKnitt, who were also brothers. In course of time Abraham Alexander, whose residence was three miles northwest of Charlotte, became one of the influential and prominent leaders in the affairs of his community. He was for years an elder in the Presbyterian Church at Sugar Creek. In 1762 he was appointed by Gov. Dobbs a justice of the peace for the county of Mecklenburg, established that year, and one of the commissioners for erecting a court-house and other public buildings; and in 1766 he was one of the commissioners for establishing the town of Charlotte. In 1769 and 1770 he represented Mecklenburg in the North Carolina Assembly, and in the latter year he was one of the trustees of Queen's Museum, an educational institution at Charlotte, the charter of which was disallowed by the Crown because the trustees were Dissenters; but the institution functioned without a charter until 1777, when it was incorporated as Liberty Hall, Abraham Alexander again appearing as a trustee. In the agitation resulting in the Revolution he was active, being a member of the Committee of Safety of Mecklenburg County. On May 31, 1775, he was chairman of a public meeting at Charlotte which adopted resolutions declaring that as King George III by his address to Parliament in the preceding February had suspended the constitution of the colonies, the people of Mecklenburg should adopt certain regulations for the government of the county. This was a declaration that independence was the result of British not American policy, and it was the first step in all the colonies toward establishing a government independent of England. The records of the meeting passed into the possession of John McKnitt Alexander (1738–1817), and when they were destroyed by fire in 1800 he attempted to recast them from memory; in that effort he wrote into the resolutions the spirit and some of the language of the Declaration of Independence adopted by the Continental Congress in 1776, and also made the date of the meeting May 20. Thus arose the controversy as to the historicity of the resolves of May 20.

Alexander

[There is a brief and inaccurate sketch of Abraham Alexander in George W. Graham's *Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence* (1905). This must be supplemented by the *Lineage and Tradition of the Family of John Springs* (Atlanta, 1921) and references in the *Colonial Recs. of N.C.*, VI–IX, XXIII, XXIV. W. H. Foote's *Sketches of N.C.* (1846) contains the best account of the Scotch-Irish settlements and W. H. Hoyt's *Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence* (1907) gives the best presentation of the controversy over the documents bearing that name.]

W. K. B.

ALEXANDER, ARCHIBALD (Apr. 17, 1772–Oct. 22, 1851), Presbyterian clergyman, educator, author, was named for his grandfather, Archibald Alexander, a well-educated Ulster Scot, who about 1736 migrated from County Derry in Ireland to Pennsylvania, and after some years moved south and organized a settlement of his fellow countrymen near Lexington, in the present county of Rockbridge, Va. There his son William, a merchant and farmer, and an influential elder of the Presbyterian Church, married Ann Reid, the daughter of a prosperous landholder of the same community. Of the nine children of this union, the subject of this sketch was the third. The Alexanders were noted for their love of liberty, their intellectual vigor and ambition, and their devotion to evangelical religion. Archibald knew his Shorter Catechism at seven; began his Latin even earlier; used his own rifle at eleven; and in his early teens became an expert swimmer and horseman. At Liberty Hall (later Washington College) he studied the classics under the Rev. William Graham, a graduate of the College of New Jersey. At seventeen, when about to take his bachelor's degree, he interrupted his studies to accept a tutorship in the family of Gen. Posey, near Fredericksburg. There was a season of religious awakening in the community, and in the fall of 1789 Alexander made a public profession of his faith. On his return to Lexington he began theological studies under Graham, who encouraged him to "exercise his gifts" in preaching. His maiden effort was prophetic of his later reputation as an extemporaneous preacher. "Although," he himself testifies in 1843, "I did not know a single word which I was to utter"—he had been called on unawares—"I began with a rapidity and fluency equal to any I have enjoyed to this day" (*Life*, p. 86). Licensed by the Lexington Presbytery at the early age of nineteen, he spent some months in a missionary tour in Virginia and North Carolina with extraordinary success. On Nov. 7, 1794, he was ordained as pastor of the churches of Briery and Cub Creek, in Charlotte County. His preaching was both awakening and edifying and resulted in many conversions. As president of Hampden-Sidney College, a position which he accepted in 1796 and

resigned in 1801 in order to be free to make an extended trip to New England, and which he held a second time from 1802 to 1807, he exerted great influence not only by his teaching but also by his preaching in the many churches that sought him as a supply. On Apr. 5, 1802, he married Janetta Waddel, daughter of the celebrated "Blind Preacher," Dr. James Waddel of Louisa County. Of the seven children of this marriage—six sons and one daughter—two sons became noted lawyers and three became eminent ministers—James W., Joseph A., and Samuel D. [*q.v.*].

In the spring of 1807 Alexander was installed over the Pine Street Church of Philadelphia, one of the largest congregations in the metropolis of the nation. The same year he was chosen moderator of the General Assembly, being one of the youngest ministers ever elected to this office. The next year he preached the opening sermon on the text, "Seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church" (1 Cor. XIV, 12), in which he crystallized the growing sentiment in the denomination in favor of establishing a theological seminary. In 1812 the Assembly resolved to locate the institution in Princeton, and by an almost unanimous vote elected Alexander as the first professor (June 2, 1812). Inaugurated the following August, he not only organized all the courses, but himself conducted the whole work of instruction. With the coming of Dr. Miller in 1813 as the second professor, he devoted himself to the teaching of didactic and polemic theology. In 1840 his chair was changed to that of pastoral and polemic theology and in 1851, the year of his death, the subject of church government was also entrusted to him. In this period of thirty-nine years he put the stamp of his scholarly attainments and his fervent piety upon the whole life of the seminary. This was also the period of his literary productivity. His most important works, besides numerous theological essays, reviews, tracts, and sermons, were *A Brief Outline of the Evidences of the Christian Religion* (1825); *The Canon of the Old and New Testaments* (1826); *Suggestions in Vindication of Sunday Schools* (1829); *The Lives of the Patriarchs* (1835); *Thoughts on Religious Experience* (1841); *Biographical Sketches of the Founder and Principal Alumni of the Log College* (1845); *History of Colonization on the Western Coast of Africa* (1846); *Outlines of Moral Science* (1852). Small and rather slight in build, he had in his prime a clear complexion, dark piercing eyes, abundant hair, a flute-like voice, and an extraordinary vivacity in speech and gesture. Simple in his tastes, affable and hospitable, he was venerated and beloved for his "singular attainments in holiness."

Alexander

[The admirable *Life* by his son, James W. Alexander (1854), is based on original sources. *Cf.* W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit*, III, 612–26, and John DeWitt, "Archibald Alexander's Preparation for His Professorship," in *Princeton Theo. Rev.*, Oct. 1905.] F. W. L.

ALEXANDER, BARTON STONE (Sept. 4, 1819–Dec. 15, 1878), Union soldier, was born in Nicholas County, Ky., the eldest of the ten children of John and Margaret (Davidson) Alexander. His father was a farmer of small means, but "made considerable exertions to give to his promising son an education rather above his condition" (unpublished letter of Garrett Davis, then a young lawyer practising near by). Alexander entered West Point in 1838, and on his graduation in 1842 was commissioned in the Corps of Engineers. From then until the Civil War he was engaged almost constantly in the construction of coast fortifications, of certain buildings at West Point, and of the Soldiers' Home at Washington, then just established; in alterations of the Smithsonian Institution; and, most notable of all from an engineering standpoint, in the erection of a stone lighthouse on Minot's Ledge to replace the iron one destroyed in the great storm of 1851. "The first difficulty encountered was to cut the rock for the foundation stone, which could be done only in a perfectly smooth sea, and at the lowest spring tides. Though the work was prosecuted with all possible diligence, it was more than three years before the ledge could be cut to receive the first stone. This accomplished, the building went on more rapidly, but it required six years before it was completed" (Cullum, II, 119). At the outbreak of the Civil War, Alexander was sent to Washington to assist in the planning and execution of the defenses of the city. He accompanied the advance of the federal troops across the Potomac in May 1861, and supervised the construction of some of the hasty intrenchments which were the beginning of the great chain of forts that eventually surrounded the city. Three times he left Washington for service in the field, taking part in the first battle of Bull Run, the Peninsular Campaign, and a part of Sheridan's campaign in the Shenandoah Valley, always, after brief absences, resuming his work on the fortifications. At first as assistant, and later as chief engineer, he had a greater part in the construction of this defensive system than any other man except Gen. Barnard. Of the works which he personally designed the best known at present is Fort McPherson, which, on account of its location in Arlington National Cemetery, remains in perfect preservation. During the war he was promoted to be major of engineers, and held the temporary rank of lieutenant-colonel. He

was brevetted brigadier-general in 1865. In 1867 he was promoted to lieutenant-colonel in the regular service, and with that rank continued on engineering duties until his death. Alexander was a man of great height and bulk, somewhat rough and uncouth in manner; but possessing excellent judgment and high professional qualifications. He was notable for his fondness for children and theirs for him.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed. 1891), II, 117–21; J. G. Barnard, in *Report on the Defenses of Washington* (1871), describes the fortifications with some incidental mention of Alexander's share in their execution; Alexander's own account of the construction of the Minot's Ledge Lighthouse is in *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, VIII, 83–94; good obituary by Gen. Barnard in *Bull. Ass. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad., 1879*, pp. 55–68.] T. M. S.

ALEXANDER, DE ALVA STANWOOD (July 17, 1845–Jan. 30, 1925), congressman, historian, belonged to a distinguished line which traced its ancestry back through William Alexander, the pioneer of 1719, to Somerled, Lord of the Isles in Scotland in 1135 (D. A. S. Alexander, *The Alexanders of Maine*, 1897). He was born at Richmond, Me., the son of Stanwood and Priscilla (Brown) Alexander. When he was seven years old, his father died and his mother moved to Ohio where the boy grew up. In 1862 he enlisted—at sixteen—in the 128th Regiment, Ohio Volunteer Infantry. He served as a private until the close of the war, then returned to his native state and entered the Edward Little Institute at Auburn to prepare for college. From here he passed to Bowdoin College, graduating in 1870 with the degree of A.B. It is recorded that he had an excellent record, particularly in English. Soon after leaving college, he for a time taught in the public schools of Fort Wayne, Ind.; a little later he acquired an interest in the *Daily Gazette*, and was its editor at a period when it was a leading organ of the Republican party in that state. In 1874 he sold out his interest and went to Indianapolis, where he acted as staff correspondent of the *Cincinnati Gazette*. About this time he served also as secretary of the Republican state committee. He studied law under Senator McDonald, was admitted to the bar in 1877, and formed a law partnership with Stanton J. Peelle of Indianapolis, in after years chief justice of the court of claims in Washington. After four years of legal practise, on the recommendation of his friend Senator Benjamin Harrison, he was appointed auditor in the United States Treasury Department. In 1885 he removed to Buffalo, N. Y., and formed a partnership with a former college friend, James A. Roberts, who subsequently was comptroller of the State of New York. In June 1889 President Harrison appointed him United States district attorney for the northern district of New York. He discharged the duties of this office with fidelity and distinction until December 1893, when he resigned.

In 1896 he was elected on the Republican ticket to represent his district in Congress. It is a striking tribute to his efficiency that he was nominated eight times in succession without opposition. For fourteen years he faithfully served his constituents, winning his way to a commanding place in the House. His service was conspicuously valuable as chairman of the Rivers and Harbors Committee. During his chairmanship the port of Buffalo was granted $8,500,000 in appropriations. In 1910 the Republican party was disrupted by a revolt against the so-called "old guard." One result of the split-up was Alexander's defeat by his Democratic opponent by one vote. This led to his retirement from public life.

While still in Congress he had begun his *Political History of the State of New York*. The first two volumes were published in 1906, a third in 1909, and a supplementary volume, entitled *Four Famous New Yorkers*, in 1923. Believing that the history of a state or nation is largely the history of a few leading men (Preface, Vol. I), he made his narrative center around those picturesque figures from Clinton to Platt, who successively occupied the stage of New York politics. If there is little suggestion of underlying forces which may have shaped policy and conduct, the story is always told interestingly, often dramatically, and with a desire to do even-handed justice to politicians of all parties. *The History and Procedure of the House of Representatives* (1916) is an informing account of parliamentary procedure, interspersed with many brief character sketches. It was a congenial task for which his fourteen years of service in the House fitted him admirably.

Alexander was twice married, first, in September 1871, to Alice Colby of Defiance, Ohio; second, in December 1893, to Anne Bliss of Buffalo, who survived him. In the ordinary relations of social life he was distinguished by a cordial urbanity of manner which made him a welcome member of a great variety of groups. He was to an unusual degree an example to the younger generation of that fine combination of dignity and courtesy with which it is customary to designate "a gentleman of the old school."

[This sketch is based on an obituary written for the *Quart. Jour. of the N. Y. State Hist. Ass.*, Apr. 1925; also on an intimate acquaintance of many years.] F. H. S.

ALEXANDER, EDWARD PORTER (May 26, 1835–Apr. 28, 1910), Confederate artillerist, author, was born at Washington, Ga., the son of

Leopold and Sarah (Gilbert) Alexander. He was appointed to West Point from his native state in 1853. Graduating in 1857, he became brevet lieutenant of engineers and was assigned to duty as an instructor in the Military Academy. From October 1857 to March 1858 he served in this capacity, obtaining leave of absence to accompany the expedition sent to Utah in 1858 to compel the Mormons to recognize the authority of the United States. He crossed the plains as far as Fort Bridger, where news was received of Brigham Young's submission. From the autumn of 1858 to 1860, Alexander taught in the Military Academy, becoming head of the department of fencing and target practice in 1859. His first important assignment came in the latter year, when he was detailed to study the Myer army signals offered to the United States government. Alexander tested the proposals and the result of his experiments was the evolution of the "wig-wag" system, which marked a great advance in the art of military signaling and which was used by both sides in the Civil War. He also sat on a board of officers engaged in experimenting with breech-loading rifles, then being developed. In 1860 he was ordered to Washington Territory, which was then usually reached by crossing the Isthmus of Panama and ascending the Pacific shore in a coasting vessel. He paused long enough to marry Bettie Mason, of King George County, Va., and then set out with his wife for his new post, following the usual route. He reached Washington in September 1860 and spent the winter there. He was then ordered to Alcatraz Island, San Francisco, on engineer duty. The Civil War, however, was now rapidly approaching. McPherson, in command at Alcatraz Island, besought Alexander to remain on the Pacific coast; but the latter decided that he must go with his state and, when Georgia seceded, he resigned from the United States Army. Returning east, he was commissioned captain of engineers in the Confederate army on June 3, 1861.

Alexander was, however, destined to see other service than engineering. President Davis knew of him as the developer of the army signal service and assigned him to duty on Beauregard's staff as engineer and chief of the signal service. In this capacity he was present at the first battle of Manassas. On July 22, 1861, he was appointed chief of ordnance to Beauregard's command and shortly after became chief of ordnance to the Army of Northern Virginia with the rank of major. His duties embraced the supplying of arms and ammunition to the troops in the field. In this capacity he served in the Peninsular Campaign and at Seven Pines. During the Seven Days he was engaged in supervising the distribution of ammunition to the various commands and was also in charge of a signal balloon which was captured by the Unionists. He continued to serve as chief of ordnance in the second Manassas and in Lee's Maryland campaign. When the Army of Northern Virginia was reorganized in November 1862, Alexander was appointed to the command of a battalion of artillery in Longstreet's corps. In December 1862 he became colonel of artillery. At the battle of Fredericksburg he commanded the batteries on Marye's Heights and so swept the plain below with his guns that every charge of the Unionists at that point broke down with heavy loss. At Chancellorsville he accompanied Jackson's famous flanking march around Hooker and in the night of May 2 posted the batteries that opened Stuart's attack on the following morning. Alexander accompanied the army to Gettysburg as commander of the reserve artillery of Longstreet's corps. On July 2 his batteries followed Longstreet's movement against the Union right and were engaged in the Peach Orchard. On July 3 the duty fell to him of suppressing the opposing Union batteries in order to prepare the way for Pickett's charge. Noting the slackening of the Union fire, he sent Pickett word at 1:40 p. m., "For God's sake come quick. The 18 guns have gone. Come quick or my ammunition will not let me support you properly." Shortly after the dispatch of this message, Longstreet joined Alexander and sought to draw from him an opinion that he could not defeat the Union artillery, in order to secure an excuse to hold Pickett back, but Alexander did not commit himself. Pickett then charged, but his effort was not efficiently aided and failed.

In September 1863 Alexander accompanied Longstreet to Georgia, but arrived just too late to take part in the battle of Chickamauga. He went with Longstreet to Knoxville and thence into the Tennessee mountains, returning with his commander to Lee's army early in 1864. On Feb. 26, 1864, he was made brigadier-general, and became chief of artillery of Longstreet's corps. He was in the thick of the fighting at Spottsylvania in May 1864 and at Cold Harbor. His was the first artillery to arrive from Lee's army at Petersburg when Beauregard was holding the town against the assaults of Grant's overwhelming forces. On June 30, 1864, he surmised that the Unionists were mining under the Confederate works and informed Lee of the matter, with the result that the Confederates countermined but failed to tap the Union tunnels. Being wounded, he was absent from the front for some time. In the last part of the war his duties included the

command of Drewry's and Chaffin's Bluffs and the defense of the James River. He accompanied the army on the retreat from Petersburg, acting chiefly as an engineer. Thrown much with Lee in these final days, he counseled his chief on Apr. 8 to disperse the army instead of surrendering, but Lee declined to follow his recommendation. He was included among those surrendered on Apr. 9, 1865.

Alexander's career after the Civil War was busy and distinguished. From 1866 to 1869 he was professor of engineering in the University of South Carolina. Going into business, he was president of the Columbia Oil Company from 1869 to 1871 and then took up railroading. He held several important positions, and from 1887 to 1893 was president of the Georgia Railroad & Banking Co. During the early nineties, he purchased North and South Islands, off the coast of South Carolina, and engaged in rice-planting. He entertained many friends there, with long-remembered hospitality, one of his frequent visitors being Grover Cleveland, with whom he often went duck hunting.

Ardent and energetic, a man of imposing military bearing, he found time for other things besides business. He served as an arbitrator of a boundary dispute between Costa Rica and Nicaragua, was a member of the Capitol commission of Georgia (1883–88) and of the boards of navigation for the Columbia River and the Chesapeake-Delaware ship-canal (1892–94). From 1885 to 1887 he was a government director of the Union Pacific Railroad. He also did much writing. His works on transportation include *Railway Practice* (1887) and many shorter publications. In 1888 appeared his intimate *Catterel Ratterel* (*Doggerel*). After a number of preliminary articles on the Civil War, published chiefly in the *Southern Historical Society Papers,* he brought out in 1907 his *Military Memoirs of a Confederate,* a work much more comprehensive than its title indicates. It is, in fact, a critical study of the operations of the Army of Northern Virginia for the whole period of the war and of the Army of Tennessee in its final stages. Based on a careful study of the records as well as on personal observation, his conclusions are recognized by all authorities on the Civil War as carrying great weight.

Alexander's first wife preceded him to the grave by many years. In 1901 he married Mary L. Mason. During his presidency of the Georgia Railroad & Banking Co. he resided in Augusta, Ga., but his home in later years was Savannah.

[*Confed. Mil. Hist.,* VI, 389–91; obituaries in the *Savannah Morning News* and the *Augusta Chronicle,* Apr. 29, 1910.]

D. S. F.

ALEXANDER, FRANCIS (Feb. 3, 1800–*c.* 1881), portrait painter and lithographer, was born at Killingly, Conn. In an autobiographical letter to William Dunlap, he thus sketched his early life: "From the age of eight up to twenty I laboured almost incessantly, the eight warm months of the year, upon my father's farm. The other four months in the year I went to a country district school till I was seventeen" (Dunlap, II, 427). He then records the fact that, during an illness, he occupied himself with making water-color pictures, the first of these being of a string of fish he had caught. "I had been to Providence," he continues, "had seen signs there, and those were the only marvels in painting that I saw till I was twenty except two very ordinary portraits that I had seen at some country inn" (*Ibid.,* II, 482). He managed to get to New York about the year 1820 and studied under Alexander Robertson at the Academy of Fine Arts, also copying portraits by Trumbull and Samuel Waldo. He then set up as a portrait painter in Providence, removing after two years to Boston, where he remained until October 1831. Then, having married Lucia Gray Swett, daughter of Col. Samuel Swett of Boston, a "lady of exceptional beauty and wealth," he immediately started upon a trip to Italy. He returned to the United States in 1832. In 1835 he painted a portrait of Daniel Webster now at Dartmouth College. Other portraits he painted were of Benjamin R. Curtis and Mrs. Daniel Webster. He also drew on stone what were probably the first attempts at portrait lithography in America.

His early work was rather good in color and careful in drawing, but during his trip to Italy he changed his manner. Although his later work became less colorful and was executed with a rapidity that was almost careless, it was so much what his sitters in Boston wanted that he became popular. He was a shrewd, business-like man and carried his faculty for driving a bargain to such an extent that his associates called him the "Art Jockey." French tells the story of his going out in a boat in Boston harbor, in 1845, to meet the steamer upon which Charles Dickens arrived from England, and asking for a sitting as soon as he met the novelist. Dickens granted the request and later remarked: "The impertinence of the thing was without limit; but the enterprise was most astonishing, and deserved any kind of reward demanded" (French, p. 63). He finally took up his residence in Florence. During the last years of his life he was not active in his profession. He contemplated returning to the United States in 1878. It is not certain that he ever returned, and he is supposed to have died in Florence.

[W. J. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (1834); *McClure's Mag.*, May 1897, p. 622 (illus.); H. W. French, *Art and Artists in Conn.* (1879); H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); Mantle Fielding, *Dict. of Am. Painters, Sculptors and Engravers; Boston Mo. Mag.*, Dec. 1825.]

T.B.

ALEXANDER, GROSS (June 1, 1852–Sept. 6, 1915), Methodist clergyman, born in Scottsville, Ky., was the son of Dr. Charles Holliday Alexander, a practising physician, and of Eliza (Drane) Alexander. He was named after the eminent surgeon, Dr. Samuel Gross. When he was fifteen, the family moved to Louisville, where he entered the city high school, from which he graduated in 1871 with the A.B. degree. So satisfactory was his work as a student in this school that immediately following his graduation he was offered a place in the faculty which he accepted and held for two years. He next filled for two years (1873–75) the professorship of Latin and Greek in Warren College, a newly established institution located at Bowling Green, Ky. At the end of his second year in this college, having received what he interpreted as a divine call to the Christian ministry, he resigned his professorship for the purpose of pursuing at Drew Theological Seminary a course of study preparatory to entrance into the ministry of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. Just before going to Drew Seminary, he was married to Helen M. Watts of Louisville. In connection with his studies at Drew (1875–77), he served as pastor of the Methodist Church at Mohonk Lake, N. Y. Having graduated with the B.D. degree, he entered in the autumn of 1877 upon the active work of the ministry in the Louisville Annual Conference. His first appointment was to Portland, a suburb of Louisville, where he remained for two years. His very successful pastorate in this place was memorable for the conversion, through his public ministry and personal influence, of a noted gambler named Steve P. Holcombe, whose later career as a social worker and evangelist was in turn so successful and remarkable that it called forth from his spiritual father a volume entitled *Steve P. Holcomb, the Converted Gambler: His Life and Work* (1888). Following his ministry at Portland, Alexander spent a year of travel in Europe, after which he was pastor, first at Anchorage, and then at Russellville, Ky., from which place he was transferred in the fall of 1884 to the Tennessee Conference and appointed to the pastorate of West End Methodist Church in Nashville, serving at the same time as chaplain of Vanderbilt University. At the end of this year he became professor of New Testament Greek in the university, which chair he filled successfully until 1902, when he resigned, and returned to ministerial work in the Louisville Conference, serving as presiding elder of the Louisville district for four years. In the meantime his wife had died in the fall of 1885, leaving two children, a son and a daughter. He was again married in 1887, to Arabel Wilbur of Chicago, by whom he also had a daughter and a son. At the General Conference of 1906, which met in Birmingham, Ala., Alexander was elected official book editor of the publications of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, and also editor of the *Methodist Quarterly Review*, published at Nashville, which office he filled with marked ability until his death. He died suddenly in 1915 during a visit to Long Beach, Cal. His published works include a translation and annotation of *Chrysostom's Homilies on Galatians and Ephesians* (1889); *The Son of Man* (1889), a devout and scholarly interpretation of the person and work of Christ; *History of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South* (1894); *The Epistles to the Colossians and to the Ephesians* (1910), one of the Bible for Home and School series of brief New Testament commentaries. He wrote various articles for *Hastings' Bible Dictionary*, and was a member of the Commission that prepared the commemorative tercentenary edition of the Authorized Version of the English Bible, known as "The 1911 Bible."

[Obituary by Rev. Robert W. Browder in *Minutes Ann. Conf. M. E. Ch., South, for 1915*, pp. 66–69; an extended and sympathetic appreciation by Dr. Frank M. Thomas in the *Meth. Quart. Rev.*, Jan. 1916; "Memoir," by Bishop H. M. DuBose in the *Jour. Eighteenth Gen. Conf. M. E. Ch., South*, pp. 497–501.]

W.F.T.

ALEXANDER, JAMES (1691–Apr. 2, 1756), lawyer, politician, statesman, and patriot, was born in Scotland, a descendant of the Earls of Stirling, and heir to the title. He was trained as an engineer officer, receiving a good education in mathematics and kindred sciences, in which he early showed a proficiency. Although a Whig in politics, as a good Scotsman he formed Jacobite connections and served with some distinction in the forces of the Old Pretender during the Rebellion of 1715. Upon the defeat of this cause, with the consequent peril to its supporters, he fled to America. Just as he had not hesitated to support the exiled Stuarts against one regarded as an usurper, so in this country he did not fail to attack autocratic power. It is thought that he received the patronage of some influential figure, possibly John, Duke of Argyle, the hereditary friend of his family. This is borne out by the fact that he continually received the favors of the colonial representatives of the House of Brunswick, although he frequently was numbered among its opponents. Owing to his mathematical ability and experience

he was appointed, Nov. 7, 1715, surveyor-general of the Province of New Jersey, and later of New York. In 1718 he became recorder of Perth Amboy, N. J., where he had taken up his residence. He engaged at this time in the study of law and was admitted to the provincial bar of New Jersey in 1723. In 1718 he was also appointed deputy-secretary of New York. In March of the following year he was made a commissioner to run the boundary between New York and New Jersey. In 1721 he became a member of the Council of New York, and a member of the Council of New Jersey in 1723. In the latter year he also became attorney-general of New Jersey.

In 1725 he made a motion in the Council of New Jersey for legal reform which shows him to have been clear-sighted as to incumbrances which impeded and thwarted justice and as to the necessity for a change. In this motion he set forth the great delays to practitioners of law in demurrers, special pleadings, and special verdicts. Due to them the practise was then managed in such a way that it was commonly two years before any judgment could be had. He was ordered to prepare a bill remedying such delay, but nothing seems to have come of it. In 1727 he resigned as attorney-general of New Jersey. He declared that he remembered only once having taken fees from the acquitted, as was the practise of his predecessors, and offered to return any money thus received. In this he showed a higher conception of his duty and the requirements of his office than that which was held by most of his contemporaries. In 1732 Gov. Cosby asked for his removal from the Council of New York and after much correspondence succeeded in securing it. In his letters to the Lords of Trade and to the Duke of Newcastle he spoke of Alexander as the only one who had caused him any uneasiness, and stated that he thought he was unworthy to serve His Majesty. Lady Cosby is said to have expressed the wish that Alexander might be done away with, he had opposed the Governor so constantly. Mr. Clarke, President of the Council, accused him of being near treason in working the people up to the pitch of rebellion. In 1735 he was removed from the Council of New Jersey.

Alexander obtained his greatest prominence in the case of Peter Zenger. This man, printer and publisher, "whose paper was the vehicle of invective and satire against the governor and his adherents," was charged with libel and with inviting sedition. Copies of his paper were ordered to be burned by the common hangman, but the magistrates of the quarter would not suffer the order to be entered. Nevertheless, Zenger was thrown into jail. William Smith and Alexander volunteered to serve as his counsel. They secured a writ of habeas corpus, and argued against his reincarceration. Zenger swore that he was not worth more than forty pounds above his exemptions for raiment and tools, yet bail was exacted in penalty of 800 pounds. The grand jury refused to indict; the attorney-general, however, proceeded by information against him. Zenger's counsel took exception to the judges' commissions, wherefore the latter declared Smith and Alexander to be in contempt, and struck their names from the roll of attorneys. Mr. Hamilton of Philadelphia was secured to represent their client, and obtained a verdict for Zenger. Later Smith and Alexander were permitted to present their brief and argue the matter of their exceptions before a committee on grievances. They were given no relief, and it was not until two years later that they were reinstated as members of the bar. With the change of administration on the death of Cosby, Alexander was recalled to the Council of New York, and was considered as still a member of the Council of New Jersey. About this time he removed to New York. In the succeeding years he continued to be active in the councils but his practise absorbed most of his energy. In 1756 there was proposed a ministerial scheme oppressive to the colonists. Although he was suffering from gout at the time, Alexander hurried to Albany to oppose it. There he experienced a paroxysm of his disease, contracted a cold, and died Apr. 2, 1756.

He was regarded as the foremost lawyer in New Jersey, although he was not admitted to the bar until the same day that he was made attorney-general. He was one of the founders of the American Philosophical Society, and had frequent correspondence with prominent scientists of his day. Soon after his arrival in America he married a widow of a prosperous merchant named Provoost, and had by her five children. His wife had continued her first husband's business after his death with much success, and her second marriage did nothing to interfere with it. Their only son, William Alexander [*q.v.*], later known as Lord Stirling, became a prominent general in the American Revolutionary War.

[*Docs. Rel. to the Colonial Hist. of N.J.*, series I, vols. XI, XIV, XV, XVI; *Docs. Rel. to Colonial Hist. of N.Y.*, vols. V, VI; F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State* (4 vols., 1902); C. A. Ditmas, *Life and Service of Maj.-Gen. Wm. Alexander* (1920); Wm. Smith, *Hist. of the Late Province of N. Y.* (1829); *N. Y. Gazette or Weekly Post Boy*, Apr. 5, 1756.]

G.R.

ALEXANDER, JOHN HENRY (June 26, 1812–Mar. 2, 1867), scientist, was born in Annapolis, Md., the youngest child of William Alexander and his wife Mary Stockett. His father was a

merchant of Scotch-Irish descent, and his mother came from an old Maryland family which settled near Annapolis in 1642. Alexander received his education, a typical classical one, at St. John's College, Annapolis, taking his degree at the age of fourteen. He began the study of law shortly after, but soon turned aside from this, being attracted into the new field of applied science. It was the day of the beginning of railroad development and of the organization of coal-mining operations. His first work was in connection with a survey for a railway, but he saw a larger problem, the need of a complete topographical survey of Maryland in connection with a geological survey; and, having urged its importance upon the legislature and convinced its members of the great value of the project, he was appointed, while not yet twenty-one, to make a preliminary study of the question. In 1834 the office of state topographical engineer was created, to which he was appointed. This position he held until 1841. His work in this time was largely preparatory; in the first four years he had constructed a map sufficiently good for the representation of the geology of the state; but he determined not to proceed upon accurate surveys till the time should come when he could work in conjunction with the United States Coast Survey. In the meanwhile he became interested in the coal deposits of Maryland and was one of the first to draw attention to the vast coal fields in Allegany County. He was one of the founders of the George's Creek Coal & Iron Company, and its president from 1836 to 1845.

His primary interest was, however, in scientific work, and the subject of the standardization of weights and measures attracted his attention very early. He urged upon the state legislature the desirability of supplying each county with copies of the standards supplied the state by the federal government; and in 1842 he was given charge of this undertaking. His *Report on Standards of Weight and Measure for the State of Maryland* (1845) was notable for the account given of his researches and for the accuracy of the results obtained. From this time till his death he was a valued coadjutor of the Coast Survey. In 1850 he published *A Universal Dictionary of Weights and Measures, Ancient and Modern,* characterized as "one of the most complete and exact works of the kind ever published" (Hilgard, p. 221). In 1857 he was sent to Europe by the national government on a mission dealing with the unification of coinage, and he was about to be appointed director of the mint in 1867, when he died.

Alexander held many academic positions, being at various times professor of mining and civil engineering at the University of Pennsylvania, professor of natural history in St. James's College, and at the time of his death professor of natural philosophy in the University of Maryland. He was a notable linguist, a student of philosophy, and a writer of pure English prose. A sincere churchman, he was a vestryman of his church for many years and at different times treasurer and secretary of the diocese. His diverse interests are suggested in the bibliography appended to Hilgard's memoir, which includes, among published works, two volumes of religious poetry, *Introïts* (1844) and *Catena Dominica* (1855), and in manuscript, a "Dictionary of the Language of the Lenni-Lenape," a "Handy Book of Parliamentary Practice," and a monumental "Dictionary of English Surnames." He was married in 1836 to Margaret Hammer, the daughter of a Baltimore merchant. She survived him with five sons and one daughter.

[J. E. Hilgard, "Memoir of John H. Alexander," *Nat. Biog. Memoirs*, I (1877), 213–26; Wm. Pinkney, *Memoir of John H. Alexander* (Md. Hist. Soc., 1867); *Biographic Memoir of John Henry Alexander* (1868).]

J. S. A.

ALEXANDER, JOHN WHITE (Oct. 7, 1856–May 31, 1915), painter, was born in Allegheny, Pa., the son of John and Fanny (Smith) Alexander. Left an orphan at the age of five, he lived with his maternal grandparents until twelve years old, when he left school and became a messenger boy in the office of the Atlantic and Pacific Telegraph Company. The president of the company, Col. Edward Jay Allen, became so interested in him that he took the boy to his own home. While still a lad, Alexander "did some remarkably good work in wash drawings for the periodicals" (J. H. Harper, *The House of Harper*), and when about eighteen, he obtained regular employment with Harper & Brothers under Charles Parsons, manager of their art department. In 1877 the "Great Strike" in Pittsburgh offered in its drama and tragedy an opportunity which the young illustrator seized with avidity and used with graphic appreciation. In three years Alexander saved at the Harpers $300, a fortune which floated him to Europe, and became the basis of a career of singularly consecutive successes. Paris disappointed the student by reason of a temporary closing of the École des Beaux Arts; Munich dissatisfied him by the rigidity of its academic routine. The little art colony at Pölling suited his temperament better, and his memories of Edwin A. Abbey, Stanley Reinhart, and Arthur B. Frost as illustrators upon the staff of *Harper's* were further supplemented by his new comradeship with painters, Currier, DeCamp, Shirlaw, and Ross Turner, in the little Bavarian village. In the course of the

years spent in Munich and Pölling, there was awarded to him a bronze medal, the first of a whole downpour which later years were to bring. After Pölling, came Frank Duveneck and Florence, Whistler and Venice, great artists as influences, great backgrounds as stimuli. Meantime America paid the bills, through the Harpers, black and white work being sent them, since the $300 had presumably been spent. From the Lagunes Alexander went to the Ohio River, still in magazine service, for the two houses of Harpers and the Century played a large rôle in his early life; and after a term of New York studio work, he went again abroad, once to Spain, once to draw a series of heads of famous Europeans. In 1887 he married Elizabeth Alexander, a lady not related to him by family though of the same name, but related indeed to him in interests of every kind, stimulating through her mentality, and helpful through her social graces to such an extent that his marriage must have been one of his greatest titles to success. And success was his in a fulness diminished only by the tenuous character of his physical strength.

Three years after his marriage he went to Paris with Mrs. Alexander to recuperate from a seriously weakening case of grippe, and he remained there eleven years, reaping honors, cultivating his genius for making friends, and becoming a full member of the Société Nationale des Beaux Arts on the strength of his ability in portraiture, which by this time had shown itself to be his solid and admirable asset. In 1901 he came to New York and here his natural capacity for constructive social work was at once almost as much to the fore as his capacity for painting. Rarely has there been a more many-sided official. He was not only president consecutively of several societies, but could at need, as it were, conduct a whole quadriga of art institutions at once. The arduousness of these public and semi-public duties, and the strenuous physical labor involved in the painting of his larger canvases were not backed by physical robustness; nose and throat trouble called for several painful and not too successful operations which he bore gallantly. Already in 1891 his health had been seriously impaired by grippe poison and after that he was, though intensely active, not really strong. In the winter of 1914–15 his physical vicissitudes grew more and more frequent and on the 31st of May, 1915, the end came.

As is the case with any first-rate artist, both the spirit of his art and its technique were interesting. If we take the spirit and technique in combination perhaps our first impression of the man as artist is that he was by nature, almost by instinct, essentially decorative in everything that

Alexander

he touched. He was an able realist with each portrait as long as the importance of getting a likeness was concerned, but once that was achieved—and it was easily achieved in his case—he let himself loose in the direction of decorativeness, basing it upon his facile and delightful use of great curves in long sweeping lines. Some of his pictures, as for instance "A Butterfly," are in composition almost like calligraphic flourishes but the result is lovely. He was keenly perceptive of the value of simplicity and the fact that much can be done with little, and that economy of effort may even be an enhancement. These *multum in parvo* pictures of his have at once great inter-resemblance and excellent variety—they are homogeneous and vivid manifestations of his personality and in summing up their effect both individually and in the mass, the word that covers them best is charm. In such delightful canvases—usually containing one or two figures at most—as those named "Peonies," "Sunlight," "A Quiet Hour," "The Blue Robe," "The Ring," "Autumn," "Memories," one finds Alexander at nearly his highest point doing exactly the things he loved best to do, untrammeled by any conditions save those proper to all art. He needed only to have a pretty woman clad in sympathetic material, and he would make the latter billow all over the canvas, sweeping it into curving folds and leaving wide spaces of focal light with an almost complete eschewal of complicated modeling. With the long skirt he obtained beautiful results, sometimes treating it balloonwise as in "The Divan" or again like the tail of a comet. Considering all these elements of a single figure picture, and adding the fact that in the faces of his sitters he always fixed charm and dignity if he found it, and that in his finding he preferred to give the benefit of a doubt rather than wreak himself upon a peculiarity, it is not at all difficult to discover good reason for his immense vogue and solid success as portrait painter.

As in Sargent's instance some of his works appeared to be impressions from first to last; in reality with both artists they were much more than that, but Sargent's swiftness, at any rate in his more elaborate compositions, was a result, after many experiments, while Alexander's seemed more like improvisation. When he was painting the main panel of his extensive series for the Carnegie Institute in Pittsburgh, he was asked by one of his comrades "Where are your sketches and studies for the panel?" and he replied, "I didn't make any, I just went ahead." Such a method seems ideal to that part of the public which likes to think of an artist as throwing a work upon a canvas beginning at one side and painting right

onward to the other. But it has not been a usual method of mural painters from Botticelli to Michelangelo and onward to Puvis de Chavannes. Although Alexander's disclaimer was a modest and smiling one probably not to be taken *au pied de la lettre,* his remark did reflect his tendency toward improvisation, and it would perhaps seem that he had hardly done enough mural painting to adopt a settled preliminary procedure.

In his art taken as a whole, refinement rising to distinction was one of its most obvious qualities. Pattern and lighting seemed to interest him particularly, and by good pattern is here meant such a treatment of the lines and masses as would insure the picture's being handsome in effect even if it were seen upside down. This carrying power of harmonious pattern is especially desirable in large mural panels which so often have to be seen at great distances, where had they not at once grace and force of line they would appear confused, even blurred. Alexander had good knowledge of all this and used it skilfully. He loved simplicity and thought simply in his painting and was happiest in his treatment of single figures. It was peculiarly in these that his sense of pattern never failed him. He was very personal in his lighting, which was simple and large, yet often exceedingly picturesque as well, in its arrangement. Its effect was not a little enhanced by his predisposition toward masses of reflected light which he used with great skill. Restraint, which was in many cases pronounced sobriety, marked most of his color. He liked to use a warm gray in wide planes and then to strike into it one or two rich or brilliant passages. This predilection reminded one not a little of Giovanni Battista Tiepolo. Probably his striking use of chiaroscuro in large masses would count in his artistic baggage immediately after his grace of line.

In one picture—"The Ring"—now in the Metropolitan Museum, he attains an almost Jack-o'-lantern effect of spots of sunlight which one feels as though they were in actual motion playing about his model. Thus he used the light to enliven the sober key of color which he preferred, and he did not seek for transparent depths, nor for the sustained subtility of a Chardin as shown in the latter's still life pictures. Instead he preferred to strike reflected color back into semi-opaque shadows, and his surfaces, when not the result of direct painting laid on and then let alone, had the effect rather of scumbled than of glazed passages.

Portrait painting on the whole remains the backbone of his achievement and to it he brought excellent characterization, expressed by a skilful, swift, correct yet graceful drawing, and he gave it rounded existence and background by the

Alexander

ingenious and charming use of chiaroscuro cited above. Perhaps the "Portrait Gris" and the "Portrait Noir"—as well indeed as the "Portrait Jaune"—all of them shown in Paris in 1892, and their following of two portraits at the Grafton Gallery in London with five at the exhibition of the Société Nationale des Beaux Arts of Paris in June 1894, were the productions of his psychological moment in portraiture. But both before and after this he showed himself a born portraitist in his capacity for quick seizing of character and a swiftness of execution which saved his sitter from the fatigue which is so apt to induce a fidgety unrest, or worse, a hardening into expressionlessness. In sum, although he was a great deal besides, he was probably first and last a portrait painter—and his output in that direction was prodigious. The Century Company noting his quality sent him abroad to draw, for full-page publication, portraits of men who at that time were of special interest to Americans. These, together with many others drawn a little before or after on this side of the Atlantic, were the vanguard of the army of portraits which marched into our magazines and on to our walls. To name only a portion of Alexander's models calls up memories of the stage, the pulpit, the rostrum, and the salons of the eighties, the nineties, and the first fifteen years of the twentieth century. From the stage we have Joe Jefferson as Bob Acres, Gilbert as Sir Peter Teazle, Miss Maude Adams as L'Aiglon, Miss Annie Russell as Elaine, and Salvini as Lear (a sketch). Among the artists are Rodin, Whittredge, Frost, Thaulow, and many others; and be it noted that while in these Alexander loses the aid of trailing garments and of the "special sense of feminine grace" which Arthur Hoeber so happily attributes to him, he nevertheless stands up sturdily both as appreciator and executant. The universities appear in his male portraits, Princeton being to the fore with McCosh, Patton, and Henry van Dyke, while we have also Van Amringe of Columbia, John F. Weir of Yale, Alexander C. Humphreys, and others. John Hay and Grover Cleveland may stand for the rostrum, Andrew Carnegie for the market; while there is a whole constellation of the literary folk: Howells, Mark Twain, Gilder, Stockton, Booth Tarkington, George Bancroft, Alphonse Daudet from over the seas, with Robert Louis Stevenson, Thomas Hardy, and Austin Dobson as a British contingent; and perhaps best known of them to New Yorkers the Walt Whitman of the Metropolitan Museum.

Alexander contributed to the Library of Congress in Washington six lunettes entitled the "Evolution of the Book." They were rather slight

in character, background being almost eliminated and the color remaining somewhat neutral. Later, Pittsburgh honored him with one of the largest commissions both as to extent and remuneration that have ever gone to a mural painter. He was chosen to decorate the entire grand staircase of the Carnegie Institute Building, and he selected for his subject "The Crowning of Labor" as an apotheosis of Pittsburgh. The principal group is at the second floor of what the French aptly call the *cage d'escalier*. A man in steel armor, typical enough of the city of foundries, stands poised against clouds with his drawn sword in his hand and is apparently the focal hero of the apotheosis. In a sort of semicircle before him but always swaying among clouds are young women symbolizing Peace, Prosperity, Luxuries, and Education, making graceful obeisance to him. Again a line of women blow long slender trumpets in his honor. Below, around, and above these figures, smoke and steam curl and mount with the stories of the staircase, not only offering a presence appropriate to Pittsburgh but also affording a medium of the utmost value to the creator of the decoration since it enables him to dissemble the figures wherever he pleases and concentrate them in groups at the points of real vantage. In type these women are always pretty, sometimes handsome, but hardly noble; they do not in that respect equal the types as studied and developed in his portraits where he never let any beauty or dignity that existed in the sitter pass him by. His young men, stripped to the waist, handling chains and cranes and buckets or bending over their levers, are the finest part of the decoration, and the artist used with admirable arrangement and effect the naked human back in muscular action. In the twelve panels of one of the walls to the staircases there are said to be 400 figures of men, women, and children, the people from the streets of Pittsburgh. The mere volume is extraordinary and, if Mrs. Alexander is quoted correctly as saying that everything even to the painting of the vast planes of steam and smoke is by the hand of Alexander himself, one feels rather appalled at the strain put upon such a fragile physique as his and feels that the result was quite as much the crowning of the painter's devotion as it was "The Crowning of Labor" in any other sense.

During Alexander's last years, a great deal of his time—too much in the life of a man valuable in such special directions—was taken away from his painting and given to public service. Toward leadership he gravitated inevitably, and in it he established himself solidly, using the experience of one official position to affirm that of another,

Alexander

touching the circle of the Arts at many points of its circumference. In this synthetizing he worked first, say, as a member of the Board of the Metropolitan Museum of Art at increasing and caring for the Museum's treasures; next as an officer of the School Art League he worked to provide intelligent appreciation of those treasures, appreciation planted in the minds of the children of the city to grow till it should reward the Museum's effort with understanding adult and trained. And he did not leave it there, but after showing art objects of many kinds to these young seekers, he followed them to their East Side clubs and schools and catechized them, and when he noted what they had best remembered, he encouraged them to try experiments of their own in painting and modeling and stimulated them by prizes which he adjudged. To such an instinctive maker of pictures as he, the plastic presentation of the drama naturally called loudly; to its costuming, lighting, and color he gave enthusiastic attention, aided almost always by Mrs. Alexander. It was an easy progression for him from his canvases to the moving pictures of a pageant or a play. Miss Maude Adams and he reacted upon each other most sympathetically in such directions. They both had summer places in Onteora and at the time when Miss Adams was planning her Harvard pageant of Jeanne d'Arc one met them not unoften, all three pondering their problems and climbing the hills as they talked. Of course the organizers of charity bazaars sought Alexander as arranger of tableaux. "If you have a frame and some gauze," he said, "you have no idea how much you can do in a moment with a few colored rags." He was so smiling and kindly that one sometimes did not realize how much his ready service must often have tired him.

In "A Few Words of Appreciation" prefixed to the *Catalogue of Paintings of the John White Alexander Memorial Exhibition* (1916) we are told that at the time of his death he was either officer or member of twenty different art societies. Of many of these he was president: of the National Academy of Design, the National Institute of Arts and Letters, the School Art League of New York, the National Academy Association and the MacDowell Club. He was a director of the American Federation of Arts in Washington; vice-president of the Mural Painters; a member of the American Academy of Arts and Letters, the American Fine Arts Society, the Architectural League of New York, the Fine Arts Federation of New York, the National Association of Portrait Painters, the American Academy in Rome, the Royal Society of Fine Arts of Brussels, the International Society of Painters and Grav-

ers, London; an honorary member of the American Institute of Architects, the Society of Illustrators, the Royal Society of British Artists, the Secession of Munich and Secession of Vienna. In 1901 he was made a Knight of the Legion of Honor by the French government. He received from the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts the Temple Gold Medal and Gold Medal of Honor in 1897 and 1904; a first-class medal at the International Exhibition at the Carnegie Institute, Pittsburgh; gold medals of honor at the Exposition Universelle of Paris, 1900, Pan-American Exposition of Buffalo, 1901, St. Louis Universal Exposition in 1904, San Francisco Panama-Pacific International Exposition in 1915; the Carnegie Prize by the Society of American Artists in 1901; in 1903 the Corcoran Prize by the Society of Washington Artists. Among all his honors there was not one which he took more to heart than the presidency of the National Academy of Design which he held for many years during a season of especial storm and stress, since the Academy at that time was trying persistently, though unavailingly, to obtain larger quarters which should be accessible and well-lighted. It was his dream to succeed in this quest and the effort contributed not a little to the wearing out of his physical endurance.

[J. W. McSpadden, *Famous Painters of America* (1916); *Address of John G. Agar . . . and Resolutions Adopted at the Testimonial of John W. Alexander under the Auspices of the Fine Arts Federation of New York, May 28, 1916; Commemorative Tributes to John White Alexander*, by E. H. Blashfield, G. B. Post, Thomas Hastings, Bronson Howard, and Augustus Thomas (1922); articles by Armand Dayot, *Harper's*, Oct. 1899, Gabriel Mourey, *Int. Stud.*, Aug. 1900, C. H. Caffin, *World's Work*, Jan. 1905, P. T. Farnsworth, *Craftsman*, Apr. 1906, Arthur Hoeber, *Int. Stud.*, May 1908, E. F. Baldwin, *Outlook*, May 28, 1910, E. H. Blashfield, *Art World*, Sept. 1917; other articles in *Appleton's Booklover's Mag.*, Apr. 1904, *World's Work*, Mar. 1905, *Outlook*, Mar. 6, 1909, *Outlook*, June 9, 1915, *Scribner's*, Sept. 1915.]

E. H. B.

ALEXANDER, JOSEPH ADDISON (Apr. 24, 1809–Jan. 28, 1860), educator and author, the third son of Archibald [*q.v.*] and Janetta (Waddel) Alexander, was born in Philadelphia, his father being at the time pastor of the Pine Street Church. When he was four years old, the family moved to Princeton, N. J. Addison received most of his early education from his father. He was a precocious boy, astonishing all who knew him by his extraordinary versatility and his amazing powers of concentration, memory, and understanding. He early revealed remarkable linguistic gifts. As soon as he could read English fluently, he took up the study of Latin. At six he knew the Hebrew alphabet, and at ten he read the Old Testament in the original. At fifteen he entered the junior class of Princeton College, graduating with the highest honors in 1826. After spending two years in private study, mainly of oriental tongues, he became adjunct professor of ancient languages and literature in Princeton College (1830–33), and, after a year of study and travel in Europe, successively instructor (1834), associate professor (1838), and professor of oriental and Biblical literature (1840–51) in Princeton Seminary. In 1851 he was transferred to the chair of Biblical and ecclesiastical history, and from 1859 to his death he was professor of Hellenistic and New Testament literature. He contributed numerous articles—linguistic, textual, exegetical, historical, and theological—to the *Biblical Repertory*, of which he was for some years an editor; was a singularly original and impressive preacher, being much in demand in metropolitan pulpits (*Sermons*, 2 vols., 1860); and was the author of several Biblical commentaries, which established his reputation in Europe as well as America (*The Psalms*, 1850, 3 vols.; *Isaiah*, 1846–47, 2 vols.; *Acts*, 1857, 2 vols., 3d ed. 1860, with later reprints; *Mark*, 1858; and *Matthew*, posthumous, 1861). His scholarly attainments were almost incredible. His biographer (*Life*, pp. 862 ff.) credits him with a thorough mastery of seven tongues, with ability to read and write fourteen more, and with a reading knowledge of five others—a total of twenty-six. He had no special fondness or aptitude for metaphysical discussions, but otherwise the versatility and vigor of his mental faculties were the more astonishing because of their symmetrical and harmonious development. His sermons, his elaborate articles on oriental poetry, and even his letters, especially those in which he narrates his travels, reveal imagination and keen powers of observation, while his critical reviews show sobriety and candor of judgment. As a teacher, he was inclined, in his early years, to underestimate the difficulties of average students, many of whom dreaded his severity and his occasional sarcasm, though all admired the range and thoroughness of his scholarship. He was specially successful in stimulating students in scholarly research. He never married. He was diffident in large social gatherings but brilliant in conversation with congenial acquaintances; and was very fond of children, whom he delighted to entertain with oral and written tales of adventure. Until he was stricken with diabetes, he was of stout figure and florid complexion. His head impressed many with its likeness to that of Napoleon.

[*Life* by Henry C. Alexander, New York, 1870, 2 vols.]

F. W. L.

ALEXANDER, SAMUEL DAVIES (May 3, 1819–Oct. 26, 1894), Presbyterian clergyman and author, the fifth son of Archibald [*q.v.*] and Janetta

(Waddel) Alexander, was born in Princeton, N. J. He was prepared for college chiefly by his two older brothers, James and Joseph Addison Alexander [*q.v.*]. He graduated from the College of New Jersey in 1838. He then spent two years as a resident graduate in Princeton, assisting Prof. Henry; three years as a civil engineer; and one year in studying law. Having determined to devote his life to the ministry, he now took the regular course in Princeton Seminary (1844–47). Ordained by the Second Presbytery of Philadelphia on Nov. 16, 1847, he served the Richmond Church of Philadelphia till 1849, when he accepted the position of assistant secretary of the Board of Education of the Presbyterian Church. In the year 1851 he began a five years' pastorate of the church at Freehold, N. J. In 1856 he accepted a call to the Fifteenth Street Church of New York City, later known as the Phillips Church. His service here, the main work of his life, continued to 1889, when he became pastor emeritus. He continued to reside in New York until, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, he succumbed to an attack of pneumonia. He was unmarried.

Faithful and beloved as a pastor, he had unusual resources of scholarship with which to sustain his ministry in a metropolitan pulpit. As stated clerk of the Presbytery of New York he commanded the respect and admiration of his fellow presbyters by reason of his knowledge of Presbyterian law, his accuracy and thoroughness in keeping the records, and his self-sacrificing spirit. Besides contributing the last four chapters to his father's work on the *History of Colonization on the Western Coast of Africa* (1846), and numerous articles in the *Princeton Review* (see especially his "Editions of Pilgrim's Progress" in the volume of 1859, pp. 232–257), he was the author of the following works: *Life Sketches from Scottish History* (1855); *History of the Presbyterian Church in Ireland, Condensed from the Standard Work of Reid and Killen* (1860); *Princeton College during the Eighteenth Century* (1872) —mainly a biographical dictionary of alumni; and *The Presbytery of New York 1738 to 1888,* even yet a valuable work of reference. Alexander possessed capacity for painstaking, scholarly research but lacked originality and had an imperfect grasp of the principles underlying historical facts. His writings were devoid of literary charm.

[*Princeton Theo. Sem. Biog. Cat.*, ed. by Joseph H. Dulles (1909), gives the main facts of Alexander's life; see also *Princeton Theo. Sem. Necrological Rep.*, 1895, p. 314.]

F. W. L.

ALEXANDER, STEPHEN (Sept. 1, 1806–June 25, 1883), astronomer, was the son of Alexander Alexander, a descendant of Scotch Presbyterians, who had settled in Schenectady, N. Y., in a mercantile career in which he proved successful. He died at the age of forty-four years, leaving a widow, Maria, and two small children. Little is known of Stephen's mother except that she had the qualities necessary to dominate the circumstances now facing the future of the young boy and girl. She gave special attention to the education of her son, who was delicate in physique, quiet and sensitive in disposition, and very studious and observant. His early education was thorough, and with the natural habit of study he completed the academic course at Union College with honors at the age of eighteen. Subsequently he taught in the academy at Chittenango, N. Y. In 1830, his sister, Harriet, married her cousin, Joseph Henry [*q.v.*], who was then entering upon a distinguished career at the Albany Academy as an investigator in magneto-electricity and related problems. Alexander gave up his teaching and became associated with his cousin-brother-in-law. Just what position he held is not known, but he was soon at work upon astronomical problems. His observations upon star occultations and solar eclipses in 1830 and 1831 were communicated to the Albany Academy. In the latter year he made an expedition to Maryland to observe an annular eclipse of the sun, which was in those days a scientific event of note. The next year, 1832, was the turning-point of his life, for the trustees of the New Jersey College at Princeton extended an invitation to Henry to become the professor of natural philosophy, and Alexander accompanied him. He entered the Theological Seminary, but in 1833 accepted an appointment as tutor in mathematics, thereby beginning a long and distinguished service to the college. In 1834 he was advanced to adjunct professor in the same department, in 1840 he became professor of astronomy and, with several later changes of title, he remained on the faculty until his retirement in 1877. He was twice married: on Oct. 3, 1826 to Louisa Meads of Albany, who died in 1847, leaving three daughters; and on Jan. 2, 1850 to Caroline Forman of Princeton, by whom he had two daughters.

In conjunction with Henry, he published his observations of terrestrial magnetism in the *American Journal of Science,* April 1832, and his determination of the difference of longitude by the fall of meteors in the *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society,* December 1839. We find him directing a large party to Labrador to observe the solar eclipse of 1860, the scientific results being published in the *United States Coast and Geodetic Survey Report* of that year. In 1869 he was chairman of the committee appointed by

the National Academy of Sciences to organize the observation of the solar eclipse at Ottumwa, Ia. In 1838, 1854, 1865, and 1875 he observed the annular eclipses of the sun of those years, as well as a partial eclipse and a transit of Mercury. He terminated his astronomical observations of more than fifty years in December 1882 by observing with great interest and care the transit of Venus. Aside from his strictly scientific work Alexander carried on his duties as college professor with exactitude, and found time to publish many scholarly papers upon subjects bordering on the philosophy of the sciences. The most important of these were as follows: "On the Origin of the Forms and the Present Condition of Some of the Clusters of Stars and Several of the Nebulæ," *Astronomical Journal,* Mar. 13–July 10, 1852, II, Nos. 12–20; "Lecture on the Vastness of the Visible Creation," *Smithsonian Institution Annual Report,* 1857; "Lecture on the Relation of Time and Space," *Smithsonian Institution Annual Report,* 1861; *Address by Prof. Stephen Alexander, LL.D. with an Account of the Subsequent Proceedings at the Laying of the Corner Stone of the Astronomical Observatory of the College of New Jersey,* June 27, 1866; "Statement and Exposition of Certain Harmonies of the Solar System," *Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge,* 1875, XXI, art. 2. Alexander was elected a member of the American Philosophical Society in 1839, and a Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1850. He received the degree of LL.D. from Columbia University in 1852; in 1859 he became president of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and in 1862 he was selected as one of the original fifty members of the National Academy of Sciences.

[C. A. Young, "Memoir of Stephen Alexander," *Natl. Acad. Sci. Biog. Memoirs,* 1886, II, 249–59; *Am. Acad. Arts & Sci. Proc.,* 1884, XIX, 504–11; *A Memorial of Joseph Henry* (Smithsonian Institution, 1880); *Princeton. Theol. Sem. Necr. Report,* 1884.] F. E. B.

ALEXANDER, WILLIAM (1726–Jan. 15, 1783), Revolutionary soldier, was better known as Lord Stirling. Sir William Alexander, from whose family he claimed descent, was a court poet and favorite of James I, from whom he received an immense grant of land in North America. The grant, afterward enlarged, included Nova Scotia, Long Island, and a large part of Canada, but was never carried into effect. The favorite was created Earl of Stirling, and the peerage became extinct with the death of the fifth Earl in 1739. William Alexander's father, James Alexander [*q.v.*], was a Jacobite who emigrated to America after the unsuccessful rising of 1715. He became a lawyer, and held various public offices. The son was born in New York City, was well educated, and, like his father, an excellent mathematician and astronomer. He was associated with his mother as a merchant in New York, and in the early stages of the French and Indian War he was a commissary, and aide and secretary to Gov. Shirley. He accompanied that unfortunate commander to England in 1756, and defended him, the next year, as a witness before the House of Commons. During this visit Alexander expended considerable money and time in the attempt to assert his claim to be the sixth Earl of Stirling. "Chiefly on the deposition of two old men, who affirmed, his descent from John Alexander 'uncle of the first earl,' a jury at Edinburgh, on the 24th March 1759, served him heir-male of Henry, fifth Earl of Stirling" (Charles Rogers, *Memorials of the Earl of Stirling,* 1877, I, 282). "The memorial was . . . remitted to the House of Lords. On the 10th March 1762, the Lords' Committee of Privileges resolved that he had not established his claim" (*Ibid.,* I, 283). Alexander had returned to America the previous year, assuming the title Lord Stirling.

A man of wealth, and social prominence, having married the sister of Gov. Livingston, he held various offices prior to the Revolution, surveyor-general of New Jersey, member of the Council, and assistant to the governor. He promoted farming, manufacture, and mining. His New York house was sold before the war, but he owned a fine mansion at Basking Ridge, N. J. (burned in 1920). His interests in other lines are shown by his report on the transit of Venus in 1769 (in the New York Historical Society Library), and by the fact that he was one of the early governors of Kings (Columbia) College.

As the Revolution came on, Stirling opposed the Stamp Act, and organized a company of grenadiers. He conducted a stormy correspondence with the Loyalist Gov. Franklin, who suspended him from the Council. On Nov. 7, 1775, he was made colonel of the 1st New Jersey Regiment, and he raised and equipped two regiments in the state. His first opportunity for distinction came in January 1776. With forty volunteers in a pilot boat he captured at Sandy Hook the British transport *Blue Mountain Valley.* For this exploit he received the thanks of Congress, and on Mar. 1, 1776, the commission of brigadier-general in the Continental army. Appointed to the chief command in New York City, he prepared for the imminent British invasion. Under his direction Forts Lee and Washington were built, and other fortifications were constructed in Harlem and on Long Island. Fort Stirling on Brooklyn Heights bears his name. The strategic importance of the

Hudson Highlands was becoming recognized, and Stirling reported to Washington on their defenses.

It is with the battle of Long Island, Aug. 27, 1776, that his name is chiefly associated. Under the direction of Putnam, his immediate superior, he was put at the head of the American right wing, charged with the defense of the coast road. His brigade consisted of Delaware, Maryland, and Pennsylvania troops, about 1,500 to 2,000 in number. There were no fortifications; it was the earliest meeting of an American army with its opponent in open field. The line was near the junction of the present Twentieth St. and Third Ave. in Brooklyn, extending thence to Battle Hill in Greenwood Cemetery. His opponent was Gen. Grant, with far superior forces. After a conflict of several hours with Grant, he was exposed to attack in the rear by a detachment under Lord Cornwallis. Stirling's main body escaped by fording Gowanus Creek and passing over a causeway, while Stirling himself with a part of the Maryland regiment held Cornwallis in check for a short time. Then superior numbers told, the mass of Stirling's small force was cut down, and he surrendered to the German De Heister. It was this part of the battle which Washington witnessed from the neighboring heights, and which drew from him his lament at the sacrifice of his soldiers.

Stirling was commended for his bravery by the British as well as by Washington, to whom he had written an account of the battle. He was exchanged in time to take part in the campaign for Westchester County, and in the retreat through the Jerseys. He guarded various points in New Jersey and along the Delaware River, and fought with distinction at the battle of Trenton, which he described in a letter two days later to Gov. Livingston. His services led to his promotion to major-general Feb. 19, 1777. When Howe renewed his invasion of New Jersey from Amboy in the summer, Stirling was opposed to Cornwallis June 26; there was fighting near the present Metuchen, Westfield, and Plainfield, in which Stirling lost three field-guns. Cornwallis's advance was halted at Westfield, and the expedition was recalled.

Gen. Stirling served for a short time in the Highlands during the summer of 1777, led a division under Sullivan at the battle of Brandywine, and commanded the reserves at Germantown. He was one of the minority of officers who favored an attack on Philadelphia. In the succeeding melancholy winter at Valley Forge there occurred the Conway Cabal, in the exposure of which Stirling had a share. While at Reading he heard some remarks by the notorious Wilkinson, who quoted Conway's letter to Gen. Gates, and these remarks Stirling reported to Washington. His last important battle was Monmouth, where he commanded the left wing, and was distinguished by his handling of artillery and in repelling a flank attack. Lee's conduct in that battle led to a court-martial, over which Lord Stirling presided.

In the following year "Light Horse Harry" Lee made his attack on Paulus Hook, and Stirling received the thanks of Congress for the manner in which he had supported Lee's advance and covered the retreat. In the record-breaking winter of January 1780, when the bays and sounds near New York were frozen over, Stirling led an expedition across the ice from Elizabeth to Staten Island; but the British had received warning, and the enterprise was a failure. In the following autumn Arnold's treason took place, and Stirling served on the court of inquiry to determine André's fate. Later he was stationed in New Jersey and Pennsylvania, but chiefly at Albany. While there he prepared a plan of resistance at Saratoga to St. Leger's expected invasion by way of Ticonderoga, but the end of active warfare was at hand. Among his last military reports was a letter to Gov. Clinton (Sept. 10, 1781) giving news about the fleet of De Grasse, and one to the Commander-in-Chief, with details of recent events in the northern department.

Stirling was soldierly in bearing; according to one writer, "of the most martial appearance of any general in the army save Washington himself." He was brave, intelligent, energetic and yet cautious; a good organizer and military engineer; "a great acquisition to the army," in the words of a contemporary. He was highly esteemed by Washington, and after his death Lady Stirling received a letter of tribute from the General.

[Charles Rogers, *Memorials of the Earl of Stirling and of the House of Alexander* (1877); C. A. Ditmas, *Life and Services of Major-General Wm. Alexander* (Kings County, N. Y., Hist. Soc., 1920); W. A. Duer, *Life of William Alexander* (1847); Ludwig Schumacher, *Earl of Stirling* (1897); C. F. Adams in *Am. Hist. Rev.* (1896); T. W. Field in *Memoirs of the Long Island Hist. Soc.*, vol. II.]

E.K.A.

ALEXANDER, WILLIAM DEWITT (Apr. 2, 1833–Feb. 22, 1913), historian and scientist, was born at Honolulu, the son of William Patterson and Mary Ann (McKinley) Alexander. His father, who was a Kentuckian by birth, had come to Hawaii as a missionary in 1832. Alexander had his early education at the Punahou School, Honolulu, and, after the long voyage around the Horn which was necessary in those days, completed his preparation for college in Harrisburg,

which had been his mother's home. He graduated at Yale in 1855, taught for a time at Beloit College and at an academy near Vincennes, Ind., and returned to Hawaii in 1858. Soon after he married Abigail, daughter of Dwight Baldwin of Lahaina. He was professor of Greek at the Punahou School for six years, and president of the institution from 1864 to 1870. (The corporate name of the group of schools at Punahou is Oahu College; it is now rarely used, except in legal documents, and does not indicate a "college" in the usual American sense.) In 1872 he became surveyor-general of the kingdom, and continued in that position for the rest of his active life. His interests were scholarly and varied. He was a founder of the Hawaiian Historical Society, one of the original members of the Polynesian Society of New Zealand, a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, and a member of the Astronomical Society of the Pacific. He wrote a grammar of the Hawaiian language and numerous scientific papers and reports. But it is as a historian that he is chiefly remembered. His *Brief History of the Hawaiian People,* first published in 1891, though intended as a school text-book, still serves as a useful introduction to the subject for mature students. An account of recent political events prepared in 1893 for presentation to the American commissioner (Blount) was expanded into his *History of Later Years of the Hawaiian Monarchy and the Revolution of 1893,* and published in 1896. Though the work of one who frankly avows that he does not write as a neutral (he was a supporter of the revolution, and was sent to Washington to represent the interests of the provisional government), it is judicious in reasoning and temperate in tone. It must always remain of prime importance in the study of this period. In 1884 he was appointed to the privy council, once an important element in the government, but now performing little more than nominal functions. Membership, therefore, was merely honorary, but his long service on the board of education involved more exacting duties. He was active in religious work, too, throughout his life. Probably the ablest scholar that Hawaii has yet produced, and of attainments that won him recognition far beyond the limits of his native country, he was a quiet, unassuming man, with the faculty of winning both the respect and the love of all his associates. He died in Honolulu, and was buried in the yard of Kawaiahao church,—the old building of coral rock which king and people labored together to erect in the early days of island Christianity.

[There is an extended obituary in the *Honolulu Advertiser,* Feb. 24, 1913, and a short one in the *Ann. Report, Hawaiian Hist. Soc.* for 1912, published in 1913. See also *Who's Who in America,* 1912–13.]

T. M. S.

ALFONCE (ALFONSE), JEAN. [See ALLEFONSCE, JEAN, *c.* 1482–1557.]

ALGER, CYRUS (Nov. 11, 1781–Feb. 4, 1856), iron-master, inventor, was born at Bridgewater, Mass., the son of Abiezer Alger and Hepsibah (Keith) Alger. His father, a man of sagacity and energy, was prominent in local affairs and successful in business, owning iron foundries in West Bridgewater, Easton, and Titicut. Cyrus, after a partial preparation for college at the nearby town of Taunton, entered the iron-foundry business with his father at Easton, where he thoroughly mastered the existing knowledge of that industry. At the solicitation of Gen. Winslow, with whom he formed a partnership, Cyrus Alger moved to South Boston in 1809 and there established an iron-foundry. The partnership was dissolved five years later, but Alger continued in the same business on a new site. The receipt from the government of large orders for cannon-balls during the War of 1812 and the profits derived therefrom insured the success of the new venture and definitely launched Alger upon a notable career. At the conclusion of the war his fortunes were further improved by a bold real estate speculation. The South Boston Association (an organization which had taken over the town lands after the annexation of that town to Boston) by building a sea-wall had partly reclaimed the flats lying west of Dorchester Ave. Alger now purchased these lands lying between the North Free Bridge and Fifth St., being careful that the deed should include all the flats in front of the sea-wall to the channel or low-water mark. Being paid liberally for the rest, the association without hesitation threw in this parcel. Alger now improved the sea-wall, filled in the flats within the wall, laid out roads, built his own factory and house in this section and induced others to do the same. Eventually the flats outside the wall were raised, wharves built, and the section became an important manufacturing and mercantile section. No individual contributed more to the rapid development of South Boston. Associating himself in 1827 with George C. Thacher, William H. Howard, and Caleb Reed, Alger formed the South Boston Iron Company, built a new plant on Foundry St., and rapidly extended his works until they became the largest and best-equipped in the United States. He also in 1829, in connection with several capitalists of Halifax, built, near Annapolis, the first smelting furnace in the British provinces, manufacturing the machinery in his South Bos-

ton plant and installing it with his own mechanics.

Although Alger thus showed throughout his life unusual executive capacity, he was known quite as widely as an inventor and metallurgist. The patent records up to 1839 record at least five inventions to his credit, including a malleable cast-iron plow, a cast-iron cannon, and casting rollers for casting iron. He designed the first cylinder stoves in 1822, and the first gun ever rifled was turned out of his shop in 1834. As a metallurgist he developed a process by which he could purify cast iron so as to give it more than triple the strength of ordinary cast iron, "the process consisting in removing impurities from the metal while in a fluid state and causing it to be much more dense" (Simonds, p. 255). He improved the reverberatory furnaces for melting iron and "first introduced and patented the method of making cast iron chilled rolls, by which the part subject to wear should be hard, while the necks remain unchanged as to hardness and strength—these being cast in sand, while the body is cast in a chill, or iron cylinder" (*Ibid.*, p. 256). Nor was Alger's interest confined to iron. His plant turned out the first perfect bronze cannon ever made for the United States Government and for the State of Massachusetts. Ordnance, in fact, after the War of 1812, was with him a primary interest, and his superior methods of casting iron brought to his foundry so many government contracts that for many years he was chiefly employed in making guns. He made improvements in the composition of fuses for bombshells and cast the mortar gun, "Columbiad," the largest gun cast in America up to 1850.

As the chief land owner in South Boston and the proprietor of the largest factory in the community, Alger, following the older New England tradition, took an active part in local politics. He was a member of the common council the first year of the city government of Boston (1822) and represented South Boston as alderman during a portion of 1824 and in 1827. His interest in the development of South Boston was unflagging, and the great respect in which he was held by his fellow townsmen made his influence potent. For his time Alger was an enlightened employer; he was the first man in South Boston to introduce the ten-hour system, his wages were always paid in cash, and he did not hesitate to put men on half time at some sacrifice to himself in order to insure continuous employment. His benefactions were many and his private life unblemished. He was twice married: in 1804 to Lucy Willis (1782–1830), by whom he had seven children; and in 1833 to Mary Pillsbury. The Cyrus Alger Primary school erected in 1881 on West Seventh St. was named after him.

[The fullest account is in T. C. Simonds, *Hist. of South Boston* (1857), pp. 251–60. A condensation of this, with frontispiece of Cyrus Alger, is in Arthur M. Alger's *Geneal. Hist. of That Branch of the Alger Family which Springs from Thomas Alger of Taunton and Bridgewater in Mass, 1665–1875* (1876). See also Toomey and Rankin, *Hist. of South Boston* (1901), which contains a picture of Alger (p. 226) and of his foundry (pp. 232–33). See also Francis Alger, *Claim of the Late Cyrus Alger for Remuneration for the Use by the U. S. of Certain Inventions Relating to Fuses and Shells* (1862), and J. L. Bishop, *Hist. of Am. Manufactures* (1861–64), II, 660–63 and index.]

H.U.F.

ALGER, HORATIO (Jan. 13, 1834–July 18, 1899) was the most successful writer of boys' stories in the whole of American literature. An entire generation was indoctrinated by him in the comforting assurance that virtue is always rewarded by wealth and honor. His voluminous epics on the moral conquest of poverty exercised an influence on the formation of American youth comparable to that exercised on our British cousins by Henty's demonstrations of Anglo-Saxon superiority. He was born in Revere, Mass., the son of Olive (Fenno) Alger and the Rev. Horatio Alger, a rather sanctimonious Unitarian clergyman, who was determined that his son should follow in his footsteps. As a boy the future author was known as "Holy Horatio." He was educated at Gates Academy and at Harvard, where he distinguished himself in the classics and in French. At this time an early marriage was prevented by the interference of his father. After three years in teaching and journalism, Alger became a student at the Harvard Divinity School, supporting himself the while by tutoring and writing for the press. Having graduated in 1860, he showed no immediate inclination for the ministry but instead spent in Paris a year marked by futile indiscretions and equally futile remorse. He then returned to Cambridge as a private tutor. On Dec. 8, 1864, he was, however, at last ordained minister of a Unitarian church, in Brewster, Mass., but he resigned two years later and moved to New York to devote himself to literature. There he continued to live until 1896, with the exception of two visits to the Pacific coast in search of copy and another trip to Paris in the course of a frenetic amour which left him temporarily insane. He never married. After 1896 he made his home with his sister in Natick, Mass., until his death in 1899.

Although he had written several earlier works, *Bertha's Christmas Vision* (1856), *Nothing to Do, a Tilt at Our Best Society* (1857), *Frank's Campaign, or What a Boy Can Do* (1864), and *Helen Ford, a Novel* (1866), it was not until

Alger's residence in New York that he found his real vocation. Through his charitable interest in the work of the Newsboys' Lodging House, founded by Charles Loring Brace [*q.v.*], he formed an enduring friendship with its superintendent, Charles O'Connor, and became informally identified with the management of the institution. Most of his time he spent in the Lodging House, to which he brought a rescued Chinese foundling, Wing, whom he practically adopted until the boy's death beneath the feet of a runaway horse. By his warm-heartedness and sympathy Alger won the confidence of the street gamins, made innumerable friends among them, and came to know their life in all its details. This life, highly idealized and sentimentalized, henceforth formed the subject of a steady stream of works from his pen. The first of these, *Ragged Dick,* a serial story that appeared in Oliver Optic's magazine, *Student and Schoolmate,* in 1867, became at once enormously popular. A. K. Loring, a Boston publisher, immediately contracted on liberal terms for six other stories of the same kind. Thus came into existence a whole series of *Ragged Dick,* to be followed by further series, *Luck and Pluck* (1869) and *Tattered Tom* (1871), no less than eight volumes being required to remove all of Tom's tatters and establish him in perfectly safe respectability. Still other works followed, and although none of the later Alger heroes quite equaled the prototypal Dick in popularity, all of these volumes sold widely. Alger also wrote biographies of self-made American statesmen, such as *From Canal Boy to President* (1881), *From Farm Boy to Senator* (1882), *Abraham Lincoln, the Backwoods Boy* (1883), and he brought out a volume of poems, *Grand-'ther Baldwin's Thanksgiving* (1875), some of which did not fail to acquire popularity as a medium for public recitations. Writing with extraordinary rapidity, having on one occasion completed an entire book within two weeks, Alger produced all in all 119 works. The enormous income from his writings was, however, owing to his spendthrift habits, insufficient to prevent his dying poor. He was generous to the point of prodigality and was often imposed upon by his ragged protégés. The bold and frank heroes of his fancy seem to have been created as a compensatory substitute for a personality naturally weak and timorous. He suffered from a sickly conscience, and, yearning hopelessly to write a really serious novel, was tortured by a sense of frustration. With a new generation of sophisticated boys such as he never knew, his popularity is dwindling. His works may be counted upon to disappear, but none the less they will have left a stronger mark upon the American character than the works of many a greater writer.

[Herbert R. Mayes, *Alger* (1928), containing bibliography; obituaries in *N.Y. Herald, N.Y. Post, N.Y. Tribune,* July 19, 1899; *Munsey's Mag.,* Oct. 1892; Grace W. Edes, *Annals of the Harvard Class of 1852* (1922); *Who's Who in America,* 1898–99.] E.S.B.

ALGER, RUSSELL ALEXANDER (Feb. 27, 1836–Jan. 24, 1907), governor of Michigan, commander-in-chief of the Grand Army of the Republic, and secretary of war during the blundering campaign of 1898 against Spain, was born in the log cabin of his parents, Russell and Caroline (Moulton) Alger, in the Western Reserve of Ohio, and was obliged to make his own way from an early age. In 1859 he became a lawyer in Ohio, but he removed in that year to Grand Rapids, Mich., in search of an outdoor life. Here he laid the foundation of his large fortune in lumber, and married, in 1861, Annette Henry, who bore him nine children. With five of them, she survived him.

He entered the Civil War as a private soldier, was wounded several times, and was in the autumn of 1864 commanding his regiment with rank of colonel in the Virginia Valley campaign under Sheridan. He was later able out of ample means and a generous heart to assist Sheridan with a gift of $10,000. Apparently inconsistent with this friendship was a discovery which Charles A. Dana of the *Sun* flaunted against Alger to block the latter's aspirations for the presidency in 1892 (N.Y. *Sun,* Feb. 11, 1892). Dana alleged that, with the approval of Sheridan, Alger had been recommended for dismissal from the army. Alger had indeed been discharged, upon resignation, Sept. 20, 1864; and he had subsequently been given brevet rank, for gallantry, as brigadier-general and then as major-general of volunteers. The dismissal papers, however, included the original charge of absence without leave made by Gen. Custer, indorsed in succession by Merritt, Torbert, Sheridan, and the adjutant-general of the army. Alger's story was one of sickness in August 1864, hospitalization at Annapolis, assignment to court-martial duty in Washington, and honorable discharge upon his own request. The two stories were never adequately reconciled; but upon the eve of Alger's selection for a place in McKinley's cabinet they were studied by Senator J. C. Burrows of Michigan, who guaranteed that Alger's military record would pass muster (W. D. Orcutt, *Burrows of Michigan and the Republican Party,* 1917, II, 102). Dana himself seems to have become satisfied that his exposé was without validity. After the Civil War, Alger settled in Detroit, where his

fortune and his personal popularity grew to large dimensions. He defeated "Uncle Josiah" W. Begole, when the latter with fusion indorsement ran for reëlection as governor of Michigan in 1884. As Republican governor, Alger gained some eminence among the statesmen of the Middle West. He returned to business after a single term, was a "favorite son" in the Republican nominating convention of 1888, and received from his comrades of the war their highest honor in the command of the Grand Army of the Republic, in 1889.

Alger was secretary of war from March 1897 until July 1899 when he resigned at the request of President McKinley. The responsibility for the army and for the War Department as he found them rests squarely upon the people of the United States, indifferent in this period to both military preparation and efficiency of administration. The posts of command in the regular army were filled with elderly officers, generally near their age for retirement. The bureaus of the War Department were encrusted with the routine of an army of 25,000, and there were deep jealousies between the officers of the line and the bureaus that governed them. There was nothing resembling a general staff, and no systematic study had been given to any of the problems that must certainly arise in the event of war. Alger administered the War Department in a kindly, routine way, inheriting the antagonism that usually existed between the department and the commanding general. When Congress, on Mar. 9, 1898, appropriated the President's fund of fifty millions "for the national defense, and for each and every purpose connected therewith," Alger neither secured an allotment for such last-hour preparations as might have been practicable, nor resigned his post. "No part of this sum was available for offensive purposes —even for offensive preparation," he subsequently declared, without apparently realizing that such an interpretation of the law by the President ought to have led to his own immediate withdrawal from the cabinet. Not until after the actual declaration of war were there funds available for the preparation of an expeditionary force; and then events moved so rapidly that, with the inadequate and red-tape-bound departmental organization, all preparation was hit-or-miss. The degree to which the President interfered with the fighting of the war lessened the personal liabilities of his subordinates. Alger, however, was the one who prevented Gen. Miles, the commander-in-chief, from going to Cuba, and who secured the command of the expedition for a Michigan officer, W. R. Shafter, who was obese to start with and physically incapacitated during much of the Santiago campaign. As the short

war progressed a wave of criticism was directed against Secretary Alger. In the commissary and hospital services the inadequacies were flagrant. As soon as the fighting was over, President McKinley created a voluntary commission, with Gen. Grenville M. Dodge as president, to survey the conduct of the war. Its report, supplemented by that of the "embalmed beef" commission, and by the court-martial proceedings in the case of Commissary-General Charles P. Eagan, presents a bitter picture of war administration.

Through the winter of 1898–99 McKinley retained Alger in the cabinet, feeling the increasing political burden of his presence. The President appears to have refused to let Alger retire under fire; but he called for his resignation a few weeks after it was suggested that his Secretary would become a candidate for the United States Senate, with the support of Gov. Pingree, upon an anti-trust platform. Alger became senator from Michigan in 1902, and died before the expiration of his term.

[Alger left a long trail through the newspapers and the critical literature relating to the war with Spain. In 1900 he gave to Henry C. Campbell of the *Milwaukee Jour.* a confidential interview which that paper printed on the evening of his death, Jan. 24, 1907. There are the usual obituaries, but there is no good biography. Much can be read between the lines of his apologia, *The Spanish-American War* (1901).]

F. L. P—n.

ALGER, WILLIAM ROUNSEVILLE (Dec. 28, 1822–Feb. 7, 1905), Unitarian clergyman, author, was born in Freetown, Mass., the son of Nahum and Catherine Sampson (Rounseville) Alger. His father was a man of ability, but "unfortunate in his affairs." When ten years of age young Alger went to Boston and worked first in a grocery store and later in a broker's office. Subsequently he secured employment in a cotton-mill at Hooksett, N. H. His Huguenot ancestry conferred on him intellectual ambitions and aptitude, however, and he gave his early morning hours and evenings to study, and even while at his work, it is said, memorized pages of history and grammar and worked out problems in arithmetic. Such preparation finally enabled him to enter an academy at Pembroke, N. H., and at twenty-two he enrolled in the Harvard Divinity School, graduating in 1847. He was immediately ordained and became pastor of All Souls' Unitarian Church, Roxbury, Mass. This same year, 1847, he married Anne Langdon Lodge. On Jan. 7, 1855, he was installed as pastor of Bulfinch Street Church, Boston. Later he made a name for himself by an extended period of theatre preaching. In 1868 he was appointed chaplain of the Massachusetts House of Representatives. It was then the custom, it is said, for most of the

members to remain outside the chamber till the prayer was over. Alger made short prayers and had a full attendance. From 1874 to 1878 he was pastor of the Church of the Messiah, New York, and later held brief pastorates in Denver, Colo., and Portland, Me. He was a favorite on the lyceum platform, and much in demand as a speaker for special occasions. At these times he did not hesitate to say what he thought ought to be said even though it brought him into temporary disfavor. Thus in 1857, chosen to deliver the Fourth of July oration in Boston, he criticized the pro-slavery attitude of the people so strongly that the city refused to publish the oration or give the customary vote of thanks. Seven years later, however, it made amends.

He lived more in the world of literature than of action. His memory was unusually retentive and he became familiar with a wide range of literature. *The Poetry of the East* (1856), consisting of translations of Persian, Sanskrit, and Arabic poems, went through several editions, although his acquaintance with these literatures was only through French and German translations. His *Life of Edwin Forrest, the American Tragedian* (1877), is a notable work, elaborate, painstaking, and exact, but diffuse and full of digressions; his *Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life* (1864), written after twelve years of patient labor, is a scholarly work of much value. Besides the books mentioned he published: *History of the Cross of Christ* (1851); *The Nature, Grounds, and Uses of Faith* (1853); *The Christian Theory of Life* (1855); *An American Voice on the Late War in the East* (1856); *The Charities of Boston* (1856); *The Genius and Future of America* (1857); *The Historic Purchase of Freedom* (1859); *Public Morals* (1862); *The Solitudes of Nature and of Man* (1867); *The Friendships of Women* (1868); *Prayers in the Massachusetts House of Representatives* (1868); *The School of Life* (1881).

[Biographical material is sparse. Arthur M. Alger's *Geneal. Hist. of That Branch of the Alger Family which Springs from Thomas Alger of Taunton and Bridgewater in Mass.* (1876) contains an informative sketch. See also obituary notices in the *Boston Transcript*, Feb. 8, 1905, and *Boston Globe* of same date. A good idea of the value and style of some of his writings may be had from reviews in the *Nation*, Nov. 29, 1866, Mar. 14, 1867, Aug. 23, 1877, and in the *Atlantic Mo.*, Feb. 1864.]

C. G.

ALISON, FRANCIS (1705–Nov. 28, 1779), Presbyterian clergyman, educator, was born in the parish of Leck, county of Donegal, Ireland. After preparation under the Bishop of Raphoe he entered the University of Glasgow. He came to America in 1735, settling first in Talbot County, Md., then at New London, Chester County, Pa. He married Hannah Armitage of New Castle, Del.; of their children the most prominent was the physician, Dr. Francis Alison, Jr. In 1752 he removed to Philadelphia, where he lived and labored till his death.

In Maryland, Alison was tutor in the home of Samuel Dickinson. At New London, having been licensed to preach, he was inducted into the local church May 25, 1737, and continued there till called to Philadelphia. Educational facilities were meager; "there was not a College, nor even a good Grammar School in four provinces, Maryland, Pennsylvania, Jersey, and New York" (Ezra Stiles, p. 431). To remedy the lack, he opened a school (1743), which was officially recognized and subsidized by the Synod of Philadelphia (1744). Such noted men as Charles Thomson, Thomas McKean, and George Read were educated at Alison's school, and, when removed to Newark, Del., it became the foundation of Delaware College. The fame of the master spread abroad and, at the sudden death of the rector of the new academy in Philadelphia, he was referred to as "a gentleman of good learning" who might be secured for the place. Though, at first, "diffident" about undertaking the Latin School, he finally accepted the post at £200 per annum. In 1754 he and Dr. Smith proposed the "advantage" of being allowed to confer degrees on properly qualified students. A clause granting this privilege was drawn up at the trustees' suggestion and subsequently approved. On Mar. 7, 1755, Alison was chosen vice-provost of the "new institution"—the college—and his name, with that of Dr. Smith, inserted in the draft of the new charter.

Of this long service (1752–79) most favorable judgments were passed by students and trustees. Provost Ewing said "he had an unusual fund of learning and knowledge" which fitted him for "the painful instruction of youth in the College" (Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals of the American Pulpit*, III, 76). His only weakness as a teacher was "proneness to anger." Of his scholarship there was great praise. Ezra Stiles avowed he was "the greatest classical scholar in America, especially in Greek." Franklin thought him "a Person of great Ingenuity and Learning" (Ezra Stiles, p. 4). That he knew several fields, is suggested by the fact that (1756) it was agreed that he should teach, besides classics, "Logic, Metaphysicks and Geography" and "other arts and sciences. . . ." While vice-provost of the College he continued to serve as assistant pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia. In the religious turmoil of the day he championed the "Old Side." In 1758, May 24 and 25, he preached two remarkable sermons on *Peace and Union Recommended* be-

fore the Synods of New York and Philadelphia; no other published work is extant. These sermons, *An Address to the Rev. Dr. Alison* (1765), *An Address of Thanks to the Wardens of Christ Church and St. Peters* (1764), and several letters give fleeting glimpses of a mind well informed and keenly active in the religious, educational and political affairs of the day. His philanthropic bent led him to found the Presbyterian Society for the Relief of Ministers and their Widows.

In his later years, in spite of vexatious events and illness, he did not cease to labor in public and private. On July 20, 1775, he "entertained the Congress at church and meeting. Such a Fast was never before observed in this city; Sunday was never so strictly kept" (*Connecticut Historical Society Collections*, II, 292). In 1777 he signed, with others, a protest to the Council of Safety against the "interruptions [quartering of soldiers] which we have met with in the important Business of Education." While ill, he continued teaching at his house, asking that wood be sent there till he was "sufficiently recovered to attend his duty in College. . . ." Later (Mar. 16, 1779) he prayed the trustees to consider that "double the nominal sum" of his former salary was not adequate. His death occurred shortly after the hostile legislature had set aside the charter of the institution to which he had given the best of his life.

[The most reliable, though fragmentary, sources of information about Francis Alison are: the unpublished Minutes of Trustees of the College, Academy, and Charitable Schools and the unpublished Archives of the Univ. of Pa. (1740–90); *Extracts from the Itineraries and other Miscellanies of Ezra Stiles, 1755–1794, with . . . Correspondence*, ed. by Franklin B. Dexter (1916); Leonard Allison Morrison, *Hist. of the Alison or Allison Family in Europe and Am. 1135–1893* (1893); J. S. Futhey and Gilbert Cope, *Hist. of Chester Co.* (1881); Thos. H. Montgomery, *Hist. of the Univ. of Pa.* (1900).] T. W.

ALLAIRE, JAMES PETER (1785–May 20, 1858), master mechanic, engine builder, was of French Huguenot descent. Emigrating from La Rochelle, France, in the seventeenth century, Alexander Allaire settled in 1680 at what is now New Rochelle, N. Y. "Among the inhabitants of this town [New Rochelle] in 1710 were Alexander Allaire and Jane, his wife, with their children, Peter, Philip, Jean, and Isaac" (Bolton, I, 678). James P. Allaire was a great-grandson of Alexander and Jane Allaire through their son, Peter. As a young man he was one of the few skilled workmen in America capable of assembling the engines, marine and others, that were being shipped from England. In 1813 he began business as a brass founder in New York City. At the time, Robert Fulton had his engine shop in Jersey City, and in 1815 Allaire leased the Fulton shop, transferring its business the following year to his brass foundry on Cherry St., New York City, thus founding the oldest steam-engine works in New York. Under the patronage of Fulton and others he became the leading manufacturer of steam-engines, boilers, etc., of his day. The name of the Allaire Works became famous and was to be seen on a vast number of engines, particularly steam-boat engines, still in use in this country toward the latter half of the nineteenth century. When the Works were in their prime Allaire heard of the presence of iron ore in the bogs of Monmouth County, N. J. He went prospecting and found not only iron ore but a forest nearby suited for charcoal, then essential in smelting. He purchased, in all, about 8,000 acres of woodland and set about erecting furnace, smelter, and finishing mill, and then an ideal town (later called Allaire) to take care of his workmen. The erection of these works, called the Howell Works, began in 1831. The Squan River furnished water power. Allaire had a canal dug to enable flatboats and barges to float up to the Works. He constructed a tiny railroad to shunt the ore to the smelter. There was every evidence of permanent prosperity. His works were said to be worth $250,000. Then iron ore with soft coal beds in close proximity was discovered in Pennsylvania. Charcoal became valueless. The new ore-beds were near railroads. Allaire could be but a feeble competitor when the competition came. His business dwindled and when he died he was "land poor." But "the excellent steam machinery turned out at his extensive foundry carried his name to every part of the world" (Bolton, I, 678). Some of the boats for which the Allaire Works built engines were the *Henry Eckford, Sun, Post Boy, Commerce, Pilot Boy, Swiftsure, Chancellor Livingston, Savannah, North River, Panama, Bay State,* and *Monita Puritan.* Allaire built the first compound-type engine ever applied to marine purposes in any country. He also had constructed in New York City in 1833 the first house designed exclusively for many tenants, a four-story building with each floor designed for but one family. He was twice married: first to Frances Roe, and later to Calicia Tompkins.

[Robert Bolton, *Hist. of the Several Towns, Manors, and Patents of the County of Westchester* (2 vols., 1881); C. H. Haswell, *Reminiscences of an Octogenarian* (1896); W. T. Bowman, *New York—The World Metropolis* (n. d.); and the *N. Y. Herald*, Nov. 3, 1901, all contain material on the Allaire Works and James P. Allaire; additional information from Miss Louise Allaire of Brooklyn, a distant cousin of James P. Allaire.] E. Y.

ALLAN, JOHN (Jan. 3/14, 1746/7–Feb. 7, 1805), Revolutionary soldier, the eldest of the eight children of William and Isabella (Maxwell)

Allan, was born in Edinburgh Castle, Scotland. His father, a British soldier, took his family in 1749 to the newly founded town of Halifax, Nova Scotia, later settling on a tract of land, vacated by the Acadians in 1756, near Fort Cumberland. In early manhood, young Allan occupied such public positions as justice of the peace, clerk of the sessions, and clerk of the supreme court, meanwhile carrying on an agricultural and mercantile business. From 1770 to June 28, 1776 he was a member of the provincial Assembly. His sojourn in Massachusetts, where he had been sent sometime during his youth to complete his education, apparently led him to sympathize with the colonial cause. He became so active in organizing sentiment, particularly among the Indians, against the British government, that steps were taken to apprehend him on the charge of treason. Forced thus to flee the country, he arrived in Machias, Me., Aug. 13, 1776, leaving his wife, Mary Patton, whom he had married Oct. 10, 1767, and five children to suffer many hardships before they were allowed to join him. Later a reward of £100 was offered for his capture.

The Council of Massachusetts had already recognized the possibility that Nova Scotia might be induced to join its cause (Massachusetts Archives, CCXI, 435; CXLIV, 365). The Council in November 1776 and the Continental Congress in January 1777 received Allan sympathetically, the latter body appointing him its agent to the Eastern Indians. Under the general direction of the Massachusetts Council a plan was formulated (1) to protect the settlements in eastern Maine, (2) to prevent the British in Nova Scotia from communicating with those in Canada through the St. John River, (3) to free Nova Scotia from British control (*Documentary History of Maine,* XIV, 419; see also "Proposals for an attack on Nova Scotia" in *Nova Scotia Historical Society Collections,* II, 11–16). The St. John Expedition of June–August 1777 under Allan's leadership was a failure as a military movement because of lack of support. As an attempt to secure the friendship of the Indians, however, it was of value. Allan's knowledge of Indian character and dialects, and of French, gained in the course of trade, added to his resourcefulness, courage, and faith in the cause he represented, made him an ideal agent to the Indians. For the remainder of the war, Allan made his headquarters at Machias, of the garrison of which Massachusetts in September 1777 appointed him colonel. Though faced with extreme difficulties—lack of men, ammunition, and supplies for the Indian trade which would alone prevent the Indians from deserting to the British with disastrous effect to the Americans—he managed affairs with such skill that Machias remained the eastern outpost of the United States until the close of the war. To Allan's success must be attributed, in part at least, the fact that our northeast boundary is now the St. Croix and not the Kennebec.

Resigning his commission Apr. 15, 1783, Allan engaged in mercantile business on Allan's Island in Passamaquoddy Bay from 1784 to 1786, when he retired to Lubec Mills, where he lived until his death. He is buried on Allan's Island.

[Documents from the Mass. Archives are printed in the *Colls. Me. Hist. Soc., Second Ser., Documentary Hist.,* XIV–XX (1910–14). Frederic Kidder, *Military Operations in Eastern Me. and Nova Scotia during the Revolution* (1867), is a mine of source material. See also Papers of the Continental Cong. (Lib. of Cong.), *Jours. of the Continental Cong., Acts and Resolves of the Province of Mass. Bay, 1776–80; Sprague's Jour. of Me. Hist.,* II; *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* XXX (1876), pp. 353–59.] R.E.M.

ALLEFONSCE, JEAN (*c.* 1482–*c.* 1557), French navigator, was born at Saintonge near Cognac. In 1534 Jacques Cartier, under orders from Francis I to discover a passage to Cathay, had visited the North American coasts of Newfoundland and Labrador. On a further voyage (1535) he had followed the St. Lawrence River as far as Hochelaga (Montreal). Determining to erect the newly discovered region into a viceroyalty, the King in 1540 selected Jean François de la Roque of Picardy, known as Roberval, to be virtual viceroy. Roberval set forth for America perhaps in April 1542, taking Jean Allefonsce with him as chief pilot, and reached Newfoundland June 8.

To Allefonsce fell the duty of exploration incident to finding, if possible, the much sought Western Passage. He entered the Gulf of St. Lawrence and may have ascended the St. Lawrence River to the Saguenay. Of the coasts visited, and of other coasts, he made sketch maps which have come down to us. These appeared in 1545 in a little manuscript treatise (*Cosmographie*) prepared for the King. The sketches include the Gulf of St. Lawrence and the region northward to Iceland, a portion of the St. Lawrence River, and the Saguenay as a strait leading into a great sea. "I think," says Allefonsce, "the same runs into the Sea of Cathay." Some of the sketches relate to the southern part of Newfoundland and the New England coast with the river Norumbega. A sketch shows the coast of Florida with the West Indies and part of South America. Allefonsce, it is interesting to note, makes mention of "the Isle St. Brandon and a large island called the Seven Cities, forming one large island; and there were many persons who have seen it, as well as myself, and can testify, but I do not know how

things look in the interior for I did not land upon it. It is in 28° 30′ north latitude."

As a navigator Allefonsce was thought to possess unusual skill. But he was something of a corsair, adventurous, haughty, and apt to incur trouble. In 1559 there was published posthumously his *Voyages Avantureux,* and from this volume we learn that he met his death in a naval engagement "with Menendez, the Spaniard, near the reef of Rochelle."

[Voyages of Cartier 1534–40, Hakluyt, *Voyages* (MacLehose 1904), VIII, 183–274; same with "Voyage by John Alphonce chiefe Pilote to M. Roberval, 1542," VIII, 275–82, and "Voyage of John Francis de la Roche to . . . Camden, 1542," VIII, 283–89; Voyages of Cartier from Hakluyt, *Early English and French Voyages* (1906), ed. by H. S. Burrage; Justin Winsor, *Cartier to Frontenac* (1900), index under "Allefonsce," "Roberval" and "Cartier"; Benjamin F. De Costa, "Jacques Cartier and His Successors" (citing Henry Harrisse and others), in Winsor's *Narr. and Crit. Hist.,* IV, with Critical Essay by Justin Winsor, chap. II; consult index under "Allefonsce." For the sketch maps by Allefonsce, see Winsor, *Narr. and Crit. Hist.,* IV, 74–78; Francis Parkman, *Pioneers of France* (ed. 1901), index under "Roberval" and "Alphonsce"; E. G. Bourne, *Spain in America* (1904), chap. X, with bibliog. p. 333; J. P. Baxter, *Memoir of Jacques Cartier* (1906).] I.B.R.

ALLEN, ALEXANDER VIETS GRISWOLD (May 4, 1841–July 1, 1908), Episcopal clergyman, educator, author, was born at Otis, Mass., the son of Ethan and Lydia Child (Burr) Allen. His father, who had been a teacher and had not been ordained until he was forty years old, was rector of a little Episcopal church there on a salary of $200 a year and free firewood. From here, when Alexander was about four years of age, he went to St. Paul's parish, Nantucket. There as elsewhere in this country at that time the Oxford movement was making trouble, and after ten rather unhappy years he took charge of a small church at Guilford, Vt. Under these straitened and, from most points of view, unpromising conditions, young Alexander grew up. Both father and mother were strongly evangelical, and in the mother there was a deep vein of mystical piety, which perhaps left traces in her son, though he was of a more intellectual type. How, when, and where he got his early education, except perhaps from his father, it is hard to imagine; but at the age of eighteen he entered the sophomore class of Kenyon College, Gambier, Ohio. This was then a strongly evangelical or Low Church institution, with the consequent limitations and disadvantages which belonged to the later period of the evangelical movement. Here may be said to have been the real beginning of Allen's intellectual life. He graduated at the head of his class in 1862 and the same year entered Bexley Hall, the theological seminary at Gambier, where he spent two years. During this

period of his life his reaction from the evangelical party, as it was then represented, began. So strong was it that in 1863 he seems to have been almost on the point of rejecting historical Christianity. But he found help and relief in the study of S. T. Coleridge, the guide of so many ardent spirits tormented by the hardness and unreality of popular theology. Partly to escape from the conditions at Gambier, and partly for other reasons, he went to the Andover Theological Seminary. Here he found a different and more stimulating atmosphere, in which his intellectual horizon broadened. While a student at Andover he was made deacon by Bishop Eastburn of Massachusetts, in Emmanuel Church, Boston, July 5, 1865. On June 24, 1866, in St. John's Church, Framingham, he was ordained priest, and became rector of St. John's, Lawrence. In 1867 he was called to be instructor in church history in the new theological school at Cambridge, Mass., and became full professor in 1869. Here he remained until his death.

In 1872 he married Elizabeth Kent Stone, who died in 1892, and in 1907 he married Paulina Cony Smith. He was of medium size, rather inclined to stoutness, with soft light hair turning to gray in his later years, a sandy mustache, side whiskers, and a broad forehead over a pair of eyes almost hidden by glasses. His voice was peculiar in its softness, low and almost muffled, but flexible, expressive, and well adapted to the classroom. He was not a great scholar in the European sense of the word, but, judging by the almost unanimous testimony of his pupils, he was a great teacher. His first real appeal to the thinking world was his *Continuity of Christian Thought* (1884). It is his most original and distinctive work. He approached the subject from a standpoint new to most modern writers, beginning with Clement of Alexandria, rejecting the entire Latin tradition, and following the Greek entirely. As a consequence, his treatment of the great Latin theologians was not only sometimes wanting in justice, but even in understanding. He is also widely known for his *Life and Letters of Phillips Brooks* (2 vols., 1900). In addition to many contributions to magazines, he also published *Jonathan Edwards* (1889); *Religious Progress* (1894); *Christian Institutions* (1897); *Freedom in the Church* (1907).

[Charles Lewis Slattery, *Alexander Viets Griswold Allen, 1841–1908* (1911); C. J. Palmer, *The Life Work of Prof. A. V. G. Allen as Influenced by His Early Environment* (in MS.).] S. Me—s.

ALLEN, ANDREW (June 1740–Mar. 7, 1825), Loyalist, second son of William Allen [*q.v.*], chief justice of Pennsylvania, and Margaret Hamil-

ton Allen, was born at Philadelphia. He graduated from the University of Pennsylvania in 1759, studied law under Benjamin Chew and later in England (1761), and was admitted to practise before the Pennsylvania Supreme Court Apr. 20, 1765. He married Sally, eldest daughter of William Coxe of New Jersey, Apr. 21, 1768. On Nov. 4, 1769 he became attorney-general of the province, thus confirming his political and social position in Philadelphia. Before 1776 public opinion in Pennsylvania advanced slowly toward American independence. The Allens were influential advocates of a just administration with local self-government under the Crown. Recorder of Philadelphia in 1774 and elected to the Committee of Safety June 30, 1775, Allen was well fitted to serve his province. In the elections to the Assembly of May 1776, he tied for second place among the four members chosen by the city; but when in the Continental Congress he faced the question of American independence under a national government he hesitated, and later opposed the Declaration of 1776. This attitude curtailed his influence. Elected to Congress on Nov. 3, he resigned in December and sought Lord Howe's protection at Trenton. It has been assumed that this act was due to Washington's defeat at New York, and fear that the American cause was lost. In "A Letter from Philadelphia" Allen had already (1775), however, been termed "A Sworn Advocate for George III," and it is probable that his loyalty was due to conscientious scruples and family traditions. His preference for the British, his reported selection by Howe as lieutenant-governor of Pennsylvania, and his return to Philadelphia with that general on Dec. 26, 1777 destroyed Allen's standing among the Whigs; and when the tide favored the Americans he was attainted (March 1778), and his property confiscated by the state. With the close of the Revolution Loyalists were more kindly regarded, and in 1792 Allen was pardoned and revisited Philadelphia. Under the Jay Treaty of 1794 he attempted to recover money paid the state by his early debtors. Failing in this, Allen returned to England to live the remainder of his life with one of his seven children. He received a yearly pension of £400 from the Crown, dying in London Mar. 7, 1825, an English gentleman faithful to the tenets and teachings of his fathers.

[Allen Manuscripts in the Hist. Soc. of Pa.; *Pa. Arch.*, especially the first two series; Thompson Westcott, "Hist. of Phila." (section published in the *Sunday Dispatch*, May 2, 1875); C. P. Keith, *The Provincial Councillors of Pa.* (1883); J. H. Martin, *The Bench and Bar of Phila.* (1883); C. P. Keith, "Andrew Allen," in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, vol. X; E. F. De Lancey, "Chief Justice Wm. Allen" in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, vol. I.]

C. H. L—n.

ALLEN, ANTHONY BENEZET (June 24, 1802–Jan. 12, 1892), farmer, writer, manufacturer and dealer in farm machinery, the son of Ruth (Falley) Allen and Samuel Allen, was born in Hampshire County, Mass. The family later moving to New York, he received his education in the schools of that city. In 1833 he took up his residence in Buffalo, where he devoted himself to farming and the breeding of livestock. Of large stature, hazel eyes, fair, slightly florid complexion and expansive forehead, he was a striking figure. On a visit to England in 1841 he was impressed with the superiority of English livestock and at once resolved to import some of the best blood to start herds of pure blood stock in the United States and to begin a campaign of education in better breeding methods. To carry on such a campaign it was necessary to have a more effective means of reaching the public eye and ear. He therefore founded the *American Agriculturist* in 1842 in connection with his brother, Richard L. Allen [*q.v.*], and with contributions from his other brother, Lewis F. Allen [*q.v.*]. For fourteen years he was editor and owner of this paper, moving to New York City at the close of the first year. In 1852 he was married to Mary E. Butterworth. In 1856 he sold his paper to Orange Judd and devoted himself to the business of manufacturing and selling farm machinery. A warehouse for this purpose had been opened at 189 Water St., New York, in 1847. His trade rapidly extended all over the United States and even to the West Indies and South America. During his career as a manufacturer he took out many patents, chiefly for improvements in mowers, reapers, and plows. Farm machinery when he began business had been largely limited to crude cast-iron plows, a rough sort of harrow, hoes, and shovels. In 1867 he made another trip to England and also toured the continent of Europe studying farm methods to be used in improving American agriculture. All this time he supplied a constant stream of articles on a great variety of agricultural topics from plows to pigeons and from county fairs to rural schools. In 1870 he bought a farm on Toms River in Ocean County, N. J., where he passed his summers for the rest of his life, spending the winters at Flushing, L. I. But this Toms River adventure was by no means a retirement. A friend who visited him in his eighty-second year speaks of his tall, erect, elastic figure and of the numerous experiments he had in progress on his farm. He knew the history of every tree on his place and kept on planting more as if he should live forever to enjoy them. Perhaps the first impetus to the use of polled cattle in this country was given by Allen

and he was also instrumental in introducing the improved Berkshire swine and pointing out their value and importance. Indeed between 1840 and 1892 his pen was seldom at rest, warning others of his mistakes, telling them about his successes, and always suggesting the possibility of still better crops, better livestock, better farm homes and more rural happiness. In fact, he never laid down his hoe or his pen till pneumonia, the arch enemy of old age, seized upon him in his ninetieth year.

[Obituary in the *Cultivator and Country Gentleman*, Jan. 21, 1892, p. 50; article by Geo. Thurber in *Am. Agriculturist*, Nov. 1884, p. 509; brief note in *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 13, 1892, p. 7.] E. V. W.

ALLEN, CHARLES (Apr. 17, 1827–Jan. 13, 1913), jurist, was the son of Sylvester Allen who in 1812 established himself in business at Greenfield, Franklin County, Mass., where he became one of the leading merchants, and married Harriet, sister of George Ripley [*q.v.*], a woman of unusual refinement and intellectual keenness. Charles Allen was born at Greenfield, attended school there and at Deerfield Academy, and proceeded thence to Harvard (A.B., 1847). He entered the Harvard Law School, Sept. 9, 1848, but did not graduate, leaving in 1849 to study law with George T. Davis at Greenfield, by whom on his admission to the Northampton bar in 1850 he was taken into partnership. He remained at Greenfield for eleven years, engaging in general practise and actively interesting himself in local and municipal matters. In January 1861 he was appointed reporter to the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts and accordingly removed to Boston. His reports, covering the cases from January Term, 1861, to January Term, 1867, are of a high order, being distinguished for accuracy, clearness of diction, and simplicity of statement, and are always cited by his name (*Allen's Massachusetts Reports*, vols. I–XIV). In April 1867 he was elected attorney-general of Massachusetts and retained the position till 1872. In the latter year he resumed private practise in Boston. Despite the fact that he was retained in much important litigation, he edited a selection of *Telegraph Cases Decided in the Courts of America, Great Britain and Ireland* (1873). He was appointed chairman of the commission to revise the general statutes of Massachusetts, Apr. 13, 1880.

In 1881 he declined a position on the federal bench, but in response to the public sentiment of the bar, accepted an appointment as associate justice of the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts, Jan. 23, 1882. "Sitting at *nisi prius* his rulings were characterized by that accuracy and promptness which result from years of service as an advocate. Without being a martinet . . . the conduct of counsel and parties before him was held in firm restraint. He brooked no altercation and permitted no brow-beating. . . . When necessary his reprimand was swift and its effect final. . . . His words from the bench were few but they went to the bottom of the thing in hand" ("Memorial of Boston Bar Association," *214 Mass. R.*, 613). Though eligible for retirement in 1897 on attaining his seventieth birthday, he remained on the bench till Sept. 1, 1898, when he resigned. In 1900 he published *Notes on the Bacon-Shakespeare Question*, a volume of 284 pages, in which from the lawyer's standpoint he analyzed the evidence and maintained with great force that Bacon could not have written the plays. He experienced a paralytic stroke in June 1907, from which he never recovered, remaining a confirmed invalid till his death at Boston, Jan. 13, 1913. He was unmarried.

[Particulars of his ancestry and details of his life at Greenfield are contained in F. M. Thompson's *Hist. of Greenfield* (1904). A résumé of his career and an appreciation of his judicial work are embodied in the "Memorial" cited above. See also article in the *Green Bag*, XXV, Feb. 1913. Details of his work as attorney-general of Mass. are contained in the *Reports of the Attorney General* for the years 1867–71. His opinions while on the bench—some 700 in number—are contained in *CXXXII–CLXXI, Mass. Reports.*] H. W. H. K.

ALLEN, DAVID OLIVER (Sept. 14, 1799–July 19, 1863), Congregational missionary, the son of Moses and Mehitable (Oliver) Allen and brother of Nathan Allen [*q.v.*], was born in Barre, Mass. He was educated in the academies of New Ipswich, N. H., and New Salem, Mass., in Williams, Union, and Amherst Colleges, and in Andover Theological Seminary. He graduated from Amherst in 1823 and from Andover in 1827. Toward the end of his senior year at Andover he was ordained at Westminster, Mass., to the Congregational ministry and foreign missionary service; at about the same time he was married to Myra Wood of Westminster. They sailed from Boston on June 5, 1827, and on Nov. 27 arrived at Bombay, where Allen was destined to serve conspicuously for a quarter-century. His first years in India were devoted of necessity to a study of language. In the use of Marathi he acquired considerable skill. He took upon himself at once such mission duties as he could perform and early showed marked capacity for leadership. After the death of his first wife on Feb. 5, 1831, he went frequently "on tour," leaving their small son Myron in the care of friends. His most significant work, however, was done in the city of Bombay. From 1827 to 1832 he was secretary of the Bombay Tract and Book Society. The following twenty years he was identified with the work

of the British and Foreign Bible Society, serving for twelve years as secretary of its Bombay branch. He took an interest in the work of the Seaman's Friend Society, the Bombay Education Society, the Bombay District Benevolent Society, and for a brief period edited the *Temperance Advocate*. He was a member of the Royal Society and of the American Oriental Society. For the Mission itself he served for ten years as superintendent of its press and gave much time to the translation, revision, and publication of Scripture. He himself translated the books of Samuel and aided in the revision of previous versions of the New Testament. By Mar. 1, 1847, all of the books of the Bible had been rendered into Marathi. Thereafter, as "principal editor" on behalf of the Bible Society, Allen was chiefly engaged in the bringing out of the Marathi Bible in one volume in uniform type and improved version. After the actual printing of this edition (finished in 1855) had proceeded through II Samuel, he was forced to retire from active service because of broken health. On Feb. 12, 1853 he took final leave of India. His last three years were spent in Lowell, Mass., where his death occurred in his sixty-fourth year. He was married four times. Seven years after the death of his first wife, he married, Feb. 22, 1838, Orpah Graves who died June 5, 1842; on Dec. 12, 1843, he married Azuba Condit who died June 11, 1844; and on May 3, 1858 he married Mrs. Mary S. Barnes who survived him. In addition to his work as translator and editor, Allen was the author of several Marathi tracts, including a revision (1832) of Gordon Hall's *On the Worship of God;* a *Summary of the Holy Scriptures* (1833) after an original by Samuel Newell; an abridgment of the *Summary on Prayer* (1834), intended for children; and *A History of Our Saviour* (1834). He kept a voluminous journal, and wrote a worthy and comprehensive volume on *India, Ancient and Modern* (1856).

[Information may be found in Allen's Journal (see the *Missionary Herald*, 1832–42); *Am. Board Reports*, 1828–54; R. Anderson, *India Mission of the Am. Board* (1874); *Memorial Papers Am. Marathi Mission* (1882); *Centennial Volume Am. Marathi Mission* (1913); *Biog. Rec. Alumni Amherst Coll.* (1883).] J.C.A.

ALLEN, ELISHA HUNT (Jan. 28, 1804–Jan. 1, 1883), congressman, diplomat, was the son of Samuel Clessen Allen, congressman, and Mary (Hunt) Allen, member of an influential family of the Connecticut Valley. He entered Williams College at fifteen, graduated second in his class, studied law with his father, and practised for a short time in Brattleboro, Vt. Late in 1828 he moved to Bangor and in a few years formed a partnership with John Appleton, subsequently chief justice of Maine. In 1835 he was elected to the Maine House of Representatives and served for five years, one as speaker. It was the time of the Northeastern Boundary controversy and Allen took a prominent part in urging a vigorous support of the rights of Maine. In 1840 he was elected a representative in Congress on the Whig ticket, defeating his personal friend, Hannibal Hamlin. In Congress he joined frequently in the debates, defending the Whig principles in regard to banking and protection. In 1846 he moved to Boston and in 1849 represented the city in the legislature. He then accepted a nomination as consul at Honolulu thinking that a few years in the tropics might benefit his health. The position of consul was one requiring much tact as the whale ships made Honolulu a rendezvous and there was often friction between the sailors and the natives, but Allen managed affairs with excellent judgment and his activity and eloquence were of great assistance in restoring order after Honolulu had for two days been in possession of a furious mob of between two and three thousand sailors. On the expiration of his consulship the King of Hawaii offered him the post of minister of finance, which he accepted and held until 1857, when he became chancellor and chief justice with a seat in the cabinet. He retained these positions for twenty years. A well-read lawyer and naturally of a judicial temperament, he discharged his judicial duties well, but the great object of his career was to secure the closest relations between Hawaii and the United States. While consul he carried a treaty of annexation with certain limitations to Washington but it was not accepted. As a Hawaiian official he made various similar attempts sometimes in person and sometimes by deputy and in 1876 had the pleasure of seeing the final conclusion of a treaty of reciprocity which also prevented Hawaii from granting similar privileges to any other nation or in any manner alienating any of its territory. In 1876 he was obliged to return to the United States because of the health of his wife. He was appointed Hawaiian minister and served for the remainder of his life, becoming by virtue of seniority dean of the diplomatic corps. He died suddenly at the President's New Year's reception on Jan. 1, 1883. He was twice married: his first wife was Sarah E. Fessenden of Brattleboro, Vt.; his second, Mary Harrod Hobbs of Bangor.

[The principal authority for Allen's life is a long sketch written by his son Frederick and a friend in Hawaii, Samuel E. Damon, and published in the *Biog. Encyc. of Me. of the Nineteenth Cent.* (1885), ed. by Henry Clay Williams; there is also a long obituary in the *Washington Post*, Jan. 2, 1883.] L.C.H.

ALLEN, ELIZABETH CHASE AKERS. [See AKERS, ELIZABETH CHASE, 1832–1911.]

ALLEN, ETHAN (Jan. 10, 1737/8–Feb. 12, 1789), Revolutionary soldier, author, though identified with the history of Vermont, was born in Litchfield, Conn. His father, Joseph, great-grandson of Samuel Allen, who died in Windsor, Conn., in 1648, married Mary Baker, aunt of Remember Baker of Vermont fame. Ethan was their oldest son. Of his youth very little is known. He is said to have been preparing for college when his father died in 1755 (E. C. Starr, *History of Cornwall, Conn.*, 1926, p. 254). He served in the French and Indian War at Fort William Henry in 1757 (*Connecticut Historical Society Collections*, IX, 247). By 1769 he was probably resident in the New Hampshire Grants, as Vermont was then called, over the control of which New York and New Hampshire were having a lively controversy. As a result of this dispute the Green Mountain Boys were organized in 1770, with Allen as "colonel commandant" (Ira Allen, *Natural and Political History of the State of Vermont*, 1798, pp. 26–27). By December 1771 Allen had made his leadership so felt that Gov. Tryon of New York offered a reward of twenty pounds for his capture (E. B. O'Callaghan, *Documentary History of the State of New York*, 1851, IV, 749–50). In March 1774 this reward was increased to one hundred pounds (*Ibid.*, pp. 871–73). At the Westminster (Vt.) meeting in April 1775 he was appointed, with others, to draw up a remonstrance to the King, but the news of the battle of Lexington momentarily quieted affairs in Vermont, and Allen received instructions from Connecticut to capture Fort Ticonderoga. Consequently at dawn on May 10, 1775, he entered the fort, with Col. Arnold by his side, and demanded its immediate surrender (*Connecticut Historical Society Collections*, vol. I). In September he went on the expedition against Canada, where he was captured by the British in a foolhardy attempt to surprise Montreal. For over two years he was held prisoner, being finally exchanged at New York, May 6, 1778, for Col. Archibald Campbell. Immediately afterward he received from Gen. Washington the brevet rank of colonel (F. B. Heitman, *Historical Register*, p. 67). He returned at once to Vermont and was soon actively engaged in local affairs. In September 1778 he presented the Vermont claims to the Continental Congress without success. Soon afterwards he was given command of the Vermont militia with rank of major-general, and commenced a petty warfare against the New York settlers.

In July 1780 Allen received a letter from Col. Beverly Robinson which opened a correspondence with Gen. Haldimand, commander of the British forces in Canada. Together with his brothers Ira [*q.v.*] and Levi Allen he was deeply implicated in an attempt to negotiate a treaty with Great Britain, which would have made Vermont a province of that country. Whether the Allens actually wanted this, or were merely trying to force Congress to recognize Vermont as a separate state, has never been determined. Ethan, however, took no further part in the Revolution, but gave his attention to Vermont affairs and the management of his farms. In 1787 he settled in Burlington, where, two years later, he died of apoplexy. A granite shaft, erected in 1855, stands near his grave. Allen was a man of strong physique, courageous, impulsive in all his actions, prone to daring exploits, and inclined to appeal to force rather than reason. No portrait is known to exist, but there are idealistic statues by Mead in Montpelier and Washington. He was twice married: first, in 1762, to Mary, daughter of Cornelius and Abigail (Jackson) Bronson, who died at Sunderland, Vt., in 1783, having borne him five children; second, in 1784, to Mrs. Frances (Montresor) Buchanan, by whom he had three more children.

Allen was the author of several books and pamphlets, as well as many controversial contributions to various New England newspapers: 1. *A Brief Narrative of the Proceedings of the Government of New York Relative to Their Obtaining the Jurisdiction of that Large District of Land to the Westward from Connecticut River* (Hartford, 1774). 2. *An Animadversory Address to the Inhabitants of the State of Vermont* (1778). 3. *A Vindication of the Opposition of the Inhabitants of Vermont to the Government of New York* (1779). 4. *A Narrative of Col. Ethan Allen's Captivity* (1779), of which many editions were printed. In it Allen fails to mention Arnold's share in the capture of Ticonderoga, and is vituperative about the British. 5. *A Concise Refutation of the Claims of New Hampshire and Massachusetts Bay to the Territory of Vermont* (1780). 6. *The Present State of the Controversy Between the States of New York and New Hampshire on the One Part and the State of Vermont on the Other* (1782). 7. *Reason the Only Oracle of Man; Or, A Compenduous System of Natural Religion* (Bennington, 1784), a curious book, of which this first edition is excessively rare, most of it having been destroyed by fire at the printer's, and practically all of the remainder having been burned by the printer because of its "atheistic" content.

[Authorities in addition to those cited: Wm. Slade, *State Papers* (1823); *Recs. of the Council of Safety and Gov. and Council of the State of Vt.*, vols. I–III (1873–

75); *Vt. Hist. Soc. Coll.* (1870–71); Ethan Allen Papers (MSS.), and Stevens Papers (MSS.), in Montpelier; B. H. Hall, *Hist. of Eastern Vt.* (1858); Hiland Hall, *Hist. of Vt.* (1868); Samuel Williams, *Natural and Civil Hist. of Vt.* (1794). There is no satisfactory biography, but Hugh Moore's *Memoir of Col. Ethan Allen* (1834), Jared Sparks's *Life of Col. Ethan Allen* (1858), Henry W. DePuy's *Ethan Allen and the Green Mountain Heroes of '76* (1853), and Henry Hall's *Ethan Allen, the Robin Hood of Vt.* (1892) should be mentioned. There is a bibliography in M. D. Gilman's *Bibliog. of Vt.* (1897), pp. 5–7.] G. H. D.

ALLEN, FREDERIC DE FOREST (May 25, 1844–Aug. 4, 1897), classical scholar, was born at Oberlin, Ohio, of old New England stock. The family can be traced from Samuel Allen, who settled in Braintree, Mass., about 1629, and whose daughter Sarah married Josiah, the son of Miles Standish. Frederic's father, George Nelson Allen, set out for Ohio in 1832 under the influence of his pastor, Lyman Beecher. He was taken ill and kindly cared for at Hudson, Ohio, where the Western Reserve College had been recently established, and there he studied at the preparatory school and the college for five years, at the end of which he went to Oberlin, where he was graduated in 1838. Three years later he married Mary Rudd, who had just received the degree of bachelor of arts. She and two classmates were the first women to receive that degree at Oberlin and were probably the first women in the world to receive the degree in course. Her father, Hezekiah Rudd, is said to have conducted a school for boys at Stratford, Conn. Her mother, Maria De Forest Rudd, was descended from a French family which had been among the first settlers of Harlem, N. Y. She was a woman of marked scholarly tastes and great strength of mind and character. In the year of his marriage, George N. Allen was appointed instructor in Oberlin College, where he taught music and natural science until 1871. Frederic Allen was, therefore, bred in an atmosphere of intellectual culture amid the rural and intensely religious surroundings of the small college and village of the Oberlin of that time. He was graduated from the College in 1863, at nineteen years of age. In his undergraduate days he showed no strong inclination for classical studies, but read widely in the best French literature. He taught school in one or more of the long winter vacations, on one occasion in the small village of Brecksville, near Cleveland. After his graduation he taught for about two years in a school at Sewickley, Pa., and for a few months at the Blind Asylum in St. Louis. During this time he turned eagerly to the study of the classics, and in 1866 was appointed professor of Greek and Latin at the University of East Tennessee, at Knoxville. In 1868 he obtained leave of absence and went to Leipsig to study under Georg Curtius. Here he remained two years, taking active part in the work of Prof. Curtius's Grammatische Gesellschaft and winning the respect of the scholars of the University. He obtained the degree of doctor of philosophy in 1870, with a dissertation *De Dialecto Locrensium*, which gives clear signs of his ability as a philological investigator.

Returning to Knoxville, Allen resumed his former position, but in 1873 he was called to Harvard University as tutor in Greek. The next year he was called to the newly founded University of Cincinnati. Here, although chiefly occupied with the work of his department, he found time to prepare his excellent edition of the *Medea* of Euripides, a treatise on the meter of Homer, and his *Remnants of Early Latin*, a small but important book. In 1879 he accepted a call to the chair of Greek in Yale University; but he remained there only one year, for in 1880 he was called to be professor of classical philology at Harvard, a position which gave him relatively few hours of classroom teaching, and most of those with graduate students. Here he was in his element and could bring to bear upon his daily work his wide and profound knowledge of the ancient languages, and of the literature, life, and thought of the Greeks and Romans. The academic year 1885–86 he spent in Greece as director of the American School of Classical Studies at Athens; but his health was so poor that he had to relinquish his plans for excursions in the country. His eldest daughter, then his only child, died at Athens. He had been married on Dec. 26, 1878, to Emmeline Laighton of Portsmouth, N. H., of a well-known family of that state. She was a charming woman, with great love of music, which was also Allen's chief recreation. He composed the music for the *Phormio* of Terence and for a pantomime and an operetta of his friend Prof. James B. Greenough. After his death the manuscript of an operetta, with words and music complete, was found in his desk. Few scholars have understood Greek music as well as he.

Allen was never robust, for he suffered severely at various times from sciatica and asthma, and during the latter part of his life from hay-fever, and, worst of all, from violent sick-headaches. To escape from hay-fever he used to go to the White Mountains, where he tramped and climbed among the heights for several weeks of each summer. While riding a bicycle from Cambridge toward Portsmouth, Aug. 4, 1897, he was stricken with apoplexy and died without recovering consciousness.

Allen's published work is for the most part in the form of articles in periodicals and encyclopedias. His only books are *Remnants of Early*

Latin (1880); a revision, with many changes and additions, of Hadley's *Greek Grammar* (1884); and editions of the *Medea* of Euripides (1876) and the *Prometheus Bound* of Æschylus (1891). In the last the notes and introduction are translated from the German of N. Wecklein. Of his numerous articles perhaps the most important is "On Greek Versification in Inscriptions," in the *Papers of the American School of Classical Studies at Athens*, Volume IV, 1888, pp. 37–204. At the time of his death he had been working for some years on an edition of the scholia of Plato.

[Thos. D. Seymour, "Frederic De Forest Allen," in *Am. Jour. of Philology*, XVIII, 373–75; Jas. B. Greenough, "Memoir of Frederic De Forest Allen," in *Harvard Studies in Classical Philology*, IX, 27–36, with portrait and bibliography.]

H.N.F.

ALLEN, GEORGE (Dec. 17, 1808–May 28, 1876), educator, Episcopal clergyman, author, was the son of Sarah (Prentiss) Allen and Heman Allen, a successful lawyer, distinguished judge, and member of Congress. Though born at Milton, Vt., George Allen considered himself "a native of Burlington." His first steps toward scholarship followed a well-marked path. "My earliest instruction in Greek and Latin," he wrote, "was given partly by students in my father's office, by students of the University of Vermont, such as may have happened to keep our district school of winters, and partly by the principal of an academy at Burlington . . ." (*Penn Monthly*, Aug. 1876, p. 648). At sixteen he was sent to Canada, where he studied French in the household of Father Consigny and acquired a sympathetic understanding of Roman Catholicism. In 1823 he entered the University of Vermont, where, he wrote, "the classical instruction was at first miserable, contemptible. . . . My best studies I made by myself . . ." (*Ibid.*, p. 649). Nevertheless he was influenced by Robertson, Porter, and Marsh, the latter, particularly, awakening his interest in Coleridge, Wordsworth, and the German Romanticists. He graduated in 1827.

He began his teaching in an academy at Georgia, Vt. Of this experience he later wrote, "You will laugh to hear me say that I even taught Mathematics and Natural Philosophy, quite furiously." From 1828 to 1830 he filled a vacancy in Languages, which was the occasion for beginning serious classical study. He said, "I did five years' reading during those eighteen months." During 1830 he studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1831. On July 7 of the same year he married Mary Hancock Withington. After his father was elected to Congress, he gave some attention to the law office, but soon slighted it for a newly awakened interest in religion and the church. In 1832 he was confirmed and began to study Hebrew and theology, while he taught classics at the Vermont Episcopal Institute. In May 1834 he was ordained and began to preach. Because of ill health, the strenuous combination of two professions was relinquished, and he accepted the rectorship of a church in St. Albans, where he spent three happy and significant years. With the practise in sermon writing, he experienced a "reawakening of a literary spirit, more intense and enthusiastic . . . than I had ever known before. . . ." The reawakening bore fruit in an article, "The Study of Works of Genius," published in the *New York Review*, and in his justly celebrated "Critical Review" of McVickar's edition of Coleridge's *Aids to Reflection* (*Churchman*, Mar. 7 to May 9, 1840).

In 1837 he returned to teaching, and continued in that profession till his death. For eight years he was professor of Languages in Delaware College, whence he was called in 1845 to the chair of Latin and Greek at the University of Pennsylvania. In 1864 he was made professor of Greek. About the middle of the century a movement began having as its objective a greater university with curtailment of the college. This found expression in a much-discussed "Letter and By-Laws," reported by the trustees Nov. 3, 1852. To the views of the letter and its proposals Allen raised vigorous objections in a closely reasoned statement covering twenty-one pages. In 1847 he startled, and even alienated, some of his friends by becoming a Catholic. This sudden and superficially inexplicable change was due to several factors,—notably, his life and study in the household of Father Consigny, the secession of a number of the Oxford group to join the Roman church, and the fact that he had defended Mr. Hoyt, former associate and close friend, who had taken a similar action a year earlier. Allen served, for a time, as counsel in Philadelphia for Pope Pius IX.

Besides classical literature, Allen cultivated an interest in music, chess, and military science. His published works include *The Remains of W. S. Graham* (1849); *The Life of Philidor* (1863); *The History of the Automaton Chess Player in America* (1859), and many articles for the *United States Service Magazine*, edited by Coppée. His chess collection, about 1,000 volumes, was the best in the United States when, at his death, it was purchased by the Library Company of Philadelphia. Though his scholarly attainments were well known and recognized by such men as Hadley, Felton, and Woolsey, he published no contribution to classical scholarship. As a teacher, however, he had few rivals. His colleagues united in

saying of him: "He wanted no one of the qualities of the finished gentleman, the polished scholar, the efficient instructor . . . he taught with brilliant success . . . [and] as a scholar, especially in Greek literature, he combined the nicest accuracy with a broad range of attainment . . ." (*Penn Monthly*, July 1876, p. 574).

[The best accounts of George Allen are: *An Autobiographical Fragment*, in the *Penn Mo.*, Aug. 1876; a sketch by R. E. Thompson, *Penn Mo.*, July 1876; and W. G. Smith's *George Allen: An Address to the Soc. of Alumni of the Univ. of Pa.*, June 13, 1900. The Archives of the Univ. of Pa., especially 1849–64, contain significant letters, which, with unpublished essays and lectures, help to form an accurate estimate of his work. For family hist. see C. J. F. Binney, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Prentice, or Prentiss, Family in New Eng.* (1883), p. 306.]

T.W.

ALLEN, HARRISON (Apr. 17, 1841–Nov. 14, 1897), anatomist and physician, was born at Philadelphia, the son of Samuel Allen and his wife, Elizabeth Thomas. After graduating from the Philadelphia Central High School he began the study of dentistry under Dr. Josiah Foster Flagg [*q.v.*], a cultivated man of great artistic ability, who had graduated in medicine at Harvard but had subsequently devoted himself to dentistry. Flagg had done considerable work in anatomical illustration, and although Allen only remained in his office for one year he was undoubtedly greatly influenced by Flagg throughout his subsequent career. Allen studied medicine at the University of Pennsylvania and at the end of the necessary two years' course received his degree of M.D. in 1861. He then served for one year as a resident physician in the Philadelphia Hospital. In 1862 he was appointed an acting assistant surgeon in the United States Army and a few months later was commissioned assistant surgeon. His duties during the Civil War were chiefly in hospitals in Washington or its vicinity. Dr. Horatio C. Wood [*q.v.*], who served under Allen when the latter was in command at a military hospital in Alexandria, Va., pays a high tribute to the executive ability he manifested in this capacity. Allen resigned from the Army in 1865 with the brevet rank of major and began practising medicine in Philadelphia, devoting himself to diseases of the nose and throat.

As one of the pioneer American laryngologists he acquired great eminence in his special field, particularly for his dexterity as an operator, but his real calling was comparative anatomy and his most important contributions dealt with it. Every minute that he could spare from his practise was spent at the Academy of Natural Sciences or in the Philadelphia School of Anatomy. In 1864 the Smithsonian Institution published his very important *Monograph of the Bats of North America*, which was republished in 1893, and is still regarded as authoritative on that subject. From 1865 until the last year of his life the *Proceedings* of the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia contained numerous communications from his pen. In 1869 he published his *Outlines of Comparative Anatomy and Medical Zoology*, of which a second edition appeared in 1877. In 1875 he published *Analysis of the Life Form in Art*, a work which possessed great value for artists and was duly appreciated by them. His *System of Human Anatomy, Including Its Medical and Surgical Relations* (1884) was greatly esteemed by other anatomists, but was too erudite and elaborate to achieve general success. He did an immense amount of work on craniology, making comparative studies of skulls from the Florida mounds, the Hawaiian Islands, and elsewhere, and deducing many valuable conclusions from his investigations. These studies were published in the transactions of various societies and have never been collected in book form. H. C. Wood in the bibliography appended to his *Memoir of Allen* lists ninety-seven (non-medical) scientific articles from his pen. In 1865 Allen was appointed professor of zoology and comparative anatomy in the Auxiliary Faculty of Medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, and in 1879 professor of the institutes of medicine in the same institution. This chair he resigned in 1885 to resume his previous position as professor of zoology and comparative anatomy. Allen was also professor of anatomy and surgery in the Pennsylvania Dental College from 1866 to 1878, and was at one time or another on the staff of the Philadelphia Hospital, the Wills Eye Hospital, and St. Joseph's Hospital. He was one of the founders of the American Laryngological Association and a member and at one time president of the Association of American Anatomists and the Anthropomorphic Society. He was a Fellow of the College of Physicians of Philadelphia and a member of the Pathological Society and a constant attendant at their meetings. Of a modest, retiring disposition, he inspired affection and respect in his colleagues, patients, and friends. He was married in December 1869 to Julia A. Colton, daughter of S. W. Colton of Massachusetts.

[Horatio C. Wood, memoir in *Trans. Coll. Physicians of Phila., 1898*, vol. XX, 3rd series; B. G. Wilder, memoir in the *Proc. Ass. of Am. Anatomists*, Dec. 1897; C. R. Bardeen, biog. sketch in Kelly and Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); personal recollections. There is an excellent oil painting of Allen in the Hall of the College of Physicians in Philadelphia.]

F.R.P.

ALLEN, HENRY WATKINS (Apr. 29, 1820–Apr. 22, 1866), Confederate soldier, governor of Louisiana, the son of Dr. Thomas and Ann (Wat-

kins) Allen, was born in Prince Edward County, Va. In 1833, Dr. Allen removed to Kay County, Mo., with his then motherless children. He placed Henry in a store in Lexington, Mo., with the intention of making him a merchant. The boy, however, finding business distasteful, entered Marion College, Mo., where he remained for two years. Running away from college at the age of seventeen, he established himself as a teacher in Grand Gulf, Miss. His nights were given to the study of law, and he soon entered that profession. He was gaining a practise when his legal career was interrupted by a call for volunteers for the Texas army issued by President Houston in 1842. Romantically inclined, Allen joined the rush of Southern boys for Texas and remained there for six months, showing a marked aptitude for military affairs. Returning to Grand Gulf and the law, he fell in love with Salome Crane, the young daughter of a Mississippi planter. Parental opposition led to an elopement and a duel in which Allen was seriously wounded. Crane eventually forgave his daughter and established the young couple on a plantation in Claiborne County, Miss. Here Allen lived happily for several years until the death of his wife. He then removed to Tensas Parish, La., and in 1852 to West Baton Rouge, La. He was in ill health for some time but eventually recovered. In 1853 he was elected to the Louisiana legislature. In the following year he went to Harvard to study law. Still romantic, his sympathies were so engaged in the Italian struggle for freedom that he sailed with the intention of enlisting under Garibaldi. On reaching Europe he found that the war was over and he then made an extensive tour of the continent. The result of his experiences was a book, *The Travels of a Sugar Planter* (1861).

While away from home he was reëlected to the legislature. On his return to Louisiana he engaged in various public matters and gained a wide popularity. He seemed destined for a successful career in politics when the opening of the Civil War changed his life. He enlisted at the very beginning as a private but was quickly elected lieutenant-colonel of the 4th Louisiana Regiment. His first service was as commander of a part of the regiment at Ship Island off the Mississippi coast. Here he suppressed an incipient mutiny and drilled his troops into efficiency. In March 1862 he became colonel of the 4th Louisiana, which was ordered to join Beauregard in Tennessee. He led his regiment at Shiloh, on Apr. 6, 1862, and was wounded in the face but refused to leave the field. In the defense of Vicksburg in 1862 he played a conspicuous part. He accompanied Breckinridge in the expedition against

Allen

Baton Rouge, then held by the Unionists, as the commander of a Louisiana brigade. In the attack on Baton Rouge, on Aug. 5, 1862, Allen distinguished himself by his gallantry but was badly wounded by a shell fragment which shattered his right leg. He refused to have the limb amputated and succeeded in saving it, but at the cost of terrible suffering and eventually of his health. Although virtually incapacitated for field duty he was appointed a brigadier-general in September 1863 and ordered to the Trans-Mississippi Department. Soon after his arrival at Shreveport he was elected governor of Louisiana, almost by acclamation.

Allen's opportunity had arrived. When he was inaugurated on Jan. 25, 1864, he found the state in a desperate condition. East of the Mississippi it was overrun by the Unionists and lost; west of the river the people were starving. Everything was in chaos. Allen immediately went to work to save the almost hopeless situation. Gathering sugar and cotton, he exported them to Mexico and exchanged them for the commodities of which the state stood in dire need: dry-goods, cotton and woolen cards, machinery, and many other things. Luxuries were rigidly excluded. He established a system of state stores, factories and foundries, and a dispensary where medicines were sold at a low price. Some of them were manufactured by Allen himself: he had a turpentine distillery, a castor-oil works, and a place for making carbonate of soda. Importing iron ore from Texas, he made various articles of iron. By accepting Louisiana money at the state stores, he largely restored its value; and Confederate currency, almost worthless elsewhere, had purchasing power west of the Mississippi. Quantities of ordnance stores and army supplies were brought from Mexico in mule wagons driven by Mexicans and negroes. Food and clothing were distributed to the suffering. The state actually advertised for the names of disabled Louisiana soldiers who needed support. The sale of alcoholic beverages was stopped in Allen's realm. The distillation of grain was permittted only in the state distillery, and the alcohol was used only for medicinal purposes. Such of the state charitable institutions as continued to exist were supported by cotton sales. In brief, Allen rescued the population of west Louisiana from the direst straits and in some degree restored industry.

One of his greatest services came after Lee's surrender. The Trans-Mississippi Department was actually stronger in 1865 than it had been before. The Confederates had defeated every effort of the Unionists to penetrate into west Louisiana and Texas, and were obtaining supplies of

all kinds from Mexico. Kirby Smith, the military commander, contemplated continuing the war. His army was still intact and, materially, was in good condition. When first summoned by the Unionists to surrender, he prepared a message of defiance. Allen persuaded Smith not to send this message but to wait. His judgment was justified by circumstances. So great was the confidence felt in him that he was empowered by Texas, Arkansas, and the Confederate governor of Missouri to conduct negotiations for surrender. Soon the army began to break up and then the military authorities gave up the contest. It is probable that but for Allen's stand for peace, Louisiana would have suffered invasion and devastation.

With the struggle over, Allen felt that he could no longer remain in Louisiana; his prominence both as a military commander and a war governor marked him out for punishment. Accordingly, like many other Confederates, he decided to try his fortunes in a foreign land. The decision was stern, for he was almost penniless and in bad health, as he had never recovered from his wounds. Borrowing a few hundred dollars from a friend, he made his way to Mexico, where he was well received by Maximilian. His popularity in Louisiana remained so great that he was proposed for governor in October 1865, although ineligible and an exile. In Mexico City Allen established an English newspaper that gave every promise of permanency. But his health soon gave way completely and most of his career in Mexico was a battle with death. He thought of going to Europe for medical aid but died in Mexico City on Apr. 22, 1866. Allen was the single great administrator produced by the Confederacy. His success in Louisiana indicates that he might have changed history to some extent if his talents could have been utilized by the Confederate government on a large scale.

[*Confed. Mil. Hist.*, vol. X (1899); S. E. Dorsey, *Recollections of Henry W. Allen* (1866); H. E. Chambers, *Hist. of La.* (1925).] D. S. F.

ALLEN, HORATIO (May 10, 1802–Jan. 1, 1890), civil engineer, inventor, was born in Schenectady, N. Y. His father, Dr. Benjamin Allen, was professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Union College from 1800 to 1809; his mother was Mary Benedict Allen, a woman of superior culture and high social standing. When he was eight years old his father became principal of a large preparatory school at Hyde Park, N. Y.; and it was from there that young Allen entered Columbia College. He received his A.B. degree with the class of 1823, attaining high honors in mathematics. Immediately thereafter he began the study of law, but within a year decided that an engineering profession was more to his liking, and, after a year spent with the Chesapeake & Delaware Canal Company at St. George's, Del., he joined the engineering staff of the Delaware & Hudson Company as a resident engineer. In this capacity he assisted in the construction of a portion of the company's canal, and apparently showed marked ability as an engineer and unusual resourcefulness, for in 1828, when the company decided to use locomotives at the western terminus of the canal, Allen, although not yet twenty-six years of age, was delegated to go to England as the company's representative to purchase them. He was given certain specifications for the locomotives, but many points of considerable importance were left to his discretion. When it is recalled that there was no steam locomotive in service in the United States at that time and that Allen did not have the ready means of communicating with his superiors that exist to-day, the importance of the commission entrusted to him may be realized. Four locomotives were contracted for and when the first was tried out at Honesdale, Pa., Aug. 9, 1829, Allen operated it. "Thus," he wrote, "on this first movement by steam on railroad on this continent, I was engineer, fireman, brakeman, conductor, and passenger." In September of that year Allen accepted the position of chief engineer of the South Carolina Railroad Company to construct its railroad from Charleston to Augusta, Ga. He was influential in introducing locomotives as the motive power on this railroad, making the following quaint contention, "There is no reason to expect any material improvement in the breed of horses in the future while, in my judgment, the man is not living who knows what the breed of locomotives is to place at command." Under Allen's direction, the West Point Foundry in New York City built a locomotive (the first ever constructed for sale in the United States) for the railroad company and, after its christening as the "Best Friend of Charleston," it was put in service in December 1830.

Allen remained in Charleston until 1835 when he and his wife, Mary Moncrief Simons, daughter of Rev. James Dewar Simons, of Charleston, whom he had married in 1834, went abroad and spent three years in foreign travel. On their return they settled in New York City. Allen almost immediately was appointed assistant principal engineer of the Croton Aqueduct. He was also at the same time a consulting engineer for the New York & Erie Railroad Co. In 1842 he became one of the proprietors of the Novelty Iron Works in New York City, the firm being known as Stillman, Allen & Co. This company specialized

in the building of marine engines and during the Civil War employed about 1,500 men; it constructed many of the engines of American-built steamships of that time and later. Allen continued as consultant for the Erie Railroad for many years and was its president in 1843. He retired from active business in 1870 but continued as a consulting engineer for a number of years thereafter. His most important services in this connection were in the construction of the famous Brooklyn Bridge and the Panama Railroad.

Allen's interests covered a wide range of subjects. He devoted much time in his later years to the subject of education, particularly to the teaching of astronomy. He published *Astronomy in its General Facts and Relations, Taught by Aid of Mechanical Presentation and Illustration* (1877) and constructed many instruments to facilitate the teaching of it in the schools. While connected with the Novelty Iron Works he devoted considerable time to the improvement of the cut-off valve mechanism of steam-engines and received three United States patents, nos. 2,227, 2,597, and 18,837 between the years 1841 and 1857. He also patented a rotary steam-valve. He was one of the founders of the Union League Club of New York City, and took an active interest in philanthropic and charitable matters. He was honored with the presidency of the American Society of Civil Engineers in 1872, and was one of the organizers of the New York Gallery of Art. He died at his residence "Homewood," near South Orange, N. J., leaving a widow, three daughters, and a son.

[*A Century of Progress: Hist. of the Del. & Hudson Co.* (1925); *Railroad & Engineering Jour.*, vol. LXIV, nos. 2, 3, and 4; *Cassier's Mag.*, Oct. 1896; Recs. of the U. S. Museum; Recs. of the U. S. Pat. Office.]

C. W. M.

ALLEN, IRA (May 1, 1751–Jan. 15, 1814), Vermont political leader, the youngest son of Joseph and Mary (Baker) Allen, was born at Cornwall, Conn. Of his youth and education practically nothing is known. By 1772 he, together with his brothers Ethan [*q.v.*], Heman, Heber, and Levi, was actively interested in the affairs of the New Hampshire Grants (*i.e.* Vermont), where he had received grants of land, and was a member of the regiment of Green Mountain Boys. He was not by nature a soldier; consequently after his first participation in the Dorset Convention of July 1776 as the representative of the town of Colchester, he devoted by far the greater part of his time to the political affairs of the embryo state. His rise to political power was rapid, due to his keen mind and love of statecraft. He took a prominent part in the Windsor Convention, where he, with Thomas Chittenden and others, was selected to draw up the constitution of the state, which had declared its independence on Jan. 17, 1777. He wrote the preamble of that document, the remainder of which was copied from the Pennsylvania constitution with a few additions. At the same time he was made secretary of the Council of Safety, virtually sharing the powers of the president of that body. Under the constitution, which was adopted in December 1777, he was elected a member of the Governor's Council and first treasurer of the state in March 1778. He was, after that, many times the official representative of the state in its negotiations with New Hampshire and other states for the recognition of Vermont's independence. As recognition was not forthcoming from the Continental Congress, Allen, with his brother Ethan, who had been approached in 1780 in the matter by Col. Beverly Robinson, a Loyalist, became interested in the possibility of a separate peace and alliance with Great Britain. Ostensibly to negotiate for the exchange of prisoners, Allen went to Isle aux Noix early in May 1781 to meet Gen. Haldimand's representative, Maj. Dundas. While there he had a secret conference with Capt. Justus Sherwood, a Loyalist in the service of Haldimand, regarding a treaty, under the terms of which Vermont was to become a British province, with her borders guarded by British troops.

Conclusive evidence as to Allen's motive in this affair has never been forthcoming. On the face of it the Allens seem to have entered the negotiations in the hope of forcing the Continental Congress to recognize the independence of Vermont (*Vermont Historical Society Collections*, II, 104–5); ultimately they appear to have become convinced that a British alliance was necessary to insure the autonomy of the territory, since the New York representatives were still powerful enough to prevent Congress from coming to terms (*Records of the Governor and Council of the State of Vermont*, I, 472–74). The proclamation of the cessation of hostilities in April 1783 put a stop to active negotiation on the part of the British, whose interest in Vermont had been for the most part a strategic one, but the Allens, particularly Levi, who had in 1779 been publicly condemned by Ethan as a Loyalist (William Slade, *Vermont State Papers*, p. 563), continued to foster the idea of making Vermont a British province, mainly for commercial reasons, as Vermont was then virtually an independent republic and remained so until she was admitted to the Union as a state in 1791. Levi Allen was in London in 1789–91, not, however, as the accredited

representative of the state, attempting to bring about the alliance. He returned to Vermont in 1791, and died in jail ten years later, having been imprisoned for debt (*American Historical Review,* XXI, 547–60; *Records of the Governor and Council,* III, 399–410).

Meanwhile, Ira was negotiating for commercial treaties with Quebec, and furthering other interests of the same kind. In 1789 he gave land valued at £4,000 to assist the founding of the University of Vermont. In 1795 he went to England to buy arms for the Vermont militia, of which he was then major-general. He bought his munitions in France, however, and sailed for home with them in the *Olive Branch,* which was captured by the British in November 1796. A long litigation ensued and Allen spent large sums in carrying the fight through the British courts, which finally decided in his favor. A question was raised regarding the purpose for which the arms were purchased, but Allen's explanation was accepted. He published, in London, in 1798, his *Natural and Political History of the State of Vermont,* which, although not strictly accurate, is valuable in that it was written by one of the principal pioneers of the state. In the same year he issued the *Particulars of the Capture of the Ship Olive Branch.* In 1801 he returned to America to find that his party had lost power, and that much of his property had been seized. He was immediately arrested and thrown into prison in Burlington, but was released by order of the legislature and granted immunity from arrest for one year. He fled to Philadelphia, where he spent the remainder of his life, attempting to recuperate his fortune, revising and reissuing his account of the *Olive Branch* affair, and revising his *History* (which was never reissued). He died there of "retrocedent gout" on Jan. 15, 1814 (*Vermont Historical Society Proceedings,* 1917–18, pp. 180–81). He had married, about 1789, Jerusha, daughter of Gen. Roger and Jerusha (Hayden) Enos, who bore him three children, of whom only Ira H. survived to maturity (*Ibid.,* p. 144, note regarding supposed early marriage to Lucinda Miner, and issue by her). Allen was a man of medium stature, polished in his appearance, and inclined to the niceties of good living, although he could and did endure the hardships of pioneer life. He published in addition to the books mentioned several controversial pamphlets, which are listed in M. D. Gilman's *Bibliography of Vermont* (1897), pp. 8–9.

[In addition to the references given above, see the various histories of Vermont cited under Ethan Allen, Ethan Allen MSS., and Stevens MSS., in Montpelier; Canadian Archives, series Q, in Ottawa; Clinton Papers, in Ann Arbor; Colonial Papers in Pub. Rec. Office, London; Allen letters published in *Vt. Hist. Soc. Proc.,* 1917–18, pp. 144–89; geneal. details in O. P. Allen, *The Allen Memorial,* 2nd ser. (1907), pp. 54–56.]

G. H. D.

ALLEN, JAMES LANE (Dec. 21, 1849–Feb. 18, 1925), novelist, short-story writer, the seventh and youngest child of Richard and Helen (Foster) Allen, was born on a farm near Lexington, Ky. On his father's side he was descended from Virginia pioneers of English blood, on his mother's from Scotch and Irish ancestors. His early days were passed happily on the farm, but after 1860, with the coming of hostilities between North and South, the Allens suffered heavy misfortunes, encountering the hardships of both Civil War days and Reconstruction. For years Allen knew poverty, hard work, a struggle to get an education. As a student in Transylvania College he wore, instead of an overcoat, an old shawl, and during one winter, at least, he had no hat save a dilapidated one made of straw (manuscript article by M. A. Cassidy). Throughout these years of distress older people around him continually reminded the youth of happier conditions prevailing in the South before the war. Like Thomas Nelson Page and others, he fell heir to a belief in the chivalrous ideals of plantation society—an inheritance which in part explains his predilection, later, for aristocratic heroines and gallant lovers, and his high evaluation of good breeding. His mind played fondly over the idealized past of the South. His first instruction was from his mother, who directed his reading as well as stimulated his interest in Kentucky birds, flowers, and woodland scenery. At about the age of ten he began attending a neighboring school, then at seventeen the Academy of Transylvania College, and in 1868 Transylvania College itself (known at the time as Kentucky University). Graduating with honors in 1872, he forthwith entered upon a varied career as schoolmaster and college professor. For a year he taught in the district school at Fort Springs, Ky., for another in the high school at Richmond, Mo.; next, in 1875, he established a private school at Lexington, Mo., but, abandoning this enterprise, he returned to his native state, and reëntered his Alma Mater to work for the M.A. degree, at the same time acting as tutor to the Whitney family near Lexington. In 1878 he accepted the principalship of Transylvania Academy, a position he held until offered the chair of Latin at Bethany College, West Virginia, in 1880. Here he was professor during the academic year 1881–82 and during most of 1882–83; then he resigned the post and returned to Lexington, once more to open a private school. This school was his last;

closing its doors two years later, he gave up teaching altogether. During these years in the schoolroom, however, he had been serving his true apprenticeship. Continuing at his studies, receiving the M.A. from Transylvania in 1877 and an honorary M.A. from Bethany in 1880, he had extended the scope of his reading, especially among French and British novelists. He had also become engrossed in scientific study, and was particularly interested in the theories of Darwin and Huxley. Most important of all, he had been practising the art of writing, so that when presently he ventured to address the editors, he was master of a deft and euphonious style.

His first significant contributions were to the *Continent, Harper's, Atlantic Monthly, Independent, Critic*—articles on Keats, Heine, Pepys, Hawthorne. *Harper's* for March 1884 contained his poem "Midwinter." "Too Much Momentum," his first story, appeared in *Harper's* for April 1885, and "Beneath the Veil," another poem, in the *Atlantic Monthly* for September 1885. By 1886 he was well on the way to establishing himself. Real success came in 1891, with the publication of his first book, *Flute and Violin, and Other Kentucky Tales and Romances,* distinctive short stories reprinted from the magazines. This was followed by *The Blue Grass Region of Kentucky, and Other Kentucky Articles* (1892), essays also reprinted from the magazines. Allen's reputation was now made. He left Kentucky, where except for occasional sojourns elsewhere he had lived since his birth, and in 1893 settled permanently in New York City. After this removal, his work became more pretentious, for like so many other successful American story writers, he turned novelist. In 1893 appeared *John Gray,* a slight novel subsequently expanded; in 1894 and 1895 respectively, *A Kentucky Cardinal* and *Aftermath,* idyllic accounts of two lovers in a Kentucky garden, and Allen's masterpieces; in 1896, *Summer in Arcady,* a handling of the sex problem, severely criticized in its day; in 1897, *The Choir Invisible,* an expansion of *John Gray,* and withal a strong piece of fiction, with historical facts as a basis; in 1900, *The Reign of Law,* reflecting the author's interest in science and theology; and in 1903, *The Mettle of the Pasture,* dealing with the question of the "double standard." From this point on, Allen's popularity declined somewhat, although he continued to be highly esteemed both at home and abroad. Critics were less consistently favorable, some of them seeing only confusion in *The Bride of the Mistletoe* (1909) and *The Doctor's Christmas Eve* (1910), parts of an ambitious trilogy never completed. His later volumes are small and comparatively unimportant: *The Heroine in Bronze* (1912), *The Last Christmas Tree* (1914), *The Sword of Youth* (1915), *A Cathedral Singer* (1916), *The Kentucky Warbler* (1918), *The Emblems of Fidelity* (1919), *The Alabaster Box* (1923). At the time of his death he was collecting his last magazine stories, published posthumously as *The Landmark* (1925); for this work he had intended an autobiographical preface and an introduction, dealing with the short story, but unfortunately these were left as brief fragments.

Allen

Allen's closing years were apparently uneventful. They were years of retirement, hard work, study, and devotion to an invalid sister. He was never married. In 1894, 1900, 1909, and perhaps other years, he was in Europe; but after settling in New York he returned but once to Kentucky—because, as he said, of the painfulness of noting the inevitable changes in city and district (unpublished letter to M. A. Cassidy). He was frequently asked to lecture upon his works, but whereas in earlier years he had sometimes done so, later he consistently refused. He appears to have been very sensitive, avoiding publicity and furnishing the outside world few facts about himself. Those who knew him personally, however, agree that as a man he was most engaging. His friend, George Folsom Granberry, writes that he was "most dignified, formal, adhering strictly to the highest ideals of personal conduct, extremely kind-hearted; to his intimate friends, all that was genial and considerate; inaccessible to 'lion-hunters,' and entirely devoid of any feeling for personal display" (manuscript note from G. F. Granberry). He is buried in Lexington.

Among American writers, Allen holds a secure place. The best stories in *Flute and Violin,* and *A Kentucky Cardinal, Aftermath,* and *The Choir Invisible,* written in pure, sonorous English, have permanent worth as expressions of the quieter, more spiritual experiences of the race. Without being narrow or provincial in outlook, Allen was at his best when utilizing the life and scenery of his native state; and more than any other author he made the Blue Grass Region of Kentucky known to both his countrymen and Europeans.

[No adequate biog. of Allen exists, although much valuable information is to be found in John Wilson Townsend's little volume, *James Lane Allen* (Louisville, 1927). Among numerous criticisms and sketches the best are those in the *Lib. of Southern Lit.,* I, 41–46 (by I. F. Marcosson); J. W. Townsend's *Kentucky in Am. Letters,* II, 4–10; J. B. Henneman's *Shakespearean and Other Papers,* pp. 115–67; *Book News,* XXIV, 753 (by E. C. Litsey); *Bookman,* I, 303 (by Nancy H. Banks). Passages in *The Blue Grass Region* are autobiographical, as are also the opening paragraphs of Allen's essay on H. M. Alden (*Bookman,* L, 330–36), remarks in several of his prefaces, and the introduction to the Hugh Thomson ed. of *A Kentucky Cardinal* and *Aftermath.* The facts here recorded have been verified, whenever possible, by ref-

erence to newspaper files, coll. records, material in the *Critic*, several unpublished letters of Allen, and information furnished by J. T. C. Noe, M. A. Cassidy, G. C. Knight, all of Lexington, and G. F. Granberry of New York, Allen's literary executor.]

J.H.N.

ALLEN, JEREMIAH MERVIN (May 18, 1833–Dec. 29, 1903), engineer and pioneer in steam-boiler insurance, was seventh in descent from Samuel Allen, an early colonist who settled in Cambridge, Mass., in 1632. Among the descendants of Samuel was Gen. Ethan Allen, and the Allen family intermarried with that branch of the Adams family which gave Samuel and John Adams to the Revolution. A taste for science and mechanics seems to have been common in the family. One of the Allens was an astronomer and issued *Allen's New England Almanac*. Another was perhaps the earliest in this country to engage in the manufacture of telescopes and microscopes; others were contractors and builders. Jeremiah M. Allen was born in Enfield, Conn., the son of Jeremiah V. Allen and Emily Pease. He remained at Enfield until twelve years of age, attending the primary schools of that place, and then studied for two years at Rev. Dr. Lawton's school at Longmeadow, Mass., after which he spent four years at Westfield Academy, in studies directed toward his becoming a civil engineer. Subsequently he taught school for four years, improving himself in the meantime with reading and study. In 1865 he became connected in Hartford, Conn., with the insurance business, thus making his first contact with the field of activity which was later to become his life-work. In the year 1857 there had been formed by a few young men in Hartford an association known as the "Polytechnic Club," with the purpose of discussing matters of science in relation to every-day life. Among other subjects discussed at meetings of this Club was that of steam-boiler explosions and their causes. As these discussions developed, the subject became one of special interest, and in the environment of Hartford, with its large insurance activities, these early beginnings led, in 1866, to the organization of a company "to inspect steam-boilers and to insure their owners against loss or damage arising from boiler explosion." With his deep interest in the subject itself, his taste for mechanical and engineering matters, and his previous experience in the insurance business, Allen was chosen to lead in this new enterprise, and from 1867 to his death was president and general manager of the company.

Allen's interests were wide, and in one way or another he was connected with most of the leading movements in his community. Among many other duties and activities he served as president of the Hartford board of trade, member and president of the board of trustees of the Hartford Theological Seminary and non-resident lecturer in the Sibley College of Mechanical Engineering, Cornell University. He was active in the work of the Y. M. C. A. and served a term as president. He was likewise a member of many societies and organizations, scientific, technical, and historical. His lasting contribution to industrial and social progress, however, is to be found in his work in the field of steam-boiler inspection and insurance. This was distinctly a pioneer movement in its recognition of both the social and economic value of human life and in the taking of measures calculated to reduce the hazards and minimize the loss both of life and property due to steam-boiler explosions. Through the system of boiler inspection which was inaugurated under Allen's direction, as well as through the promulgation of carefully framed rules and regulations for design and operation, the hazards of steam-boiler operation were enormously reduced. In 1856 Allen married Harriet S. Griswold of Ellington, Conn., by whom he had two children. He died at the age of seventy, active in his many interests to the last, loved and honored by associates and friends.

[Biog. sketches in *Trans. Am. Soc. Mech. Engineers*, XXV, 1121, and in the *Locomotive* (a technical periodical founded by Allen) for Jan. 1904; see also O. P. Allen, *The Allen Memorial*, 2nd ser. (1907); obituaries and editorials in *Hartford Courant*, Dec. 30, 1903, *Hartford Times*, Dec. 29, 1903.]

W.F.D.

ALLEN, JOEL ASAPH (July 19, 1838–Aug. 29, 1921), zoologist, author, came of early New England stock; on the side of his father, Joel Allen, he was a descendant in the seventh generation of Samuel Allen, who settled in Windsor, Conn., in 1640. His mother, Harriet (Trumbull) Allen, was descended from John Trumbull, great-grandfather of Gov. Jonathan Trumbull, who migrated from Newcastle-on-Tyne to Roxbury, Mass., in 1639. The father of Joel Asaph Allen was a farmer, carpenter, and house-builder in his early days, and young Allen was the only member of his family to show the traits of the born naturalist, which were favored by the early surroundings of his birthplace on the old farm not far from Springfield. Only during the winter session could he be spared from farm work to attend the nearest school, a mile distant. At the age of fourteen he made his first collection of birds, which he described, attempted to draw and color, and even named, totally in ignorance of written works which could have enlightened him. Soon afterward a new world opened to him in the discovery of the volumes of Wilson, Nuttall, and Audubon, which led to his ambition, at the age of twenty, to write a history of the "Birds of New England." During three years' attendance at

Wilbraham Academy, Springfield, he made natural-history collections of all kinds which he later (1861) reluctantly sold to the Academy in order to go to Harvard University to study under Louis Agassiz. In 1865 he accompanied his great teacher to Brazil. Growing talent led to his selection as Curator of Birds in the Harvard Museum of Comparative Zoology (1867–85). Actively exploring in Illinois, Indiana, Michigan, Florida, on the Great Plains, in the Rocky Mountain region, Wyoming, Colorado, Dakota, Missouri, he showed unprecedented ability as a collector. The great West was then in primitive condition, wild life of all kinds still abounding, and he observed the American bison in its prime. A distant journey to the Yellowstone River beyond Bismarck took him into a region infested with hostile Indians. With health impaired by long exposure, from 1876 to 1882 he devoted his time wholly to writing, producing his two monographs, *The American Bisons, Living and Extinct* (1876) and *History of North American Pinnipeds* (1880), the latter a volume of 800 pages.

The second stage of his life was the call to the American Museum of Natural History, New York, 1885, as head of the department of birds and mammals, which he administered with great distinction and success; during this time the collections grew apace and several of the most talented young naturalists of America came to work under him. From the year 1889 he was editor-in-chief of all the zoological publications of the Museum, and thirty-seven volumes of the *Bulletin* and twenty-two *Memoirs* passed through his hands. Honors from American and foreign scientific societies came thick and fast; he received the Humboldt scholarship from Harvard, the degree of Ph.D. from the University of Indiana, the Walker Grand Prize from the Boston Society of Natural History, the Linnæan Society (London) medal, and, above all, the veneration and love of his colleagues and associates. As a man his distinguishing characteristics were sincerity and consideration for others, but he was impatient of careless work and of generalizations based on insufficient data. His enthusiasm for research led him constantly to overtax his physical resources, yet in spite of a frail physique he was actively engaged in writing and research till within a few weeks of his death. He was twice married: in 1874 to Mary Manning Cleveland, who died in 1879; and in 1886 to Susan Augusta Taft.

[The chief sources of information are *Autobiog. Notes and a Bibliog. of the Scientific Pubs. of Joel Asaph Allen* (1916), written at the instance of the president of the Am. Museum of Natural Hist.; the tribute of his colleague and successor, Curator Frank M. Chapman, in the *Auk*, Jan. 1922, vol. XXXIX, no. 1, and the sketch in *Nat. Acad. of Sci. Memoirs*, vol. XXI, 1st memoir.]

H. F. O.

ALLEN, JOHN (Nov. 4, 1810–Mar. 8, 1892), dentist, the son of Nirum Allen, physician and farmer, of the family that had produced Gen. Ethan Allen in the preceding century, was born on his father's farm in Broome County, N. Y. While he was still a small boy, his family removed to Ohio. At nineteen he began the study of dentistry with Dr. James Harris of Chillicothe, Ohio. A year later he removed to Cincinnati and began to practise. He also studied medicine at the medical college of that city, receiving the degree of M.D. In 1853 or 1854 he removed to New York City, where he continued to practise dentistry until his death from general debility in 1892, at his home in Plainfield, N. J. He was twice married: in 1835 to Charlotte Dana, by whom he had one son, Charles D. Allen, who became his father's partner and successor in practise; in 1846, to Mrs. Cornelia Reeder, by whom he had one daughter.

Allen's chief service was in the invention of new denture. The highest type of artificial denture then known was formed of porcelain teeth, singly or in blocks, ground and fitted together and riveted or soldered to gold plates swaged to fit the mouth. There was no way to prevent the seeping of the oral secretions into the interstices between the teeth, and there was no adequate means of restoring the contour of the face where it had shrunken or fallen in because of absorption of the tissues. Allen first devised what he called "plumpers," forms adapted to fill out shrunken parts, to be attached to the denture. For this device he was awarded by the American Society of Dental Surgeons in 1845 a suitably engraved gold medal. Later he took out a patent (Dec. 16, 1845). Then began the major task, the devising of the denture itself. First he acquired a thorough knowledge of the making of porcelain teeth. He soon found that gold, the commonly accepted base for artificial dentures, melted at a temperature so low that no porcelain that would resist the oral fluids could be fused upon it. Platinum, only, afforded the necessary characteristics. Several years devoted to the working out of formulas for porcelain bodies and methods of procedure developed "continuous gum," then and still the highest type of artificial denture. The "gum" is represented by porcelain suitably colored, embracing the porcelain teeth, attaching them to the platinum plate, and continued to cover its lingual surface without seam or crevice. It allows any desired arrangement of the teeth, and is immune to the action of the oral fluids. A patent was

granted Dec. 23, 1851, and almost immediately there began the first patent litigation in which dentists were interested. Allen sued Dr. William M. Hunter, who had been working along the same lines, for infringement. After several years of acrimonious controversy, legal and literary, the case was decided in favor of Hunter. During his professional career of more than sixty years, Allen wrote many papers, covering almost the entire range of dental literature. He became a member of the first dental society in the world (American Society of Dental Surgeons) at its second annual session (1841); was active in the founding of the second dental college (Ohio College of Dental Surgery, 1845), in which he filled a professorship for several years; and helped to establish the New York College of Dentistry (1865).

[*Hist. of Dental Surgery* (1909), ed. by Chas. R. E. Koch; J. E. Dexter, *Hist. of Dental and Oral Science in America* (1876); *Dental Reg.*, Apr. 1874; *Internat. Dental Jour.*, Apr. 1892; *Dental Cosmos*, May 1892.]

F.L.H.

ALLEN, JOHN F. (1829–Oct. 2, 1900), engineer, inventor, was born in England. When twelve years old he was brought to this country, where he early interested himself in mechanical affairs. As a young man he was an engineer on the propeller *Curlew*, a freight boat running on Long Island Sound between New York and Providence, using a Corliss engine. There was a defect in this engine which caused it to race furiously when the Sound was rough; Allen invented a new valve motion which he hoped would remedy the defect, but found that he was unable to use it successfully on the Corliss engine. In 1860 he was recommended as an expert engineer by Thurston and Gardiner, engine builders of Providence, R. I., to Henry A. Burr, manufacturer of felt-hat bodies in New York City, who was having trouble with a pair of engines built by the Providence firm. Allen soon had the engines running satisfactorily. One day he accidentally met Charles T. Porter, who was the inventor of a form of engine governor, and Allen told him the details of the valve motion he had invented. Porter immediately saw its application to a high-speed engine and asked to be allowed to attempt its introduction. The result was the Allen engine, later improved and known as the Porter-Allen engine, a pioneer in steam-engines of the so-called high-speed type. It made possible high rotative speeds and good economy, and reduced the weight and size of the engine. In order to help finance the Porter-Allen engine-building shops Allen mortgaged his home in Tremont, N. Y. Within a few years he had invented an inclined tube vertical water-tube boiler which was also being successfully introduced. But he seemed incapable of retaining much interest in his inventions after they were successfully placed on the market, so he sold out his stock in the Porter-Allen Company in the early seventies and built a shop of his own at Mott Haven. Here he originated an important system of pneumatic riveting in its two methods, by percussion and by pressure, and began the manufacture of air compressors and pneumatic riveters. At the time of his death he was doing a small business in this kind of manufacturing in New York City.

[*Trans. Am. Soc. Mechanical Engineers*, 1901, XXII, 1149; *Engineering News*, 1900, XLIV, 396; *Am. Machinist*, 1900, XXIII, 46; C. T. Porter, *Engineering Reminiscences* (1908).]

E.Y.

ALLEN, JOHN JAMES (Sept. 25, 1797–Sept. 18, 1871), jurist, was the grandson of Robert Allan, who settled at Carlisle, Pa., in 1757, and the son of James and Jean (Steele) Allen. His father, who adopted the name "Allen," practised law in the Shenandoah Valley and became judge of the 17th Virginia judicial district. John James Allen was born in Woodstock, Shenandoah County, Va., and received his education at Washington College, Va., and Dickinson College, Pa. He then read law with his father, and was admitted as an attorney in 1818. He at first opened an office at Campbell Court House, Va., but in 1819 removed to Clarksburg, where he practised for seventeen years. He early evinced an active interest in politics and in 1827 was elected to the state Senate, serving for three years. In his law business he had had experience of the insecurity of the title to land in Trans-Alleghany Virginia, arising from the looseness with which the regulations governing settlers had been drafted and administered since 1777, and he prepared and procured the passage through the legislature of a bill for the purpose of quieting titles in that district which was of inestimable benefit to the frontier settlers. In 1833 he was elected a representative in the Twenty-third Congress, and served for two years, but failed of reëlection. In 1834 he had been appointed state attorney for the counties of Harrison, Lewis, and Preston, and in 1836 the acting governor of Virginia, Wyndham Robertson, appointed him judge of the 17th judicial district, the position which his father had previously held. He was comparatively unknown to the people of the district, and some discontent was voiced at the appointment, but his dignity and courtesy on the bench and the facility with which he conducted the proceedings of the court soon attracted the confidence of the public and the profession. Removing to Botetourt, the court seat, he resided

there during the remainder of his life. In 1840 he was nominated for the United States Senate but no election took place, no candidate having the necessary votes. Immediately afterward, a vacancy occurred on the court of appeals and he was elected thereto without opposition, Dec. 12, 1840. When the court was reorganized in compliance with the reformed constitution of 1851, he became its president, a rank equivalent to that of chief justice. Though not of any pronounced learning and inclined to be reserved in manner, he possessed great intellectual force and on the bench was always competent, eminently painstaking, and firmly maintained the best traditions of the judiciary. He resigned in April 1865, being then in his sixty-eighth year, having nearly completed thirty years' judicial service of which twenty-five had been spent on the appellate court bench. He was a strong supporter of the Southern cause, and prepared a brilliant and trenchant defense of the attitude of Virginia, which was adopted as a preamble to a resolution, advocating secession, passed at a Botetourt meeting, Dec. 10, 1860. The preamble and resolution were published in *Southern Historical Society Papers*, I, 13, January 1876. He died at Botetourt. In 1824 he had married a near relative of "Stonewall" Jackson. His judicial decisions are found in *11, 12 Leigh, 1, 2 Robinson*, and *1–16 Grattan*.

[An adequate sketch of his career appeared in an article by S. S. P. Patterson, "The Supreme Court of Appeals of Va.," in the *Green Bag*, V, 310, 362; see also Henry Hammond, *Hist. of Harrison County, West Va.* (1909); J. W. Wayland, *A Hist. of Shenandoah County, Va.* (1927).]

H. W. H. K.

ALLEN, JOSEPH HENRY (Aug. 21, 1820–Mar. 20, 1898), Unitarian clergyman, author, editor, was born in Northboro, Mass. His father, Joseph Allen, was minister of the First Church in Northboro for fifty-six years; his mother was a daughter of that Rev. Henry Ware whose appointment as Hollis Professor of Divinity in Harvard created consternation among the stricter orthodox brethren of the day. Joseph Henry was prepared for college in the noted school which his father established and for many years maintained in the Northboro parsonage. He graduated from Harvard at the age of twenty, ranking third in his class, and without delay entered upon the course in divinity, graduating in 1843. In October of that year he was ordained minister of the First Congregational Society of Jamaica Plain. On May 22, 1845, he married Anna Minot Weld, who bore him three sons and three daughters. In 1847 he took charge of the Unitarian church in Washington, D. C., and in 1850 became minister of the church in Bangor, Me. He seems not to have possessed those features of temperament which make the so-called successful preacher. Meditatively rather than socially inclined, he found it difficult to adjust himself to the peculiar social demands of a parish. He was of too judicial and discerning a temperament to become an aggressive advocate of partisan measures, and he lacked the positive manner of address expected from the pulpit. But at no time did he ever leave his hearers in doubt as to where he stood on questions of importance. While it was contrary to his nature to become a member of anti-slavery organizations, he spoke unreservedly and plainly for abolition at a time when it would have been profitable to have been, at least, non-committal. His scholarly and critical temper and his preference for the study rather than the parlor probably made it inevitable that he should drift out of the active ministry.

In 1857 he took up the calling of teacher in Jamaica Plain, Northboro, and West Newton. During this period (1857–66) he became active in the field of Unitarian periodical literature in various editorial capacities. He was associate editor of the *Christian Examiner*, 1863–65, to which he had begun to contribute as early as 1844. In 1878 he was appointed, on recommendation of Rev. F. H. Hedge, lecturer on ecclesiastical history in Harvard, a position he held for four years. From 1887 to 1891 he was editor of the *Unitarian Review*. During these years he did not entirely sever his connection with the ministry, and was ready to respond to frequent calls to supply pastorless pulpits. Though refusing to accept any permanent settlement, he ministered to churches in Ann Arbor, Mich., 1877–78, Ithaca, N.Y., 1882–83, and San Diego, Cal., 1884. He died in Cambridge, Mass., on Mar. 20, 1898, survived by his wife and five of his six children.

Allen is most widely known for his Latin manuals. He prepared a *Latin Primer* (1870) and, in association with his brother W. F. Allen[*q.v.*], *A Latin Reader* (1869); a *Manual Latin Grammar* (1868), and others. In collaboration with Prof. J. B. Greenough he prepared that series of Latin manuals which made his name familiar to every high school scholar of the generations just past. His contributions to distinctively Unitarian literature, apart from his writings in Unitarian periodicals, include: *Our Liberal Movement in Theology* (1882); *Christian History in Its Three Great Periods* (1883); *Historical Sketch of the Unitarian Movement* (1894).

[The chief printed sources for the life of Joseph Henry Allen are an article by Rev. John W. Chadwick, *N. Y. Evening Post*, Mar. 21, 1898; an article by Rev. Francis Tiffany, *Christian Register; Pub. Colonial Soc. Mass.* (1902), V, 310–14.]

C. G.

ALLEN, LEWIS FALLEY (Jan. 1, 1800–May 2, 1890), stock breeder, farm writer, was born in Westfield, Mass., the son of Samuel and Ruth (Falley) Allen and brother of Anthony Benezet Allen [*q.v.*] and Richard L. Allen [*q.v.*]. In 1825 he married his first cousin, Margaret Cleveland, daughter of William and Margaret (Falley) Cleveland and aunt of President Grover Cleveland. After trying his fortune in New York City, Norwich, Conn., and Sandusky, Ohio, he moved to Buffalo, N. Y., in 1830, becoming a permanent resident of that city from 1836 to his death. His acquaintances describe him as a strong, frank, and positive character, of keen wit and generous sentiment. Among his intimate friends he counted Daniel Webster, Gen. Winfield Scott, and Henry Clay, all of whom were frequent guests at his home. His chief life-work was as a breeder and improver of cattle. He founded and for forty years was the editor of the *American Shorthorn Herdbook*. With his brother, A. B. Allen, he was connected with the *American Agriculturist* from its origin. A voluminous writer, contributing frequently to the *Genesee Farmer, Country Gentleman, American Farmer,* and other journals, he still found time to write *Rural Architecture* (1852), *American Cattle* (1868), and *History of the Shorthorn Cattle* (1872), besides serving in the New York legislature and as president of the New York State Agricultural Society. His 600-acre farm and the neighboring settlements on Grand Island in the Niagara River became the center not only of breeding operations with Shorthorn and Devon cattle and Southdown sheep, but also of experiments in coöperative human societies, some of the results of these studies being recorded in his paper on the "Founding of the City of Ararat" (*Buffalo Historical Society Publications,* I, 305–28). While in the legislature of his state, he was active in furthering the interests of agriculture and particularly in the construction and maintenance of canals as a means of transporting farm products to market. Even these many-sided activities failed to absorb all of his time and strength, for he was constantly busy with the civic affairs of Buffalo, with which his interests became more and more closely identified during his long participation in its history. At the time of his death he was engaged in a controversy with an Ohio admirer of Shorthorns who had taken Allen to task for proving false to his first love for Shorthorns and bestowing too much praise on Guernseys. But he stoutly maintained that, though fourscore and nine years were creeping upon him, he was still able to judge of merit in cattle and that the Guernseys were a coming milk breed. And he was still working on agricultural architecture, plans for farm buildings and for landscaping the grounds about farm homesteads, the treatment of clay land meadows, the place of dogs and bees on farms, and the construction of farm fences.

[Long and very full obituary in *Buffalo Express,* May 3, 1890; editorial comment and portrait in same journal, May 4, 1890; references in J. N. Larned, *Hist. of Buffalo* (1911).]

E.V.W.

ALLEN, NATHAN (Apr. 25, 1813–Jan. 1, 1889), physician, was born in Princeton, Mass., the son of Moses Allen by his wife, Mehitable Oliver, of Barre, Mass., and brother of David Oliver Allen [*q.v.*]. A graduate of Amherst College in 1836, Allen later (1841) received the degree of M.D. from the University of Pennsylvania Medical College, after which he returned to Lowell, Mass., where he practised medicine until his death. He was for many years an active member of the staff of St. John's Hospital in that city. After he had come into prominence through his writings, he was made a member of the state board of charities, and in 1872 attended as an American delegate the International Congress on Prison Reform. He was twice married: on Sept. 24, 1841, to Sarah H. Spaulding of Wakefield, Mass., who died in April 1856; and on May 20, 1857, to Annie A. Waters of Salem, Mass.

While a medical student in Philadelphia, Allen improved his financial circumstances by association with the well-known press of Adam Waldie as proof-reader, correspondent, and "hack" writer. This post brought him into contact with important men of his time—Horace Mann, Charles Caldwell, George Combe—and it led to his being appointed editor of the newly established *American Phrenological Journal and Miscellany* at the early age of twenty-six (1839). Phrenology—being then still a sister study to "mental philosophy"—had attracted to its pursuit certain of the best intellects of that period. For three years Allen (still a medical undergraduate) contributed extensively to this journal in letters, editorial comments, and numerous book reviews. His contributions, which reveal familiarity with general literature, ancient and modern, were always well written, but one observes a marked improvement in his literary style during the three years of his editorship. Apart from training his pen, which in later life was ever scholarly and prolific, this experience as an editor marked the beginning of Allen's active interest in problems of human behavior and of insanity. His graduation thesis, *An Essay on the Connection of Mental Philosophy with Medicine,* which was published by Waldie in 1841 (32 pp.), was a well-

argued plea for the consideration of the influence of mental states upon bodily ailments, and was apparently well received. Following the publication of this thesis, Allen severed his connection with the *Phrenological Journal.* He will be remembered chiefly for two important contributions: *The Physiological Laws of Human Increase* (Philadelphia, 1868 and 1870; also *Quarterly Journal of Psychology and Medicine,* N.Y., 1868); *Changes in the New England Population* (Lowell, 1877; also *Popular Science Monthly,* vol. XXIII, 1883). In the former he sought to establish a "great general law of propagation applicable to all organic life" by demonstrating that the over-activity of any organ tends to the impairment of other organs and to the diminishment of fertility. In the latter, which aroused wider public interest, he endeavored to prove that the lowering birth-rate of native New England stock (as contrasted with immigrants) was due to impaired physical condition. Other important works were: *The Intermarriage of Relations* (1869), *Physical Degeneracy* (1870), and *The Treatment of the Insane* (1876).

[*New Eng. Medic. Mo.,* III, 215–19 (portr.); W. L. Burrage in *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.,* 1889, vol. CXX; W. B. Atkinson, *Physicians and Surgeons of the U.S.* (1878); R. F. Stone, *Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons* (1894); W. L. Montague, *Biogs. of Recent Alumni of Amherst 1821–1871* (1883). An extensive though not wholly complete list of Allen's works is to be found in the Index Cat. Lib. Surgeon General's Office, vols. I of series 1 and 2.]

J. F. F.

ALLEN, NATHAN H. (Apr. 14, 1848–May 9, 1925), musician and composer, was born at Marion, Mass., the son of Henry M. Allen, a captain of packet-ships between New York and Liverpool, and Matilda E. Clark, whose ancestry ran back to Thomas Clark of Plymouth and Henry Butler Bridgman of the vicinity of Limerick, Ireland. His middle name was either 'Hale' or 'Henry,' as it was written in both ways without protest on his part. His regular signature was 'N. H. Allen' simply. He attended public schools in Providence and for a time studied at Phillips Andover Academy. His musical aptitude was early displayed and he aspired to become a singer. An illness affected his voice, however, and he then turned to the organ, taking lessons for two years in Providence. In 1867 he went abroad and had three years at Berlin under the famous organist Haupt, and the equally famous Grell, the conductor of the Singakademie. Returning in 1870, he became organist at the First Unitarian Church in New Bedford, Mass. In 1877 he married Elizabeth Macy, a descendant of an early settler in Nantucket. In 1878 he removed to Hartford, Conn., as organist at the Park Congregational Church and from 1880 at community services at South Manchester, Conn. From 1883 till 1906 he held his most distinguished post as organist of the First or Center Church in Hartford. For some years thereafter he was at Piedmont Church in Worcester, Mass., about 1915 returning to live at Hartford. For at least fifty years he was steadily occupied in teaching piano, organ, singing and theory, besides other activities noted below.

He was an expert and effective player, and was invited to serve as recitalist at the Buffalo, St. Louis, and San Francisco Expositions. Among his many able organ pupils were R. P. Paine of Norfolk, Conn., and W. C. Hammond of Holyoke, Mass. For a time he conducted the Musurgia Club of Hartford, a select chorus of trained voices which he organized. He was greatly interested in the choral projects of Carl Stoeckel at Norfolk, acting often as conductor for the Litchfield County Festival Chorus. He was an original member of the New York Manuscript Society, a founder of the American Guild of Organists, and for years taught theory at Mount Holyoke College, as well as later at the Hartt School in Hartford. He was a facile and even brilliant writer, contributing valuable critical and historical articles to papers and magazines, and in 1888 (with Leonard Woolsey Bacon) he published *The Hymns of Martin Luther,* in which he dealt with the musical side of the subject. His interest in colonial history led him for years to elaborate a *History of Music in a New England State, 1630–1900,* pertaining chiefly to Connecticut, the manuscript being left at his death to the Watkinson Library in Hartford. Of his compositions, vocal and instrumental, numbering perhaps 150, may be mentioned the cantatas *The Apotheosis of St. Dorothy* (1891) and *The New-Born King* (1904), a *Fantasie-Impromptu* and *Winter Sketches* for piano, a *Pièce Symphonique,* a *Symphonic Fantasia* and many shorter works for organ, *In Memoriam* for organ, piano, and strings, etc., some fifty published anthems, a set of *Forty Liturgical Responses* (1915), and many songs. His breadth and delicacy of conception were everywhere combined with notable technical skill.

[*Internatl. Who's Who in Music* (1918); *Musical Courier,* Dec. 7, 1898; *Commemorative Biog. Rec. of Hartford Co., Conn.* (1901); *Hartford Daily Times,* May 11, 1925; *Hartford Courant,* May 10, 11, 1925; *N.Y. Times,* May 11, 1925; additional information from Mr. Frank B. Gay.]

W. S. P.

ALLEN, PAUL (Feb. 15, 1775–Aug. 18, 1826), editor, poet, was born in Providence, R.I., the son of Paul and Polly (Cooke) Allen. His mother was

a daughter of Nicholas Cooke, governor of the state from 1775 to 1778. He graduated from Rhode Island College (Brown University) in the class of 1793. The subsequent course of his career cannot be traced in detail. At college he had gained some reputation as an orator, and on Nov. 22, 1792, had delivered an oration in the chapel on the death of a classmate, Roger Williams Howell, which at the request of the students was published. At least six other published orations delivered in Providence or vicinity between 1796 and 1806 are in existence. He studied for the bar, but no one probably was ever more unfitted to practise law than was he, for he was full of simplicity, credulous as a child, and irresolute in the extreme. Nothing was so easy for him as writing; accordingly that became his only occupation. In 1801 he published *Original Poems, Serious and Entertaining,* a collection of rather graceful verse, obviously patterned after English models. He removed to Philadelphia and was a contributor to the *United States Gazette,* and to the *Port Folio,* conducted by Joseph Dennie and Nicholas Biddle. In behalf of the latter he supervised the printing of the *History of the Expedition, under the Command of Captains Lewis and Clark,* which appeared in 1814. The last twelve years of his life were spent in Baltimore. Here he was a contributor to the *Portico.* John Neal [*q.v.*] wrote of him: "He is rather below the middle size—say about five feet six—dark eyes, dark hair—face deeply marked, a plain looking, nay, an ordinary looking man . . . with a character of sluggishness, slovenly inaptitude, and moroseness, all about him. Yet there is not a better natured fellow on the earth—bating a momentary petulance here and there with a far off politician in the way of trade, or a little fermentation at home, when he has been pestered by popinjays a little too long; nor a man that will write more, with less substantial information, on any subject, in the same time. He is near sighted; reads with his nose on the paper—and such reading! Lord—I can imagine nothing more dismal than the reading of his own poetry by Paul Allen. It is a continual whine—nasal and barbarous, beyond all conception." For a time he edited the *Federal Republican and Baltimore Telegraph,* but disagreed with his associates and left. There followed, according to Duyckinck (*Cyclopedia of American Literature,* 1855, I, 643), a period of poverty when he was imprisoned for a debt of thirty dollars. His friends started the *Journal of the Times* to give him an editorial position. This was succeeded in 1818 by the *Morning Chronicle,* which he edited till 1824, when he assumed management of the *Saturday Evening Herald.* He also published the *Morning Post.* He projected a *History of the American Revolution,* the most of which, owing to his irresponsibleness, was written by his friends Neal and Watkins. This appeared in 1819. In 1821, he published *Noah,* in five cantos. "John Neal," says Duyckinck, "did his friend another equally good service by reducing his poem of *Noah,* it having been submitted to his revision, to one-fifth its original dimensions."

Biog. and Hist. Dict. (2nd ed. 1832); John Neal, *Ran-Biog. and Hist. Dict.*(2nd ed. 1832); John Neal, *Randolph* (1823), I, 135–37; II, 181, *227*; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Baltimore City and County* (1881); *Vital Record of R. I.,* ed. by Jas. N. Arnold, ser. 1, vol. II (1892); *Baltimore Am. and Commercial Daily Advertiser,* Aug. *21,* 1826.]

H. E. S.

ALLEN, PHILIP (Sept. 1, 1785–Dec. 16, 1865), manufacturer, governor of Rhode Island, senator, was born in Providence, R. I., the son of Capt. Zachariah Allen, a West India trader and dealer, and Nancy (Crawford) Allen. He was educated at Taunton Academy, at the celebrated school of Robert Rogers in Newport, and at the Latin School under Jeremiah Chaplin, afterward president of Waterville College. In 1799 he entered Rhode Island College (later Brown University), from which he was graduated in 1803, at the age of eighteen. His father having died in 1801, he took over the business. His ability was soon recognized by his fellows and within three years of his graduation from college he was elected to the directorate of the Providence Insurance Company. He had a decided bent for things mechanical. The first steam-engine ever built in Providence was constructed by him, on the improved Watt and Boulton plan, featuring detachable puppet-valves. Having in 1812 begun to engage in the manufacture of cotton cloth, he obtained the best machinery available and was the first manufacturer to import the improved bobbin and fly frames that later came into general use, as well as the lapping machine for cotton cards. In 1831 he began printing calicoes, and the Allen calicoes soon became widely known. He was married, in January 1814, to Phœbe Aborn, by whom he had eleven children.

His career in public life began in 1819 when he was elected to the General Assembly from Providence, which he continued to represent until 1821. In 1827, Seth Wheaton, president of the Rhode Island branch of the United States Bank and disbursing agent of Revolutionary pensions, asked that Allen be appointed as his successor. This position Allen held until the second United States Bank wound up its affairs in 1836. He did not again hold public office until 1851. On Feb. 20 of that year he was nominated for governor by the Democratic State Convention and

in the election of Apr. 2 he defeated Josiah Chapin, the Whig candidate, by a majority of 887. He was twice renominated by the Democrats and won the elections of Apr. 7, 1852, and Apr. 6, 1853, by substantial majorities. The most important feature of his administration was his fight with Thomas W. Dorr for the control of the Democratic party in Rhode Island. At the time of the Dorr Rebellion (1842), Allen had been an "Algerine," or Law and Order man, and far from sympathizing with Dorr he had purchased arms and raised a company known as the Rhode Island Carbineers for the defense of the state. Now the Democrats had returned to power and Dorr sought to have the legislature pass an act restoring him to civil and political privileges. Dorr himself prepared a bill for this purpose that reversed and annulled the decision of the supreme court of Rhode Island of June 25, 1844, which had sentenced Dorr to imprisonment. Allen refused what Dorr asked as a matter of right and the bill as finally passed placed the restoration on the ground of clemency (*Providence Daily Journal,* May 10, 1851). Thus Allen obtained complete control of his party in Rhode Island. As the *Providence Daily Journal* (Jan. 13, 1853), leading organ of the Whig party in Rhode Island, remarked: ". . . he [Allen] holds the Democratic party in his pocket: he *owns* it. . . . When, on the first of January, he makes up the inventory of his large estate, he puts down in the list: 'Item: one Democratic party' . . ."

On May 4, 1853, the two houses of the General Assembly met in Grand Committee and elected Allen to the seat in the Senate that had been vacant for some months, during which the Democratic state Senate had refused to meet the Whig House in Grand Committee. During his first four years in the Senate Allen's activities were confined to local matters. He was chairman of the Committee on Agriculture and served on the committees on Commerce and Naval Affairs. On Mar. 3, 1854, when the Senate voted on the Kansas-Nebraska Bill, he was absent, having been called home by the illness of his son, but his colleague, Senator James, announced that, if present, Senator Allen would vote against the bill (*Congressional Globe,* 33 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 532). In 1857, however, Allen became one of the leaders of his party in the Senate, and, although he was unusually free from party dictation, this perhaps influenced his attitude, so that on May 3, 1858, he voted to admit Kansas into the Union under the Lecompton (slave) Constitution (*Congressional Globe,* 35 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 1899). In 1859 he retired to private life. His independence is shown by his numerous clashes with his party.

Allen

In 1836 he was vigorously opposed to Jackson on the removal of the deposits from the United States Bank. In 1848 he supported Martin Van Buren for the presidency and gave his money and influence in aid of the Free-Soilers. Finally, Allen was always a Tariff Democrat.

[James N. Arnold, *Vital Records of Rhode Island, 1636–1850,* vols. XIII (1903), p. 112, XIV (1905), p. 465, XV (1906), p. 469, XVII (1908), p. 33; *Providence Daily Jour.,* Dec. 18, 1865; *Biog. Cong. Dir. 1774–1911* (1913), p. 436; Thomas W. Bicknell, *History of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations,* vol. III (1920), p. 1146; Arthur M. Mowry, *The Dorr War* (1901), pp. 257–58.]

F. E. R.

ALLEN, RICHARD (Feb. 14, 1760–Mar. 26, 1831), founder and first bishop of the African Methodist Episcopal Church, was born a slave in Philadelphia, and at an early age was sold to a farmer near Dover, Del. Reaching manhood at the time of the increasing toleration and religious liberty granted such sects as the Quakers, Presbyterians, Methodists, and Baptists, he early manifested interest in religion. He was converted under the influence of the Methodists and immediately became a religious worker. Impressed with his deep piety, his master permitted Allen to conduct religious services in his home, was himself converted at one of the meetings, and made it possible for Allen and his family to obtain their freedom. Allen educated himself by private study. While working at such occupations as wood-cutting and hauling he embraced every opportunity for preaching to both whites and blacks. He traveled through various parts of Delaware, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Maryland; and at the meeting of the first general conference of the Methodist Church in Baltimore, in 1784, was accepted by that hierarchy as a minister of promise. He then traveled with Richard Watcoat and Bishop Asbury, who gave him appointments to preach. Coming to Philadelphia in 1786, he was asked to preach occasionally at the St. George Methodist Church. He began also to conduct prayer-meetings among his own people. He immediately thought of making a special appeal to the negroes by establishing for them a separate place of worship, but both the whites and the blacks objected. When, however, the forceful preaching of Allen attracted to the church a large number of negroes, the white members objected to their presence, pulled them from their knees one Sunday when in an attitude of prayer, and ordered them to the gallery. Rather than submit to the insult, the negroes withdrew and established in 1787 an independent organization known as the "Free African Society." Out of this body some few went with Absalom Jones to establish the African Protestant Episcopal

Church, but Richard Allen influenced the majority to organize an independent Methodist church. The church thus founded was dedicated by Bishop Asbury in 1794. Allen was ordained deacon in 1799, and elder in 1816. In the meantime, other negro churches, separated from the whites in the same way in New York, New Jersey, Delaware, and Maryland, offered the opportunity for national organization. This was effected by sixteen congregations in 1816, and Allen was chosen bishop. Thus began the African Methodist Episcopal Church, which is one of the strongest organizations ever effected by negroes. Allen labored incessantly for the promotion of this cause until he died in 1831. By that time he had finally succeeded in impressing the public and had won national standing for his denomination. It was not allowed to expand in the South after the supposed connection of certain of its members with the Denmark Vesey plot in Charleston, S. C., in 1822; but the work had found its way into the Northern states east of the Mississippi River. In 1836, five years after Allen's death, the churches numbered eighty-six. There were four conferences, two bishops, and twenty-seven ministers. These served 7,594 members, and controlled $125,000 worth of property. Allen had made the Church not only an agency for religious uplift; but, forced into the anti-slavery movement and the Underground Railroad effort, the institution had become a factor in the battle for freedom.

[*The Life, Experience, and Gospel Labors of the Rt. Rev. Richard Allen, Written by Himself* (1793, repub. 1888); Absalom Jones and Rich. Allen, *Narr. of the Proceedings of the Black People, during the Late Awful Calamity in Phila. in the year 1793* (1794); sketch in R. R. Wright's *Centennial Encyc. of the African M. E. Ch.* (1916), pp. 5–6; a treatment of Allen's contribution to the development of the Church in C. G. Woodson, *Hist. of the Negro Ch.* (1921) in the chapter entitled "The Independent Ch. Movement," pp. 71–99.]

C. G. W.

ALLEN, RICHARD LAMB (Oct. 20, 1803–Sept. 22, 1869), agriculturist, editor, and manufacturer, was born in Westfield, Mass., being a son of Samuel Allen and Ruth (Falley) Allen and a grandson of Capt. Richard Falley, a soldier in the colonial war against Canada and in the American Revolution. He was educated at the Academy at Westfield, Mass. He first engaged in mercantile business in New York City and then in literary pursuits and the study of law at Baltimore, Md. Ill health compelled him to take up a more active life in 1832. He acquired possession of a large tract of woodland on the Niagara River, near Buffalo, N. Y., where he cleared land, cultivated crops, and bred various kinds of improved livestock. In later years he was a larger owner of real estate at Manitowoc, Wis. He was married on Dec. 30, 1834 to Sally O. Lyman of Northampton, Mass. In April 1842 with his older brother, Anthony B. Allen [*q.v.*], he founded the *American Agriculturist* in New York City. At the end of that year he retired from the editorship but was a frequent contributor and in 1849 again became a co-editor, in which capacity he continued until this journal was sold to Orange Judd in 1856. The great demand for improved agricultural implements, which was created in part by the wide circulation of this paper, led the two brothers to create the firm of A. B. Allen & Co. and open on Jan. 1, 1847, an agricultural-implement warehouse in Water St., New York. Soon afterward extensive agricultural-implement works were added in Brooklyn. Success attended these ventures and the business was afterward carried on by R. H. Allen, a son of R. L. Allen.

In 1846 Richard Allen published *A Brief Compend of American Agriculture.* This book of 436 pages dealt broadly with plant and animal production, farm equipment, and animal diseases. It was dedicated "to the young farmers of the United States." The author thought of it as having a definite educational mission. In the introduction he showed his great interest in agricultural education by declaring that it was "the duty of each of the largest States of the Union, liberally to endow and organize an Agricultural College," connected with which should be laboratories and farms for experimental investigations. The following year that portion of the *Compend* which dealt with animals was revised and made into a separate book, entitled *Domestic Animals.* This contained a "History and description of the horse, mule, cattle, sheep, swine, poultry and farm dogs, with directions for their management, breeding, crossing, rearing, feeding and preparation for a profitable market, also their diseases and remedies, together with full directions for the management of the dairy." In 1849 a revised and illustrated edition of that part of the *Compend* relating to plant production and farm equipment was issued as *The American Farm Book.* The entire *Compend* was reissued in 1869 as the *New American Farm Book* and, revised by the author's brother Lewis F. Allen [*q.v.*], was again republished in 1883.

Richard L. Allen had a love of history, belles-lettres, science, and art. He traveled extensively in the United States and in Europe for the year and a half before his death, which occurred at Stockholm, Sweden. The obituary notice in the *American Agriculturist* of January 1870 states that he was "of an uncommonly amiable disposition, with pleasing, winning manners—erect and

noble in person, active and youthful for his years." He was an elder in the Presbyterian Church and was liberal in his support of religion and education.

[*Last Letters of Rich. L. Allen* (1871); S. H. Perry, *Hist. of the City of Buffalo and Erie County* (1884), I, 701.] A. C. T.

ALLEN, ROBERT (July 1812–Aug. 5, 1886), Union soldier, was born in Ohio. He graduated from West Point in 1836, was commissioned in the 2nd Artillery, and served with it in the Florida War and elsewhere for some years. In 1846, he accepted appointment as captain and assistant quartermaster. In the Mexican War he was at first on duty as a quartermaster with Gen. Taylor's army. He was transferred to Gen. Scott's in time to be present at the siege of Vera Cruz, and served with it until after the capture of the City of Mexico. From then until the Civil War his service was chiefly on the Pacific coast, as treasurer of the military government of California and as chief quartermaster of the military command. In 1861 he was promoted major and sent to St. Louis as chief quartermaster of the department. In the early days of any war of the United States, habitually unprepared as it is, the task of the quartermaster's department is a herculean one. Allen's situation would have been difficult at best, but it was rendered doubly so by the aberrations of Gen. Frémont, the department commander, whose administration took no account of law, regulations, or the state of the treasury. Allen had no choice but to carry out the orders of his chief, but wrote in October, "If the reckless expenditures in this department are not checked by a stronger arm than mine, the Quartermaster's Department will be wrecked in Missouri alone" (*Official Records,* ser. I, vol. III, p. 549). Nevertheless, he survived the ordeal, brought order out of chaos, and continued throughout the war to act as the chief quartermaster for the armies in the west. He was given temporary rank as colonel in 1862, and appointed brigadier-general of volunteers, May 23, 1863. With headquarters first at St. Louis and later at Louisville, he provided stores and transportation for the operations against Donelson and Corinth, for the Vicksburg and Atlanta campaigns, and for many other expeditions from eastern Tennessee westward to New Mexico. His task was an immense one, efficiently performed. Gen. Meigs said of him that "no more faithful or more able officer is in the service of the Government" (*Ibid.,* ser. III, vol. IV, p. 897). He became colonel in the regular army in 1866, and until his retirement from active service in 1878 was stationed in Washington and San Francisco. He then traveled extensively in Asia and Europe. He died in Geneva.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), I, 651–53; *Bull. Ass. Grads. Mil. Acad.*, 1887, pp. 16–21.] T. M. S.

ALLEN, THOMAS (Aug. 29, 1813–Apr. 8, 1882), railroad builder, congressman, the son of Jonathan and Eunice (Larned) Allen, was born at Pittsfield, Mass. His father was a member of both houses of the Massachusetts legislature; through his grandmother he was a descendant of William Bradford. Graduating from Union College in 1832, he studied law in an office in New York City, supporting himself by writing for the *Family Magazine,* and was admitted to the bar in 1835. But he never practised law actively. In 1837 he started at Washington the *Madisonian,* an anti-Van Buren Democratic paper, which supported Harrison in 1840. The *Madisonian* was to be the organ of the new administration, but on Harrison's death Allen sold the paper and in 1842 removed to St. Louis. His real career began in 1848–49, when he was a prime mover in the National Railroad Convention at St. Louis, writing the preliminary publicity, the memorial to Congress, and the address to the public. He took a leading part in securing the charter of the Pacific Railroad and in 1850 was elected to the state Senate. Here he was largely responsible for the initiation of the policy of state loans to the railroads, securing a loan of two million dollars for the Pacific road; his elaborate report of 1852 was later very closely followed and was the basis of the earlier railroad system of the state. In 1854 he resigned the presidency of the Pacific Railroad, which he had held since 1851, and withdrew from politics. In 1858 he organized the banking-house of Allen, Copp & Nisbet, prominent in the early railroad financing in Missouri and Illinois. When at the close of the war the bankrupt, state-aided railroads were reorganized, Allen purchased the Iron Mountain, then eighty-six miles in length, and by further purchases and the construction of a hundred miles a year built up by 1874 the St. Louis, Iron Mountain & Southern system of 686 miles. He retained control of it until he sold out to Jay Gould in 1881. He was also interested in the St. Louis street-railway developments. Save for an unsuccessful campaign for Congress in 1862 on the Union ticket, he had taken no active part in politics for many years, but in 1880 he was elected to Congress on the Democratic ticket. He died in Washington on Apr. 8, 1882.

Allen was a man of definite objectives, strict standards of personal conduct, great force and determination. His strong sense of community interests and obligations was evidenced by his or-

ganization of the Missouri Horticultural Society, the endowment of the Allen Professorship of Mining and Metallurgy at Washington University, and the gift of a free library and building to his native town. He built the Missouri Building at the Centennial Exposition at his own expense when state funds were not available. He was married in 1842 to Ann Russell, daughter of William Russell of St. Louis.

[L. U. Reavis, *St. Louis, the Future Great City of the World* (1875), pp. 261–69, portr.; Richard Edwards and M. Hopewell, *Edwards's Great West* (1860), pp. 437–39; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of St. Louis City and County* (1883), pp. 638–41, portr.; J. L. Jenkins, *Sermon Preached at the Funeral of Hon. Thomas Allen in the First Church, Pittsfield, Mass., Apr. 11, 1882*; "Memorial Address on the Life and Character of Thomas Allen," *48 Cong., 1 Sess., H. R. Misc. Doc. No. 47.*] J.V.

ALLEN, THOMAS M. (Oct. 21, 1797–Oct. 10, 1871), pioneer minister of the Disciples in Kentucky and Missouri, and promoter of educational institutions, was born in Shenandoah, now Warren County, Va. He was of Presbyterian ancestry and received his early education from Presbyterian ministers and from John S. McNamara, considered in his day an exceptional mathematician. He entered the army before he was seventeen years old and served six months in a Virginia regiment. In 1816, while he was riding through a forest, lightning struck a tree, which fell, killing a young woman riding with him, crushing his own horse, and so injuring him that thereafter his left arm was practically useless. Removing to Kentucky in 1819, he married Rebecca Russell of Fayette County, studied law at Transylvania University, and later practised for a short time in Bloomington, Ind.

Coming under the influence of Barton W. Stone [*q.v.*], however, he was converted to the religious views of that leader, was baptized by him in 1823, and returned to Kentucky, where in 1825 he was ordained by Stone at "Old Union" Church, Fayette County, which Allen and five others had established two years before. Soon he was prominent in the councils and activities of the Christians, and planted churches of that order in Paris, Antioch, Clintonville, and Cynthiana. He was one of those instrumental in bringing about the union between the followers of Stone and those of Alexander Campbell [*q.v.*] which was effected in 1832. In 1836 he removed to Boone County, Mo.

Here he became a person of extensive influence. He was six feet tall, of commanding person, always dressed in faultless taste, an easy speaker, and an accomplished gentleman. He possessed ample means and the farm which he purchased, worked by slaves so well cared for that the most of them remained with him after the emancipation, became one of the best estates in the county. His home was noted for its hospitality, and he was intimate with the leading men of the state. He was frequently urged to become the Whig candidate for governor, and declined an appointment to Congress to fill an unexpired term. Although a slave-holder, he was opposed to secession, and at a meeting of citizens of Boone County, held May 6, 1861, he urged them to maintain an armed neutrality within the Union, and not be driven away by passion and prejudice into the dangerous experiment of revolution and anarchy. His chief interest always was the extension of religion and education, and to this he gave himself untiringly almost to the day of his death. He went where there were no churches, preaching in court-houses, schoolhouses, barns, and groves, and he is credited with having done more than any other one man to establish the Disciples of Christ in Missouri. It was largely through his efforts that Boone County subscribed more than any other county toward the founding of the University of Missouri in 1839, in consideration of which generosity the institution was located at Columbia. He was a member of its first board of curators, and president of the board in 1839, 1841, and again in 1864. He was among the first advocates in the state of equal educational advantages for women, and one of the founders of Christian Female College, of the governing board of which he was many years a member.

[Robt. Richardson, *Memoirs of Alex. Campbell* (1870), II; *Hist. of Boone County, Mo.* (1882); Thos. P. Haley, *Hist. and Biog. Sketches of the Early Churches and Pioneer Preachers of the Christian Ch. in Mo.* (1888); Errett Gates, *The Disciples of Christ* (1905); W. T. Moore, *A Comprehensive Hist. of the Disciples of Christ* (1909).] H.E.S.

ALLEN, TIMOTHY FIELD (Apr. 24, 1837–Dec. 5, 1902), homeopathic physician, botanist, son of Dr. David and Eliza (Graves) Allen, was born in the village of Westminster, Vt. Reared amidst the beauties of the Connecticut Valley, the boy absorbed a love of nature which proved a vital factor in his later life. In those days the only profession that offered any opportunity for a born naturalist was that of medicine, hence Timothy Allen, like Asa Gray, turned to it for a livelihood. He prepared for college at East Windsor Hill, Conn., and went from there to Amherst. Here he came under the stimulating influence of Edward Hitchcock, Charles U. Shepard, and W. S. Clark. He was graduated in 1858 with the degree of A.B. and went at once to New York, where he became a student in the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York (now New York

University), receiving the degree of M.D. in 1861. He was married on June 3, 1861, to Julia Bissell of Litchfield, Conn. Soon after he had begun the practise of medicine in Brooklyn, his career was interrupted by the Civil War, and he became acting assistant-surgeon in the United States Army at Point Lookout, Md. On being released from his duties there, he resumed his practise in Brooklyn, but in 1863 he removed to New York City, where he remained for the rest of his life.

After his establishment as a successful practitioner in New York, his activities extended into three different fields and his achievements in each proved him a man of unusual ability. His most notable accomplishments were in connection with the development of homeopathy, and his practise and writings contributed largely to the establishment of that school of medicine. From 1867 on, he was professor of materia medica and therapeutics in the New York Homeopathic Medical College and from 1882 to 1893, he was dean of that institution. In 1874, he began the publication of his most important work, an *Encyclopedia of Materia Medica* which extended to ten volumes. In the field of ophthalmic surgery his achievements were little less notable and in 1884 he became surgeon to the New York Ophthalmic Hospital. Later, his interest in that institution led to his being for some years president of its board of trustees. His volume on *Ophthalmic Therapeutics* (1876) is his chief publication in this field. Soon after his establishment in New York, he became associated with the famous botanist, Dr. John Torrey, and for the remainder of his life botany was a major interest. He was one of the founders of the Torrey Botanical Club in 1871 and for many years was one of its vice-presidents. The club published in 1870–76 a *Flora of New York City* to which he was one of the chief contributors. Soon after this he began to devote himself to the stoneworts (*Characeæ*), a group of curious fresh-water plants to which little attention had been paid in America. He quickly made himself master of this field, published a number of important papers, and accumulated an extraordinary collection of stoneworts from all over the world, which in 1891 he gave to the New York Botanical Garden.

[Memoirs by N. L. Britton, *Bull. Torrey Bot. Club*, XXX, 173–77, containing bibliography of Allen's botanical writings; *Jour. N. Y. Bot. Garden*, III, 232; *Amherst Coll. Biog. Recs. Grads. & Non-Grads.*, 1927, p. 199; *N. Y. Tribune*, Dec. 7, 1902.]

H. L. C.

ALLEN, WILLIAM (Aug. 5, 1704–Sept. 6, 1780), merchant, jurist, was a member of the Allen family of Philadelphia, Presbyterians from Dungannon, Ireland, who were prominent in that Scotch-Irish group which brought Pennsylvania into the national manner of thinking in time for the American Revolution. William Allen, Sr., died in 1725, but not until his son had secured at London a legal training valuable throughout his future life. Upon his father's death William returned to America, where family loyalty impelled him to neglect his chosen profession and maintain the important and remunerative mercantile business created by his father. In 1727 he entered the Philadelphia Council and for nearly fifty years his influence in political affairs is easily followed. His prestige was enhanced by his marriage, Feb. 16, 1733/4, to Margaret, daughter of Speaker Andrew Hamilton, and by the family alliances of their six children. First came his leadership of Philadelphia when it petitioned the Assembly in 1729 to be allowed to erect a "State House." The legislature, guided by Allen and Hamilton as trustees of the purchasing and building funds, established its first permanent home at Philadelphia, in October 1735, instead of at Chester, as the Quaker Party, to be distinguished from the religious Society of Friends, had desired. For the rapid completion of this future "Independence Hall" despite labor troubles, Allen advanced considerable money from his private purse, some of which was not repaid until 1761.

Meanwhile Allen's influence extended. He was member of the Assembly 1731–39, was elected Grand Master of Freemasons in 1732, and became mayor of Philadelphia in 1735. Chosen recorder of the city in 1741, he joined Franklin in defending the western frontier and in advancing provincial self-government, especially during the terms of his brother-in-law Governor James Hamilton 1748–54 and 1759–63. These activities, his initial aid to the College of Philadelphia, and his furtherance of many charities mark Allen's breadth of character. His reputation when justice of various lower courts 1737–50 and as chief justice of the province 1750–74 proves his legal ability, although the texts of few decisions have been preserved. His position in the American Philosophical Society and upon the board of trustees of the University of Pennsylvania shows his literary interests. Allen's value to province and to country was demonstrated when he recommended Franklin for deputy postmaster-general of America (1751), and served on the Maryland-Pennsylvania boundary commission (1750–51) to adjust the dispute between so-called "Penn pertinacity and Baltimore pugnacity." In 1765, being owner of a large estate in Northampton County, Pa., he laid out the town of Northampton, afterward named Allentown.

Allen felt keenly the grievances of America against Great Britain. When in England in 1763, he obtained a postponement of the sugar duties, and later, in 1766, joined Franklin in securing a repeal of the Stamp Act. But for the next decade "the great giant," as he was described, remained an advocate of compromise when wiser statesmen were realizing the necessity of effective colonial union. A member of the Proprietary party in 1774, he could not follow Franklin into American nationalism; thus, when his plan for reconciliation outlined in *The American Crisis* (1774) failed, his active service for Pennsylvania ended and he resigned his judicial position. When the Constitution of 1776 was adopted and his son James wrote, "Peace is scarcely thought of," Allen retired to England to await a reconsideration. He died on Sept. 6, 1780, after revisiting Philadelphia in 1779 and freeing his slaves by a codicil to his will dated Dec. 1 of that year. Later opinion has recognized the difficulties of Allen's position and judged more kindly than did his contemporaries in 1776 this promoter of Pennsylvania's welfare during sixty years of loyal service.

[Allen MSS. in the Hist. Soc. of Pa.; the *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, I, 202–10, XXXVIII, 385–406; *The Writings of Benj. Franklin*, Smyth ed., 10 vols. (1922); C. H. Lincoln, *The Revolutionary Movement in Pa.* (1901); J. H. Martin, *The Bench and Bar of Phila.* (1883); Scharf and Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884); Isaac Sharpless, *Hist. of Proprietary Government in Pa.* (1896).]

C. H. L—n.

ALLEN, WILLIAM (Jan. 2, 1784–July 16, 1868), clergyman, educator, author, was well known in New England during the first half of the nineteenth century as one of the most learned scholars of the time, an effective preacher, an able college president, and a writer of poetry. He is now remembered chiefly as the compiler of the *American Biographical and Historical Dictionary* (1809), one of the earliest undertakings of its kind, though the same year John Eliot published his *Dictionary of Eminent Characters in New England*, a less comprehensive work. The first edition of Allen's dictionary contained approximately 700 names; the 1832 edition, 1,800; and the 1857 edition, 7,000.

He was born in Pittsfield, Mass., the son of Rev. Thomas Allen and Elizabeth Lee, daughter of Rev. Jonathan Lee of Salisbury, Conn. On his father's side he was a descendant of Samuel Allen, a native of England, who died in Windsor, Conn., in 1648; and on his mother's, of Gov. Bradford of Plymouth. His father was for forty-six years pastor of the First Congregational Church, Pittsfield. An ardent Jeffersonian, vigorously partisan in the pulpit and out, with no gift or taste for conciliation, he aroused much violent antagonism. His son grew up to hold the same political views and to display a like tendency to provoke opposition, though not with respect to matters political. He graduated from Harvard College at the age of eighteen, studied theology under Rev. John Pierce of Brookline, Mass., and was licensed to preach by the Berkshire Association in 1804. From 1805 to 1810 he was assistant librarian and regent at Harvard. It was while here that he prepared the first edition of his dictionary. In 1810 his father died, and on Oct. 10 of that year he was ordained to succeed him as pastor at Pittsfield. Here he remained until 1817. On Jan. 28, 1813 he married Maria Malleville Wheelock, only daughter of President Wheelock of Dartmouth College, by whom he had eight children. His pastorate, though less stormy than his father's, was not untroubled. He is described as impassive, inflexible, stately, and stiff, but just, kind, and faithful; "more learned than apt to teach; a good ruler for all but the unruly" (*General Catalogue of Bowdoin College*, 1894). He insisted upon strict compliance with the letter of the law and his unyielding disposition and rigorous enforcement of church discipline made him many enemies.

A son-in-law of President Wheelock, a pronounced Democrat, and a firm believer in the desirableness of a close union between college and state, he was a natural choice for a place on the Dartmouth University faculty when the New Hampshire legislature altered the charter of Dartmouth College, and attempted to reorganize that institution. Upon the death of President Wheelock in 1817 he was made his successor. During two years of litigation, with the college and university existing side by side, he administered the affairs of the latter as best he could, until it went out of existence as a result of the decision of the United States Supreme Court. In December 1819 he was chosen president of Bowdoin College. Here he gathered about him a strong faculty, established the Medical School of Maine, and broadened the curriculum, especially with respect to modern languages, of which Henry W. Longfellow was made professor. The personal characteristics previously mentioned finally brought him into serious conflict with his trustees, however, and, in 1831, with a view to getting him out of office a piece of special legislation was enacted by the state (*Public Acts of the State of Maine*, 1831, chapter DXVII), which provided that no person holding the office of president of any college in the state should hold that office beyond the day of the next commencement unless reëlected by the trustees, and that he

must receive two-thirds of all the votes given on the question of his election. Allen failed of re-election but took the legality of the act of the legislature before the federal circuit court, which declared it unconstitutional (decision of Justice Story, Allen *vs.* McKean, *1 Sumner's Reports, 276*). The litigation extended over two years during which time he did not perform the duties of president. He resumed them in 1833, but increasing unpopularity with the students, together with the prejudice against him among the trustees, caused him to tender his resignation in 1838, to take effect the following year. The rest of his life was spent in literary activity at Northampton, Mass. His wife had died in 1828, and on Dec. 2, 1831, he married Sarah Johnson Breed, daughter of John McLaren and Rebecca Walker Breed of Norwich, Conn.

In addition to the *Biographical Dictionary* and numerous sermons and addresses, he published *Accounts of Shipwreck and of Other Disasters at Sea, Designed to be Interesting and Useful to Mariners* (1823); *Junius Unmasked, or Lord George Sackville Proved to be Junius* (1828); *Lectures to Young Men* (1830); "An Account of Arnold's Expedition Against Quebec in 1775" (in *Collections of the Maine Historical Society*, I, 1831); *Psalms and Hymns for Public Worship* (1835); *Memoir of John Codman, D.D.* (1853); *Wunnissoo, or the Vale of Hoosatunnuk, a Poem* (1856); *A Book of Christian Sonnets* (1860); *Poems of Nazareth and the Cross* (1866).

[Wm. B. Sprague, *A Discourse Delivered in the First Cong. Ch. in Northampton, Mass., on the 26th of July, 1868*, etc. (1868); *N.E. Hist. and Genealogical Reg.*, vol. XXIII (1869); J. E. A. Smith, *Hist. of Pittsfield* (1876); John K. Lord, *Hist. of Dartmouth Coll.* (1913); Hist. sketch in *Gen. Catalogue of Bowdoin Coll.* (1894).]

H. E. S.

ALLEN, WILLIAM (Dec. 18, 1803–July 11, 1879), congressman, governor of Ohio, was descended from Quaker forebears who were among the earliest settlers of Pennsylvania. In the eighteenth century a branch of the family removed to North Carolina, where it separated itself from the Society of Friends and engaged actively in the American Revolution. Nathaniel Allen, the father of William, was an officer in the Revolutionary army and later a member of the North Carolina convention which ratified the Federal Constitution. William, the issue of Nathaniel's third marriage, to one Sarah Colburn, was born in Edenton, N.C. Deprived of both his parents at an early age, and, through a technicality of the law, of his share in the large estate of his father, he was reared under the tutelage of his half-sister, a woman of great force and of some education, who had become the wife of the Rev. Pleasant Thurman. After a short residence in Lynchburg, Va., as an apprentice to a saddler, Allen determined to hazard his fortunes in the West, whither his sister and her family had already gone. In 1819 the sixteen-year-old boy arrived at the home of his sister in Chillicothe, Ohio, after a perilous journey on foot, in midwinter, across the ice-clad Alleghanies. After two years of preparation in Chillicothe Academy, supplemented by a course of general reading under the direction of his sister, he began the study of law in the office of Col. Edward King, the son of Rufus King. Three years later, at the age of twenty-one, he was admitted to the practise of law and became at once a partner of Col. King. Riding the circuit, in accordance with frontier custom, Allen soon became a noted local figure; his large stature and commanding presence, his fluency of speech and skill in debate won for him a reputation throughout the section of the state in which he traveled, —a reputation which induced the Jackson Democrats of his district to nominate him as their candidate for Congress. The district was normally Republican by a majority of 1,500 to 2,000, but after an exciting contest the youthful Allen carried it by a majority of 1 against Gen. Duncan McArthur, whose only daughter, Mrs. Effie (McArthur) Coons, he subsequently married (1842). He served one term in the House, from 1833 to 1835, without particular distinction, and was defeated for reëlection. But the Democratic party sent him to the Senate in 1837 to succeed Thomas Ewing, and again for a second term in 1843. He was an ardent expansionist and a frequent declaimer on the Senate floor for the rights of the United States in Oregon and for the annexation of Texas. In his second term he was chairman of the important Committee on Foreign Relations and became the spokesman of President Polk during the war with Mexico. In the confusion of public opinion in the late forties and fifties Allen was unable to perceive the significance and weight of the Free-Soil element in the Democratic party. After his defeat by Salmon P. Chase (1849) he went into retirement on his large 1,400 acre farm, "Fruit Hill," near Chillicothe, where he remained for the next twenty-five years. During the Civil War he was an anti-war Democrat and an outspoken critic of the Lincoln administration. For his stand on the war he was severely criticized. Toward the end of his life he made a spectacular reappearance in state politics in his election to the governorship of Ohio in 1873. Although he served acceptably in this office, he failed to be reëlected, his espousal of the Greenback panacea contributing largely to his defeat. In 1876 his name was presented to the Democratic National Convention

for the presidency. He died at "Fruit Hill" three years later. Allen did not reach the higher levels of statesmanship. A partial explanation of his failure is found in his provincial and partisan outlook, his attachment to lost causes, and his inability to weigh accurately new and unexpected issues. But he voiced at all times what he believed to be aspirations and ideals of the West. His essential honesty was never questioned.

[Reginald C. McGrane's *William Allen, A Study in Western Democracy* (1925) is an authoritative biography. This study is thoroughly documented and the accompanying bibliography contains a classified list of sources. The most important of these are twenty-one volumes of the MSS. of William Allen in the Lib. of Cong.]

C. E. C.

ALLEN, WILLIAM FRANCIS (Sept. 5, 1830–Dec. 9, 1889), classical scholar, was born at Northboro, Mass., the son of Joseph Allen, Unitarian clergyman, and Lucy Clarke Ware of Cambridge, Mass. He was prepared for college in a school kept by his parents in the Northboro parsonage, with one year at the Roxbury Latin School, and was graduated from Harvard College in 1851. For three years he was tutor in a private family in New York; then, in 1854, he went to Europe, where he studied one semester at Göttingen and one in Berlin, after which he went to Italy, arriving in Rome in November 1855. Here he spent three months mainly in studying the topography of the ancient city, then went to Naples and to Greece. He returned to Boston in June 1856. From 1856 to 1863 he was associate principal of the English and Classical School at West Newton, Mass., and here, July 2, 1862, he married Mary Tileston Lambert. In November 1863, accompanied by his wife, he went, in the employ of the Freedmen's Aid Commission, to begin the education of the freedmen at St. Helena Island, S. C. He came north in July 1864, and in September went as agent of the Sanitary Commission to Helena, Ark., where he remained until February 1865. His wife died on Mar. 23 of that year, leaving an infant daughter, Katherine. After a service of some months as assistant superintendent of the schools of Charleston, S. C., Allen went as professor of ancient languages to Antioch College, Yellow Springs, Ohio, but remained there only one year, after which he taught for a year in a military academy at Perth Amboy, N. J. In 1867 he was called to the chair of ancient languages and history in the University of Wisconsin, and here he remained until his death. On June 30, 1868, he married Margaret Loring Andrews, of Newburyport, Mass.. who bore him three sons.

Allen was a pioneer in the teaching of history by the topical system of study and the examination of original sources. His published writings show great versatility and prodigious industry. Those which appeared as books are the following: *Slave Songs of the United States,* compiled in conjunction with Charles P. Ware and Lucy M. Garrison (1867); *A Latin Reader,* with his brother J. H. Allen [*q.v.*] (1869); *Latin Lessons,* with J. H. Allen (1869); *Manual Latin Grammar,* with J. H. Allen (1868); six volumes of Latin texts and selections, with J. B. Greenough and J. H. Allen, known as the "Allen and Greenough" series, to which he furnished the historical and mythological notes and introductions (1873, 1874, and 1875); *An Introduction to Latin Composition* (1870); the *Germania and Agricola of Tacitus* (1880); the *Annals of Tacitus,* Books 1–4 (1890); and a *Short History of the Roman People* (1890), the manuscript of which was finished the evening before his death. The last is his most important single work and his only book dealing entirely with his special subject. His further writings comprise more than 900 articles and reviews on classical, historical, political, and various other subjects.

[C. L. Smith, *Classical Rev.*, IV, 426–28; J. D. Butler, *Trans. Wis. Acad. Sciences, Arts and Letters,* VIII, 439–41; D. B. Frankenburger, *Essays and Monographs, Memorial Volume,* with memoir, pp. 1–21, and bibliography, pp. 351–82 (1890).]

H. N. F.

ALLEN, WILLIAM FREDERICK (Oct. 9, 1846–Nov. 9, 1915), railroad expert, was born in Bordentown, N. J., the son of Joseph Warner and Sarah (Norcross) Allen. His father, a civil engineer, was drowned off Hatteras Inlet, Jan. 15, 1862, on the Burnside expedition, in command of his regiment, the 9th New Jersey Volunteers. The son was educated at the Bordentown Model School and at the Protestant Episcopal Academy at Philadelphia. In 1862 he became a rodman on the civil-engineering force of the Camden & Amboy Railroad, was made assistant engineer in 1863, and served as resident engineer from 1868 to 1872. On Apr. 20, 1871, he was married to Caroline Yorke of Salem, N. J., by whom he had four sons. In October 1872 he became a member of the staff of the *Official Guide of the Railways and Steam Navigation Lines,* and remained until his death with the company that published it, acting as president after 1914. This connection brought him in contact with many railroad men and with many forms of railroad activity, and thus led to his most important contribution,—his work in connection with the adoption of standard time for the railways. In those days every railroad fixed the time of its train schedules as it chose, usually taking it from that of its home city or the most important town on

its line. Over fifty different standards were in use, with much resulting confusion. Beginning in 1872, various efforts had been made to arrange time schedules for through trains from one system to another. In that year, a General Time Convention had been organized, and in 1877 a Southern Railway Time Convention began to serve the southern roads. From 1875 until his death Allen acted as secretary and treasurer of the General Time Convention and of the American Railway Association, formed later by the consolidation of the two Conventions. In 1881 the organization referred to him the problem of standardization of time, and as a result of his report submitted on Apr. 11, 1883, the fifty differing systems melted into four at high noon on Nov. 18, 1883. Various schemes of standardization had been suggested by others before this, and these earlier efforts undoubtedly influenced the final plan. The difference between them and Allen's suggestion lay in the fact that they usually assumed adoption of meridians an even hour apart, while Allen adapted and adjusted his points of change to the territory in question. His scheme was practical, rather than theoretical, with the advantage of suggestion by a man perfectly acquainted with the difficulties to be overcome, the means to be used, conditions to be met, and the point of view of the railroad operating man. In 1904 he edited a *Short History of Standard Time and Its Adoption in North America in 1883.*

[A collection of manuscript and printed material connected with the movement for standard time, gathered by Allen as work progressed, is in the Manuscript Division of the New York Public Library. The *American Railway Association Proceedings,* vol. I and an *Historical Statement* issued by the Association in 1921 serve as official records of his connection with the Association; see also R. E. Riegel, "Standard Time in the United States," *Am. Hist. Rev.,* XXXIII, 84–89. There is a memoir by C. A. Hammond in *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers,* LXXX, 2244–48; other biographical references are *Who's Who in America, 1914–15; Biog. Dir. Railway Officials of America,* ed. by H. G. Lane (1913); *N. Y. Times,* Nov. 10, 1915; *Railway Age Gazette,* Nov. 12, 1915, p. 919.]

H. M. L.

ALLEN, WILLIAM HENRY (Oct. 21, 1784–Aug. 18, 1813), naval officer, born in Providence, R. I., was the son of Gen. William Allen of Revolutionary distinction, his mother being Sarah, a sister of William Jones, at one time governor of Rhode Island. Appointed a midshipman in the United States Navy Apr. 28, 1800, his first service was in the frigate *George Washington,* under Capt. William Bainbridge, who, like his later commanders, Barron and Rodgers, gave him proofs of their trust in his enterprise and seamanship. After several years of service in the Mediterranean, he was ordered as third lieutenant to the frigate *Chesapeake,* and commanded a gun division on board that ill-fated vessel when she was attacked and severely damaged by the British ship *Leopard* on June 22, 1807, after a refusal by Commodore James Barron [*q.v.*] to give up certain alleged deserters from the British navy. The surrender of the *Chesapeake* by Barron without striking a blow, although ample time was given the American commander to clear his ship for action, aroused the indignation of his officers, and especially of Lieut. Allen, who, the day following the action, drew up a petition to the Secretary of the Navy for the arrest and punishment of Commodore Barron, which was signed by six officers of the *Chesapeake.* Only a single shot was fired by the *Chesapeake,* according to Allen, who wrote in a letter, "I was at the galley (the camboose) and, snatching up a coal from the flames, fired the only gun, which went through the wardroom of the English ship." Three of the *Chesapeake's* crew were killed and eighteen wounded. Barron, though acquitted of cowardice, was suspended from the service for five years without pay, on the charge of not clearing his ship for action.

Allen's sense of duty and justice was repeatedly brought out during his short life by his refusal to ask special favor either for himself or his friends. When requested by his own father to protect certain persons from the consequences of flouting the Embargo Act, he replied, "Nothing, my dear Sir, could give me more pleasure, . . . but, Sir, had this been *your* vessel, her situation would have been precisely the same. It is impossible that I can be of the least service." Promoted to be first lieutenant, he joined the frigate *United States* under Commodore Decatur in 1809, and on Oct. 25, 1812, took a prominent part in the fierce action between his ship and the powerful British frigate *Macedonian,* 49 guns, which lasted for nearly two hours and resulted in the surrender of the *Macedonian,* so crippled by the accuracy of the American fire that it was doubtful if she would continue to float. "Her two principal masts were secured and a jurymast rigged by Mr. Allen . . . who was put in charge of her, with great ingenuity. . . . Mr. Allen was promoted to the rank of master-commandant, and he received due credit for the steady discipline that the ship's company had displayed" (J. F. Cooper, *History of the Navy,* 1839, II, 180).

Receiving the command of the *Argus,* sloop-of-war of 20 guns, Allen sailed for France on June 18, 1813, with Mr. Crawford, the newly appointed American minister to France, on board, and, having landed his passenger safely at l'Orient, proceeded on a cruise, the object of which was the difficult one of harrying British commerce in the Irish Channel. After various successes

the *Argus* fell in with the British brig *Pelican*, 21 guns, a short and sharp fight resulting, during the first few minutes of which Capt. Allen's leg was carried off by a round shot. Refusing to go below, he soon fainted from loss of blood and was carried down, together with one of his lieutenants, Watson, who was struck in the head. The *Argus* continued to be gallantly fought by the other lieutenant, William Howard Allen, but so devastating was the fire of the *Pelican* that the American brig hauled down her colors. Allen died of his wound in the hospital of Mill Prison, and was buried by the enemy with the honors of war. "Capt. Allen," says Cooper (*Ibid.*, p. 267), "was esteemed one of the best officers of his class in the navy. A thorough man-of-war's man, he was of mild and gentlemanlike deportment, a fine, martial personal appearance, and of respectable mental attainments. His influence over the crews with which he sailed was very great, and it is not possible to say now what might have been the result of the combat in which he fell, had he not been so early killed. He was unmarried."

[Records of the Office of Naval Records and Lib., Navy Dept., Washington, D.C.; J. H. Brown, *Am. Naval Heroes* (1899).] E.B.

ALLEN, WILLIAM HENRY (Mar. 27, 1808–Aug. 29, 1882), college president, son of Jonathan and Thankful (Longley) Allen, was born at Readfield, now Manchester, Me. To parentage and rigorous early training in the harsh environment of the Maine country he owed the sturdy nature that served him well throughout an active life. He attended district school, Kent Hill Seminary, and Bowdoin College. After graduating from the latter in 1833, he taught Latin and Greek in the Oneida Methodist Conference Seminary, Cazenovia, N. Y. (1833–36), and was principal of the high school in Augusta, Me., for six months. From Augusta he was called in 1836 to the chair of chemistry and natural history at Dickinson College, which he occupied with distinction for ten years, being then transferred to philosophy and English literature. For nearly a year he was acting president of the institution. He was elected to the presidency of Girard College in 1849, took office the following year, and gave twelve years of whole-hearted, effective service. In 1862, chiefly because of a policy of retrenchment adopted by the directors, he resigned the presidency but continued lecturing and writing. From these pursuits he was called in 1865 to the presidency of the Pennsylvania Agricultural College. After two years of valuable service, he left this post, being urged to resume the headship of Girard College. The next fifteen years there were most gratifying to him and most valuable to those for whom he labored. Recognition of his services is found in the declaration of the directors that he had "performed the duties of his position with a decidedness that won our regard and endeared him not only to pupils but the officials of the institution and to all connected with the college" (resolution of the directors, Aug. 29, 1882, *In Memoriam*, p. 5). Throughout life, Allen identified himself closely with religious work. While at Bowdoin, he professed Christianity, and it was his recognized religious leadership and high personal character that secured his election to the presidency of Girard College. At Dickinson College, he contributed numerous articles to the *Methodist Quarterly Review;* at Girard, his religious contribution lay in his upright example, preparation of a manual of devotional services, and carefully studied lectures to the boys. In 1872, he became president of the American Bible Society. He was married four times: to Martha Ann Richardson, who died in 1839; to Ellen Honora, sister of Andrew G. Curtin, governor of Pennsylvania; after her early death, to Mary Frances Quincy, daughter of Samuel Quincy of Boston, and finally, in 1858, to Mrs. Anna (Dunton) Gamwill, who survived him. Besides successful work as teacher and administrator, Allen acquired a considerable reputation as lecturer and orator. His addresses covered many fields, such as "Peace," "The Bible," "Public Welfare," "Labor," "Temperance," "Farm Life," "Economic Conditions," "Popular Education," and the "Waste of Intellect"; but his most polished and complete efforts were "Our Country's Mission in History" and his *Eulogy on Daniel Webster,* published in Philadelphia, 1853.

[C. A. Herrick, *Hist. of Girard Coll.* (MS.); *In Memoriam: In Commemoration of the Death of William H. Allen* (1883); *Girard Coll. Rec.*, vol. I, no. 6, pp. 1–2; *Alumni Rec. Dickinson Coll.* (1905); *Autobiography, Memories and Experiences of Moncure Daniel Conway* (1905), I, 43–45; *First Fifty Years of Cazenovia Seminary* (1877); C. F. Himes, *Dickinson Coll.* (1879), p. 106; *Phila. Public Ledger*, Aug. 30, Sept. 2, 1882; *N. E. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1883, p. 98.] T.W.

ALLEN, WILLIAM JOSHUA (June 9, 1829–Jan. 26, 1901), jurist, congressman, was born in Wilson County, Tenn. His father was Willis Allen, of Scotch-Irish descent, son of John Allen, who fell at New Orleans; his mother was Elizabeth Joiner, a North Carolina girl of Welsh descent. In 1830 Willis Allen migrated to the part of Illinois which later became Williamson County; he sat in the Illinois General Assemblies of 1838, 1844, and 1846 and served in Congress, 1851–55, as a Democrat. William Joshua Allen studied law in his father's office and at Louisville, Ky., and began the practise of law in 1849 at Metropolis, Ill. In 1853 he removed to Marion, where he formed a partnership with John A. Lo-

gan, was elected to the General Assembly in 1854, and was appointed United States district attorney in 1855. His support of Stephen A. Douglas after the latter's break with the administration led the Attorney-General to seek excuse to remove him. Allen soon after resigned. In 1859 he was elected judge of the circuit court succeeding his father in that office.

Allen's course at the outbreak of the Civil War was equivocal. He endeavored to counteract the effect of a disunionist meeting held Apr. 15, 1861, at Marion (Erwin, p. 260). By 1862 Allen was concerned in a movement to separate southern Illinois from the state and the Union and was an active Knight of the Golden Circle. He was arrested in August 1862, held prisoner for some months at Cairo and in the "Old Capitol Prison" at Washington and then released. In the summer of 1863 a local federal officer posted a guard on his residence (Cole, pp. 302, 309). Allen was, however elected to the constitutional convention of 1862, to fill Logan's unexpired term in the Thirty-seventh Congress, and to succeed himself in the Thirty-eighth Congress (1863–65). In 1864 he was beaten for reëlection largely by the influence of his old associate, Logan, who returned from the army to denounce him for treasonable conduct (*Ibid.*, pp. 327, 328).

After the war, Allen practised first at Cairo, then at Carbondale, Ill. He served in the constitutional convention of 1870, serving on the committee on the judiciary and as chairman of the committee on the bill of rights. In 1876 as special state's attorney he prosecuted those concerned in the Williamson Vendetta, which first gave the county the nickname of "Bloody Williamson." In 1886 he moved to Springfield and formed a partnership with C. C. and Stuart Brown. In April 1887 he was appointed United States district judge for southern Illinois. He died at Hot Springs, Ark., Jan. 26, 1901. In 1858 he had married Anna McKeen of Maryland, who died Aug. 17, 1892; three sons and two daughters survived them.

[J. M. Palmer, *Bench and Bar of Ill.* (1899), I, 211–14; obituaries in the *Ill. State Reg.*, *Ill. State Jour.*, and *Chicago Tribune*, Jan. 27, 1901; an unidentified clipping dated Apr. 18, 1887, in A. W. Snyder's coll. in the Ill. State Hist. Lib., Springfield. The account in the *Cong. Directory* is short and quite inaccurate; Milo Erwin, *Hist. of Williamson County, Ill.* (1876), is also untrustworthy. Allen's Civil War record is adequately treated in A. C. Cole, *The Era of the Civil War* (1919).]

T. C. P.

ALLEN, WILLIAM VINCENT (Jan. 28, 1847–Jan. 12, 1924), Populist senator, was born in Midway, Madison County, Ohio, the son of Rev. Samuel and Phœbe (Pugh) Allen. When he was but ten years old his family removed to Iowa, where they lived the normal life of pioneers. They were abolitionists and participated in the activities of the "Underground Railroad," and from them doubtless young Allen imbibed the views which led him to enlist at fifteen in the Union army. He served to the end of the war—certainly one of the youngest soldiers on the Northern side. This army experience he regarded as "the better part of his education," but at the close of the war he attended Upper Iowa University, and later he read law. He was married, in 1870, to Blanche Mott of Fayette, Ia., was admitted to the bar in Iowa, and practised there until 1884, when he removed to Madison, Nebr. There he soon took rank as a leading attorney, fell in with the Farmers' Alliance, turned Populist in 1890, and next year was elected district judge. When, in 1893, the Populists in the Nebraska legislature found it possible for them to dictate the choice of a United States senator, they turned to Allen, and with the help of Democratic votes elected him. A powerful man physically, and well endowed mentally, Allen distinguished himself early in his senatorial career by speaking continuously for fifteen hours during a filibuster against the repeal of the Sherman Silver Purchase Act. His speech did not prevent the repeal, but it marshaled the arguments for free coinage in a forceful way, and it marked Allen as a man of unusual resourcefulness. He made a strong argument, also, to prove unconstitutional the action of Secretary Carlisle in issuing bonds for gold under authority of the Resumption Act. On many other matters his voice was raised, and his opinions were received with respect. Allen's ability to hold his own in the Senate against great odds gave boundless joy to the Populists, and won much admiration from men outside third-party circles. He was acclaimed as "the intellectual giant of Populism." Although not reëlected in 1899, he returned to the Senate by appointment of the Governor to serve in the place of his successor-elect, who died without taking office. He remained in the Senate until 1901. Allen was one of those who favored fusion with the Democrats in 1896, and as chairman of the Populist nominating convention of that year he did much to further this end. When Populism waned he became a Democrat, and after his retirement from the Senate he again served as district judge; but in his later years he was not a strict partisan. He continued to live at Madison until the time of his death in January 1924.

[A short biography of Allen, self-inspired, appears in Albert Watkins and J. S. Morton, *Hist. of Nebr.* (1913), III, 493–94. There is an enthusiastic sketch by Albert Shaw in *Rev. of Revs.*, X, 32–42. Allen's senatorial career is reviewed by T. W. Tipton, "Forty Years of Nebr., in *Nebr. State Hist. Soc. Coll.*, ser. 2, vol. IV, 362–85. His speech on free silver is in the *Cong. Rec.*, 53 Cong., 1 Sess., app., pp. 289–340.]

J. D. H.

ALLEN, YOUNG JOHN (Jan. 3, 1836–May 30, 1907), Methodist missionary, educator, was born in Burke County, Ga., and died in Shanghai, China, with a record of nearly half a century of service in that eastern city. He was early left an orphan—his father, Young John, died shortly before the son's birth, and his mother, Mary Wooten, soon thereafter—but being endowed with vigor of body and mind, he developed an unusual store of self-reliance. His boyhood was spent in Meriwether County in the home of his aunt, Mrs. Wiley Hutcheson. From the Starrsville (Ga.) High School he went to Emory and Henry College (Va.) and then to Emory College (Ga.), securing his B.A. from the latter in 1858. He came early under the influence of the fervent Methodism of his surroundings, and was converted during his high-school days. At college he decided upon the ministry and received a license to preach. Upon graduation from Emory he was ordained and admitted to the Georgia Conference of his church, the Southern Methodist. In the same year he was married to Mary Houston, who had finished in July her course at Georgia Wesleyan. They both responded eagerly to an opportunity which came the following year to enter upon foreign service. In December 1859, with his wife and their five-months-old daughter—there were ultimately ten children in all—he sailed from New York for Shanghai to be Georgia's first missionary ambassador to China. He had himself raised the funds for passage.

Allen's resourcefulness and capacity came into full play soon after arrival in China in July 1860. The interruption of the American Civil War threw him upon his own support. For fifteen years, in fact, he provided not only for himself but for the Mission. While never abandoning missionary work he served as teacher and translator under the Chinese government. As translator of some ninety volumes he did much to satisfy the Chinese desire, newly awakened by the treaty of 1858 with England, for knowledge of world history, politics, and literature. He also edited for the government an *Official News Gazette*. In 1867 he founded his *Review of the Times*, a weekly magazine in Chinese devoted to the interpretation of the West, a periodical which became later the organ under his editorship of the China Christian Literature Society. He made himself the standard-bearer for forty years of the modern newspaper in Chinese and won distinction as a pioneer of Christian journalism in the East. Although he spent eighteen years in the employ of the Chinese government, toward the end of that period we find him giving more and more attention to specifically mission work. In 1881 he severed all official connection with the government and became superintendent of the China Mission of his church. Prior to assuming this new office he had built up a church congregation of over fifty in Shanghai and had opened several schools for boys. His chief educational monument was the Anglo-Chinese College in Shanghai—later incorporated into Soochow University (see article on D. L. Anderson)—which he founded in 1882 to train English-speaking Chinese for government and commercial posts. He was also directly concerned in the founding of the McTyeire School for girls. Among his original writings in English may be cited *The War Between China and Japan*, in connection with the writing of which Li Hung Chang gave him access to government papers, and his magnum opus, *Women in All Lands; or, China's Place Among the Nations*. He was twice sent to the General Conference of his church in America as delegate from the China Mission, and once represented his communion in an ecumenical conference in London.

Of flashing eye, giant frame, and great mustache and beard, Allen was a striking figure. With booming voice, keen mind, and facile pen, he was forceful upon platform, in council hall, or in the study. He attacked foot-binding vigorously, and championed the cause of China's womanhood. In his efforts to nationalize Christianity in China he addressed himself to the men of greatest influence, the scholars and rulers. He did all his work with care and punctuality, leaving at his death no writing unfinished, no letter unanswered, and no bill unpaid.

[*Chinese Recorder*, July 1907; *Work and Progress of the M. E. Ch., South, in China* (1907); *Ann. Rept. Board of Missions M. E. Ch., South* (1908); E. F. Cook, *Young J. Allen* (1910); L. H. Hammond, *Missionary Heroes* (1925); and James Cannon, *Hist. of Southern Meth. Missions* (1926).]

J.C.A.

ALLEN, ZACHARIAH (Sept. 15, 1795–Mar. 17, 1882), scientist, inventor, author, reformer, was born, resided, and died in Providence, R. I. His parents were Zachariah and Anne (Crawford) Allen, the former an importer of cotton goods and a pioneer in calico printing in America; both were representatives of colonial families. In his youth, Allen was devoted to experiments in chemistry and physics, subjects which claimed his attention throughout life. After graduation from Brown University, in 1813, he read law in the office of James Burrill of Providence, and was admitted to the bar in 1815; he also pursued a course in the Brown Medical School which brought him a certificate of proficiency. He married Eliza Harriet Arnold in 1817. In 1822 he was a member of the town council of Providence, where his influence was effective in introducing

the first fire-engine and hose equipment, in place of the hand-buckets previously used. Later, in spite of popular indifference, he projected and accomplished the construction of the city waterworks. He founded the village of Allendale, where he built a mill and storage reservoirs, said to be the first in the United States chartered for hydraulic purposes. As an inventor his work was various and notable. In 1821 he constructed the first central furnace system for heating houses by hot air, and later devised the method of transmitting power by leather belting, in place of the gear, or "cog wheel," connections previously employed. His contributions to textile manufacture included: cloth-napping machines (patented 1829, 1830), a dressing and finishing machine (1830), and a machine for spooling wool (1839). Preëminent, however, was his invention of the automatic steam-engine cut-off, controlled by the centrifugal ball-governor, or regulator (patented 1834), which is still used in substantially the original form (Stephen Roper, *Engineer's Handy Book,* 1881). He was the originator, also, of the methods for testing explosive oils, since widely adopted by legislation, and he devised the system of mutual fire insurance for manufacturing property, which requires underwriters to study methods for preventing fires and estimate premiums on the adequacy of the safety equipment installed. Beginning with the Manufacturers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company, which he founded in 1835, his scheme has been followed by numerous companies to the present time. Allen's sympathies were pronounced, particularly in behalf of the working classes. He promoted the first free evening school in New England, in 1840; led the movement to establish the Providence Association of Manufacturers and Mechanics; and endowed the city's public library. His various writings on the wrongs done the American Indians brought him official letters of acknowledgment from the Ojibway and Potawatomi of Canada, in 1877. He aided, also, the erection of monuments to King Philip and Massasoit.

Allen was a constant writer of newspaper and magazine articles, the most notable perhaps being "On the Volume of the Niagara River" (*American Journal of Science,* April 1844), in which he calculated, it is said for the first time, the volume of Niagara Falls. He was also the author of numerous books, addresses, and monographs including *The Science of Mechanics, as Applied to the Present Improvements in the Useful Arts* (1829); *Philosophy of the Mechanics of Nature and the Source and Modes of Action of Natural Motive-Power* (1852); *Memorial of Roger Williams* (1860); *Improvements in Transmission of Power from Motors to Machines* (1871); *Bi-Centenary of the Burning of Providence in 1676. Defense of the Rhode Island System of Treatment of the Indians, and of Civil and Religious Liberty* (1876); *The Conditions of Life, Habits and Customs, of the Native Indians of America and Their Treatment by the First Settlers* (1879); *Solar Light and Heat: the Source and the Supply* (1881).

[Amos Perry, *Memorial of Zachariah Allen* (1883); *Providence Jour.* and *Boston Advertiser,* Mar. 20, 1882; records of the U. S. Patent Office.]

ALLERTON, ISAAC (c. 1586–February 1658/9), Pilgrim father, trader, was one of the six most important Pilgrims during the Leyden period and third in importance during the first ten years at Plymouth. The rejection of his later policies and his withdrawal from Plymouth in disgrace cost him his place in history. A deposition of his established the date of his birth as "about" 1586 (*Mayflower Descendant,* IV, 109). He was a tailor in London, but moved to Leyden in 1608 before the Scrooby contingent arrived. He joined their congregation at once and in 1611 married Mary Norris, another member of it. In 1614 he became a citizen of Leyden. When the emigration to America was decided upon, he was one of four to complete the arrangements at Leyden and was one of those who bought and equipped the *Speedwell.* In it, he, his wife, and three children sailed in 1620, transferring later to the *Mayflower.* When Bradford was elected governor on the death of Carver in 1621, Allerton was elected assistant and was for three years the only other officer. The crisis in the colony's life came in 1625. They learned that the merchants who had originally financed the venture had decided to do no more. It was to Allerton that the Pilgrims turned to effect a settlement of their problems. In successive trips to England, he reached a settlement with the first merchants for the repayment of the original expense of equipping the colony (1626); borrowed money to purchase much-needed supplies of goods and cattle which ended the extreme poverty at Plymouth; arranged for the emigration of the remainder of the Leyden congregation (1629); induced many able people to emigrate who later became prominent at Plymouth and much strengthened the colony; interested a new group of English merchants; and secured the Patent of 1630 which at last gave the Pilgrims a title to their lands and property. These are among the most important achievements in the history of the colony. Thereafter its future was no longer in doubt.

In 1630 Allerton became convinced that trading ventures could be pursued with such profit

and certainty that the colony might soon become rich. He borrowed further sums of money; the new English associates loaned more; he equipped a ship to trade and sailed back in another with a large consignment of goods which they had not ordered him to buy. He had wittingly exceeded his authority and had more than doubled their indebtedness; they therefore declined to accept his acts on their behalf and renounced him altogether as their agent (1631). Allerton's first wife had died in 1621 and he had married, at some time between 1623 and 1627, Fear, the daughter of Elder Brewster. He seems to have left Plymouth at once in 1631, though he was taxed there until 1634 and his name was carried on the list of Freemen until 1637 (Goodwin, *Pilgrim Republic*, p. 341). His second wife remained behind and died at Plymouth, in 1634. All his children by both marriages also remained behind. His daughter Mary, who died at Plymouth in 1699, was the last survivor of the *Mayflower* passengers.

Allerton's faith in trading was unquenchable and he now himself embarked in the elaborate series of ventures proposed. Many disasters overtook him, but on the whole he made money and became, as he had predicted, a rich man for those days. Some time before 1644 he married again and settled at New Haven. His will (*Mayflower Descendant*, II, 155–57) proves that he was trading with the Dutch at Manhattan on a large scale, with Delaware Bay, with Virginia, and with the West Indies. He died at New Haven.

[The chief authority is Bradford's *Hist.* Most documents to 1623 are printed in E. Arber's *Story of the Pilgrim Fathers* (1897). See also Dexter's *England and Holland of the Pilgrims* (1905) and R. G. Usher, *The Pilgrims and Their Hist.* (1918). Allerton's autograph is given in facsimile in the *Mayflower Descendant*, XXV, 97. We have no idea of his personal appearance.]

R. G. U.

ALLERTON, SAMUEL WATERS (May 26, 1828–Feb. 22, 1914), capitalist, was born at Amenia Union, Dutchess County, N. Y., the son of Samuel Waters Allerton (who traced his descent from Isaac Allerton, one of the *Mayflower's* passengers) and Hannah (Hurd) Allerton. His father had operated a woolen-mill, but failing in business moved west with his family, settling in Dubuque, Ia., in 1837. Ill health and further reverses caused a return to the East. In 1842 he rented a farm in Yates County, N. Y., and six years later moved to a farm in Wayne County, which he bought.

The son had begun to shift for himself at the age of twelve. Two years later, with his brother Henry, he rented a farm in Yates County, on which they cleared $1,500. This sum they gave in partial payment for a farm in Wayne County, assuming an indebtedness of $3,000. Here also they prospered, and at about the age of twenty-four Samuel, with $3,200 of savings, moved to Newark, where he engaged in the purchase and sale of livestock. About 1856 he moved to Illinois, starting a stock farm in Fulton County and selling his cattle in Chicago. Ill health and disasters due to the panic of 1857 prompted him to return to Newark, where for a time he kept a store. Two years later he was back in Illinois, and in March 1860 made Chicago his home. On July 1, 1860, he was married to Pamilla W. Thompson of Peoria. A few months later he made his formal entrance into the business world of Chicago by the unprecedented act of cornering the pork market, a transaction that brought him a large profit. He was the chief factor in organizing (May 1863) the First National Bank of Chicago, of which for many years he was a director. In 1865, by means of a series of articles in the *Tribune*, he began the movement for the establishment of a union stockyard, which in the following year was brought to success. He founded the Allerton Packing Company and was for many years its president. In 1880–82 he brought about the adoption in Chicago of the street-railway cable car, which he had seen in operation while on a visit to San Francisco.

His fortune grew rapidly. He invested largely in the stockyards of Pittsburgh, Baltimore, and Jersey City and later in the yards at St. Joseph and Omaha; and he bought large tracts of farming lands in Illinois, Ohio, Iowa, Nebraska, and Wyoming. Near Monticello, Ill., he acquired a tract of 19,000 acres, which he converted, under the management of his son Robert, into a model stock and crop farm. He also acquired extensive land and elevator interests at Allerton, Ill., and was a large stockholder in the Allerton State Bank. He was deeply concerned in all affairs relating to the city and for a time was active in politics. He was a Republican, and in 1893 was the party's candidate for mayor against Carter Harrison (the elder), who defeated him. With the coming of old age he gradually withdrew from participation in business and spent much of his time at the winter home which he established in South Pasadena, Cal. After the death of his first wife he was married (Mar. 15, 1882) to her sister, Agnes C. Thompson. He died at his California home, of diabetes.

Allerton was one of the builders of the modern Chicago. "He could rightfully lay claim," said the *Tribune*, at the time of his death, "to more work for making the greater Chicago than almost any other citizen." He was a man of large and powerful physique. His manner derived from

the rough school in which he graduated, was somewhat brusque and assertive. He was an operator of great initiative and energy and an administrator of exceptional executive ability. Business success, however, he believed to be predominantly a matter of character; and his advice to the young, for which he seems to have been frequently asked, always stressed this quality. With an established character in business, he maintained, one could always obtain credit, and with credit one could hardly fail of success. A number of benevolences are recorded of him, one of them, in coöperation with Henry E. Weaver, having been the establishment of the St. Charles Home for Boys.

[Obituaries in the *Tribune* and the *Record-Herald* of Chicago, Feb. 23, 1914; biog. sketch in J. S. Currey, *Chicago: Its Hist. and Its Builders*, vol. V (1912).]

W.J.G.

ALLIBONE, SAMUEL AUSTIN (Apr. 17, 1816–Sept. 2, 1889), literary lexicographer and librarian, born in Philadelphia, was descended from French Huguenots and English Quakers. His paternal ancestor, Benjamin Allibone of Pennsylvania, was said to have been a descendant of Sir Richard Allibone who sat on the trial of the Seven Bishops. His maternal forebears were Thomas and Agnes Croasdale, who accompanied William Penn to Pennsylvania in 1682. At the age of twenty, Samuel Austin Allibone was baptized and confirmed in St. Andrew's Protestant Episcopal Church of Philadelphia. He married Mary Henry, the daughter and youngest child of Alexander Henry, a noted merchant and philanthropist of Philadelphia. His active life began in mercantile pursuits and for ten years he helped to shape the policy of the Insurance Company of North America, in Philadelphia. But from boyhood he had been a book-lover; his temperament destined him to the life of letters. In 1852 appeared his first printed publication, *A Review by a Layman of a Work Entitled "New Themes for the Protestant Clergy."* He then devoted himself to *A Critical Dictionary of English Literature and British and American Authors.* George W. Childs, book-publisher of Philadelphia, encouraged this project and became the original publisher of the *Dictionary*, bringing out through the firm of Childs & Peterson the first volume in 1858. Two more volumes were published by J. B. Lippincott & Company in 1871. The three volumes have often been reissued. They contain accounts and critical judgments of the productions of 46,499 authors, with forty classified indexes of subjects, filling 3,140 printed royal octavo pages. From 1867 to 1873, and from 1877 to 1879 he was editor of publications and corresponding secretary of the American Sunday School Union. His publications in this connection include: *An Alphabetical Index to the New Testament* (1868); *Explanatory Questions on the Gospels and the Acts* (1869); *The Divine Origin of the Holy Scriptures* (1869), which was the first part, published separately, of *The Union Bible Companion* (1871). He also prepared for publication by Lippincott three works: *Poetical Quotations from Chaucer to Tennyson* (1873); *Prose Quotations from Socrates to Macaulay* (1876); *Great Authors of all Ages*, selections (1880).

In May 1879 at the request of James Lenox, founder of the Lenox Library, he removed to New York City, where for nine years he was librarian, working on a descriptive catalogue and entertaining visitors by talks on book treasures. He prepared a card catalogue written in his own hand, and furnished copy for *The Contributions to a Catalogue of the Lenox Library* (monographs on Bunyan, Shakespeare, Milton, and Walton). In 1886 he was invited to join James Grant Wilson and George William Curtis in the editorship of the projected *Appletons' Cyclopædia of American Biography.* He declined the offer, but contributed biographical articles on George Bancroft, Alexander H. Everett, Edward Everett, William Hickling Prescott, George Ticknor, and perhaps others. On retiring from the Lenox Library, in May 1888, he went to Europe to travel and rest; but soon died, at Lucerne, Switzerland, where he was buried. "His beautiful face, his gracious manner, the invincible sweetness of his temper, his charm as a companion, his skill as a *raconteur*, his quips and jests and dainty whimsies—these were parts of the furnishing of the man" (S. D. McConnell, pp. 21–22).

[S. D. McConnell, *In Memory of S. Austin Allibone*, a paper read before the Hist. Soc. of Pa., Dec. 8, 1890; O. B. Stebbins, sketch in *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.* (1892), XLVI, 283; Wm. Henry Eldridge, *Henry Genealogy* (1915), p. 174; MS. of the *Dictionary*, given by Allibone to Anthony J. Drexel and by him to the Lib. Co. of Phila.; Allibone correspondence in the Henry E. Huntington Lib.; personal recollections of the writer.]

V.H.P.

ALLINE, HENRY (June 14, 1748–Feb. 2, 1784), revivalist, was born in Newport, R. I., to which place his parents William and Rebecca (Clark) Alline, had moved from Boston, their native town. There seems to be no authority for spelling his name "Allen," as has been the custom in works of reference from the time of Hannah Adams's *Dictionary of Religions* (1814) down to the present. In his *Journal* he himself writes it "Alline," and in the marriage records of Boston his father's name is so written. When Henry was twelve years old his parents joined in the migration from New England to Nova Scotia

then going on, and settled in Falmouth. From boyhood the subject of religion had been uppermost in his mind, but it was not until his twenty-seventh year, after fierce inner conflicts lasting over a long period, that he became assured of his conversion. With this assurance came the conviction that he was called to be a preacher. For some time he hesitated to obey the summons, because of his scanty education, for though he had thought and read much he had had little schooling. Finally, however, he began to preach in Falmouth, and there followed an itinerant ministry that had a profound effect on the people. His view and methods were in the main those of the New Light movement, and he has been called "the Whitefield of Nova Scotia." Old churches, "churches of antichrist," their ministers "unconverted," he styled them, were divided; and new ones formed. On Apr. 6, 1779, he was ordained by lay representatives of churches he had helped to found. After some eight years of exhausting evangelistic labors, while on a visit to New England, he died in North Hampton, N. H., at the home of Rev. David McClure.

Although Alline had not the learning or saintliness of David Brainerd [*q.v.*], the lives of the two present striking similarities. Both were of the neurotic type, subject to periods of elevation and of miserable depression, both had in them the seeds of tuberculosis from which they died at an early age, both wore themselves out by their self-ignoring devotion, and both left journals of their travels and inner experience. It is commonly said that Alline founded a short-lived sect known as the Allenites. It is true that he promulgated more or less fantastic views regarding the genesis of souls and the relation of the spiritual and physical worlds, which were set forth in *Two Mites Cast into the Offering of God for the Benefit of Mankind*, an edition of which was published in Boston in 1804; but his real significance lies in the fact that he produced a New Light awakening in Nova Scotia, the effects of which are still to be discerned. His *Life and Journal* was published in Boston in 1806, and his *Hymns and Spiritual Songs* in 1802.

[Arthur W. H. Eaton, *Hist. of Kings County, Nova Scotia* (1910); David Benedict, *Gen. Hist. of the Baptist Denomination in Amer.* (1813, 1848); Duncan Campbell, *Nova Scotia* (1873); Geo. Punchard, *Hist. of Congregationalism*, IV (1880). A refutation of Alline's views was published in Halifax in 1784 by Rev. Jonathan Scott under the title, *A Brief View of the Religious Tenets and Sentiments Lately Published and Spread in the Province of Nova Scotia, etc.*]

H. E. S.

ALLIS, EDWARD PHELPS (May 12, 1824–Apr. 1, 1889), manufacturer, was born at Cazenovia, N. Y., the son of Jere Allis and Mary White. His ancestors on both sides had been among the settlers of Hatfield, Mass., in the Connecticut Valley. Young Allis was reared in conditions of comfort and moderate prosperity, as the terms were understood in those times in rural New York. He attended Union College at Schenectady, from which he was graduated in 1845, during the presidency of Dr. Eliphalet Nott. At first intending to prepare himself for the law, he changed his plans soon after graduation from college, went to Milwaukee two years before Wisconsin's admission as a state, and engaged in the leather business. In 1848 he was married to Margaret Watson of Geneva, N. Y., by whom he had twelve children. He built extensive tanneries at Two Rivers, Wis., but in 1854 disposed of his holdings and for seven years confined his operations to banking and real estate. In the first year of the Civil War, having an opportunity to buy a small iron-foundry in Milwaukee, he established the Reliance Iron Works, which he built up in his lifetime into one of the largest industrial plants in the Middle West. In 1869, when the city of Milwaukee was installing a water-system, the Allis Company by underbidding competitors obtained the contract for piping, which it filled, although when the contract was awarded the company had no machinery for making pipe. It then installed the necessary pumps and engines for the Milwaukee service and within a few years became known as one of the largest machine-shops in the country. Its products were shipped in later years to Europe, Japan, South America, and Australia. When the roller process was adopted by American flour-millers the Allis works made the new machinery that was required in hundreds of mills throughout the country. Sawmill and mining machinery and heavy pumps were also made at the Milwaukee plant. The famous Corliss engines were built there, under the direction of a graduate of the works at Providence, R. I. Before the owner's death, in 1889, the business amounted to $3,000,000 a year, with 1,200 employees. All this had been developed within a period of twenty-eight years, which included the serious business depression of 1873. In those years Allis became a convert to the Greenback faith and was that party's candidate for governor of Wisconsin in 1877. He cultivated good relations with his employees and was prompt to reward diligence and efficiency. He became a patron of art and was known as a man of genuine culture. In Milwaukee he was remembered as a pioneer who had contributed to the city's fame as an industrial center. In his own lifetime the spindles of cotton-mills in New England, the home of his ancestors for seven generations, were

driven by engines that were fabricated in his works on the western shore of Lake Michigan—a region that was only one remove from a wilderness when he migrated to it in his youth.

[The ancestry of Edward Phelps Allis is given in *Genealogy of William Allis of Hatfield, Mass., and Descendants, 1630–1919*, by Horatio D. Allis (n.d.); and in *Memorials of Elder John White, One of the First Settlers of Hartford, Conn., and of His Descendants*, by Allyn Stanley Kellogg (1860). An obituary appeared in the *Milwaukee Sentinel*, Apr. 2, 1889.] W. B. S.

ALLISON, WILLIAM BOYD (Mar. 2, 1829–Aug. 4, 1908), congressman, was born in Perry township, Ashland County, Ohio, the son of John and Margaret (Williams) Allison. His parents gave him a strong constitution; and life about the log cabin and on the farm developed him into a sturdy, dignified youth of some five feet, eight inches, with a broad frame and a bushy shock of hair. Some of that restless ambition which brought his Scotch-Irish forebears from Ireland to Pennsylvania sent their descendant searching from one early institution to another for his educational equipment. "Professor Parrot's School," two years of Wooster Academy, one of Allegheny College, an interlude of school-teaching, and a final year of life at Western Reserve constituted his academic experience. Back in Ashland County again, he gained admission to the bar at twenty and launched himself upon his legal and political career forthwith. He was twice married: in 1854, to Anna Carter who died in 1860, and in 1873 to Mary Nealley.

Like many another Ohioan of those days, Allison abandoned the Whigism of his father to unite with Democrats in the new Republican venture. They made Chase governor (1855); but Allison felt a degree of disappointment because he himself failed of election as district attorney. In this mood he set his face westward, first toward Chicago and thence by chance to Galena and across the Mississippi to Dubuque, Ia. The Dubuque of those days was a place to stir the imagination—the chief city between St. Louis and St. Paul, thriving on river commerce, and optimistic about becoming a railroad center to tap the rich hinterland westward. Here Allison stopped and remained. He entered the law firm of Samuels & Allison, but politics proved a more engaging profession. The aggressiveness of the Middle West found expression in the Allison of the next ten years. From that stronghold of the Democrats, Dubuque, he set forth to help unite the Republican organization of the state sufficiently to elect Kirkwood governor in 1859. At Chicago in 1860 he switched from futile support of his friend Chase to Lincoln as the candidate, giving the party more assurance. As a special aid on Kirkwood's staff in 1861, he raised and equipped four regiments in northeastern Iowa, securing important coöperation from Major-General Baker. Finally the congressional Republican organization recognized him in 1862 with a nomination to Congress from the newly created third district, and a combination of absentee soldier votes and local personal effectiveness made Allison a member of the Iowa delegation in the Thirty-eighth Congress, a place he retained four terms. Thus, he passed under the tutelage of Thaddeus Stevens at the same time as did Blaine and Garfield.

As a representative, Allison labored for harmony between loyalty to his party and loyalty to his section, a balancing feat incumbent upon all successful congressmen. He usually avoided a vindictive attitude toward his associates, cultivating a normal friendliness instead. As a Republican from the inception of the party, he gave his vote to the Lincoln administration for new loans, continuance of the bounty system, amendment of the National Bank Act, and the Thirteenth Amendment, and acted with the majority in the House on the impeachment of Johnson and the Wade-Davis reconstruction program. As a midwestern representative he at all times advocated Mississippi improvements and increased transportation largess; and he sometimes voted with the inflationists on the currency issue. His current tariff pronouncements urged the lowering of wool and iron schedules to give the Middle Border less costly clothing and cheaper iron rails. It was his uneven record on the currency (*Palimpsest*, VI, 274) and his urgency for lowered schedules throughout his congressional period that made Allison's reputation as a moderationist—a reputation which was to cling to him through his thirty-five years in the Senate and to determine his peculiar function and unique importance in that body. By 1869 Allison felt that his constituents, for whom he had fought many a battle in the Ways and Means Committee, should place him in the Senate. Disappointment came then, and again in 1870. Eastern tariff interests propagandized the state against him; his chief competitor for the nomination, James Harlan, was more widely known at home than he; and Allison's entanglement with Blaine and others in railroad-construction projects lessened his availability (*Atlantic*, LXX, 549; Oberholtzer, *History of the United States* (1922), II, 545, 602 ff.; T. C. Smith, *Life and Letters of James Abram Garfield* (1925), pp. 528 ff.). It is significant of this period in American development that Allison's career, like that of two of his coadjutors, Garfield and Henry Wilson, suffered no permanent ill effects from the disclosures. He simply put the

matter behind him, enjoyed a European trip (1871) which gave him contacts with foreign students of finance, and returned to ride into the Senate on a wave of anti-Harlanism (1872).

Allison ran as a Grant supporter and yet enjoyed the favor of the liberals. A curious ability to unite opposing groups had become his forte; and he employed it so effectively throughout the next three decades that the erratic state of Weaver, of Larrabee, and of Cummins returned him to the Senate five times successively. He employed as senator a personal technique of rare effectiveness: an invariable friendliness in manner of approach which brought liking without dangerous intimacy; an unobtrusiveness and a lack of great wealth which allayed jealousy; a ready expression of sympathy for younger politicians and an avoidance of controversy which maintained his leadership of the delegation at Washington; a moderation of speech and of outward attitude which gave conservative constituents a sense of security and radical constituents a gleam of hope. And one thing more—the capstone to the whole edifice of his local and national success—Allison had become identified with the nation-wide, expansive business urge of the time, especially in the fields of manufacturing and transportation. He chose the two highest official committees with the result that he was chairman of Appropriations for twenty-seven years (1881–1908), and had a place on Finance during thirty years. Also as senior senator he inherited from Sherman in 1897 the highest unofficial place in the Senate, chairmanship of the caucus. These powerful committeeships of course ramified influentially into the committee on committees and the steering committee, and brought Allison into close harmony with the other dominant beneficiaries by seniority, Aldrich, O. H. Platt, Spooner, and Hale. Allison's special function in the joint leadership was best described by its dominant personality, Senator Aldrich, as that of "a master of the arts of conciliation and construction." Such he was in currency legislation, when his amendment emasculated Bland's bill (1878) but stayed the appetite of Silverites by substituting, for remonetization, limited silver purchase and a bimetallic conference (*Congressional Record,* 45 Cong., 2 Sess., H. R. No. 1093). Again (1892), to gain time for the passing of the silver craze he acted as chairman of the Brussels Monetary Conference. In Cleveland's second term he actively offset the silver majority of the Finance Committee and Senate. The Gold Standard Act (1900) followed upon careful preliminary coöperation between Allison, Platt, and Aldrich. Rooseveltian tendencies toward currency expansion were forestalled by united action between Allison, Aldrich, O. H. Platt, and Cannon. Thus Allison became one of the few western men popular with eastern financiers, who felt that his conservatism bore evidence of genius.

The tariff gave Allison the special school and theatre of his powers. As party harmonizers, he and Morrill and Aldrich united the Republican caucus behind that substitute for the Mills bill which brought Republican victory in 1888 and acknowledged its commitments in 1890 in the form of the McKinley tariff. In his rôle of moderate protectionist he often won encomiums from local constituents, while national protective organizations were lauding his work with Aldrich for drastic enforcement of customs regulations (1888–90). Democrats demonstrated a like confidence in him, particularly as regards the sugar schedule of 1894. The burden of reconciling conflicting importunities, especially on lumber, coal, and silver, for the so-called Dingley bill (1897) was shouldered by Allison. In the days of Roosevelt the result of the united efforts of Allison, Platt, and Aldrich is summed up in the fact that the Roosevelt administration postponed settlement of the tariff until the days of its successor.

Transportation legislation was Allison's greatest problem. He sympathized fully with railroad needs as voiced by Perkins, Hughitt, Fish, and Dodge and always worked hard to justify their faith in him. Yet he realized the closeness of the subject to everyday life, to legislative usage, to campaign exigencies; seeing intervention inevitable he sought to guide it into safe channels. From 1885, when Cullom as chairman of the Interstate Commerce Committee found Allison the safe man to follow, until the era of Hepburn's bill (1906), when Roosevelt utilized an amendment bearing Allison's name for reaching an agreement with conservative opponents, Iowa's senior senator was balancing the railroad problem for many Republicans. In the words of Depew, "He could grant to an adversary an amendment with such grace and deference to superior judgment that the flattered enemy accepted a few suggestions from the master as a tribute to his talents. The post-mortem revealed his mistake" (*Congressional Record,* 60 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 1988).

When death took Allison he was the senior, by eight years, of any colleague left in the Senate; he was a national institution; and by reason of that fact the Republican party stood in immense debt to this moderationist. Not a campaign from 1880 on but he had helped to correlate the concrete necessities of the national committee with congressional performance. Not a party split from

the days of Conkling and Garfield to those of Aldrich and Roosevelt but he served as a go-between. Scarcely a legislative tangle but what this most modest and benignant of drill-sergeants, almost first on the roll-call, beckoned pleasantly for the faithful to follow. His political value was further enhanced by his disinclination to demand that his party pay him in kind. Cabinet honors he declined from Garfield, Harrison, and McKinley. He continued the even tenor of his way, enjoying with three or four others control through the Senate of the political affairs of the expanding republic.

[The chief available source in general is the *Cong. Rec.* with accompanying docs. Iowan background is furnished by the *Annals of Ia.*, ser. 3; *Ia. Hist. Rec.*; *Ia. Jour. of Hist. and Politics*; the *Palimpsest*; D. E. Clark, *Kirkwood* (1917); J. E. Briggs, *Hepburn* (1913); J. Brigham, *Harlan* (1913); F. E. Haynes, *Third Party Movements* (1916); O. B. Clark, *Politics of Ia.* (1911); and S. J. Buck, *Granger Movement* (1913). Allison's personal and private papers are available only under restrictions in the Hist., Memorial, and Art Dept. of Ia.]

J.P.N.

ALLOEZ (ALLOUES), CLAUDE JEAN. [See ALLOUEZ, CLAUDE JEAN, 1622–1689.]

ALLOUEZ, CLAUDE JEAN (June 6, 1622–Aug. 27, 1689), Jesuit missionary, was born at Saint-Didier, Haute Loire, France. He graduated in his seventeenth year from the college at Le Puy, where one of his masters was the famous missionary François Regis, from whom he acquired his own missionary zeal. In 1639 he entered the Jesuit novitiate at Toulouse, pursuing his clerical studies in the same city and later at Billom and Rodez. He was ordained priest in 1655, and in 1658 went to Canada with the newly appointed governor of New France, Pierre d'Argenson. After three years of labor among Indian tribes along the St. Lawrence, he became superior at Three Rivers. Whilst there July 21, 1663, he was appointed vicar general for all the natives and traders of the northwest. This office required him to visit the tribes in that territory, to obtain missionaries, to regulate the relations of the traders with the natives, and to open new missions.

He set out for Lake Superior in 1664, but missing the canoe flotilla for that year, he was obliged to wait until Aug. 8, 1665. The Indians, who did not want his company, thrice abandoned him, and finally only consented to his presence on his doing his share of the paddling and portages. He arrived on Sept 2 at Lake Superior, or, as he named it, Lac de Tracy, and on Oct. 1 at Chequamegon (Ashland) Bay, where, at La Pointe on Madeline Island, he found a large village with a force of 800 warriors, the aggregation of seven different tribes. On May 6, 1667, he left for Lake Nipigon,

a distance, allowing for detours, of about 1,500 miles. At that place he found many Christian Indians, particularly the Nipissiriniens, who had taken refuge there after the slaughter by the Iroquois of the various tribes in the Ontario country. After two weeks, Allouez returned to his people at La Pointe. There he persuaded the "Queues Coupées" (the Kiskakon clan of Ottawas) to renounce their superstitions and polygamy. To satisfy the need thus created for new missionaries, he carried the news to Quebec, where the superiors, not having heard from him for over two years, had given him up for dead. After remaining for only two days, he returned to his western missions.

In 1669 he was back in Quebec with a number of Iroquois captives whom he had ransomed. After a brief stay he again returned to the west, this time to the Potawatomi, near Green Bay, then the Baie des Puants, with whom he spent the winter. On Apr. 16, 1670, he left them in order to go to the Outagamies. His diary of this journey contains observations on natural history, and an account of the eclipse of the sun which occurred on Apr. 19. On that day he reached Lake Winnebago, which he called St. Francis Xavier. The next day, Sunday, he celebrated mass on the site of the present city of Oshkosh. On Apr. 25 he established St. Mark's Mission (location uncertain). He left St. Mark's on Apr. 27 and two days later came among the Miamis and the Mascoutens, and founded the mission of St. James. He next spent some months at Sault Ste. Marie, leaving there with Father Dablon in September, for the Green Bay missions. On June 4, 1671, he was the orator of the day at the Sault when the northwest territory was solemnly declared to be subject to the King of France by M. de Saint Lusson, delegated for that purpose by the Governor at Quebec. The same year, when Marquette and Joliet started on the search for the Mississippi, Allouez returned to Green Bay to establish the Mission of Rapides des Pères, now De Pere (Wisconsin), on Fox River, where the State Historical Society of Wisconsin has built a monument to him near the site of the house and chapel which he occupied. In 1674 there were over 2,000 Christian Indians at this mission. A fine monstrance presented to the mission by Nicholas Perrot in 1686 was plowed up at the site in 1802.

When news came of Marquette's death, May 18, 1675, Allouez was ordered to continue Marquette's work among the Illinois. He started in October 1676, but owing to the severity of the winter could not reach his mission until the following March. On the way, on the eve of St. Joseph's Day, Mar. 18, he reached Lake Michi-

gan, which he called St. Joseph. He canoed over seventy-six leagues to the Illinois country, where he was well received and conducted to the wigwam at Kaskaskia. After prospecting for a central mission station, he came back to Green Bay, but returned in 1678 to the Illinois, where he passed the rest of his life, eleven years, until his death among the Miamis, near the site of Niles, Mich. Father Dablon styled him a second Francis Xavier. He is said to have baptized fully 10,000 Indians and to have preached to about 100,000. The citizens of Niles erected a huge granite cross on the supposed site of his grave.

[R. G. Thwaites, *Jesuit Relations and Allied Docs.* (1896–1901), Allouez's contributions being found in the *Relations* of 1666–67, 1669–70, 1672–73, 1673–74, 1679; T. J. Campbell, *Pioneer Priests of North America* (1911), vol. III; J. S. La Boule, *Claude Jean Allouez, the Apostle of the Ottawas* (Parkman Club Pubs., no. 17, Milwaukee, 1897); Chrysostom Verwyst, *Missionary Labors of Fathers Marquette, Menard and Allouez* (1886).]

J.J.W.

ALLSTON, ROBERT FRANCIS WITHERS (Apr. 21, 1801–Apr. 7, 1864), planter, governor of South Carolina, was descended from John Alston, son of William Alston, Gentleman, of Hammersmith, Middlesex, England, who began in 1682 a seven-year apprenticeship to a certain James Jones, merchant of Charles Town (A. S. Salley, Jr., "John Alston," *South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine,* VI, 114–16). This first Alston in South Carolina seems to have preferred the spelling "Alston," but during the first three generations that form was replaced by "Allston." Late in the eighteenth century, however, one branch of the family, by reverting to the earlier spelling, introduced a now recognized division into double and single "l" Alstons (Lionel Creswell, *Stemmata Alstoniana,* 1905, and J. A. Groves, *Alstons and Allstons,* 1901). John Alston, the immigrant, prospered, acquired wide lands, and became the founder of a family whose members were, for the most part, planters of the "low country." In the course of time Waccamaw Neck, All Saints' Parish, became the chief seat of the Allstons (H. A. M. Smith, "Hobcaw Barony," *South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine,* XIV, 61–80).

Robert F. W. Allston, of the fifth generation, was of the Alston blood both by his father, Benjamin Allston, and his mother, Charlotte Anne Allston, who were second cousins. The fifth of six children, he was born at Brookgreen Plantation in All Saints' Parish, S. C. His early education was received at Waldo's School in Georgetown. At the age of sixteen he entered West Point Military Academy and graduated in June 1821. He was appointed lieutenant in the 3rd Artillery and assigned to duty with the Coast Survey. After taking part in the survey of the harbors of Plymouth and Provincetown, Mass., and the entrance of Mobile Bay, he resigned his commission (February 1822) in order to assume the management of the plantation of his now widowed mother. In this occupation he did not abandon, however, the profession of civil engineer and was elected in 1823 to the office of surveyor general of South Carolina. In 1828, after two terms as surveyor general, he was elected from the parish of Prince George, Winyah, to the lower house of the General Assembly. In the legislature he acted with the State-Rights party which was then evolving the doctrine of nullification. In 1830 he was reëlected as a candidate of that party, but was defeated in 1832 by a Unionist. In the next month, however, he ran successfully for the state Senate (see files of *Charleston Courier* and *Charleston Mercury,* 1828, 1830, 1832). He was regularly returned to this body until his election as governor in 1856, and from 1847 to 1856 he was its presiding officer. He continued in his support of state-rights principles, but was inclined to favor coöperation on the part of the slaveholding states in preference to separate state action (MS. notes on the Nashville Convention). During the nullification episode he was made colonel of the militia and subsequently deputy adjutant-general. In 1832 he married Adele Petigru, sister of James Louis Petigru [*q.v.*]. With the latter his relations were in every way cordial, but such was the independence of his mind that he seems not to have been deflected from his political views by Petigru's ardent championship of the Union. In fact, the Petigrus regarded this tall, "good-looking" Allston as a trifle "obstinate." In 1842 he was nominated, against his wishes, to oppose J. H. Hammond in the election for governor. In 1850 he was a delegate to the Nashville Convention. His term as governor, 1856–58, occurred in one of the rare intervals of comparative quietude in the political history of ante-bellum South Carolina, a fact which enabled him to employ talents for organization and administration which he possessed in an eminent degree. His energies were expended upon the development of railroads, improvement of agricultural methods, and correction of the inefficient public-school system. A report on the last prepared by Allston in 1846 was made the basis of reform (*Reports and Resolutions of General Assembly,* 1847, pp. 210–43).

This long and active public career was made possible by the harmony existing between the social and political life in ante-bellum South Carolina. Allston had come to be, chiefly through his own efforts, one of the foremost planters and

slave-owners in the state. He was one of the last of the rice barons of the "low country." In the reclaiming of swamp land, in the ditching and diking of rice-fields, his knowledge of engineering served him well. The results of some of his experiments were set forth in two elaborate treatises: *A Memoir of the Introduction and Planting of Rice in South Carolina* (1843) and *An Essay on Sea Coast Crops* (1854). The fact that the former is still regarded as the most authoritative treatment of the subject would seem to justify the praise of a contemporary reviewer: "Such essays do more for the advancement of agricultural science than can well be conceived" (*DeBow's Review*, I, 356). Indeed, it is upon his success as a planter and scientific agriculturist that Allston's claim upon the memory of posterity, in the main, must rest. He died in the midst of the Civil War. He was engaged at the time in cultivating his lands in order to contribute foodstuffs to his Confederate countrymen.

[The chief source of information about Allston is a great mass of undigested manuscript material in the possession of his daughter, Mrs. C. A. Hill. Another daughter, Mrs. Elizabeth W. A. Pringle, has given an intimate account of her father in her *Chronicles of Chicora Wood* (1922). A sketch of Allston's life appeared in *DeBow's Rev.*, XII, 574–75. Obituaries were published in the *Charleston Mercury*, Apr. 23, 1864, and in the *Charleston Courier*, Apr. 12, 1864.] J. H. E.

ALLSTON, WASHINGTON (Nov. 5, 1779–July 9, 1843), artist and author, was a member of a prominent South Carolina family. On Jan. 19, 1775, Capt. William Allston, Gentleman, was married to Rachel Moore, a colonial beauty of three-quarter French Huguenot extraction. The family trees of both Rachel and her widower husband bristled with governors and doughty warriors against the Indians. In 1781, upon his return from the battle of Cowpens, Capt. Allston was seized with a mysterious illness: poisoned, according to a persistent rumor, by a trusted servant. His wife, left with three infants, of whom Washington was the second, later married Henry C. Flagg, chief of the medical staff of Greene's army. Though Dr. Flagg was viewed by Widow Allston's people as a mere Yankee adventurer, Rachel declared that she had "married once to please her family"; she was "now determined to please herself."

Washington Allston early betrayed what was deemed a deplorable knack for drawing. Before the age of six, according to his own account, he locked himself in his room and commenced a picture in oils of the eruption of Vesuvius; and his family was so distressed by its excellence that they feared he might disgrace them all by becoming an artist. He was shipped by his stepfather to Newport, "in order that his nervous and high-strung organization might be recruited by a more bracing air." With a fatal instinct, he here sought out as one of his earliest associates a certain Mr. King who made quadrants and compasses and occasionally painted portraits. The youngster haunted the quadrant shop—but not to look at compasses. He remained in Newport until 1796, when, at the age of seventeen, he entered Harvard. Although undistinguished in scholarship, he was inordinate in his interests and curiosities. He admired Southey's poetry, and the Della Cruscans, whom he soon abandoned, however, "for the manliness of Churchill" (Flagg, p. 27). On his own part he took to writing verse, and was chosen to declaim on occasions both public and private. Of the theatre, dancing, and wine, he was exceedingly fond; and when old Major Brattle, prince of epicures, invited him to dinner, he celebrated the prospect by a day of preliminary fasting. By his classmates he was nicknamed "Count." Not only did he exhibit a flair for caricature, but his landlord, Don Clark, bore witness to other of his peculiarities: "He has painted a woman, stark naked, going into the water to wash herself. It is as natural as life. Mr. Allston, sir, is quite a genius" (*Ibid.*, pp. 23–24). Though morbidly shy with women, by his junior year he had become engaged to be married to the sister of his fellow student, William Ellery Channing. It was, however, to be a protracted engagement.

In August 1800, after his graduation, Allston came to terms with his stepfather, who wanted to make a physician of him, and wrote to his mother that he was resolved to stake his career upon painting. This step taken, he returned to Carolina; sold hastily and at a sacrifice, so it is said, "a considerable patrimonial estate"; and sailed for London in May 1801. For three years he was a student at the Royal Academy, under Benjamin West. In November 1803 he migrated to Paris, where he painted in the Louvre for several months, and thence, by way of Switzerland, into Italy, where he spent what were, perhaps, the four richest years of his life. He stopped first in Siena to learn Italian, then visited Venice, and spent a year studying and painting in the galleries of Florence. In March 1805 he entered the Eternal City. Raphael, Michelangelo (then fallen into disrepute), and the Venetians, so Allston recognized in Italy, were his authentic masters. In Rome began his long and close friendship with Coleridge and with Washington Irving. Years later, Allston said: "To no other man do I owe so much intellectually as to Mr. Coleridge who has honored me with his friendship for more than five and twenty years"; and Coleridge to Allston:

"Had I not known the Wordsworths [I] should have esteemed and loved you first and most; and, as it is, next to them I love and honor you." Between Irving and Allston a young man's intimacy immediately took place. Together they rambled about the city, and before each new recurrent wonder, according to Irving, Allston's "eyes would dilate; his pale countenance would flush; he would breathe quick, and almost gasp in expressing his feelings." But all the while, Ann Channing awaited Allston's return to Newport. In 1808 he left Rome for Boston and marriage. It was Benjamin West's conviction that this was a fatal step. There survives no evidence that Allston felt for his bride any of the vivid enthusiasm so variously expressed for his friends and for his art. His old classmate, Jarvis, reports: "I found him, on the morning after his nuptials, at his usual hour, engaged in his customary occupations."

After two years in Boston, Allston, his wife, and his young friend and pupil, S. F. B. Morse [*q.v.*], sailed for Liverpool, to be joined six months later by Charles R. Leslie [*q.v.*]. Throughout the War of 1812, this group, though enemy aliens, resided peaceably and unmolested in England. Allston painted with feverish absorption, producing at this time what is perhaps the greatest of his paintings, *Dead Man Revived by Touching the Bones of the Prophet Elisha,* a prize picture, bought for $3,500 by the Pennsylvania Academy of Art. His career was now interrupted, however, by an illness from which he never completely recovered. During his convalescence he painted the famous portrait of Coleridge, and saw through the press a volume of verse, *The Sylphs of the Seasons with other Poems* (1813)—verse sentimental and satirical, praised by Wordsworth and Southey. Rapidly upon his own illness followed the death of his wife, and a period of morbid depression, insomnia, and horrid thought. He completed *The Agony of Judas,* in his own judgment "the finest head I ever painted." But he destroyed it "lest it might some time have an immoral effect upon some perverted imagination." He was confirmed an Episcopalian, and from thence on devoted himself to an intensive cultivation of the Christian virtues. But despite illness, bereavement, insomnia, and a hypersensitive regard for purity and piety, his artistic productivity was at its apex. *Uriel in the Sun* and *Jacob's Ladder* had increased his reputation, and no other man in England was so competent and eligible to succeed Benjamin West, then aged and infirm, as president of the Royal Academy. At this juncture, he learned that "through the mismanagement and dishonesty of his agent in South Carolina his patrimony was exhausted." Faced with this misfortune, he made what was the most momentous decision of his life. He decided to return to America. And with this resolve, his career as an artist terminated.

He returned to America in 1818, and again made Boston his home. In ill health, worried by debts, without stimulus but what he found in himself, with prosaic surroundings, his studio a badly lighted barn, without models or means for his art, he started to work revising the huge canvas of *Belshazzar's Feast* which, in England, he had all but finished. Ten friends contributed $1,000 each to be paid for this picture upon its completion. But year after year dragged itself out, and the painting, endlessly refusing to realize itself to his satisfaction, grew to be both an obsession and an incubus. At his death twenty-five years later it was still unfinished. Allston remarried, and moved to Cambridgeport. His wife, Martha R. Dana, was the cousin, on the maternal side, of his first wife, and sister of his college friend Richard Henry Dana [*q.v.*]. The circles in which he moved were content to admire him as a Christian without making any critical demands upon him as an artist. In August 1841 he published *Monaldi*—"not with the pretensions of a Novel," as he says in the Introductory Note, "but simply as a Tale." It had been written in 1822, for the short-lived serial of Dana, *The Idle Man.* The scene is Italy; the hero is an artist; the villain, a defeated man of letters. It is a story of jealousy, envy, and revenge, after the manner of Mrs. Radcliffe, whom Allston especially admired. At Cambridgeport he also began the preparation of a course of lectures on art, only four of which he completed, and none of which he ever delivered. They were published posthumously by R. H. Dana, Jr. Allston died in Cambridge, July 9, 1843. Whether due to his illness, to the unstimulating environment of America, to the incompatibility between his art and his pietistic religion, or to some deeper defect of personality, certain it is that the productions of his later years had failed to bear out his earlier promise.

[The official life of Washington Allston was to have been written by Richard Henry Dana. The latter's notes and unfinished manuscripts passed into the hands of Jared B. Flagg, whose *Life and Letters of Washington Allston* (1892) is the fullest account in existence. Flagg's biography, if supplemented by M. F. Sweetser's *Allston* (1879), is invaluable. Typical of the contemporary moral adulation of Allston are Charles Sumner's Phi Beta Kappa address, *The Scholar, the Jurist, the Artist, and the Philanthropist* (1846), and the sermon by J. A. Albro, *The Blessedness of Those Who Die in the Lord* (1843).]

R. W.

ALLYN, ROBERT (Jan. 25, 1817–Jan. 7, 1894), educator, was a direct descendant in the eighth generation of Capt. Robert Allyn, one of the early

settlers of New London, Conn. He was born on a farm at Ledyard, Conn., received the customary district-school training, and in 1837 entered Wesleyan University. Here he distinguished himself in both mathematics and the languages, and was voted the best student in his class. Graduating in 1841, he was married on Nov. 18 of the same year to Emeline Denison. For two years he taught mathematics in Wesleyan Academy at Wilbraham, Mass. He had entered the New England Conference of the Methodist Church in 1842, and from 1843 to 1845 he was stationed at Colchester, Conn. His first wife died in 1844, leaving him with two children, and on June 22, 1845, he married Mary Budington, by whom he later had three children. He became principal of Wesleyan Academy in 1846 and principal of the Providence Conference Seminary at East Greenwich, R. I. in 1848. Through his interest in abolition and prohibition he was drawn into politics and was twice elected to the legislature. His chief service to the state, however, was as commissioner of public schools, 1854–57, when he founded and edited the *Rhode Island Schoolmaster,* an excellent educational magazine which continued until 1875, when it was merged in the *New England Journal of Education.* His contributions to this magazine, as well as to others, such as the *Methodist Quarterly Review,* and his educational reports as commissioner, particularly his *Special Report on Truancy and Absenteeism in Rhode Island* (1856), were notable for their lucidity, thoroughness, and practicality. In September 1857 he resigned the commissionership to become professor of ancient languages in Ohio University at Athens, Ohio. Two years later he was elected president of Wesleyan Female Academy at Cincinnati. In 1863 he became president of McKendree College in Illinois. He was active in the establishment of the Southern Illinois State Normal University and was its first president (1874–92).

Allyn united dignity and ease in his personal bearing and in his educational work. Much influenced by Pestalozzi, he emphasized the importance of interest, without, however, sacrificing discipline. A distinct liberal, he strove to infuse the experimental spirit into education. He labored through writings, addresses, and meetings to educate parents at the same time as their children. His whole life was devoted to the school and the church.

[Biog. sketch in John Williston Cook's *Educational Hist. of Ill.* (1912), pp. 235–37; *Alumni Record of Wesleyan Univ.* (1911); Chas. Carroll, *Public Ed. in R. I.* (1918).] E. S. B.

ALMY, JOHN JAY (Apr. 24, 1815–May 16, 1895), naval officer, the son of Samuel Almy, was born in Newport, R. I. Losing his parents at an early age, he was allowed by his guardian, an elder brother, to follow his boyish bent, which led him while still a child into the navy. Warranted midshipman at fourteen, he served his apprenticeship in the *Concord* on the Mediterranean Station (1830–32), and in the next twenty years cruised over half the globe in ships of the old sailing navy. He served as lieutenant on the *Ohio* during the Mexican War, and commanded the *Fulton* off Nicaragua in 1857, when the filibuster, Gen. Walker, surrendered to Admiral Paulding. That officer in his report said: "Lieutenant Commander Almy performed his part of the work exceedingly well, and is an officer who can be relied upon at all times" (L. R. Hamersly, *Records of the Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps,* 1894, p. 16). Though denied the honor of participating in notable engagements during the Civil War, he was assigned the equally important, arduous, and exacting service of maintaining the blockade of Confederate ports. He not only performed this service with high efficiency but wrote of it in fresh, incisive language. In his official reports and in a narrative of later years, the sea-worn life of the blockading cruisers is vividly described. That the months of hardship off the gale-swept coasts were lightened by hours of thrilling triumph is also shown by Almy's record. While commanding the *Connecticut* in 1864, he captured four noted blockade-runners and destroyed four others. The captured vessels were adjudged worth $1,063,352.49, or more than four per cent of the adjudicated value of the prizes taken during the war. In his career following the conflict, Almy personally substantiated the claim that naval officers are the real diplomats of the State Department. Serving on distant stations, in the successive grades of captain, commodore, and rear admiral, he cultivated and won by tactful services and courtesies the friendship of the rulers and peoples of Brazil and Hawaii. While commanding the Pacific Squadron in 1873, he landed a body of seamen in Panama during a violent revolution, maintained order, and kept the railroad across the Isthmus running until the end of hostilities. For these services he was thanked by the business men and the corps of foreign consuls of Panama. Retiring in 1877, he set the record of the longest sea service, twenty-seven years and ten months, of any officer since the founding of the navy. He passed the years of his retirement and died in Washington, D. C. A typical seaman in appearance, he was a gentleman of the finest tact and courtesy.

[Almy's official reports during the Civil War are found in the *Official Records.* See also his "Incidents of the Blockade" in *War Papers of the Mil. Order of the Loyal*

Legion of the U.S., D.C. Commandery. For further material his official service record, Navy Dept., and sketches in the *Army and Navy Jour.* and *Army and Navy Reg.*, both of May 18, 1895, should be consulted.]

A. MacC. S.

ALOES (ALOUES) CLAUDE JEAN. [See ALLOUEZ, CLAUDE JEAN, 1622–1689.]

ALPHONCE (ALPHONSE), JEAN. [See ALLEFONSCE, JEAN, *c.* 1482–*c.* 1557.]

ALPHONSA, MOTHER (May 20, 1851–July 9, 1926), philanthropist, religious superior, was Rose, youngest and last surviving child of Nathaniel and Sophia (Peabody) Hawthorne. She was born at Lenox, Mass., but in her third year the family moved to Liverpool where Hawthorne served as consul. Subsequently they traveled extensively in Europe, returning to the United States in 1861. Hawthorne died at Plymouth, N. H., May 18, 1864, when Rose was thirteen years of age. In 1868 Mrs. Hawthorne returned to Europe with her three children Julian, Una, and Rose. She died in England in 1871 when Rose was twenty years of age. Shortly thereafter the latter was married to George Parsons Lathrop [*q.v.*]in London. Both were converted to the Roman Catholic faith in 1891. Lathrop died in 1898.

Rose Hawthorne inherited rich literary and cultural traditions from her parents. Her education had been carefully supervised by them and she shared the enriching experience of travel and the distinguished friendships which played so large a rôle in the lives of her parents. She was alert, widely informed, thoroughly cultured, forceful, and kindly. She published a little volume of verse *Along the Shore* in 1888. The files of *St. Nicholas* contain a number of short sketches from her pen. Her *Memories of Hawthorne* appeared first serially in the *Atlantic Monthly*, being published as a volume in 1897. A second edition appeared in 1923 with a Prelude by Maurice Francis Egan. Mr. and Mrs. Lathrop published as joint authors in 1894 *A Story of Courage*, a history of the Georgetown Visitation Convent, based on a study of its archives.

In 1896 Mrs. Lathrop became interested in the victims of incurable cancer and opened a small home for the care of them. As the work grew she determined to consecrate her life to it, founding a religious Sisterhood known as Servants of Relief for Incurable Cancer and taking the name of Sister Alphonsa, as a member of the Community. The work was permanently established at Rosary Hill Home, Hawthorne, N. Y., in 1901. A second Home known as St. Rose's was opened in New York City in 1912. Only victims of incurable cancer, without friends and utterly without resources, were received, no distinction as to race or creed being known among the patients cared for. Such sympathy with suffering was traditional in the Hawthorne family. Mother Alphonsa's sister, Una, spent her last years in caring for destitute children in London, where she died in 1877. Mother Alphonsa's own vision, which brought the victims of cancer within the embrace of her sympathy, rested on a profound spiritual insight and corresponding impulse toward self-effacing service. It is said that she succeeded in maintaining a spirit of wholesome joy among those whom she served, in spite of the dreadful realities of suffering with which she dealt. Her death on July 9, 1926, brought forth unusual tributes from the American press.

Mother Alphonsa's literary activity practically ceased when she gave herself up to the care of her cancer patients. She wrote, however, a general introduction to a limited edition of Hawthorne's works in 1900 and an admirable preface for the new edition of *Memories of Hawthorne* in 1923. While this volume consists in large measure of the letters of her gifted mother, the author's text reveals extraordinary powers of insight and description, and the style takes on at times a quality of haunting beauty.

[Some details of the childhood of Rose Hawthorne are found in *Hawthorne and His Wife* (1885) by Julian Hawthorne, her brother; this work, however, contains practically no information about Mother Alphonsa after her childhood. Her *Memories of Hawthorne* furnishes good insight into the temperament, associations, and culture of the author. See also obituaries and appreciations in *Catholic World*, Aug. 1926; *Outlook*, July 21, 1926; *Lit. Digest*, May 15, 1926 and July 31, 1926. The archives of the Rosary Hill Home contain little personal information.]

W. J. K.

ALSOP, GEORGE (b. 1638), author, owes his narrow escape from total oblivion to a single book, boasting one of the longest titles on record: *A Character of the Province of Mary-Land, wherein is Described in four distinct Parts, (Viz.) I The Scituation, and plenty of the Province. II The Laws, Customs, and natural Demeanor of the Inhabitant. III The worst and best Usage of a Mary-Land Servant, opened in view. IV The Traffique and vendable Commodities of the Countrey. Also a small Treatise on the wilde and naked Indians (or Susquehanokes) of Mary-Land, their Customs, Manners, Absurdities, & Religion. Together with a Collection of Historical Letters* (Lond., 1666). The little that is known of Alsop's life is derived almost entirely from this book. After an apprenticeship of two years to some unknown trade in London, he left England in 1658, owing, according to his own account, to his hatred for the Puritans, and became an indented servant for four years to Thomas Stockett, one

of four brothers who came out in this same year to Baltimore County, Md. Alsop was kindly treated by his master, and being of an enthusiastic temperament, conceived an unbounded admiration for the new colony. At the close of his period of servitude he was seriously ill, and soon after returned to England, published his book, and disappeared from history, unless he was the author of a volume of *Sermons* brought out later by some one of the same name.

Alsop's book bears internal evidence of being written for the purpose of stimulating emigration to America. He had the modern salesman's ability to see only the virtues of the thing he advertises and to go into a fine moral indignation against any who belittle it. As a result his work is more trustworthy as a record of the permanent psychology of publicity than as a strict historical account. Written in a high-flown and exaggerated style it eulogizes indiscriminately every phase of the Maryland colony. "Neither do I think there is any place under the Heavenly altitude, or that has footing or room upon the circular Globe of this world, that can parallel this fertile and pleasant piece of ground" (1902 ed., p. 32). Nevertheless as one of the earliest and fullest descriptions of Maryland it retains considerable value as a historical source, particularly with regard to the Susquehanna Indians, although even here some of its statements such as that "Their skins are naturally white, but altered from their originals by the several dyings of Roots and Barks" (*Ibid.*, p. 77) will hardly bear too close a scrutiny.

[The original edition of Alsop's *Maryland* was "Printed by T. J. for Peter Dring at the sign of the Sun in the Poultrey," Lond. 1666. A reprint edited by J. G. Shea was published in 1869 (reissued 1880). Another reprint, with introduction and notes by N. D. Mereness, was published in 1902. All contain Alsop's portrait, in which Shea fancied he perceived the character of a "rollicking roysterer."]

E. S. B.

ALSOP, RICHARD (Jan. 23, 1761–Aug. 20, 1815), satirist, poet, was one of the few millionaires of his generation, and was also, in many ways, the most gifted of the "Hartford Wits," among whom, says his friend, Elihu Hubbard Smith, he was the moon shining among lesser lights. He was the oldest son of Richard and Mary (Wright) Alsop. From his father, a prominent merchant of Middletown, Conn., he inherited a taste for business, an affectionate disposition, and a shaping force in his life—a passionate love of books. Against the tumultuous days of the new republic, Alsop, though no recluse, appears as a gentleman-financier of conservative Connecticut, possessing beneath a playfully humorous manner a rare aptitude for writing. His

verse had a tincture of learning. One of his four sisters testifies to his early erudition acquired both at home and from tutors (*The Charms of Fancy*, 1856, pp. viii–ix), and it is probable that he entered Yale College in the class of 1778, a class distinguished by Noah Webster and Joel Barlow (*Catalogus Recentium in Collegio Yalensi*, 1774). Of his connection with Yale little is known save that he received in 1798 the degree of M.A. Whatever the sources, his acquaintance with classical literature was apparent even in boyhood; stories survive of his dramatic impersonations of the *Iliad*. His absorption in books, however, begot in him less learning than a rich culture which found expression in skill with modern languages and in poetry based on old legends. His leisure, his cultivation, and his talent for fluent poetry make him seem a precursor of Longfellow, the poet of a more tranquil age. Alsop translated from French, Spanish, and from the Scandinavian, the last-named study influencing his epic, "The Conquest of Scandinavia" (published in part in Elihu Hubbard Smith's *American Poems*, Litchfield, 1793). All his writings attributed to this early period and unpublished (a Greek poem on the Trojan War; translations from Silius Italicus and from the French of Florian and the Italian of Monti) proclaim him a poet deeply in debt to European culture. This remains true, despite his interest in field sports, natural history, taxidermy, and shrewd trading on the Connecticut River.

As part of his talent for literature Alsop adapted himself readily to the prevalent mode in writing satire. Like Freneau and Odell, he won fame by jests at the foibles of his time, but, unlike these, his pen was more playful than caustic. He had no part in the Revolution, but his letters are full of his concern with contemporary events; full also of good-humored derision at fools and Jacobins,—he thought them identical. Alsop wrote frequently in collaboration with David Humphreys, Joel Barlow, and Dr. Lemuel Hopkins, but he probably had no part in composing the mock-heroic poem "The Anarchiad." Wittier and more distinctive was "The Echo," which appeared in twenty numbers of the *American Mercury*, between 1791 and 1805. The origins of "The Echo," and thus indirectly of a later burlesque, "The Political Greenhouse," recreate perfectly the temper of Alsop in this mild flagellation of John Hancock, Samuel Adams, and Judge Hugh Brackenridge. In an office at Hartford he read, with Theodore Dwight and Mason Cogswell, a flamboyant newspaper account of a thunderstorm in Boston, and, amid laughter, volunteered a satire. His gibes struck home; there

were fresh couplets; and the group, with others, was soon known as "The Hartford Wits."

This edge in Alsop sharpens a literary output which sometimes appears hopelessly bookish. The *American Poems* published at Litchfield in 1793 seem mere relicts of scholarship. Not less conventional is *A Poem: Sacred to the Memory of George Washington* (1800), in which Alsop, though stirred by the President's death, is an extremely orthodox mourner. Such writing (including inoffensive works like *The Enchanted Lake of the Fairy Morgana,* from the Italian of Boiardo, *The Geographical, Natural, and Civil History of Chili,* from the Italian of Molina, and even *The Charms of Fancy,* so reminiscent of Akenside's *Pleasures of the Imagination*), simply reiterates Alsop's ideal of following intently the acknowledged masters. Fortunately he occasionally strays off the beaten path. Though formal, the "Hymn to Peace" and the "Inscription for a Family Tomb" betray real emotion. The true Alsop, kindly, social, brilliant, comes out also in the remaining years of his life. These (1800–15) he spent in Middletown; in Hartford, where he is said to have conducted a bookstore; and in New York, where he frequently visited Isaac Riley, the bookseller, his brother-in-law. He wrote for Charles Brockden Brown's periodical, the *Monthly Magazine and American Review,* and the tale persists that Alsop, the "Hartford Wit," mingled with the New York coterie, Brown, William Dunlap, S. L. Mitchill, and Philip Freneau. He was now famous; he admitted modestly that "The Political Greenhouse" had awakened "considerable curiosity in this country." It had indeed; it was quoted in Congress to demonstrate that Connecticut was entangling the United States in a war with France! Alsop died suddenly at Flatbush, Long Island (where his ancestors had first settled). In the very year of his death he edited a curious volume, the *Narrative of the Adventures and Sufferings of John R. Jewitt, Only Survivor of the Ship Boston, During a Captivity of Nearly Three Years Among the Savages of Nootka Sound.* Though unlike his standard writings, this book, an imitation of Defoe, reminds us again of Alsop's love of remote lore, his respect for proven literary models, and what his contemporaries called his "ingenious fancy."

[The most reliable source of information concerning Alsop is the biog. sketch by Theodore Dwight, prefixed to *The Charms of Fancy* (1856). Important manuscript material consists of letters in the N. Y. Hist. Soc., the Yale Univ. Lib., and the N. Y. Pub. Lib.; other references to Alsop, more or less significant, may be found in *The Conn. Wits* (1926), ed. by V. L. Parrington; *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1856), ed, by E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck; *Specimens of Am. Poetry* (1829), by S. Kettell, II, 54–57; *The Conn. Wits* (1920), by H. A. Beers; "The Lit. of Conn.," by S. T. Williams, in *A Hist. of Conn.* (1925), ed. by N. G. Osborn, II, 509–10.]

S. T. W.
J. A. P.

ALSTON, JOSEPH (*c.* 1779–Sept. 10, 1816), lawyer, planter, statesman, was the eldest child of Mary (Ashe) Alston, daughter of Gen. John Ashe of North Carolina, and of Col. William Alston (1756–1839), rice-planter of All Saints' Waccamaw, "sometime captain" in the command of Gen. Francis Marion, and founder of the single "l" branch of the Alston family of South Carolina (J. A. Groves, *Alstons and Allstons,* 1901, pp. 75–79). He was probably born in All Saints' Parish, South Carolina. Prepared for college, it appears, by private tutors, he entered the junior class of Princeton in 1795, but left the next year without graduating (Princeton College Faculty Minutes, 1795, 1796). He then studied law in the office of Edward Rutledge, but soon after being admitted to the bar abandoned the profession for planting and an active career in politics.

He entered the lower house of the South Carolina legislature in 1802, and continued, with the exception of the session of 1804, to occupy a seat in that body until 1812. For the greater part of the period from 1805 to 1809 he served as speaker. In 1812, after a bitterly contested campaign, he was elected governor and entered at once upon an administration, 1812–14, which was distinguished by its vigorous measures in support of the War of 1812. On Feb. 2, 1801, he had married Theodosia Burr [*q.v.*], the talented daughter of Aaron Burr. The influence of father upon son-in-law has been greatly overemphasized in what has been written about the former (*e.g.,* J. Parton, *Life and Times of Aaron Burr,* 1864, I, 298), but it is not to be denied that the connection with the Burrs was in the end the determining factor in Alston's life. In 1806 he was drawn into "Burr's Conspiracy," a fact which his enemies never forgot (E. S. Thomas, *Reminiscences of the Last Sixty-five Years,* 1840, II, 69–82). If, however, Burr actually entertained thoughts of dismembering the Union, it is improbable that Alston was cognizant of them. It is true that in his haste to deny that he had been party to treasonable designs, he was led into a somewhat unbecoming repudiation of Burr (W. H. Safford, *Blennerhassett Papers,* 1864, pp. 227–30); but at the moment he had good grounds to suspect the latter of double-dealing, and he later made amends by zealously aiding the Colonel to establish his innocence. According to Harman Blennerhassett, whose fortune was swept away by the failure of Burr's schemes, Alston had guaranteed him against losses to the extent of $50,000 but later refused to reimburse him beyond the amount of $12,-

500 (*Ibid.*, pp. 533–38). Blennerhassett, however, never produced convincing proof of his claim, though he several times threatened a public exposure. In June 1812 Alston's only child, Aaron Burr Alston, died; early the next year Theodosia perished at sea; and less than three years later Alston himself was dead.

[Sources of information concerning Joseph Alston are surprisingly few. There is slight possibility that any of his private papers are extant, and no adequate sketch of his life has ever been written. Nor is any portr. or other likeness of him known to exist. In the "Diary of Edward Hooker, 1805–08," *Am. Hist. Ass. Reports*, 1896, I, 842–929, is given a description of his personal appearance and an account of some of his activities in the S. C. Leg., by a contemporary observer. A few of his letters are to be found in such places as M. L. Davis, *Memoirs of Aaron Burr*, 2 vols. (1836–37), and W. H. Safford, *Blennerhassett Papers* (1864), and at least three of his printed speeches are preserved. It is no longer to be doubted that Alston wrote the "Agrestis Pamphlet," which appeared during Burr's trial; his authorship is established by the *Blennerhassett Papers* (see pp. 337–41). The references to Alston in the general histories and in works dealing with Aaron and Theodosia Burr are for the most part inaccurate and prejudiced. An obituary was published in *The Times* (Charleston, S. C.), Sept. 16, 1816.]

J. H. E.

ALSTON, THEODOSIA (BURR). [See BURR, THEODOSIA, 1783–1813.]

ALTER, DAVID (Dec. 3, 1807–Sept. 18, 1881), physician, physicist, was a grandson of Johan Jacob Alter, who came to America on the *Beulah*, from Amsterdam, in 1753, immediately took the oath of allegiance to Pennsylvania, and during the Revolutionary War served with a Pennsylvania regiment. John Alter, the father of David, was born in 1771 and in 1800 moved to Westmoreland County in western Pennsylvania. David's mother was Eleanor Sheetz, of Swiss descent, whose grandfather had come to America in 1740. The boy's early formal schooling was poor, but a life of Benjamin Franklin, given him when nine, and a little later a book on electricity, supplemented by a few simple electrical devices, seem to have shown him very early where his chief interest was to lie. When twenty-one, he entered the Reformed Medical College in New York City, graduating three years later. He was twice married, first in 1832 to Laura Rowley, and in 1844 to Elizabeth A. Rowley. There were eleven children by these two marriages.

Throughout his life Alter devoted himself to physical experiments, showing remarkable ability despite the handicaps of his position, his apparatus even to prisms and lenses being almost entirely home-made. Among many minor inventions and discoveries were a successful electric clock, a method of purifying bromine, and the model of an electric locomotive. More important, however, were an electrical telegraph, early discoveries in spectrum analysis, and a method

of obtaining coal-oil from coal; the last was apparently the only project which he considered commercially, and its chances of enriching him were destroyed by the drilling of the first Pennsylvania oil-well. His telegraph, invented in 1836, which seems to have been among the first successfully used, consisted of seven wires, each deflecting a needle. Combinations of deflections spelled the messages. Although it was in actual use between his house and barn, a patent was apparently refused on the ground that such an invention was absurd. Claims have been made that this was the first telegraph, but another, likewise not used commercially, seems to have been invented in Alabama in 1828.

A controversy has raged over Alter's discoveries in spectrum analysis. It is certain that far more credit is due him than was at first generally recognized, but, on the other hand, the assertion that he anticipated Kirchhoff's greatest discovery is without foundation. The fundamental principles of spectrum analysis are grouped in three laws commonly called Kirchhoff's Laws. The first of these had been common property for years. Alter and the great European physicist Angstrom independently and almost simultaneously discovered and published the second, *i. e.*, that the various elemental gases have spectra peculiar to themselves. This law made possible the determination of the chemical nature of gases by means of the spectroscope and was an extremely important advance. The publication of Alter's results in an American journal did not call to them the full recognition that they deserved, but Kayser in his great handbook has reviewed them thoroughly, reproducing Alter's maps of twelve metal spectra and concluding with the statement: "Man sieht dass Alter ein recht guter Beobachter war, der etwas denselben Standpunkt auf dem Gebiete der Emission erreicht hat, wie Angstrom. Interessant ist bei ihm der Hinweis auf die astronomischen Anwendungen." The third of Kirchhoff's laws, that of absorption spectra, while it is the most important of the three, was not known either to Angstrom or to Alter. It is unfortunate that at least two biographers have made charges of theft against Kirchhoff. Certainly Alter made no such charges.

[Sketches by Frank Cowan in G. D. Albert's *Hist. of the County of Westmoreland, Pa.* (1882), and by James B. Laux in the *Pa. German*, Mar. 1910; E. Stieren, "Auf Alter als einer der Entdecker der Spectral-Analyze," Poggendorf *Annalen* (1867), CXXXII; early abstracts of Alter's spectral analysis in *Chemico-Jahresberichte, 1854, L'Institute, 1856, Archives des sciences physiques et naturelles*, Geneva, 1855, XXIX; Kopp and Will's *Ann. Rep. of Chem. for 1859*, p. 107; H. G. Kayser, Jr., *Handbuch der Spectroscopie*, I, pp. 67–68. Angstrom's work is given on pp. 62–67 of the same volume.]

D. A.

ALTGELD, JOHN PETER (Dec. 30, 1847–Mar. 12, 1902), the first Democratic governor of Illinois after the Civil War, was the son of an illiterate and unsuccessful German immigrant, John Peter Altgeld, and Mary his wife. He was born at Nieder Selters in Nassau, and while an infant was brought by his parents to Richland County, Ohio, where he grew to maturity with little formal education and much grinding labor. Until he was twenty-one he worked for his father, with only the short intermission of temporary service in an Ohio volunteer regiment in 1864. In 1869 he left home, drifted west, and worked as common laborer, school-teacher, and student of law. He was elected state's attorney for Andrew County, Mo., in 1874. Even so late as his removal to Chicago in 1875, he was still obliged, as he confessed, to look at the dictionary for one word in five to know that he had spelled it correctly. Yet he ultimately mastered the English language and the law, wrote a treatise on oratory and practised it with effect, and in 1886 was elected to the superior court of Cook County (Chicago), Ill. When he resigned from the bench in 1891 he was chief justice of this court.

His little treatise on crime, *Our Penal Machinery and Its Victims* (1884), was early evidence of a belief that the poor and unfortunate had less than a fair chance in American life. In 1892 his influence among Illinois Democrats was such that he was nominated for governor on the first ballot in their convention; his ensuing election to a four-year term in that office came as a part of the wave of Democratic success that, having arisen in 1890, now swept Grover Cleveland into the presidency for his second term.

The public reputation of Altgeld as governor was established in 1893, a few weeks after his inauguration, by his action upon an appeal for clemency on behalf of certain anarchistic agitators who were in jail, under conviction of complicity with the murders in the Chicago Haymarket riot of May 4, 1886. Four of their associates had been hanged in November 1887. In studying the case, Altgeld came to the belief that the trial jury had been packed, that the judge had been prejudiced, and that the conviction of any one for "constructive" conspiracy to incite to murder was a miscarriage of justice. His brief of reasons, accompanying the pardons on June 26, 1893, has gained in weight with years; but at the time it outraged public opinion, and led to a wide, panicky, and scurrilous disposition to brand Altgeld as an anarchist and defender of crime. His Republican opponents made much of this alleged alliance of Democracy and revolution. When in July 1894 Altgeld protested the action of President Cleveland in sending the regular army to maintain order in Chicago during the Pullman strike, the critics ignored the constitutional basis of the protest, misrepresented the degree of disorder, and redoubled their attacks upon him. When he accepted the doctrine of free silver, and helped to steer the Democratic party toward a 16:1 plank in 1896, he gave the cue for an attack upon Bryan as the nominee of repudiation and anarchy. Broken in health, Altgeld was renominated for the office of governor in 1896 and although defeated by John R. Tanner [*q.v.*], the Republican candidate, he nevertheless ran ahead of the Democratic presidential ticket. It was generally believed that, save for the constitutional inhibition of his alien birth, he would have been the Democratic candidate for the presidency instead of William Jennings Bryan.

Altgeld died suddenly in 1902, after a speech in advocacy of Boer independence. Before this time, he had lost the large fortune which he had accumulated chiefly through speculation in Chicago real estate. He was survived by his wife, Emma Ford, a friend of his childhood and a graduate of Oberlin College. His unattractive appearance, and his attacks upon complacent position and wealth limited the number of friends, but his intimates developed a permanent devotion to him.

[Altgeld deliberately destroyed his biog. papers. Most of his writings were official or argumentative. *Live Questions, Including Our Penal Machinery and Its Victims* (1890) was republished in 1899 with a collection of his speeches, messages, and interviews as governor, "and a statement of the facts which influenced his course on several famous occasions." *The Cost of Something for Nothing* (1904) was printed after his death. The only important biog. is that of Waldo R. Browne, *Altgeld of Illinois: A Record of His Life and Work* (1924), but there are passages that throw light upon his character in Brand Whitlock, *Forty Years of It* (1914); Henry James, *Richard Olney and His Public Service* (1923); Caro Lloyd, *Henry Demarest Lloyd* (1912). There is also a good obituary in the *Outlook*, LXX, 696–97. Vachel Lindsay's widely quoted poem, "The Eagle That Is Forgotten," may most easily be found in his *Collected Poems* (1923). In the daily press, during Altgeld's term as governor, he was discussed and condemned with wholehearted bitterness. The *Chicago Tribune* was chief among his journalistic critics.]

F. L. P—n.

ALTHAM, JOHN (1589–Nov. 5, 1640), Jesuit missionary, connected with the founding of Maryland, is believed to have been a native of Warwickshire. His early life is obscure, and it is not certain whether his real name was Altham or Gravenor (possibly Grosvenor). His colleague, Father Andrew White, speaks of him as Altham (*Maryland Historical Society, Fund Publication No. 7*, p. 33), while in his latter years he was always mentioned as Father Gravenor. He is believed to have entered the Jesuit order in 1623; whether he was of Roman Catholic parentage or not, his career in England must necessarily have

been difficult, since in 1585 all Jesuits and Seminary priests were by Parliamentary decree expelled from the kingdom. If educated at one of the Jesuit seminaries for the English on the continent at Douay, or elsewhere, he had been sent to his native land, and had been in ministry in Devonshire and London before joining the Maryland colonists.

Altham and White boarded at the Isle of Wight the *Dove* and the *Ark*, carrying the twenty gentlemen and 200 servants whom Leonard Calvert was taking to colonize the proprietorship of his brother, Lord Baltimore, in the New World. They set sail in the late autumn of 1633, and went by way of the West Indies. Upon arrival at Chesapeake Bay in March of 1634, where they held the first mass on Lady's Day, Calvert took Father Altham as his comrade on an initial exploration of the Potomac River. After the settlement of St. Mary's, Altham served in the fort; but soon asked permission to visit and preach to the Indians. For, although weak in health, he had "a bent for the hard missionary life." He thereupon was sent to Kent Island, where by 1640 he had made so deep an impression on the local chief that the latter and his wife were baptized as "Charles" and "Mary" in honor of the English sovereigns, and were married by clerical rites. Kent Island, where it was hoped trade might be drawn from the "Grand Lake of Canada," was the seat of a Virginia settlement, and the rivalry between the two groups of colonists lasted during the remainder of Father Altham's life. Through illness, he lost the use of his feet, but recovered sufficiently to accompany some of his Indian converts to St. Mary's, where he finally died, not, however, before Maryland had been reenforced by other Jesuit missionaries to continue his work.

[T. A. Hughes, *Hist. of the Soc. of Jesus in North America* (1907), I, 269; Cardinal Gibbons, "Sketch of the Cath. Ch. in Md.," in *Cath. Red Bk. of Western Md.* (1909), pp. 25–26; W. P. Treacy, *Old Cath. Md. and Its Early Jesuit Missionaries* (Swedesboro, N. J.), pp. 13–22; B. U. Campbell, "Early Christian Missions among the Natives of Md.," in *Md. Hist. Mag.*, I, 293–316; J. G. Shea, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. within the Limits of the U. S.* (1886), I, 42; Clayton Hall, "Narr. of Early Md.," in Original Narr. of Early Am. Hist. Series (1910), pp. 44, 116, 124, 131–32.]

L. P. K.

ALTMAN, BENJAMIN (July 12, 1840–Oct. 7, 1913), merchant, philanthropist, art patron, was the son of Phillip and Cecilia Altman, Bavarian Jews from near Nuremberg, who came to New York about 1835, settling in the lower East Side. There, on Attorney St., Benjamin was born, the second of three children. The boy attended a public school near his home, and may have completed the grammar-school course, but this was the extent of his schooling. Phillip Altman conducted a small store near his home, and here, we may assume, Benjamin received his first training as a salesman. In these humble surroundings he learned honesty, thrift, and perseverance. His father died when Benjamin was still young, and from this time the boy's history is obscure. One report states that he strayed down to Clarksville, Va., and worked for a time in a general store. Most of his experience was gained in small Newark and New York dry-goods shops. In these he gathered also the capital to open, in 1865, at the age of twenty-five, a similar store of his own on Third Ave., near Tenth St. His success and ambition are attested by his removal in 1870 to Sixth Ave., where his brother Morris was for a time his partner. Morris later withdrew to engage in an independent enterprise, but on his death, in 1876, Benjamin Altman took over his brother's business and established himself at Sixth Ave. and Nineteenth St. David Frankenberg became his partner temporarily, but soon Benjamin Altman as sole owner of the business could give full play to his dreams and his determination to develop a large and distinctive department-store enterprise. After thirty years of progress at the Sixth Ave. location, in 1906 Altman moved his store to the northeast corner of Fifth Ave. and Thirty-fourth St., being a pioneer in the trend of big business to up-town Fifth Ave. By this time Michael Friedsam had become his partner and the firm was known as B. Altman & Co., the name it still retains. Successive additions after 1906 enabled the firm finally to occupy the entire block bounded by Fifth and Madison Aves., Thirty-fourth and Thirty-fifth Sts. The business was incorporated in 1913.

John Wanamaker, himself a leader among merchants, placed Altman first among the retail merchants of New York, and called him an excellent organizer. Another fellow merchant attributed his success to "ability and hard work—a lot of ability and a lot of hard work." Altman also possessed health, keen discernment, and balanced judgment. He took a constant interest in the welfare of his employees and was among the first to establish for his workers luncheon, rest, and medical service. Shortly before his death, he established the Altman Foundation to promote their welfare and to aid other New York philanthropical enterprises.

Another side of Altman's life is revealed by his esthetic tastes. At an early age a love for the beautiful began to assert itself and in 1882 he began a collection of Chinese enamels and porcelains. This led to interest in other fields of art, until the treasures housed in his Fifth Ave. residence consisted of some thousand articles of re-

markable rarity and beauty, including porcelains, enamels, tapestries, rugs, furniture, sculpture, and paintings. William Bode, the German art critic, wrote that he had never seen a finer private collection of paintings. Altman made an extended tour of the Old World in 1888–89, using a keen eye and excellent judgment for rare and worthy art objects. Shorter trips to Europe were made in 1890 and 1909. He also acquired a valuable art library, familiarizing himself with the history of his acquisitions. During his later years he devoted himself more and more to these various collections, leaving business affairs largely in the hands of his partner. He never married and cared little for social life. "I doubt if 100 persons in New York City knew him by sight," commented a friend after his death.

He died, after a brief illness, on Oct. 7, 1913, at his residence, 626 Fifth Ave., New York. His will disbursed property to the value of approximately $35,000,000. There was a substantial legacy to the National Academy of Design, to foster American painting, which he had always encouraged. His entire art collections, appraised at $20,000,000, were given to the Metropolitan Museum, New York, where they constitute the largest individual gift, "notable alike for their wide range of interest and the uniformly high quality of their contents."

[No biog. of Benjamin Altman has been published, and material for this sketch has been secured largely from representatives of the Altman Foundation of New York. Obituaries appeared in all leading New York dailies of Oct. 8, 1913, and immediately succeeding days. Later issues contain notices of Altman and his bequests. The full text of his will appeared in the *N. Y. Times* of Oct. 15, 1913. A *Handbook of the Benjamin Altman Coll.* was issued by the Metropolitan Museum of Art in 1914 (revised ed. 1915). It gives a brief record of Altman's career as collector and a full description of his donations.]

R. S. B.

ALTSHELER, JOSEPH ALEXANDER (Apr. 29, 1862–June 5, 1919), editor, author, was a prolific writer of novels, whose stories of adventure, with their background of American history, gave wholesome enjoyment and knowledge of their country to numberless youths. A Kentuckian, descended on his mother's side from Virginia and Kentucky borderers, he was born in Three Springs, Hart County, the son of Joseph and Lucy Snoddy Altsheler. Books were not plentiful in that part of the state, he says, and such as found their way there were passed from family to family, but he read Scott, Dickens, and Thackeray, and heard at first hand the legends of the Kentucky pioneers, and tales of the Civil War from both Union and Confederate veterans. The former had a great fascination for him and he would lie on his back in the woods for hours recalling them (Annie Carroll Moore, *Joseph A. Altsheler and American History,* 1919). After studying at Liberty College, Glasgow, Ky., and at Vanderbilt University, in 1885 he joined the staff of the Louisville *Courier-Journal,* serving as dramatic critic, assistant city editor, commercial editor, and editorial writer. In 1892 he became associated with the New York *World,* and finally took charge of the tri-weekly edition of that paper. During the annexation period in 1898 he was the correspondent for the *World* in Honolulu. He married Sarah Boles of Glasgow, Ky., on May 30, 1888. At the outbreak of the World War he and Mrs. Altsheler were in Germany and the difficulties they encountered getting home so weakened him that he never recovered his strength.

He became a story-writer almost by chance. Desiring a serial for his paper and being unable to secure one, he himself wrote a story of adventure for boys which was well received. His interest in history led him to turn to that field for material, and in 1897 he published *The Sun of Saratoga, a Romance of Burgoyne's Surrender.* Between then and 1919 he wrote more than forty other novels. The majority of these belong to some one of six series: the French and Indian War Series; the Great West Series; the Young Trailers Series; the Texas Series; the Civil War Series; and the World War Series. They are the work of one who had a natural gift for story telling, good descriptive ability, love for nature, a sense of humor, and skill in character portrayal. He tried to make the historical background of his tales truthful by study of the best authorities and found inspiration in the writings of Francis Parkman. The exploits of his characters are such as to captivate the heart of any robust lad. In 1918 he was the most popular of the authors of books for boys in the public libraries (*Bookman,* November 1918).

[In addition to the sources mentioned above, some biog. material may be found in the *Book Buyer,* Sept. 1900; *N. Y. Times,* June 7, 1919; *Louisville Courier-Jour.,* June 7, 1919; and *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19.]

H. E. S.

ALVARADO, JUAN BAUTISTA (Feb. 14, 1809–July 13, 1882), governor of Mexican California, was born in Monterey, Cal., the son of a Spanish sergeant, José Francisco Alvarado, and his wife Maria Josefa Vallejo, sister of Mariano Guadalupe. His father died when Bautista was three months old, and his mother later married Ramón Estrada. Early schooling from invalided sergeants and his mother was supplemented by Gov. Sola, who assisted the boy with reading; Alvarado had a *flair* for contraband literature, be-

ing excommunicated for indulging in Fénelon's *Télémaque*. Clerical positions with foreign traders and in the custom-house led to public life in 1827, when the boy became secretary of the territorial *diputación;* he held this post till 1834, meantime adding that of territorial treasurer. Active as a *diputado,* he was president in 1836, and with José Castro unseated Gov. Gutierrez, the centralist. Alvarado assumed the governorship in December as a result of this move for local control under the federalism of 1824. Perhaps actuated by fear of foreigners, chiefly Americans, he adhered to the Mexican departmental system after gaining the power, the "sovereign state" of California being overlooked. He organized the Department, which included Lower California, into districts and subdistricts under prefects and subprefects, with town councils in the larger towns. The Los Angeles region had to be subjected by arms and arguments, but submitted before February 1837. The jealousies of the Carrillo family, Carlos Carrillo having obtained an appointment to the governorship, had also to be eliminated. This was done by sending Andrés Castillero to Mexico, and Alvarado was made proprietary governor in November 1838. The personal jealousies of Mariano Vallejo in Sonoma, of Pio Pico in the South, and of Castillero occupied much of the executive's attention. The expulsion of Isaac Graham, who had a brandy distillery at Branciforte, and a crew of followers who were thought to be plotting revolt, caused a flurry of interest almost international; the Graham party was sent to Mexico, but in 1842 was released and returned.

Under Alvarado came John A. Sutter, to establish himself at the present Sacramento as a citizen defender of the frontier against Americans and Indians. Sutter bought the establishment of the retiring Russians from Gov. Kostromitinoff, the Department accepting the obligation, as Sutter had no funds. During Alvarado's term the ex-missions were inspected by William P. Hartnell, in a vain effort to stop the decay into which they had been falling since secularization in 1834. Alvarado's measures have been called destructive, but the resuscitation had become impossible. There was an attempt to establish a superior court, but the civil arm had no material with which to do this; better was the ecclesiastical court begun by the bishop, Father Francisco Garcia Diego y Moreno, after the Department became a bishopric in 1840. In September 1841 the governor became ill, and surrendered his office to the president of the departmental junta until Jan. 1, 1842. In October came Commodore T. A. C. Jones, palpitating lest Great Britain anticipate him in seizing California, and overzealously raising the American flag at Monterey, only to haul it down with apologies. In December at his own request Alvarado handed the government over to Gen. Manuel Micheltorena, sent by Santa Anna to govern; his office was established at Los Angeles because of the Jones incident. After retiring, Alvarado received a commission as colonel; in 1844–45 he and Castro led a short revolt which unseated Micheltorena, Alvarado serving under Gov. Pio Pico as administrator of customs in Monterey. In 1845 he was elected to Congress, but neither he nor the treasury had money enough to send him to Mexico. Alvarado was married to Martina Castro in 1839 by proxy in Santa Clara; they resided at Monterey until 1848, and afterward at San Pablo. There were several children of this marriage, and natural daughters born before it.

[Mexican California is best presented in R. H. Dana, *Two Years Before the Mast* (1840); Alfred Robinson, *Life in Cal.* (1846; repr. ed. by Thos. C. Russell, 1925); and E. Duflot de Mofras, *Exploration du Territoire de l'Orégon, des Californies, et de la Mer Vermeille* (1844); Alexander Forbes, *California* (1839), the first English book on the area. See also H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.* (1884–90), especially his "Pioneer Register," and T. H. Hittell, *Hist. of Cal.* (4 vols., 1885–97), and Fr. Zephyrin Engelhardt, *The Missions and Missionaries of Cal.* (4 vols., 1908–15); for added bibliography, R. E. Cowan, *A Bibliography of the Hist. of Cal.* (1914); and C. E. Chapman, *A Hist. of Cal.: The Spanish Period* (1921).]

H. I. P.

ALVEY, RICHARD HENRY (Mar. 6, 1826–Sept. 14, 1906), jurist, was born in St. Mary's County, Md., the eldest son of George and Harriet (Wicklin) Alvey, the family having lived in the county from the time of Lord Baltimore's colonization. He went to the little school taught by his father. At the age of eighteen he entered the clerk's office of Charles County, where he was a deputy until 1850. He had been reading law, and was admitted to the bar in 1849. On quitting the clerk's office, he moved to Hagerstown to practise. In briefless years he was profoundly affected by study of Tucker's addenda to Blackstone, dealing with American law, in which Jeffersonian principles were espoused. He had been in Hagerstown only a year when he ran for the state Senate as a Democrat. Though Washington County was strongly Whig, the vote was a tie, and a second election went in favor of his opponent, Judge French, by only forty votes. Alvey first came to wide notice when as a Pierce elector in 1852 he spoke throughout the state, the ticket receiving Maryland's vote. He was married in 1856 to Mary Wharton, who died four years later. In 1862 he married Julia I. Hays, of Washington County, by whom he had nine children. In January 1861, just after Lincoln's election, a meeting was held in Hagerstown to express the

opinion of the county on the secession issue. Alvey, then thirty-five years old, was named chairman of the committee on resolutions. He headed a minority report which leaned to the state-rights view. This "Alvey Resolution" attracted much attention, and spoke for the sympathies of certainly half the people of Maryland. It is believed that this incident was responsible for his arrest as soon as Federal troops entered Hagerstown, the charge that he was holding communication with the enemy lacking proof. For a year, until February 1862, he was held prisoner, first at Fort McHenry, Baltimore, next at Fort Lafayette, New York, and last at Fort Warren in Boston Harbor, where were also Severn Teackle Wallis and other Marylanders. Returning home on parole, he resumed his practise, for a time being associated with Judge J. T. Mason, and later being the partner of Hon. William T. Hamilton.

After the war, Alvey labored for the restoration of normal conditions. He particularly forwarded the return of the franchise to those deprived of it through factional differences, and being elected to the legislature in 1867 fathered the law putting the selection of juries immediately under the eye of the court instead of leaving the choice to partisan sheriffs. At first made local to Washington, Carroll, and Frederick Counties, this jury law was soon extended throughout the state. Alvey was a delegate to the constitutional convention held the same year, being active as chairman of the committee on representation. In 1867 under the new constitution he was elected chief judge of the fourth judicial circuit for the counties of Washington, Allegany, and Garrett, thus becoming a member of the Maryland court of appeals. He was reëlected in 1882. The following year, on the retirement of Judge James L. Bartol, he was commissioned by Gov. Hamilton chief judge of the highest Maryland court, in response to a public demand which the reluctant executive could not dismiss. Alvey's opinions as associate judge appear in volumes XXVIII–LX of the *Maryland Reports,* and those as chief judge in volumes LX-LXXVII.

Alvey was a large, stout man, clean-shaven, and with a shining bald head, reminding one of a priest. When he came to the bench he was known for his irascible temper, the story being told that once in Hagerstown, while arguing a case, he threw a law book at the head of opposing counsel. But in his judicial office he developed repose, having learned, say those who knew him, from his association with Judge Bartol, who was eminently suave. He was of the old school, a thorough student of the English Common Law, and one who would have lamented the sympathetic bending of legal theory to meet social exigency. In his thirty-eight years on the bench he wrote some 3,000 opinions, which show his mastery and veneration of the law as a science. He never employed a stenographer or permitted himself the informality of even a lead pencil; ". . . all of his opinions as filed are autographic, and written in the neatest chirography, and with the slightest bearing on the pen, as though he wanted to be gentle, and level and calm even with the instrumentalities he involved in the transfer of his thoughts to paper." In a period in which echoes of the Civil War were vibrant and distrust of government was common, Judge Alvey, in spite of his supposed partisanship, was even-handed and a lesson in reflection. When the District of Columbia court of appeals was organized in 1893, President Cleveland appointed him chief justice. Here, until his retirement from failing health in 1904, he was responsible for laying down the rules of practise of the new tribunal, and he made it answer to expectations. In 1896 he was appointed by Cleveland to serve on the commission which determined the boundary line between Venezuela and British Guiana, discharging his judicial duties at the same time. He lectured at the National University in Washington on branches of the law, serving also as chancellor of the institution. Never wishing public notice, and rarely accepting social invitations, he spent his last years in the quiet of his family circle. He died at Hagerstown, and was buried in sight of the mountains which always gave him pleasure.

[For biographical sketches see the *Baltimore Sun* and the *Baltimore American,* Sept. 15, 1906; *Men of Mark in Md.* (1907), pp. 34–37; *Bench and Bar of Md.* (n.d.), pp. 474, ff. Three meetings of bench and bar were held in honor of Judge Alvey, the first when he resigned from the Maryland Court of Appeals (reported in *76 Md.,* xxviii–xxxix), the second when he sat for the last time in the District Court of Appeals (reported in *24 App. Cas.* (D.C.), xvii–xxi), and the third at his death (reported in *28 App. Cas.* (D.C.), xxiii). Though mainly eulogistic, all throw light upon his character and attainments; the second includes biographical material.]

B.M.

ALVORD, BENJAMIN (Aug. 18, 1813–Oct. 16, 1884), Union soldier, was born at Rutland, Vt., son of William and Lucy (Claghorn) Alvord, and sixth in descent from Alexander Alvord, who came from the southwest of England to Windsor, Conn., about 1645 (S. M. Alvord, pp. 123, 225). Upon his graduation from West Point in 1833 he was commissioned in the 4th Infantry, and, except for brief periods of detached service and a two years' tour of duty as instructor at the Military Academy, served with it for twenty-one years. He took part in the Florida War, in the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma, and in

the guerrilla fighting of Lally's command which convoyed supplies from Vera Cruz to the city of Mexico in the summer and fall of 1847. In 1854 he accepted an appointment as paymaster with the rank of major. At the outbreak of the Civil War he was chief paymaster in Oregon. Some experienced officer was needed for the command of that remote district, and to this duty Alvord was assigned, being made a brigadier-general of volunteers in 1862, and continuing in Oregon until 1865. Thus no opportunity for distinction in the field came to him, but his services, though unspectacular, were not unimportant. In the early days of the war his influence was effectively exerted to keep the people of the territory loyal to the Union and to overcome the secessionist sympathies which were active in some places. Throughout the whole period he had the difficult task of protecting settlers from the attacks of hostile Indians, and peaceable Indians from the aggression of rascally white men. He seems to have performed it with impartial justice. The government showed its approval of his conduct of affairs by conferring three brevets. From 1872 until his retirement in 1880, he was paymaster-general of the army, at first with the rank of colonel, and after 1876 with that of brigadier-general.

Although the greater part of Alvord's life was spent in places remote from facilities for study, his attainments in several branches of science were considerable, and he wrote extensively for learned publications. His monograph on "The Tangencies of Circles and of Spheres" (*Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge,* vol. VIII, 1856) and its sequel, "The Intersection of Circles and the Intersection of Spheres" (*American Journal of Mathematics,* March 1882) formed original contributions to mathematical knowledge. He was the first to classify the compass plant botanically. Among other published papers are "Winter Grazing in the Rocky Mountains" (*Bulletin of the American Geographical Society,* 1883), and several on mathematical subjects and on the American Indians. A kindly, unassuming, studious man, his interests were scholarly, and his abilities of a sort little appreciated in an army whose duties lay chiefly on the frontier. He was married in 1846 to Emily Louise Mussey of Rutland, Vt., by whom he had six children.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), I, 553–58; *Official Records,* vol. I, pts. 1, 2; *Genealogy of the Descendants of Alexander Alvord,* comp. by S. M. Alvord (1908); additional information from Alvord's son, Brig.-Gen. Benjamin Alvord, Jr.] T. M. S.

ALVORD, CLARENCE WALWORTH (May 21, 1868–Jan. 24, 1928), historian, was born in Greenfield, Mass., the son of Daniel Wells and Caroline Betts (Dewey) Alvord, and a descendant of a long line of New England ancestry. He attended the schools of Northampton, Mass., and Phillips Academy, Andover, and was graduated from Williams College in 1891. After teaching in Milton Academy (Mass.) for two years, he began his graduate work in history, spending the years 1893–95 at Friedrich Wilhelm University in Berlin and part of the following year at the University of Chicago. In 1897 he became an instructor in the preparatory school of the University of Illinois and, four years later, instructor in history in the university proper. For nineteen years he remained at Illinois, receiving a Ph.D. degree there in 1908 and becoming a full professor in 1913.

Alvord's discovery in 1905 of the records of the old French settlements of Cahokia and Kaskaskia in Illinois, long believed lost, resulted in his appointment by the State Historical Library as general editor of the *Illinois Historical Collections.* Under his editorship fourteen volumes of the *Collections* were published, making accessible a wealth of original documents relating to western history and setting a high standard for the editing of historical materials. Of five of these volumes he was also special editor. His introduction to the *Cahokia Records* (1907) is a brilliant study (143 pages) of "The County of Illinois" created by Virginia in 1778. In 1909 Alvord was appointed director of the Illinois Historical Survey, created in the university as a research bureau; and in 1913 he was selected by the Illinois Centennial Commission as editor of the *Centennial History of Illinois.* Of this five-volume work, he wrote the first (1920), a notable contribution to the history of the Middle West. That his historical interests were far from being confined to a narrow field was demonstrated by a work published in 1912 in collaboration with Lee Bidgood on *The First Exploration of the Trans-Allegheny Regions by Virginians, 1650–1674,* and by his *Mississippi Valley in British Politics* (2 vols., 1917). The latter work, which treated the period from 1763 to 1774, was recognized by scholars at home and abroad as an outstanding contribution to the history of England and of the causes of the American Revolution as well as to that of the Mississippi Valley. It was awarded the Loubat prize for the best work on American history published in five years.

Alvord's influence and counsel were important factors in shaping the policies of the Mississippi Valley Historical Association, organized in 1907. It was due largely to his efforts that the association became not merely a confederation of historical societies, but an association of scholars

bent upon promoting scientific study and research. In 1914 he brought about the establishment by the association of a quarterly magazine, *The Mississippi Valley Historical Review,* of which he was managing editor, 1914–23. In 1920 he resigned his positions in Illinois to become professor of history in the University of Minnesota. Three years later he determined to devote his time to research and writing, and his remaining years were spent abroad. In 1925 he delivered the annual Raleigh lecture before the British Academy, and in 1926 he was chosen as the first American to deliver the Creighton lecture at the University of London. He was married in 1893 to Jennie Kettell Blanchard (*née* Parrott), who died in 1911. In 1913 he was married to Idress Head. He was of slender build and dark complexion and wore a Van Dyke beard. His incisive intellect, genial personality, and wide range of interests contributed to his strong influence upon mature students.

[An outline of Alvord's career may be found in *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27. The present writer was in close touch with him from 1910 to 1923 and has drawn largely upon personal recollections and correspondence files. He is preparing a longer sketch, with a bibliography of Alvord's works, for publication in the *Mississippi Valley Hist. Rev.* for Dec. 1928. For an account and evaluation of Alvord's work at Illinois, see D. R. Fox, "State Hist. II," in *Polit. Sci. Quart.,* XXXVII, 99–118, and Allan Nevins, *Illinois* (1917), p. 341.]

S. J. B.

ALVORD, CORYDON ALEXIS (May 12, 1813–Nov. 28, 1874), printer, was born in Winchester, Conn., the son of John and Experience (Webb) Alvord. He went to Hartford at the age of fifteen and served an apprenticeship at the printer's trade, subsequently becoming foreman in the house of Case & Tiffany. On Sept. 6, 1836, he married Mary Ann Buckland of New Hartford, by whom he had ten children. In 1845 the opportunities of a large city lured him to New York, where he commenced business for himself, first at 51 John St. (*N. Y. Dir.,* 1845–46), then 29 Gold St., and finally at 15 Vandewater St. (*N. Y. Dir.,* 1857). Those familiar with his Vandewater Street establishment tell of a very unusual equipment, fonts of old-style type, and of ancient and oriental letters, old engravings, stereotype plates, with immense underground storage rooms separated by thick walls and connected by iron doors. If any one had an unusual piece of printing to be done, Alvord was equipped to do it. Many books of the period which carry "Privately Printed" on the title-page show "C. A. Alvord, Printer" modestly tucked away somewhere. "Limited Editions," too, came from his shop; *e.g.,* Thomas Dring, *Recollections of the Jersey Prison-Ship* (1865), James Parton, *Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin* (1865), Fitz-Greene Halleck, *Fanny: A Poem* (1866).

Alvord was one of the first presidents of the Typothetæ (organized, 1862), and when that organization of employers assembled at the Astor House, Jan. 29, 1869, on the occasion of the first great printers' strike, he spoke in opposition to the high wage demand of Typographical Union No. 6 and presented resolutions which were unanimously adopted (*N. Y. Times,* Jan. 30, 1869). In 1867, he bought a residence in Hartford and moved his family thither; he continued, however, to carry on his business in New York. In the spring of 1871, there came a merger of several printing firms, including Alvord's, into the New York Printing Company, Alvord accepting a position as superintendent. This printing company, the most extensive of its kind in the city, with over 2,000 employees, was controlled by the "Tweed Ring," and the "fancy prices" charged for the "Corporation printing" were already under suspicion (*N. Y. Times,* Dec. 28, 1871). In 1870, the Common Council had voted "to prepare for the press the ancient records of the City of New Amsterdam and those of the City of New York, prior to 1850" (*Ordinances Approved by the Mayor,* xxxviii, 197). Presswork on this job (in which old-style type was used and copy strictly followed) had been started under Alvord's supervision when the "Committee of Seventy" appointed to investigate Tweed's activities (*N. Y. Times,* Sept. 5, 1871) found reason to take possession of the company's properties. Comptroller Andrew H. Green reported that the work on the records as projected would have involved an outlay of more than half a million dollars, and produced 240,000 volumes, enough to fill a room 24x24 feet, and 13 feet high, from floor to ceiling (*Proceedings of the Board of Aldermen* (1873), cxxix, 129). No discredit attaches to Alvord in this matter; he appears simply to have been carrying on the printing business for extravagant and unscrupulous employers. He retired to Hartford and indulged his taste for historical and genealogical research. A manuscript which he "incurred much expense to prepare" is the basis of the *Genealogy of the Descendants of Alexander Alvord,* finally published in 1908. Articles of his appeared in the *Winsted Herald* and *Hartford Courant* during the last two years of his life.

[Alvord's life work is portrayed by the books he printed; the card catalogue in the "Reserve" room of the N. Y. Pub. Lib. enables one to find examples of his best workmanship. The obituary in the *Hartford Daily Courant,* Nov. 30, 1874, contains the best account of his career.]

A. E. P.

ALVORD, HENRY ELIJAH (Mar. 11, 1844–Oct. 1, 1904), educator, specialist in dairy husbandry, was born at Greenfield, Mass., the eldest son of Daniel Wells Alvord, a prominent lawyer, and Caroline (Clapp) Alvord. He was prepared for college in the public schools of Greenfield and entered Norwich University in Vermont in 1860, but joined the Union Army in his junior year. He served in Rhode Island and Massachusetts volunteer cavalry regiments, becoming a major in 1865. For a brief period he was with the Freedman's Bureau and then served five years in the 10th Cavalry Regiment of the regular army, attaining the rank of captain. During this period he studied and wrote on the cattle industry of the Southwest. For his article on "American Beef for the British Markets" he was awarded the grand medal of the Royal Agricultural Society of England. He was the first army officer detailed as military instructor at a land-grant college, performing this service at the Massachusetts Agricultural College from 1869 to 1871. There he also studied agriculture under Stockbridge and Goessmann. During the next eight years his time was divided between teaching in the scientific department at Williston Seminary, Easthampton, Mass., and other educational and agricultural enterprises. He had married, on Sept. 6, 1866, Martha Scott Swink, daughter of William Swink of Virginia, and from about 1871 their home was on her family estate, known as "Spring Hill Farm," near the Great Falls of the Potomac, in Fairfax County, Va., although residence there was often interrupted by Alvord's public duties. At this Virginia home he conducted a dairy farm and established a herd of registered Jersey dairy cattle, one of the first in the state. He wrote much for the agricultural press and delivered public addresses on agricultural subjects. He was the author of the American chapters published in *Sheldon's Dairy Farming*. He managed the Chautauqua "School of Farming" and prepared "what was probably the first correspondence course in agriculture." He helped to organize the Carlisle training school for Indians and served at times as special Indian commissioner in the Southwest. From about 1876 he was a pioneer and leader in the establishment of the coöperative creamery system, particularly in New England, and himself established the first creamery east of the Hudson River. When in 1880 Lawson Valentine started the Houghton Farm near Mountainville, Orange County, N.Y., with an experiment department, he made Alvord general manager of the enterprise. Interesting practical and scientific experimental work was carried on there for five years.

Alvord

In 1886 and 1887 Alvord was professor of agriculture at the Massachusetts Agricultural College. After this until 1893 he was president of the Maryland Agricultural College where he organized the Maryland Agricultural Experiment Station, and then for brief periods he was president of the Oklahoma Agricultural and Mechanical College and professor of agriculture at the New Hampshire College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts. His connection with these land-grant colleges gave him the opportunity of broad leadership in the nation-wide promotion of the interests of such institutions through his activities connected with the Association of American Agricultural Colleges and Experiment Stations (now the Association of Land-Grant Colleges and Universities). At the convention of representatives of these institutions at Washington in 1885 Alvord was chairman of the committee which supervised its proceedings and helped materially to pave the way for the permanent organization of the Association effected in 1887. He was then made chairman of its executive committee, which dealt with the relations of the Association with the federal government and otherwise promoted its interests at and between its conventions. In this capacity he served seven years and among other things was active in helping to put into effect the Hatch Agricultural Experiment Station Act of 1887 and to secure the passage of the Morrill Land-Grant College Endowment Act of 1890. In recognition of his important services he was elected president of the Association in 1894. When a Dairy Division was created in the Bureau of Animal Industry of the United States Department of Agriculture in 1895 Alvord was appointed its chief and held that position until his death. The division was at first organized to collect and disseminate information regarding the condition of the dairy industry, but in 1902 it established research laboratories.

Alvord was a fellow of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, twice president of the Society for the Promotion of Agricultural Science, honorary member of the Royal Agricultural Society of England, and "Officer" of the National Order of Merite Agricole of France. He had a strong and attractive personality, was exact and systematic in business and authoritative in manner and procedure. Among his friends he was cordial, generous, and unselfish. Through his writings and public addresses he achieved a high reputation as an authority on animal husbandry and dairying. Among these may be mentioned "The Dairy Herd: Its Formation and Management" (*United States Department of Agriculture Year Book*, 1894); "Dairy Devel-

opment in the United States" (*Ibid.*, 1899); Dairying at Home and Abroad" (*Ibid.*, 1902); and (with R. A. Pearson) "The Milk Supply of Two Hundred Cities and Towns" (*Bureau of Animal Industry Bulletin 46*, 1903).

[The chief sources of information are: S. M. Alvord, *A Genealogy of the Descendants of Alexander Alvord* (1908); G. M. Dodge and W. A. Ellis, *Norwich Univ., 1819–1911* (3 vols., 1911); *Proc. Ass. Am. Ag. Colls. and Experiment Stations*, 1887–95, and the reports and bulletins of the Bureau of Animal Industry, 1895–1904. Brief biogs. are contained in *Proc. Soc. for the Promotion of Ag. Sci.*, 1905, and L. H. Bailey's *Cyc. Am. Ag.* (1909), vol. IV.]

A. C. T.

AMADAS, PHILIP (fl. 1584–85), English navigator, was one of Raleigh's commanders. On Mar. 25, 1584, there was granted to Sir Walter Raleigh by Queen Elizabeth a patent empowering him to "discover, search, find out and view . . . heathen and barbarous lands . . . the colonists to have all the priviledge of Denizens and persons native of England." By April Raleigh had fitted out two vessels, one under the command of Philip Amadas of Hull, and the other under that of Arthur Barlowe. On Apr. 27, 1584, the ships "departed the West of England." Their course led them first to the Canary Islands and thence to the West Indies. Turning northward, on July 2, they entered shoal water, "wher we smelt so sweet and so strong a smel as if we had bene in the midst of some delicate garden abounding with all kinde of odoriferous flowers by which we were assured that the land could not be farre distant." On July 4 the ships reached the coast of what is now North Carolina. Sailing along the coast 120 English miles they entered an inlet. They then "manned their boats and went to view the land next adjoyning." Of this land they took possession in the name of the Queen. It proved to be an island twenty miles long and about six miles broad—"the isle of Wokokon" over against Pamlico Sound (chart by John White, 1585 or 1586, in *Early English and French Voyages*, p. 248). The island was found to be "full of grapes" and to contain "goodly cedar trees," deer, hares, and wild fowl. In a few days the explorers were visited by forty or fifty Indians "as mannerly and civill as any of Europe." Among the visiting Indians were "some women of colour yellowish and their haire black for the most part, and yet," says the account, "we saw children that had very fine aburne and chestnut coloured haire," descendants, it has been conjectured, of white men wrecked on the coast some twenty-six years before. In return for these visits the English made a journey to Ohanoak (Roanoke) Island, distant from the harbor by which they entered, "seven leagues." Here was found a village of nine houses surrounded by a stockade, some of the houses containing five rooms. The visitors were treated to a foot-bath and given a feast of venison, melons, etc. They heard of places such as "Pomeyooc" (west of the present site of Engelhard, N. C.), "Nomopana" (the Chowan River), and "Sequotan"—a position apparently near Blount Bay (*Ibid.*, pp. 227 ff. and notes). "When," says the account, "we first had sight of this countrey, some thought the first land we saw to bee the continent; but after we entred into the Haven, we saw before us another mighty long Sea: for there lyeth along the coast a tracte of Islands, two hundreth miles in length, adjoyning to the Ocean sea, and betweene the Islands, two or three entrances . . . We brought home also two of the Savages being lustie men whose names were Wanchese and Manteo." By September the ships were back in England, and their report, written by Barlowe, so pleased Elizabeth that she stood god-mother to the new colony, naming it Virginia. In 1585 Raleigh furnished seven ships to take permanent possession of the country discovered by Amadas and Barlowe, and Sir Richard Grenville was sent out as admiral with Ralph Lane as governor of the colony. With Grenville went Capt. Amadas, whom Hakluyt sets down as "Admirall" of Virginia. Amadas, with others, now passed over to the mainland, "victualled for eight dayes," on a tour of discovery during which the party actually set eyes upon "Pomeyooc" and "Sequotan." Under the government of Ralph Lane, Amadas, says Hakluyt, remained in Virginia "one whole yeere."

["Captain Arthur Barlowe's Narrative" in *Hakluyt's Voyages* (MacLehose, 1904), VIII; H. S. Burrage, *Early English and French Voyages, 1534–1608* (1906).]

I. B. R.

AMATEIS, LOUIS (Dec. 13, 1855–Mar. 16, 1913), sculptor, a son of Gen. Paolo and Carolina Amateis, came to America when twenty-eight years old. His training in sculpture had been received in various places. He had studied in Paris in 1878. In his native Turin he had been Gold Medalist at the Royal Academy of Fine Arts and in 1880 was graduated from the Institute of Technology there. In the same year he had received honorable mention at the National Exhibition. The following year found him at Milan and two years later he set sail for New York, where he continued his profession. Much of his work here was in the nature of architectural sculpture, largely done for the firm of McKim, Mead & White. In New York also he was married on Feb. 24, 1889, to Dora Ballin. In 1893 he was made professor of fine arts in the department of architecture at George Washington University, then known as Columbian University. He re-

mained there for ten years and even after his retirement continued to reside in Washington. His best-known work is the pair of bronze doors, together with the transom above them, for the west entrance of the Capitol; these have never been hung, because their installation would require some minor structural changes, but they are on exhibition at the north entrance of the New National Museum Building in Washington. Most of Amateis's monumental works were made, however, for the state of Texas. In Galveston are the Henry Rosenberg monument to the Texas heroes of the War of 1836 and a statue of Rosenberg in front of the Rosenberg Library. In Houston is an "Angel of Peace," and in Corsicana "The Call to Arms." Among his other works are "Father Rhine" in Mobile, the Heirrich mausoleum in Washington, and the memorial monument of Nathan A. Baldwin in the cemetery at Milford, Conn. This last, made in 1899, recalls distinctly Amateis's Italian birth and training, for it would be quite appropriate in such a place as the Campo Santo at Genoa. Besides these monumental works he did numerous portrait busts, among them those of President Arthur, James G. Blaine, Gen. Hancock, Gen. Logan, Secretary Bayard, and Andrew Carnegie. He was a member of the National Art Society and an exhibitor at the National Academy of Design in New York and at the Art Society in Philadelphia. For the Pan-American Exposition at Buffalo in 1901 he made a group called "El Caney." He was likewise represented at the Louisiana Purchase Exposition at St. Louis in 1904. The example of his life and work was not lost on his own children, for of his four sons two became architects and one a sculptor.

[Written sources of information about Louis Amateis are entirely lacking aside from a brief and incomplete notice in *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11, and an obituary in the *Washington Evening Star*, Mar. 17, 1913.]

E.G.N.

AMBLER, JAMES MARKHAM MARSHALL (Dec. 30, 1848–Oct. 30, 1881), military surgeon, explorer, was born at "The Dell," Markham, Fauquier County, Va., the son of Dr. Richard Cary and Susan (Marshall) Ambler. He was a descendant of Richard Ambler of Yorkshire, who settled in Virginia early in the eighteenth century. His mother, characterized by one of his biographers as "a wise and great-hearted woman," was a niece of Chief Justice Marshall and a grand-daughter of Robert Morris. He attended the neighborhood schools until his sixteenth birthday. Then he enlisted in the 12th Virginia Cavalry of the Confederate Army, where he served during the last months of the war. He entered Washington College (now Washington and Lee University) for the school year 1865–66 and remained there until 1867, when he went to the University of Maryland to study medicine. After graduating he took the government examinations and in April 1874 was commissioned an assistant surgeon in the United States Navy. During the remainder of the year and a part of the year following he served on the *Mayflower* and the *Kansas*, of the North Atlantic fleet, and was then transferred to the training ship *Minnesota*. In 1877 he was made a passed assistant surgeon and transferred to the Naval Hospital at Norfolk. It was while there that a telegram came to him from Lieut. George W. De Long [*q.v.*] asking him to accept the post of surgeon on the *Jeannette*, then being fitted out for its historic voyage in the Arctic regions. He immediately left for his old home to consult with his mother. They both agreed that it was his duty to go, and he accepted.

From the time the *Jeannette* sailed (July 8, 1879), until Sept. 6, when the ship was solidly frozen in, his duties were those of ordinary routine. From then until the released ship sank (June 1881) and on until the final tragedy he bore an increasingly arduous part in the attempt to ward off disaster. Though he could not foresee the cases of lead poisoning that were to come from the soldering of the food cans, it was due to his vigilance that no case of scurvy appeared. In the effort to reach land after the retreat from the ship he acted as roadmaster, having charge of the bridging and rafting, and also had the duty of husbanding and apportioning the meager food stores of the party. After the separation of the three boats off the shores of the Lena delta in the storm of Sept. 16, the party of De Long, Ambler, and eleven others landed and struggled on buffeted by storms and worn down by hunger and cold. On Oct. 9, when the store of food was almost exhausted, two men, subsequently rescued by a native, were sent ahead for succor. Ambler declined the offer to go. In his journal he relates the incident and says: "I thought my duty required me with him (De Long) and the main body for the present." His last entry, dated Oct. 20, addressed to his brother and containing a tender message to his mother, tells of the suffering endured by the party. The end came ten days later. De Long, Ambler, and Ah Sam, the Chinese cook, forged somewhat ahead of the remainder of the party and then, exhausted, lay down and expired. To Chief Engineer Melville, who discovered the bodies Mar. 23, 1882, it was evident that Ambler had been the last to die. The remains were brought to New York Feb. 20, 1884, and Ambler's body was buried at Markham, his birthplace.

[John Cropper Wise, "James Markham Marshall Ambler," *Jour. Ass. Mil. Surgeons of the U. S.*, May 1906; Wm. Taylor Thom, *A Notable Beta of Yesterday* (pamphlet, 1921); Wm. Williams Keen, "Story of the Three Tablets," *Mil. Surgeon*, Jan. 1918; Geo. W. Melville, *In The Lena Delta* (1885); Emma De Long, *Voyage of the Jeannette* (1883).]

W.J.G.

AMENT, WILLIAM SCOTT (Sept. 14, 1851–Jan. 6, 1909), Congregational clergyman and missionary, was born at Owosso, Mich., the son of Winfield Scott and Emily (Hammond) Ament, of Dutch, French Huguenot, and English ancestry. He was educated in the Owosso public schools where he excelled in baseball, being known as "Home-run Ament." In 1867 he entered Oberlin Academy and two years later Oberlin College, graduating in 1873. In college he preferred sports and athletics to study, but was active in debating and in conducting religious services in the villages of the neighborhood. After a year of teaching school at Richfield, Ohio, he entered Union Theological Seminary in 1874, changed to Andover Seminary in 1876, and graduated there the following year. He was married on Aug. 23, 1877, to Mary Penfield, daughter of an Oberlin professor, was ordained on Sept. 5, and in October he sailed as a missionary to China. He was first stationed at Pao Ting Fu but in May 1880 was transferred to Peking. In March 1885 he returned to America and for two years was pastor of a church in Medina, Ohio, where he was active in the work of the Gospel Temperance Union. In August 1888 he went back to China, and the rest of his life, with the exception of brief trips to America in 1897 and 1901, was passed as a missionary in Peking.

The nature of Ament's achievement as a missionary was determined partly by his preparation and partly by his own temperament. He had made no particular study of Chinese culture before he entered upon his work, and he never seems to have made much effort to understand the native religions. He was four years in China before he learned that Taoism possessed any temples; the ritual of Buddhism was to him mere "rigmarole" (Porter, *post*, p. 61); he regarded the non-Christian Chinese very simply as "heathen" to be saved. To this task of salvation he brought unusual ardor, energy, and devotion. During the first year he learned the Chinese language sufficiently well to preach effectively, and later edited a monthly paper, *The North China News*, written in Mandarin. He traveled thousands of miles on foot and mule-back, strewing the country with small missions. At the outbreak of the Boxer War, he proved his dauntless courage, when the American Minister could not spare marines for the service, by going alone as an escort with twenty carts which brought in the refugees from Tung-Chow. During the siege of Peking he was active in providing for the helpless converts who had fled into the city. After the siege was lifted he went about among the native villages, without military attendance, and succeeded in raising indemnities to rebuild burned chapels, and to take care of the widows and orphans of slaughtered converts. He found many occasions to protect the villagers from marauding expeditions of the foreign soldiery. Meanwhile an inaccurate account of an interview with him, published in the New York *Sun* on Dec. 24, 1900, led to strictures on his conduct by several eastern newspapers and to a hasty indictment by Mark Twain in the *North American Review* for February and April 1901, in which he openly accused Ament of looting and extortion. Upon more careful investigation the charges fell to the ground, and Mark Twain rather than Ament was left in need of exoneration. The latter's indefatigable labors in the missionary cause ended in 1909, when after five months' illness he succumbed to an abscess of the brain.

[H. D. Porter, *Wm. Scott Ament* (1911), containing copious extracts from Ament's correspondence and a full account of the Boxer episode; Ament's own discussion of the latter, *Independent*, May 9, Sept. 12, Sept. 19, 1901; "In Memoriam, Rev. Wm. Scott Ament," by G. D. Wilder, in the *Chinese Recorder*, May 1909, pp. 276–81.]

E.S.B.

AMES, CHARLES GORDON (Oct. 3, 1828–Apr. 15, 1912), Baptist and Unitarian clergyman, editor, was born in Dorchester, Mass. A foundling, he was adopted when about three years old by Thomas and Lucy (Foster) Ames, and was brought up on a farm near Canterbury, N. H., with few educational advantages. Emotionally religious by nature, he was less affected by "the long sermons and long prayers, uttered from a high pulpit by a venerable pastor" in the Congregational meeting house, than by the preaching of a Freewill Baptist revivalist, "a man of prayer and tears, of dark and solemn aspect, and a son of thunder" (*Charles Gordon Ames: A Spiritual Autobiography*, p. 13). In October 1842 he was baptized into the Freewill Baptist Church, and the April following he left the farm to work in a printing establishment operated by his denomination at Dover, N. H. This served him as "a sort of religious school" (*Ibid.*, p. 21). He early decided to be a preacher, and was still under eighteen when licensed to preach. From 1847 to 1849 he studied at Geauga Seminary near Cleveland, and in November of the latter year, when barely twenty-one, he was ordained. He was twice married, first to Sarah Jane Daniels of Dover, N. H., Mar. 28, 1850, and second, in 1863, to Julia

Frances Baker of Cincinnati. In the summer of 1851 the Home Missionary Society of his church sent him to St. Anthony, Minn. (Minneapolis), where he founded the first Freewill Baptist church in that place. His services to this growing community were numerous and varied, for he was a man of practical common sense, and took an active interest in all civic affairs. On July 4, 1854, he was secretary of the meeting that marked the birth of the Republican party in Minnesota, and became the first editor of the *Minnesota Republican,* ancestor of the *Minneapolis Tribune,* serving in that capacity from 1855 to 1857. In 1856 he was elected first recorder of deeds for Hennepin County.

During his five years' pastorate in Minneapolis he found so much in the faith and attitude of his people which ran counter to his understanding and love of human life, that he withdrew from it, and for a time from the ministry. In 1859, however, he returned to New England and became a member of the Unitarian Church of the Disciples in Boston. Declining an invitation to the Unitarian pulpit in Quincy, Mass., he accepted a call from Bloomington, Ill., to spend a month organizing a Unitarian Society there. Instead of a month, he gave three years to this work. Brief ministries in Cincinnati, Ohio, and Albany, N. Y., followed. During the Civil War he was an ardent supporter of the North. When rejected for military service because of physical disabilities, he insisted upon paying for a substitute out of his slender resources. He went about preaching the righteousness of the Northern cause, and the superior wisdom and uprightness of Abraham Lincoln, with whom he had become acquainted in Bloomington. He was also tireless in relief work, and by speeches in the camps did what he could to keep up the morale of the soldiers. In 1865 the American Unitarian Association sent him to make a survey of religious conditions on the Pacific coast, and he was engaged in missionary work there until 1872, when he became pastor of a church in Germantown, Pa. A plan presented by him at a meeting in Philadelphia dealing with the poverty and distress of the winter of 1873, resulted in one of the first organized societies of charity in the United States. After five years' service in Germantown he resigned to become editor of the *Christian Register,* but in 1880 returned to the active ministry and spent eight years in organizing and developing the Spring Garden Church, Philadelphia. At the age of sixty he was called to succeed James Freeman Clarke at the Church of the Disciples, Boston, remaining there as pastor and pastor-emeritus until his death. In his active and varied life he found time to write,

George Eliot's Two Marriages (1885); *As Natural as Life* (1894); *Sermons of Sunrise* (1901); *Poems* (1898); *Five Points of Faith* (1903); *Living Largely* (1904).

[Sources are meager. *Charles Gordon Ames: A Spiritual Autobiography with an Epilogue by Alice Ames Winter* (1913); *Who's Who in America,* and obituary in *Boston Transcript,* Apr. 16, 1912.] C.G.

AMES, EDWARD RAYMOND (May 20, 1806–Apr. 25, 1879), Methodist bishop, was a descendant of William Ames, who came to Braintree, Mass., from England in 1643. His grandfather, Sylvanus, was a graduate of Harvard in the class of 1767, and died at Valley Forge while serving as chaplain in Washington's army. Edward's father, also Sylvanus, was born in Bridgewater, Mass., in 1771, and in 1795 married Nabby Lee Johnson. Two years later they migrated westward and finally settled in what is now Adams County, Ohio, at a place later called Amesville. Here Edward was born and amid rough frontier conditions was reared. His father soon became a leader in the county, serving as sheriff, colonel of the militia, trustee of Ohio University, representative in the legislature, and, from 1813 to 1823, associate judge. In his home, which was the resort of the politicians of southern Ohio and a favorite stopping place for public men on their long trips from East to West, young Ames had opportunity to see many prominent people and hear much about the political movements of the day. His formal education was meager, but he made good use of the local Western Library Association, later the Coonskin Library, said to have been the first public library founded in the Northwest Territory, though not the first incorporated, in which his father was one of the original stockholders. For two or three years he attended Ohio University, supporting himself by teaching and other work. While there, Bishop Robert R. Roberts induced him to attend a session of the Illinois Methodist Conference, and here he met two men who persuaded him to open a seminary at Lebanon. The school was a success, and was the beginning of McKendree College. In 1830 he joined the Illinois Conference, and became an itinerant minister. Ten years later the General Conference elected him corresponding secretary of the Missionary Society for the South and West. During the four years that he filled this office he traveled some 25,000 miles. On one trip he passed over the entire frontier from Lake Superior to Texas, camping out during almost the entire trip, at one period, it is said, so destitute of provisions that for two days the only nourishment he and his companions had was a little moistened maple sugar (Walker, pp. 422–23). His task

was to systematize the missionary work, take an inventory of the property, and obtain land grants from the government for educational work among the Indians. In 1844 he returned to the itinerancy and in 1848 was elected to succeed Matthew Simpson as president of Indiana Asbury University, but declined. In 1852 he was made bishop. His episcopal residence was Indianapolis, and during the Civil War he was energetic in behalf of the Union. He was the only Methodist bishop appointed chaplain in the army, and during the winter of 1861 preached to the soldiers in the various camps. In January 1862, with the Hon. Hamilton Fish, he was appointed by the War Department as commissioner to visit Union prisoners at Richmond and provide for their comfort at the expense of the United States. The appointment of the commission aroused indignation in the South, and Bishop Ames's presence upon it seems to have given special offense. Prof. William W. Sweet quotes from a letter from a Confederate officer, an ex-Methodist minister, to Jefferson Davis, warning him not to allow Ames to enter the lines, characterizing him as an "astute politician, who in the garb of a Christian minister and with the specious plea of 'Humanity' upon his lips, would insinuate himself into the very heart of that Government whose very foundation he would most gladly sap and destroy" (Sweet, p. 154). The commission was not permitted to enter Richmond. Ames had a clear, practical mind and business ability of a high order. He was strong in his convictions, imperious in manner, and sometimes dealt with a heavy hand. His sermons were usually conversational in style, but he was capable of impassioned oratory, and was at his best when addressing the thousands who gathered at Western camp meetings. His talent as an organizer and administrator was of great value to the church. The last years of his life were spent in Baltimore, where he died at the age of seventy-three.

[Chas. M. Walker, *Hist. of Athens County, Ohio* (1869); H. N. Herrick and W. W. Sweet, *Hist. of the North Indiana Conference* (1917); Wm. W. Sweet, *The M. E. Church and Civil War* (1912); J. M. Reid, *Missions and Missionary Societies of the M. E. Church* (1879); *Gen. Conf. Jour.* (1880); Matthew Simpson, *Cyc. of Methodism* (1878); *Methodist* (N.Y.) May 3, 1879.]

J.W.J.

AMES, EZRA (May 5, 1768–Feb. 23, 1836), portrait painter in oils and miniature, was an artist of slender education but remarkable talent. He ministered to the esthetic needs of his generation in nearly every field from the painting of carriages to the portraiture of statesmen. His father, Jesse Emes or Ames, a farmer, was the fifth son and tenth child of Henry Emes and Ruth (Newton) Emes of Framingham, Mass.; his mother, who died on Feb. 14, 1776, had been Bette Bent also of Framingham, where Ezra Ames was born, the youngest of six children. Some time during his childhood the family moved to a farm at Staatsburg, N.Y. Ezra apparently left home at an early age and returned to Massachusetts, where in 1790 we find him established as a furniture and carriage painter in Worcester. From a memorandum book now in the possession of the New York Historical Society we learn that he was by this time already painting miniatures. Between the years 1790 and 1798 he records the sale of twenty-five miniatures, none of which has been located, although one was of so important a person as Gov. Clinton of New York. On Oct. 6, 1794, Ames was married to Zipporah Wood, daughter of Joseph Wood of Upton, Mass., and in the ensuing year they settled permanently in Albany, N.Y. Besides his work as a carriage painter and miniaturist during these years, Ezra Ames gilded frames, painted furniture, lettered clock faces, decorated flags; and, during 1797–98 engraved spoons, rings, and Masonic emblems. He first emerges as a painter in oils with the portrait of a Mr. Glen for which he received four pounds sterling on Feb. 22, 1794. The portrait by which he gained the widest reputation was not done until 1812: a full length painting of Gov. Clinton, which was exhibited at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts in that year and a replica of which was ordered by the State of New York the following year. Ames also painted a bust portrait of Clinton, which was engraved by Maverick. A bust portrait of Alexander Hamilton, engraved by Leney and by Hoogland, is now lost. Besides these, Ames painted portraits of Solomon Allen, engraved by Tanner and by Jones; Clarkson Crolius (1773–1843), Charles Genet and Leonard Gansevoort, the last three owned by the Albany Institute; Gen. William Irvine (1741–1804), which is now lost but can be identified by the copy at the New York Historical Society; Mrs. James King; Allan Melville (1782–1832) and Mrs. Allan Melville, *née* Gansevoort (1791–1872), the parents of Herman Melville, both reproduced in the catalogue of the Thomas B. Clarke sale, New York 1919; Catherine Van Schaick, later Mrs. Peter Gansevoort (1751–1831), loaned to the Metropolitan Museum in 1919; and a self portrait which was engraved by H. B. Hall. Six miniatures by Ames are owned by the Albany Institute.

[Dorothy C. Barck, "Ezra Ames," in *N.Y. Hist. Soc. Quart. Bull.*, Jan. 1927; W. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U.S.* (1834); D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907); T. Bolton, *Early Am. Portr. Painters in Minia-*

ture (1921); *N. Y. Times Mag.*, Sept. 5, 1926. For information as to the Clinton portrs. see C. W. Bowen, *Centennial of the Inauguration of George Washington* (1892). Six portrs. by Ames are reproduced in M. L. Sutliff, *Record of the Ancestors and Descendants of Betsy M. Sutliff* (1897).]

T. B.

AMES, FISHER (Apr. 9, 1758–July 4, 1808), statesman and publicist, was descended from William Ames (not the author of *Medulla Theologiæ*, but a Somersetshire yeoman who emigrated to Plymouth in 1626), and from Capt. Daniel Fisher, who arrested Gov. Andros in the revolution of 1689. He was born in Dedham, Mass., third in a family of five, to Deborah (Fisher) and Nathaniel Ames [*q.v.*], 1708–64, innkeeper, astronomer, physician. After the death of Nathaniel in 1764 his medical practise and almanac business were taken over by his eldest son, Nathaniel Ames, whose diary records political opinions diametrically opposed to those of his more gifted brother. Fisher Ames showed such early promise of scholarship that his mother, who carried on the family tavern, had him "fitted" by the age of twelve for the class of 1774, Harvard College, where he was an active member of a new debating club (the Institute of 1770), a leading scholar, and (what his early biographers considered more remarkable) a spotless youth. From 1774 to 1779 he lived at home, occasionally teaching in the district schools, once turning out with the militia for a short tour of duty, but for the most part reading deeply in ancient history, Latin, and English classics, and Greek classics in translations. In 1779 he was received as a law pupil in a Boston office, and in 1781 was admitted to the Suffolk bar. He never liked the law, but practised it successfully.

Elected as delegate to the Concord convention for regulating prices (1781), he argued against the wisdom of price-fixing. As "Lucius Junius Brutus," in the *Boston Independent Chronicle* on Oct. 12, 1786, when Shays's Rebellion was at its height, he struck a note of stern repression; his "Camillus" essays of March 1787 furthered the movement for a federal convention, and fixed his reputation as a publicist. "Anarchy and government are both before us, and in our choice. If we fall, we fall by our folly, not our fate." In the autumn he was elected a delegate from Dedham to the Massachusetts ratifying convention, where he delivered a powerful speech in favor of biennial elections "as a security that the sober, second thought of the people shall be law." The trend of his political thought was revealed by the declaration, "We cannot live without society. . . . The liberty of one depends not so much on the removal of all restraint from him, as on the due restraint upon the liberty of others. Without such restraint, there can be no liberty."

Fisher Ames was now a local celebrity, and a young man whom the Federalists trusted. In April 1788 he was chosen a representative of Dedham in the General Court of Massachusetts, and in the following winter was elected to Congress, obtaining 818 votes against 521 for Samuel Adams. He was reëlected to the Second, Third, and Fourth Congresses (1791–97) with a larger majority and a heavier total vote. He was not a monarchist, even in the sense that John Adams was. His model was that ideal Roman republic which never existed in fact. Like Hamilton, he believed that the Federal Government was inherently weak. It must lean on an aristocracy of talent and virtue, reach out for power, and acquire popular prestige by a vigorous, energetic policy. He expected to find Congress a group of like-minded gentlemen and was dismayed at the "yawning listlessness" of many, and the adherence of some to what he considered the mischievous nonsense that the best government is that which governs least. During the first session he labored, and not in vain, to adjust the tariff bill to New England interests, to uphold the President's power of removal, and to strike out discrimination in the first tonnage act between British and French vessels. Ames shared the opinion of leading Boston merchants that their profitable commerce with England must not be placed in jeopardy by retaliation. Hamilton's appointment to the Treasury Department provided both the leader and the vigorous impulse that Ames wanted, and he became one of the Secretary's consistent supporters in the House, though never his intimate friend. Ames had a large share in shaping important legislation. He endeavored to fix an organic connection between Congress and the executive, considering the heads of departments as a recognized ministry, "imparting a kind of momentum to the operations of the laws." The creation of a ways and means committee in 1795 broke the connection, and led Ames to predict that in consequence "our government will be, in fact, a mere democracy, which has never been tolerable, nor long tolerated" (R. V. Harlow, *History of Legislative Methods*, 1917, p. 146).

As brilliant intellectually as Hamilton, Ames was wholly devoid of vanity, a most fortunate circumstance for his effectiveness in debate. Erect in stature, pleasing in voice and appearance, conciliatory in manner, he impressed the House as much by candor as by ardor, and with wealth of knowledge no less than oratorical grace. His lively imagination drew forth striking metaphors, which his good taste kept within bounds. The in-

tellectual contempt that he felt for many of his fellow members was reserved for confidential letters, and Attic salt was sprinkled through his speeches in such a way as to arouse the admiration rather than the resentment of Bœotian colleagues. His formal speeches were concise and pointed, well supplied though never overloaded with facts, and often reserved for the close of a debate when they could clear a confused issue.

In a letter of remarkable penetration (Nov. 30, 1791, *Works,* I, 103) Ames analyzed the "equally unpleasant and lasting" causes of party difference; but he never questioned that what Hamilton and New England wanted was good for the whole country. Peace and prosperity, he hoped, would reconcile the South to the Federalist system. Jefferson considered Ames one of the "paper men" in Congress, and the Republican press denounced him as a speculator, financially interested in the funding system. Ames retorted that the interest on the Massachusetts members' funds would not pay for the oats of the Southern members' coach horses. The *Boston Columbian Centinel,* Oct. 22, 1794, stated that Ames had invested his savings in twelve shares of the Bank (of which he was a director for a short time) and in $600 worth of public funds, and had neither bought nor sold other securities. In 1796, he sold eight of the Bank shares for $4,149.60, and used the money for East India ventures (*Proceedings American Antiquarian Society,* 1927). His income was derived largely from these ventures, his law practise, and the property of his wife (Frances, daughter of Col. John Worthington of Springfield, Mass., whom he married on July 15, 1792).

The British spoliations, and other Anglo-American incidents of 1793–94 aroused a resentment against Great Britain which culminated in Madison's resolutions proposing to inaugurate a commercial war. In his speech of Jan. 27, 1794, Ames exposed the spurious economics of this policy and the doubtful diplomacy of endeavoring to "quarrel ourselves into their good will," ending with the words, "I hope we shall show, by our vote, that we deem it better policy to feed nations than to starve them, and that we shall never be so unwise as to put our good customers into a situation to be forced to make every exertion to do without us." In consequence of this speech, Fisher Ames was burned in effigy in Charleston, S. C., together with Benedict Arnold, and the Devil (Madison, *Writings,* 1865, II, 9). But a more important result was that the speech made possible Jay's mission and treaty.

Ames's speech on Jay's treaty (Apr. 28, 1796) was "one of the greatest speeches ever made in Congress" (Channing, *History of the United States,* 1917, IV, 145). The previous summer, he had been prostrated by a malady (diagnosed by contemporary physicians as marasmus, or atrophy), from which he never entirely recovered. Coming to Philadelphia in February 1796 at great hazard, he sat silent during the debate as to whether Jay's treaty, duly ratified, should be executed or nullified by the House. Near the conclusion, summoning all his strength, he arose to speak, tottering, faint in voice, and cold in diction. As he warmed to the subject, it seemed to call forth latent energies, until his physical equaled his mental powers. Dr. Priestley, who was present, and who had heard the great English and Irish orators, called it "the most bewitching piece of parliamentary oratory he had ever listened to" (Charles Caldwell, *Autobiography,* 1855, p. 114). "He addressed himself to every faculty of the mind, and awakened every feeling and emotion of the heart. . . . The effect produced was absolute enchantment" (*Port Folio,* 3rd ser., vol. I, p. 12). It was necessary for the treaty opponents to carry an adjournment in order to break the spell, but the next day the House by a majority of three voted to execute the treaty.

Declining reëlection in 1796, Ames retired to Dedham at the end of Washington's administration. The only office he held subsequently was a seat on the governor's council in 1799–1801. In 1805 the Harvard Corporation broke the clerical tradition of the Harvard presidency by electing him to that office, which he declined on the ground of his feeble health and "advancing age" of forty-seven. "Squire" Ames was a cheerful neighbor, easy of access, interested in town affairs. A liberal in religion, he joined the local Episcopal church, partly to escape the theological contentions in the Congregational parish, partly because ritual meant good order. His estate, with a model piggery, dairy, and orchard, was constantly improved; his house a center of hospitality and good conversation. Popular rumor made Fisher Ames a member of the Essex Junto; George Cabot and Christopher Gore were his closest friends; but henceforth his political rôle was largely that of a sage.

Ames shared John Adams's view of the French Revolution, and the poisonous effect of Gallomania on American politics. Hence he hailed the dispute of 1797–98 with France as an occasion to purify the country of "Jacobinism," and strengthen the Federal Government by a bold and spirited policy. Although in 1794 he would have dealt with "self-created societies" by "the gentle power of opinion," in 1798 he highly approved the Sedition Act, and was instrumental in the

prosecution of David Brown for erecting a liberty pole at Dedham with a "seditious" inscription (*Report of the American Historical Association,* 1912, pp. 122–25). The President's peace mission of 1799 disappointed him, but he refused to be drawn into the intrigue against the reëlection of Adams.

After Jefferson's election Fisher Ames became the slave of a fixed idea, that catastrophic theory of democracy which was common to other New England leaders, and to Federalists elsewhere such as Carroll, Hamilton, Morris, and Rutledge. Since the "wise and good and opulent" had lost power to jealous, ignorant, and enthusiastic democracy, the Republic must sink into anarchy, from which military despotism would emerge. Jefferson's early moderation was vain or delusive; "Brissot will fall by the hand of Danton, and he will be supplanted by Robespierre." "It is the almost universal mistake of our countrymen, that democracy would be mild and safe in America." "The most ferocious of animals when his passions are roused to fury and uncontrolled, is man; and of all governments, the worst is that which never fails to excite, but was never found to restrain those passions, that is, democracy. It is an illuminated hell. . . ." These quotations are from Ames's essay on "The Dangers of American Liberty," written in 1805, and published posthumously by his friends as the best expression of their faith and fear. His other published essays struck the same note. Their style is clear and precise, nervous and vigorous, illuminated by vivacity and imagination.

On the side of practical policy, Fisher Ames declared in a letter of 1802: "The Federalists must entrench themselves in the State governments, and endeavor to make State justice and State power a shelter of the wise, and good, and rich, from the wild destroying rage of the Southern Jacobins"—in other words, they must endeavor to maintain a solid block of Federalist states, and prevent the Jeffersonian infection from debauching New England. Ames devised no constitutional doctrine of state rights, and rejected Pickering's secession proposals of 1804: but his writings did much to build up a sectional consciousness which almost became New England nationalism. That the British navy was the only remaining barrier against French conscription of American boys for Santo Domingo was roundly asserted in Ames's last essay, "The Dangerous Power of France." He died at Dedham on July 4, 1808, too soon to witness the revival of Federalism after Jefferson's embargo acts. His imposing funeral at Boston was a political demonstration and his works were promptly published as a political testament.

Ames

Fisher Ames stands out from other New England Federalists as a man of singularly pure and unselfish character, humble in spite of his great talents, zealous and active through chronic illness. As an orator he had no equal in the generation between Patrick Henry and Henry Clay. On the formative period of the Federal Government he had a strong and wholesome influence; but his very virtues were a bane to New England. An intellect enriched but not disciplined by scholarship, accepted from the legacy of Rome and Greece only a political formula, invalid for American society.

[*Works of Fisher Ames,* 2 vols. (1854), ed. by Seth Ames, supersedes the edition of 1809; *Speeches of Fisher Ames in Cong.* (1871), ed. by P. W. Ames, includes additional matter, but not everything found in the *Annals of Cong.* Henry Ewbank, *The Influences of Democracy on Liberty, Property, and the Happiness of Society* (London, 1835), a selection of Ames's works, with a hortatory preface, was pointedly reviewed in the *Quart. Rev.,* vol. LIII, pp. 548–73 (1835). Additional letters are found in most of the lives of contemporary Federalists, especially in G. Gibbs, *Memoirs of the Administrations of Washington and Adams* (1846). The Dedham Hist. Soc. possesses many MS. letters and business documents, and the diary of Nathaniel Ames (1741–1822), extracts from which are printed in the *Dedham Hist. Reg.,* vols. I–XIV (1890–1903). Samuel Dexter's funeral oration (*Boston Gazette,* July 11, and *Repertory,* July 8, 1808) is the foundation of most subsequent biog. articles, of which the best is in the *Analectic Mag.,* III, 309–33 (Phila., 1814). J. Q. Adams, *Review of Works of Fisher Ames* (1809), presents the opposition view. A memoir by Ames's pastor, Rev. Wm. Montague, in the *Diocesan Reg. and New Eng. Calendar for 1812* (Dedham, 1811), pp. 238–48, is the best account of his character and private life; further details have been collected by J. B. Thayer in *Homes of Am. Statesmen* (Hartford, 1855), pp. 275–97.]

S.E.M.

AMES, FREDERICK LOTHROP (June 8, 1835–Sept. 13, 1893), capitalist, born at North Easton, Mass., was the son of Oliver Ames, Jr. [*q.v.*], and Sarah (Lothrop) Ames. He was educated at Phillips Exeter and Harvard (1854), and on June 7, 1863, was married to Rebecca, daughter of James Blair of St. Louis, by whom he had six children. He entered Oliver Ames & Sons in 1863, becoming treasurer in 1876. A cold, forceful, unostentatious man, he carried almost as many business burdens as his sire. A director or official in threescore of railroads, an officer of banks and trusts, an authority on railroads, a trustee of Harvard University, one of the heaviest owners of Boston realty including the Ames Building, Frederick Ames was a power in industrial circles. Yet he gave the same care to the Home for Incurables of which he was president, to the Unitarian Society, to the Massachusetts School for the Blind, the Perkins Institute, the McLean Insane Asylum, and the Children's Hospital as to his lucrative business connections. His diversion was horticulture, and for thirty years he was a leader in the Massachusetts Horticultural Society and a will-

ing contributor to the Arnold Arboretum of Harvard University. This austere capitalist and executive had an enlightened interest in all things human save political preferment, but even there his neighbors in his absence nominated and elected him to a term in the state Senate (1872).

[*Report, Class of 1854, Harv. Univ.* (1894); *Representative Men of Mass.*, ed. by W. F. Moore (1898); *Boston Transcript*, Sept. 13, 14, 1893.] R.J.P.

AMES, JAMES BARR (June 22, 1846–Jan. 8, 1910), educator and legal writer, the only son of Samuel T. Ames, a Boston merchant, and Mary H. (Barr) Ames, was born in Boston, but soon after his birth his parents moved to the neighboring town of Medford. There young Ames received his earliest education. His parents returning to Boston in 1856, he attended successively the Brimmer School and the Boston Latin School until he entered Harvard College in 1863. After his first term as a sophomore he was compelled by ill health to leave college and spent most of the time until March 1866 on a farm in New Ipswich, N. H., thereby gaining a love of farming which he retained for the rest of his life. He then joined as a sophomore the class of 1868 at Harvard, and was graduated with that class. He was distinguished in college as captain of the university baseball nine, for social popularity, and for high scholarship. After graduation he taught in Boston for a year in the private school of E. S. Dixwell. Then, after a year in Europe, he became tutor, 1871–72, in French and German in Harvard College, and, 1872–73, supplied the place of Henry Adams in teaching medieval history. Meanwhile he had entered the Harvard Law School in 1870, and was studying law while serving as college instructor. As a law student he made such an impression upon his teachers that, after graduation and a year of post-graduate study, he was appointed in 1873 assistant professor of law. The experiment of appointing as a teacher of law one who had never practised the profession was novel, but proved so successful that when, in 1877, on some intimation that his lack of practise might preclude a permanent appointment, he resigned and was about to go into practise, the Corporation of the University appointed him professor without limit of tenure. His life-work thereafter was bound up with the Harvard Law School.

It is to Ames's success in adapting the idea of his teacher, C. C. Langdell [*q.v.*], that the triumph of the system of teaching law by the study of reported cases is largely due. Though Langdell's name will rightly always be connected with a system of study and teaching which has revolutionized methods in the principal law schools of the United States, and has had wide influence in other departments of study, Ames's collections of cases and his skill in using them, were important factors in bringing about this result. He prepared successively case books on torts, pleading, bills and notes, trusts, partnership, admiralty, suretyship, and equity jurisdiction. The annotations in these books, as well as Ames's essays and lectures, have had formative influence in more than one department of the law. A love for history acquired in college study led Ames almost from the beginning of his work as teacher to read the earlier sources of English law. In the course of some years during summer vacations on his farm at Castine, Me., he read through the *Year-Books* which contain a great mass of early judicial decisions reported in abbreviated Norman-French. He noted the salient points discovered in this reading, and he was thus enabled in two essays on "The History of Assumpsit" (*Harvard Law Review*, II, 1, 53) to give the answer to a problem that had heretofore puzzled lawyers and legal historians—what were the sources from which was developed the law of simple contracts, and the action of assumpsit by which such contracts were enforced. These essays at once gave Ames a high reputation as a legal scholar and historian not only throughout the United States, but in Europe.

Ames's encouragement and support were instrumental in the founding and early development of the *Harvard Law Review*. This periodical, founded by students in 1887 and since then edited entirely by students, soon became recognized as one of the leading legal periodicals in the English-speaking world, and served as a model for a number of similar periodicals subsequently started in other law schools. Most of Ames's legal writing appeared in the pages of this journal, and as the articles were on crucial questions, they have had an influence out of proportion to their number. Since Ames's death they have been collected and republished, together with the substance of a course of lectures on legal history which he delivered shortly after the publication of his essays on the history of assumpsit (*Lectures on Legal History and Miscellaneous Legal Essays*, by James Barr Ames, with a Memoir, 1913).

As a teacher, Ames was markedly successful. His method was an adaptation of that of Socrates, and though his reading had made him profoundly learned in the law, he never presented his learning to students as something to be memorized. His knowledge of legal principles was freely drawn upon, as was his intimate acquaintance with the historical development of any doctrine under consideration, but in the class-room he rarely entered into detailed discussion of authorities. He was an

idealist in law, and his supreme gift as a scholar and a teacher was his constructive legal imagination. He believed it to be the function of the lawyer, and especially of the teacher of law, to weld from the decisions a body of principles not only just but mutually consistent and coherent. It was his constant effort to lead his students to exercise their reasoning powers to this end. In 1895 Ames followed Langdell as dean of the Harvard Law School as a natural successor, since for many years previously he had been Langdell's chief lieutenant. During the years of Ames's leadership the standards of scholarship required for admission to the school and for securing its degree were continuously made more severe. His faith that excellence would always win recognition was unquestioning and inspiring. He had no hesitation in requiring a college degree as a requisite for admission to the school, and was not surprised when this requirement was soon followed by a large growth in numbers. His personal contact with students was always intimate, and though his sympathy was controlled by a keen sense of justice, and he never hesitated to tell the truth merely because it was disagreeable, his influence over them was very great. Though not of striking appearance, he had not only character but the gift of manners, and no one was long associated with him without being impressed with his quality. Many universities recognized his distinction with honorary degrees. On June 29, 1880, he married Sarah Russell, daughter of George Russell and Sarah (Shaw) Russell of Boston, who with two sons survived him.

[*Centennial Hist. Harv. Law School* (1918); *Harv. Law Rev.*, XXIII, 321–38; *Reports Sec. Harv. Class of 1868*; *Harv. Grads. Mag.*, XVIII, 401, 518.] S.W.

AMES, JAMES TYLER (May 13, 1810–Feb. 16, 1883), mechanic, manufacturer, was born at Lowell, Mass., the son of Nathan Peabody Ames and Phœbe (Tyler) Ames. He was endowed to a high degree with the mechanical skill possessed both by his father and his more famous brother, Nathan Peabody Ames, Jr. [*q.v.*]. In his father's shop at Lowell and later in his brother's factory at Cabotville (now Chicopee) he received a thorough and practical training as a mechanic. Although in later years he devoted his chief attention to the business aspect of his great factory, there were few men in his employ superior to him as a practical craftsman.

The Ames family, at the urgent behest of Edmund Dwight, had removed in 1829 to Chicopee Falls, where success had come quickly. Under the leadership of Nathan P. Ames, Jr., the Ames Manufacturing Company was organized in 1834 and new factories built down the river upon the site of the present Chicopee. Specializing in cutlery and tools, the Ames Company speedily branched into the manufacture of brass cannon, military accoutrements, and many other products, and gained reputation in operating the first sword factory in this country. James Tyler Ames so thoroughly demonstrated his ability and integrity that upon the untimely death of his brother in 1847 he became head of the Ames Company, the direction of which he maintained until 1874. Under his control the Ames Company greatly extended its interests. It began in 1849 the manufacture of cotton-machinery, of lathes, planes, and turbine water-wheels. It not only participated in the growth of the great textile development of New England but took contracts for manufacturing the Eldredge Sewing Machine and the first Victor and Eagle bicycles. Just before the Civil War the concern became interested in bronze castings, and from its forges were turned out the "Crawford Doors" on the East Wing of the Capitol and many statues, including the equestrian statue of Washington in the Boston Public Gardens, the Minute Man at Concord, and the Lincoln Monument at Springfield, Ill. During the Civil War the Ames plant was one of the largest munition factories in the North, manufacturing sabers, Springfield rifles, and a thousand cannon for the Federal Government. The factory also executed large saber contracts for Turkey during the Russo-Turkish War and for France during the Franco-Prussian War. Among Ames's own inventions was a cannon-ball perfected with the aid of Gen. James of Providence, from which grew the necessity of rifled cannon. Ames also invented the special machinery for the manufacture of these cannon.

He was an enlightened employer, popular with his men. Throughout his life he was an active and liberal supporter of the Third Congregational Church of Chicopee. He was particularly interested in mineralogy and his private collection was a notable one. This interest in natural science led Amherst College to grant him in 1863 the honorary degree of M.A. He was married in 1838 to Ellen Huse of Newburyport (1809–1902), by whom he had three children.

[A sketch of the life and work of the Ames brothers, with pictures of both, can be found in Louise Johnson, *Chicopee Illustrated* (1896). See also A. M. Copeland, *Hist. of Hampden County* (1902), III, 503, and J. L. Bishop, *Hist. of Am. Manufacturers* (1861–64), II, 686–87. A collection of products manufactured by the Ames Company and many mementoes of the Ames brothers are in the museum connected with the Ames Family School at Chicopee. For an excellent account of the Ames Manufacturing Company, see *Springfield Republican*, Jan. 15, 1899.] H.U.F.

AMES, JOSEPH ALEXANDER (1816–Oct. 30, 1872), portrait painter, was born at Roxbury, Mass., and died in New York City. The names of his parents are not recorded. He early set his mind upon becoming an artist and copied a portrait while he was still a boy. The copy was good enough for him to receive professional orders that kept him occupied in his native town until he was disposed to try his fortune in Boston. He soon established himself and although self-taught did his best work as a young man. Accumulating enough money to further his studies, he sailed for Italy in 1848 and settled in Rome. His portrait of Pope Pius IX was painted at this time. When his period of study ended, he returned to Boston. His well-known full-length portrait of Daniel Webster, representing Webster standing with a long walking-stick and wearing a felt hat, was painted in 1852. This was the last portrait painted from life of Webster, who was at that time seventy years old. Ames also painted nine or more bust portraits of Webster, but not all of these are from life. Ames lived in Baltimore during 1870 on account of his health, but the change proving without benefit he moved the same year to New York and was almost immediately elected a member of the National Academy of Design. He gained a reputation both as a genre and as a portrait painter and was constantly employed. Tuckerman noted: "Ames paints on an average seventy-five portraits in a year; of course they often lack high finish; but his fresh and bright tints and frequent success in likeness—even the rapidity of his execution—contribute to his prosperous activity." He died of brain fever after a short illness, leaving upon his easel a portrait of Adeline Ristori, the actress, in the character of "Medea." The National Academy exhibition for that year contained two portraits of his, one of them of Ross Winans of Baltimore. Besides the portraits mentioned above, Ames painted President William Conway Felton of Harvard, Rufus Choate, William H. Seward, Ralph Waldo Emerson, and Marietta Gazzaniga, the singer. Some of his other works are "Maud Muller," "The Old Stone Pitcher," "The Last Days of Daniel Webster at Marshfield." A steel engraving of the latter was popular in its day. His wife and daughter were both artists.

[H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); *McClure's Mag.*, May 1897, illus.; Thieme-Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler;* obituaries in *Boston Transcript,* Nov. 1, and *N. Y. Times,* Nov. 2, 1872.]

T.B.

AMES, MARY CLEMMER. [See CLEMMER, MARY, 1831–1884.]

AMES, NATHAN PEABODY (Sept. 1, 1803–Apr. 3, 1847), metal-worker, manufacturer, was born at Chelmsford, Mass., the eldest son of Nathan Peabody Ames and Phœbe (Tyler) Ames. He early displayed the mechanical skill which was to make him famous in later years, and which was probably inherited from his father, who manufactured edged tools and cutlery at Chelmsford and was reported to have been the first to use water-power at that place. The elder craftsman gave his sons a thorough mechanical grounding in his shop, and in 1829, when his health was failing, he turned over the cutlery business in Chelmsford to the management of Nathan, Jr., whose brother James Tyler Ames [*q.v.*] was associated with him. A curious chance occasioned their removal in the same year to Chicopee Falls, near Springfield, Mass. The elder brother on a stage-coach journey formed a chance but lifelong friendship with Edmund Dwight, who owned a mill at Chicopee Falls and who offered the Ames brothers space in his mill if they would transfer their business thither. They accepted this generous offer, and occupied a portion of the Dwight mill, for which the owner would take no rent, for about four years; success came immediately, and in 1834 the Ames Manufacturing Company was organized, with a capital of $30,000. A factory was constructed a mile farther down the Chicopee River, at "the Lower Privilege," where Dwight also built extensive mills, around which grew up a new community called Cabotville (now Chicopee). For a half-century after its organization the Ames Company was a leader in the manufacturing development of western Massachusetts. Although many kinds of metal goods were produced, the concern in its early days specialized in cutlery and tools. The Ames Company operated the first sword factory in the United States; it received contracts for sabers from the government as early as 1830. Both of the brothers were themselves skilled mechanics, representing the highest type of Yankee ingenuity and integrity, and the products of the Ames factory were widely known for their quality and beauty. So famous were they that one English concern was known to have copied their models and stolen their trademark with the hope of obtaining some of their American business. Not content with cutlery and tools, the Ames Company in 1836 began the founding of brass cannon and later the manufacture of leather belting, military accoutrements, bells, and turbine water-wheels. With the development of textile manufacturing in New England the concern devoted much attention to the production of every type of cotton-machinery. Nathan Ames invented numerous mechanical im-

provements, such as the rotary bell-clapper, but did not patent them. In 1840 he went to Europe with a commission for the United States Ordnance Department to inspect and study arsenals and gun factories. While there he contracted a cold, which, aggravated by poisoning from an amalgam paste, inserted in his teeth by a London dentist, brought on serious illness, several years of intense suffering, and an early death at the age of forty-three. Ames was slightly above the average in height, slim in stature, with dark hair and deep-set brown eyes. His expression of openness and honesty won him immediate respect and confidence which his life did not belie. Always greatly interested in the church, he had given in 1834 half his fortune to aid in building the Third Congregational Church of Chicopee and was an active worker in that congregation until his death. Believing at one time during his illness that he was on the road to recovery, he had married Mary Bailey of Newburyport, but left no offspring.

[For sources of information see Ames, James Tyler.]

H.U.F.

AMES, NATHANIEL (July 22, 1708–July 11, 1764), almanac-maker and physician, was the son of Nathaniel Ames first and the father of Nathaniel third. The family was descended from Richard Ames of Bruton, Somersetshire, England, whose son William emigrated to Massachusetts and settled at Braintree as early as 1640. Capt. Nathaniel Ames, father of our subject, lived at Bridgewater and there married Susannah Howard, Dec. 2, 1702 (*New England Historical and Genealogical Register,* XXI, 226). Six children were born to them, of whom Nathaniel second was the eldest son (Fisher Ames, p. 3). The father is said to have been learned in astronomy and mathematics. Nothing is known of his son's education, but he became a physician, probably without other medical training than apprenticeship to some country doctor. In 1725 he published the first annual number of his almanac, which was to become famous and remain the standard New England almanac for a half-century. At this time, he was still living at home in Bridgewater, and although the almanac bears on the title-page "by Nathaniel Ames, Jr.," it may well be that the boy, then only seventeen years old, received some help from his mathematical parent. He is said to have moved to Dedham in 1732 (Briggs, p. 23) and his name is entered from that place on the list of subscribers to Prince's *Chronology,* to which most of the subscriptions were made in 1728 (*New England Historical and Genealogical Register,* VI, 189). On Sept. 14, 1735, he married Mary, daughter of Capt. Joshua Fisher of Dedham, by whom, Oct. 24, 1737, he had a son, Fisher Ames, who died less than a year later, Sept. 17, 1738, surviving his mother, however, who had died Nov. 11, 1737. She had had a residuary interest in certain property and the situation gave rise to one of the famous lawsuits of New England, Ames claiming inheritance according to the Province Law against others who claimed it under the Common Law. Ames won, and thus established an exception to the rule of inheritance in Massachusetts. In 1740 (Oct. 30), he married for second wife Deborah, daughter of Jeremiah Fisher, by whom he had five children, the eldest being Nathaniel third, and the third son being Fisher Ames [*q.v.*]. In this year, 1740, he was also one of the subscribers to the celebrated Land Bank (*Ibid.,* L, 191). In addition to his duties as local doctor and as publisher of the almanacs, Ames for many years ran the well-known "Sun" tavern. The contemporary entry in Whiting's Diary: "Jan. 25, 1750, Dr. Ames began to keep tavern," seems to settle the date of this venture as against those given by Briggs (p. 23) and Kittredge (p. 264). He continued to live at Dedham until his death in 1764.

His chief importance is as founder and editor of his almanacs, the publishing of which his son, Nathaniel third, continued for ten years after his father's death. The father issued the first number, 1725, three years before James Franklin started his in Rhode Island and eight years before Benjamin Franklin inaugurated *Poor Richard.* Ames must have been a household word throughout New England, for it is said that the circulation of his almanac ran to 60,000 copies (Briggs, p. 20). Moses Coit Tyler considered it as superior to Franklin's, which it resembled in many ways. Besides the astronomical observations, Ames published short articles, extracts from the English poets, such as Milton and Pope, and used the same pithy and witty maxims as made the reputation of Franklin, such as:

"All Men are by Nature equal,
But differ greatly in the sequel."

He had taste for good literature and considerable wit, though some of it seems a trifle forced to-day, and the quality rather improved than otherwise when the almanac was continued by his somewhat abler son. Ames, however, undoubtedly did much to bring, if only in brief allusions and extracts, some knowledge of the better English authors to innumerable New England farmhouses.

[There are brief allusions to Ames in *The Old Farmer and His Almanac,* by G. L. Kittredge (1904). "The Diary of John Whiting," *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.,* LXIII, contains references to both the second and third Nathaniels. A number of letters between father and son appear in "The Two Nathaniel Ames," by J. H. Tuttle, *Pubs. Coll. Soc. Mass.,* XIX. A few facts may be picked

up in *A Bit of Ames Genealogy*, by Fisher Ames (1898). The *Almanacs* have been reprinted, with a brief biog. introduction, by S. Briggs, *The Essays, Humor, and Poems of Nathaniel Ames* (1891). They are discussed in the standard histories of American literature of the colonial period.] J.T.A.

AMES, OAKES (Jan. 10, 1804–May 8, 1873), manufacturer, capitalist, and politician, the son of Oliver Ames [*q.v.*] and Susannah Angier, was born in Easton, Mass. He received a district-school education, supplemented at sixteen by a few months in Dighton Academy. Entering his father's shovel factory as a laborer, he became familiar with every process, was made a superintendent, and soon became his father's main reliance. He showed zeal, business acumen, and marked inventiveness. In 1844 his father retired, turning the business over to Oakes and his brother Oliver Ames, Jr. [*q.v.*], who carried it on under the name Oliver Ames & Sons. The two brothers rapidly expanded the business. The discovery of gold in California in 1848 lent it marked impetus, and Oakes Ames was responsible for the sale of large consignments to California merchants and adventurers upon credit. Heavy losses were ultimately sustained upon these ventures, but were more than recouped through the gold rush to Australia and the agricultural development of the Northwest. The Ames shovel was declared to be "legal tender in every part of the Mississippi Valley," and was known even in South Africa (*Appleton's Annual Cyclopædia*, 1873, article "Oakes Ames"; E. L. Sabin, *Building the Pacific Railway*, 1919, p. 71). At the beginning of the Civil War the business was valued at $4,000,000, and the war enormously increased its prosperity.

Ames became known in the late fifties as an ardent Free-Soiler, a director of the Emigrant Aid Company during the Kansas conflict, and an adherent of the Republican party. In 1860 he was made a member of the executive council of Massachusetts, and Gov. Andrew relied heavily upon his business experience. In 1862 Ames was urged by influential men to run for the national House, was elected for the second Massachusetts district, and took his seat in the Thirty-eighth Congress. He was reëlected four times, serving till his death. His position in Congress was not conspicuous. He rarely made a speech; his most important committees were those on manufactures and the Pacific Railroad. His knowledge of business, however, and his shrewd judgment made him a valued working member and gave him the confidence of President Lincoln.

In 1865 Ames was drawn with his brother Oliver into connection with the Crédit Mobilier, a company formed to carry on the construction of the Union Pacific Railroad. The Crédit Mobilier was promoted by T. C. Durant, vice-president of the Union Pacific, to keep in the hands of a small group all the profits derivable from building the road. Durant became president, the two Ames brothers were prominent among the subscribers, and largely through Oakes Ames's efforts the capital by Sept. 21, 1865, was brought up to $2,500,000. After the line had been completed to the 100th meridian, the managers of the Crédit Mobilier split into two hostile factions, one led by Durant and the other by Ames. The upshot was an arrangement by which Oliver Ames became president of the Union Pacific, and Oakes Ames took virtual control of the Crédit Mobilier's work. On Aug. 16, 1867, when only 247 miles had been built, he contracted in his own name to build 667 miles more, at prices varying from $42,000 to $96,000 a mile, according to the terrain. He then (Oct. 15, 1867) executed legal papers assigning these contracts, which aggregated some $47,000,000, to seven trustees (*Congressional Globe*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess., p. 1724). These trustees acted for the stockholders of the Crédit Mobilier, and the profits were to be paid to holders of the Crédit Mobilier stock. Upon this basis the remainder of the Union Pacific line was built and turned over to the Union Pacific company. Though this method of building the transcontinental railway was vicious, exhausting the company's endowment of government grants, and by excessive costs and profits loading it with debt, it was the accepted method of building railways in 1860–80. Ames merely used the tools at hand. His purpose, he later said, was "to connect my name conspicuously with the greatest public work of the present century" (*Ibid.*, p. 1724).

Unfortunately, at a critical moment, Ames resorted to improper acts. When Congress opened on Nov. 21, 1867, it was evident that the Union Pacific-Crédit Mobilier arrangement might come under fire. The statutes required that the Union Pacific stock be paid for in actual cash; but as a matter of fact, it was issued to Ames and other Crédit Mobilier men "who paid for it at not more than thirty cents on the dollar in roadmaking" (Wilson Investigative Report, p. iii). An inquiry would be embarrassing. Moreover, on Dec. 9, C. C. Washburn of Wisconsin introduced in the House a bill to regulate by law the rates on the Union Pacific. Ames took what he deemed a fair precautionary step by selling shares of the Crédit Mobilier to other members of Congress. He had 343 shares issued him for the purpose. "I shall put [these]," he wrote from Washington on Jan. 25, 1868, "where they will do the most good to us. I am here on the spot and can better judge

where they should go" (Poland Investigative Report, p. 4). By Jan. 30 he was able to write: "I don't fear any investigation here. I have used this [the Crédit Mobilier shares] where it will produce most good to us, I think. In view of... Washburn's move here, I go in for making our bond dividend in full" (*Ibid.*, p. 5). The stock was sold at par value, with interest from the previous July. Later evidence indicated that at this time Ames himself considered the stock worth at least double the par value. In fact, he wrote on Feb. 22, 1868, that some holders considered it worth $300–$350 a share (*Congressional Globe*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess., p. 1718). In all, later investigators traced contracts for the delivery of 160 shares to members of Congress. When some men hesitated, Ames assured them that "we are not coming to Congress to ask any favors" (*Ibid.*, p. 1718). He later admitted, however, that he did wish the negative favor of non-interference. "I have found," he said, "there is no difficulty in inducing men to look after their own property" (*Ibid.*, p. 1719).

The revelation of the stock sales came about through a quarrel between Ames and Col. H. S. McComb of Delaware, an associate who alleged that an unfilled subscription entitled him to $25,000 worth of stock which he had not received. Ames resisted the claim. Col. McComb finally threatened to use, in a way to create a scandal, certain letters which Ames had writtten during the distribution of the stock. To this blackmailing gesture Ames refused to yield. McComb then filed affidavits in a Pennsylvania court in the summer of 1872 alleging Ames's misuse of stock. The result of the affidavits was that the letters of Ames which McComb held were published in full in the New York *Sun* of Sept. 4, 1872, under the caption "The King of Frauds: How the Crédit Mobilier Bought Its Way into Congress." The presidential campaign was at its height and the effect was stupendous. Congressmen who had accepted the stock and were standing for reëlection seemed panic-stricken. Many who had called themselves friends of Ames and begged for favors now denied any connection with him or the company and left him to face the storm alone.

At the opening of Congress in December 1872 two committees of inquiry were appointed by the House, one under Luke P. Poland of Vermont to ascertain if any member had given or received bribes, and another under Jeremiah M. Wilson of Indiana to discover if the government had been defrauded (Rhodes, vol. VII, ch. 1). Public pressure forced the removal of the rule of secrecy from the hearings, and the disclosures day by day riveted national attention. Several congressmen—Senator Henry L. Wilson of Massachusetts and Representatives H. L. Dawes and G. W. Scofield—had first accepted shares and then feeling the impropriety had returned them. Other members received shares to be paid for from dividends. Representative B. M. Boyer of Pennsylvania, who had bought seventy-five shares for his wife, stood almost alone in maintaining that his purchase was "both honest and honorable, and consistent with my position as a member of Congress" (Poland Investigative Report, p. 208). Those most discreditably involved were Senator Patterson of New Hampshire and Representatives James Brooks of New York and Schuyler Colfax of Indiana. Between Ames and Representative James A. Garfield of Ohio arose a sharp issue of veracity (J. A. Garfield, *Review of the Transactions of the Crédit Mobilier Company*, 1873). The Poland Committee formally reported Ames "guilty of selling to members of Congress shares of stock in the Crédit Mobilier of America for prices much below the true value of such stock, with intent thereby to influence the votes and decisions of such members in matters to be brought before Congress for action" (*House Reports*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess., No. 77, p. 19). It recommended that he and James Brooks be expelled. In debate Representative Poland led the attack upon Ames with much effectiveness. Ames replied in a long speech, read by the clerk, attempting a justification of his actions. He declared that his motive had been purely patriotic, that he had taken staggering financial risks, and that the stock had not been worth more than par when he sold it. Financially, he asserted, he would have been better off if he had never heard of the Union Pacific, for at its completion the railroad was in debt about $6,000,000, the burden of which fell upon himself and others. The Wilson Committee had reported that the Crédit Mobilier had defrauded the government. Ames denied this, saying that the Crédit Mobilier profits were less than $10,000,000 upon $70,000,000 of expenditures. Partly because the Judiciary Committee threw grave doubt upon the right of the House to expel a member for offenses committed so long previously, partly because expulsion was felt to be too harsh a punishment, the House dropped that penalty. It instead took up a resolution declaring that it "absolutely condemns the conduct of Oakes Ames" (*Congressional Globe*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess., p. 1832). This was passed by a vote of 182 to 36. At once Ames's seat was surrounded by members who assured him that they had acted with reluctance and that they felt the warmest confidence in the rectitude of his intentions (Oberholtzer, II, 607). The consensus of historical opinion has been that Ames's action was highly improper, but that

he had not contemplated bribery. He was a product of his time, and his ethical perceptions, like those of other business men of the day, were blunt. He declared that he believed his sales of stock to Congressmen were the "same thing as going into a business community and interesting the leading business men by giving them shares." His steps had been selfish and unethical, but not consciously corrupt.

Returning broken and dispirited to his North Easton home, Ames was given a hearty reception by his constituents, while plans were made by Boston business men for a complimentary dinner. But business worries (including grave financial difficulties through which the Easton manufactory had passed in 1870) and political disgrace had undermined his health. He was stricken by paralysis and lived but four days. His death was followed by a revulsion of feeling in his favor. The dedication of a memorial hall in his honor in North Easton, Nov. 17, 1881, evoked tributes from Gov. John D. Long, George S. Boutwell, E. E. Hale, Blaine, Evarts, Tilden, and others, and the Massachusetts legislature in 1883 passed a resolution of vindication. A monument had meanwhile been erected to him by the Union Pacific at Sherman Summit, Wyo.

In personality Oakes Ames was rugged, laborious, taciturn, and kindly. He was of simple and abstemious habits, with many homely traits which dated back to his early days as a workman. In his time he was known as a temperance advocate, and had other Puritanical qualities. But business shrewdness and keenness, allied with a speculative bent, were his salient characteristics.

[A brief anonymous sketch was published in 1883, *Oakes Ames, A Memoir*. The two volumes on *The Crédit Mobilier of America* by J. B. Crawford (1880) and R. Hazard (1881) both defend Ames. For the Poland and Wilson Reports see *House Reports*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess., Nos. 77, 78, and *Senate Reports*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess., No. 519. A few items of information may be found in J. P. Davis, *The Union Pacific Railway* (1894), and E. L. Sabin, *Building the Pacific Railway* (1919). The relations of Ames and Garfield are treated in T. C. Smith, *Life and Letters of James A. Garfield* (1925), vol. I, ch. 15. Good general accounts of the Crédit Mobilier scandal are offered by J. F. Rhodes, *Hist. of the U.S.*, vol. VII (1906), ch. I, and E. P. Oberholtzer, *Hist. of the U.S.*, vol. II, (1922), pp. 600 ff. Some interesting pages, not altogether accurate, occur in George F. Hoar, *Autobiography of Seventy Years* (1903), vol. I, ch. 22.] A. N.

AMES, OLIVER (Apr. 11, 1779–Sept. 11, 1863), pioneer manufacturer, was descended from William Ames, an English colonist of Braintree, Mass. (1638). John Ames (1738–1803), blacksmith, Revolutionary captain and major, and manufacturer of rude guns and shovels for the patriot forces, was the first outstanding member of the family. Oliver Ames, son of Capt. John and Susanna (Howard) Ames, was born at West Bridgewater, Mass., learned the primitive trade of shovel-maker, and later served an apprenticeship as a gunmaker under his older brother David, a foundryman commissioned by Washington as first superintendent of the Springfield armory. Leaving the armory, Oliver took up his father's business on the latter's death, and moved the shop from Bridgewater, Mass. to North Easton, Mass. (1803). The embargo and War of 1812, removing foreign competition, gave the shovel factory an impetus. In 1814 Oliver established a plant to manufacture cotton goods and machinery, but it was soon destroyed by fire. Thereafter he gave his whole attention and inventive genius to the manufacture of shovels, which he made lighter and less durable than the heavy implement of the time, in the belief that iron and shovels were cheaper than muscle and more easily replaced. In 1823 he built branch shops at Braintree and in 1844 at Canton, Mass. About this time he turned over his business, worth about $200,000, reorganized as Oliver Ames & Sons, to his boys, Oakes and Oliver. The senior Oliver was a man of standing, fair to labor, which in turn served him loyally, the founder of the local Unitarian Society, for four years a representative of his town in the legislature, and the builder of the thriving factory town of North Easton. Married early in life to Susannah Angier, daughter of Oakes Angier, a prominent attorney of Bridgewater, he was the father of two daughters and six sons, of whom Oakes Ames [*q.v.*] and Oliver Ames [*q.v.*] gained distinction as industrial leaders and railroad builders.

[W. L. Chaffin, *Hist. of the Town of Easton, Mass.* (1886); *Representative Men and Old Families of Southeastern Mass.* (1912).] R. J. P.

AMES, OLIVER (Nov. 5, 1807–Mar. 9, 1877), manufacturer, railroad promoter and official, was born at Plymouth, Mass., the son of Oliver Ames [*q.v.*] and Susannah (Angier) Ames, and was educated in the local school of North Easton, whither the family removed during his childhood, and in the Franklin Academy of North Andover. His first intention was to enter the law, but illness forced him to abandon legal study. He then went into his father's shovel factory as an apprentice, learning the business from the ground up before the management of the company, about 1844, was assigned to him and his brother Oakes Ames [*q.v.*]. In the meantime he married Sarah, a daughter of the Hon. Howard Lothrop of Easton, by whom he had two children, Helen Angier and Frederick Lothrop Ames [*q.v.*]. Business was booming. Irish immigrants afforded cheap labor and an enlarged production, though in turn this was not great enough to meet the increased de-

mand for shovels on the construction work widely undertaken throughout the country. The opening of the California gold diggings brought heavier orders and profits so huge that the shovel manufacturers easily pocketed a loss of a million dollars through the failure of coast merchants. For a short time (1854–71), Oliver Ames & Sons manufactured hinges, nails, and even shoes in a string of separate plants, but meanwhile they never slackened in manufacturing and improving shovels. Luck, cheap but well-treated labor, and managerial genius enabled the concern to increase its business to a virtual monopoly.

In 1852 and 1857 Oliver Ames was elected to the state Senate as a Whig and Republican, but sought no further political career, preferring to give undivided attention to business and money-making. In 1855 he joined Oakes in building the Easton Branch Railroad, which turned the brothers toward railroad development. The Civil War brought heavy government contracts for swords and shovels, possibly greater because Oakes served in Gov. Andrew's executive council and later in Congress. The wealth of the concern jumped from four to eight million dollars during this period when shrewd business men easily accumulated fortunes. Their auspicious prosperity turned Oakes and Oliver toward bigger things, for under the capable management of their sons its own momentum enabled their business to expand. They were caught by the vision of a Union Pacific road connecting the East with the coast and enmeshed in the Crédit Mobilier company which, along with others, they incorporated to build and finance the transcontinental railway. Oliver was not involved in the subsequent congressional investigation, as he was not personally concerned with the alleged corruption of congressmen or the unlawful means of obtaining legislative favors and aid.

He was acting president of the Union Pacific 1866–68, president, succeeding Gen. John A. Dix, 1868–71 during the period of construction and trials, and a director until his death. In 1870 he saw Oliver Ames & Sons facing bankruptcy, though the shovel works had assets of fully fifteen million dollars and liabilities of only eight million. Building the Union Pacific had been a desperate business. Oliver obtained an extension of time from his creditors and as head of the concern on the death of Oakes (1873) brought about order with the aid of his nephew, also an Oliver Ames [*q.v.*]. Few men were better known in the industrial world: his business acumen was at the service of the Atlantic and Pacific, Kansas Pacific, Denver Pacific, Colorado Central, Old Colony, and other railroads in which he was a director. Finance he knew quite as well as railroading, through his promotion schemes and close supervision, if not ownership, of the Easton and Bristol National Banks. He also had other interests. Together with Oakes, he donated the site of the first Catholic church in North Easton (1850) and gave small amounts to a number of small colleges and schools in Massachusetts or in the new West. He left a fund for a town library, for the schools of North Easton, and for the improvement of local roads. He was long vice-president of the Massachusetts Total Abstinence Society and for twenty years a trustee of the Taunton Insane Asylum. A Unitarian in belief, he erected a church and parsonage for the society of which his father was a charter member, but this did not prevent him from donating a meeting house to the Methodists of his neighborhood. He was beloved by his townsmen whose prosperity was so largely dependent upon his factories and the employment which they afforded. The town was silent when he died, Mar. 9, 1877. The shops and schools were closed. A special train from Boston brought about forty business and railroad men of national importance, but it was to the employees of twenty-five to fifty years' standing that his remains were confided to be carried to the grave. The man and his labors are commemorated by a huge truncated pyramid at Sherman, Wyo., the highest point on the Union Pacific, dedicated to Oakes and Oliver Ames, railroad builders.

[Boston Jour.'s *Commonwealth of Mass.* (1883); *Representative Men and Old Families of Southeastern Mass.* (1912); *Memorial of Oliver Ames* (n.d.); Appleton's *Annual Cyc.*, 1877; *Easton Jour.*, Mar. 17, 1877; *Brockton Gazette*, Mar. 15, 1877; *Boston Transcript*, Mar. 13, 1877; *Oakes Ames, a Memoir* (1883).] R.J.P.

AMES, OLIVER (Feb. 4, 1831–Oct. 22, 1895), capitalist, governor of Massachusetts, was born at North Easton, Mass., the second son of Oakes Ames [*q.v.*] and Evelyn (Gilmore) Ames. Educated in the local public schools and the academies of North Attleboro and Leicester, he commenced his apprenticeship in the Oliver Ames & Sons shovel works. Injured at work, he was sent to Brown University where he came under the instruction of the learned President Wayland. After a year he reëntered the shovel works. As a young man he was active in the state militia advancing from second-lieutenant to lieutenant-colonel, although resigning before the Civil War commenced. For his "pusillanimous war record," he was severely criticized during his canvass for the governorship. Ames explained that he had hired a substitute and had given thousands of dollars in support of the Union cause. The actual explanation may have been his marriage, in 1860, to Anna

Ray, adopted daughter of William Hadwen of Nantucket, a lady of old English lineage, by whom he had six children.

In 1863, on the death of his grandfather, Oliver Ames[*q.v.*], the young Oliver received a ninth interest in the huge shovel works and became an active partner at a time when the war contracts and profits were tremendous. For several years he was personally in charge of the mechanical department, where he displayed an inventive skill in perfecting tools and processes which improved the product and increased the output. Under his skilled direction, sales were greatly enlarged. Ten years later, he was given the additional burden of straightening out his deceased father's entangled estate and taking over his numerous directorates and varied business responsibilities. The Crédit Mobilier investigation and the panic of 1873 had left Oakes Ames's estate of about $6,000,000 so involved that Oliver was compelled to pledge his private fortune to satisfy the creditors. His capable management and a rehabilitation of railroads, as times grew better, bridged the crisis. Soon he was able to settle all debts and pay a legacy of $1,000,000 bequeathed by his father to various philanthropies. Ere long, on the death of his uncle, Oliver Ames, Jr.[*q.v.*], he became the dominant figure in the business of Oliver Ames & Sons. In addition he was for a time president of the Union Pacific Railroad and a director of a long list of railroads, banks, savings companies, and land companies. Indeed, the numerous activities of Oliver Ames quite rivaled those of his plunging father. His most spectacular speculation was the purchase at auction of stock in the Central Kansas branch of the Union Pacific at twenty-five cents a share and its later sale at $250 to Jay Gould when the latter was consolidating the Union Pacific and Kansas Pacific roads. This deal netted about a million dollars, bringing his estate well over eight million by 1892. And he weathered the panic of 1893 with little loss as he retrenched and clung tenaciously to his bonds and stocks.

Always a staunch Republican and protectionist and chairman of the local Republican organization, he did not enter politics actively until 1880 when he was elected to the state Senate, where he served two years. In 1882, he was elected lieutenant-governor under the Democratic governor, Benjamin Butler, with whom he got along successfully despite political differences and his efforts to check some of the governor's erratic political impulses. He was reëlected to second, third, and fourth terms under the Republican governor, George D. Robinson. He served the state, though not without subjecting himself to violent criticism, by arranging the sale of its interests in the New York and New England Railroad at some loss and its heavy holding of stock in the Troy and Greenfield road and Hoosac Tunnel at less than a third of the par value of the stock. Time demonstrated the wisdom of this action and brought commendation, but for the moment the opposition made much capital out of the apparent loss of several million dollars. Robinson declining another nomination, Ames was nominated by the Republican convention and elected with a plurality of 8,000 over John F. Andrew, son of the noted war governor. In 1887, he was reëlected by a majority of 17,000 over H. B. Lovering in spite of a vicious campaign in which his war record was violently attacked. The "Mainites," too, were in the opposition; for while Gov. Ames had been actively interested in the Massachusetts Temperance Society, he was opposed to legislative restriction. His donation of $1,000 to Holy Cross College (Roman Catholic) was said to have injured him in Worcester County, a result which he regarded, perhaps rightly, as showing contemptible narrowness on the part of voters who cut his ticket. Yet in 1888, he was again reelected, defeating William E. Russell by 28,000.

Ames made a good governor. He brought business methods into the state administration and made judicious appointments on the basis of merit as far as political considerations would permit. He sought to improve the public schools so that private schools could not compete, rather than curb private schools by hostile legislation as many of his supporters favored. He urged that savings banks be separated from national banks to prevent the transfer of assets to meet the audit of public examiners and he proposed that claims against the state be handled by the superior court, not by the legislature. In both reform policies, the legislature agreed by translating his recommendations into law. During his administration, the legislature voted to enlarge the state house, and before retiring he had the satisfaction of laying the corner-stone. And in an expenditure of $3,000,000 there was no breath of the scandal so usual in such building projects.

In January 1890, Gov. Ames retired in the belief that the customary limit of three terms in the governorship should be maintained. Thereafter he gave his time to business affairs, to European travel, cultural interests, charities, and family. His retirement was splendid—a winter home in Boston, a grand summer residence at Martha's Vineyard, and the palatial show house and grounds at North Easton. He spent much time in reading, and in collecting books for his library and the works of old masters for his gal-

lery. As an owner of Booth's Theatre in New York, he had a considerable interest in the drama, and his love of art merited the presidency of the Boston Art Club which he cherished more than a similar leadership in the Boston Merchants' Club. A custodian of great wealth, Ames was no niggard in his private charities or in his treatment of the employees of the family industry. At North Easton, on whose school committee he served a score of years, he joined with his brothers in building the Oakes Ames Memorial Hall and donated to the town a high school which was dedicated shortly after his death.

[W. R. Cutter, *Encyc. of Mass.* (1916); *Boston of To-day*, ed. by R. Herndon (1892), pp. 125–26; D. P. Toomey, *Mass. of Today*, ed. by T. C. Quinn (1892), p. 42; *Representative Men of Mass.*, ed. by W. F. Moore (1898), pp. 379–81; G. A. Marden, *Government of the Commonwealth of Mass.* (1880), pp. 239–42; Appleton's *Annual Cyc.*, 1895, pp. 941–43; Alanson Borden, *Our County and its People, a Descriptive and Biog. Rec. of Bristol County, Mass.* (1899); *Springfield Republican*, Oct. 23, 1895; *Boston Transcript*, Nov. 5, 7, 9, 1887, Oct. 22, 1895.]

R. J. P.

AMES, SAMUEL (Sept. 6, 1806–Dec. 20, 1865), jurist, was descended from one Robert Ames (or Eames) who settled at Boxford, Mass., about 1650. Fourth in descent from this Robert Ames was a Samuel Ames, storekeeper in Providence, married to Anne Checkley (Chichele). Samuel, their eldest son, was born at Providence, and received his early education there and at Phillips Academy, Andover. Proceeding thence to Brown University, he graduated in 1823 at the early age of seventeen. He then attended the law school at Litchfield, Conn., and, on being admitted to the Rhode Island bar in 1826, opened an office in Providence. As a young man, it is said, his distinguishing characteristics were a positive manner, athletic figure, and careful dress. Despite a keen enjoyment of social amenities he was an insatiable student and rapidly forged to the front. In 1832 he assisted Joseph K. Angell [*q.v.*] in the preparation of the latter's authoritative treatise on corporation law. Although not greatly interested in politics, he was an extremely effective speaker, took an active part in public affairs, and several times served in the city council. In 1841 he was elected representative for Providence in the General Assembly, and, with brief intermissions, continued a member of the legislature till February 1851. During the so-called "Dorr Rebellion" in 1842 he adhered to the *status quo*, serving as quartermaster-general of the state troops, despite the fact that he had married, June 27, 1839, Mary Throop Dorr, sister of Thomas Wilson Dorr [*q.v.*]. His law practise had been steadily growing, and he became the recognized leader of the Rhode Island bar, on several occasions being retained before the United States Supreme Court. In 1853 the legislature appointed him state representative to adjust the boundary between Rhode Island and Massachusetts. In October 1854 he became chairman of the commission to revise the state laws—which resulted in the first complete restatement of the statutory law of Rhode Island. In May 1856 he was elected chief justice of the supreme court of Rhode Island and reporter. Unsettled constitutional questions of vital importance came up for solution shortly after his appointment, and his judgment in Taylor *vs.* Place (*4 R. I. Reports*, 324), declaring that the exercise by the General Assembly of judicial power as a court of appeal from the supreme court of Rhode Island was unconstitutional, is a masterpiece of constitutional law and reasoning. In 1861 he attended as a representative of Rhode Island the futile Peace Conference at Washington. He died at Providence, Dec. 20, 1865. On the bench he enjoyed the confidence of the bar and of the public to a remarkable extent, and his judgments were accorded a respect which was not confined to the state itself. His strong alert mind and quick logical perception made him at times somewhat impatient in dealing with men of less capacity. He seldom reserved a decision, and his reasons for judgment were usually brief. The extent of contemporaneous admiration is indicated by the name applied to him of "The Great Chief Justice."

[An account of Ames's life and genealogy is given in *New Eng. Families* (R. I. ed. p. 13). The best biography is that by Chief Justice Stiness in *Great Am. Lawyers*, V, 293. A more intimate sketch by his former law partner, Abraham Payne, appears in the latter's *Reminiscences of the R. I. Bar* (1885). A full report of the Proceedings in the Supreme Court on the announcement of his death will be found in *8 R. I. Reports*, 581.]

H. W. H. K.

AMHERST, JEFFERY (Jan. 29, 1717–Aug. 3, 1797), British soldier, was born at Riverhead in the parish of Sevenoaks, Kent County, England. He was the second son of Jeffery and Elizabeth (Kerril) Amherst, both of whom were of Kentish antecedents. His father and grandfather were barristers; his great-great-grandfather was an Anglican clergyman (A. T. Ritchie and R. Evans, *Lord Amherst and the British Advance Eastwards to Burma*, 1894, pp. 9–10). Not far from Riverhead, at "Knole," resided Lionel Cranfield Sackville, the first Duke of Dorset. This propinquity, coupled with more or less association between the two families, led to Jeffery Amherst's early employment as a page in the Sackville household, and thence to his entering the army in 1731. In the War of the Austrian Succession he served as aide-de-camp to Gen. John Ligonier and took part in the battles of Dettingen and Fon-

Amherst

tenoy (F. H. Skrine, *Fontenoy and Great Britain's Share in the War of the Austrian Succession,* 1906, pp. 164–65). On Dec. 25, 1745 he was made lieutenant-colonel (*Army List for 1754,* p. 8) and placed in command of a company in the 1st Battalion of the 1st Regiment of Foot Guards. In 1747 he was aide-de-camp to the Duke of Cumberland and was present at the battle of Laffeldt. After the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle he continued his association with the Duke of Cumberland, being appointed Groom of the Bedchamber.

When the outbreak of the Seven Years' War was impending, the British government employed 8,000 Hessians to protect the Electorate of Hanover, and in February 1756 Amherst was sent to Germany to take charge of their commissariat. After a few weeks on the Continent he was ordered to return to England, bringing with him a portion of the Hessian subsidiaries. Soon after his arrival he was promoted to the colonelcy of the 15th Regiment of Foot (*Army List for 1757,* p. 6), but this was virtually a sinecure and Amherst continued in charge of the Hessians. In the spring of 1757 Cumberland was dispatched to the Continent to defend Hanover, and Amherst accompanied him as commissary. He was present at the battle of Hastenbeck, July 26, in which Cumberland's army was defeated by the French.

In January 1758, while still in Germany, Amherst received orders to return to England, whence, with the rank of major-general, he was to proceed to America in command of an army of over 14,000 men to capture the French stronghold of Louisburg on Cape Breton Island. This promotion is attributable to Sir John Ligonier (*Additional MS.* No. 32876, in the British Museum), who had been appointed commander-in-chief of all the forces in Great Britain. Amherst sailed for Halifax in March, but did not reach the coast of Nova Scotia until May 28. The army sent to capture Louisburg was supplemented by a fleet under Boscawen. The combined forces began their siege of the town about June 1 and the French surrendered it on July 27 (Francis Parkman, *Montcalm and Wolfe,* 1884, vol. II, ch. XIX). This was the first British victory in the Seven Years' War, and great rejoicing spread throughout the empire. Towns in Massachusetts and New Hampshire were named in honor of Amherst, and likewise a county in Virginia (Lawrence Shaw Mayo, *Jeffery Amherst,* 1916, pp. 117–18). Pitt, who had taken charge of the war in June 1757, had hoped that Amherst might capture both Louisburg and Quebec in the campaigns of 1758, but this prospect was frustrated by Abercromby's failure to take Ticonderoga. In consequence of Abercromby's disastrous defeat, Amherst deferred the attack on Quebec until another season and devoted the remainder of the summer to securing his hold upon the Gulf of St. Lawrence, including Prince Edward Island. Toward the end of August he and five regiments sailed for Boston, and thence made their way overland to Albany. He agreed with Abercromby that another movement against Ticonderoga in that year would be unwise, and retired to New York for the winter.

The British success at Louisburg was due in part to the brilliant work of Brigadier-General Wolfe; consequently Pitt gave him a semi-independent command for the campaign of 1759 and ordered him to take Quebec. Amherst, now commander-in-chief in North America, was to push northward from Albany, drive the French from their posts on Lakes George and Champlain, and, if possible, join forces with Wolfe before Quebec. Owing to unfavorable weather and the late arrival of the provincial troops, Amherst's progress was slow, but he captured Ticonderoga on July 27 and Crown Point on Aug. 4 (Parkman, *op. cit.,* II, ch. XXVI). Instead of advancing at once toward Quebec he spent much time in constructing a strong fort at Crown Point, and the burden and glory of taking Quebec settled upon Wolfe alone. Amherst reached the northern end of Lake Champlain about the middle of October, and, learning that Quebec had fallen, closed his campaign. In recognition of his services at Louisburg, Ticonderoga, and Crown Point, George II appointed him to the sinecure governorship of Virginia (W. M. Torrens, *History of Cabinets from the Union with Scotland to the Acquisition of Canada and Bengal,* 1894, II, 515–16).

Montreal remained to be captured, and upon it Amherst converged a triple campaign in 1760. Murray ascended the St. Lawrence from Quebec, Haviland pushed northward from Lake Champlain, and Amherst came down the river from Oswego. The combination was well-timed and entirely successful. On Sept. 8, 1760, Montreal surrendered, and Canada was added to the British Empire (Parkman, *op. cit.,* II, ch. XXX). In May 1761 Amherst was appointed a Knight of the Bath. In the following year an expedition commanded by his younger brother, William Amherst, captured Newfoundland.

Amherst returned to England in the winter of 1763–64. In 1768 George III decided to have the governor of Virginia reside in that colony, and gave Amherst his choice of going to America or resigning the office. The general resigned, but took offense and threw up his military appointments as well. After three or four months he was placated by an additional military commission

and a grant of 20,000 acres in the province of New York. In 1770 he was appointed to the sinecure governorship of Guernsey. When the American situation became acute in the winter of 1774–75, George III urged Amherst to take command of the British forces in New England, but the general declined (Mayo, *op. cit.*, pp. 278–80). As a military adviser to the cabinet, however, he served his country during the war, and in 1776 was raised to the peerage with the title of Baron Amherst. When France entered the war in 1778, he was made commander-in-chief of all British forces in England (*Gentleman's Magazine*, March 1778, p. 140). In this capacity he showed efficiency in his suppression of the Gordon Riots in 1780 (J. Paul de Castro, *The Gordon Riots*, 1926, pp. 69–85, 112–14, *et passim*). After the American war he retired to his seat, "Montreal," at Sevenoaks, Kent; but when war with France was approaching in 1793 he once more took command of the army in Great Britain and held it until relieved in February 1795. In the following year he was given the rank of field-marshal, the highest military office in the British army. He died on Aug. 3, 1797.

In appearance, Amherst was tall and spare; his complexion was florid, and his nose large and aquiline. There is a portrait of him by Reynolds; also a sketch by the same artist. Other likenesses include a Blackburn (1758) in the possession of Herbert L. Pratt, Esq., of Glen Cove, Long Island; a Gainsborough in the National Portrait Gallery, London; a detail in Copley's "Death of Chatham"; and a crude engraving in the *London Magazine*, February 1782. Although in Blackburn's portrait Amherst has a genial expression, at least one contemporary found him "grave, formal, and cold" (N. W. Wraxall, *Historical and Posthumous Memoirs*, ed. by H. B. Wheatley, 1884, I, 406–7).

[The works cited in the text above will be found especially useful; also Gertrude Selwyn Kimball, *Correspondence of Wm. Pitt with Colonial Governors* (1906); J. W. Fortescue, *Hist. of the Brit. Army*, vol. II (1899), vol. III (1902); *Hist. MSS. Commission's Rept. on the MSS. of Mrs. Stopford–Sackville*, vol. I; Beckles Willson, *Life and Letters of James Wolfe* (1909); Horace Walpole, *Letters; Grenville Papers*, ed. by W. J. Smith (1852–53), vols. III and IV; *Pol. Reg.*, Sept. 1768; and W. B. Donne, *Correspondence of King George the Third with Lord North* (1867), vol. I. Amherst's letters to Gen. Robert Monckton, Nov. 1758 to Sept. 1763, are preserved in the "Northcliffe Coll." in the archives at Ottawa.]

L. S. M.

AMMEN, DANIEL (May 16, 1819–July 11, 1898), naval officer and writer, was the son of David and Sally (Houtz) Ammen, both of Swiss-German ancestry, and the brother of Jacob Ammen [*q.v.*]. Daniel Ammen was a boyhood playmate of U. S. Grant, their early intimacy developing into a close friendship in Washington after the Civil War. Following his appointment as midshipman, July 7, 1836, he spent three months in special study at West Point, where his brother was a graduate instructor. From then until the Civil War his life was passed chiefly in long cruises, including a voyage in Commodore Biddle's squadron to China and Japan, 1845–47, a surveying expedition up the Paraguay River, 1853–54, and a cruise in the Pacific, 1857–60. In 1849–50 he enjoyed a tour in Germany and Italy. His reputation as a resolute and dependable ship commander in the Civil War is suggested in the phrase of a brother officer, "that grim, true-hearted fighting man, Daniel Ammen." His special experience was in monitors and new types of ordnance. In the gunboat *Seneca* he took part in the attack on Port Royal, Nov. 7, 1861, hoisted the flag next day on Fort Beauregard, and won Admiral Du Pont's commendation for "intelligent and energetic conduct" of subsequent operations on the St. John's River, Fla. In the monitor *Patapsco* he participated in the bombardment of Fort McAllister, Mar. 3, 1863, and in the unsuccessful attack on Charleston in the next month. During the summer he was on sick-leave, but in the autumn he was again off Charleston in Admiral Dahlgren's flagship. On May 15, 1864, in charge of 220 naval recruits from New York to Panama on the merchant vessel *Ocean Queen*, he suppressed a mutinous outbreak by shooting down two of the leaders. In command of the steam sloop *Mohican* he took part in the two attacks on Fort Fisher in the winter of 1864–65.

After the war Ammen was called from sea duty to Washington through President Grant's influence, and from 1868 until his retirement as rear admiral, June 4, 1878, he was in charge, first of the Bureau of Yards and Docks for three years, and then of the Bureau of Navigation. As secretary of the Isthmian Canal Commission, 1872–76, he became an earnest and leading advocate of the Nicaragua canal route. He represented the United States at the Interoceanic Canal Congress in Paris, 1879, helped to organize a company which secured temporary concessions from Nicaragua, and in the period 1880–92 published seven pamphlets in its advocacy. His range of interest appears also in his books: *The Atlantic Coast* (1883), in the Navy in the Civil War series; *Country Homes and Their Improvement* (1885); and an entertaining volume of reminiscences, *The Old Navy and the New* (1891). His mechanical bent is seen in the invention of a cask life-raft used in the navy, and the design of the "Ammen ram," a small coast-defense type, of which only

one was completed, the *Katahdin* (accepted for service Jan. 4, 1896). Of medium height, thin and active, fond of horseback-riding and country life, Rear Admiral Ammen lived after about 1870 on his estate "Ammendale," in the suburb still so named thirteen miles north of Washington. His first wife was Mary Jackson, daughter of an English army officer. He was survived by his second wife, Zöe Atocha, a Louisianian of distinguished French-Spanish descent whom he married Apr. 11, 1866, and by whom he had five children.

[In addition to his autobiography, *The Old Navy and the New* (1891), see *Official Records*, especially vols. VI–XVI on the Atlantic Blockade (fully indexed); "Daniel Ammen," by G. E. Belknap, *Cassier's Mag.*, XIV, 267; and articles by Ammen on "The Nicaragua Canal Route" and "Recollections and Letters of Grant" in *N. Am. Rev.*, Oct. and Nov. 1885. Obituaries in the July 16, 1898, issues of the *Army and Navy Jour.* and the *Army and Navy Reg.*]

A. W.

AMMEN, JACOB (Jan. 7, 1807–Feb. 6, 1894), Union soldier, was born at Fincastle, Va., the son of David and Sally (Houtz) Ammen, and the brother of Daniel Ammen [*q.v.*]. When he was ten years old his parents removed to Ohio, and he was appointed from that state to the Military Academy. He graduated in 1831, was commissioned in the 1st Artillery, and served six years in the army. During most of his time he was an instructor at West Point, but a short tour of duty in Charleston harbor made him a witness of the nullification proceedings in South Carolina. Resigning from the army in 1837, he became professor of mathematics at Bacon (now Transylvania) College, in Kentucky. He taught there and elsewhere—three years at Indiana University—until 1855, when he took up the practise of civil engineering. When Fort Sumter was bombarded, he immediately volunteered for service, was appointed captain in the 12th Ohio, and raised a company. He was quickly promoted to be lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, and was appointed colonel of the 24th Ohio in June 1861. After participating in the West Virginia campaign in the fall of that year, his regiment joined the Army of the Ohio. He was in command of a brigade at Shiloh when that army came up in time to avert the threatened disaster to Grant; the division commander (Nelson) wrote: "The cool, wary and vigorous method in which he fought his brigade gave me a profitable lesson in the science of battle" (*Official Records*, ser. I, vol. X, pt. I, p. 325). Ammen's gallantry and good conduct were noted by Gen. Buell in his report. He continued with the army through the siege of Corinth and for some months after, but illness took him away in September 1862. He had meanwhile (July 16) been appointed brigadier-general of volunteers. The state of his health prevented service in the field, and, though he was not long absent from duty, he was assigned to commands in the North. In April 1864 he took charge of the district of East Tennessee. This was a debatable land, with a population containing both unionist and secessionist sympathizers, harried by guerrillas, and occasionally invaded by organized forces of one party or the other. Ammen's task was largely an administrative one, varied by a little active campaigning. It involved much disagreeable work and no glory. He performed it to the satisfaction of his superiors for several months, and then, in October, offered his resignation, on account of "my pecuniary interests at home, which if not attended soon may subject me to very considerable loss." Some time elapsed before it was found possible to dispense with his services, and it was not till Jan. 14, 1865, that he relinquished his command and returned to civil life. He resumed civil engineering in Ohio, but abandoned it in 1872 and became a farmer near Beltsville, Md., a few miles outside of Washington. He was a member of a commission sent to Central America in 1874 to investigate proposed isthmian canal routes. He removed in 1891 to Lockland, Ohio, where he died, after two years of blindness. He was twice married, first to Caroline L. Pierce, and then to Martha Beasley (*Cincinnati Times-Star*, Feb. 7, 1894, p. 5).

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), I, 475–76; *Bull. Ass. Grads. Mil. Acad.*, 1894, pp. 57–61; *Official Records*, see Index; unpublished War Dept. Records.]

T. M. S.

AMMONS, ELIAS MILTON (July 28, 1860–May 20, 1925), ranchman, governor of Colorado, son of Jehu and Margaret (Brendle) Ammons, both of whom traced their ancestry back to colonial forebears, was born in Macon County, N. C. For four years following the removal of the family to Colorado in 1871, the boy worked as ranchhand and teamster; but, thanks to training received at home from a cultured mother and a father who had been educated for the Baptist ministry, he was able quickly to make up the time lost when he returned to school in 1875. His formal education closed in 1880, when he was graduated from the East Denver High School. Already he had entered on a journalistic career, having become a reporter on the *Denver Times* in 1879; by 1885, when failing eyesight forced him to abandon newspaper work, he had risen to the post of associate editor. Since outdoor life seemed advisable, he went into the cattle business in 1886 in partnership with Thomas F. Dawson. Until his death he retained his interest in this industry and in all forms of agriculture, as is shown by his long

membership in the Grange and on the State Board of Agriculture, and by his activity in the establishment of the Colorado Cattle and Horse Growers' Association and the National Western Stock Show at Denver.

Although not strong physically, and nearly blind, Ammons was a man of great vitality and energy. His political career began in 1890 with his appointment as clerk of a district court. Within a few months he resigned to take a seat in the lower house of the Colorado legislature, of which body he was made speaker two years later. When the Republican party committed itself to the gold standard in 1896, he withdrew from its ranks and helped organize the Silver Republican party in Colorado. It was as a "Teller Silver Republican" that he was elected to the state Senate in 1898. The transition to the Democratic party was easily made; in 1904 and 1906 he was its unsuccessful candidate for lieutenant-governor, but in 1912 he carried the gubernatorial election by a plurality of nearly 48,000 votes (*World Almanac,* 1914). As governor he sponsored non-partizan legislation such as improvements in the public utilities, insurance, and banking laws, a revision of the tax system, provision for coal-mine inspection, and a more comprehensive plan for state highways. Both preceding and during his term as governor he opposed vigorously the Reservation policy then followed by the Federal Government, on the ground that it would deprive the people of the West of their right to develop the natural resources of their states (*Senate Document 650,* 61 Cong., 2 Sess.) The most perplexing problem during his administration was the great strike in the Colorado coal fields (1913–14), which became so serious after the "Ludlow battle" between the strikers and the state militia on Apr. 20, 1914, that federal troops were called in to restore order. Ammons was accused of grossly favoring the mine owners throughout the struggle, and a motion calling for his resignation was introduced in the legislature but defeated by a vote of 26 to 4. After his term of office expired (1915), he continued to give freely of his time to business and civic enterprises. He was president of the Farmers' Life Insurance Company (1911–25), of the Denver Chamber of Commerce (1923–24), and of the State Historical and Natural History Society (1922–25). He was survived by his wife, Elizabeth (Fleming) Ammons, to whom he was married on Jan. 29, 1889.

[The best sketch of his life is in W. F. Stone, *Hist. of Colo.* (1918), II, 32–38; his inaugural and farewell addresses as governor may be found in the *Rocky Mountain News* (Denver), Jan. 15, 1913, and Jan. 9, 1915; obituary in the *Rocky Mountain News,* May 21, 1925; facts about his personal life furnished by his sister, Mrs. James E. McLaughlin of Boulder, Colo.] C.B.G.

AMORY, THOMAS (May 1682–June 20, 1728), merchant, was born in Limerick, Ireland. His grandfather was a member of the "Merchant Venturers" of Bristol; his father Jonathan Amory, married to Rebecca Houston, was a merchant of Dublin. Thomas was taken as an infant to the West Indies and in 1786 to Charleston, S. C., where his father became a landowner, speaker of the colonial assembly, advocate general and "Receiver for the Public Treasury." In 1694 the boy was sent to relatives in London to be educated; but the statement that he attended Westminster School cannot be substantiated. Five years later he was bound out as an apprentice to a French merchant of London, Nicolas Oursel, who sent him, at the expiration of the indenture in 1706, as his factor to Terceira in the Azores. There he established himself as a merchant trading with Portugal, England, Holland, and America. His precise letter books, written in French, English, and Portuguese, contain the records of his transactions. In 1712, in company with Andrew White and with William Fisher, the richest merchant of the island, he purchased a French prize ship and went to Europe to dispose of her. He had intended to wind up his affairs in the Azores and remove to Charleston, S. C., but the loss of part of the cargo, poor markets, and the cost of repairing the vessel at Amsterdam, forced him to return to the islands to make up his losses. The confidence that he inspired, notwithstanding the failure of this venture, is shown by the willingness of his partner to join in fresh ventures, and by his appointment as consul by the Dutch, French, and English governments. In 1719 he resigned these offices, sailed for Boston and thence to Charleston, where he intended to settle and to marry Sarah, the daughter of Mrs. William Rhett, administratrix of his property since the death of his father in 1699. But he found that the daughter was promised to another, and that Mrs. Rhett was unwilling to relinquish the property except as the result of prolonged but finally successful litigation. In the spring of 1720 he visited Rhode Island, Pennsylvania, and New York in search of an opening for trade, but decided to settle in Boston, where he purchased land and built a wharf and still-house. A bold and able merchant, Amory rapidly extended his business to the other English colonies, the West Indies, the Azores, England, Ireland, and Europe; developed inland trade; invested in ship-building; and distilled rum and turpentine in Boston. He was a man of prodigious activity, scrupulous in the protection of his business reputation, yet not above evading the Acts of Trade. On May 9, 1721, he married Rebecca Holmes, daughter

of Francis Holmes, who owned the "Bunch of Grapes" tavern in Boston, although, as he writes, "Her fortune in it is but £500." After his death, caused by falling into the cistern of his still-house, Mrs. Amory carried on the importing business and supervised the management of the distillery for nearly fifteen years.

[The principal records of Thomas Amory's life are contained in his pocket book (1699) and his five-volume letter books (1711–14 and 1717–28), extracts from which are reproduced in Gertrude E. Meredith's *The Descendants of Hugh Amory* (1901). His Boston property is shown in the Boston property records and on Bonner's 1722 map of Boston. The account of Thomas Amory in *Amor y amistad* (1856), a pamphlet by T. C. Amory, is correct in outline but unreliable in detail, and Joseph Johnson's Amory tradition in his *Traditions and Reminiscences Chiefly of the Am. Rev.* (1851) is entirely untrustworthy. W. B. Weeden used the Amory letter books in preparing his *Econ. and Social Hist. of New Eng.* (1891), which presents a full and critical account of Amory's career.]

E.A.J.J.

ANAGNOS, MICHAEL (Nov. 7, 1837–June 29, 1906), Greek patriot, American educator of the blind, was born at Papingo, a mountain village of Epirus. He was of peasant origin, though his surname, Anagnostópoulos, shows that either his father, Demetrios, or his grandfather was Reader in the community at a time when the ability to read was a distinction. The lad himself had such a thirst for knowledge that he once trudged sixteen hours to Janina where he won an academic scholarship. Then he spent four years at the University of Athens, his major studies being the classics and philosophy. From the Greek poets and orators he imbibed the love of liberty and the vehement patriotism and poetic style which afterward characterized his speeches and writings. He read law but later chose journalism and became editor of a daily paper. Certain bitter polemics of his having brought him imprisonment, and his zeal for annexing Crete being disapproved of by his staff, he resigned his position. He was thirty years old when, on Dr. Samuel G. Howe's going to Greece with relief for the Cretan refugees, Anagnos (as he thereafter called himself) gave his services as secretary and interpreter and later obtained this Philhellene's consent to accompany him to Boston and to Perkins Institution of which he was director and executive head. When Anagnos had learned English he became Dr. Howe's assistant and loyal understudy, married his daughter Julia, whose mother was Julia Ward Howe, and upon Dr. Howe's death in 1876 succeeded him. The election of one whose abundant curly black beard and broken English marked him as a foreigner was not without misgivings. His prompt raising of a printing fund in memory of his predecessor, however, both put misgivings aside and showed Anagnos his own forte, the raising of money in behalf of blind children. Indeed, in this he far excelled Dr. Howe. Having rapidly increased the school's stock of embossed books and appliances, he gathered a museum of stuffed objects and specimens for object teaching, as well as a special reference library on blindness and the blind, both hitherto found in European institutions only. Perhaps his greatest contribution to the cause of the blind was a kindergarten for little blind children, the first, largest, and best appointed in this country if not in the world. Within twenty years he had raised $1,000,000 for it. Alike in that and in introducing Swedish gymnastics and sloyd he showed his progressiveness. Nevertheless he was always set against any new proposal irreconcilable with the Perkins tradition. He chose assistants discriminatingly and, holding them responsible for results, was freed to read and study and to write voluminous though cogent annual reports. It was said of him that his devotion to Greece constituted a real religion. The Greeks of this country chose him president of their union, formed through his eloquence to promote Pan-Hellenism and national liberty. But he had another means of helping Greece. His investments and his thrift had made him a comparatively rich man. He deposited in a bank at Athens $25,000 to found in Papingo the Kallinean Free Schools, named for Kallina, his mother, and by his will left them one-sixth of the residue of his estate, and five-sixths to establish in Epirus a classical high school. It was while leisurely traveling in the Near East in the interests of his health and of these schools that he died. Civic exercises in his memory were held in Boston at which the governor of Massachusetts, the mayor of the city, and other prominent men spoke. A card announcing his death bore the inscription: "A deep thinker, a wise counsellor, a prophet of good, a great-hearted lover of mankind, a true and far-seeing leader of the blind along the higher paths." The former pupils of the kindergarten affectionately erected in its court a bronze bust of Anagnos. Every year, on Founder's Day (his birthday), his memory is revived by exercises at which his personality is described and his deeds rehearsed.

[*Michael Anagnos, 1837–1906,* issued by Perkins Inst. (1907), containing portrs., a memoir, tributes, resolutions, press notices (those from Greek papers translated), and memorial exercises in full—all reprinted from the *75th Ann. Report* of Perkins Inst.; the *Ann. Reports,* 1876–1905, written by Anagnos (that for 1913 telling in twenty-seven pages the story of the kindergarten); Μιχαηλ Αναγνωστόπουλος, by D. and G. Anagnostópoulos, Athens, 1923; Anagnos's will. All of these may be consulted at Perkins Inst., Watertown, Mass.]

E.E.A.

Anderson

ANDERSON, ALEXANDER (Apr. 21, 1775–Jan. 17, 1870), engraver, was the son of John Anderson, a Scotch printer, and of Mary, his wife, living near Beekman's Slip, New York City. While still a boy he came in contact with some Hogarth engravings "which," he says in his diary, "determined my destiny." He was sent to a classical school where he learned to read Latin fluently, but he spent almost as much time in copying engravings with India ink. Having discovered indirectly through a cyclopedia how they were produced, he made his first prints etched on copper plates manufactured from pennies rolled out for him by a friend, his first graver being the sharpened backspring of a pocket-knife. Thus at the age of twelve he began the practice of the engraver's art. It may be said that he was self-taught, his knowledge coming from close observation of the work of others. His first engraving was the head of Paul Jones printed with red oil-paint, but soon acquiring better tools he began cutting small plates which he sold to the newspapers. Anderson's father, not having faith in the profession of engraving as a means of livelihood, determined that his son should study medicine, a thing which the boy reluctantly consented to do. At fourteen he entered the office of Dr. Joseph Young and studied hard for the next four or five years. But he never entirely gave up his favorite pursuit, soon became proficient in cutting initial letters, and before he was eighteen years old was frequently employed by printers and publishers. At nineteen he engraved a commencement ticket for Columbia College and later made the illustrations for more than a hundred volumes of English classics. On type-metal he engraved illustrations for *The Pilgrim's Progress,* for *Tom Thumb's Folio,* for different editions of *Dilworth's Spelling Book* and later on for *Webster's Spelling Book.* Early in 1794 he had the chance to peruse a sketch of Bewick's life and works and to see some of his illustrations of birds and quadrupeds. From this eminent English wood-engraver Anderson received a new revelation which he at once put to use. His first attempt on wood was a tobacco-stamp (1793), but a year later he tried more elaborate work. He had already engraved on type-metal the illustrations for *The Looking Glass of the Mind* (1794); he now set about reproducing them on wood. Thus in 1794, while still under twenty, Anderson became the first engraver on wood in America.

He received a license to practise medicine in 1795 and was offered a position in Dr. Young's office, which he declined in favor of a small private practise. During this year the yellow fever broke out and the young doctor abandoned everything in order to work in Bellevue Hospital. He took his medical degree in 1796, but he eventually gave up medicine, which had become increasingly repugnant to him. In April 1797 he married Ann Van Vleck, a young Moravian. In the same year he became an independent publisher, a step which was a failure. In 1798 he drew and engraved on wood a full-length human skeleton from *Albinus' Anatomy.* During this year the fever broke out again and he lost almost every member of his family, including his wife and infant son. He took a trip to the West Indies, and on returning devoted himself entirely to the practise of his art. Some time after this he married again, a sister of his first wife. In 1800 he made fifty-two cuts for *Emblems of Mortality.* He was called in the draft of the War of 1812 but soon found a substitute and on his return to New York was employed to engrave plates for the small paper money issued in 1814 and 1815. He continued to be a faithful student of Bewick and re-drew and engraved 300 of the latter's illustrations for the first American edition of Bewick's *General History of Quadrupeds* (1804). He also made cuts for Irving and Paulding's *Salmagundi* (1814). Among other of his engravings are those for the American Tract Society. In the London *Art Journal* for September 1858, when he was eighty-four, his own picture appeared engraved by himself in his "best style." For ten years more he was constantly at work, and at ninety-three he cut a picture of the "Hudson County Court House and Jail" for Barber's *Historical Collections of New Jersey* (1868), this being the last work he did for a publisher. In 1868 he moved to Jersey City, where he died. Anderson's engravings all exhibit a most careful execution and attention to detail. He was modest and conscientious and would never consent to receive more than he thought his work was worth. He was also a good miniaturist and in early life was often employed in that capacity. He shrank from publicity but numbered among his friends many prominent men. He belonged to the Academy of Fine Arts, and when the Academy of Design was founded he was immediately made a member.

[Frederic M. Burr, *Life and Works of Alexander Anderson* (1893); Benson J. Lossing, *Memorial of Alexander Anderson* (1872); "Diary of Alexander Anderson" in lib. of Columbia Coll., N. Y.; W. J. Linton, *Hist. of Wood Engraving in America* (1882).] M.F.

ANDERSON, DAVID LAWRENCE (Feb. 4, 1850–Feb. 16, 1911), Methodist missionary, educator, the son of J. H. and Mary Margaret Adams Anderson, was born in Summerhill, S. C., of a family of some local prominence. When ready for higher education he entered in September 1866 Washington College (now Washing-

ton and Lee), Va., in the days of the presidency of Gen. Lee. After two years he withdrew and served for a time as a bookkeeper in the office of the *Atlanta Constitution,* of which his father was a founder. This post, however, he soon relinquished in order to devote himself to the ministry. He rose in a few years to a presiding eldership in the North Georgia Conference of Southern Methodism. On Dec. 31, 1879, he married Mary Garland Thomson, of Huntsville, Ala. While in charge of the work in his mountain area he heard the call to foreign service, applied to his Board of Missions, and was appointed to China. His first year there was spent in the Shanghai neighborhood. The next year (1884) he was appointed to Soochow, where he made his home, reared his family, and did his work as a missionary and educator. His application, regard for details, and orderliness indicated at once his administrative capacity. When in 1886 the China Mission Conference of his church was organized he was put in charge of the Soochow district. He succeeded well in this office and bore his full share of the burdens of the Conference. When thoughtful Chinese realized through the disastrous war with Japan their need of new learning, Anderson responded to the unique opportunity by opening an Anglo-Chinese school in 1894. Although the Boxer uprising five years later interrupted the progress of the new venture, the ultimate result was the death of the old educational régime. In the very midst of the uprising, Anderson was planning for the new order. When in 1899 the Mission committed itself to a reorganization of its educational work, it fell to Anderson's lot to found the university of which he and others had dreamed.

Soochow University was formally opened in March 1901 under the presidency of Anderson and with the generous support of the Soochow gentry and the home church. Beginning in the old buildings of the Mission's Buffington Institute, the new establishment acquired new buildings almost immediately and projected literary, theological, and medical departments. For ten years Anderson gave himself heartily to his new work. In February 1908 the school granted its first B.A. degree. The following year there were three graduates in Arts and three in Medicine. By that time some 350 students were enrolled. The University continued to grow, and upon Anderson's death Dr. Allen's Shanghai Anglo-Chinese College was merged with it. Owing to his late coming to China, Anderson never mastered spoken Chinese. He had marked success, however, in understanding the educational problems of the East and in dealing with his students and the Chinese community. Several times he represented the China Mission at General Conferences in America. His last visit to America was in 1910. Upon his return to China in the fall he assumed unusually heavy burdens under which his health broke, and when pneumonia came upon him it took his life.

[*Ann. Reports Board of Missions M. E. Ch., South,* especially for the year 1912; A. P. Parker, "In Memoriam. Dr. D. L. Anderson," in the *Chinese Recorder,* May 1911.]

J.C.A.

ANDERSON, ELIZABETH MILBANK (Dec. 20, 1850–Feb. 22, 1921), philanthropist, was born in New York City, the daughter of Jeremiah and Elizabeth (Lake) Milbank. She grew up under the best cultural and social advantages available to her generation, and in a home atmosphere of benevolence and public spirit. In 1887 she married Abram A. Anderson, the portrait painter. She traveled extensively, crossing the Atlantic some sixty times and visiting Japan in 1918. She owned notable paintings and a fine collection of Chinese porcelains. From her father she inherited (1884) a considerable fortune, and it was greatly increased in her hands by wise management. She had an alert mind, sound business judgment, buoyant spirits, a keen sense of humor, strong likes and dislikes, decided and independent opinions. Loyalty and fearlessness she placed high in the list of virtues. Insincerity roused her scorn. A portrait near the close of her life shows a head daintily and reliantly poised; delicate features under a high crown of soft white hair; eyes that seem to look through surfaces and pretensions with kindly penetration and interest; a mouth half smiling in tolerant sympathy, with perhaps a touch of amusement.

Barnard College owes a great deal to her interest in its critical early period. She became a trustee in 1894, and was vice-chairman of the Board from 1899 until her death. In 1896 she gave the administration building (Milbank Hall); and in 1903, at the cost of $1,000,000, the tract of three blocks which was developed as the Milbank Quadrangle. She provided funds for a dormitory on this site (Brooks Hall); contributed liberally to the general and special funds of the College; and helped many of its students with financial aid and personal friendship. Medical missions in China, negro schools in the South, the tuberculosis research laboratory at Saranac Lake, were other educational projects which received her help. In the field of social work her interest was primarily in applying the results of research to the prevention of poverty and suffering, especially that due to ill health. In 1904 she gave to the New York Association for Improving the

Condition of the Poor a building on East Thirty-eighth Street to be used for public baths, and for many years it served as a model and stimulated the provision of bath houses by the city. Through the same Association she provided hot lunches in over thirty public schools, until the city assumed responsibility for the work. In 1909 she gave land, buildings, and endowment to the value of $1,000,000 to the Children's Aid Society of New York City, for a convalescent home for children at Chappaqua, N.Y. By a promise of $50,000 a year for ten years she made possible the establishment, in 1913, of the Department of Social Welfare of the New York Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor. She indulged freely in what she called "unconventional giving," of which no record remains except in the memories of its beneficiaries. During and after the World War she made generous gifts to France and Belgium, and to the children of Serbia and Central Europe. For her services to France she was decorated with the ribbon of the *Légion d'honneur* in 1918.

As a tribute to her father and mother, Mrs. Anderson founded in 1905 the Memorial Fund Association, to which she transferred securities from time to time, and which she used increasingly as a medium for her benefactions. At her death in 1921 the endowment had reached nearly $8,000,000. By the terms of her will it was increased to about $10,000,000, and the name was changed to the Milbank Memorial Fund. With characteristic far-sightedness she left the directors unhampered by limitations or detailed instructions, specifying only that the income be used to "improve the physical, mental, and moral condition of humanity, and generally to advance charitable and benevolent objects."

[The principal sources of information in print are: *Annual Reports of the Milbank Memorial Fund, 1922–25*, especially the sketch on pages 65–69 in the *Report* for 1922; and an article by John A. Kingsbury in the *Survey* for Mar. 26, 1921, entitled "A New Foundation and its Donor."]

L. B.

ANDERSON, GALUSHA (Mar. 7, 1832–July 20, 1918), Baptist clergyman, college president, was descended from a Scotch family which came to Hingham, Mass., in 1701. Born at Clarendon, N.Y., the seventh child of Seneca and Lucy (Webb) Anderson, he spent his early years on his father's farm at Bergen, Genesee County, N.Y. His mother was a woman of unusual energy and ability, and he inherited many of her characteristics. His father was a deacon in the Baptist church, and was an ardent believer in the abolition of slavery and in total abstinence which were then unpopular and even dangerous causes. Like him, the son was noted throughout his life for his unflinching courage and uncompromising determination. Deciding to enter the Christian ministry, he studied at Alfred Academy, going from there to the University of Rochester, where he received the bachelor's degree in 1854. From 1854 to 1856 he was a student in Rochester Theological Seminary. His first pastorate (1856–58) was in the First Baptist Church of Janesville, Wis., where his ability was immediately evident. In 1858 he was called to the pastorate of the Second Baptist Church of St. Louis. This was at the time the largest church in the denomination, west of the Mississippi. His pastorate continued until after the close of the Civil War. He was outspoken in his convictions on the slavery question, and when the war broke out devoted himself with unsparing vigor to the task of helping to keep Missouri in the Union. Inevitably he encountered strong opposition. Many influential members of his church repudiated him. For a time his life was in danger. In 1863 his health broke under the strain; but after a vacation spent in Europe, he returned to his post. His influence in Missouri at this critical period was very great. The story is told vividly in his *A Border City during the Civil War*.

In 1866 he was called to Newton Theological Institution as professor of sacred rhetoric, church polity, and pastoral duties. After seven years of teaching, he returned to the pastorate, serving the Strong Place Baptist Church, Brooklyn, N.Y., 1873–76, and the influential Second Baptist Church of Chicago, 1876–78. In 1878 he was elected president of the old University of Chicago. The institution was hopelessly in debt, and he heroically undertook the task of placing it on its feet. He succeeded in paying off the floating indebtedness, but was unable to meet the mortgage obligations and was compelled to see the University close its doors in 1885 in spite of his devoted efforts. He took the pastorate of the First Baptist Church of Salem, Mass., in 1885. In 1887 he was elected president of Denison University, Granville, Ohio, where he remained for three years. He was called to the chair of homiletics, church polity, and pastoral duties, in the Baptist Union Theological Seminary at Morgan Park, Ill., in 1890. When this school was taken over as the Divinity School of the new University in 1892, Anderson came with the rest of the faculty and continued his teaching. But he was a convinced conservative in theology and did not sympathize with the prevailing liberal tendencies of the Divinity School. This attitude somewhat restricted his influence. After his retirement in 1904, he lived in Massachusetts, engaged in writ-

ing. Anderson was married to Savina Dorr in 1856. In 1860 she and their three sons died within a period of six months. In April 1861, he married Mary Eleanor Roberts, by whom he had five children. His publications include *Notes on Homiletics* (1891); *Ancient Sermons for Modern Times* (1904); *The Story of a Border City during the Civil War* (1908); *Hitherto Untold* (1910); *When Neighbors Were Neighbors* (1911); *Science and Prayer* (1915); *Poems and Biography of Mary Eleanor Anderson* (1917).

[*Who's Who in America*, 1918-19; H. S. Louthan, *Am. Bapt. Pulpit* (1903), p. 710; *The Standard*, Aug. 3, 1918; *Univ. of Chicago Rec.*, N. S., IV, 188; Minutes of the Board of Trustees of the Univ. of Chicago, Sept. 10, 1918; letters from Anderson's son, Frederick L. Anderson of Newton Center, Mass.; conversations with Dr. T. W. Goodspeed, intimately acquainted with Anderson during his work in Chicago; personal recollections of the writer.]

G.B.S.

ANDERSON, GEORGE THOMAS (Mar. 3, 1824–Apr. 4, 1901), Confederate soldier, was a native of Georgia. His parents were Joseph Stewart and Lucy (Cunningham) Anderson. Beyond his service as second-lieutenant Georgia Mounted Volunteers, 1847–48, and captain 1st Cavalry, 1855–58, no events of his life before the Civil War are recorded. At its beginning he was made colonel of the 11th Georgia Regiment, and served throughout the war. He commanded with distinction a brigade in the Seven Days' conflicts in the Peninsula. He continued to see service in the remaining great battles of 1862, Second Manassas, in which he was wounded, Antietam, where he was conspicuous for bravery, and Fredericksburg. He was commissioned brigadier-general on Nov. 1, 1862. In the organization of the Army of Northern Virginia, as of June 1, 1863, he commanded a brigade in Hood's division of Longstreet's corps. He may easily be confused with the more noted Gen. R. H. Anderson of the same army, who commanded a division in the corps of Gen. A. P. Hill (Doubleday, *Chancellorsville and Gettysburg* (1885), Appendix B). Still more easily is he confounded with the Confederate Gen. George B. Anderson (1831–62), also serving in the Peninsula, and also commanding a brigade at Turner's Gap. In the ensuing battle of Gettysburg George T. Anderson was prominent in the struggle for Round Top, and was severely wounded in the attack at Devil's Den. After Gettysburg he went with Gen. Longstreet to join the army near Chattanooga, and participated in the siege of Knoxville. The following year (1864) he was again in Lee's army, and was present in all the great struggles, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, down to the surrender at Appomattox. In later years he held a number of offices in the South, among others that of chief of police of Atlanta, and died in Anniston, Ala.

[*Confed. Veteran* (1901), p. 418; *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), VI, 391–93; M. J. Wright, *Gen. Officers of the Confed. Army* (1911); J. B. Young, *Battle of Gettysburg* (1913).]

E.K.A.

ANDERSON, HENRY TOMPKINS (Jan. 27, 1812–Sept. 19, 1872), clergyman, scholar, translator of the New Testament, from his earliest years had little interest in anything but the study of the Bible. A minister of the Disciples of Christ, he was for comparatively short periods pastor of churches in Hopkinsville, Ky., Louisville, and Washington, D. C., but it was for his exposition of the Scriptures that he was commended as a preacher, while for parish details he had no great relish. He taught in several schools in Kentucky, because his extensive knowledge of the classics created a demand for his services, and more particularly because he needed money to support a rather large family, but he found teaching irksome. "The Lord made man upright," he wrote a friend, "but he hath 'sought out many inventions,' boarding schools being one of them." Even more important offices did not appeal to him. "The presidency of a college in Iowa has been offered me," he states, "and my wife is inclined to that region. The presidency of a college presents no pleasing anticipation to me. I have no desire to accept." The state in which he felt he could be content he thus describes: "Give me a few acres with good garden, a small forest and lasting spring. I would go to my little place in the country, read Hebrew and Greek, translate, write notes and essays, and beautify the little thirty-acre plot with trees, flowers, and shrubbery, and whatsoever is pleasant to the eyes and good for food." (Marshall Wingfield, *A History of Caroline County, Va.*, 1924). The visible fruits of thirty years of Bible study, carried on, not under these ideal conditions, but in spite of many distractions, was his *New Testament, translated from the original Greek,* and published in 1864.

He was born in Caroline County, Va., where his ancestors had been extensive land owners since the days of Richard Anderson, who came there from England in 1635. His father was John Burbage Anderson. His mother, Martha Tompkins, a woman of unusual attainments, gave him his education in Latin and Greek. At the age of twenty-one he was ordained by his brother, Dr. Benjamin Anderson, a physician, and elder in the Church of the Disciples. While pastor at Hopkinsville, he met and married Henriette Ducker. It was not until 1861, when the war had closed the schools, that he had opportunity to begin his long-

anticipated translation. The war also swept away what little property he had, but he was a man of childlike simplicity and implicit faith in the providence of God. Believing that his wants would be supplied, he went on with the work, and he was not disappointed. "The Lord raised me up friends," he said in 1863. "Some from a distance sent me a few dollars. Two worthy sisters paid one hundred and twenty dollars each last year. Those near me have, some of them, remembered my wants, and generously supplied me with food and clothing" (W. T. Moore, *Living Pulpit of the Christian Church,* p. 70.) His translation was completed about the time of Tischendorf's discovery of the *Codex Sinaiticus,* and he at once began a translation of the Sinaitic manuscript, which he barely finished before his death. It was published in 1918. He died in comparative poverty in Washington, where he had secured a position in the Land Office. The *Christian Standard,* Sept. 28, 1872, contains an appeal for contributions to save his family from want.

His translation of the New Testament is dedicated "to all lovers of the truth," and was intended to open and illuminate the Scriptures for the masses. To this end the translator endeavored to express the thought of the original in "the English language as now spoken." Some of the stateliness and beauty of the common version is sacrificed, but the work is done with restraint and good taste, and has dignity as well as clarity.

[Practically the only available sources of information are those mentioned above. Both the *Hist. of Caroline County* and the *Living Pulpit* contain portrs.]

H. E. S.

ANDERSON, JAMES PATTON (Feb. 12, 1822–Sept. 1, 1872), Confederate soldier, was born in Franklin County, Tenn. He studied and practised medicine in Hernando County, Miss. There during the Mexican War he raised the first battalion of Mississippi Rifles, which he commanded as lieutenant-colonel. As it was raised after the capture of the City of Mexico it was employed only in garrison duty, probably at Tampico. After the war Anderson seems to have taken up the profession of politics. In 1850 he was elected a member of the Mississippi legislature; in 1853 President Pierce appointed him United States marshal for the territory of Washington; in 1855 he was elected its first territorial delegate to Congress. Apparently he was not much interested, however, in the development of the new territory, for the outbreak of the Civil War found him in Florida, where he was a member of the state convention and where he promptly raised a company of volunteers which was later absorbed by the 1st Florida Regiment, of which he became colonel. His regiment served at Pensacola under Bragg and there in the autumn of 1861 it took part in the night attack on the encampment of the Wilson Zouaves of New York. On Feb. 10, 1862, he was commissioned brigadier-general and soon after he accompanied Bragg to Corinth, Miss., where he was assigned a brigade in Bragg's division. After the battle of Shiloh, Bragg said of him: "Brigadier General Patton Anderson was among the foremost where the fighting was hardest, and never failed to overcome whatever resistance was opposed to him. With a brigade composed almost entirely of raw troops his personal gallantry and soldierly bearing supplied the place of instruction and discipline" (*Confederate Military History,* XI, 196). Although but a brigade commander, Anderson was assigned to the command of a division in Bragg's invasion of Kentucky and as division commander took part in the battle of Perryville. In the battle of Murfreesboro or Stone River he commanded Walthall's brigade of Wither's division which distinguished itself by a desperate charge and the capture of Union artillery on the first day and by covering the retreat of Breckinridge's corps on the last day. Of the latter event Bragg says in his report: "Brig. Gen. J. Patton Anderson for the coolness, judgment, and courage with which he interposed his brigade between our retreating forces and the enemy, largely superior to him, . . . and saved our artillery, is justly entitled to special mention" (*Official Records,* ser. I, vol. XXIX, p. 670). During the battle of Chickamauga, Anderson was for some time in command of Hindman's division, and after the battle, in which Hindman was wounded, he commanded it in the battle of Chattanooga, where it was engaged in the defense of Missionary Ridge. On Feb. 17, 1864, he received the commission of major-general, which he had well earned. About this time a Union column landed at Jacksonville, Fla., in order to recapture that state, and Anderson was directed to assume command of the district of Florida and direct its defense. After Hood's unsuccessful attacks on Sherman in front of Atlanta, July 21 and 22, 1864, Bragg, then chief of staff of the Confederate armies, sent the following telegram from Columbus, Ga., to the Confederate adjutant-general: "After learning the result of yesterday's operations at Atlanta, I have ordered Maj. Gen. Patton Anderson to report to Gen. Hood. It is important he should go immediately." On rejoining the army Anderson was assigned to the command of Hindman's division in Gen. Stephen D. Lee's corps and was in the engagements of Ezra Church and Utoy Creek. In the battle of Jonesboro he was badly wounded and

forced to give up active service. Against the advice of his surgeon, when Johnston's army was in North Carolina he rejoined it and was assigned to the command of Taliaferro's division. He was with the army when it surrendered at Greensboro, N. C.

Anderson's career indicates a versatile and adventurous character. In battle he exposed himself recklessly and was in the thick of the fight; for this reason men followed him willingly, even when he was only in temporary command, as was frequently the case. That he was at times a strict disciplinarian is indicated by his prompt execution of a deserter. Gen. Bragg, who was noted for making enemies rather than friends, manifested his esteem for him in many ways. After the war Anderson settled in Memphis, where he conducted a paper devoted to agriculture and was collector of state taxes for Shelby County.

(*Official Records*, see Index; *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), XI, 15, 32, 82, 195–97; *Biog. Cong. Dir.*, 1913; *Mexican War Veterans* (1887), compiled by W. H. Robarts.]

G.J.F.

ANDERSON, JOHN ALEXANDER (June 26, 1834–May 18, 1892), Presbyterian clergyman, college president, congressman, was descended from two generations of clergymen. His father, the Rev. William C. Anderson, son of the Rev. John Anderson, married the daughter of Col. John Alexander, a soldier of the Revolutionary War. John Alexander Anderson, born in Washington County, Pa., was educated at Miami University, Oxford, Ohio, where he graduated in 1853. While in college, Benjamin Harrison, afterward President of the United States, was his room-mate Anderson studied theology, and began his pastoral work in Stockton, Cal., in 1857, where he had opportunity for experimental work in a frontier community. He was associated with the Rev. Thomas Starr King [*q.v.*] in the reform of the charitable institutions of the state, and in 1860 was appointed a trustee of the Insane Asylum. At the call of President Lincoln for volunteers, in 1862, he entered military service as chaplain of the 3rd California Infantry and accompanied Gen. Connor on his expedition to Salt Lake City. Through the influence of King, he was made California representative on the United States Sanitary Commission. Subsequently he was transferred to the central office of the Commission at New York, where he was assigned to the duty of relief agent in the 12th army corps. In 1864, when Grant entered upon his Wilderness campaign as an approach to Richmond, Anderson was given the important position of superintendent of transportation. At the close of the campaign, he served for a time as assistant superintendent of the Canvas and Supply Department at Philadelphia. Here he edited a paper called the *Sanitary Bulletin*. Subsequently he was transferred to the History Bureau at Washington, where he remained one year gathering statistics and writing the history of the sanitary work. For the next two years he was statistician for a Citizens' Reform Association movement in Pennsylvania. In 1868, deciding to return to the ministry, Anderson accepted a call to the First Presbyterian Church at Junction City, Kan. While his ministerial work was a success, his inquisitive, alert mind sought a wider range of usefulness. Apparently he could not keep out of public affairs. In 1873 he was appointed president of the Kansas State Agricultural College, a position which he held for five years. In this position he made his greatest contribution as a citizen of Kansas. The school had as a foundation the Blue Mound College, which after the manner of the small college of the day was a weak attempt at a school of liberal arts. Anderson worked a complete reform, laying a foundation for the industrial and mechanical arts, including agriculture, thus fulfilling the purpose of the federal land grant of 1862. In 1878 he was elected to Congress, a position which he filled for six successive terms, retiring Mar. 4, 1891. In Congress, Anderson served his state and nation with conscientious vigor. He was interested in the railroad land grants, and succeeded in getting measures for their regulation including the taxation of a large amount of land that had hitherto escaped. He favored two-cent letter postage, and is credited with being the author of the bill providing it. But his chief endeavor was to make the Agricultural Department a full federal department with a secretary in the cabinet. In 1891 he was appointed consul-general at Cairo, Egypt. The next year, on the return voyage, he died at Liverpool, England. His wife, Nannie (Foote) Anderson, whom he had married in 1864, had died in 1885.

[Records in the Kan. State Hist. Soc. at Topeka; Geo. W. Martin, "John A. Anderson," in the *Push*, Nov. 1902, repr. in *Trans. Kan. State Hist. Soc.*, VIII; Wm. E. Connelly, *Standard Hist. of Kan.* (1918), III; *Hist. of Kan. State Ag. Coll.* (1909); Hill P. Wilson, *Eminent Men of Kan.* (1901); Frank W. Blackmar, *Kansas* (1912), I.]

F.W.B.

ANDERSON, JOSEPH (Nov. 5, 1757–Apr. 17, 1837), jurist, senator, was born at White Marsh, Philadelphia County, Pa., the second son of William and Elizabeth (Inslee) Anderson. At the age of nineteen, in May 1776, he entered the 3rd New Jersey Regiment, Continental establishment, as ensign. He was commissioned second-lieutenant in July 1776, first-lieutenant in the following November, and captain in October 1777.

At the time of his promotion to captain, he was made regimental paymaster, and remained such until the end of the war, revealing a financial capacity to be later disclosed more fully. He was with Sullivan in his expedition against the Iroquois, was made brevet major, Sept. 30, 1783, and a month later took part in the siege of Yorktown. After the war, he practised law in Delaware until he was appointed by President Washington on Feb. 25, 1791, one of the judges in the territory of the United States south of the Ohio River, which was to become the State of Tennessee. In 1796, while still judge of the territory, he was elected a delegate from Jefferson County to the first constitutional convention of Tennessee. The convention assembled on Jan. 11, 1796, and Anderson played a very important part (*Journal of the Constitutional Convention, passim*). In 1797 he was appointed United States senator from Tennessee, to fill the unexpired term of William Blount, who had been expelled (*Annals of Congress,* 5 Cong., I, 470). This was the beginning of a long period of service in this office ending in the year 1815. During this time he made a reputation as a man of good judgment and fair dealing and was appointed on most of the finance committees and many other important committees. He was made president *pro tempore* of the Senate when Aaron Burr resigned and also on one or two other occasions when the president was absent (T. H. Benton, *Abridgment of the Debates of Congress,* III, 165, 169, 170). He very ably championed the demand of the West in regard to the right of deposit at the mouth of the Mississippi (*Annals of Congress, 7* Cong., *2* Sess., pp. 208–15). In 1809 he demonstrated his popularity by being reëlected to the Senate over John Sevier, who had been one of Tennessee's most beloved leaders, having held the office of governor for six terms. In 1815 President Madison, in recognition of Anderson's experience and great ability in public finance, appointed him comptroller of the United States Treasury, which office he held until July 1, 1836. As comptroller, his knowledge of law, court procedure, and legal decisions was very valuable. He held this position over two of the stormiest periods of American finance, during the panic of 1819 and the beginning of the panic of 1837 (accounts of his official duties are found in his reports in the *American State Papers,* Class III, Finance, vols. II, V, *passim*). Anderson was married in 1797 at the age of forty to Only Patience Outlaw, aged fifteen, a daughter of Col. Outlaw of Revolutionary fame, and became the father of seven sons. Anderson County, named for him, was created by the General Assembly on Sept. 21, 1801. He was a trustee of Blount College and of Washington College (Tenn.) and was one of the charter members of the Delaware State Society of the Cincinnati.

Anderson

["Personal Recollections of Captain Enoch Anderson," by H. H. Ballas, *Del. Hist. Soc. Papers,* 1896, vol. XVI; "A History of the Delaware State Society of the Cincinnati," by H. H. Ballas, *Del. Hist. Soc. Papers,* 1895, vol. XV; "The Honorable Joseph Anderson and Some of His Distinguished Relatives and Descendants," by Mrs. Henley in *Am. Hist. Mag.,* July 1898, III, 240–59.]

F. L. O.

ANDERSON, JOSEPH REID (Feb. 6, 1813–Sept. 7, 1892), Confederate soldier, and manufacturer, was the son of William Anderson, son of Robert Anderson, a Scotch-Irishman who landed in Philadelphia in 1756. His mother was Anna (Thomas) Anderson, daughter of a planter of Frederick County, Md. Joseph Reid Anderson was born at his father's home, Walnut Hill, near Fincastle, Botetourt County, Va. On July 1, 1832, he entered West Point, graduated fourth in his class, and on July 1, 1836, was commissioned a second-lieutenant of the 3rd Artillery. The next year he was transferred to the Corps of Engineers, in which he acted as assistant engineer in building Fort Pulaski, Ga. He resigned from the army in September 1837. Upon entering civil life he was for a short time assistant engineer of the State of Virginia. From 1838 to 1841 he was chief engineer of the Valley Turnpike Company, and built the great highway between Staunton and Winchester. He was a member of the Virginia House of Delegates from 1852 to 1855. Meanwhile he was becoming more and more engaged in what was to prove the main activity of his life. As early as March 1841 he was agent of the Tredegar Iron Company at Richmond. In November 1843 he leased the works, and in January 1848 became their owner. Under his management the Tredegar Works developed into one of the leading iron manufactories of the country, building over forty locomotives for various Southern railroads and supplying the United States Government with 1,200 cannon as well as chain cable, shot, shell, boilers, and naval machinery. Upon the outbreak of the Civil War the removal of the Confederate capital to Richmond was largely dictated by the necessity of holding the Tredegar Works, and the same necessity largely governed Confederate military strategy throughout the war.

Upon the election of Lincoln in November 1860, Anderson, who was a Secessionist, initiated agreements with several of the Southern states to supply them with cannon and ammunition. Anxious, however, for field service, he arranged also to enter the Confederate Army, with the understanding that if his personal supervision

were needed, he would return to the Tredegar plant. Commissioned brigadier-general on Sept. 3, 1861, he reported to Brigadier-General Gatlin, commanding the Department of North Carolina, for duty in connection with coast-defense, and was assigned to command the district of Cape Fear, with headquarters at Wilmington. On Mar. 15, 1862, he relieved Gatlin in the command of the Department, and nine days later was himself succeeded by Major-General Holmes, who assigned him to command the 3rd brigade. On Apr. 22–23, 1862, as McClellan's Peninsular campaign developed, Anderson's brigade was transferred from North Carolina to Fredericksburg, to oppose McDowell. His line of communications threatened by the arrival on May 24, 1862, of McClellan's right at Mechanicsville, at the end of May he fell back to the Chickahominy under orders from Gen. J. E. Johnston (*Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, vol. II, pt. I, "The Peninsular Campaign," McClellan, p. 174; "Manassas to Seven Pines," Johnston, p. 211). As a part of Hill's division, Anderson's brigade crossed the Chickahominy, and participated in the battle of Mechanicsville on June 26, and the battle of Gaines's Mill on June 27. The brigade recrossed the Chickahominy on June 29, and on June 30 participated in the battle of Frazier's Farm, being thrown into the action as a last reserve, about dark, and winning the approbation of Gen. Hill. In this engagement Anderson was wounded, and was obliged to relinquish command of the brigade. On July 15, 1862, in accordance with previous agreement, he resigned his commission as brigadier-general, and returned to the Tredegar Works, where he was more needed than in the field.

It is here, rather than in his comparatively limited experience of military activity, that Anderson claims attention, because of the masterly way in which as a business man and manufacturer he grappled with, and solved, the larger and more complicated problems connected with war industry. The Tredegar Works became nothing less than the mainstay of the Confederacy in the matter of munitions. From 1861 to 1863 they constituted practically the sole source of heavy guns; they were the laboratory for Confederate experiment; they formed the nucleus from which sprang the government shops at Richmond and down the coast to Selma, Ala. The activity in production of guns was equaled by the activity in the production of projectiles, gun-carriages, plates for iron-clads, wheels and axles for railroad rolling-stock, furnace machinery for iron-furnaces destroyed by Federal troops, and other products of the foundry and rolling-mill for Confederate munitions factories and navy-yards. The government repeatedly refused Anderson's request that it take over the Works, because it saw that they were being run at the top of their efficiency. In solving the grave problems connected with labor, raw material, food, clothing, transportation, and finance, that had to be met in sustaining this activity, Anderson displayed imperturbable resourcefulness and in the face of all discouragements never suspended operations until April 1865.

Confiscated by the Federal Government at the close of the war, the plant was soon released, and in 1867 the Tredegar company was reorganized with Anderson as president. From 1876 to 1878 the company was in the hands of a receiver, Anderson holding that office, after which he resumed his place at its head, retaining this position until his death. He was successful and enterprising; his advice in state and municipal matters was sought and esteemed. In 1874 he was elected president of the Chamber of Commerce of the city of Richmond, and was reëlected in 1875. He was a member of the Common Council of Richmond. He died on the Isles of Shoals, N. H. In 1837 he had married Sally Archer, daughter of a United States army surgeon; and on her death, Mary Pegram, who, together with five children by his first wife, survived him.

[The historical record of the Tredegar Iron Works and their importance to the Confederacy were definitely established by Dr. Kathleen Bruce in her monograph "Economic Factors in the Manufacture of Confederate Ordnance," *Army Ordnance*, VI, nos. 33, 34. *The Annual Cyc.*, New Series, XVII, 532, contains a brief sketch of Anderson's life. His Civil War service can best be discerned in the *Official Records*. A brief account of the Tredegar Works may be found in J. C. Wise, *The Long Arm of Lee* (1915), I, 50–51.] W. S. G.

ANDERSON, MARTIN BREWER (Feb. 12, 1815–Feb. 22, 1890), college president, was born in Brunswick, Me., where his grandfather, Jacob Anderson, a Revolutionary soldier of Scotch-Irish descent, had cleared a farm. Martin, son of Jacob, fought in the War of 1812. It was a sturdy ancestry of farmers and mechanics that gave its heritage to Martin Brewer Anderson, son of Martin. His mother was Jane Brewer, of the neighboring town of Freeport. She was of English descent, a woman of force and character, deeply religious, and a zealous promoter of temperance. When the boy was three years old, his parents removed to Freeport, and thirteen years later to Bath, where the father was a school-teacher. The son matured rapidly and determined to acquire a good education, although through his father's ill health he was compelled to aid in the support of the family. While employed in a shipyard, he prepared himself for college and saved what he could toward his future expenses. He entered

Waterville (now Colby) College, Me., in 1836, where his natural gifts soon made him a leader. To eke out his living he served as commissary in college commons. At the age of eighteen he had become interested in personal religion, and had joined the Baptist church in Bath. At the end of his college course he went to the Newton Theological Institution in Massachusetts to prepare for the ministry, but after a year returned to Waterville as instructor in Greek, Latin, and mathematics. A winter vacation spent in Washington for his health gave him opportunity to supply the pulpit of a church so satisfactorily that he was invited to remain as pastor; he declined, however, and returned to his college, where he served as professor of rhetoric from 1843 to 1850. On a visit to New York he made the acquaintance of Elizabeth Gilbert, member of a family of social prominence, and in 1848 they were married. Two years later he became editor and proprietor of the *New York Recorder,* a denominational weekly. Through the columns of this paper he discussed with a fearless and trenchant pen the religious issues of the day: foreign missions, Bible translation, educational matters in the State of New York—all to such good purpose that he gained a steadily increasing influence over Baptist thought.

When the University of Rochester was founded in 1853 to supplant Madison University located inconveniently at Hamilton off the main routes of travel, Anderson was called to be its first president. Within ten years under his leadership the growth of the college required a new building, and the president undertook the task of raising funds, including an attempt to secure a state appropriation. The task was uncongenial to one sensitive to rebuffs, but he succeeded in raising the outside amount necessary to obtain a state allowance of $25,000, enabling the theological department of the institution to be separated from the college. After the custom of those days President Anderson taught psychology, metaphysics, and ethics. He was in sympathy with the scientific method, and believed in the historical method of research and criticism, which became a hobby with him. He required in each department of the college the historical development of every subject. Versatile in his learning, acquainted with literature, art, politics, and law, he also lectured on economics in his own institution, and on various subjects to a wider public. He was one of the editors of *Johnson's Cyclopædia,* working faithfully at the tiresome details of the undertaking. During the years of his college activities he still took part in the activities of his religious denomination. For three years he was president of the American Baptist Missionary Union, and for a shorter time of the American Baptist Home Mission Society. His health broke down in 1877, although, by limiting his engagements and taking time to recuperate in Florida, he was able to retain the presidency of the college until 1888. In 1889 he took up his permanent residence at Lake Helen, Florida, where he died in the following year.

[A. C. Kendrick, *Martin B. Anderson* (1895); H. C. Vedder, "Martin B. Anderson: an Appreciation," in the *Baptist Quart. Rev.,* XII, 206–227; James Ricker, *Personal Recollections* (1894), pp. 296–313.] H. K. R.

ANDERSON, RICHARD CLOUGH (Jan. 12, 1750–Oct. 16, 1826), Revolutionary soldier, the son of Robert and Elizabeth (Clough) Anderson, was of Scottish and Welsh ancestry. He was born in Hanover County, Va., where he received little schooling other than that of the great outdoors. When he was sixteen, much against his father's will, he accepted the patronage of a rich merchant, Patrick Coots, and tried his fortune in the lines of trade. At various times he shipped as supercargo on merchant vessels and was in Boston when the tea was thrown overboard into the harbor. Soon after the outbreak of the Revolution he entered the service as captain of a Hanover County company and three months later was transferred to the same rank in the 5th Virginia Continentals. On the night before the battle of Trenton he crossed the river and alarmed the Hessians, killing a sentry, and has sometimes been held as having come near causing Washington's plans to miscarry. But his reconnaissance was made under orders of a superior and seems in reality to have deceived the British into thinking that the Americans consisted of only a few scouts. Anderson took part also in the battles of Germantown, Brandywine, and Monmouth. In 1778 he was made a major, and the next year he aided in the misdirected attempt to capture Savannah. In an assault, he received a sword-wound through the shoulder, but was not so badly injured as to prevent him from administering to the last wants of Pulaski, who was mortally wounded there. For this kindness the grateful Pole presented him with his sword. After the withdrawal from Savannah, Anderson was stationed at Charleston and was captured when that city fell into the hands of the British. He remained a prisoner for nine months. Upon his release he joined Gen. Morgan and remained with him until Washington ordered him to report to Lafayette in Virginia. Anderson acted as a messenger to bring "Mad Anthony" Wayne to the rescue of Lafayette, who was now being hard-pressed by Cornwallis. When the latter retreated into the Yorktown peninsula and

the trap was set for him, Anderson was detailed to the Governor to organize the Virginia militia, and so was not present at the battle of Yorktown. Before the end of the war he was made a lieutenant-colonel.

With the war over, in 1783 Anderson was selected to act as surveyor-general to divide the lands reserved by Virginia in the West for her Continental troops. He now crossed the mountains to Kentucky and settled near Louisville, married Elizabeth Clark, a sister of George Rogers Clark, and built a home which he called "Soldier's Retreat." His first wife having died in 1795, two years later he married Sarah Marshall, a daughter of William Marshall. He was the head of a remarkable family consisting of Richard Clough, Jr. [*q.v.*], Larz, Robert [*q.v.*], William Marshall, John, and Charles. Although without political ambitions, he served in the Kentucky constitutional convention of 1788, was an elector for state officials in 1792, and was a presidential elector the next year. His home became famous for its hospitality; President Monroe, Andrew Jackson, and Simon Kenton were visitors there in 1817.

[E. L. Anderson, *Soldier and Pioneer; A Biog. Sketch of Lt. Col. Richard C. Anderson of the Continental Army* (1879); *Niles' Reg.*, vol. XXXI; *Richmond Enquirer*, Nov. 7, 1826; *National Intelligencer* (Washington, D. C.), Nov. 2, 1826.]

E. M. C.

ANDERSON, RICHARD CLOUGH (Aug. 4, 1788–July 24, 1826), statesman, diplomat, born at Louisville, was the son of Richard Clough Anderson [*q.v.*], a Virginia Revolutionary officer who removed to Jefferson County, Ky., and of Elizabeth (Clark) Anderson, a sister of the renowned frontier fighter, George Rogers Clark. Fortunate in his connections on both sides of his family, Richard was given the best education the frontier afforded and was then sent to William and Mary College in Virginia. Here he was graduated in 1804, and immediately thereafter was prepared for the law by Judge St. George Tucker, Sr. He returned to Louisville and began a private practise, but opportunities in politics for one so well prepared were compelling. He was a member of the state House of Representatives in 1812, 1814, and 1815. Two years later he climbed a rung higher and entered the House of Representatives at Washington where he served two consecutive terms. Here he showed an uncommon ability and polish in debate and in general contact with his colleagues. During his second term he was chairman of the Committee on Public Lands. Throughout his congressional career he took a prominent part in the proceedings of the House. He was in sympathy with the Spanish colonies fighting for their independence and recognition, and he spoke at length in the Missouri Compromise debate, favoring the admission of the state with slavery. On the expiration of his second term, he chose Kentucky politics in preference to national affairs, and, returning to Louisville, was elected to the state House of Representatives in 1821 and 1822, becoming speaker at the latter time and using throughout both terms his influence against the radicalism of the rising New Court heresies. The United States having recognized the independence of the South American republics about this time, President Monroe appointed him minister plenipotentiary to Colombia in 1823. Now for a second time he left Kentucky, and taking with him his wife and children, he sailed for South America. He was received at Bogotá with such enthusiasm and esteem as almost to overwhelm him. Toasts were drunk to him, to Kentucky, and to Henry Clay. In October 1824 he negotiated the first treaty the United States ever made with a South American republic, and in May 1825 this was ratified by the Senate and proclaimed by President Adams. In this year, his wife dying, he returned to Kentucky to place his children in school. In October he again sailed for Colombia, taking with him his brother Robert Anderson [*q.v.*], later to become famous as the defender of Fort Sumter. In the following July he was appointed one of the American delegates to the Panama Congress. On his way to Cartagena, the point of embarkation, he fell ill and died at the small town of Turbaco on July 24, 1826. Anderson was a brilliant and courtly man whose promise of greater things thus cut short was likened to that of William Lowndes. He had literary tastes, and had begun a history of Colombia which he did not live to finish. The year after his death Kentucky named a new county in his honor.

[*Niles' Reg.*, Aug. 30, 1823, Mar. 13, 1824; L. and R. H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.* (1874); *Treaties and Conventions Concluded between the United States of America and other Powers since July 4, 1776* (1871). For Anderson's work in Congress, see *Annals of Congress*, 15th and 16th Congresses.]

E. M. C.

ANDERSON, RICHARD HERON (Oct. 7, 1821–June 26, 1879), Confederate soldier, the son of Dr. William Wallace Anderson and Mary (Mackenzie) Anderson, was born at Statesburg in Sumter County, S. C. His grandfather was Richard Anderson who fought through the Revolutionary War as an officer of the Maryland Line. It was perhaps from this ancestor that he inherited his taste for the military profession. He entered the Military Academy at West Point, July 1, 1838 and graduated four years later. Among

his classmates were James Longstreet, Lafayette McLaws, and D. H. Hill, with all of whom he was later closely associated in the Army of Northern Virginia. Upon graduating from the Academy he was assigned to the Dragoons, in which he served until his resignation in March 1861. With the exception of the Mexican War practically his entire service was on the western frontier. As a second-lieutenant of the 2nd Dragoons he took part in Gen. Scott's operations from Vera Cruz to the City of Mexico and received the brevet of first-lieutenant for gallant and meritorious conduct in an engagement with the enemy at San Augustin. In accordance with a resolution of the legislature of the State of South Carolina ten years later he was presented by the Governor with a sword inscribed "South Carolina to Capt. Richard Heron Anderson, a memorial of gallant conduct in service at Vera Cruz, Cherubusco, Molino del Rey, Mexico."

When South Carolina seceded he resigned his commission and became colonel of the 1st South Carolina Regiment of infantry. During the siege of Fort Sumter his regiment supported the artillery, and, when Beauregard went north to command the Army of Virginia, Anderson succeeded to the command of Charleston. On July 19, 1861, he was commissioned brigadier-general in the Confederate army, and in August he was sent to Pensacola as principal assistant to Gen. Bragg. In October he directed the only engagement in that territory—the night attack on the encampment of the Wilson Zouaves of New York near Fort Pickens. The more important operations in Virginia and Tennessee caused the withdrawal of the Confederate forces from Pensacola early in 1862, and Anderson was sent to Virginia to command a brigade in the division of his classmate Longstreet. In the Confederate retreat from Yorktown he was assigned four brigades and directed to halt the advance of the Union troops at Williamsburg to allow the withdrawal of the army; this he did so successfully as to receive commendation from Longstreet. Of the battle of Seven Pines in front of Richmond in which Longstreet commanded his own division and that of D. H. Hill, the former says: "The attack of the two brigades under Gen. R. H. Anderson . . . was made with such spirit and regularity as to have driven back the most determined foe. This decided the day in our favor" (*Official Records*, ser. I, vol. XI, pt. I, p. 940). In his report of the Seven Days' fighting in front of Richmond Longstreet says: "There was more individual gallantry displayed upon this field than any I have ever seen. Conspicuous among those gallant officers . . . Brig. Gen. R. H. Anderson" (*Ibid.*, pt. II, p. 758).

Anderson

On July 14, 1862 Anderson was commissioned major-general and placed in command of the division formerly commanded by Huger.

When McClellan's army withdrew from the Peninsula and Longstreet followed Jackson northward to operate against Pope, Anderson's division was left to cover Richmond until Lee was assured that McClellan would not return. Anderson was then directed to join the army and reached it just in time to take part under Longstreet in the last day's operations of the second battle of Bull Run or Manassas in which the Union army was driven from the field. When the Confederate army crossed the Potomac and reached Frederick, the divisions of McLaws and Anderson were detached by Longstreet to invest Harper's Ferry on the north and assist Jackson in capturing its garrison. In these operations it became necessary for Anderson's division to check the advance of the Union columns through Crampton's Gap until the surrender of Harper's Ferry. This it did successfully with the aid of some of McLaws's brigades. After the fall of Harper's Ferry, McLaws and Anderson crossed the river at that point and moved up the south bank of the Potomac, reaching Sharpsburg, after a long march, on the morning of the battle of Antietam. Here Anderson's division reinforced the division of D. H. Hill at the "Bloody Lane," but Anderson himself took little part in the battle, as he was wounded immediately after his arrival. Before the battle of Fredericksburg he had resumed command, but as he occupied the extreme left of the Confederate line his division was not attacked. During the battle of Chancellorsville in the spring of 1863, Longstreet being in southern Virginia with two of his four divisions, those of McLaws and Anderson remained under the direct command of Lee. With these two divisions Lee held the left of the Union army in check while Jackson made his famous march to attack its extreme right. Anderson and McLaws took part in the final operations of the day and assisted in winning the battle. While the Union army was intrenching its position on the south bank of the Rappahannock, Anderson and McLaws went to the assistance of Early who was being attacked by the 6th corps which crossed the river below Fredericksburg. The combined counter-attack forced this corps to recross the river. Of his conduct in this battle Lee says: "Maj. Gen. R. H. Anderson was also distinguished for the promptness, courage, and skill with which he and his division executed every order" (*Ibid.*, vol. XXV, pt. I, p. 803).

After the battle of Chancellorsville, in which Jackson was mortally wounded, Lee decided to

Anderson

reorganize his army into three corps, and in his letter to President Davis recommended Ewell and A. P. Hill to be the new corps commanders. In this same letter he said: "R. H. Anderson and J. G. Hood are also capital officers. They are improving too and will make good corps commanders if necessary" (*Ibid.*, p. 811). In the reorganization of the army Anderson's division was detached from Longstreet's corps and assigned to that of A. P. Hill. This was probably because Lee considered Hood, Anderson, and Early his best division commanders and desired one in each corps. In the battle of Gettysburg, Hill's corps was the first to reach the field, but as Anderson's division formed the rear of his column it was employed only as a reserve in the first day's fighting. On the second, however, it was to engage with Longstreet's two divisions in the great advance of the Confederate right wing. For this purpose it was moved forward in the morning to Seminary Ridge and drove back the regiments of the 3rd Union corps which had been sent forward to the ridge later occupied by Longstreet. This enabled Longstreet to bring up and deploy his troops before his presence was discovered by any of the Union commanders. About noon Anderson was in position ready to attack, but was obliged to wait several hours for Longstreet to get into position. When Longstreet made his attack four brigades of Anderson's division formed his left. Anderson's attack was made over practically the same ground covered by Pickett's on the following day, but in front of him were two Union lines—Humphreys's division of the 3rd corps reinforced by two regiments of the 2nd corps along the Emmitsburg Road, and in their rear on Cemetery Ridge two divisions of the 2nd corps. Notwithstanding the obstinate defense of Humphreys's division, one of Anderson's brigades actually reached the batteries on Cemetery Ridge, but being nearly surrounded was soon compelled to retreat. On the third day Anderson's brigades supported the attack of the divisions of Pickett and Pettigrew.

In the battle of the Wilderness which opened the campaign of 1864 Longstreet was badly wounded on May 6, and as Hood had been transferred from his corps, Lee selected Anderson to command it until Longstreet was able to return to duty. On the afternoon of May 7 Lee learned that Grant was sending his trains southward and was probably preparing to move his army in that direction. He therefore directed Anderson, whose corps was on the right, to move to Spottsylvania. Gen. Pendleton, who was Lee's chief of artillery, volunteered to go to Anderson and show him the road he was to follow. Pendleton says he learned from Anderson that the movement was ordered to begin at 3 a. m., May 8, but he was ready to move at 11 p. m., May 7. Probably assured that Lee would approve, he started the movement at once and thus secured for Lee the important position of Spottsylvania. In his memoirs Grant says: "It is impossible to say now what would have been the result if Lee's orders had been obeyed as given; but it is certain that we would have been in Spottsylvania and between him and his capital. My belief is that there would have been a race between the armies to see which could reach Richmond first, and the Army of the Potomac would have had the shorter line" (*Memoirs*, II, 212). Under Anderson, Longstreet's corps sustained its high reputation at Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, and in the various battles around Petersburg and Richmond until Longstreet returned to duty in October. In accordance with his duties Anderson was commissioned with the temporary rank of lieutenant-general, May 31, 1864.

After Longstreet's return, Anderson took over the command of the divisions of Hoke and Bushrod Johnson which had been under Beauregard, but as Hoke's division was soon sent to North Carolina his command was reduced to a single division occasionally reinforced by a division from one of the other corps. When the final retreat began on the night of Apr. 2, 1865, Anderson was on the extreme right of the Confederate army in command of the divisions of Pickett and Johnson and Fitz Lee's cavalry. On Apr. 5 the Confederate army was concentrated at Amelia Court House and on the afternoon of that day began its further retreat; the corps of Longstreet and Hill, under Longstreet, with the cavalry, formed the van, followed by Anderson, Ewell, and Gordon. The trains were to follow a road to the north. That same night the 2nd, 5th, and 6th corps of the Army of the Potomac with Sheridan's cavalry were at Jetersville, seven miles west of Amelia Court House and only half that distance from the Confederate line of retreat, with orders to move on Amelia Court House in the morning. By a night march Longstreet's command reached Rice Station, twelve miles west of Jetersville, without meeting any opposition. Anderson, who was following, was not so fortunate. Being discovered on the morning of Apr. 6, and attacked by Sheridan's cavalry, he halted his command to beat off the attack and protect the trains passing in his rear. Since no such delay had been contemplated by Lee, a gap was opened between the corps of Longstreet and Anderson which enabled Sheridan with the greater part of his corps to cut across the line of retreat. When the trains had passed and Gordon's corps had

come up and followed the trains, Anderson, followed by Ewell, proceeded on his way and crossed Sailors' Creek. Here in the afternoon Anderson and Ewell were attacked in front and flank by Sheridan and in rear by the 6th corps. As the Confederates were greatly outnumbered and had no artillery the issue was not long in doubt. Ewell was obliged to surrender with his entire command; Anderson's two divisions were badly shattered, but about two-thirds of his men managed to reach Longstreet. At Farmville the Confederate army was reorganized and Anderson's troops were assigned to Longstreet and Gordon; therefore his name does not appear on the rolls of the Army of Virginia, which surrendered two days later.

As a brigade and division commander Anderson showed marked ability, as Generals Lee and Longstreet both testified in their reports. As a corps commander Lee apparently ranked him below his other corps commanders, since he entrusted the defense of Petersburg mainly to A. P. Hill and sent Early to exercise independent command in the Shenandoah Valley. As a military leader Anderson lacked both the magnetism and the striking personality which win the loyalty of officers and men, and he failed to cultivate this loyalty, as did Longstreet, by reports of engagements and battles in which attention was called to the gallantry and achievements of organizations and individuals entitled to special mention. The only report of Longstreet's corps while under his orders is a colorless diary of its operations, but possibly he was too modest to claim credit for the deeds of a corps whose division and brigade commanders had been trained by Longstreet and whose high esprit de corps was due to him.

After the war Anderson was employed by the South Carolina Railroad until appointed state inspector of phosphates, which position he retained until his death, June 26, 1879. In 1850 he married Sarah Gibson, daughter of John B. Gibson, chief justice of Pennsylvania, and by her he had two children; she died in 1872 and in 1874 he married Martha Mellette, who survived him.

[Cornelius I. Walker, *Life of R. H. Anderson* (1917); *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War;* G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.*]

G. J. F.

ANDERSON, ROBERT (June 14, 1805–Oct. 26, 1871), Union soldier, was the son of Richard Clough Anderson, Sr. [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Marshall) Anderson, and half-brother of Richard Clough Anderson, Jr. [*q.v.*]. His father, a lieutenant-colonel in the Continental Army, removed from Virginia to Kentucky after the Revolution and Robert Anderson was born near Louisville.

He graduated at West Point in 1825 and was commissioned in the 3rd Artillery. After a few months as private secretary to his brother, who was minister to Colombia, he served at various stations on artillery or ordnance duty; took part in the Black Hawk and Florida wars, receiving a brevet for gallantry in action; and was for three years assistant adjutant-general of the Eastern Department. He served as a captain under Gen. Scott in the campaign of 1847 against the City of Mexico, until wounded at the battle of Molino del Rey. For his conduct here he received another brevet. From then until 1860 he was engaged in routine duties and also served on important boards relating to artillery matters. He translated certain French texts on artillery, which were used in instruction in the army. It was partly through his efforts that the Soldiers' Home was established. He was promoted major in 1857.

When secession became imminent Anderson was sent to take command of the forts in Charleston Harbor, S. C. His selection for the post was due to both military and political considerations. He was an able officer of unquestioned loyalty. He was also a Virginian by ancestry, a Kentuckian by birth, pro-slavery in principles, and was married to a Georgian (Elizabeth, daughter of Gen. D. L. Clinch). It was to be expected, then, that while faithful and efficient in his command, he would likewise be tactful and considerate in his dealing with the local authorities. Of the three forts designed to protect the harbor, but one (Fort Moultrie) was garrisoned. Here Anderson remained for some five weeks, meanwhile urgently calling upon the War Department to reinforce him, and representing that Fort Moultrie by itself could not be held against attack. From his government he received only vague and conflicting instructions, but no assistance in men or munitions. On Dec. 20, South Carolina passed the ordinance of secession. Satisfied that hostile acts were imminent, he proceeded on Dec. 26 to a "dramatic, bold and self-reliant act, one for which the country owes a debt to this upright and excellent commander" (F. E. Chadwick, *Causes of the Civil War,* 1906, p. 211). Making his preparations with such secrecy that his own officers did not suspect his design until its execution was ordered, he spiked the guns at Fort Moultrie and shifted its garrison to Fort Sumter, which, rising from a shoal in the harbor, could not be approached by land.

Personally loyal though he was, Anderson, like many other Union men in those days, believed that separation was inevitable; the most he hoped for was that the seceding states might "at some future time be won back by conciliation and

justice" (Crawford, *post,* p. 291). His earnest desire was to keep the peace until his government should be ready to evacuate the posts and turn them over to the seceding states. This is the key both to his boldness in occupying Sumter and to his inaction when the *Star of the West* entered the harbor on Jan. 9, 1861, bearing the reinforcements for which he had pleaded. Sumter was occupied, not as an aggressive movement, but to prevent the outbreak of civil war. "Nothing will be better calculated to prevent bloodshed," wrote Anderson, "than our being found in such an attitude that it would be madness and folly to attack us" (*Official Records,* ser. I, vol. I, p. 75). When the *Star of the West* was fired upon by the South Carolina batteries, she was not supported by fire from Fort Sumter, and turned back. Anderson was not wholly to blame. As he told the governor of South Carolina some days before, he "could get no information or positive orders from Washington," and was left to act upon his "own responsibility alone" (Crawford, p. 111). When confronted on Apr. 11 with a formal demand for the surrender of his post, he showed no hesitation or weakness, but "defended Fort Sumter for thirty-four hours, until the quarters were entirely burned, the main gates destroyed by fire, the gorge walls seriously injured, the magazine surrounded by flames"; and then, accepting the terms offered, marched out "with colors flying and drums beating . . . saluting my flag with fifty guns" (*Official Records,* ser. I, vol. I, p. 12).

He was appointed brigadier-general in the regular army, May 15, 1861, and for a short time commanded in Kentucky, where he helped to save the state for the Union. His health giving way, he was relieved in October 1861. He never completely recovered, and performed little duty between that time and the date of his retirement from active service on Oct. 27, 1863. He was brevetted major-general of volunteers in 1865, and was sent to raise the flag over Fort Sumter on Apr. 14, four years from the date he lowered it. He died at Nice, Oct. 26, 1871. He was an excellent officer, through industry and a high sense of duty, rather than brilliancy; deeply religious; considerate and kindly in his relations with all; a just and popular commander.

[*An Artillery Officer in the Mexican War 1846–47; Letters of Robert Anderson,* with preface by his daughter Eba Anderson Lawton (1911); S. W. Crawford, *Genesis of the Civil War* (1887); *Official Records,* ser. I, vol. I; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), I, 347–52.]

T.M.S.

ANDERSON, WILLIAM (December 1762–December 1829), soldier, legislator, though distinguished as a citizen of Pennsylvania, was a Virginian by birth. One of his ancestors, William Anderson of Accomac County, was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses, 1685–88. During the French War, 1756–63, a later William Anderson was fighting for America in the field and appears also as a taxable in Londongrove, Pa., in 1753, a member of the Masonic Lodge at Philadelphia in 1759, and a resident of Londongrove following the war. The available records, including the somewhat uncertain statements of the first United States census, support the contention that our William Anderson, son of this later William, was born in Accomac County, Va., in December 1762, and that a few years afterward the family had settled upon lands which it owned about 200 miles farther north in Chester County, Pa. In Londongrove William passed his youth, but had little time for books. In his fifteenth year he joined the Continental Army, becoming a member of Major-General Lafayette's staff at Brandywine, Sept. 11, 1777, and serving at Germantown, at Valley Forge, and until after the surrender of Cornwallis, Oct. 19, 1781, at Yorktown. Following a short period as colonel in the Pennsylvania militia, Anderson returned to Chester County, where he maintained a residence until his death. In 1785 he was admitted to the Philadelphia bar. In September 1796 he purchased the Columbia House at Chester in which Lafayette's wounds had been dressed when Anderson was on his staff and which the latter had occupied for several years. A short time later he built the Anderson mansion at Fifth and Welsh Sts., which soon became a social center for Chester and Delaware Counties.

His political importance increased when on Aug. 29, 1807, he headed the movement from Delaware County throughout the state to allow districts unrepresented in the legislative caucus to elect delegates having a right to vote therein. Following this political activity he was elected to various local positions and in 1808 to the national House of Representatives, serving in the Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, and Fifteenth Congresses. His name is associated with no prominent legislation at this time, although the marriage of his daughter Evelina to Commodore David Porter may have aroused the interest in naval affairs shown by his speech of Jan. 25, 1810, upon the Navigation Act. Throughout the War of 1812 he was a Jeffersonian, but his advocacy of Pennsylvania's interests and his friendship for the navy injured his popularity with the Southern wing of his party. His disregard for petty enmities caused disfavor at home but increased his capacity for service at Washington, where strict party lines were being replaced by sectional

groupings. He failed of reëlection in 1818, and his later political positions came by appointment. During the Marquis de Lafayette's visit to America in 1824, Anderson, on behalf of various local committees, welcomed him to Pennsylvania, and to Delaware County. He was selected as judge of the Delaware County court in Pennsylvania, Jan. 5, 1826. Upon his resignation of this position in 1829, he was appointed United States Collector of Customs at Chester, where he died a few months later at the age of sixty-seven. The exact date of his death was probably Dec. 15, 1829, although it is also given as Dec. 13, 14, and 16. He was married to Elizabeth Dixon of Virginia, by whom he had two daughters and one son.

[*Annals of Cong.*, vols. XI, XII, XIII, and XV, esp. XI and XIII (1853–55); H. G. Ashmead, *Hist. of Delaware County, Pa.* (1884); J. S. Futhey and Gilbert Cope, *Hist. of Chester County, Pa.* (1881); *Pa. Archives*, ser. V, vols. V and VII; *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, vols. XIII, XXXI, XXXII, and XXXVIII; Pa. contemporary press, esp. the *Aurora*, Sept. 4, 23, 1807, and the *Norristown Herald and Free Press*, Jan. 5, 1830; W. G. Stanard, *Colonial Va. Reg.* (1902); *Heads of Families in Va. 1782, according to Census of 1790* (1908).]

C. H. L—n.

ANDRÉ, LOUIS (May 28, 1631 or 1623–Sept. 19, 1715), Jesuit missionary, Indian linguist, arrived in Canada on June 7, 1669, after having served for nineteen years as a teacher in southern France, where he was born at St. Remy, on the Rhone. His appointment to New France gratified his desire to carry the gospel message to the Indians. Almost at once he was sent to the Northwest, where, on June 14, 1671, he assisted at the ceremony of taking possession of the western country for Louis XIV (*Wisconsin Historical Collections*, 1888, XI, 26–29). André's first mission was to the wandering tribes of Lake Huron; the following year he came to Wisconsin and with Allouez built at the modern De Pere the mission of St. François Xavier. He was assigned to duty among the tribes about Green Bay, and for several years spent all his time preaching and singing in the villages of the Menominee, Potawatomi, Winnebago, and other tribesmen. He carried with him a flute, and taught the Indian children to sing Christian songs to its accompaniment. More than once his cabin was burned in severe winter weather by hostile Indians; he suffered also greatly from gout and was obliged to secure a dog team to draw him over the icy swamps. "Such crosses," he wrote, "are the delight of missionaries." He made use of religious pictures to impress his neophytes, and was more successful with women and children than with chiefs and warriors. With the latter he had many disputes concerning the nature of the devil, and endeavored to substitute the crucifix for their idolatrous emblems. In all he baptized about 500, mostly children, during his ten years of ministration around Green Bay. His letters are those of a garrulous, cheerful, intrepid, and tireless enthusiast, willing to dare and suffer for his beliefs (Thwaites, *Jesuit Relations*, LVI, 129–39; LVII, 265–301; LVIII, 273–89; LX, 201–5).

After one year (1682–83) at Mackinac, André was recalled to Quebec, where he taught in the Jesuit College for several years. He was later (1691–92) a missionary on the lower St. Lawrence above Tadousac, and in 1695 at Seven Islands in the lower river. During all the period after his return from the West he was occupied with linguistic labors and left three manuscripts: "Preceptes, Phrases et Mots de la Langue Algonquine Outaouise pour un Missionaire Nouveau"; "Dictionaire Algonquin"; "Homilies in the Montagnais Language." A small catechism in the native tongue was printed in 1693. He never returned to France, but died at Quebec.

[The best biog. is by Father Arthur Jones in *U. S. Cath. Hist. Mag.* (1890), pp. 26–40. This is abbreviated in James C. Pilling, *Bibliography of Algonquian Languages* (1891), pp. 12–16, with an account of André's linguistic MSS. A brief sketch is in R. G. Thwaites, *Jesuit Relations and Allied Docs.* (1895–1901), LVII, 318; in the same volume is a facsimile of André's Ottawa writings. Brief mention of his work appears in L. P. Kellogg, *French Régime in Wis. and the Northwest* (1925), pp. 162–65, 169–70.]

L. P. K.

ANDREIS, ANDREW JAMES FELIX BARTHOLOMEW DE (Dec. 12, 1778–Oct. 15, 1820), pioneer priest, was the oldest son of Maurice De Andreis, a registrar of deeds in the town of Demonte, near Cuneo in Piedmont. That at the end of his college course, taken partly at home and partly at Cuneo, he, who was endowed intellectually far above the average, sought admittance into a religious congregation devoted to the work of country missions and the training of the clergy, is an early evidence of the desire for obscurity which was one of the outstanding traits of his character. He began his term of novitiate at Mondovi on Nov. 1, 1797, was ordained priest in December 1801, and, after brilliantly completing his theological studies in Alberoni College in the summer of 1802, was appointed professor in that institution. But his state of health necessitating a change to a milder climate, he was, in February 1806, transferred to Monte Citorio, the central house of the congregation in Rome. Here, in addition to his duties as professor of dogmatic theology to his young confrères and to the students of the College of the Propaganda, he conducted missions in the little towns of the neighboring dioceses and to the herdsmen of the Roman Campagna. His reputation as a scholar and a preacher soon reached higher authorities. Pope

Pius VII was quoted as saying, "Keep an eye on this young man: for the likes of him are those who ought to be promoted to bishoprics." This remark alarmed De Andreis and no doubt fanned to new flame the embers never grown cold of former yearnings for the foreign missions. Only in 1815 were his hopes to be fulfilled. In the first days of September the administrator-apostolic of the diocese of Louisiana, the Very Rev. Louis William Valentin Du Bourg arrived in Rome. Happening to hear Father De Andreis address a gathering of men, he sought an interview which ended to the satisfaction of both; De Andreis agreed to follow the American prelate, if his superiors consented. The latter, however, tenaciously resisted Du Bourg's entreaties, until the Pope, to whom the prelate appealed, positively declared it his will that the missionary should go to Louisiana.

On Dec. 15, with three companions, he started by stage for Bordeaux, which he reached, after a fatiguing journey over the Alps, on Jan. 30, 1816. After a long delay, on June 12 the whole company, composed of thirteen persons, boarded the *Ranger,* bound for Baltimore, where she arrived on July 26. Seven weeks the missionaries waited at St. Mary's Seminary; finally, on Sept. 10, they set out by stage on the trying journey to Pittsburgh, whence a flatboat took them to Louisville. At Bishop Flaget's suggestion, they determined to wait at St. Thomas's Seminary, Bardstown, Ky., until Du Bourg's arrival. There for nearly a year De Andreis found congenial employment in teaching theology, meantime pursuing the study of English and doing mission work among the neighboring Catholic congregations. On receiving intelligence of Du Bourg's landing at Annapolis with a numerous company, Flaget and De Andreis set out for Upper Louisiana. De Andreis was left in charge of the parish of St. Genevieve, Mo. Du Bourg arrived at St. Genevieve on Dec. 30, 1817, and, accompanied by De Andreis, whom he had appointed his vicar-general before sailing for France, made, on Jan. 5, 1818, his entry into St. Louis.

De Andreis became the rector of the cathedral, at the same time taking care of the theological training of the clerics who taught in the college established by Bishop Du Bourg, and for a while directing the novitiate of the Congregation inaugurated at the episcopal residence. For nearly three years, despite his very precarious health, he labored untiringly, ever hoping for the day when he could bring the gospel to the Indians of Missouri, whose language meanwhile he learned; until, on Oct. 15, 1820, he died of "putrid bilious" (probably typhoid) fever. Short as had been his sojourn in Missouri, his virtues left there an impression which, as it seemed confirmed by remarkable signs, led the ecclesiastical authorities to take steps toward the public recognition of his holiness which have been sanctioned by Rome, Pope Benedict XV issuing (June 25, 1918) a decree formally introducing his Cause of Beatification.

[The many MSS. left by De Andreis are the main source of information for his life. They consist of letters to his family, his superiors, or members of his Congregation; private notes chiefly of a spiritual nature; a collection of intimate reflections written in America under the title: "Ad quid venisti et cur Europam reliquisti?" and a large MS. of Sermons. These must be supplemented by the letters (for the most part unpublished) of Bishops Du Bourg and Rosati. His biog., written in French mainly from personal recollections by Bishop Rosati, his pupil, friend, and companion to America, was completed and rendered into Italian by G. B. Semeria, but never published until Rev. Francis Burlando, C.M., translated it into Eng. under the title, *Life of the Very Rev. Felix De Andreis, C.M.* (1861). By far the best and most complete work is that compiled by Very Rev. Raffaele Ricciardelli, C.M., *Vita del Servo di Dio Felice De Andreis* (Rome, 1923).]

C.L.S.

ANDREW, JAMES OSGOOD (May 3, 1794–Mar. 2, 1871), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, was born in Wilkes County, Ga. His father, the Rev. John Andrew, was the first native Georgian that ever entered the itinerant ministry of the Methodist Church (1789); but after only three years in the traveling connection he located and became a country school-teacher. His wife, whose maiden name was Mary Cosby, is described as a woman of many domestic virtues, of more than ordinarily strong intellect, fine taste, and deep piety. Their son's educational opportunities were limited to what he could get in country schools and from reading such books as a home of severe poverty made possible. He was converted and joined the church when he was fifteen years of age. Taking up the duties of an assistant "class-leader" soon after, he exhibited, in spite of his youth, such gifts of religious leadership as indicated his fitness for the ministry. With considerable hesitation he took out a license to preach when he was eighteen; during the ensuing months he preached often to negroes, and in the latter part of the same year applied for and obtained admission on trial to the South Carolina Annual Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church. During his first twenty years in the ministry he served various charges in Georgia and the Carolinas, from the humblest country circuit to the largest city stations. He proved himself efficient both in pulpit and pastoral work and in leadership, so that when the General Conference met in Philadelphia in 1832 and decided to elect two bishops, he was speedily chosen as the first of the two.

It is not often that marriage so seriously af-

fects a man's public career as it did Bishop Andrew's. He was married three times: first, in 1816, to Ann Amelia McFarlane, who was the mother of three daughters and one son, and died in 1842; second, in 1844, to Mrs. Leonora Greenwood, who died in 1854; third, to Mrs. Emily Sims Childers. Through marriage he became a slaveholder. His first wife inherited from her mother a negro boy, who on the death of this wife became the property of the bishop. He at once declared that although the laws of Georgia did not permit owners to free their slaves if they remained in the state, the boy was at liberty to leave the state and locate elsewhere as soon as he chose to do so under conditions which would guarantee that he would be well taken care of. But the bishop became further, and more seriously, involved when he married his second wife, a cultured and estimable woman, who was the owner of slaves inherited from her former husband. Immediately following this marriage he executed legal papers renouncing for himself all personal property rights in the ownership and control of these slaves. But when the General Conference met in New York, in May 1844, so intense was the feeling of the Northern delegates against a bishop's owning slaves, or being the husband of a wife who owned them, that after several days of strenuous debate in the Conference, a resolution was passed by a vote of 110 to 68 to the effect that Andrew should desist from the exercise of his episcopal office until his connection with the ownership of slaves should cease.

From the beginning of the controversy he had expressed a perfect willingness to resign his episcopal office, but the entire body of Southern delegates were a unit in their insistence that he should not do so, declaring in justification of their position that such a surrender to Northern anti-slavery opinion would be disastrous to the church in the South, where a large proportion of the influential ministers and members of all religious denominations were themselves slaveholders. It was in every way desirable, they contended, that the church through its ministry should have free access both to slave-owners and their slaves; this access, it was declared, would be denied to them, or greatly limited, by the owners of the slaves throughout the South if Bishop Andrew should be forced to resign his office under the pressure of Northern abolition and anti-slavery sentiment. The Southern delegates in the main, as their speeches indicated, agreed fully with the delegates from the North in regarding slavery as a social and moral evil that should be abolished, but they took the position that slavery in the Southern section of the Union was not only a moral and religious, but also a political, social, and economic question. An evil of this nature, they held, could be best dealt with by helping to create and develop public sentiment until the growing opposition to slavery would find expression in a nation-wide demand for emancipation. But until that time should come, the Southern leaders contended, the church should adapt itself in the South to existing conditions, and go on with its work in the slaveholding states, preaching alike to slave-owners and their slaves after the manner suggested by Saint Paul in his Epistle to Philemon. In holding these views Bishop Andrew and other Southern leaders in the General Conference were true representatives and exponents of the attitude and sentiment that prevailed among religious people generally in the Southern states.

The result was that a "Plan of Separation" and division of the Church was drawn up and passed by the General Conference, looking to the organization of all the Annual Conferences in the slaveholding states into an independent and self-governing Southern church as soon as it should be determined that this was the desire of the ministers and members of the Methodist Episcopal Church residing in these states. In keeping with this "Plan" representatives from all the Southern Annual Conferences met in a convention in Louisville, Ky., in May 1845, and formed an organization under the name of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. This convention was presided over in turn by Bishop Joshua Soule and by Bishop Andrew. The first session of the General Conference of the newly organized Methodist Episcopal Church, South, was held (obedient to the action of the Louisville Convention) at Petersburg, Va., in May 1846; when the episcopal credentials of Joshua Soule and James Andrew were duly recognized, and they thus became the first bishops of the Southern Church. Bishop Andrew continued in the active exercise of his office until the meeting of the first General Conference held after the close of the Civil War, in New Orleans in May 1866, when he requested and was granted a superannuated relation, and retired from active work. On a visit to New Orleans in the early spring of 1871 he was prostrated by a sudden attack and died after being removed to the home of his daughter, the wife of the Rev. J. W. Rush, in Mobile, Ala. Bishop Andrew was a frequent contributor to the religious weekly papers of the Church. He published an excellent treatise on *Family Government* (1847). His volume of *Miscellanies* (1855) contains his "Letters of Travel," extending over many years, several

addresses on missions, and various other papers, including an extended biographical sketch of his first wife.

[In addition to the condensed but informing sketches found in Matthew Simpson, *Cyc. of Methodism* (1878) and in McClintock and Strong, *Biblical, Theological and Ecclesiastical Cyc.* (1885–87), particular mention should be made of the "Memoir," found in *Gen. Minutes Ann. Conferences M. E. Ch. South*, 1874, pp. 643–44; *Jour. Seventh Gen. Conference M. E. Ch. South*, 1874, p. 576; G. G. Smith, *Life and Letters of Bishop Jas. Osgood Andrew* (1883); Gross Alexander, *Hist. of the M. E. Ch. South* (1894); J. N. Norwood, "The Schism in the M. E. Church, 1844: A Study of Slavery and Ecclesiastical Politics," *Alfred Univ. Studies*, vol. I, 1923.]

W.F.T.

ANDREW, JOHN ALBION (May 31, 1818–Oct. 30, 1867), governor of Massachusetts, was born at Windham, Me., of Massachusetts stock, his earliest ancestor of whom we have record, Robert Andrew, having come as it appears from England, settled in what is now Boxford, and died there a prosperous landowner in 1668. Robert's son, Joseph, moved to Salem, where the main stem of the Andrews continued to live. Jonathan Andrew, the father of the future governor, moved to Windham, Me., in 1807, established a general store, married Nancy Green Pierce, prospered, and became the leading man of the village. On John Andrew's education unusual pains were lavished. His mother, a woman of attainments and force of character, had been a school-teacher and for a time taught the boy herself. Later, when the family was larger, finding the district school inadequate, the parents built a tiny school-house near their own door and here John, his brother, and two sisters were carefully grounded in the rudiments. The next stage, following the custom of the time, was the local academy and in due course the boy attended for a brief time the academies at Portland, North Yarmouth, and Bridgton. Late in 1831, when he was in his fourteenth year, the serious illness of his mother, to whom he was much attached, called him home and he remained there until her death in the early spring of 1832. Soon afterward he returned to his studies, this time at Gorham Academy, where he prepared for college, entering Bowdoin in 1833. As a student he ranked among the lowest in his class. He spent more time in social fellowship than in study and graduated with more competency in argument and public speaking than in any other field. As a boy he had been stirred by the Anti-Slavery movement; he had now become a determined foe of slavery and his conviction on this issue was to shape his political course.

He was not yet twenty when he arrived in Boston in 1837, and entered the law office of Fuller & Washburn as a student, and he was still very youthful in appearance in 1840 when he was admitted to the bar. His progress in the profession was gradual, partly because he was of a slow-maturing type, partly because of his incurably sociable temperament which was always leading him away from the paths of legal preferment. He was active in the Unitarian Church and assistant editor of the church paper, secretary for many years of the Boston Port Society, and one of the most devoted visitors to the prisons, where he was to be found every Sunday afternoon and whence he derived more law cases than fees. It was said of him at this period, "No one who had a 'hard case,' with no money to pay for legal assistance, was ever turned away from his office for that reason; and no one however guilty was denied whatever assistance his case was fairly entitled to receive" (Chandler, p. 79). His father, with his younger son and two daughters, had removed from Maine to Massachusetts and settled at Boxford not far from Boston so as to be near the elder son. There the family hearth continued and the family life was maintained, Andrew returning constantly to recount his experiences in the city and to renew his strength in the atmosphere of love and admiration. So a decade passed while he established relations, made friends, set the foundations for the career which lay hidden before him. In 1847 he became engaged to Eliza Jones Hersey and in 1848 was married.

During all this time, Andrew's interest in the Anti-Slavery movement never wavered. His association with the members of James Freeman Clarke's church and other reforming and aspiring groups had deepened the religious and humanitarian side of his nature. When the slavery question again became a burning issue he took a leading part in its discussion. Though he rejected the extreme positions of Garrison and Wendell Phillips, he maintained the firm and uncompromising opposition to slavery which represented the best spirit of Massachusetts. He took part with Bowditch, Howe, Sumner, Theodore Parker, Charles Francis Adams, and others in the fugitive slave case of the brig *Ottoman* in the summer of 1846 and read the resolutions at the Faneuil Hall meeting where John Quincy Adams, then in his eightieth year, presided. From this time on he was drawn into closer relations with Sumner and Howe and the Young Whigs. Politics, which had always fascinated him, now took a larger part of his thought. The campaign of 1848 stirred him deeply. He was one of the organizers of the Free-Soil party with its platform "Free Soil, Free Speech, Free Labor, and Free Men," and he gave himself whole-heartedly to the campaign. With the Know-Nothing movement which swept over Massachusetts four years

later he had little in common, and it was not until the Republican party appeared that he was again able to engage with full conviction. In 1857 he was nominated and elected on the Banks or Republican ticket to the legislature. There in the session of 1858 he won distinction by a speech so brilliant and effective that it made him at once one of the leaders of the party. Though he declined reëlection his place was established and his popularity grew.

John Brown's raid, his capture, trial, and death had an effect that could not have been predicted upon Andrew's career. When the raid failed and Brown was made prisoner, Andrew took a leading part in raising funds for his defense. When sentence had been pronounced, he took part in a public meeting to raise funds for Brown's family and on that occasion used the words, "John Brown himself is right," which aroused a storm of enthusiasm among anti-slavery men everywhere. When at the instance of the Southern senators a committee was set up to investigate the raid, Andrew was cited to appear and testify. His bearing and testimony before the committee, which had the widest publicity, gave lively satisfaction to anti-slavery men, especially to Massachusetts anti-slavery men. The episode made him more popular than before and in consequence he was almost unanimously chosen delegate to the Republican National Convention at Chicago and made chairman of the delegation. He shared in the nomination of Lincoln, went to Springfield to see him, and brought back a lofty but just opinion of the great leader. One honor led to another. It had long been growing evident that Andrew was one to whom his fellow citizens were well disposed. In the month of July, 1860, a well-informed observer described him as "the most popular man in Massachusetts." In the following month occasion offered a proof. Gov. Banks, whose renomination was taken for granted, suddenly declined, five days before the nominating convention. The "machine" had settled upon Henry L. Dawes, a Conservative. But no sooner was it known that Andrew's nomination was a possibility than a legion of friends hastened to his support and he was nominated on the first ballot by a great majority. By an even greater majority—in fact the greatest popular majority in the history of the state up to that time—he was elected governor on the same ticket on which Lincoln became President.

Andrew was now at his utmost vigor of mind and body. Forty-two years of age, strong and sturdy of build, full of energy, capable of great effort and equal to unusual strains of endurance, he was ready for the great labors before him.

Andrew

The crisis was swift in appearance. He had not written his inaugural address before warnings reached him from Adams and Sumner that the government at Washington was in danger. He at once took steps to put the state militia in a position of readiness. Other warnings followed and within a month he had obtained from the legislature an emergency fund of $100,000, with which to arm, equip, and transport the militia if needed for the defense of Washington. Then came the firing on Fort Sumter and Lincoln's call for troops. Andrew so labored that the Massachusetts regiments were ready and went forward before those of any other state. The 6th Massachusetts was the only armed regiment to reach Washington on that critical 19th of April before the city was cut off from the North—as it remained for nearly a week. As the war went on, the Governor came to be more and more the embodiment of the patriotic spirit of the State. His short, rotund, figure, once ridiculed, became beloved. The upper circles of society found him an agreeable guest. The chorus, still remembered in Massachusetts, made to rally the pro-slavery mobs

"Tell John Andrew
Tell John Andrew
Tell John Andrew
John Brown's dead"

would now have brought him votes in any town in the state. There was no longer any question about his reëlection. The state felt that he was enlisted for the war.

In 1862, when the first fine enthusiasm was over, when the tale of deaths and wounds, losses and defeats chilled the spirits and the delay of emancipation discouraged the most ardent, the governors of several northern states united in what has been called the Altoona Conference to urge upon the President the emancipation of the negroes and a more vigorous prosecution of the war. Andrew was a member of the Conference. By a singular coincidence President Lincoln issued his Emancipation Proclamation the day before the Conference met, but the governors went on to Washington, conferred with the President, and doubtless contributed something to that increased vigor which became apparent from then on. With emancipation secured there was one other thing that Andrew had at heart. This was to give the negro the full standing of a man by making him a soldier and admitting him to the army. He urged that the negroes be organized into separate corps and regiments. Nothing that he ever undertook appealed to him more powerfully and when he finally had the consent of the War Department and got his first negro regiment, the 54th, organized he felt it a great achieve-

ment. "I stand or fall," he declared, "as a man and a magistrate, with the rise and fall in history of the 54th Massachusetts Regiment." It was a great venture for, without some such test, one may doubt whether the negro would have achieved his citizenship in the United States.

At the election of 1864 Andrew was reëlected governor. The end of the war was now in sight. Andrew, absorbed with the problems which would come with peace, labored to establish the negro in his rights and to provide for coöperation between the North and the South. In his farewell message delivered in January 1866, he advocated a lenient and friendly policy toward the Southern states and reconstruction without retribution. When he retired from office, at the close of 1866, it became apparent that the war had worn him out. His friends had already noted that he had overdrawn his physical resources, and he had been warned to husband his strength. Through the greater part of 1867 he continued, however, to take an active interest in public affairs; he worked for reform in the usury laws and in the divorce law, and took a prominent position in opposing the principle of total prohibition. He resisted several minor attacks of ill health and worked on at his legal business, but finally, on October 29, he was stricken with apoplexy and died on the following day amid the general grief of the city.

[Henry Greenleaf Pearson, *The Life of John A. Andrew* (1904); Peleg W. Chandler, *Memoir of Gov. Andrew* (1880); Albert Gallatin Browne, *Sketch of the Official Life of John A. Andrew* (1868); *A Memorial Volume Containing the Exercises of the Dedication of the Statue of John A. Andrew* (1878); Elias Nason, *Discourse on the Life and Character of the Hon. John Albion Andrew* (1868); Samuel Burnham, "Hon. John Albion Andrew" in *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1869; Moorfield Storey, *Life of Charles Sumner* (1900), pp. 52, 192, 209, 271, 295.] W. B. P.

ANDREW, SAMUEL (Jan. 29, 1656–Jan. 24, 1738), Congregational clergyman, one of the founders of Yale College, and from 1707 to 1719 its acting rector, was born in Cambridge, Mass., the son of Samuel and Elizabeth (White) Andrew. He graduated from Harvard in 1675, and later was for some years connected with that college as tutor or fellow. The General Court of Massachusetts, May 24, 1682, ordered that fifty pounds be paid to him and John Cotton for their pains and diligence in carrying on the president's work after the death of Mr. Oakes. On Nov. 18, 1685, he was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in Milford, Conn. The town made him a grant of land, and his salary was £100 a year, paid in provisions, with twelve pounds for firewood. In 1710 it was raised to £150. In Milford, he married Abigail, daughter of Robert Treat [*q.v.*], from 1689 to 1698 governor of Connecticut. She died Dec. 25, 1727, and a tombstone in the Milford cemetery shows that he married a second Abigail, whose last name is not given.

During his fifty-three years' pastorate at Milford he became one of the most prominent and influential ministers in the Connecticut colony. Preëminently a scholar, he seldom went out of his study, leaving all pastoral work to his deacons. He was noted for singular acuteness of mind, and his counsel was highly valued. He was one of the twelve ministers who, with four laymen, constituted the Saybrook Synod, which met Sept. 9, 1708, and formulated the famous Saybrook Platform. According to President Thomas Clap, "The Design of founding a College in the Colony of Connecticut was first concerted by the Ministers; among which the Rev. Mr. Pierpont of New Haven, Mr. Andrew of Milford, and Mr. Russel of Branford were the most forward and active" (*The Annals or History of Yale College*, 1766, p. 2). He was one of the ministers who met in Russel's parsonage at Branford about the 1st of October, 1701, and founded the college by promising, according to tradition, to give to it a number of books; and was one of its charter trustees. Upon the death of its first rector, Abraham Pierson, in 1707, he was made rector *pro tempore* and continued to act in that capacity until his son-in-law, Timothy Cutler, was elected rector twelve years later. The site of the college had not been finally determined, and Andrew taught the senior class in the parsonage at Milford and supervised the instruction of the other classes, which was carried on by tutors at Saybrook. He was a good teacher, but was somewhat lacking in energy and administrative ability, and displayed little leadership. He served as rector, against his inclination, in order to save the college from being abandoned as a result of controversy among the trustees. The Yale University library contains two manuscripts by him: one a letter to Tutor Samuel Johnson, dated July 23, 1717, printed in F. B. Dexter's *Documentary History of Yale University* (1916), and the other a small volume of his sermons preached in Milford, 1691–92, written in shorthand which has not been deciphered.

[The *Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass. to 1850* (1914), give the date of Andrew's birth as Jan. 29, 1655, in accordance, no doubt, with the old legal and ecclesiastical calendar. In addition to references above, see Ebenezer Baldwin, *Annals of Yale Coll. . . . from its Foundation to the Year 1831* (1831); J. L. Kingsley, "A Sketch of the Hist. of Yale Coll.," *Am. Quart. Reg.*, VIII, 1835–36; E. R. Lambert, *Hist. of the Colony of New Haven* (1838); T. D. Woolsey, *An Hist. Discourse* (1850); John L. Sibley, *Biog. Sketches of Grads. of Harvard Univ.*, II (1881); *Proc. at the Celebration of the 250th Anniv. of the First Ch. of Christ in Milford* (1890); John H. Treat, *The Treat Family* (1893); Edwin Oviatt, *The Beginnings of Yale* (1916).] H. E. S.

ANDREWS, ALEXANDER BOYD (July 23, 1841–Apr. 17, 1915), railroad promoter, was conspicuous among the men who built up the South in the half-century following the Civil War. For more than a generation he was one of its leading figures in railroad development. Born near Franklinton, N. C., he was the son of William J. Andrews, fourth in line from William Andrews who came to North Carolina from Virginia in 1749, and Virginia (Hawkins) Andrews, a descendant of the Hawkins family famous in Elizabethan England. At seventeen he finished his education at the Henderson Male Academy and immediately took up work in transportation, an uncle giving him a responsible position in the building of a South Carolina railroad. Then came the war, and young Andrews enlisted in the 1st North Carolina Cavalry. He served under the dashing commands of J. E. B. Stuart and Wade Hampton. In 1862 he was made captain. But active service ended in September 1863, when he was almost mortally wounded in an action at Jack's Shop, Va. At the close of the war, penniless and with shattered health, he took up courageously the task of earning a livelihood. Observing that the railroad bridge across the Roanoke River had been destroyed, he entered into a contract to ferry over passengers and freight. His long career as an operator and builder of railroads began two years later. In 1867 he accepted an offer of the position of superintendent of the Raleigh & Gaston Railroad, and a year later he also became superintendent of the Chatham Railroad. His capacity in directing these roads and building extensions was recognized by the Richmond & Danville Railroad Company, and when that expanding system leased the North Carolina Railroad, running between Charlotte and Goldsboro, he was made superintendent of that line. Under the Richmond & Danville his responsibilities steadily increased. While still holding his original position he became successively assistant to the president of the system, third vice-president, and second vice-president. During these years he was also busy with the building of many short lines, controlled by the Richmond & Danville, and was president of many of them. His most noted single achievement was probably the building of an extension of the Western North Carolina Railroad almost to the western state line, opening up the mountainous western section. Against immense physical, financial, and political handicaps he fulfilled a pledge he had made to complete the line if the state should furnish certain convict labor and carry out other promises. When the Richmond & Danville was merged in the Southern Railway in 1894 Andrews became first vice-president of the latter company and held that position until his death. Multifarious as they were, his railroad duties did not engross all his attention. He was interested in other business enterprises and held several official positions, among them that of state commissioner to the Chicago World's Fair. He married, in 1869, Julia Johnston, daughter of Col. William Johnston of Charlotte. His portrait shows him to have been a man of large build, with full face and heavy mustache.

[S. A. Ashe, Sketch in *Biog. Hist. of N. C.* (1905), I, portr.; *Hist. of N. C.* (1919), V; *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), IV, 359; *Cyc. Eminent Men of the Carolinas* (1892), II; *News and Observer* (Raleigh), Apr. 18, 1915.]

O. W.

ANDREWS, CHARLES (May 27, 1827–Oct. 22, 1918), jurist, was born at New York Mills, Whitestown, Oneida County, N. Y., the sixth child of John and Polly (Walker) Andrews. After attending public school and Cazenovia Seminary he studied law at Syracuse, where, on being admitted to the bar in January 1849, he commenced practise. His ability was early recognized and in 1853 he was elected district attorney of Onondaga County, holding the position for three years. He was mayor of Syracuse in 1861, 1862, and 1868. As delegate-at-large to the constitutional convention at Albany, June 4, 1867, he assisted in framing the "judicial article" which reconstituted the court of appeals and was subsequently adopted. He was elected associate judge of the New York court of appeals, May 17, 1870, being appointed chief justice, Nov. 19, 1881. In 1882, as Republican nominee for this position, he suffered defeat in the wave which swept Grover Cleveland and the whole Democratic ticket into office; but on the expiration of his term as associate justice in 1884 he was reëlected on the nomination of both parties. In November 1892, again on a joint nomination, he was elected chief justice. He retired, Dec. 31, 1897, having reached the age limit of seventy years. Admirably equipped for the appellate court, he had become an outstanding figure in the judicial life of the state. To an independent yet tolerant mind was added a thorough knowledge of the principles of equity. Having maintained a close connection with Syracuse throughout his career, he spent his long years of retirement there, dying Oct. 22, 1918, in his ninety-second year. "Judge Andrews was a great judge and a great citizen. . . . He was loved and honored not only by his associates on the bench but by all the people whom he had served so well and he was hailed by them as the First Citizen of Syracuse." (Franklin W. Chase, *Syracuse and its Environs*, II, 52). Travel, fishing, and riding had been his main forms of relaxation, and

advancing age did not altogether debar him from the open-air life. Indeed, it is said that when he was ninety years old Mrs. Andrews made him a present of a horse! He had married, May 17, 1855, Marcia, daughter of Judge Shackland, and one of his sons, William Shackland Andrews, became judge of the New York supreme court.

[Alfred Andrews, *Geneal. Hist. of John and Mary Andrews* (1872); Franklin W. Chase, *Syracuse and Its Environs* (1924); D. H. Bruce, *Memorial Hist. of Syracuse* (1891); Charles Z. Lincoln, *Constitutional Hist. of N.Y.* (1906), vol II.] H.W.H.K.

ANDREWS, CHARLES BARTLETT (Nov. 4, 1836–Sept. 12, 1902), jurist, was the son of Almira (Bartlett) Andrews and Rev. Erastus Andrews, pastor of a church in North Sunderland, Mass., and a descendant of William Andrews, one of the earliest settlers of Hartford, Conn. He prepared for college at Franklin Academy, Shelburne Falls, Mass., and taught while studying. He was graduated from Amherst College in 1858, studied law while teaching school in Sherman, Conn., and was admitted to the bar in Fairfield County. He began practise in Kent, Conn. John H. Hubbard, a leader of the bar in Litchfield, was elected to Congress in 1863 and invited the young attorney in Kent to be associated with him in Litchfield and to take charge of his large practise while he was in Washington. Andrews proved deserving of the faith placed in him, advanced rapidly, and himself became a leader of the bar of the county. The April following his removal to Litchfield he argued six cases before the state supreme court. One of these was the famous case of Webster *vs.* Harwinton (32 *Conn.* 131). During the Civil War the town of Harwinton had voted to pay a certain sum to each man drafted from the town. A taxpayer petitioned for an injunction, claiming that the town did not have the power to make such an appropriation. Andrews, arguing for the defendant, claimed that under our government ultimate sovereignty is in the people and that the towns as the simplest organizations had all powers except those which had been expressly granted away. He was defeated but gained a wide reputation because of his remarkably learned and powerful argument. When he had been in Litchfield about five years he was elected to the state Senate and later to the state House of Representatives; in each body he served on its judiciary committee. He was governor of Connecticut from 1879 to 1881. In the latter year he was appointed a judge of the superior court by Gov. Bigelow. Some of the most important cases in the history of the state came before the court while he was a judge. His opinion in the case of State *ex rel.* Morris *vs.* Bulkley (61 *Conn.* 287) is well known. Luzon B. Morris [*q.v.*] had received a majority of twenty-six votes over all other candidates in the election for governor in 1890. On several past occasions a Democratic candidate had received more votes than any other candidate but not a majority over all, and the Republicans in the General Assembly had exercised the constitutional privilege of electing a governor. In 1891 the Senate was controlled by the Democrats and the House by the Republicans, and questions arose over certain votes which had been rejected. A deadlock ensued. Finally, the state's attorney brought an action of *quo warranto* on behalf of Morris against Morgan G. Bulkley [*q.v.*], the Republican governor, who was holding over. Andrews in his opinion stated that a declaration by the General Assembly is the only authentic evidence of the result of the election, and as there was no such declaration in this case, Morris was not governor. He also indicated that the General Assembly had power to go back of the returns and pass upon the validity of the ballots cast. Andrews's last public service was as chairman of the constitutional convention of 1902, to which he was unanimously elected by the people of Litchfield. He was a man of tireless industry, remarkable energy, and extensive knowledge of men as well as books; personally he was genial, a good conversationalist and storyteller. He was twice married: in 1866 to Mary J. Carter of Kent, Conn., who died the following year; and in 1870 to Mrs. Sarah (Wilson) Osborn of Bethlehem, Conn.

[Geo. M. Woodruff, obituary in 75 *Conn.* 729; F. C. Norton, *Governors of Conn.* (1905), p. 301; *Biog. Rec. Alumni of Amherst Coll., 1821–71* (1883), p. 322; N. G. Osborn, *Hist. of Conn. in Monographic Form* (1925), III, 239; D. C. Kilbourn, *Bench and Bar of Litchfield County, Conn.* (1909); *Cat. of the Officers and Grads. of Yale, 1701–1924*, ser. 21, no. 5 (1924).] M.E.M.

ANDREWS, CHAUNCEY HUMMASON (Dec. 2, 1823–Dec. 25, 1893), mine operator, railroad builder, manufacturer, was born in Vienna, Trumbull County, Ohio, the son of Norman Andrews, a native of Connecticut, and of Julia (Hummason) Andrews. Since the schooling provided at that time for the children of New England families settling in Ohio attempted little beyond "the three R's," young Andrews had to content himself with a rudimentary education. In his twenties he explored the coal deposits of the Mahoning Valley, finding much bituminous coal of comparatively low grade. These deposits had not been worked, and needed only improved railroad connection to become profitable. In 1857 Andrews opened a mine which in nine years produced 500,000 tons of coal. He formed a partnership with William J. Hitchcock and opened other

mines in the '60's, which were worked at a profit for some years but finally were exhausted. Because of his mining operations Andrews became a railroad builder and did much to develop the transportation facilities of the Mahoning Valley. In 1871 he helped to project and build the Mahoning Coal Railroad, which gave an outlet to Lake Erie, and in 1876 he was one of the promoters and organizers of the Pittsburgh & Lake Erie. Other lines that he helped to develop were the Pittsburgh, Youngstown & Chicago, and the Pittsburgh, Chicago & Toledo, which were later absorbed into trunk systems. He was also president of the Wood Mower & Reaper Manufacturing Company at Youngstown. Foreseeing the decline of the coal industry in that part of eastern Ohio, Andrews and his partner extended their operations to Pennsylvania, opening mines in Mercer County and establishing furnaces and rolling-mills. In 1879 they organized the Imperial Coal Company, which soon attained importance in western Pennsylvania, owning 3,000 acres of coal-bearing land and mining 1,000 tons a day. Andrews was an alert, aggressive pioneer industrialist. Having adopted a plan of campaign, he would leave no stone unturned to secure its success. Those who thought to contest with him a right-of-way for one of his railroad lines were always caught napping. The rails were laid as he wished them to be and they were not removed. Firm decisions, with abounding energy to enforce them, marked his career as an executive. He must also be credited with keen foresight. The city of Youngstown, which was a place of minor importance in 1842, when Andrews and his father became residents of it, grew within his lifetime into a railroad and industrial center for northeastern Ohio, largely because of enterprises that he had initiated or brought to fruition. Within thirty years after his death Youngstown had become a city of 150,000 inhabitants, with huge investments in the steel industry and other manufactures. He interested himself in Republican politics, national and local, and held for a time a controlling interest in one of the Youngstown newspapers. He was a delegate to the National Republican Convention of 1884. On July 1, 1857, he married Louisa Baldwin.

[*Youngstown Telegram*, Dec. 26, 1893; Jos. G. Butler, Jr., *Hist. of Youngstown and the Mahoning Valley, Ohio* (1921), III, 529; *Cleveland Plain Dealer*, Dec. 26, 1893; Alfred Andrews, *Geneal. Hist. of John and Mary Andrews Who Settled in Farmington, Conn., 1640* (1872).]

W. B. S.

ANDREWS, CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS (Oct. 27, 1829–Sept. 21, 1922), lawyer, author, was descended through Ammi Andrews, one of Arnold's lieutenants in the Quebec campaign of 1775, from Robert Andrews, a Norwich Englishman who settled in Ipswich, Mass., in 1635. Ammi's grandson Luther, a farmer of Hillsboro, N. H., married Nabby Beard, and Christopher was the youngest of their four children (H. F. Andrews, *History of the Andrews Family*, 1890, p. 103). Three terms at Francestown Academy prepared this son for studies in law offices and at Harvard Law School preliminary to his admission to the bar in 1850. Of a restless disposition, he began to practise in Newton, Mass., then moved to Boston, and in 1854 joined the rush of settlers to Kansas. From Fort Leavenworth he wrote letters to Northern newspapers encouraging free-state immigration; and after six months he went to Washington, D. C. His fellow-townsman, President Pierce, appointed him to a clerkship in the Treasury Department in 1855, but the next year Andrews again went West, this time to Minnesota. His letters to the *Boston Post*, vividly describing his journey up the Mississippi in the *Lady Franklin* to St. Paul and by stage-coach to the frontier town of Crow Wing, later appeared in book form (*Minnesota and Dacotah*, 1857). This excursion led to the resignation of his clerkship, and in 1857 he went to Minnesota to practise law in St. Cloud. In the same year he brought out his *Digest of the Opinions of the Attorney Generals of the United States* and in 1858 *A Practical Treatise on the Revenue Laws of the United States*. Law led to politics, and in 1859 he was elected to the state Senate; and the next year, as a Douglas Democrat, he held more than thirty joint political debates with Stephen Miller, later governor. In 1861 he helped to found and for a short time was joint editor of the *St. Cloud Union*, but resigned because of the pro-slavery views of his associate, S. B. Lowry. Upon the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted as a private, but his energy and ability soon won his promotion. At Murfreesboro in 1862 the colonel of his regiment, the 3rd Minnesota Volunteer Infantry, surrendered to Gen. Forrest over Andrews's vigorous protest. Three months in Southern prisons gave Andrews, now a captain, leisure to read Plutarch and Shakespeare and to write a book of *Hints to Company Officers on Their Military Duties* (1863). His exchange gave him an opportunity to apply his theories in action (*My Experiences in Rebel Prisons*, 1893). He was with the reorganized 3rd Minnesota at Vicksburg; he commanded the regiment in the Arkansas campaign of 1863; as brigadier-general he led a decisive charge at Fitzhugh Woods in 1864; and in the Mobile campaign, now brevetted major-general, he participated in the storming of Fort Blakely.

After the collapse of the Confederacy he was in command of several southern districts, the last of which was that of Houston. He returned to Minnesota in August 1865 and was mustered out on Jan. 15, 1866. A year later he published a comprehensive *History of the Campaign of Mobile;* and he contributed a full account of his own regiment to the two-volume history, *Minnesota in the Civil and Indian Wars,* brought out by the state under his editorship (1890–92).

Resuming his St. Cloud law practise, he soon became prominent in state politics. He was a delegate to the Republican convention that nominated Grant in 1868, and in that year was the regular Republican candidate for Congress in the second Minnesota district, but because of a party split lost the election. In 1869 President Grant appointed him minister to Sweden and Norway. He took up his duties at Stockholm in July 1869 and served eight and one-half years. A noteworthy feature of this service was the preparation of a series of more than thirty remarkable reports on conditions in Norway and Sweden that were published in government documents and in many cases reprinted. Among the more important were those on industrial classes, pauperism and poor laws, emigration, public instruction, agriculture, Swedish forest culture, commerce, iron production, and manufactures. A discriminating study of *Life and Manners in Sweden and Norway* (n.d.) was privately published. After his retirement in 1877 he returned to Minnesota; in 1880 he supervised the census in the third Minnesota district; and in the same year he served as editor of the *St. Paul Dispatch.* He was appointed consul-general to Brazil by President Arthur and held this office at Rio de Janeiro from 1882 to 1885, when he was recalled by Cleveland. His book *Brazil, Its Condition and Prospects* (1887) includes a charming narrative of his own experiences. Two other publications of the eighties were a study of *Spring Wheat Culture in the Northwest* (1882), and a political brochure on *Administrative Reform* (1888) in which he advocated the extension of the civil service. In 1890 he edited a coöperative *History of St. Paul, Minn.,* of the commercial type. Andrews was a pioneer in advocating the application of European forestry principles to American conditions, and the latter part of his career was devoted to this field of interest. He was chief warden and forest commissioner of Minnesota from 1895 to 1911 and secretary of the state forestry board from 1911 until his death in 1922. He was influential in the movement for establishing forest reserves in the state; and his sixteen annual reports as warden and commissioner are valuable compendiums of forestry data. Andrews married Mary Frances Baxter of Central City, Colo., in December 1868. He died at Rochester, Minn., following an operation.

[The Minn. Hist. Soc. possesses a large collection of Andrews Papers, including correspondence and miscellaneous MSS.; it also has a mass of archives from the office of the chief fire warden during Andrews's incumbency. Andrews's autobiography, written in his later years, has recently been published as *Recollections: 1820–1922* (1928). Biog. information in many of the works cited in the foregoing sketch may be supplemented by a *Report of the Mil. Services of C. C. Andrews* (1872); an autobiog. fragment, "In the Early Days," in W. B. Mitchell, *Hist. of Stearns County, Minn.* (1915), ch. 14; "Sketch and Public Record of Christopher C. Andrews" in *Our Representatives Abroad* (1874); an undated leaflet (issued after 1911) under the title *Short Sketch of Gen. C. C. Andrews;* long obituary in *St. Paul Pioneer Press,* Sept. 22, 1922.]

T.C.B.

ANDREWS, EDWARD GAYER (Aug. 7, 1825–Dec. 31, 1907), Methodist bishop, was born in New Hartford, Oneida County, N. Y., the son of George and Polly Andrews, and the fifth in a family of eleven children. His father was a mill superintendent until 1839, when he went to live on a farm he had purchased in Onondaga County. Edward was brought up in a Methodist home, under rigorous discipline. From early childhood he showed more than usual susceptibility to religious influences and joined the church when but ten years old. Encouraged by his parents to get what education he could, he prepared for college at Cazenovia Seminary, and graduated from Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in the class of 1847. Almost immediately he was appointed to supply the Morrisville Circuit in the Oneida Methodist Conference, and in July 1848 was admitted to the Conference, ordained by Bishop Janes, and appointed to Hamilton and Leesville. In 1851 he married Susan Matthews Hotchkiss, daughter of Sherlock Hotchkiss of Cheshire, Conn. After several pastorates his voice failed, and in 1854 he took a position as teacher in Cazenovia Seminary. A few months later he became president of Mansfield Female College, Ohio, but in a year's time returned to Cazenovia to succeed Dr. Henry Bannister as principal. For nine years he managed the institution with great success, and became prominent among the educators of central New York. In 1864 his voice having recovered sufficiently to warrant his return to the pulpit, he became pastor of the Methodist church in Stamford, Conn. From Stamford he went to Brooklyn, N. Y., where he first served at Sands Street Church, then at St. John's, finally at Grace Church, of which he was pastor when, May 24, 1872, he was elected bishop. His first episcopal residence was in Des Moines, Ia. Early in 1876 the Board of Bishops and the Board of For-

eign Missions realized that a more perfect form of organization was necessary in the Methodist churches in Europe and India. They also appreciated that to gather into annual conferences independent, scattered congregations and churches, to place over them responsible ministers, and to bring about a recognition of episcopal control without disturbance or friction, was a task requiring the utmost tact and delicacy. They therefore chose Bishop Andrews for this mission and in the performance of it he visited Sweden, Norway, and India. In 1880 he was transferred from Des Moines to Washington, where his advice on public questions was sought by many of the national leaders. From 1888 to 1904, the time of his retirement, his residence was in New York. In 1907, although eighty-two years old, he crossed the continent to attend a meeting of the bishops at Spokane, Wash., but overtaxed his strength and died, in Brooklyn, shortly after his return.

Bishop Andrews was of substantial frame, with a well-chiseled face, high forehead, genial, intelligent eyes, and benign countenance. As a preacher he had a high reputation. Though cautious and conservative, he was open-minded, more tolerant toward modern theological tendencies than many in his church, and liberal in his attitude toward the troublesome question of amusements. During a long and important period in the history of the denomination, he was one of its wisest and most influential leaders.

[Francis J. McConnell, *Edward Gayer Andrews* (1909); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–7, Matthew Simpson, *Cyc. of Methodism* (1878); *Jour. of Gen. Conference*, 1908.]

J. W. J.

ANDREWS, ELISHA BENJAMIN (Jan. 10, 1844–Oct. 30, 1917), college president, was of a New England stock which from the beginning was concerned with education. The first of whom there is record, William Andrews of Hartford, Conn., was engaged at a town-meeting in April 1643, to "teach the children in the Scoole one yere next ensewing from the 25 of March," and was subsequently reëngaged for the same purpose in succeeding years. Later, for a period of eight years, he served as town clerk. The descendants of William Andrews were frequently teachers; sometimes they were ministers; occasionally they held public office. One of them, Israel Andrews, who lived a century later than William, was for a time a seafaring man, and afterward a teacher and a surveyor. Israel had a son Elisha, who before reaching eighteen was a teacher and a surveyor, and at twenty-five a Baptist minister. The Rev. Elisha Andrews gained a considerable reputation for his theological writings and for his acuteness in controversy; he was also known for his love of books, and for his accomplishments, though self-instructed in Greek, Latin, Hebrew, and German. His son Erastus Andrews was also self-instructed, and also became a Baptist minister. He served two terms in the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and one in the Massachusetts Senate. On May 10, 1829, he married Almira Bartlett, a country school-teacher, a daughter of John and Martha Bartlett of West Boylston, Mass., and the youngest of eleven children. The children born to Erastus and Almira Bartlett Andrews also numbered eleven. The second child, Charles Bartlett Andrews [*q.v.*], was successively governor of Connecticut, judge of the superior court, and chief justice of that state. The eighth child was Elisha Benjamin Andrews.

He was born in Hinsdale, N. H., where his father was supplying the pulpit of the Baptist church. In the summer of 1844, when Elisha Benjamin was barely six months old, the Rev. Erastus Andrews returned to his former pulpit in Sunderland, Mass., and took up his residence in Montague, near the Sunderland line. Here Elisha Benjamin spent his early boyhood, and here he received his earliest education in the small schoolhouse, a mile or more away. Often, in winter, when the roads were blocked with snow and ice, Almira Andrews taught the children at home. Ten of them had survived infancy; the record is preserved of the mother's force of mind and character, and of her wisdom and energy in bringing up her large family on the small salary of a country minister. Vigor and independence of thinking are also among the qualities attributed to her. In 1858, the Rev. Erastus Andrews accepted the pastorate of the First Baptist Church on Zion's Hill, in Suffield, Conn., attracted by the educational opportunities for his younger children that Suffield afforded. Shortly after the removal to Zion's Hill, Elisha Benjamin injured his left foot so severely that for a time he was in danger of losing his leg, and over two years passed, marked by much suffering, before he was able to take up his studies in regular course. He was still crippled and still using crutches when, in September 1860, he entered the Connecticut Literary Institute, in Suffield, to prepare for college. His preparatory studies were, however, to suffer a long interruption. In April 1861 the Civil War began. On May 23, Elisha Benjamin, then a boy of seventeen, enlisted as a private in the 4th Connecticut Infantry, shortly afterward reorganized as the 1st Connecticut Heavy Artillery. On the muster rolls his name is given as Benjamin Andrews, the name by which his intimates in later years always knew him.

His regiment is said to have been the earliest

volunteer regiment mustered in for a three years' service. It took part in engagements at Yorktown, Hanover Court House, Gaines's Mill, Chickahominy, Golden Hill, Malvern Hill, and elsewhere. The early months of the war were, for Andrews, the harder because of the condition of his leg, despite which he had been accepted for service. His comrades, witnessing his discomfort and frequent pain, paid warm tribute to his pluck. Nor did they themselves complain when, as the head of a squad, he worked the men hard, for he worked as hard as they, with equal energy, and with equal exposure to the enemy's fire. On Apr. 18, 1862, he was promoted to be a corporal; on Jan. 21, 1863, to be a sergeant; on Sept. 7, 1863, to be a second-lieutenant. In the summer of 1864 he was in the siege of Petersburg, and on the fateful June 30, when the mine laid by the Union forces was exploded, went through the Crater. On Aug. 24, he was seriously wounded. A fellow member of his regiment, Bennett Rowe, came to his assistance and perhaps saved his life. The wound resulted in the loss of his left eye; on Oct. 29, he was discharged from military service, incapacitated.

He immediately enrolled in the Powers Institute in Bernardston, Mass., and studied there a year. The next year was spent at the Wesleyan Academy, in Wilbraham, Mass., from which he was graduated in 1866, the class valedictorian. He had now decided to study theology and to enter the ministry. In September 1866, he registered in Brown University. From the beginning, he was prominent in his class. In his freshman year, he was the class president; in his senior year, he gave the Address to the Undergraduates—a student honor highly prized. Always a ready and witty speaker, he is recalled by one of his hearers as seemingly giving it *extempore*. He was seasoned by war, maturer than many of his mates, and devoted to his studies. He was graduated in 1870, the fourth in his class. On Nov. 25, he married in Newton, Mass., Ella Allen, the daughter of the Rev. Ralph Willard Allen and Mary (Tower) Allen. Before taking up his theological course, he served for two years (1870–72) as principal of the Connecticut Literary Institute, now called the Suffield School. From 1872 to 1874 he studied at the Newton Theological Institution; in the latter years he was ordained, and in the same year became minister of the First Baptist Church, in Beverly, Mass. One of his congregation was the Bennett Rowe who had come to his aid on the battlefield in 1864. After a successful pastorate of one year, Andrews received an unexpected call to the presidency of Denison University, and, on the advice of some

Andrews

of his closest friends, coupled with his own growing conviction that his place was in the field of education, decided to accept the call. Hereafter, he continued in that field. His vocation had found him.

The *Memorial Volume of Denison University* tells that the four years of his administration were "virile and inspiring." In connection with the presidency he held the chair of moral and intellectual philosophy. The innumerable stories of his influence as a teacher and his extraordinary power over men begin with his days at Denison, if not with those earlier at Suffield. Among the teachers at Denison was an instructor in Greek and Latin, William R. Harper [*q.v.*], who had come there with disconcerting youthfulness, for he was only twenty, to be a tutor in the preparatory school, and who shortly afterward became its principal. Ernest De Witt Burton [*q.v.*] was a member—the youngest member—of the class of 1876. John D. Rockefeller was a member of the Board of Trustees. All three were to be closely identified with the University of Chicago; Andrews's friendship with all three was life-long. President Harper, looking back upon his Denison period, recalled Andrews as "his inspired friend," "his exemplar," "his intellectual father." President Burton called Andrews the greatest teacher in his experience.

From 1879 to 1882 Andrews was professor of homiletics and pastoral theology in Newton Theological Institution. In the latter year, during the illness of President Robins of Colby College, he arranged also to conduct the latter's classes in philosophy. In 1881, the death occurred of J. Lewis Diman, professor of history and political economy in Brown University, widely known as a brilliant teacher, and for seventeen years one of the lights of Brown. Andrews, on being invited to succeed him, spent a year of study in Berlin and Munich, and in 1883 entered upon his new work at Brown, retaining his professorship there until 1888. The opportunity was one that gave ample play to his teaching powers, and the man himself was magnetic, brimming with life, and immensely popular. The enthusiastic response to him on the part of the undergraduates doubtless had much to do with his later election to the headship of Brown. Outside of the University there was some opposition, when it was learned that he was a free-trader, and the opposition to some extent became vocal, but the particular economic views that Andrews held proved no very serious obstacle when, after a year as professor of political economy and finance at Cornell (1888–89), he was recalled to Brown to succeed Ezekiel Gilman Robinson as president.

The modern period in the history of Brown

begins with the accession of Andrews. A statistical summary of the achievements of his administration (1889–98) tells of the results, not of the quality, of his leadership, though suggesting something of the exceptional and strong personality in command. An expansion took place with a rapidity that was remarkable. The number of undergraduate men increased from 276 to 641; the number of graduate students, which at the opening of this era was only three, to 117; and the total registration, including the undergraduate students in the Women's College, from 549 to 908. The officers of instruction increased from twenty-two to seventy-three; all the old departments were enlarged, and new departments were created. The Women's College, founded in October 1891, was largely Andrews's creation, and, since, at the beginning, none of the funds of the university were applicable to its purpose, he personally bore the financial responsibility for the undertaking until 1895, when relieved of it by a committee of women. In November 1897 the women's department was accepted by the Corporation and officially designated the Women's College in Brown University.

The change that had come over Brown was, however, not merely quantitative. At bottom it was qualitative, "a spirit and a life, of which the growth in size was only a result. The primary source of this new life was the President" (Walter C. Bronson, *History of Brown University*, 1914). The President kept regular office hours, and was accessible to all members of the college community; he customarily led the daily chapel service; he conducted courses, at first in philosophy, later in "practical ethics." "Bennie," the students called him—the diminutive was the expression of their complete affection. He seemed to know all of them and to be able to call each one by name. None was without a contribution to the rich fund of anecdote that grew up about him, of counsel or admonition imparted, sometimes with racy humor, sometimes with blunt sarcasm, sometimes with a small personal loan. He was in the line of Arnold and Jowett, of Wayland and Nott and Hopkins. For him, the work at Brown accorded with his desires. While in the service of his *alma mater* an offer came to share the presidency of the University of Chicago with Dr. Harper, but the claims of Brown predominated and the offer was declined.

One essential for the work at Brown was, however, lacking. The rapid expansion had continued without the accompanying increase in invested funds that the new situation demanded. In his report for 1891–92, President Andrews called for "a million dollars within a year, and two million more in ten years." But in the years that followed not even the first million was forthcoming. In 1896, Andrews, overworked, and worn with the weight he was carrying, was allowed a year's leave of absence, which he spent abroad. In June 1897, shortly before his return to Providence, the Corporation, at its regular meeting entered into a discussion of the financial affairs of the University, and, in the same connection, into a discussion of the economic views of Dr. Andrews, the opinion being advanced that his stand on the silver question had stood in the way of additions to the endowment fund. The discussion was concluded with the adoption of a resolution appointing a committee "to confer with the President in regard to the interests of the University." President Andrews reached Providence at the end of June. The committee of the Corporation transmitting their statement to Dr. Andrews, in writing at the latter's request, informed him that it "signified a wish for change in only one particular, having reference to his views upon . . . the free coinage of silver. . . . The change hoped for by them is not a renunciation of these views . . . but a forbearance . . . to promulgate them." The statement of the committee is dated July 16. On July 17 Andrews tendered his resignation, believing himself unable to meet the wishes of the Corporation as explained by the committee "without surrendering that reasonable liberty of utterance which my predecessors, my faculty colleagues and myself have hitherto enjoyed, and in the absence of which the most ample endowment for an educational institution would have but little worth."

The resignation of President Andrews precipitated a heated controversy. During it, although much was said about his views on silver, the actual issue, namely, the President's "reasonable liberty of utterance," was forced to its rightful priority. That Andrews had long believed in international bimetallism, there was no question. He had written and made speeches favoring a freer use of silver under international agreement, and he had served as one of the commissioners from the United States to the International Monetary Conference at Brussels in 1892. Prior to 1896, he had argued that any attempt to resume the free coinage of silver by the United States alone would be harmful both for this country and for the cause of bimetallism, but by that year a new element had entered into his thinking, and he had come to believe, largely because of the increased production of gold, that the United States should freely coin silver at a ratio of sixteen to one, and that if the United States were to do this, other nations would follow the example and interna-

tional bimetallism be thereby secured. But, despite the impression to the contrary then existing, President Andrews had published nothing and made no speech advocating the free coinage of silver by the United States alone. He had done no more than to state his views in a few personal letters, which were printed in the newspapers without his consent, and in one instance without his knowledge.

The actual issue involved in the resignation of Andrews was defined in "An open letter addressed to the Corporation of Brown University by members of the faculty of that institution," dated July 31. This letter, now known to have been from the hand of Prof. J. F. Jameson, was signed by twenty-five members of the faculty, and combated the proposition that official action tending to restrain Dr. Andrews's expressions on public affairs was to be justified, either on the lower ground of pecuniary necessity, since Brown University had only been sharing in the adverse circumstances that had beset the other colleges of New England, or otherwise "when considered from that higher point of view from which the educational institutions of a great country ought always to be regarded," for, as the letter concluded, "we are convinced that the life-blood of a university is not money, but freedom." The Corporation was also petitioned by over 600 alumni, representing classes from 1838 to 1897, asking it to "take that action upon the resignation of President Andrews which will effectually refute the charge that reasonable liberty of utterance was or even is to be, denied to any teacher of Brown University." Another petition, of similar tenor, was presented by forty-four out of the forty-nine women graduates. A general memorial was made to the Corporation, signed by college presidents,—among them President Gilman of Johns Hopkins and President Eliot of Harvard, —college professors, business men, and others, urging "such action on the part of the Corporation as might naturally lead to the withdrawal of the resignation of President Andrews." With these documents, a special memorial of economics was presented, headed with the signature of Prof. Taussig of Harvard and Prof. Seligman of Columbia, setting forth to the Corporation a "brief statement of opinion," as follows: "We hope that no action will be taken by you that could be construed as limiting the freedom of speech in the teaching body of our universities. We believe that no questions should enter except as to capacity, faithfulness, and general efficiency in the performance of appointed duty. To undertake inquiry as to the soundness of opinions expressed on any question, or set of questions, must inevitably limit freedom of expression, tend to destroy intellectual independence and to diminish public respect for the conclusions of all investigators."

Andrews

At its meeting Sept. 1, the Corporation unanimously adopted an address, five members not voting, affirming that its action in June was occasioned by the fear that the views of the President on the silver question might perhaps in some degree be assumed to be representative and not merely individual, disclaiming any intention to administer any official rebuke, or to restrain the President's freedom of opinion, or "reasonable liberty of utterance," and asking the President to withdraw his resignation. Andrews, by this date, had accepted an offer from the proprietor of the *Cosmopolitan Magazine,* John Brisben Walker, to direct a scheme of educational advancement through directed reading. A release being obtained from Mr. Walker, Andrews withdrew his resignation, writing to the committee of conference that the action of the Corporation "entirely does away with the scruple which led to my resignation."

Andrews remained at Brown one more academic year. On July 15, 1898, he resigned the presidency to accept the position of superintendent of schools in Chicago, soon to become engaged in a fight, from which he emerged the winner, whereby he won from the board of education a decision to vest the superintendent with the power to nominate and promote teachers in the public schools. This decision, said the *Chicago Times-Herald* (Dec. 16, 1898), "is something more than a personal victory for Dr. Andrews. It is a victory for the public schools of Chicago." In 1899 he declined the presidency of the State Agricultural School of Colorado; in 1900 he accepted the chancellorship of the University of Nebraska. Here, during the eight years of his administration, he repeated on a larger scale his successes at Brown. The faculty was doubled in size, and the appropriations nearly trebled; new buildings were added; a school of medicine, a teachers' college, and a law department were established; the agricultural department was notably expanded, and the state farm re-created. Behind all these was the chancellor's vigorous personality. For several years he gave a course in practical ethics, to which the students thronged. Sometimes he addressed the students in a body. He could rejoice with them over an athletic victory, or he could, if need be, give them forthright counsel. "You should go home," he told them on one occasion, "and enter your closets, and shut the door; and kneeling down you should ask God in his great mercy to vouchsafe to you

one original idea." For Andrews, "intellectual vigor and moral integrity were the indispensable beginnings of all worthy education" (William F. Dann of the University of Nebraska in *Denison Alumni Bulletin*, 1917–18). His services as a public speaker were frequently sought, and he lectured widely. He wrote much, and he engaged in much public activity. He kept politics out of the university when politics threatened, and made no truce with the policies of favoritism. Approaches were made to see whether he would consider a transfer of his services to the University of Wisconsin, but he was adverse to the change. The Regents of the University of Nebraska at this time added $1,000 to his annual salary. Andrews's reply to the Regents was explicit. "So long as the University is compelled to the rigid economy it now exercises," he begged permission to continue "to be paid at the old rate."

In 1903, Andrews confounded the friends of silver by his blunt acknowledgment that he had been in error for a number of years in his conclusions regarding the production of gold. His statement had all of the frankness of his earlier utterances in the same connection. Basing his reports on the conclusions of geologists, he said, "I believed that the greatest output of gold was passed. I have to admit that it was an astounding mistake, and that I was in great and inexcusable error. I now believe that the heavy output of gold will continue" (*New York Evening Post*, May 25, 1903; *Springfield Republican*, May 26, 1903). In 1907 he was granted a retiring allowance by the Carnegie Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching, but, despite failing health, he managed to continue in his position until Dec. 31, 1908, when his physical condition at last compelled him to resign. Subsequently the Regents created for him the title of chancellor emeritus. A two years' trip around the world, which included several months in South Africa, failed to restore Dr. Andrews's health, nor was it restored after the return to Lincoln. In 1912 he was so ill that he had to be removed to West Palm Beach, in Florida, and the next year to Interlachen, in that state. His naturally robust frame was now all but worn out, but still he studied, and thought, and wrote. He died at Interlachen, Oct. 30, 1917, and was buried in Granville, Ohio, on the campus of Denison University.

Andrews was six feet in height and weighed in his prime nearly 180 pounds. His well-shaped head, his smooth-shaven face, his clear-cut features could have served in making a die for a coin. Tempted by his native strength and exceptional constitution, through all his active years he drew heavily on his physical store, with long hours of sustained labor, which at the end had exhausted it when it should have had years to serve. His personality was not a complex one; on the contrary, it was unusually simple and straightforward. In matters of consistency and convention he was apt to be a non-conformist, though in reality holding to the higher consistency that convention tends to conceal. His many writings, produced in the midst of constant time-consuming activities, show a diversity of absorbing interests, an eager and searching intellectual curiosity, a keen analytical power, and the vigor that was preëminently his in all things. His interest in ethics readily passed over to an interest in human relations as the subject-matter of economics and history. A certain choice of titles, as *An Honest Dollar* (1889) and *Wealth and Moral Law* (1894) obviously suggests this preoccupation with the ethical, but that factor is not allowed to overbalance the economic, and both books are written with penetration and power. *The History of the United States*, in six volumes (1913), bears the marks of writing done under pressure. *The History of the Last Quarter-Century in the United States* (1896), enlarged under the title *The United States in Our Own Time* (1903), is, however, a vivid, picturesque narrative full of the stir of the national life of the period. An earlier work, used as a text-book, but of too important content to escape notice, the *Brief Institutes of General History* (1887), is a presentation, really a precipitation, of essential facts, and an achievement of condensation that either saddened the indolent of successive student generations, or else inspired the industrious to unroll its tight involutions and gain a genuine notion of the groundwork of history. *The Call of the Land* (1913) deals partly with agricultural subjects, and represents Andrews's self-devotion to the interests stimulated by his residence and official position in a great agricultural state. His other works include *A Private's Reminiscences of the First Year of the War* (1886); *Brief Institutes of Our Constitutional History, English and American* (1886); *Institutes of Economics* (1889); *The Economic Law of Monopoly* (1890); *Syllabus of Lectures . . . upon the Rise and Growth of the Government of the United States* (1891); *The Duty of a Public Spirit* (1892); *Eternal Words and Other Sermons* (1894); *The Sin of Schism* (1896).

[W. C. Bronson, *Hist. of Brown Univ. 1764–1914* (1914); W. McDonald, "President Andrews: as Seen by the Brown Men of His Time," and other articles in *Memories of Brown*, ed. by R. P. Brown and others (1909); *Providence Journal*, June–Sept. 1897, June 22, 28, 1898, July 14, 18, 1898, Sept. 7, 8, 1898, Oct. 31,

1917; *An Open Letter Addressed to the Corporation of Brown University by Members of the Faculty of that Institution* (1897); Letter from Prof. Henry B. Gardner in *N. Y. Tribune*, Aug. 3, 1897; also Index Volumes to *N. Y. Tribune*, *Springfield Republican*, and *Brooklyn Eagle*; *New Eng. Mag.*, Sept. 1897; *Chicago Times-Herald*, *Tribune*, and other Chicago newspapers, July 14, 1898, Nov.–Dec. 1898; *Brooklyn Citizen*, Dec. 6, 1898; *Semi-Centenn. Anniv. Bk., the Univ. of Nebr. 1869–1919* (1919); *Nebr. State Jour.*, Sept. 23, 1900, Oct. 2, 1902, May 13, 1911, Oct. 31 and Nov. 1, 1917; Alexander Meiklejohn, "A Leader in Freedom," in *Freedom and the Coll.* (1923); *Memorial Vol. Denison Univ. 1831–1906* (1907); *Denison Alumni Bull.*, 1917–18; *Alumni Records of Brown Univ.*; Letters from Mrs. E. Benjamin Andrews, Interlachen, Fla., Profs. Walter C. Bronson and Wilfred H. Munro of Brown Univ., Rev. Jesse F. Smith of the Suffield School, and Bennett Rowe of Beverly, Mass.; personal knowledge.] W. A. S.

ANDREWS, GARNETT (May 15, 1837–May 6, 1903), lawyer, soldier, was a descendant of the family which settled in Virginia in 1635, when James Andrews received an extensive grant of lands in that colony. John Andrews was a Revolutionary soldier who, soon afterward, removed to Georgia. His wife was Ann Goode of Virginia, and their son, Garnett Andrews, was a judge of one of the superior courts of Georgia for twenty-seven years and married Annulet Ball. Judge Andrews's son, Garnett, was educated in the Male Academy at Washington, Ga., and had just graduated from the law school at the University of Georgia when the state seceded in 1861. He was the first man in his county to enter the Confederate service, was made a lieutenant in the 1st Georgia Regulars, served actively in Virginia and North Carolina, both as a staff officer and in command of a regiment, and was twice severely wounded. In 1864, detailed to organize a regiment by means of the voluntary enlistment of foreigners among the Federal prisoners, he raised such a regiment, officially known first as the "Second Foreign Legion" and later as the "8th Confederate Battalion of Infantry," but soon popularly known as the "Galvanized Yankees." On Apr. 11, 1865, Andrews, with his "Galvanized Yankees," was ordered to hold Salisbury, N. C., against the advance of Gen. Stoneman. Seizing a railroad train and manning it with men from his troops, he entered the town on one side as Stoneman was entering it on the other. A bloody battle, fought in ignorance of Lee's surrender on Apr. 9, ensued, in which Andrews was again severely wounded.

At the close of the war, after recovering from his wounds, he went to Yazoo City, Miss. Deciding to locate there, he began the practise of law, which he continued with marked success until his removal from the state in 1882. At that time his law partner was John Sharp Williams, then a young man, but afterward a distinguished senator. While living in Mississippi, Andrews commanded a militia company known as the Yazoo Rifles, edited the *Yazoo Herald* and served in the legislature in 1879 and 1880. In 1884, he published *Andrews' Digest of the Decisions of the Supreme Court of Mississippi*. On Aug. 23, 1867, he married Rosalie Champe Beirne of Monroe County, W. Va., a grand-daughter of Col. Andrew Beirne, a native of Ireland, who came to this country in 1793, was afterward a member of Congress, and commanded a regiment, equipped at his own expense, in the War of 1812. In 1882, Andrews removed to Chattanooga, Tenn., where he soon enjoyed a lucrative practise and a high place at the bar. He was elected mayor of Chattanooga in 1891, and served one term of two years, declining to be a candidate for reëlection. Tall, handsome, and always faultlessly dressed, with something of the soldier in his bearing, he was a striking figure in any company. Courtly in demeanor, impatient with anything like dishonesty, and with an abundance of physical and moral courage, he was a gentleman of the old school.

[Family records in the possession of Andrews's son, Mr. Garnett Andrews of Chattanooga; George Brown Goode, *Va. Cousins: a Study of the Ancestry and Posterity of John Goode of Whitby, a Va. Colonist of the Seventeenth Cent.* (1887), pp. 175, 307–9; *Chattanooga Daily Times*, May 7, 1903.] W. L. F—n.

ANDREWS, GEORGE LEONARD (Aug. 31, 1828–Apr. 4, 1899), Union soldier, was born at Bridgewater, Mass., the son of Manasseh and Harriet (Leonard) Andrews. After graduating from the State Normal School at Bridgewater, he entered West Point, and graduated there in 1851, at the head of his class. For four years he served as a lieutenant of engineers, and then resigned from the army to take up private practice as a civil engineer. At the outbreak of the Civil War he was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the 2nd Massachusetts Infantry, the colonel of which was also a former officer of the regular army, and under their training the regiment quickly acquired a reputation for steadiness and discipline which it maintained to the end. The colonel being absent commanding the brigade, the charge of the regiment devolved upon Andrews from the beginning of its service in field operations against the enemy. He led it during Gen. Banks's campaign in the Shenandoah Valley, and afterward as colonel (having been promoted, June 13, 1862) at the battles of Cedar Mountain and Antietam. He was then designated for service with Gen. Banks's expedition to Louisiana, and after some weeks at the port of embarkation, supervising shipments, he joined the command and was appointed its chief of staff. As such he took part in the campaign which culminated in the siege and capture of Port Hudson. He was then placed in command of the

territorial district about Baton Rouge, and was also charged with the organization and training of a large force of colored troops. There had been a few regiments of negroes received into the service before this time, but with the secure occupation of a large area in the extreme South, their enlistment on a considerable scale was begun. Under their original fanciful designation of Corps d'Afrique, and afterward as plain regiments of United States colored troops, Andrews continued in command of these organizations, and also of his district, until early in 1865. He took part in the attack on Mobile, and after some further staff service was mustered out of the army in August. He tried life as a planter in Mississippi until 1867, and then returned to Massachusetts, where he served as United States marshal for four years, and is said to have incurred the pronounced enmity of Benjamin F. Butler. In 1871 he was appointed professor of French at West Point, and when the departments of French and Spanish were merged in 1882, he became head of the new department as professor of modern languages, which place he held until his retirement in 1892. From then until his death he resided in Brookline, Mass., writing occasional papers on military historical topics. He was imposing in appearance, dignified and formal in manner, studious, and well-read. He made few intimate friends, and as a commander was one to inspire confidence rather than devotion.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), II, 436–37; *Official Records*, see Index; *Bull. Ass. Grads. Mil. Acad.*, 1900, pp. 21–28; private information.] T. M. S.

ANDREWS, GEORGE PIERCE (Sept. 29, 1835–May 24, 1902), jurist, traced his descent in a direct line from Robert Andrews of Norwich, England, who emigrated in May 1635, settling at Ipswich, Mass. A descendant, Capt. Abraham Andrews—a minute-man at Lexington and participant in Arnold's Quebec expedition—moved to Maine, and his grandson, Solomon Andrews, entered the lumber business at North Bridgton, Me. There he married Sibyl Ann Farnsworth. Their son, George Pierce, was born at Bridgton. The future judge received his early education at Bridgton and at St. Johnsbury, Vt., subsequently attending Williston Seminary, Easthampton, and Dudley's Institute, Northampton, Mass. He entered Yale in 1854, graduating in 1858 with the honor of "class orator." He then studied law with Senator Fessenden at Portland, Me., but in 1859 went to Louisiana as a private tutor, continuing, however, his law reading. In 1860 he entered the office of the United States district attorney for the southern district of New York and

was admitted to the New York bar in May of that year. He became well known through his connection with the famous Gordon case. A federal statute of 1820 had made slave-trading an act of piracy punishable by death, but no person had hitherto been condemned for an infraction of this law. Gordon was master of the ship *Erie* in August 1860, when she was captured off the west coast of Africa with 890 slaves on board. Gordon was indicted for piracy and the trial attracted great public attention. Andrews took charge of the prosecution, pressed it with much ability, and obtained a conviction; Gordon was hanged Feb. 21, 1862 (United States *vs.* Gordon 25 *Fed. Cas.* 15, 231; 5 *Blatchford* 18). In 1863 Andrews was appointed first assistant district attorney. In this capacity it fell to him to conduct for the national government a large number of difficult prize cases. In 1869 he resigned and commenced private practise. Fortunate in the confidence of Cornelius K. Garrison, who was a power in marine and financial circles in New York, he was retained in much heavy corporation litigation. He was appointed first assistant corporation counsel to the City of New York in December 1872, becoming corporation counsel in 1882. In 1883 he was elected associate justice of the supreme court for the first judicial district of New York, serving the full term of fourteen years. He failed of reëlection, but the following year was elected for a second term, continuing to hold office till his death. Bringing to the bench a rich and varied experience in every phase of municipal and corporation business, he was recognized as a high authority on the law appertaining to these subjects. His opinions on complicated questions arising under the tax laws were of exceptional value. "Judge Andrews . . . was thoughtful and reserved, but very genial in a quiet way and full of devotion to those he loved. He was a great reader of literature, especially French. . . . He had a strong temper, but even under most trying circumstances rarely showed it. . . . No Judge on our Bench was more courteous and kind to the bar, especially to its younger members. He was the most humane of Judges and the most judicial of men" (John H. Judge, "Memorial"). In 1889 he married Mrs. Catherine M. Van Anken, daughter of his old client, Cornelius K. Garrison. The mural portrait bust in bronze, life-size, which stands in the county court-house, New York City, was presented by his widow.

[Full particulars of the ancestry of Judge Andrews are contained in *Hist. of the Andrews Family—a Genealogy of Robert Andrews and His Descendants, 1635–1890*, by H. Franklin Andrews (1890). The "Memorial of George P. Andrews," by John H. Judge, in *Ann. Rept. of the Bar of the City of N. Y.*, 1904, p. 18, and the bro-

chure, *George Pierce Andrews* (n.d.), prepared by his widow, are authoritative though brief and not altogether satisfying. Details of his work at the bar and on the bench must be sought for in the various N.Y. State Law Repts., covering the period 1860–1902.] H.W.H.K.

ANDREWS, ISRAEL WARD (Jan. 3, 1815–Apr. 18, 1888), college president, was born at Danbury, Conn., the son of Sarah (Parkhill) Andrews and Rev. William Andrews, a descendant of one of the first settlers of New Haven. In 1833 he entered Amherst College, where he spent one year; later he became a student at Williams College, of which Mark Hopkins had recently become president, and he was graduated there in 1837. After a year spent as principal of an academy at Lee, Mass., he was called to Marietta College, Ohio, on the recommendation of President Hopkins. Here he spent the rest of his life as instructor in mathematics, 1838, professor of mathematics and natural philosophy, 1839–55, president 1855–85, and professor of political science, 1855–88. As a teacher he was remarkable for thoroughness and clearness. As an executive he guided the young college successfully through the years when it had practically no endowment and was a pioneer enterprise in a new country. It was said that he knew personally every graduate of the college during its first fifty years. He was also active in the general educational work of Ohio, serving as president of the Ohio Educational Association and as a member of its executive committee and being for many years an associate editor of the Ohio *Journal of Education.* He was one of the original members of the National Teachers' Association and a member of the National Council of Education. His work as a scholar and author was largely in the fields of education and political science. One especially notable paper was read before the National Union Association of Cincinnati, June 2, 1863, on "Why Is Allegiance Due and Where Is It Due?" which was widely copied by newspapers and became an important factor in forming public opinion on the relation of the states to the Union. His most valuable contribution in the field of political science was his *Manual of the Constitution* (1874), which was used for many years as a textbook in colleges and universities. His death occurred at Hartford, where he was visiting, after delivering an address in Boston before the New England Historical and Genealogical Society on "The Marietta Colony of 1788" (published in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Oct. 1888). He was twice married: on Aug. 8, 1839, to Sarah Clarke of Danbury, Conn., who died in 1840; and on Aug. 24, 1842, to her sister, Marianne Clarke.

Andrews

[Memoir by John Eaton, *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1888; *Cincinnati Times-Star*, May 7, 1888; *Marietta Reg.*, Apr. 19, 1888; *Mag. of Western Hist.*, June, 1888.] A.G.B.

ANDREWS, JOHN (Apr. 4, 1746–Mar. 29, 1813), Episcopal clergyman, educator, was born in Cecil County, Md., of Scotch ancestry. His parents, Moses and Letitia Andrews, were sufficiently well-to-do to give him a satisfactory education at the Elk School, which was a near-by Presbyterian institution, and at the College of Philadelphia, where he graduated with high honors in 1764, although, owing to the absence of the Provost, he did not receive his degree until the following year. He spent the interim in teaching in the Grammar School connected with the college. He then took charge of a classical school at Lancaster, Pa., where he also studied theology under the Rev. Thomas Barton, an Anglican clergyman. In 1767 he went to London for his ordination, after which he was appointed by the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, a "missionary" to Lewes, Del. Here he remained for three years and then, his health suffering from the climate, he removed to York, Pa. In 1772 he married Elizabeth Callender, " a lady of fine domestic qualities and great general excellence of character" (Sprague, V, 247), by whom he had ten children. His salary proving insufficient for the support of his increasing family, he accepted a position as rector of St. John's in Queen Anne's County, Md., where he remained until after the Declaration of Independence. Doubting the expediency of separation from the mother country and deploring patriot outrages against Loyalists, he now returned to the quieter atmosphere of York and started a classical school there. At this time he made the acquaintance of the unfortunate Major André, who was in York on his parole, and the British officer and the most pronounced friends of the American cause often met amicably in the house of this scholar, whose spirit was above the battle. But in 1782 Andrews returned to Maryland as rector of St. Thomas's in Baltimore County and two years later was a prominent member of the convention which organized the Protestant Episcopal Church of Maryland as independent of British jurisdiction. Shortly afterward, as member of a conference of important Episcopalians and Methodists, he vainly urged the union of these two religious bodies, on the ground that there was not sufficient difference between them to justify their separation. In 1785 he became head of the Protestant Episcopal Academy in Philadelphia, and in 1791, when this institution was absorbed in the University of Pennsylvania

he was elected to the office of vice-provost (provost 1810–12), which included the chairs of moral philosophy and the classics. In 1798 one of Andrews's children was burned to death and his wife died from the shock of the news—a double loss which, it is said, he never mentioned without tears. Henceforth he devoted himself almost entirely to his two major interests—religion and the classics. His attitude toward religion was one of classical moderation and his attitude toward the classics was one of religious fervor. He saw much of Joseph Priestley, the famous Unitarian, during the latter's visits to Philadelphia, when Andrews would patiently listen to his arguments and then after his departure reëxamine the doctrine of Christ's divinity and become more convinced of it than ever. Unquestionably one of the best classical scholars in the country, he was reasonably proud of his learning. Classical scholarship in America, however, had not yet reached the productive stage and Andrews's only published works, aside from a few sermons, were two textbooks, *A Compend of Logick* (1801) and *Elements of Rhetorick and Belles Lettres* (1813). In person, he was tall and portly with a square face and ruddy complexion. "His manners were those which became a clergyman, and the Provost of a University" (*Ibid.*, p. 249).

[W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit* (1859), V, 246–51; the *Port Folio*, ser. 3, I, 425–41; H. M. Lippincott, *The Univ. of Pa.* (1919), pp. 97–98; H. W. Smith, *Life and Corresp. of the Rev. Wm. Smith* (1880), I, 365.]

E. S. B.

ANDREWS, JOSEPH (*c.* 1805–May 7, 1873), engraver, was the son of Ephraim and Lucy (Lane) Andrews, and a descendant in the eighth generation of Thomas Andrews who settled in Hingham prior to 1635. He was apprenticed at an early age (1821) to Abel Bowen, a Boston engraver, from whom he learned to engrave upon wood. His instructions in intaglio or copperplate engraving were received from William Hoogland, one of the early American bank-note engravers, who, at that time, was working with Abel Bowen. In 1827 (or 1829) he became a member of the firm of Carter, Andrews & Company of Lancaster, Mass. This firm did a very prosperous engraving, printing, and publishing business, as many as fourteen engravers being employed at one time, most of whom were engravers on wood. The firm failed as a result of the panic of 1833.

"The Wicked Flee Where No Man Pursueth" is the title of what is said to have been Andrews's first steel plate. This he engraved in 1829, after the painting by Alvan Fisher. Six years later, in 1835, he went to London, where he received instructions from the engraver, Joseph Goodyear. During the nine months he was thus engaged, he engraved, among other works, "Annette de l'Arbre," after W. E. West. He went to Paris with his instructor and while there engraved a head of Benjamin Franklin from the Duplessis portrait now in the Boston Public Library, for the *Works of Franklin*, edited by Jared Sparks. He returned to the United States, but again visited Europe in 1840. During this absence, which lasted two years, he engraved six portrait plates, for the *Galerie Historique de Versailles*, published in Paris under the auspices of Louis Philippe. One of these portraits was that of Cardinal Tencin. At Florence he began the "Duke of Urbino," after Titian, which he finished in the United States. In 1853 he went to Paris for the third time. In 1855 he commenced his chief plate, "Plymouth Rock, 1620," engraved after the painting by Peter Frederick Rothermel. This plate occupied nearly half of his time for fourteen years. His other works include portraits of George Washington, after Gilbert Stuart; Oliver Wolcott, after Trumbull; John Quincy Adams; Zachary Taylor; Jared Sparks, after Stuart; Amos Lawrence, after Harding; Abbot Lawrence, engraved in conjunction with Thomas Kelly for the *Whig Review*, and James Graham, both after G. P. A. Healy; Charles Sprague; Thomas Dowse, after M. Wright; "Crossing the Ford," after Alvan Fisher; "The Panther Scene," after George Loring Brown; "Bargaining for a Horse," after William S. Mount; "Parson Wells and His Wife"; "Christiana and Her Children in the Valley of Death," after Daniel Huntington; "Saul and the Witch of Endor," after Washington Allston; and "Pilgrim's Progress," after Billings.

Andrews is classed among the best American line-engravers and excelled especially in portrait work. From his signed plates it is apparent that he had various business associates during his career in the United States, such as Thomas Kelly, Stephen A. Schoff, H. Wright Smith, W. H. Tappan, and C. E. Wagstaff. He was twice married. The place of his death is given as Boston, Mass., by one authority, and as Hingham, Mass., by another.

["Memoir of Joseph Andrews," by his friend, Sylvester R. Koehler of the Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, in the *Rept. of Proc. at the Memorial Meeting in Honor of the Late Mr. Joseph Andrews*, May 17, 1873; sketch by Mantle Fielding, *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Jan. 1907; check-list of engravings by Mantle Fielding, *Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Apr. 1907. See also C. E. Clement and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century and Their Works* (1879); W. S. Baker, *Engravers and Their Works* (1875); D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907); Mantle Fielding, *Am. Engravers on Copper and Steel* (1917).]

R. C. S.

ANDREWS, LORIN (Apr. 1, 1819–Sept. 18, 1861), college president, was the son of Alanson and Sally (Needham) Andrews, both originally of Massachusetts but, at the time of his birth, among the earliest settlers of Ashland, Ohio. Born in a log cabin, he acquired such education as the local schools could furnish, taught a country school, and in 1837 entered the preparatory department of Kenyon College, at Gambier, Ohio. In 1838 he entered the college in the same class with Rutherford B. Hayes, but withdrew in 1840, owing to lack of money. On Oct. 30, 1843, he married Sarah Gates of Worcester, Mass., by whom he had three children. He taught at Ashland Academy, and at Mansfield, Ohio; then was called back to Ashland as principal of the Academy; then became superintendent of the newly organized "union school" of Massillon, Ohio. He was one of the founders of the Ohio State Teachers' Association, in 1847, and became chairman of its executive committee. In order to devote himself wholly to this work he resigned his teaching position in 1851 (*Ohio Educational Monthly*, Nov. 1861, new series, II, 356 ff.). It was his influence, more than that of any other one man, that secured the adoption of the excellent "School Law of 1853," and through his incessant lecturing before teachers' institutes he showed the teachers how their work should be done, and filled many of them with enthusiasm for their profession. Under the new school law a state school commissioner was to be elected; Andrews was the unanimous choice of the teachers, but failed to obtain the nomination. Thereupon, in 1853, the trustees of Kenyon College elected him president of that institution. Here his success was remarkable; he brought up the college, both in number of students and in financial strength, to the most prosperous condition it had ever known. In 1861, immediately upon President Lincoln's call for volunteers, he enlisted, and is believed to have been the first volunteer in Ohio. His example was followed by hundreds of teachers and other men, who had become accustomed to look to him for leadership. He raised, in Knox County, Ohio, a company of soldiers that was soon incorporated into the 4th Ohio Volunteer Infantry, of which he was made colonel. In the summer of 1861, before the regiment had seen much service, he was taken with "camp fever" in West Virginia, and was carried home to Gambier, Ohio, where he died. Great numbers of people from all parts of the state attended his funeral and saw his body laid to rest in the college cemetery, where a marble obelisk now marks his grave.

[Alfred Andrews, *Geneal. Hist. of John and Mary Andrews* (1872); G. W. Hill, *Hist. of Ashland County* (1880), pp. 208–10; an article by O. T. Corson in C. B. Galbreath's *Hist. of Ohio* (1825), I, 462; Geo. F. Smythe, *Kenyon Coll., Its First Century* (1924), p. 154; memorial sermon by Rev. Samuel Clements in the *Western Episcopalian*, Oct. 3, 1861; and Bishop C. P. McIlvaine's remarks to the convention of the Diocese of Ohio, printed in the jour. of the convention of 1862, p. 29.]

G. F. S.

ANDREWS, LORRIN (Apr. 29, 1795–Sept. 29, 1868), missionary, educator, was born in a Congregational home in East Windsor (now Vernon), Conn. After finishing the work of local schools, he studied in Jefferson College (now Washington and Jefferson), Pa., and received his B.A. Having decided meanwhile upon the ministry as a career, he entered Princeton Theological Seminary and finished his course there in 1825. He was ordained on Sept. 21, 1827, at Washington, Ky. In the autumn of 1827 the American Board, of Boston, commissioned a reinforcement of sixteen persons for the Hawaiian Islands Mission. The company sailed from Boston on Nov. 3, aboard the *Parthian*, Capt. Blinn, and passing around Cape Horn reached Honolulu, Mar. 30, 1828. Among the number were Andrews and Mary Wilson, his new bride. Within a month of his arrival he was assigned to the station at Lahaina, on the western shore of the island of Maui. He undertook his work in the spirit of a previous meeting of the Hawaiian missionaries which had decided that their service was "for life." For a while, language study took much of his time. In 1829 the first stone church on the islands was completed at Lahaina, 104 by 50 feet in size, and dedicated at the request of Hoapili, the governor, with the name "Ebenezer."

In 1831 the Mission decided to put into operation a high school for the training of teachers, the Hawaiian government coöperating in the enterprise. This school, accordingly, was opened in September of the same year at Lahainaluna, or "Upper Lahaina," two miles inland and 700 feet above the port. Andrews was assigned to the principalship of the school, an office which he held for ten years. The first year of the new "missionary seminary" began with twenty-five young men enrolled and closed with sixty-seven. A course of four years was projected. It was the school's design not only to prepare native schoolteachers, but also promising natives to become assistant teachers and ministers of religion, "to disseminate sound knowledge through the islands," and to render the population "a thinking, enlightened and virtuous people," in the words of the Board's official report. Within a few years industrial training became a feature of the school. Printing was undertaken. On Feb. 14, 1834 Andrews published the first Hawaiian newspaper. He taught himself from books the process of cop-

perplate engraving and established, at his own cost, a considerable engraving enterprise, begging copper at first from passing ships.

For a time the new station of Lahainaluna was part of the old Lahaina, but in 1835 it had grown to independence, and Andrews was the senior missionary. Along with his work as teacher and industrialist, he gave attention to translation of the entire Bible into the Hawaiian tongue. He also acted for a time (1837) as teacher and interpreter for certain Hawaiian chiefs, having obtained from the Mission "conditional dismission" therefor. He had already considered the matter of teaching both the king and the chiefs politics, law, and political economy. In 1841 he offered the Board his unconditional resignation, and turned eventually to government service in which he saw a wider and more congenial field of labor. The immediate occasion for the resignation was his objection to the receipt by the Mission Board of contributions from slaveholders. For a time he filled the post of seaman's chaplain at Lahaina. In 1845 he removed to Honolulu and accepted appointment as judge in the government court in cases involving foreigners. Constitutional government had previously been established and the independence of the islands recognized by the powers. In 1846 he was made a member of the privy council, serving for several years as secretary and keeping the records both in English and Hawaiian. In 1848 he was appointed a member of the superior court of law and equity, and in 1852 became first associate justice of the supreme court. He resigned in 1855 from the supreme court and was made judge of the court of probate and divorce with jurisdiction throughout the islands. In 1859 he retired on a government pension of $1,000 yearly. The last years of his life were devoted to research and authorship. His research into ancient meles, or songs, and the traditions of the Hawaiian people is said to have been probably more extensive than that of any other missionary. In 1865 he published a Hawaiian dictionary of some 17,000 words, the collection of which he had begun as early as 1835. He was the author also of a Hawaiian grammar. He was, according to island testimony, "a thorough and profound scholar." He had wide interests, was well read, extremely conscientious, and though diffident was highly respected by all. Shortly before his death he became nearly blind, but continued his work through an amanuensis. He died in Honolulu, leaving, in the words of the American Board report for 1869, "a noble record."

[Hiram Bingham, *A Residence of Twenty-One Years in the Sandwich Islands* (1847), pp. 325 ff.; Rev. and Mrs. O. H. Gulick, *The Pilgrims of Hawaii* (1918); Rufus Anderson, *Hist. of the Sandwich Islands Mission* (1870), pp. 362–63; Rufus Anderson, *The Hawaiian Islands* (1864), pp. 70, 181, 187, 261–68; *The Centennial Bk. One Hundred Years of Christian Civilization in Hawaii* (1920), pp. 40–41.]

J.C.A.

ANDREWS, SAMUEL JAMES (July 31, 1817–Oct. 11, 1906), clergyman in the Catholic Apostolic Church, was born and brought up in an atmosphere of piety. His father, William, was one of the earliest graduates of Middlebury College, Vt., and an influential Congregational minister in various churches in that state. By his wife, Sarah Parkhill, of Massachusetts, he had six sons, of whom five became distinguished clergymen. Samuel, born in Danbury, brought up in Cornwall, graduated from Williams College in 1839, studied law, and was admitted to the bar in Connecticut, Ohio, and New York, and opened an office in New York City. After a year of practise he turned to the ministry, taking a year or more of study in Lane Theological Seminary, Cincinnati, and was licensed to preach in 1846. He supplied the Congregational Church in Terryville, Conn., for a year and in 1848 was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in East Windsor, Conn., where he served seven years without special incident. His resignation was the result of his accepting the doctrine and beliefs of the Catholic Apostolic Church, an organization which had grown out of the "speaking with tongues" and other spiritual manifestations in Edward Irving's church in London 1830–32, and which looked forward to the second coming of Christ in the immediate future. Andrews was probably influenced by the similar step taken by his eldest brother, William Watson Andrews [*q.v.*], in the previous year. He continued to support this religious body with tongue and pen until the end of his life. For more than thirty years he was an angel (*i.e.* pastor) of a parish in Hartford, Conn. He was also at various times an instructor in philosophy in Trinity College, Hartford. His published works include *The Life of Our Lord Upon the Earth* (1862); *William Watson Andrews: A Religious Biography* (1900); *Christianity and Anti-Christianity in Their Final Conflict* (1898); *God's Revelation of Himself* (2nd ed., 1901); *Man and the Incarnation* (1905); *The Church and its Organic Ministries*, an open letter to the Right Rev. John Williams, P. E. Bishop of Conn. He was an able and active member of the Society of Biblical Exegesis and Literature. His appearance and air were those of the scholar. He was married to Catherine Augusta Day of Hartford, Apr. 15, 1850.

[*Hartford Courant, Hartford Times*, Oct. 12, 1906; *Williams Record* (Williams Coll.), Oct. 18, 1906.]

S.S.

ANDREWS, SHERLOCK JAMES (Nov. 17, 1801–Feb. 11, 1880), lawyer, congressman, was born at Wallingford, Conn., the son of a distinguished physician, Dr. John Andrews. He was educated at Cheshire Academy and at Union College, graduating at the latter in 1821. After studying law he settled in Cleveland, Ohio, in 1825, and was married in 1828 to Ursula McCurdy Allen, who also came of a well-known Connecticut family. His marked ability speedily won him a distinguished position at the bar. Of a distinguished presence, witty and learned, with a remarkable vocabulary, he achieved an enviable reputation as an orator. He took a prominent part in the early development of Cleveland, serving as the first president of the city council and of the public-library board, as one of the original promoters of the Cleveland & Pittsburgh Railway, and as a leader in many other undertakings. His public career began in 1840 when he was elected to Congress on the Whig platform. Ill health compelled him to resign his seat in May 1842, but not until he had definitely taken his stand beside John Quincy Adams in the fight against the suppression of anti-slavery petitions. In 1848 he was appointed judge of the superior court of Cleveland, an office he filled with distinction until it was abolished. In the Ohio constitutional convention of 1850–51 he was an influential member, and fought especially for the rights of the colored race. The situation was a critical one, for, with the Democrats in control of the convention, there was real danger that the "Black Code" of Ohio might be restored. Leading the fight against a proposal to prohibit the immigration of free negroes into Ohio, Andrews made a speech that was a model of its kind, voicing the determined opposition of the Western Reserve to the proposed measure, yet recognizing the view-point of southern Ohio. Such moderate and tactful leadership won the day, and the measure was voted down (*Official Reports, Ohio Constitutional Convention,* 1851, p. 1227). In the next struggle, in favor of granting the negro the suffrage, Andrews found the opposition too powerful (*Ibid.,* pp. 1256–58). He was chosen as one of the attorneys to defend the men who rescued a negro, John Price, from the slave catchers, at Wellington, Ohio, in 1859 (*Publications of the Western Reserve Historical Society,* No. 101, p. 156). His last public office was that of delegate to the constitutional convention of 1873. Here his long experience and his high standing throughout Ohio made him easily a leader, and he became chairman of the important committee on the judicial department. Under his leadership important and extensive judicial reforms were drawn up and incorporated in the proposed constitution. The electorate did not see fit to ratify the new frame of government, but Andrews's committee had led the way for future legislation upon the judiciary.

[*In Memoriam, Sherlock James Andrews* (1880); *Bench and Bar of Ohio,* ed. by George Irving Reed (1897), II, 100–3; James H. Kennedy, *Hist. of the City of Cleveland, 1796–1896* (1896); Samuel P. Orth, *Hist. of Cleveland* (1910), vol. I, *passim;* Harvey Rice, "Western Reserve Jurists," *Mag. of Western Hist.,* June 1885.] B. W. B—d.

ANDREWS, SIDNEY (Oct. 7, 1835–Apr. 10, 1880), journalist, was the oldest of four children born to Charles Henry Andrews and Nancy (Noble) Andrews. His early years were spent in Sheffield, Mass., where his father followed the trade of carpenter and joiner until his death in 1846. After the father's death young Andrews left Massachusetts to join a relative in Dixon, Ill. He attended the University of Michigan 1856–59 but was forced to withdraw before he received his degree, owing to the failure of the bank in which he had placed his earnings. From the age of thirteen he had written for the press, and upon leaving college he served as assistant editor and later as editor of the *Daily Courier,* Alton, Ill. In the early mining days he followed the gold rush to Colorado, but during the Civil War drifted to Washington where he became an attendant in the Senate. In Washington he made valuable friends and had a successful career as a journalist. From 1864 to 1869 he was special correspondent for the *Chicago Tribune* and the *Boston Advertiser,* writing under the name "Dixon." September–November 1865 he visited the Carolinas and Georgia as special correspondent, and his letters to the Boston and Chicago papers were brought together in 1866 in a 400-page volume—*The South Since the War,* his most notable achievement. Andrews's observations in the South were intelligent and orderly and the book furnished valuable information on the social and political conditions in the states he visited. His conclusions were, however, flavored with anti-Southern sentiment. (For review see the *Nation,* Apr. 26, 1866, II, 532–33.) In January and February 1869 he wrote a series of five letters to the *Boston Advertiser* on the treaty with Denmark, then before the Senate, for the purchase of St. Thomas and St. John Islands, contending that in view of the initiative taken in the negotiations by the State Department the Senate should ratify the treaty. These letters were so pleasing to the Danes, who were urging ratification, that they were published in pamphlet form by Gen. C. T. Christensen, Danish consul at New York (*The St. Thomas Treaty —A Series of Letters to the Boston Advertiser,*

1869). A severe illness in 1869 compelled Andrews to give up his newspaper work in Washington. During his convalescence he removed to Boston. In 1870 he contributed two articles on the Chinese as immigrants—"Wo Lee and His Kinsfolk" and "The Gods of Wo Lee"—to the *Atlantic Monthly* (XXV, 223, 469). For six months (1871) he was on the staff of *Every Saturday*. In 1872 he was appointed private secretary to Gov. William Washburn with whom he had formed a friendship in Washington. In 1874 he was made secretary to the Massachusetts Board of State Charities and held that position until the office was abolished in 1879. His death occurred the next year. Andrews was of medium height, had dark-brown hair, brown eyes, and wore a beard. He was twice married: to Hila Maria Breeze, November 1866; to Sarah Lucretia Washburn, a distant connection of Gov. Washburn, November 1873.

[Biography above based on information from Mrs. Andrews; obituaries in *Boston Transcript* and *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Apr. 12, 1880. L. M. Boltwood, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Family of Thomas Noble* (1878), p. 479, and Allibone's *Dict. of Authors* (1899), vol. I, supp., p. 41, give brief, inaccurate sketches.] I. S. H.

ANDREWS, STEPHEN PEARL (Mar. 22, 1812–May 21, 1886), reformer and eccentric philosopher, was born in Templeton, Mass., the youngest of the nine children of the Rev. Elisha Andrews and Wealthy Ann (Lathrop) Andrews. The strong moral energy characteristic of the family, shown by his father and brothers (see W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the American Baptist Pulpit*, 1860, pp. 268–76) and above all by his nephew, Elisha Benjamin Andrews [*q.v.*], appeared in Stephen Pearl Andrews as a more radical reforming spirit. At the age of nineteen he joined his elder brother, Thomas, in New Orleans, studied law, and was admitted to the bar. Both of the brothers were ardent abolitionists; Thomas aided the cause by marrying a Southern lady of wealth and carrying her and her slaves to the free soil of Illinois, while Stephen Pearl worked out a plan of manumission by purchase from a fund to be controlled by the government. He was married in New Orleans in 1835. Removing to Houston, Tex., in 1839, within three years he rose to an outstanding position at the bar but became very unpopular because of his fearless opposition to slavery. In 1843 his house was mobbed, and he, with his wife and infant son, managed to escape only by a dangerous twenty-mile night drive across flooded prairies. He immediately went to England in the endeavor to raise there the money necessary for the purchase of the slaves in the form of a loan from Great Britain to Texas. Lord Aberdeen, Lord Palmerston, and other influential men were at first favorably inclined toward his project but dropped it when Andrews was repudiated by Ashbel Smith, Texan Chargé d'Affaires.

If Andrews's efforts on behalf of anti-slavery had thus failed, there were at least other philanthropic enterprises to be undertaken. During his stay in England, he became enthusiastically interested in the short-hand system of Isaac Pitman and determined to introduce it in America. He returned to Boston and at once opened a school of phonography. In 1847 he moved to New York, added spelling reform to the list of his interests, edited two magazines printed in phonetic type, the *Anglo-Saxon* and the *Propagandist*, and, in collaboration with Augustus F. Boyle, compiled and published *The Comprehensive Phonographic Class-Book* (1845) and *The Phonographic Reader* (1845) each of which ran to sixteen editions within ten years. A linguist of amazing ability, reputed to be master of thirty-two languages, including Hebrew, Sanskrit, and Chinese, he was active in stimulating interest in foreign languages at a time when little progress had been made by American schools in that direction. In 1854 he brought out his *Discoveries in Chinese; or, the Symbolism of the Primitive Characters of the Chinese System of Writing as a Contribution to Philology and Ethnology and a Practical Aid in the Acquisition of the Chinese Language;* later he devised an international language that he called Alwato—a forerunner of Volapük and Esperanto (*Primary Grammar of Alwato*, 1877).

So far were these various undertakings from exhausting Andrews's energies, however, that in his own view they were all entirely subsidiary to his great achievement, the establishment of nothing less than "Universology," a deductive science of the universe. He had worked at this intermittently ever since his Louisiana days, and it was at last formulated in *The Basic Outline of Universology* (1877), a vast chaotic volume which remains one of the curiosities of philosophical literature. Because of the semi-anarchistic character of the ideal society of which he dreamed—which he called the "Pantarchy"—Andrews, in his later years, became a leader among the radical groups in New York City. The Colloquium, a society for free discussion, was started by him in 1882 and he was a prominent figure in the Manhattan Liberal Club. He died still deeming himself the founder of the most important of all the sciences, still supposing that the social millennium, for which he had striven in such various ways, was close at hand.

[*Appleton's Annual Cyc. for 1886* (1887); *N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Herald*, May 23, 1886; Jesse S. Reeves, *Am.*

Diplomacy under Tyler and Polk (1907), p. 126; Ephraim D. Adams, *Brit. Interests and Activities in Texas* (1910), p. 137; *Brit. Diplomatic Correspondence Concerning the Republic of Tex.*, ed. by Ephraim D. Adams, pp. 261–62; [575] Cor. on Slave Trade, 1843, enc. in No. 454, *Parl. Papers* (1844), vol. XLIX; Julius E. Rockwell, *The Teaching Practice and Literature of Shorthand* (1884); John T. Trowbridge, "A Reminiscence of the Pantarch," in the *Independent*, Feb. 26, 1903; Laura Stedman and Geo. M. Gould, *Life and Letters of Edmund Clarence Stedman* (1910), vol. I, ch. 7.]

W.B.S.
E.S.B.

ANDREWS, WILLIAM LORING (Sept. 9, 1837–Mar. 19, 1920), bibliophile, was born in New York City, where he lived for above eighty years. He was the son of Loring and Caroline (Delamater) Andrews, a grandson of Constant A. Andrews, and a direct descendant of William Andrews, one of the Davenport Company which sailed from Boston in 1638 and settled the Town of Quinnipiac which they afterward called New Haven. Educated at private schools because of delicate health, Andrews engaged in his father's long-established leather business which prospered under his active management. He became in time a director of the Continental Fire Insurance Company, a trustee of the Bank for Savings, and a trustee of New York University. He acquired an enviable position in the business world, where his ability, character, and trustworthiness secured for him success and general confidence. On Oct. 17, 1860 he was married to Jane E. Crane, daughter of Theodore Crane of New York City. He retired from active business in 1877. The next year he became a trustee of the Metropolitan Museum and helped to found its library. For eleven years he was one of the managers of the House of Refuge on Randall's Island. At his residence on Feb. 5, 1884, the name Grolier was adopted for the famous Book Club of which he was one of the moving spirits. In 1895 he founded the Society of Iconophiles of New York. Long a lover of books, throughout his life he busied himself in collecting rarities in English and American literature, and in 1865 began the publication of his deservedly famous printed editions of the books from his own pen, published in his own taste, through his own direction, and marked by exquisite taste in type, paper, illustration, and binding. He engaged in their production the services of E. D. French and S. L. Smith as engravers and the active interest of Walter Gillias and Theodore De Vinne in their printing. From 1865 up to 1908 he had issued thirty-six volumes of which all but ten were from his own pen. Many of them were important and all of them distinguished by the beauty and appropriateness of their format. Among the more important titles were *Roger Payne and His Art* (1892); *Jean Grolier* (1892); *Among My Books* (1894); *An Essay on the Portraiture of the American Revolutionary War* (1896); *A Journey of the Iconophiles Around New York* (1897); *New Amsterdam, New Orange, New York* (1897); *Gossip About Book-Collecting* (1900); *Paul Revere and His Engravings* (1901); *New York as Washington Knew It After the Revolution* (1905); *An English XIXth Century Sportsman* (1906).

["In Memoriam William Loring Andrews," *Year Bk. of the Grolier Club, 1921*, with appendix containing bibliography of Andrews's books; *Cat. William Loring Andrews Coll. Early Books in Yale Univ.* (1913); A. Growall, *Am. Bk. Clubs* (1897); William T. Bonner, *N. Y. the World's Metropolis* (1924), pp. 474, 724; James Grant Wilson, *Memorial Hist. of the City of N. Y.* (1893), IV, 126; *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 21, 1920.]

B.H—t.

ANDREWS, WILLIAM WATSON (Feb. 26, 1810–Oct. 17, 1897), clergyman in the Catholic Apostolic Church, descended from William Andrews, one of the first settlers of New Haven, Conn., was the son of William Andrews, a Congregational minister of Connecticut, and Sarah (Parkhill) Andrews, of Massachusetts. He was the eldest of six sons and was born in Windham, Conn. At the age of fourteen he was ready to enter Yale, but his youth and family financial limitations turned him for a time toward teaching. In 1828 he entered Yale as a sophomore, a classmate of Noah Porter, with whom a close and lifelong friendship was formed. He graduated in 1831 with high standing in scholarship, especially in English and debate. During his last year he came under special religious influence which turned him from the law to the ministry. After three years of teaching, and of studying divinity under his father, he was ordained on May 21, 1834 as pastor of the Congregational Church in Kent, Conn., where he remained for fifteen years. His resignation was due to his departure from the religious denomination of his father and brothers. For a number of years he had been interested in and attracted to a religious movement in Great Britain, whose adherents were commonly called "Irvingites," from the name of its foremost advocate, but later and better known as the Catholic Apostolic Church. The founders believed its form of organization would conduce to the union of Christendom and that their body was a special receptacle and instrument of the presence and power of the Holy Spirit. The imminent and visible coming of Christ was the chief tenet. Into this movement Andrews cast his lot sincerely and unreservedly. A pastorate of eight years in Potsdam, N. Y., was followed by thirty or more years of labor as an evangelist, requiring extensive traveling in the United States

and Canada. Even with his eloquence and earnestness the results were negligible, but he never lost faith in his beliefs or despaired of their ultimate triumph, although disappointed at its delay. The latter part of his life he resided in Wethersfield, Conn. His published works comprise more than thirty sermons, addresses, books and magazine contributions, mainly pertaining to the Catholic Apostolic Church. He was twice married: on July 24, 1833, to Mary A. Given; and in July 1858, to Elizabeth Byrne Williams.

[*Yale Obit. Record* (1898); S. J. Andrews, *William Watson Andrews: A Religious Biog.* (1900); *Hartford Times*, Oct. 18, 1897.] S. S.

ANDROS, SIR EDMUND (Dec. 6, 1637–February 1714), is best known to American history as a colonial governor, having served first as the Duke's appointee in New York, then as royal governor of the consolidated northern colonies, and finally as governor of Virginia. His military training and experience made him a very valuable official at a time when defense of the colonies was one of England's chief concerns, but the background of his life somewhat unfitted him for understanding certain colonial conditions. The son of Amice Andros and Elizabeth (Stone) Andros, he belonged to the feudal aristocracy of Guernsey, where his family held many positions of authority. Upon the death of his father in 1674 he became bailiff of the island and lord of the seigneurie of Sausmarez. A few years later he added to his estates the island of Alderney. He began his colonial career by serving as major in Sir Tobias Bridge's regiment of foot sent in 1666 to the West Indies to protect the islands against the Dutch. Through the influence of the Earl of Craven, a relative of his wife, he was made landgrave in Carolina in 1672 under that most aristocratic of colonial governmental schemes, the Fundamental Constitutions. He received four baronies, an estate of about 48,000 acres of land, but he appears to have shown no further interest in this enterprise. He is next heard of as a friend of the Duke of York. After the restoration of the Duke's New York propriety by the Dutch in 1674, Andros was appointed governor of the province and captain of a company of 100 foot soldiers. He handled very skilfully the chief problems of government—defense, boundary disputes with Connecticut, and post-war political and racial readjustments—but certain discrepancies in his financial reports caused the Duke to send over a special commission to investigate his administration. Andros was exonerated and a decidedly favorable report made to the Duke. Although he was not sent back to New York as governor he received many marks of favor at court. He was knighted about 1681, made Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to the king in 1683, and in 1685 was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the Princess of Denmark's regiment of horse under the command of the Earl of Scarsdale.

Meanwhile, James II was completing the plan begun under Charles II for consolidating the New England colonies into one royal province. The king's long struggle to curb the growing independence of Massachusetts had ended in 1684 in the annulling of that colony's charter, leaving the path open for a more comprehensive colonial policy than was possible with so many small separate colonies. Such a policy was badly needed, particularly for defense. Commercial expansion had made France and England each jealous of the other's American colonial possessions and eager for control of the fur trade of North America, which centered in the Five Nations strategically situated on the New York frontier. Each was alert to snatch any advantage which might be offered, yet at the same time reluctant to take the offensive. In such a critical situation, defense of the New York and New England frontiers was of paramount importance, a fact which the little individualistic New England colonies could not see. It therefore behooved England to take such action as would bring the military forces of those colonies under a single command and make available their combined resources for concentration on the weakest spots. Massachusetts; Maine, once the property of the Massachusetts Bay Company; New Hampshire, a royal province; Plymouth, an independent but charterless colony; and King's Province (the old Narragansett Country), were all now in the king's hands. Rhode Island and Connecticut were needed to make the plan complete, but they were legally protected by their charters against such action. Flaws in their fulfilment of charter obligations were sought and found, and they submitted to regulation without defending their charter at law. These seven provinces comprised the Dominion of New England. The king now sought a man for royal governor whose military experience would enable him to build up a strong defense against the French. Sir Edmund Andros, whose latest service had been to lead a troop of horse against the rebels in Monmouth's rebellion, was chosen. Upon his arrival at Boston in December 1686 he took over the reigns of government from Joseph Dudley, who had been put temporarily in charge of the Dominion.

The most conspicuous feature of this new province was the absence of a representative assembly,

the administration of government being entrusted to the governor and a council consisting of royal appointees from every colony included in the Dominion. That this body should tax the community seemed, to the supporters of charter rule, contrary to Magna Charta. The first levy met with resistance in Essex County, Mass., Ipswich being the chief transgressor. This mutiny in the new ship of state Andros put down with firmness and severity. The New England frontier was for the most part quiet after he assumed control, but New York was still harassed by the French and their Indian allies. The governor's urgent appeals for help brought the Lords of Trade to sudden decision in 1688 to abandon the idea of forming a second group of colonies consisting of New York, the Jerseys, Pennsylvania, and Maryland, and instead, to add the two former to the Dominion of New England. Danger to the security of the Dominion, however, lay less in the menace of the French than in the discontent of the theocrats of the Puritan colonies, who fanatically expected the Lord to restore their "judges." Sir Edmund had at the outset the support of the merchants and large landowners throughout the Dominion because they wished to inaugurate a régime of commerce and business. Unfortunately, he alienated the merchants by his too vigorous enforcement of the navigation acts and conservative financial policy, at the same time stirring the landowners against him by his introduction of the English system of landholding and by his lack of sympathy with their schemes for land speculation. Loss of their support made possible the success of a movement against the Dominion. Under the leadership of Cotton Mather and other Puritan divines, a plot was hatched at Boston, probably instigated by Increase Mather, then in England seeking reforms of government. Upon hearing of the landing of William of Orange, the people of Boston rose and seized all of the Dominion officers who could be found, including Andros himself. Plymouth, Connecticut, and Rhode Island followed Massachusetts in resuming charter government, while New Hampshire and Maine were again brought under the rule of Massachusetts. The revolt spread to New York by way of Long Island and soon the Dominion was completely at an end. The prisoners after a long delay were sent to England for a hearing, but were acquitted, the agents of Massachusetts having refused to sign the charges.

That Sir Edmund's reputation with the Crown did not suffer from his New England experience is shown by his appointment as governor of Virginia in 1692, a post which he filled with success. Randolph reported in 1693 that Virginia "of all the Gomts I have passed thro' has the onely face of peace & Good Gomts" (Goodrick, *Edward Randolph,* VII, 433). To be sure, Commissary Blair complained that Andros was indifferent to the needs of the Anglican Church and the new college of William and Mary, but no charge of mismanagement of government was brought against him. In 1697 Sir Edmund resigned his post and returned to England. In 1704 he was made lieutenant-governor of Guernsey, an appointment against which the jurats of the court of the island protested because he already held the office of bailiff. They declared that to have "the whole power as well civil as Military" lodged in the same person was "an infringement of their Rights." In 1706 Sir Edmund retired from office and spent the rest of his days in London, where he died in February 1714.

His personality has been little understood because attention has always been focused on the policies of his administration which were distasteful to the theocrats, policies which, for the most part, were not of his own choosing but dictated by the Lords of Trade. He was essentially a soldier, and where soldierly qualities were needed his rule was excellent; but he lacked understanding of business affairs and of Puritan psychology. His aristocratic background allowed him little faith in democratic institutions, and his experience with the contentious Dominion council led him often abruptly to silence lengthy and unprofitable debates. He was impatient and at times brusque, but one does not hear of him such tales of violence as are associated with many other colonial governors of his day. There is no evidence of his ever having turned his position of authority to personal profit. To his friends he was a person of great charm, but he never understood or enjoyed the humbly born. That England valued his services is shown by his long years in office and his appointment to difficult posts. Though not popular with advocates of democratic government, nevertheless he was one of the ablest English colonial governors of the seventeenth century.

[The best short life of Sir Edmund Andros is that by W. H. Whitmore in vol. I of the *Andros Tracts.* A detailed account of his administration of government in New England may be found in Viola F. Barnes, *Dominion of New England* (1923). For a thorough knowledge of his whole career it will be well to consult the following source material: *Docs. Rel. to the Col. Hist. of N.Y.* vol. III (1853), ed. by E. B. O'Callaghan; "Andros Records," ed. by Robert Toppan in *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* n.s., XIII, 237–68, 463–99; *Laws of New Hampshire,* I (1904), ed. by A. S. Batchellor (containing Andros's commission and instructions as governor of New England, and the laws passed by the Dominion Council); *Andros Tracts* (Prince Soc., 1868), three vols.; *Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series; Edward Randolph,* ed. by Robert Toppan (Prince Soc., 1898–99).]

V.F.B.

ANGEL, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN (Nov. 28, 1815–Sept. 11, 1894), lawyer, diplomat, the son of Benjamin and Abigail (Stickney) Angel, was a descendant of Thomas Angell, who came to Boston with Roger Williams in 1631. He was born at Burlington, Otsego County, N. Y., and received his early education there and at Exeter. In 1830 he entered the Livingston County High School at Geneseo, N. Y., but weak eyesight compelled him to abandon the hope of a university course. He taught school for a short time and in 1834 commenced the study of law at Hudson, N. Y. At a comparatively early age he had taken an active interest in politics on the Democratic side and was appointed surrogate of Livingston County, Mar. 23, 1836, serving four years in that position and being admitted to the bar in 1837. Though young, he proved an extremely efficient official and after the presidential election of 1844, when the Democratic party regained power in the state, he was reappointed surrogate, continuing to hold office until, under the constitution of 1846, his duties were merged in those of the county judge. In 1848 he was appointed master in chancery and supreme court commissioner. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at Baltimore in 1852. At about this period his health gave way and in 1853, in the hope of benefiting by a change of climate, he accepted an appointment by President Pierce as United States consul at Honolulu. He went to his post in June 1853 and remained there eighteen months, but the United States Senate failed to ratify the appointment. In 1855, accordingly, the President sent him to China as special envoy and commissioner to settle if possible a controversy between the Chinese customs officials and some American merchants who had refused to pay customs export duties. After executing this mission satisfactorily, he returned to the United States by way of the East Indies, making an extended tour in Egypt and Europe. He described his experiences in letters to the press which aroused great interest. In 1856 he was the Democratic nominee from Livingston County for Congress. Though defeated, his party was successful nationally, and one of the first acts of President Buchanan was to appoint him minister resident to Norway and Sweden. He remained in this post till the change of administration in 1861, returning home in 1862. He did not resume practise but took up farming on a large scale at Geneseo. His last appearance in the political arena was as a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at Chicago in 1864. He was president of the New York State Agricultural Society in 1873. His latter years were spent in retirement on his Geneseo estate, where he died. He was married twice and was survived by three children.

[James Hadden Smith, *Hist. of Livingston County, N.Y.* (1881), p. 392; L. L. Doty, *Hist. of Livingston County, N. Y.* (1876); obituaries in the N. Y. press of Sept. 13, 1894, most of them containing inaccuracies.]

H. W. H. K.

ANGELA, MOTHER (Feb. 21, 1824–Mar. 4, 1887), educator and religious superior, christened Eliza Maria Gillespie, was descended from Neal Gillespie, who was probably born in Argyleshire, Scotland, and Eleanor Dougherty of County Donegal, Ireland, both Catholics, who came to America, and settled in Pennsylvania about 1777. Eliza was born near Brownsville, Pa. From her parents, John Purcell Gillespie and Mary Madeleine Miers, she drew much of her deep devotion to religion and charity. A frail and delicate child, she displayed unusual talents from her earliest years. She attended a select school at home, and then was sent to the school of the Dominican Sisters at Somerset, Ohio. After her father's death, her mother, having removed to Lancaster, Ohio, where she had relatives, married William Phelan, a wealthy landowner. In 1841, at the age of seventeen, Eliza, with her cousin Ellen Ewing, the future Mrs. W. T. Sherman, was sent to the Visitation Convent school at Georgetown, D. C. Here the young girl formed friendships with many who later became distinguished women at home or abroad. Graduating in 1842, she taught for a while at an Episcopalian seminary in St. Mary's County, Md., and then organized a Catholic school at her home town of Lancaster.

Intellectual culture, charity, and religious devotion were the dominating ideals of her life. In 1853 she set out for Chicago, determined to devote herself unreservedly to the pursuit of these ideals by becoming a Sister of Mercy. On the way she stopped to see her brother Neal, a seminarian at Notre Dame, Ind., where Father Edward Sorin [*q.v.*], recognizing at a glance her superior qualities, persuaded her to remain and join the Sisters of the Holy Cross, who had established a convent and academy a few miles away at Bertrand, Mich. After a novitiate in France, she returned within a year and became the head of the academy. For almost thirty years, as Mother Mary of St. Angela, she remained the superior of the Sisters of the Holy Cross in the United States. With the cooperation of Father Sorin, the ecclesiastical superior, she raised the Community from its humble beginnings to the position of one of the strongest religious organizations of Catholic women in the country. She knew how to attract and train religious-minded young women, and she gradually widened the opportunities for educational, char-

itable, and religious work. Removing the academy and mother-house from Bertrand to a beautiful property near the historic La Salle Portage, a mile west of Notre Dame University, she set to work to develop there, in St. Mary's Academy, a school that should be second to none in the higher education of girls. Contrary to the prevailing view and practise, she believed that this education ought to be fully equal to that of boys, and therefore not only encouraged painting and other fine arts, but also strongly emphasized the development of intelligence and reason. While thus engaged, she found time and means to establish numerous other academies modeled upon St. Mary's; she supplied teachers to parish schools, edited a series of Catholic school books, and cooperated with Father Sorin in the founding of the *Ave Maria,* for which she wrote and translated.

In pursuance of her ideals of charity, Mother Angela founded several important hospitals. Her greatest opportunity in this direction came with the outbreak of the Civil War, during which, while continuing to direct the educational and religious activities of the Community, she was busily engaged in supervising the work of her Sisters in military hospitals at Paducah, Louisville, Memphis, Cairo, Mound City, Washington, and other places, as well as their employment on river transports and hospital boats. The services of Mother Angela and her Sisters in the hospitals and on the battle-fields of the Civil War formed one of the brightest chapters in the record of the ministrations of mercy and charity during the great struggle.

[In the archives of the mother-house, St. Mary's, Notre Dame, Ind., there are a number of important MSS. relating to Mother Angela which have been consulted in preparing the above sketch, chief among them being "A Geneal. Sketch of the Gillespies," by John G. Ewing (twelve pages); "Items relating to the Life of Mother Mary Angela" (eighty pages); "Memoir of Mother Angela," by Eleanor Ewing Brown (eight folio typewritten pages), containing biog. material derived from Mother Angela and persons close to her; "Mother Angela" (two pages), chiefly chronological data. The booklet, *In Memoriam—Mother Mary of St. Angela,* is important for her views and work as an educator and her Civil War services. An excellent sketch of her as a religious superior is to be found in *A Story of Fifty Years,* an hist. account of the Sisters of the Holy Cross. An account of the growth and work of the Community is also to be found in *The Cath. Ch. in the U. S. of Am.* (1914), II, 249–60; also in the *Cath. Encyc.* (1913), VII, 405.]

J. A. B.

ANGELL, GEORGE THORNDIKE (June 5, 1823–Mar. 16, 1909), reformer, was born in Southbridge, Mass., the son of Rev. George Angell and Rebekah (Thorndike) Angell. His mother was left a widow when their only child was four years old. As her financial resources were small, she became a teacher in private schools, the boy being kept during the next ten years in the homes of relatives and friends in various parts of New England. His employment at fourteen in a dry-goods house in Boston was followed by attendance at a boarding-school in Meriden, N. H. In 1842 he entered Brown University, but changed a year later to Dartmouth College. On graduation in 1846 he went to Boston, where he taught school and studied law until 1851, when he was admitted to the bar and began to practise. For a short time he was in partnership with Benjamin F. Brooks and for a longer time with Samuel E. Sewall. In 1868 he retired with sufficient capital for his ordinary needs and enough to spare to enable him to contribute largely to the philanthropic enterprises which from now on engaged most of his attention.

Stirred by accounts of a race in which two horses had been driven to death over rough roads from Brighton to Worcester, he appealed in the newspapers for help in taking hold of "this business," as he called it, and putting an end to it. He was joined by Mr. and Mrs. William Appleton and other prominent citizens, and at a meeting in his office the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals came into existence. Though Angell regarded Mrs. Appleton as co-founder, her name was not used in the articles of incorporation, for "public opinion had not then reached the point when it was deemed judicious to make this use of a lady's name." The Society was successful in securing legislation and actively assisted in law enforcement. Its educational functions were later taken over by the American Humane Educational Society, through which Angell conducted a varied and incessant campaign to further the ideas expressed on its shield: "Glory to God, Peace on Earth, Kindness, Justice and Mercy to Every Living Creature." He established a periodical, *Our Dumb Animals* (vol. I, no. 1, June, 2, 1868). The Society published the first American edition of *Black Beauty* and in all distributed more than a million copies. It also published *Beautiful Joe,* winner of a prize-story contest conducted by the Society. Angell was especially concerned to bring his gospel to children in the public and Sunday schools and to this end encouraged and aided the organization of local Bands of Mercy. He believed that humane education in childhood would prove the solution of many social ills, not only procuring better treatment of dumb animals but preventing crimes and wars. Through legislation and otherwise he helped to effect reforms in connection with the transportation of cattle, their care in the markets, and the methods employed in slaughter-houses. He denounced Theodore Roosevelt both as a hunter and as a militarist. Though opposed to vivisection, he did not entirely satisfy some of

the more extreme foes of the practise; he wished "to confine it within the narrowest and most merciful limits." Angell waged war on the adulteration of foods and on the use of poisonous materials in the manufacture of cooking utensils and wall-papers; he wrote and lectured on peace, and declared that "if Christian churches would do their duty there would never be another war between Christian nations." He traveled extensively in this country, addressing meetings, organizing societies. In 1869 he went to Europe, assisted the British Royal Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals in establishing a journal called *The Animal World,* aided the Baroness Burdett-Coutts in forming the Ladies' Humane Educational Committee of England, and took an active part in the world congress of animal-protection societies at Zurich. In 1872, at the age of forty-nine, he married a widow, Mrs. Eliza (Mattoon) Martin. In 1882 he formed the American Band of Mercy and in 1889 the American Humane Education Society. When he died the funeral procession in which his body was borne from Boston to Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, was rendered unique by the presence of thirty-eight splendid horses following the hearse in double line.

[Angell's *Autobiog. Sketches and Personal Recollections,* pub. in several editions without date by the Am. Humane Education Soc., is the chief source, but the material in it on the last two decades of his life is meager and unsystematic. An excellent and reliable sketch by Guy Richardson appeared in *Zion's Herald,* June 1923. Other sources are Sydney H. Coleman, *Humane Soc. Leaders in America* (1924), and obituary in *Boston Transcript,* Mar. 16, 1909.]

R.G.F.

ANGELL, ISRAEL (Aug. 24, 1740–May 4, 1832), Revolutionary soldier, a descendant of one of the original settlers who came to Rhode Island with Roger Williams, was born in Providence, the son of Oliver and Naomi (Smith) Angell. He had a good education, and was particularly interested in scientific subjects. At the beginning of the war he was a major of Rhode Island troops and served nearly to the end. He was successively promoted: major of the 11th Continental Infantry 1776, lieutenant-colonel of the 2nd Rhode Island, Jan. 1, 1777, and shortly afterward colonel. Angell's services were at the siege of Boston, at the battles of Brandywine, Red Bank, Monmouth, and Springfield; in Valley Forge, and at various points in Rhode Island, New Jersey, and the Hudson Highlands, particularly at Peekskill and West Point. He gained distinction especially in the almost forgotten battle at Springfield, N. J., June 23, 1780, where he held an important command, by withstanding the British advance at the bridge. His value in this engagement was recognized in the correspondence between Washington and Greene. Retiring from the army, Jan. 1, 1781, Angell settled in Johnston, R. I., as farmer and cooper. He was a man of medium height, fair complexion, and military bearing. He was married three times: to (1) Martha Angell, his second cousin; (2) Susanne Wright, or Wight; (3) Sarah Wood. He had seventeen children and was courting a fourth lady when he died at Smithfield, R. I., in his ninety-second year.

[*Diary of Col. Israel Angell* (1899), ed. by Edward Field, covers, in part, the years 1778–81; L. L. Lovell's *Israel Angell, Colonel of the 2nd R. I. Regiment* (1921), seems to be based on family papers; see also A. F. Angell's *Geneal. of the Descendants of Thos. Angell* (1872) and F. B. Heitman's *Hist. Reg.* (1893).]

E.K.A.

ANGELL, JAMES BURRILL (Jan. 7, 1829–Apr. 1, 1916), journalist, college president, diplomat, was a member of an old Rhode Island family. His ancestor, Thomas Angell, one of the founders of Providence, R. I., came from England in the *Lion* with Roger Williams in 1631. He was a signer of the Compact in 1636 and a deputy to the General Court in 1652. A son, John Angell (1646–1720), was a soldier in King Philip's War. Eighth in descent from the settler Thomas, and seventh from John, was James Burrill Angell (named for James Burrill, senator from Rhode Island, 1817–20), the eldest of eight children, his father being Andrew Aldrich Angell (1802–65), his mother, Amy, daughter of Richard Aldrich. So far as is known none of Angell's forebears came from other than colonial stock, originally English: "They have been found chiefly in the ranks of plain farmers, mechanics and tradesmen, gaining by industry and integrity an honest living, but winning no particular distinction" (*Reminiscences,* p. 3). His birthplace, near Scituate, was the farm upon which Thomas Angell, grandson of the first Thomas, had settled in 1710. The highway between Providence and Norwich ran through it, and in 1810 Angell's grandfather, Charles Angell, justice of the peace and local man of affairs, built near the road a large house which was conducted as a tavern by him and his son down through Angell's boyhood. In this combined farmhouse and tavern the town meetings and justice's court were held.

The farm lad grew up in an atmosphere of public affairs, and learned his letters from the old lawbooks of his grandfather. His first instruction was at the primitive district school, but a Quaker, Isaac Fiske, established in the neighborhood a private school which the boy attended from the age of eight to twelve. He then went for one term to Seekonk Academy, near Providence, and from there, for two years, to Smithville Academy

in the town of Scituate, five miles from his home. There followed another year spent upon the farm, after which it was decided by his father that the boy should have a college education. For better preparation in the classics Angell spent the academic year 1844–45 at the then recently established Brown University Grammar School in Providence. There he came under the influence of Henry S. Frieze [*q.v.*], a classical scholar whom he was later to find on his faculty when he became president of the University of Michigan. "Contact with this inspiring teacher," Angell asserted, "formed an epoch in my intellectual life. He represented the best type of the modern teacher at once critical as a grammarian, and stimulating with the finest appreciation of whatever was choicest in the classic masterpieces" (*Ibid.*, p. 17).

In 1845 Angell entered Brown University, from 1827 to 1855 under the presidency of Francis Wayland [*q.v.*], who introduced a new educational program of the first importance, which embraced a broadening of the curriculum and an abandonment of the prevailing idea that a college education was for the few preparing for the ministry or the law. He was thus the prophet of higher education for the many, in the realization of which Angell was later to become an effective instrument. Throughout his four years at Brown, Angell maintained an excellent record in scholarship, graduating as valedictorian. Yet he was no recluse. In his freshman year he organized a debating society which survived for several years. He was a member of the Psi Upsilon fraternity and Phi Beta Kappa. Even more than the instruction he received, which was well above the average of that of the colleges of the time, Angell prized the opportunities offered by the college library. His chief interests lay in mathematics, English literature, and modern languages. After graduation he spent part of the year 1849–50 as an assistant in the college library, during which time he was able to gratify his taste for wide reading.

A serious affection of the throat, from which he never entirely recovered (explaining the fact that in his public utterances his voice was soft and conversational, making its impression by clearness and distinctness of enunciation rather than by force and volume), induced him in the late autumn of 1850 to join his friend and classmate, Rowland Hazard, in a horseback trip through the Southern states. For nearly eight months the two young men had unusual opportunities to witness the operation of the slave system. These impressions, as well as those of the South generally, were later of direct value to Angell in his journalistic work. He had planned to enter Andover Theological Seminary in the autumn of 1851, but his throat continuing weak, he was advised against any occupation which involved public speaking. Aiming to secure work that would keep him out of doors, he entered the employment of a civil engineer in Boston, with whom he remained for about five months, when, again upon the solicitation of Hazard, he sailed for Europe, where he remained for nearly two years, spending most of the time in the study of modern languages and literature, principally at Paris and Munich. His scheme of studies looked toward the acquisition of a speaking knowledge of French and German and a general insight not only into literature but into history and science, a training cultural rather than professional.

In the spring of 1852 Wayland offered Angell his choice of two chairs at Brown, the one of Civil Engineering, the other of Modern Languages. Angell chose the latter, spent the next year in further preparation, and returned to Providence in the autumn of 1853, to enter upon his professorship as the youngest member of the faculty. Fresh with the inspiration from foreign study, he took up his work with enthusiasm. He developed his advanced courses, planned to return to Europe for further study, and sought an outlet for the beginnings of productive scholarship in a number of contributions upon literary subjects to the *North American Review*. But in 1855 Wayland resigned, and his successor, Sears, sought to return to the traditional college course. Angell soon found himself limited to elementary instruction. Fortunately the classroom did not absorb all of his time or energy. In 1857 he revised and edited Chambers's well-known *Handbook of French Literature*. In 1858 an acquaintance, Henry B. Anthony, editor and principal owner of the *Providence Journal*, was elected to the United States Senate and asked Angell to contribute leading articles to the *Journal* during his own absence in Washington. During 1859 Angell wrote the more important editorials, giving particular attention to European and international politics. In the summer of 1860 he resigned his chair at Brown in order to assume the editorship of the paper, a position which he held until the summer of 1866.

The *Providence Journal*, established before 1800, had long been a daily paper, and under Anthony's direction it had exerted an important influence. Its policy had been strongly Republican and such it continued to be after Angell became editor. Although the *Journal* at first accepted the nomination of Lincoln with only mild approval, it soon undertook to arouse popular enthusiasm for the Republican candidate. Threats by southern states to secede were dismissed lightly, with con-

sequent surprise at the secession ordinances which followed Lincoln's election. During the Civil War the *Journal* consistently supported the Administration, and there seems to have been no disagreement as to policy between Anthony, the owner, at Washington and Angell, the editor, at Providence. Angell's editorials were easy, clear, and restrained in style, temperate in judgment, and accurate in their statement of facts. Written in haste, they gave the impression of deliberate preparation. Upon international politics and questions involving international law Angell was at his best. These were the subjects in which he had come to have the greatest interest. In this editorial experience he acquired readiness and accuracy in writing and learned to avoid diffuseness. Even more important for his later work, he came to know men and to mingle with them without aloofness or intellectual pride. The six years thus spent without respite during a period of great stress told seriously upon his health. Having attempted unsuccessfully to purchase the *Journal* from Anthony, he came to the conclusion that further drafts upon him as an employee would be deadening to his ambitions. Hence he accepted the offer of the presidency of the University of Vermont in August 1866.

The University of Vermont had been chartered by the state legislature in 1791, but the state gave it no financial support. The Civil War had seriously affected the attendance in all departments. In the Literary College, when Angell became president, there were but thirty students. To undertake the administration of such an institution and to make something out of it required a man of abundant faith and courage. Such Angell soon proved himself to be. His first task was that of raising necessary funds. He visited all parts of Vermont as well as Boston, New York, and Washington, speaking before public meetings and soliciting contributions from groups and individuals. As a result of his canvass nearly $100,000 was raised, by which a laboratory was equipped, a professorship endowed, the old college building remodeled, and a house built for the president. Angell's policy, afterward successfully developed at Michigan, was to arouse an interest in the institution among the people of the state, so that they would come to regard the state university as an integral and necessary part of the public educational system. But at the outset he met with exceptionally adverse conditions. Vermont was relatively poor as a state, and privately endowed New England institutions competed with the University for students, prestige, and financial support. Angell had an uphill task. He was forced to supply deficiencies of equipment by his own personal exertions. "As we had not funds enough to complete our faculty, I set myself to teach the branches not provided for, namely, Rhetoric, History, German, and International Law" (*Ibid.*, p. 123), a statement which sufficiently emphasizes both the poverty of the institution and the intellectual resourcefulness of its president.

Angell was offered the presidency of the University of Michigan in the autumn of 1869. He went to Ann Arbor and was inclined to accept the offer. Upon returning to Burlington, however, he found so much insistence upon his remaining that he felt a moral obligation to stay at Vermont some time longer. His declination was not regarded at Ann Arbor as final. The regents apparently did not attempt to find another man, but continued negotiations with Angell for more than a year, until on Feb. 7, 1871, he was formally elected president. The university to which he came was at this time one of the largest of American educational institutions, having a college, law, and medical departments, and offering instruction in engineering and pharmacy. Its curriculum was liberal, its faculty relatively large and well selected. Coeducation had recently been introduced and a system of accredited high schools established. The state was committed to a policy of financial support, although the equipment of the university was inadequate and its salary scale greatly below that obtaining in the older institutions of the East.

Angell's inaugural address, delivered in June 1871 (*Selected Addresses*, pp. 3–33), was an able, brilliant, and, for the time, novel appeal to his audience and to the people of Michigan by which he sought to create an ideal for the state by setting forth an ideal for the University. In an era of *laissez-faire*, when the Spencerian conception of state functions was fashionable, he proposed for the state "the higher positive office of promoting by all proper means the intellectual and moral growth of the citizens." By establishing a university the assumption had been made that it was "just and wise for the State to place the means of obtaining generous culture within the reach of the humblest and poorest child upon its soil." This meant that "the University must interpret its vital connection with the State as a call to the largest and best work obtainable with its means. In that call it must find the stimulus to all strenuous endeavor. It may determine the culture, the civilization, nay, it may save the very life of the State and is justly held responsible for the faithful discharge of its sacred duty." The horizon of the University must not be limited to the boundaries of the state. To perform its work it "must be a part of the great world of scholars. It hospitably

flings its gates wide open to all seekers after knowledge, wherever their home." Otherwise the University could not render its highest service to the state which had created it. Such was the ideal set forth by Angell, one, it is believed, never before expressed as the aim of a working system of public instruction. He had in mind a university in its widest sense—a college and professional schools, and, in addition, the providing of facilities for advanced study. "Either the State or the University will be unworthy the vantage ground which has been gained here with so much money and toil, if this is not the first of the Western schools to satisfy the demands for the highest order of university work. . . . Till that end is reached, our opportunities are not seized. Nothing less than that must content us." And then a note of most relevant warning: "It needs still however to be remembered in this country that calling an institution a university does not make it so. Neither do buildings, however imposing, nor endowments, however splendid, constitute a university. Nor does it convert a college into a university to abolish recitations and give all the instruction by lectures. I fear that the public do not sufficiently understand that the essential thing in a university is *men;* both in the students' seats and in the professors' chairs."

With such an ideal before him, Angell entered upon the duties of the presidency, and, thanks to his natural tact, soon entered into friendly relations with the members of his faculty, with many of whom he came to be on terms of intimate friendship. An Eastern man with Eastern training, he was without prepossessions in favor of those institutions with which he had been in contact. He did not handicap himself by making comparisons of the new with the old. He had intellectual curiosity and sympathy. Coeducation was alien to his experience, yet he viewed the experiment with an open mind, justified its logical position in the public school system of the state, and soon became its enthusiastic advocate. He came with no startling program of reformation or of remodeling. He set out to understand every phase of the university's activities; he visited the laboratories and talked with the men about the work in hand, he attended the classrooms to observe methods of instruction. He never lost sight of the fact that he was himself a teacher. As he said in his inaugural, "when a man stops acquiring knowledge, it is time for him to stop teaching." Notwithstanding the great increase in his executive duties due to the growth of the institution, he continued to conduct courses in international law and in the history of treaties. He made it a point to establish personal contacts with the students,

Angell

acting for many years as the dean of the College of Literature, Science, and the Arts. As long as practicable he even performed the duties of a registrar, personally attending to the formalities of the registration of freshmen and conducting the university correspondence by letters written by himself. For nearly a decade he knew every student and called him by name. He was genial and sociable, approachable at all times and fond of social intercourse. The President's house became the center of a social life important to members of the faculty. In this he was greatly assisted by his wife (Sarah Swope, daughter of Alexis Caswell, professor at Brown and its sixth president, 1868–77), whom he had married at Providence in 1855.

Angell had no false pride as to the office of university president. He was not a dictator, because he was not an egotist. He never sought to impose a policy upon his faculty, or to make some new departure upon a mere majority vote. In one of his earliest annual reports he stated that radical changes should not be undertaken except with the substantial unanimity of the faculty. Even with the students he had no desire to be a driver—"A collegiate course cannot be wisely shaped with primary reference to driving drones to work. It should provide every manly and noble incentive to worthy achievement" (*President's Report,* 1873, p. 10). He was willing to experiment, but he was far from having the illusion that with the keys of the University had been acquired educational omniscience. It was by a quiet examination of the existing, by the tentative suggestion of the possible, by step-by-step improvement that Angell proceeded, bringing his constituency along with him, bridging the gaps between the university and the high schools yet raising the standards of admission, creating a larger clientele among the people of the state, arousing their interest, urging their support, and relying upon their approval of his policies as set forth in dignified and well-considered utterances. Thus he came to be regarded as an essential part of the institution of which he was the head, and as the leader of the new work of higher popular education.

With the adoption in 1873 of a millage tax for the University, specific appropriations in large amounts for buildings were not usually asked for. As a result, Angell's presidency left no great edifices at Ann Arbor as monuments of his administration. In current matters the administration was frugal, the salary scale remained rather low, and the teaching load large. The net result of his policy during nearly forty years was thus not a striking liberality on the part of the state but a regular support coming to be acquiesced in as a matter of course. When he retired the millage tax

Angell

had been increased from one-twentieth to three-eighths of a mill. The returns therefrom increased from $15,000 to $650,000. Materially the improvement of the University had fallen relatively behind that of several rival state universities, so that by 1910 its equipment was inadequate and its buildings unprepossessing if not dingy. Angell's achievements were along other lines. He sought to broaden the college curriculum, to make possible a college education for those who had not had classical preparation, to enlarge the range of elective studies, and to extend the certificating privileges under university inspection to secondary schools in other states (1884). He established the first permanent system of admission requirements for medical schools (1874), the first professorship in the science and art of teaching (1879), the first instruction in the science of forestry (1882). He recommended (1877) comprehensive examinations at the end of the senior year as a part of the requirements for the bachelor's degree. He advocated (1882) a separation in methods of instruction between the sophomore and junior years, giving to the first two years the character of what has come to be known as the junior college and to the last two that of advanced university work. This was in part adopted, but Angell was too far in advance of his time and after about ten years the plan was abandoned.

So also he was hopelessly in advance of the state on the matter of the importance of graduate study and research. He saw that unless adequate aid were provided for graduate work the state universities would fall seriously behind the endowed universities. In October 1896 he said: "The question therefore with which this University and the other large State Universities is confronted is this,—are the states willing to furnish the means for providing this kind of instruction? . . . Upon the answer to be given to this question, it depends whether the state universities are to have their development arrested at their present stage, and so are to fall behind the universities which depend for their support upon private endowments" (*Proceedings of the Board of Regents, 1891–96,* pp. 660–61). But the people of Michigan remained unconvinced. The organization of graduate studies into a separate school was delayed until 1910. By that time other state universities had begun to devote considerable sums for fellowships and for publications. Michigan reluctantly followed rather than joyously led in this important development.

The administration of the University during the years 1871–1909 was not all plain sailing. When Angell came, the legislature had been insisting upon the establishment of a school of homeopathic medicine. Angell did not welcome but neither did he oppose an additional and rival medical faculty. A man of a different type, questioning the possibility of two rival routes for the acquisition of truth, might have resisted this increment of university responsibility. But modern scientific medicine had not yet received a recognized position. If there were two ways of training for a profession, why should not the state provide both ways? Public opinion seemed to demand it, the legislature was insistent, and the school was established, with irritating conflicts between the two faculties and with results not infrequently embarrassing to the University as a whole.

Meanwhile came occasional but important national diplomatic service. Angell's first diplomatic mission was to China in 1880. The liberal Burlingame Treaty in 1868 had allowed free entry of Chinese nationals into and residence within the United States. Subsequent congressional legislation excluding the Chinese, had been vetoed by President Hayes, who felt, however, that some modification of the treaty was necessary to forestall further congressional action which might amount to a breach of treaty obligations. Angell had been recommended to the President by Senator Edmunds of Vermont, and was appointed in the spring of 1880 as minister to China and also as one of the commission of three (the other members being John T. Swift of California, and W. H. Trescot of South Carolina) to negotiate a new immigration treaty. He was opposed to complete prohibition of Chinese immigration, but felt that existing abuses might be corrected by wise regulation and restraint. Swift favored total exclusion, while Trescot agreed with Angell. Their instructions allowed for some discretion. The negotiations were largely guided by Angell, whose benign dignity and bland manner made a favorable impression upon the Chinese plenipotentiaries. A treaty was signed, Nov. 17, 1880 (ratification advised by the Senate, May 5, 1881, and effective until 1894), by which China agreed that the United States might "regulate, limit or suspend," but not "absolutely prohibit" the entry and residence of Chinese laborers. On the same day a commercial treaty was signed, after a period of negotiation unprecedented for brevity, the most important article of which prohibited the importation, transportation, purchase, or sale of opium in China by American nationals or American ships, thus reverting to the position taken in the Cushing Treaty of 1844. The negotiations thus concluded, Angell remained in Peking as minister until October 1881, resuming his academic duties in February 1882.

Although a Republican, Angell was asked by

President Cleveland in October 1887 to serve upon the Anglo-American Northeastern Fisheries Commission, the other American members of which were Secretary of State Bayard and William L. Putnam. The negotiations, held in Washington, resulted in the treaty of Feb. 15, 1888, rejected by the Senate on party lines on Aug. 21, 1888. Of even date with the treaty was the protocol embracing a *modus vivendi* for two years, proposed by the British commissioners and agreed to by the United States. This, although never submitted to the Senate, continued, with recurrent renewals, to regulate the activities of the two countries in the fisheries.

In his second administration, Cleveland reiterated his confidence in Angell by appointing him to the Canadian-American Deep Waterways Commission with John E. Russell of Massachusetts and Lyman E. Cooley of Illinois. This Commission presented a report in 1897, but no congressional action followed its recommendations.

Angell's last diplomatic experience was as minister to Turkey. He was appointed by McKinley in 1897 and served until August 1898, thus representing the United States during the Spanish-American War. During his eleven months at Constantinople the matters claiming attention, in addition to those constantly under discussion with the Porte, were connected with the relations of belligerent and neutral. As to the success of his mission opinions differ. Oscar S. Straus, who succeeded Angell, gave a decidedly unfavorable judgment of it (*Under Four Administrations,* 1922, *passim*), while Bryce (*International Relations,* 1922, p. 150), characterized Angell as, with one possible exception, "the best ambassador any Power had during many years sent to the exceptionally difficult post at Constantinople."

Angell was a regent of the Smithsonian Institution, one of the founders of the American Historical Association, 1884, and its president, 1893–94. He contributed an essay upon the diplomatic history of the United States to Winsor's *Narrative and Critical History of America,* vol. VII (1888). He retired from the presidency of the University of Michigan in 1909 but continued to occupy the president's house upon the campus until his death in 1916.

Angell was about five feet eight in height, slender in early life, increasing in weight in later years. His hair was brown, his eyes strikingly blue and apt to twinkle with merriment. From at least the period of the Civil War he carried a beard with upper lip and chin shaven in the style adopted by Horace Greeley. His cheeks were unlined, his speech was soft, his manners gentle. Yet his whole figure radiated vitality. Even as an old man, he bore himself erect, walking with an easy stride good to look upon. The personal devotion which he inspired was due to an active eager spirit intent upon accomplishment through ways of kindliness and moderation. Of all the great American college presidents, he was probably the most modest. In one of his last speeches at the University of Michigan he took to himself the dying words of Cecil Rhodes—"so little done, so much remains to do." His accomplishment was what it was largely because it was so little in his own eyes.

[The chief source of information about Angell (and the best for his early life) is his *Reminiscences* (1911), but his administration at Michigan is inadequately treated in one chapter. For his connection with Brown University, see W. C. Bronson, *Hist. of Brown Univ.* (1914). For the period of his presidency at Vermont, see *U. S. Bureau of Education, Circulars of Information,* 1900, pp. 138–69. For the period of his presidency at the University of Michigan the best sources are his annual reports printed in the *Proc. of the Board of Regents of the Univ. of Mich.,* 1871–1909. See also Wilfred Shaw, *Univ. of Mich.* (1920). For the China Mission, see *Foreign Relations of the U.S.,* 1881, pp. 168–318; upon the Fisheries Treaty Commission, *Sen. Ex. Doc., 127,* and *House Ex. Doc. 434,* 50 Cong., 1 Sess.; upon the Waterways Commission, "Report of U. S. Deep Waterways Commission," *House Doc. 192,* 54 Cong., 2 Sess.; upon the Turkish Mission, *Foreign Relations of the U. S.,* 1898, pp. 1086–1120. Angell's *Selected Addresses* (1912) contain his principal public utterances. Genealogical information may be found in Avery F. Angell, *Geneal. of the Descendants of Thos. Angell* (1872).]

J. S. R.

ANGELL, JOSEPH KINNICUTT (Apr. 30, 1794–May 1, 1857), legal writer, was the only son of Amey (Kinnicutt) and of Nathan Angell, a storekeeper of Providence, R. I. He was descended from Thomas Angell, one of "the thirteen original proprietors," who came from England with Roger Williams in 1631. He was born at Providence, entered Brown University in 1809, graduated in 1813, and then attended the Law School, Litchfield, Conn., being admitted to the Rhode Island bar in March Term, 1816. Three years later he went to England to claim an estate under the will of William Angell, brother of his paternal ancestor Thomas Angell, but his suit terminated adversely on a technicality (Angell *vs.* Angell, 1 *Simons & Stuart,* 83). He returned home in 1822 and devoted himself to writing on legal subjects. His first book was *The Common Law in Relation to Watercourses* (1824), followed by *The Right of Property in Tide Waters* (1826), both being well received. Chancellor Kent said that no intelligent lawyer could well practise without them. In rapid succession Angell wrote treatises on *Adverse Possession* (1827) and *The Limitation of Actions* (1829). In 1829 he also edited the first volume of *The United States Law Intelligencer and Review.* He was assisted by Samuel Ames [*q.v.*] in the preparation of his next

book, *The Law of Private Corporations Aggregate* (1832), which became a standard authority. The appearance of his *Law of Assignment* (1835) was followed by a period mainly occupied in revision necessitated by the demand for new editions of his previous works. In 1847 he was appointed reporter in the supreme court of Rhode Island—the first to hold that office. He issued one number of the *Reports* in July of that year, and prepared a second, but resigned in September Term, 1849. In the same year he wrote *The Law of Carriers*. His last work to appear during his lifetime was *The Law of Insurance* (1854). He died in Boston "as he had lived, without an enemy; distinguished through life by the simplicity of his character, by his kindly feelings toward all around him, by his attachment to his friends, by his freedom from prejudice, and by the total absence of all malevolence of spirit." He had at the time partially prepared *The Law of Highways*, which was subsequently completed by Thomas Durfee [*q.v.*]. He was unmarried. His portrait hangs in Rhode Island Hall, Brown University.

[Sources of information about J. K. Angell are few. Important material is contained in a "Memoir," prepared by Sidney S. Rider for insertion in a reprint of the *R. I. Reports*, vol. I, which latter contains memoranda relative to Angell's official connection with the court. This memoir is reproduced in *R. I. Hist. Tracts*, No. 11 (1880). Incidental references occur in Abraham Payne, *Reminiscences of the R.I. Bar* (1885). A brief sketch and details respecting his claim to the Angell fortune in England are in Avery F. Angell, *Geneal. of the Descendants of Thomas Angell* (1872).]

H.W.H.K.

ANGELL, WILLIAM GORHAM (Nov. 21, 1811–May 13, 1870), inventor, manufacturer of screws, was born in Providence, R. I., the son of Enos Angell, a carpenter, and Catherine (Gorham) Angell. Several years of his youth were devoted to learning his father's trade, but an intense interest in machinery drew him to its field instead. His educational advantages were few; he acquired the mere rudiments of a common-school education. He was married to Ann R. Stewart, and one of their two children, Edwin Gorham, succeeded him as president of the American Screw Company. Angell had what his associates described as an intuitive perception of the capabilities of a machine; and he used it to good advantage. In his early twenties he became a partner in a reed-making business. Meanwhile he engaged in experiments on the construction of machinery for making iron screws to be used in woodwork. The American market at the time was supplied with English screws, rough and clumsy, and no one seemed to be dreaming of an American screw to compete with the English one. Angell's inventive mind found ways for the improvement of screw-making machinery and when, in 1838, the Eagle Screw Company was formed, he became its agent and manager. They made a gimlet-pointed screw which, by a careful analysis of facts, he was able to persuade American merchants to buy. No artifice was needed as his product was superior to the English product. The Eagle Screw Company, after twenty successful years in business, united with the New England Company to form the American Screw Company. Angell became its president and manager.

Along with his inventive ability and sound business sagacity, Angell was an excellent draftsman and an architect and builder of no mean capacity. This trait helped invaluably in the construction of buildings which would stand the strain of heavy machinery necessary in his business. He had a keen interest in patents and patent laws, particularly as they applied to screw machinery, and he was frequently called upon to act as a referee in settling conflicting claims on different patents. Believing that a man could do but one thing well, he concentrated on his business to the exclusion of everything else. He joined no church, had no interest in politics, and gave little or no time to amusement. He was, however, a man of warm personal sympathies, and contributed liberally though inconspicuously to the relief of suffering among the poor and unfortunate.

[Avery F. Angell, *Geneal. of the Descendants of Thomas Angell* (1872); *Providence Morning Jour.*, May 17, 1870.]

E.Y.

ANSHUTZ, THOMAS POLLOCK (Oct. 5, 1851–June 16, 1912), painter, was the son of Jacob Anshutz, born in Strasbourg, Alsace, and of Jane Abigail Pollock, born at Wheeling, (then) Va., of New England and Scotch-Irish stock. He was born at Newport, Ky., where he spent his early childhood, going thence to Wheeling and afterward to New York, in 1873, to study at the National Academy of Design under L. E. Wilmarth. Among his fellow students were Joseph Boston, Charles Vanderhoof, Kelly the sculptor, C. Y. Turner, and Carl Hirshberg. In 1875 he went to Philadelphia and entered the classes of the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts under Thomas Eakins and Christian Schussele, and six years later became a member of its faculty. In September 1892 he married Effie Schriver Russell, of Wheeling, W. V., and sailed for Paris, where he remained a year under the instruction of Doucet and Bouguereau at the Julian Academy. He then returned to Philadelphia to resume his professorship in the Academy schools, which he held for the remainder of his life. He had a house and studio at Fort Washington, Pa. A basic knowledge of anatomy and other sciences increased his remarkable efficiency as a teacher.

His method was to consider carefully the native tendencies in each pupil, and to develop these upon a foundation of the essential elements in art training. His success as "a maker of painters" is evident in the number of eminent American artists who benefited by his instruction—Robert Henri, George Luks, Edward W. Redfield, Hugh H. Breckenridge, John Sloan, W. Glacken, W. E. Schofield, Daniel Garber, and others.

While devoting his attention to this task, he still found time to produce many pictures. One of his first exhibits was a "View of the Ohio River" with the old Mississippi steamboats, based on early impressions. He painted landscape with much feeling, but it was in figures and portraits, for which his studies thoroughly prepared him, that he achieved his greater successes. His painting exemplified in its technical soundness the principles he taught. Appreciation of his ability as a painter existed for some years before he received more concrete recognition. Honorable mention was awarded him in 1901 at the Philadelphia Art Club's exhibition; in 1904, a silver medal at the St. Louis Exposition; and in 1909 the Gold Medal of Honor at the Pennsylvania Academy's exhibition—a distinction shared with Whistler and Sargent. The Walter Lippincott Prize for meritorious painting followed for "The Tanagra," now in the Pennsylvania Academy's permanent collection, a gift from his pupils and admirers. At the Buenos Aires International Exposition in 1911, his painting "Shadows" received a gold medal. Two other paintings—beside "The Tanagra"—"Becky Sharp" and "In a Garret," are in the Pennsylvania Academy collection. At the Corcoran Gallery at Washington is "The Dutchman"; at the National Academy of Design, New York, "The Breaker," and his own portrait presented on his election as an associate member. In the Thomas B. Clarke Collection is "Noontime at the Mill," besides many pictures and portraits i private collections.

He was president of the Philadelphia Sketch Club, a member of the Philadelphia Art and Water Color Clubs, of the New York Water Color Club, and also of the Union Internationale des Beaux-Arts et Belles-Lettres. In 1909 he succeeded William M. Chase as head of the faculty of the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts. He died at Fort Washington, Pa. Writing in the *Philadelphia Record* (May 29, 1910) John Cournos thus describes his appearance: "His body, tall and slightly stooped, suggests strongly both in repose and in motion the man of thought; while the blue eyes that gaze abstractly from the depths of a virile and truly noble head reveal the dreamer."

[John Cournos, "A Great Art Instructor: His Methods and Ideas," *Phila. Record*, May 29, 1910; "A Maker of Painters," *Boston Evening Transcript*, Feb. 10, 1912; obituaries in the *Public Ledger*, *North American*, *Evening Telegraph*, all of Phila., June 17, 1912; *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; information supplied by Mrs. Effie Schriver Anshutz.]

R. J. W.

ANSON, ADRIAN CONSTANTINE (Apr. 17, 1852–Apr. 14, 1922), baseball player, son of Henry and Jeannette (Rice) Anson, was born at Marshalltown, Ia. Attracting attention in 1871 as a member of the Forest City team of Rockford, Ill., Anson filled his first important professional engagement in the next year with the Philadelphia Athletics. He was married in 1876 to Virginia Fiegel of Philadelphia. In the same year he was induced by his friend, A. G. Spalding, to sign a contract with the Chicago Club of the newly formed National League, with which he remained until 1897, when he retired from league baseball. As first-baseman, captain, and manager he guided the Chicago team to league championships in 1880, 1881, 1882, 1885, and 1886. During this period the blue uniforms and white hose of Anson's men became established as symbols of victory. Anson was one of the greatest batsmen of his day. Always standing high in the batting averages, he four times led his league. For his twenty-two seasons with Chicago he had the remarkable grand average of .331. A blond giant standing well over six feet and weighing 195 pounds, he was a terror to pitchers. Smiting every kind of ball with equal success, he was never more dangerous than at critical stages of the game. Though apparently rather awkward in the field, he was also a remarkably steady and successful first-baseman. His greatest strength, however, lay in his burly power of leadership. Never puffed up over his own importance, he strove constantly for his team. Aggressive in disposition, "he had a voice in his impassioned moments like a hundred Bulls of Bashan" (*New York Times*, Apr. 17, 1922, p. 16). It was this fighting spirit which attracted and amused lovers of baseball, friends and foes alike. He took part in two trips abroad as an American baseball player, one of these being the famous tour of the world in 1888 by a National League party. After retiring from baseball, he interested himself in other sports, especially billiards and golf. He served in public office as city clerk of Chicago 1905–07, but he was not fitted for political life. Because of his genial character, his unexpected humor, and his remarkable generosity, Anson was greatly loved. Always called "Captain" or "Cap" and later "Pop," he was the hero of numerous anecdotes. His rather sudden death brought deep grief to all

sportsmen. It is said that he wished as his epitaph, "Here lies a man that batted .300."

[Obituaries in leading American newspapers following Anson's death; excerpts in the *Lit. Dig.*, May 6, 1922, pp. 62 ff. Anson's character and work are referred to in A. G. Spalding, *America's National Game* (1911); J. J. McGraw, *My Thirty Years in Baseball* (1923), and F. C. Richter, *Hist. and Records of Baseball* (1914).]

E. P. T.

ANTES, HENRY (1701–July 20, 1755), religious leader among the German-Americans of Pennsylvania, was born in Freinsheim in the Rhenish Palatinate and was the son of Philip Frederick and Anna Catherine Antes; his ancestor, Baron von Blume, from Mainz, had hellenized his German name to the Greek equivalent Antes in order to escape persecution during the Thirty Years' War. The elder Antes emigrated to Pennsylvania about 1720; and in 1726 his son married Christina Elizabeth, daughter of William De Wees, by whom he had eleven children. He settled in Frederick, in the present Montgomery County, became a partner with his father-in-law in a paper and flour mill, and acquired property. He is described as a man of powerful frame, strong, with the versatility of a pioneer: mechanic, farmer, hunter, guide, a trusted counsellor skilled in the drawing of legal documents. His place in history depends upon his religious leadership, and especially on his association with the United Brethren, and his strivings for union. At first he was a member of the Reformed Church at Falkner Swamp, and a friend of its minister Boehm. He was soon a leader and a lay preacher, unusually broad-minded, being "singularly free from prejudice and bigotry." In Philadelphia and the back country there were Germans of various denominations, Mennonites, Dunkers, Lutherans —with whom he wished to fraternize—and members of his own Reformed Church, and to these were added new arrivals, Moravians or United Brethren. Antes and several others formed a group called the "Associated Brethren of Skippack," which met in conferences until 1740. His house was a rendezvous for German immigrants, and with the new-comer Spangenberg (later Moravian bishop) he discussed religious unity. His projected union was wider than the "Brethren of Skippack." He welcomed as an ally the great Moravian leader Zinzendorf, who had recently landed, and on Dec. 15, 1741, he issued a call for a meeting of Christians to be held at Germantown, Jan. 1, 1742. At this meeting Antes presided, and in the subsequent conferences he took an active part. The union, a sort of federation, "Congregation of God in the Spirit" "so grand in its conception, so exalted in its purposes," nevertheless failed of fulfilment (J. H. Dubbs, *History of the Reformed Church, German*, in vol. VIII, 1895, of the American Church History Series).

Antes had left the Reformed Church in 1740, and not long afterward he joined the Moravians. In 1741 acting as their agent he bought for £400 a tract of 500 acres along the Lehigh River, which became the nucleus of the town of Bethlehem. He removed thither in 1745, and his house and farm in Frederick were used as a school for boys. He served as business manager for the Moravians—to which office he was regularly appointed in 1748—built a noted mill and other works, was appointed justice of the peace by the governor, and investigated the grievances of the Indians. When the Moravians were attacked he defended them, and acted as the trustee of their property in Philadelphia. Two further instances may be given: he received a license to run a ferry on the Lehigh River, and when the Moravians launched a vessel of their own, it was registered in Antes's name. His services were of "immense value," and his position was shown by his friendship with such religious leaders as Zinzendorf, Spangenberg, Muhlenberg, and Whitefield.

In 1750 Antes left Bethlehem and the Moravians, and returned to Frederick. He objected to certain innovations, especially to the rule that the minister should wear a white surplice at the Eucharist. It has been stated that he withdrew from membership in the Moravian Church (questioned by Levering, pp. 251–52). However this may be, he continued his activity in Moravian affairs at Bethlehem and elsewhere. In 1752–53, with others, he made a trying journey to North Carolina, exploring in the interests of the church; 100,000 acres were purchased near the Yadkin River, which became the Moravian colony of Wachovia. Antes was made justice of the peace in Philadelphia County in 1752. He defended the loyalty of the Pennsylvania Germans in a letter written to the provincial secretary, and died soon after at Frederick, leaving a legacy to the Moravians. His daughter, Ann Margaret, married the Moravian Bishop, Benjamin Latrobe, and became the mother of the architect Latrobe who designed the central part of the Capitol.

[Henry S. Dotterer, "Family Record of Henry Antes," *Perkiomen Region*, Dec. 1894, and "Henry Antes," *Ibid.*, Oct., Nov., Dec., 1899; Edwin McMinn, *A German Hero* (1886) and *On the Frontier with Col. Antes* (1900); Jos. M. Levering, *Hist. of Bethlehem, Pa.* (1903); L. T. Reichel, "Early Hist. of the Ch. of the United Brethren," in *Moravian Hist. Soc. Trans.*, III (1888); J. Taylor Hamilton, *Hist. of the Unitas Fratrum, or Moravian Ch. in the U. S.*, in vol. VIII (1895) of the Am. Ch. Hist. Ser.; John Henry Clewell, *Hist. of Wachovia in N. C.* (1902).]

E. K. A.

ANTHON, CHARLES (Nov. 19, 1797–July 29, 1867), classical scholar, was born in New York, the son of Dr. George Christian Anthon and Genevieve Jadot (for parents see Anthon, John). He grew up in a large family of intelligent young people, with five brothers and two sisters, and inherited the persistent industry of the German and the quick perception of the French. He attended the best schools of the city and in 1811 entered Columbia College, where he was awarded so many distinctions that his name was withdrawn from competition and therefore is not found among those of the recipients of honors at graduation. He studied law for four years in the office of his brother John, and in 1819 was admitted to the bar of the supreme court of the state. During these years he spent his spare time in reading Greek and Latin and in studying French and German.

In 1820 he was chosen adjunct professor of Greek and Latin in Columbia College, and thus entered upon his life-work. While preparing for the bar he had adopted the habit, which he retained for many years, of rising at 4 a. m. and devoting the early hours of the morning to his literary labors. His college duties occupied a large part of the day, and the rest was carefully divided, with a liberal allowance for modern languages. His Saturdays were spent in careful and exhaustive preparation for the next week's classes. According to the system then in vogue, the memorizing of inflections and rules of syntax formed a great part of the work which he demanded of his students, and he was an exacting teacher, even in his later years, when he had adopted a different system of instruction. In 1830 Anthon was put in charge of the Grammar School of Columbia College, and about the same time, when the professorship of Greek and Latin in the College was divided, he was made Jay Professor of the Greek Language and Literature. As Professor in the College Anthon was greatly liked, chiefly because of his faculty of uniting with the text under discussion a series of facts artfully grouped so that they remained fixed in the memory of his pupils. In the grammar school he was too much feared to be generally liked. He often raised a laugh at the expense of his pupils, and employed Greek, Latin, and English nicknames in ridicule of delinquents. His own nickname among the boys was "Bull."

Anthon was a large, strongly built man, of imposing presence. His head was large, his forehead high and massive, his eyes black and deeply set. The lower part of his face was square, massive, and firm. His voice was clear and sonorous. He was always carefully dressed, and his manuscripts were models of neatness. Though brilliant in conversation and of a cheerful disposition, he had few familiar friends and almost never appeared in general society or in places of public amusement. His walks for exercise were usually taken after dark or within the college grounds. He never married, but was devotedly attached to his sisters, who lived with him. He had no religious or political associations, though during the Civil War he exhibited warm patriotism. He visited libraries and bookstores rarely, but knew and bought books from catalogues. His library was large and well chosen. For years he never left New York City. Once only, in 1831, he visited his mother's birthplace, Detroit, returning by way of Montreal, Quebec, and the White Mountains. Even after the first attack of the illness which finally caused his death, he would not give up his work, but returned to his classes and continued to conduct them until prevented by a second attack. He rallied slightly after this, but grew more and more feeble, and died July 29, 1867.

One of Anthon's earliest works was the first American edition of *Lemprière's Classical Dictionary.* In this he did not change the text, but made many additions. In a subsequent edition, finished in 1833, which still bore the name of Lemprière, almost every article was rewritten or enlarged, and many additions were made, especially in the field of geography. The third edition, published in 1842, was again greatly changed, and was called *Anthon's Classical Dictionary.* He also edited and revised *Smith's Dictionary of Greek and Roman Antiquities,* and *Smith's Dictionary of Greek and Roman Biography, Mythology, and Geography, Zumpt's Latin Grammar,* and the *English-Latin Lexicon* of Riddle and Arnold. He was the author of *A System of Latin Prosody and Metre* (1838) and *A System of Ancient and Mediæval Geography for the Use of Schools and Colleges* (1850). Anthon was one of those who introduced into the United States the results of foreign, chiefly German, scholarship. He was the first American to prepare a critical and exegetical edition of a classical author with learned prolegomena, critical notes, and ample commentary. This was his *Horatii Poemata,* or "larger Horace," published in 1830, a large octavo volume of more than 1,000 pages. Almost immediately after his appointment to his professorship he began to prepare text-books which should aid the student to understand the ancient authors. By these he was chiefly known, judged, and misjudged. Anthon edited the texts on the basis of foreign, chiefly German, editions, and added copious explanatory notes, often translating entire sentences or even longer passages. For this reason his edi-

tions, in spite of the scholarship which they exhibit, were more popular with pupils than with teachers. He continued for thirty years to prepare at least a volume annually, editing for school and college use the works, in whole or in part, of Homer, Xenophon, Cæsar, Cicero, Horace, Juvenal, Sallust, Tacitus, and Virgil. Each of his text-books passed through several editions, and for some thirty years, about the middle of the nineteenth century, his influence upon the study of the classics in the United States was probably greater than that of any other one man.

[*Charles Anthon, A Commemorative Discourse,* prepared and delivered at the request of the Trustees and Alumni of the College by Dr. Henry Drisler (1868); "Reminiscences of Dr. Anthon," by Robert D. Nesmith, in the *Galaxy,* vol. IV, Sept. 1867; obituary in *N. Y. Times,* July 30, 1867.]

H. N. F.

ANTHON, CHARLES EDWARD (1823–June 7, 1883), educator, numismatist, was born in New York, the son of a prominent lawyer, John Anthon [*q.v.*], and nephew of Charles Anthon [*q.v.*], eminent classical scholar. He graduated from Columbia in 1839, spent some years in study and travel in Europe, and upon his return was elected to the chair of history in St. John's College, Annapolis, Md. In 1852 he was appointed professor of history and belles-lettres in the New York Free Academy, which later became the College of the City of New York. Here he remained until ill health forced him to resign in March 1883. He went abroad in May, but died in Bremen the following June.

He became interested in numismatics sometime about 1865, in which year he made his first purchase of coins at the Chilton sale. To these he added until he had acquired an extensive collection containing many rare pieces. For a series of sales from his cabinet he made catalogues, so carefully and thoroughly prepared, "that they will long serve as books of reference for students and collectors" (*American Journal of Numismatics,* July 1883). From 1869 until his death he was president of the American Numismatic and Archæological Society of New York, and from May 1867 until April 1870 he was an editor of the *American Journal of Numismatics.* He published *A Pilgrimage to Treves, through the Valley of the Meuse and the Forest of Ardennes in the Year 1844* (1845), a brief but excellently written descriptive and historical sketch; *The Son of the Wilderness* (1848), a translation of a dramatic poem by Friedrich Halm; *Narrative of the Settlement of George Christian Anthon in America* (1872); *The Gloriam Regni* [Gloriam Regni Tui Dicent 1670] *or Silver Louis of 15 Sous, and of 5 Sous, Struck for Circulation in French America* (1877); and in the *Proceedings of the New York Law Institute in Accepting the Donation of the Bust of the Late John Anthon* (1876), there is printed a letter of presentation signed by him.

[For ancestry see Anthon's own *Narrative,* mentioned above, and Marie M. G. Anthon, *The Ancestry of Genevieve Jadot Anthon* (1901); obituary notices appeared in *N. Y. Times,* June 9, 1883, *N. Y. Tribune,* June 9, 1883, and the *Am. Jour. of Numismatics,* July 1883. The contents of his collection at his death are listed in *Cat. of the Late Prof. Anthon's Numismatic Cabinet* (1884).]

H. E. S.

ANTHON, JOHN (May 14, 1784–Mar. 5, 1863), lawyer, was born at Detroit. His father, George Christian Anthon, a native of Salzungen in the Duchy of Saxe-Meiningen and a surgeon in the Dutch West Indian trade, having been captured by a British privateer was landed in New York in 1753. He became an assistant surgeon with the British army, and served in the West, being stationed permanently at Detroit after 1767. There he married as his second wife Genevieve Jadot. John was their second surviving son. In 1786 the family moved to New York, where Dr. Anthon acquired a prominent position professionally and socially. John received a good classical education. He graduated from Columbia in 1801 at the head of his class, studied law, was admitted to the New York bar in 1805, and commenced practise in New York City about 1807. He practised at first principally in the mayor's court, and he drafted the act by which this court —which had been the municipal court of New York City for 156 years—was merged in the court of common pleas (*Ch. 62, Sess. 44,* 1821). His untiring industry, and the high quality of his work are indicated by the fact that in 1829 he argued no less than forty-two reported causes on appeal (Hall's *New York Superior Court Reports*). "He was the horse in the legal mill. If he had been absent a week, the Courts would have stopped trying causes" (J. W. Gerard, *Address before the New York Law Institute,* Apr. 4, 1863). He assisted in founding the New York Law Institute, and after its incorporation in 1830 continued actively interested in its affairs. Elected second vice-president Apr. 8, 1839, he became president in 1852—an office which he held till his death.

Anthon had the reputation of being the best practitioner at the New York bar. Although somewhat brusque in manner and possessed of a displeasing voice, he showed great skill in marshalling facts and in legal exposition and analysis. His leisure hours were devoted to horticulture, the reading of Greek and Latin classics, and the study of Italian. He was the author of *American*

Precedents and Declarations (1810), *Digested Index to the Reported Decisions of the United States Court* (1813), and *The Law of Nisi Prius* (1820). He also left in manuscript three volumes of literary criticisms to which he had given the name "Neo-Photius," and a volume on "Characteristics of Books and Men." He was married in 1810 to Judith Hone. Two of his sons attained some degree of eminence, William Henry as a lawyer and Charles Edward as a professor in the College of the City of New York.

[Charles Edward Anthon's *Narrative of the Settlement of George Christian Anthon in America* (1872) contains particulars of the family history. No adequate material, however, exists for a detailed memoir of John Anthon. The only printed matter available consists of a biog. notice by E. Patterson in his sketch prefixed to *The Cat. of the Lib. of the Law Institute* (1874), an address by J. W. Gerard, reported in *Proc. on the Occasion of the Death of John Anthon* (N. Y. Law Institute, 1863), and a letter written by Prof. C. E. Anthon, Jan. 3, 1876, printed in *Proc. of N. Y. Law Institute in Accepting a Bust of John Anthon* (1876). The N. Y. Pub. Lib. possesses in the Stuart Coll. a copy of a *Cat. of the Private Lib. of the Late John Anthon*, prepared for the sale which took place after his death. It contains no less than 1,423 items, embracing the whole field of classical and modern literature. A plaster bust of Anthon, made about 1826 by John Browere, stands in the vestible of the Law Institute Lib. in N. Y. City.] H.W.H.K.

ANTHONY, ANDREW VARICK STOUT (Dec. 4, 1835–July 2, 1906), wood engraver, was born in New York City, the son of John and Eliza (Stout) Anthony. He was named after his maternal uncle Andrew Varick Stout, and was of English stock on his father's side, and of Dutch on his mother's. The latter was the daughter of Elsie Van Varick, of the family of Richard Varick, mayor of New York. Andrew's desire to be an artist not being approved by his father, the boy ran away from home at the age of eleven. He had "a sketchy schooling," but later became "singularly well informed on a vast variety of subjects." He studied art with T. S. Cummings and wood engraving under T. W. Strong. Before he was twenty, "with some wild scheme," wrote S. G. W. Benjamin, "of coining mahogany into dollars by exporting it from Mexico," he sailed to Honduras and was shipwrecked. Then he succumbed for a time to the lure of California, but eventually returned to New York. An early engraving on a small broadside—*Hutchings' California Scenes: The Mammoth Tree* (1854)—is signed "Anthony & Baker Sc." In 1857 appeared *The Indian Fairy Book* of Cornelius Mathews, with designs by John McLenan, engraved by Anthony. He also engraved drawings by D. C. Hitchcock of scenes and incidents in Central America, and wrote articles on Honduras, "Scraps from an Artist's Note Book," published in *Harper's Magazine*, 1856–57. On Dec. 24, 1858, he married, in New York, Mrs. James M. Warner, *née* Mary Aurelia Walker. In 1860, in charge of the engraving department of the *New York Illustrated News*, he went to England for that paper to "scoop" the Heenan-Sayers prize-fight. His large and hurried engraving of the event, after a drawing by Thomas Nast, was done in part on the *Vanderbilt* during his passage home, and appeared in the "Championship Number" (May), with a note on the engraver and his portrait. The first important work in which he had a hand was *Folk Songs* (1860), edited by John W. Palmer. Then began the activity by which he became best known. From 1866 to 1889 he superintended, with delicate taste, the production of fine editions for Ticknor & Fields; Fields, Osgood & Co.; and James R. Osgood & Co., in Boston. Both Linton and Koehler state that this work had much influence on the art of wood engraving. Among the editions he superintended were those of Whittier's *Snow Bound* (1866), in which most of the engravings, after Harry Fenn, were his own—"of his best," writes Linton, "subjects and drawings well suited to his graver,—honest while refined"; and Longfellow's *Building of the Ship* (1870), engravings by Anthony and Linton; Longfellow's *Skeleton in Armor* (1877), illustrations by Mary A. Hallock, later Mrs. Foote. He wrote the text for W. T. Smedley's drawings of *Life and Character* (1899), and his unfinished paper on "An Art That Is Passing Away" forms part of the volume *Wood Engraving: Three Essays by A. V. S. Anthony, Timothy Cole and Elbridge Kingsley*, published by the Grolier Club in 1916. From 1894 until his death he was connected with the literary department of Harper & Brothers. He died at West Newton, Mass., leaving a widow and one daughter; his son Ripley Osgood, who showed talent as an artist and painted a portrait of his father, had died some years before.

[Anthony's daughter, Mrs. Henry P. Perkins, furnished notes accompanying the gift of her father's engravings and engraving tools to the N. Y. Pub. Lib. His friend S. G. W. Benjamin devoted a chapter to him in *Our Am. Artists, for Young People*, 2nd ser. (1881), with a portr. of Anthony and a picture of him at work, engraving. Clement and Hutton's *Artists of the Nineteenth Cent.* (1884) quotes newspaper criticisms. Critical estimates of his engraving appear in W. J. Linton's *Hist. of Wood Engraving in Am.* (1882) and in S. R. Koehler's chapter on the United States, in *Holzschnitt der Gegenwart* (Vienna, 1887).] F.W.

ANTHONY, GEORGE TOBEY (June 9, 1824–Aug. 5, 1896), governor of Kansas, was the youngest of five children. His parents, Benjamin and Anna (Odell) Anthony, ardent members of the Society of Friends, lived on a farm near Mayfield, Fulton County, N. Y., where George was

born. Benjamin Anthony died when this son was five years of age. Four years later the family moved to Greenfield, N. Y., where the boy attended school in the winter months and "worked out" on the farms in the neighborhood during the remainder of the year. At the age of sixteen he was apprenticed to a tinner at Union Springs, N. Y. At the conclusion of his apprenticeship he opened a small tinshop and hardware store at Medina, N. Y. He was proprietor, merchant, and tinner, doing all of the work in the establishment. In 1852 he was married to Rosa A. Lyon at Syracuse. Subsequently, at an uncertain date, he moved to New York City and entered the commission business, which he followed until President Lincoln's call for volunteers, on July 2, 1862. Gov. Morgan, in response to the call, organized the state of New York, for the purpose of recruiting, into territorial divisions, over each of which was a committee in charge. The committee supervising the sub-division which included Genesee, Orleans, and Niagara counties was composed of Ex-Gov. Church, Noah Davis, Jr., and George Tobey Anthony. Anthony recruited and organized the New York independent battery and entered the service as its captain. The battery served with credit throughout the war, Anthony remaining with it until mustered out, June 12, 1865. He was brevetted major of volunteers for distinguished service.

Anthony and his wife arrived in Leavenworth, Kan., in November 1865, when he began the second and more important period of his life. He became editor of the *Daily Bulletin* and the *Daily Conservative,* positions which he held for two and one-half years. He was editor and proprietor of the *Kansas Farmer* for six years. It was in this capacity that he made his influence especially felt in Kansas. He had a practical knowledge of thorough farming in New York, a foremost state in sound agricultural theory and practice. This was in contrast with the slipshod methods prevailing in Kansas at that time. He admonished the farmers to diversify crops, to rotate them in order to preserve the soil, to care for farm machinery, to care for livestock and to improve the breed, to economize farm management, and to improve home conditions on the farm. In December 1867 he was appointed assistant assessor of Internal Revenue and in the following year collector of Internal Revenue for the United States. He was president of the state Board of Agriculture for the three years 1874–76 and a member of the Board of Managers of the Centennial Exposition. In 1876 he was elected governor of Kansas on the Republican ticket. He failed to be reëlected for a second term. During his administration he recommended that the legislature provide for a reformatory for young criminals separate from the penitentiary, was instrumental in subduing refractory Indians, put down a riot caused by striking railway employees, and recommended that the legislature take action to compel railroads to fulfil their obligations to the public in cases where citizens had voted bonds to build the roads. Anthony met all the duties of the executive office with good judgment and firmness. Indeed, he was aggressively honest and rather militant in his attitude toward those whom he deemed in the wrong; hence he made political enemies. In 1881 he was appointed general superintendent of the Mexican Railway; in 1885 he represented Leavenworth County in the legislature; in 1889 he was appointed a member of the state Board of Railroad Commissioners; in 1892 he was nominated for Congress by the Republican party, but failed of election.

[Collected material in the lib. of the Kan. State Hist. Soc.; *Trans. Kan. State Hist. Soc.*, VI, 202, VII, 253; *Portr. and Biog. Album of Leavenworth, Douglas and Franklin Counties* (1899); Wm. E. Connelly, *Standard Hist. of Kan.* (1918); Frank W. Blackmar, *Kansas* (1912), I; Chas. L. Anthony, *Geneal. of the Anthony Family* (1904); obituary in the *Leavenworth Standard*, Aug. 6, 1896.]

F. W. B.

ANTHONY, HENRY BOWEN (Apr. 1, 1815–Sept. 2, 1884), journalist, politician, a descendant of John Anthony of Hampstead, England, who came to Boston in 1634 and removed to Rhode Island about 1640, was born at Coventry, R. I. His father was William Anthony and his mother was Eliza Kinnicutt Greene. Both his father and his maternal grandfather, James Greene of Warwick, were Quakers. His father was a cotton manufacturer and the part of the town in which they lived was called Anthony. There the boy attended village school and the Friends' meeting-house. Most of his life was spent, however, in Providence, where he fitted for college at a private school and entered Brown University in 1829. He made a good, though not brilliant, record in college and graduated with his class in 1833, carrying with him a very definite leaning toward letters. Although he went into business, to which he gave five years, partly in Providence and partly in Savannah, Ga., literature remained his major interest. In 1837 he married Sarah Aborn, daughter of Christopher Rhodes. A year later, when he was twenty-three years old, he was invited by a kinsman who owned the *Providence Journal* to take the editorship during an interim of a few weeks. He exhibited such a surprising gift and aptitude for the editorial duty that what began as a mere stop-gap became permanent. So skilfully did he guide the fortunes

of the paper and so general was the respect and influence it attained under his direction that he was soon seen to be indispensable. Thus it came about that he was in charge of the paper—the most influential journal in the state—in 1842 during the Dorr Rebellion, one of the crises in the modern history of the old commonwealth. During that time of turbulence and disorder, the newspaper office became the center and rallying-point of the conservative interests of the state and its editor rose to a position of exceptional authority. To Anthony the paper owed not only its political power but very largely also its excellent literary style. Examples of his skill in verse are the mock heroic poems, "The Dorriad" and "The Chepachet Campaign," satirizing Dorr and his partizans, which appeared in the *Journal* in 1843 (republished in *The Dorr War,* by Arthur M. Mowry, 1901). Throughout his life and even up to within a week or two of his death he continued to exercise a guiding influence over the *Journal,* writing paragraphs and articles which were marked by urbanity, charm, and a shrewd knowledge of men and affairs.

Naturally enough then, when in 1849 a conservative candidate was sought for the governorship, Anthony was named and elected governor of the state, was reëlected in 1850 and was urged to run again in 1851, but declined. His administration as governor fulfilled the expectations of his friends and gave him a reputation both for talent and sagacity in the conduct of public affairs. It was, therefore, a matter of course that when he was nominated in 1858 for the Senate he was elected with little opposition. The atmosphere of the Senate was particularly congenial to Anthony's tastes and abilities. His personal charm and dignity, his knowledge of affairs, his acquaintance with public men, his natural ease and kindliness of manner, all fitted him to fill his part in the upper chamber with distinction and success. There he was chosen president *pro tempore* on many occasions, in 1869, 1870, 1871, and for the last time in 1884, when he declined to serve on the score of ill health. It was no wonder that he was returned by his loyal state time after time until he had become the "Father of the Senate"; he was still a member when he died, full of honors and greatly admired both by his associates and his constituents.

Anthony was one of the type of senators whose services lie rather in the exercise of judgment and practical wisdom than in any definite contribution either to law or practise. He was a member, however, of important committees: Claims, Naval Affairs, Mines and Mining, Post Office and Post Roads, and finally that of Public Printing, on which he served for more than twenty-two years and there labored to reduce the extravagance and waste, to restrict public printing to the legitimate demands of the various government departments, and to make the *Congressional Record* a faithful transcript of congressional proceedings. In these endeavors he was only partly successful; they were such desirable ends, however, that they have been pursued, and some of them attained, by others. Similarly as a member of the Committee on Naval Affairs, a post which he filled from 1863 to 1884, he exerted always a sound and moderating influence. He was conservative by constitution: he voted for the impeachment of Johnson, was a steadfast supporter of a protective tariff, and was no less firm in support of a sound currency. He brought to the Senate the character and attainments of a gentleman, a profound and sympathetic knowledge of the state he represented, and an urbanity and courtesy which made him a valued associate in the upper chamber.

[*Henry Bowen Anthony, A Memorial* (1885); George Frisbie Hoar, *Autobiography of Seventy Years* (1903), vol. II; letters and papers of Justin S. Morrill.]

W. B. P.

ANTHONY, JOHN GOULD (May 17, 1804–Oct. 16, 1877), zoologist, was born in Providence, R. I. His parents, Joseph and Mary (Gould) Anthony, were of old New England stock, the Anthonys going back to John Anthony (or Anthonie) of London, who settled in Rhode Island in 1634. Several members of this American branch of the family became widely known for public services, military, politico-social, or scientific. When John was twelve years of age, his parents moved to Cincinnati. The boy's schooling seems to have been of the briefest and he went into business. On Oct. 16, 1832, he was married to Anna W. Rhodes. In those days a group of enthusiastic naturalists had arisen in Ohio. Anthony made the acquaintance of Jared Kirtland and others of this circle, and became deeply interested in natural history. He was apparently able to devote considerable time to the collection and study of freshwater mollusks, for which the Ohio River is famous. From 1835 on, he corresponded extensively with mollusk students in the East and in Europe. In his delightfully frank letters to Louis Agassiz, S. S. Haldeman, and others, we have glimpses of the human and personal side of the scientific workers of the time. Serious eye trouble in 1849 interrupted Anthony's activities for a year, and in 1851 he retired from business.

In 1853 he made a pedestrian tour of Kentucky, Tennessee, and Georgia. His aims, the restoration of health and the collecting of mollusks, were

successfully achieved. The materials gathered were worked up and published in his papers from 1854 to 1860, and in L. Reeve's great British work *Conchologia Iconica* (1843–68). In 1863 Agassiz placed Anthony in charge of the mollusk collections of the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Cambridge, and in 1865 he was included in the scientific staff of the expedition to Brazil. His later years were devoted to the classification and arrangement of the great collections at Cambridge, and, as a side issue, gathering data for a history of the Anthony family. Personally he was a rather short and slender man, with well-shaped head, full beard, and brilliant, dark eyes. His letters were written in a small, regular, copperplate hand, beautiful if somewhat ornate. His labels, to be found in all the older museums, are unmistakable. As an author he was not prolific. His papers were mainly descriptive and had no great scientific influence; but in his letters a wider horizon is often seen, and he supplied material for important monographs by others.

[Chas. L. Anthony, *Geneal. of the Anthony Family* (1904); unpublished letters in Academy of Natural Sciences, Phila.] H.A.P.

ANTHONY, SISTER (1814–Dec. 8, 1897), nurse in the Civil War, known as "the angel of the battlefield" and "the Florence Nightingale of America," originally Mary O'Connell, daughter of William and Catherine (Murphy) O'Connell, was born in Limerick, Ireland, but came to the United States in early childhood and was educated at the Ursuline Academy in Charlestown, Mass. In 1835 she entered the novitiate of the American Sisters of Charity at St. Joseph's Valley. In 1837 she was transferred to Cincinnati, where her work as a Sister of Charity was carried on for forty-five years. In 1852 the Sisters organized the first modern hospital established in the city. It was called St. John's Hotel for Invalids, and Sister Anthony was placed in charge. The hospital was begun in a building previously used by Harriet Beecher Stowe for a private school. The hospital staff was formed from the faculty of the Ohio Medical College. Sister Anthony was brought into relation with Dr. George C. Blackman, president of the Ohio Medical College, and Dr. John Shaw Billings, then an interne in the hospital. Both Dr. Blackman and Dr. Billings achieved unusual distinction as surgeons during and following the Civil War. Their friendship for Sister Anthony and appreciation of her character and services are significant features of the recognition which she earned in the medical history of the state. She and other members of her community served as nurses in Civil War camps and battlefields at Camp Dennison, Winchester, Cumberland, Nashville, Richmond, New Creek, Gallipolis, Culpeper Court House, Murfreesboro, Pittsburg Landing, Lynchburg, and Stone River. They brought boat-loads of wounded soldiers up the Ohio River, and St. John's Hospital was given over entirely to the care of them. The Sisters also accompanied wounded soldiers on flat cars from Cumberland to Washington. In their field nursing they faced every difficulty with the greatest courage and performed services reserved to the supreme reaches of sympathy and spiritual consecration. The *Medical and Surgical History of the War of the Rebellion* (pt. III, vol. I, p. 910) refers to their services "in terms of highest praise." In recognition of the work of Sister Anthony, two citizens of Cincinnati, neither a member of the Catholic Church, purchased the United States Marine Hospital and presented it to her to be used as a hospital under the direction of the Community. In 1873 one of the donors presented to Sister Anthony property to be used as a maternity hospital. The records of the Hebrew Southern Relief Board contain a tribute to her for her work during the outbreak of the yellow fever in 1877. In 1880 she retired from active service. She celebrated her golden jubilee in 1885 and died in 1897. Her death brought forth extraordinary tributes of appreciation and affection from the press and public. The fundamental qualities in her character were self-effacement, profound human sympathy, quick understanding, resourcefulness, and fearless devotion. She had a remarkable gift for inspiring general confidence. The records show that even Jefferson Davis trusted her implicitly when her duties brought her into contact with him. On one occasion a Union general, in compliance with an appeal from Sister Anthony, spared the life of a Confederate soldier who had crossed the lines and incurred the penalty of death. Her personal influence was recognized as of the greatest help by army surgeons in their work with wounded soldiers who were under their charge.

[Much information concerning Sister Anthony is found in Sister Mary Agnes McCann, *The Hist. of Mother Seton's Daughters* (1917–23); in Lieut.-Col. Fielding H. Garrison, *Dr. John Shaw Billings* (1915); in Otto Juettner, *Daniel Drake and His Followers* (1909); and in J. F. Maguire, *The Irish in Am.* (1868), pp. 480 ff.] W.J.K.

ANTHONY, SUSAN BROWNELL (Feb. 15, 1820–Mar. 13, 1906), reformer, was a descendant of John Anthony, Jr., who came to America from Hampstead, England, in 1634. She was born in Adams, Mass., where her well-to-do Quaker father was a pioneer cotton manufacturer. The Anthony family had produced strong-minded women, not afraid to face the public, before Su-

san's day. Her father's mother had been given an exalted place on the high seat in the meeting, and his sister, Hannah, had been a Quaker preacher. Susan grew up in an atmosphere of independence and moral zeal. Daniel Anthony had married Lucy Read, passionately fond of music and dancing, in defiance of the meeting. Much to the annoyance of his patrons, he discontinued the sale of liquor at the store he conducted in conjunction with his mill. He permitted none but Quaker preachers to smoke or drink in his home; was so opposed to slavery that he tried to get cotton for his mills which had not been produced by slave labor; encouraged his daughters to be self-supporting, ignoring the criticism of his neighbors; and finally was "read out of meeting" for permitting the young people of the town to dance on the top floor of his house, instead of over the tavern, though his own children were allowed the rôle of spectators only. His remark when told that the men would not come to the "raising" of tenement houses he had decided to build, unless he furnished them with gin, had in it the same grim determination which his iron-willed daughter later displayed: "Then the houses will not be raised."

Susan was a precocious child, learning to read and write at the age of three, endowed with an unusual memory, and eager for knowledge. When she was six years old, the family moved to Battensville, N. Y. Here she attended the district school and later a school which her father established in his home for his own children and those of his neighbors. This training, supplemented by a year at Deborah Moulson's boarding-school at Hamilton, near Philadelphia, qualified her for good positions in the teaching profession, the best and last of which, head of the Female Department of Canajoharie Academy, she held from 1846 to 1849.

Her early letters reveal a straight-laced, prudish young woman, serious-minded, with very rigid moral standards, and prone to criticize her elders with more than the ordinary assurance of conceited youth. She writes to her uncle, rebuking him for drinking ale and wine at yearly meeting; and after commenting sharply upon President Van Buren's patronage of the theatre, and revelings in the tents of luxury and "all-debasing wine," asks if there can be hope of less dissipation among the people, when one who practises such abominable vices "(in what is called a gentlemanly manner) is suffered to sit at the head of our Government." She was not without admirers of the other sex in those days, but there is no evidence that her passions were ever stirred. She never felt it her mission to be a home-maker. When nearing thirty she was in the family of a

Anthony

cousin when the latter gave birth to a child, and wrote home rather disgustedly that in her opinion there were some drawbacks to marriage which made a woman quite content to remain single. Later her views of amusements and life in general broadened, and she lost much of her priggishness. It was to reform, however, that she gave her heart, and in its service that she found an outlet for her emotions, pouring into it the devotion, loyalty, and self-sacrifice which most women give to their families.

Interest in the great issues of the day and a growing passion to join in the fight against injustice and vice had made her restless in the narrow confines of the school-room, and by 1850 she was back in the family home, now near Rochester, N. Y. It had become a rallying-place for reformers and about its table gathered such men as Garrison, Phillips, Pillsbury, Channing, and Frederick Douglass. Soon she became acquainted with Amelia Bloomer, Lucretia Mott, Lucy Stone, and Elizabeth Cady Stanton with whom she formed a life-long alliance, which in the face of seemingly insurmountable difficulties did much to force the woman suffrage movement on to ultimate success.

Her first public work was in behalf of temperance. In 1852 she was a delegate to a meeting held by the Sons of Temperance in Albany. Upon arising to speak on a motion, she was informed that "the sisters were not invited there to speak but to listen and learn." As a result of this treatment she and others organized the Woman's State Temperance Society of New York, the first of its kind ever formed. She continued her efforts for temperance in conventions and elsewhere, but all the time meeting violent prejudice against women's participation in public affairs, she became increasingly convinced that only through equal rights could women become effective workers for social betterment. She also attended teachers' conventions, where she demanded for women all the privileges enjoyed by men. She took a radical abolitionist stand, and in 1857–58 campaigned under the banner "No Union with Slaveholders." After the war she was one of the first to advocate negro suffrage. When the Fourteenth Amendment was under discussion, she attempted to have included a provision insuring the franchise to women as well as to male blacks but was unsuccessful. In 1852 with some reluctance she joined her friend Amelia Bloomer and others in wearing the short skirt and Turkish trousers, known as the Bloomer costume. In about a year she abandoned it. "I found it a physical comfort," she said, "but a mental crucifixion. The attention of my audience was fixed upon my clothes instead of

my words. I learned the lesson then that to be successful a person must attempt but one reform."

Any chronological record of Miss Anthony's life would be one of unending lecture tours and the direction of campaigns in one state after another. In 1868 in association with Mrs. Stanton and Parker Pillsbury she published a periodical known as *The Revolution,* radical and defiant in tone. "We said at all times," Mrs. Stanton declares, "just what we thought, and advertized nothing we did not believe in" (Theodore Stanton and Harriot Stanton Blatch, *Elizabeth Cady Stanton,* 1922, I, 215). In 1869 the National Woman Suffrage Association was organized to secure a sixteenth amendment to the Federal Constitution, enfranchising women. Mrs. Stanton was made president and Miss Anthony chairman of the executive committee. Owing to some division in sentiment, the American Woman Suffrage Association was formed the same year, with Henry Ward Beecher as president and Lucy Stone chairman of the executive committee. It worked chiefly to secure suffrage through amendments to state constitutions. In 1890 the two societies were merged under the name National American Woman Suffrage Association and Mrs. Stanton was elected president and Miss Anthony vice-president at large. In 1892 Miss Anthony was elected president and served until 1900, when she retired at the age of eighty.

In 1872, in a plan to test the legality of woman suffrage under the Fourteenth Amendment, she registered with fifteen other women and voted at the November elections in the city of Rochester. Two weeks later she was arrested for having violated the law. Her trial was postponed and she voted again in the city elections the following March. Since the trial of the United States *vs.* Susan B. Anthony was to be a jury trial, she and her associates spent the weeks and months preceding it in an intensive lecture campaign aimed to educate the voters from among whom the jury would have to be selected. She was most ably defended at the trial by Henry R. Selden and John Van Voorhis. At its conclusion Judge Ward Hunt delivered a written opinion, written before the trial had taken place, which directed the jury to bring in a verdict of guilty. In the face of Miss Anthony's counsels' objections to this questionable procedure, Judge Hunt refused to allow the jury to be polled and discharged them without permitting them to consult together. He then imposed a fine of $100 on Miss Anthony. She told him she would never pay a dollar of the penalty and she never did. Courts and laws meant nothing to her, if they conflicted with what she thought was right. She "would ignore all law to help the slave," she once declared, and "ignore it all to protect an enslaved woman."

Anthony

Throughout the many years of Miss Anthony's strenuous career she encountered opposition of almost every kind. She met hisses and clamor, rotten eggs and vegetables, press comments that were vile and all but obscene, but sustained by an unshakable confidence in the justice of her cause, she never wavered, and before her death she was rewarded with respect and honor rarely bestowed upon woman, and had the satisfaction of seeing equal suffrage granted in four states, and a measure of suffrage granted in others. At international congresses of women in London and Berlin (1899 and 1904), her appearance called forth demonstrations of exceptional regard.

When she was about thirty-five she was described by a newspaper reporter as having "pleasing rather than pretty features, decidedly expressive countenance, rich brown hair very effectively and not at all elaborately arranged, neither too tall nor too short, too plump nor too thin—in brief one of those *juste milieu* persons, the perfection of common sense physically exhibited." In her later years her face was lined, angular, and somewhat austere, but lighted with the spiritual beauty which life-long devotion to high purposes often imparts. She was of the militant type, and being engaged in a desperate fight, she not infrequently displayed some of the less pleasant characteristics which such warfare is likely to produce in a soldier. She had amazing physical vigor, was aggressive and bold. She spoke her mind with great frankness, and occasionally used strong epithets, but no stronger than those hurled at her. There was little of the conciliatory or diplomatic in her disposition. As is often the case with those who are obsessed with one idea, she showed little appreciation for the complexity of social and personal problems, and had difficulty in being altogether fair to points of view different from her own. These, however, were the faults of the qualities which gave her power, and she ranks high among the notable array of reformers, male and female, of her day. She died in Rochester, N. Y., one month after reaching her eighty-sixth year, leaving her small fortune of $10,000 for the cause to which she had given her life.

[Material for this sketch has been found in Ida H. Harper's three-vol. work, *The Life and Work of Susan B. Anthony* (vols. I, II, 1899; vol. III, 1908). These vols. contain much newspaper and mag. comment, giving a wide range of editorial opinion on her work and personality. See also M. A. De Wolfe Howe, *Causes and Their Champions* (1926); Don C. Seitz, *Uncommon Am.* (1925); Sherwood Eddy and Kirby Page, *Makers of Freedom* (1926); United States *vs.* Susan B. Anthony, in Blatchford, *Reports of Cases in the Circuit Court,* XI, 200–12. Elizabeth Cady Stanton, *Eighty Years and More* (1898), contains two chapters on Miss Anthony.

With Mrs. Stanton and Mrs. Matilda Gage, Miss Anthony prepared a *Hist. of Woman Suffrage*, 3 vols. (1881–87), and in 1900, in conjunction with Mrs. Ida Husted Harper, she prepared a fourth vol., which closed the century.] H.E.S.

ANTOINE, PÈRE (Nov. 18, 1748–Jan. 19, 1829), Capuchin friar and parish priest of New Orleans, was a storm center of controversy during his life and has remained so ever since. Opinion in regard to his character has varied all the way from John G. Shea's view that he was "the scourge of religion in Louisiana" (*Catholic Church in the United States*, 1888, II, 548) to C. W. Bispham's judgment that he "did more for New Orleans, morally and spiritually, than any other known person" (*Louisiana Historical Quarterly*, 1919, II, 37). What is certain, however, is that he eventually became the most popular figure of his day in Louisiana.

He was born at Sedella in Granada (Spain), the son of Pedro Mareno and Ana of Arze, and was baptized by the name of Francisco Ildefonse Mareno. "He was made Priest by the Bishop of Guadix in the convent of the Capuchins of Granada, Dec. 21, 1771 . . . came to the Mission of Louisiana in the year 1780 . . . was Auxiliary Vicar 1787 . . . was also instituted Curé of the Parish of St. Louis of New Orleans Nov. 25, 1785" (*Vie abregée du Père Antoine*, 1829, quoted by Bispham, p. 25). As early as 1787 Gov. Miro suspected Père Antoine of a design to establish the Inquisition in Louisiana (Correspondence quoted by Bispham, p. 26), a measure likely to arouse the hostility of the French inhabitants of the province and to interfere with further immigration. Friction had also developed between Père Antoine and Bishop Cyril and by 1790 had reached such a point that the latter requested him to return to his monastery in Spain (F. L. Gassler, *Catholic Historical Review*, 1922, II, 60). Gov. Miro gladly agreed to supply the necessary sailing facilities and on Apr. 28, 1790 notified the friar that the arrangements for his departure were completed. Antoine now refused to leave and not only produced a royal order of the previous December appointing him Supreme Officer of the Holy Inquisition of Cartagena in Louisiana, but demanded that the Governor should make ready immediately to furnish him with troops "at any hour of the night" to carry this order into effect. He repeated this demand in even more peremptory terms the following day (*Ibid.*, p. 61). With matters thus brought to a crisis, it was decided that the friar be returned at once to Spain for "canonical reasons" (*Ibid.*, p. 62). "On a stormy night [he] was bound in irons and sent back" (*Louisiana Historical Quarterly*, II, 384).

After his return to Spain, Père Antoine disappears from view for five years, but in August 1795 he reappears, bearing the new title of Honorary Preacher to His Majesty and reinstated in his parish in New Orleans by order of the King (*Ibid.*, pp. 27, 374). During the confusion attendant upon the rapid transfer of Louisiana first to France and then to the United States, Antoine was frequently accused of political and ecclesiastical intrigues. The accusations were believed by Archbishop Carroll of Maryland, who was in ultimate charge of the area of New Orleans, by Secretary of State Madison, and, apparently by Gov. Claiborne. At this distance it is impossible fully to determine the actual facts. Carroll's jurisdiction over New Orleans, although later confirmed, was at this time still doubtful, and the legality of his appointments may have been sincerely questioned by Antoine. The friar was evidently a high-spirited man, indisposed to avoid enmity. He seems to have regarded the welfare of his own parish as more important than harmony with his fellow ecclesiastics. In 1805 a dispute arose between him and the Rev. Patrick Walsh, Vicar-General of Louisiana, who suspended the friar from his offices and appointed the Convent of the Ursuline Nuns as the only place in the parish where the sacraments could be administered. Antoine defied Walsh's authority, and claimed that the church was the property of the citizens of New Orleans; and the Catholics of the city held a meeting which elected a body of wardens who in turn chose Père Antoine as their parish priest (*Ibid.*, p. 29). Antoine further appealed to the Spanish King, who once more supported his claim (*Propaganda Arch. Congreg. particolari*, CXIV, 71 ff., a document which proves that the Spanish King even after the cession of the territory to the United States, made use of the prerogatives granted by the Popes in matters of ecclesiastical territory). After Walsh's death his successors continued the assault on the friar, but Antoine maintained his position successfully. From 1813 to 1816 he acted as a secret political agent for the Spanish government, communicating to its war department news of various filibustering conspiracies against Mexico (correspondence quoted, *Louisiana Historical Quarterly*, II, 385–92).

If in his political and ecclesiastical activities Antoine was unnecessarily assertive, the record of his relations with his parishioners shows entire devotion and unselfishness. When in 1819, with his position definitely established, he was offered the bishopric of New Orleans by Du Bourg, he modestly declined on the score of age and incapacity (letter, Antoine to Du Bourg,

Louisiana Historical Quarterly, II, 33). He continued to live a life of poverty in a little wooden hut in the rear of the church. During the frequent epidemics of yellow fever, he always remained in the city and ministered to the sick (A. Lavasseur, *Lafayette in America,* II, 231). He devoted to the care of the poor all the gifts which he received from the 3,500 marriages which he performed. In 1816 he established a confraternity for instructing negroes in the Catholic faith. His funeral in 1829 was more of a triumph than a funeral. Both houses of the legislature, in accordance with the public sentiment, adjourned for the day and assisted at the interment. The courts likewise suspended their sessions, and the judges joined in the procession. The members of the City Council did likewise and wore crape for thirty days (*Louisiana Advertiser,* New Orleans, Jan. 24, 1829). The Masons of all lodges were asked to walk in the procession, and a special notice was given to the members of the Lodge L'Étoile Polaire to take part (*Louisiana Gazette, The Bee,* both of New Orleans, Jan. 22, 1829). The date-palm tree that overshadowed the hut in which Antoine lived and died, became, in memory of the friar, a famous landmark in New Orleans. The centenary of the appointment of Antoine as Pastor of New Orleans, Nov. 29, 1885, was solemnly celebrated at the Cathedral, and a book, *Centenaire du P. Antoine,* was published to commemorate the event.

[In addition to the sources cited above, see Fredegand Callaey in *Analecta O. M. Cap.,* XLI (Rome, 1925); Otto Jeron, "The Capuchins in the U. S.," in *Hist. Recs. and Studies of the U. S. Cath. Hist. Soc.;* Marie Louise Points in *Cath. Encyc.* (1911), XI, 8–11. The statement of Shea (*Cath. Ch. in the U. S.,* II, 548–49) that it was charged that Antoine "was sent to Spain for having killed a man in a quarrel concerning a woman" rests upon a doc. that has never been found.]

F.M.K.

ANZA, JUAN BAUTISTA DE (b. 1735), Spanish explorer and founder of San Francisco, was born at the Spanish port of Fronteras in Sonora, Mexico. At an early age he became a lieutenant and in 1760 was made captain of the Presidio of Tubac, though not confirmed in the position. An official said of him that by reason of his "activity, valor, zeal, intelligence, and notable unselfishness he was an all-round good officer" (C. E. Chapman, *Founding of Spanish California,* 1916, pp. 150–52).

Spain at this period (1769–76) was more or less constantly planning to occupy the Pacific coast of North America as far as the Bay of Monterey and beyond, in order to anticipate possible occupation by the Russians or the English (*Ibid.,* ch. VIII). In 1770 a mission had been planted at Monterey itself by members of the Franciscan Order under Fr. Junipero Serra, and in 1771 there had been planted San Gabriel Mission near the present Los Angeles. As for Monterey, it was thought by Anza that supplies could more successfully be transported thither overland from Sonora than up the coast by ship. In pursuance of this idea, and of permission granted by the Viceroy of New Spain, Antonio Maria Bucarely, Anza on Jan. 8, 1774, set forth from his Presidio of Tubac with twenty-one soldiers, thirty-five loads of provisions, munitions, etc., pack animals and cattle. His course was by way of the Presidio of Altar and of Caborca Mission northwest to the junction of the Gila and Colorado Rivers. From this junction he proceeded to the foot of the San Jacinto mountains, and from the San Jacinto mountains by San Carlos pass to the Mission of San Gabriel. Much of the journey lay across the Colorado Desert and was accomplished only with great suffering. Quitting San Gabriel on Apr. 10, Anza took the road for Monterey. There he made a short stop and then started back to the Presidio of Tubac whence he had set out, arriving May 26, 1774. In recognition of his expedition to Monterey, which had proved the practicability of the route, Anza on Oct. 4, 1774, was made a lieutenant-colonel.

Straightway a second California expedition was decided upon by Viceroy Bucarely, and Anza was instructed to explore the land about San Francisco Bay and to place at some suitable point a presidio, for the site "ought to be occupied in order to advance the Spanish conquests." The expedition set forth from Tubac on Oct. 23, 1775. It consisted not only of a body of troops but of the wives, children, and servants of the soldiers—some 240 persons. California was not merely to be occupied in a military sense but was to be colonized. The route was north to the Gila, then down that stream to the Colorado. Anza reached San Gabriel, Jan. 4, 1776. From San Gabriel he set forth for Monterey on Feb. 21, where he arrived Mar. 10. Attended by his chaplain and cartographer, Pedro Font, he explored the site of San Francisco, marched around the lower end of the bay, and ascended for a short distance the San Joaquin River. In April he departed for Sonora and the City of Mexico, leaving the final dispositions to be made by Lieut. José Joaquin Moraga. On Sept. 17, 1776, there was celebrated the founding (on the site chosen by Anza) of the San Francisco presidio, and on Oct. 9, the founding of the Mission of San Francisco. In June 1777 Anza was made governor of New Mexico, so that he might bring about communication between California and Santa Fé. In

1780 colonies were established on the Colorado River, but in 1781 they were overwhelmed by an attack of the Yuma Indians. For this disaster Anza was criticized, as in the reports of his California expeditions he had spoken highly of the pacific disposition of the Yumas. In 1787 he was put forward for governor of Texas but failed of the office, and in 1788 was relieved of his governorship of New Mexico. Thenceforth he disappears from view.

[H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.*, I (1884), chs. IX, X, XII, XIII; I. B. Richman, *Cal. under Spain and Mexico* (1911), ch. VI; C. E. Chapman, *Hist. of Cal.—The Spanish Period* (1921), chs. XXIII, XXIV—ch. XXIII containing an interesting portr. of Anza; Z. S. Eldredge, *The Beginnings of San Francisco from the Expedition of Anza*, 2 vols. (1912). A reproduction of a chart by Pedro Font, showing the route of Anza on his second expedition (1775–76), may be found in Bancroft, I, 263. Exact reproductions of various charts by Font, as contained in his manuscript diary, are to be found in *San Francisco Bay and Cal. in 1776*, John Carter Brown Lib. (1911).]

I. B. R.

APES, WILLIAM (b. Jan. 31, 1798), Pequot Indian, missionary and author, was born in the woods near Colrain, Mass. His father was a half-breed who joined the natives and married a descendant of King Philip. During his childhood the boy's parents led a roving life as basket-makers, and his early years were passed with his grandparents, who treated him with great brutality. At some time during his fifth year, after his arm had been broken by his grandmother, he was rescued by an uncle who called in a neighboring white man to his assistance. Brought up and Christianized by the whites, he ran away at the age of fifteen and enlisted in the army. He took part in Gen. Hampton's abortive campaign against Canada, in Gen. Wilkinson's attack on Montreal, and in the battle of Lake Champlain. Soon after his discharge he married a white woman. He now became a Methodist preacher, but being refused a license by the Methodist Episcopal Conference, he joined the Methodist Society, instead, by which he was regularly ordained in 1829.

Four years later when visiting the Marshpee Indians on Cape Cod he found them very discontented with their lot. Unjustly taxed, receiving neither police protection, education, nor religious instruction—the white missionary appointed by Harvard College received 400 acres of Indian land but devoted all his attention to his own countrymen—the Indians endured in silence for lack of a leader to voice their complaints. This leader they now found in Apes, who became a member of the tribe, and boldly encouraged them to adopt rather high-handed resolutions, dismissing their white overseers and *fainéant* missionary, and forbidding the whites to cut wood on their plantation. Presently Apes was arrested for forcibly unloading a wagonload of wood collected by one Sampson in defiance of the Indian notification; he was tried on the charge of inciting to riot and sentenced to thirty days in jail. The case attracted attention throughout the state and was widely commented upon in the newspapers. Apes was at liberty in time to make one of the Indian deputation which petitioned the next legislature. Largely influenced by his sincerity and eloquence, the legislature adopted measures removing most of the Indian grievances. Apes brought libel suits against three of his detractors and compelled apologies. After these victories, his career is unrecorded.

He was the author of four works: *A Son of the Forest* (1829), a delightfully naive autobiography, containing a long appendix on the Indian character; *The Experiences of Five Christian Indians: or the Indian's Looking-Glass for the White Man* (1833); *Indian Nullification of the Unconstitutional Laws of Massachusetts Relative to the Marshpee Tribe: or, the Pretended Riot Explained* (1835), a full, well-documented account of the whole Marshpee affair, put into its final shape by William J. Snelling; *Eulogy on King Philip* (1836), a convincing evidence of Apes's oratorical power.

[In addition to the above see *Hist. of Barnstable County, Mass.*, ed. by Simeon L. Deyo (1890) and *Laws of the Commonwealth of Mass., Passed by the Gen. Court*, 1834, ch. CLXVI, 1836, Ch. CLXXIX.]

E. S. B.

APPENZELLER, HENRY GERHARD (Feb. 6, 1858–June 11, 1902), Methodist missionary to Korea, was descended from Jacob Appenzeller, who came to Philadelphia in 1735 from Appenzell, Switzerland, and was secured as a tenant farmer by a Mr. Thomas, of Suderton, Pa. Jacob was thrifty and eventually acquired the farm. Gideon, of the fourth generation, married Maria Gerhard, of Mennonite stock. Henry, the second of their three sons, was born on the Suderton farm. His mother never mastered English, and she and her son always conversed in "Pennsylvania Dutch." After a public school education, he attended the West Chester Normal School, graduated from Franklin and Marshall College at Lancaster, Pa., in 1882, and then attended Drew Theological Seminary at Madison, N. J. He had been "converted" in 1876, while attending Presbyterian revival services at West Chester, but in 1879 had joined the Methodist Church at Lancaster, and, being licensed to preach, had filled sundry small pulpits during his college and seminary days. At Drew he "excelled in Greek" (Griffis, p. 76), and became

private secretary to one of the professors. On Dec. 17, 1884, he married Ella Dodge, who had removed to Lancaster from Berlin, N. Y., in 1879. She had been reared a Baptist, but, like her future husband, had joined the Methodist Church at Lancaster. While on their honeymoon at the home of his parents the Christmas holidays brought them their appointment as missionaries to Korea. The faculty and students of Drew accompanied them to their train, singing hymns. Appenzeller was ordained at San Francisco, Feb. 1 or 2, 1885, and sailed on the latter date, accompanied by Dr. Scranton and family, Methodist missionaries, and the Rev. Horace Underwood, Presbyterian; all bound for Korea. The Appenzellers and Mr. Underwood arrived at Chemulpo on Apr. 5, 1885. The century-old opposition to Christianity still made missionaries unwelcome in Korea, and, because of the disturbed conditions following the bloody *émeute* of Dec. 4, 1884, official advice was against taking ladies to Seoul. The Appenzellers therefore returned temporarily to Japan but were back in Chemulpo in June 1885, and settled at Seoul in July. Their daughter, Alice R., was born that year—the first white child born in Korea. Two other daughters were also born there.

Appenzeller soon acquired a knowledge of the language and assisted in the translation of the Scriptures; Matthew and Mark, First and Second Corinthians being assigned to him. He aided in the establishment of the Methodist printing house by the Rev. Mr. Ohlinger, whom he assisted in editing the *Korean Repository*. He later became the editor of this valuable magazine under its new title *Korean Review*. In 1886 he established the Pai Chai School for boys, the brick building for which was completed in 1887. In 1895 he realized the fulfilment of a fond dream in the laying of the corner-stone of a brick church building on the Methodist premises at Seoul. In a regrettable encounter, in May 1902, with some Japanese workmen engaged in the construction of the Seoul-Fusan Railway, he and Bishop Moore and the Rev. Mr. Swearer, were injured. This delayed his intended departure for the South on mission work, so that he was obliged to take a following steamer, the *Kumagawa*, sailing from Chemulpo June 11, 1902. That evening his ship was wrecked in collision with the *Kisawaga* near Kunsan. His body was not recovered. Being dressed, he might have saved himself, as did others, had he not gone forward to rescue a native mission girl entrusted to his care.

[Wm. E. Griffis, *A Modern Pioneer in Korea* (1912); Jas. S. Gale, *The Vanguard* (1904), *Korean Sketches* (1898); Daniel L. Gifford, *Every-Day Life in Korea* (1898); L. H. Underwood, *Underwood of Korea* (1918); Horace Grant Underwood, *Modern Education in Korea* (1926); Isabella B. Bishop, *Korea and Her Neighbors* (1898); Horace N. Allen, *Chronological Index of Korea* (1891), *Things Korean* (1908), *Korean Fact and Fancy* (1904). The above sketch has been checked and elaborated by the personal recollections of the biographer, and by correspondence with the M. E. Board of Foreign Missions.]

H. N. A.

APPLE, THOMAS GILMORE (Nov. 14, 1829–Sept. 17, 1898), theologian, educator, born at Easton, Pa., the seventh son of Andrew and Elizabeth (Gilmore) Apple (or Appel), came of German, English, and Irish ancestry. He graduated at Marshall College, Mercersburg, Pa., in 1850, under the presidency of the celebrated theologian, Dr. John W. Nevin. During his college course and for several years thereafter he studied theology and in 1852 was ordained as a minister of the (German) Reformed Church in the United States. On Aug. 27, 1851, he married Emma Matilda Miller, of Easton, Pa., by whom he had eleven children. In 1865 he became president of Mercersburg College, a new institution, established upon the physical foundations of old Marshall College, which in 1853 had been merged in Franklin and Marshall College at Lancaster, Pa. On June 27, 1871 he was elected professor of church history and New Testament exegesis in the Theological Seminary, which in this year was also moved from Mercersburg to Lancaster. In 1877 he was elected president of Franklin and Marshall College and assigned to the chair of philosophy, which he occupied for twelve years in conjunction with his professorship in the Theological Seminary. From 1868 to the end of his life he was editor of the *Mercersburg Review*, later changed in title to the *Reformed Church Quarterly Review* as the organ of the denomination for Christological, historical, and positive theology. In its pages will be found his most important writings, particularly his contributions to the system of thinking which in this country came to be identified with the institutions at Mercersburg and hence was called "Mercersburg Theology." He also took an active part in the legislative and executive affairs of the church, and was instrumental in the organization of some and the reorganization of other enterprises which profited by his administrative abilities. He was a member of the committee which framed the *Order of Worship* (1866). He was a leading member of the so-called "Peace Commission" which finally settled the liturgical question upon a satisfactory basis in the form of a *Directory of Worship*, authorized for use in 1887. In the matter of doctrine, he drew a sharp line between religion as a challenge to faith and theology as a science. "He held firmly to the historic faith of the church,

and yet he never refused to accept any new light that was shed upon the old faith by modern critical research" (*Reformed Church Messenger,* vol. LVI, no. 39). His writings are marked by clear thinking, intellectual honesty, and lucid expression. He had a constructive mind and contributed much of permanent value to the religious and educational history of his time.

[Joseph Henry Dubbs, *Hist. of Franklin and Marshall Coll.* (1903); *Franklin and Marshall Coll. Obit. Rec.,* vol. I, no. 3; *Reformed Ch. Messenger,* Sept. 22, 29, 1898; Theodore Appel, *Life and Work of John Williamson Nevin* (1889), see Index; *Proc. Gen. Council Presbyt. Alliance,* 1880; "Mercersburg Theology" in the *New Schaff-Herzog Encyc. of Religious Knowledge;* files of the *Reformed Church Quart. Rev.; Lancaster Daily New Era,* Sept. 17, 1898.]

G. F. M.

APPLEBY, JOHN FRANCIS (May 23, 1840–Nov. 8, 1917), inventor, was born at Westmoreland, Oneida County, N. Y., the son of James and Jane Appleby who had but recently come to New York from England. In 1845 the parents continued their migration to try a fresh start in the newer country of Wisconsin, where they established their farm home in Walworth County. Here Appleby grew up, obtaining a district school education in the infrequent intervals when he was not needed for work at home or on some neighbor's farm. It was when only eighteen, in the employ of a farmer in Iowa County, that he first conceived the idea of a binder. He was assisting in the trial of a new reaping machine, binding the sheaves as the grain was cut, when it occurred to him that a machine could be made to do this work. His suggestion was received with jeers from his employer. Nevertheless, during the ensuing year he constructed a model of a twine binder which contained the essential elements of the Appleby Knotter which binds nine-tenths of the grain grown in the world to-day. Lack of funds prevented Appleby from further developing his knotter and when the Civil War started he volunteered and served in the 23rd Wisconsin Infantry. While in the trenches before Vicksburg, he had time to whittle out a new device for rifles. This mechanism provided a magazine for cartridges and an automatic feed device. He received a patent for this the next year (1864) which he sold for $500, only to see it resold for $7,000. This incident, besides supplying funds necessary to continue experimentation, impressed Appleby with the value of invention and made him an inventor for life. In 1867 he was able to demonstrate his first complete machine at Mazomanie, Wis. The demonstration was unsuccessful and earned him the reputation of being a crank. He was encouraged, however, by one spectator, Dr. E. D. Bishop, who invested $1,500 in the binder. In 1872 Appleby connected himself with Parker & Stone of Beloit, Wis., and built in their factory a wire binding machine which was successful as a binder, but failed because of the farmers' prejudice against wire as a binding material. In 1874 he organized the Appleby Reaper Works to build self-rake reapers at Mazomanie. The following winter he renewed his experiments with the twine binder at the factory of Parker & Stone, and the next year rebuilt the machine which was then entirely satisfactory. On July 8, 1878, and Feb. 18, 1879, patents were issued covering the perfected machine and binder. In the winter of 1878, William Deering, of the firm of Gammon & Deering, recognized the possibilities of the binder and purchased the rights to substitute it for a wire binder which the company had been using on the Marsh Harvester. This was the first manufacture of the Appleby Knotter on a large scale, and marked the beginning of its general adoption on harvesters. The McCormick, Champion, and Osborn companies procured rights and began the manufacture of this type of binder and all others were soon outdistanced by its superiority. It remains to-day the most popular binding machine. Appleby was married at Mazomanie, Wis., in 1867, and was the father of three children.

[R. L. Ardrey, *Am. Agricultural Implements* (1894); Merritt Finley Miller, *The Evolution of Reaping Machines* (1902); Herbert N. Casson, *The Romance of the Reaper* (1908); V. D. Stockbridge, *Digest of Patents Relating to Breech-Loading and Magazine Small Arms* (1874); F. B. Swingle, "Unbending Backs at Harvest Time" in *Wis. Agriculturist,* July 14, 1923, repub. as "The Invention of the Twine Binder" in *Wis. Mag. of Hist.,* X, 35; U. S. Patent Office Records; obituaries in *Chicago Herald, Chicago Tribune,* Nov. 9, 1917, *Implement Age,* Nov. 17, 1917, *Implement and Tractor Trade Jour.,* Nov. 24, 1917. Appleby's first knotter is in the Wis. State Hist. Museum at Madison.]

F. A. T.

APPLEGATE, JESSE (July 5, 1811–Apr. 22, 1888), surveyor, legislator, publicist, was the youngest son of Daniel, a New Jersey Revolutionary soldier, and Rachel (Lindsey) Applegate. He was born in Kentucky but the family moved to Missouri when he was ten years old. In 1827–28 he attended Rock Spring Seminary (afterward Shurtleff College), in Shiloh, Ill., where he made noteworthy progress in mathematics and surveying under the tuition of John Messenger. Later, while teaching school, he continued these studies privately under the direction of Justus Post. He then secured a clerkship in the surveyor general's office at St. Louis under Col. McRee and soon became deputy surveyor-general, doing field work for a number of years in western Missouri. He settled in the Osage Valley on a farm. In 1832 he was married to Cyn-

thia Parker. In 1843, owing to hard times and the menace of slavery in his region, he joined the "great emigration" to Oregon and, having one of the largest herds, was elected captain of the "cow-column." He brought his company safely to the Columbia with their wagons, opened a farm in the Willamette Valley not far from the Columbia, built a mill, and also performed much public work as surveyor. He was leader of the party which in 1845 opened the southern road into Oregon by way of Rogue River, Goose Lake, and the Humboldt River to Fort Hall.

In 1845 he was a member of the legislative committee of the Provisional Government and succeeded in effecting a complete revision of that government, also in securing the adherence to it of the managers of the British Hudson's Bay Company, thus for the first time unifying the Oregon settlement politically. The government thus established endured till Oregon became a Territory of the United States in 1849. Applegate was a member of the state constitutional convention in 1857 but refused to remain till its work was completed. He was deficient in the spirit of coöperation, had a somewhat dictatorial temper, and succeeded best when his leadership was unchallenged. He was a Whig and then a Republican in politics, while Oregon, to 1860, was controlled by the Democrats. His influence was powerful in securing Lincoln's election and in maintaining the national cause during the Civil War. In 1849 he had removed to southern Oregon, settling on a large ranch near the California trail in the Umpqua Valley, at a place he named Yoncalla. His chief business was raising beef cattle which he drove to the mines. Here he built his "great house," dispensed a generous hospitality to all comers, and entertained men of national distinction. Schuyler Colfax and Samuel Bowles visited him in 1865. He assembled a good private library and remained through life a student, and a writer on public questions for the newspapers. His literary style was distinguished, as witness the appeal of the Provisional Government to Congress in 1847, the report of the American commission to settle the claims of the Hudson's Bay Company under the treaty of 1846, and especially *A Day with the Cow-Column in 1843,* which ranks as a western classic. He also wrote for Schuyler Colfax, and published locally, a treatise on the subject of reconstruction. This reveals his grasp of constitutional problems, also his extreme reliance on logic and corresponding disregard of human prejudices. Applegate was a large factor in promoting the construction of the Oregon and California railroad, yet it is said he refused to accept a United States senatorship on terms which would have made him subservient to the railroad interest. He was aggressively independent, looked like an old Roman, and had many of the Roman virtues. A frontiersman in the simplicity of his life, he was physically of the mountaineer type—above medium height, thin, wiry, resilient, capable of walking sixty miles a day. He was gifted intellectually and was a good conversationalist but shrank from public speaking. He molded opinion through the press, through resolutions drafted for general organizations, through a wide correspondence with prominent men, and through direct personal appeal.

[Letters to M. P. Deady, MS. in the Deady Collection, Ore. Hist. Soc.; Views of Ore. Hist., MS. comments on Mrs. Victor's *River of the West,* Bancroft Lib., Univ. of Cal.; Jos. Schafer, "Jesse Applegate, Pioneer and State Builder," *Univ. of Ore. Bull.,* n. s., vol. IX, no. 6, Feb. 1912, containing a unique portrait which is reproduced also in Jos. Schafer's *Hist. of the Pacific Northwest* (1918); J. M. Peck to Gen. Jos. Lane, giving an account of Applegate's success as a student at Rock Spring Seminary, *Quart. Ore. Hist. Soc.,* XV, 208–9; obituary, *Morning Oregonian,* Oct. 24, 1888.]

J. S.

APPLETON, DANIEL (Dec. 10, 1785–Mar. 27, 1849), publisher, son of Daniel and Lydia (Ela) Appleton, was born at Haverhill, Mass. After a limited schooling he started in business in his native town, keeping a general store. He married Hannah Adams of Andover, Mass., May 4, 1813: there were in all six sons and two daughters. Some years later he sought Boston as a larger field of endeavor and sold "English goods" at 21 Broad St. (*Boston Directory,* 1826). New York, however, in 1826, with a population of about 165,000, was four times as large as Boston and just the place for this man of ambition and energy. The *New York Directory* of 1827 reads: "Daniel Appleton, merchant, 15 Water St." During these years the "English goods" which Appleton imported began to include books, and there are many allusions to the ruddy-faced proprietor picturesquely dressed "in blue coat with bright buttons, a light buff vest and blue pants, and looking not unlike Daniel Webster" (Overton, p. 28), giving careful heed to the requests of his book-loving patrons. His young son, William H. Appleton [*q.v.*], was encouraged to build up a "book department," and soon both father and son were ready to risk their futures on the book business alone. Book publishing was first undertaken in 1831, and W. Mason's *Crumbs from the Master's Table,* a microscopic volume (see photographs, actual size, in Overton, *op. cit.,* pp. 28, 29) appeared with the imprint, "D. Appleton." Another tiny affair with the title *Gospel Seeds* was published in the same year, and a third, in

1832, bore the title *The Refuge Containing the Righteous Man's Habitation in the Time of Plague and Pestilence.* The firm name "D. Appleton & Co." dates from Jan. 27, 1838, when Daniel took William H. into partnership. The desire which the father expressed at that time that the firm name should continue forever unchanged has been respected. An entirely new line of books that Appleton was one of the first to put out was for children's use. Books in Spanish, particularly for South American countries, began to be published by him in the forties and found a ready sale. In the choice of his publications Appleton had, as his contemporaries testify, "a scrupulous regard for the interests of Religion and Morality" (Resolutions in *N. Y. Tribune,* Mar. 31, 1849). He retired from business in 1848 and died one year later.

[*The House of Appleton* (1916), and G. M. Overton, *Portrait of a Publisher* (1925) are informing, although dates and locations for the beginning of Appleton's business in N. Y. are in conflict with the Boston and N. Y. *Directories* from 1825 to 1830. There is an historical collection in the library of the firm, containing first editions of many publications.] A. E. P.

APPLETON, JAMES (Feb. 14, 1785–Aug. 25, 1862), reformer, was one of the first to propose state prohibition as a remedy for intemperance. He was born in Ipswich, Mass., a descendant of Samuel Appleton, who came there from England in 1635. His father also bore the name Samuel. His mother, Mary, was the daughter of Rev. Timothy White of Haverhill, Mass. He had only ordinary educational advantages, but possessed business ability and a gift for public speaking. Removing to Gloucester, Mass., he engaged in the jewelry business and also kept a public house. Here, Nov. 19, 1807 (*Vital Records of Gloucester, Mass.;* Nov. 15, according to Waters's "Genealogy of the Ipswich Descendants of Samuel Appleton," in *Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society,* XV), he married Sarah, daughter of Rev. Daniel and Hannah Bowers Fuller, by whom he had ten children. Though a Federalist in politics, as soon as the government had committed itself to war with England in 1812 he volunteered for service in the field. As lieutenant-colonel of the Gloucester regiment, "he twice, at the engagements of Sandy Bay and of Gallup's Folly, in 1814, repelled attacks of the British fleet under Sir George Colier upon the city and forts of Gloucester, for which service he was borne as of the same rank upon the rolls of the Regular Army of the United States. He subsequently was promoted Colonel and Brigadier-General of the First Brigade, Second Division, of the Massachusetts Line" (*The Diary of the Revd. Daniel Fuller,* ed. by D. F. Appleton, 1894, pp. 5, 6). He represented Gloucester in the General Court in 1813 and 1814. In 1832 he prepared and presented to that body a petition asking for a law prohibiting sales of liquor in less quantities than thirty gallons. In reply to opposition, he wrote three letters, which were published in the *Salem Gazette* during February 1832. This pioneer attempt to secure state prohibition failed, and the following year he left Massachusetts for Portland, Me. In 1836 he was elected a member of the legislature of that state and the following year he was chairman of a special committee appointed to consider the license system. Its report, which was written by him, was, according to Neal Dow [*q.v.*], "the first official document in the history of Maine in which prohibition is suggested as the true method of dealing with the liquor traffic" (*Reminiscences,* 1898, p. 243). In 1838 he was chairman of a similar committee which presented a bill in favor of prohibition and provided for the submission of the matter to popular vote. In the legislature of 1839 he was again chairman of the committee on license laws and sought, without success, to secure the passage of a prohibitory law.

His interest was not confined to temperance reform, however; he was also an ardent anti-slavery advocate. Among the tracts published by the New England Anti-Slavery Tract Association is one (No. 3) written by him on the Missouri Compromise. In 1842, 1843, and 1844 he was the candidate of the Liberty party for governor of Maine. In his later years he returned to Ipswich and lived on the ancestral farm, but continued his interest in public affairs. He was active in his support of war measures during 1861, but died without seeing the cause for which he had labored victorious. His portrait shows clear-cut features, a high forehead, thick, waving hair, keen but kindly eyes with the suggestion of the dreamer in them, and a mouth and jaw indicative of grim determination. He is described as belonging "to the class of men known as fanatics. From business he turned to politics that he might encourage legislation to remedy a number of social ills. . . . He indorsed Birney's views on slavery, advocated generous and systematic relief of the pauper and championed the cause of popular education. But his real hobby was temperance" (J. A. Krout, *The Origins of Prohibition,* 1925).

[*Origin of the Maine Law and of Prohibitory Legislation,* with a brief memoir of James Appleton, pub. by the National Temp. Soc., New York, 1886—this contains the letters pub. in the *Salem Gazette;* John J. Babson, *Hist. of the Town of Gloucester* (1860); Austin Willey, *Hist. of the Anti-Slavery Cause in State and Nation* (1886); John G. Woolley and Wm. E. Johnson, *Temperance Progress of the Century* (1903); D. L. Colvin, *Prohibition in the U. S.* (1926).] H. E. S.

Appleton

APPLETON, JESSE (Nov. 17, 1772–Nov. 12, 1819), theologian, educator, born at New Ipswich, N. H., was the fourth son of Francis and Elizabeth (Hubbard) Appleton, and a descendant of Samuel Appleton, who came to this country from Suffolk, England, in 1635. His father was a farmer, so limited in means that he felt unable to give Jesse an education and planned to make a mechanic of him. His interest in books was such, however, that a brother promised to aid him, and he prepared for college at a local academy. Entering Dartmouth at the age of sixteen, he graduated in the class of 1792, and spent the next two years teaching at Dover, N. H., Aurean Academy, Amherst, N. H., and Leominster, Mass. He studied theology under Dr. Joseph Lathrop of West Springfield, Mass., supplied different churches for some time, was called to the church at Leicester, Mass., but finally accepted the pastorate of the Congregational Church at Hampton, N. H., where he was ordained Feb. 22, 1797. His salary was ninety pounds a year and the keep of his horse, twenty pounds to be paid in provisions with corn reckoned at three shillings a bushel, and pork and beef at three pence and two pence per pound respectively. Later it was increased to ninety-five pounds with house and firewood, and provision for a horse, two cows, and six sheep. In 1800 he married Elizabeth Means, daughter of Col. Robert Means of Amherst, N. H., by whom he had six children. The third of these, Jane, became the wife of Franklin Pierce, president of the United States.

Appleton was pastor at Hampton ten years. Extremely thorough and methodical in everything, he carefully planned out each day's work, allowing ample time for study. In his agreement with the church he had stipulated that he be permitted to exchange frequently that he might not have to write but one sermon a week. Soon he had acquired a reputation for sincere devotion, kindly spirit, sound judgment, and extensive learning. Although not a controversialist, he came to be regarded as a leader of the conservative element in the church. He was one of the group, which included David Sewall, Joseph Buckminster, and Benjamin Abbot, who initiated *The Piscataqua Evangelical Magazine,* and was put forward as a candidate by the conservatives of the Harvard Corporation when Dr. Henry Ware was elected to the Hollis Professorship of Divinity. He was also a frequent contributor to the *Panoplist,* founded by those who were broadly Calvinistic rather than Hopkinsian.

In 1807 Appleton was elected president of Bowdoin College. At this time he was thirty-five years old, and is described as a little under six feet in height, of commanding figure, his head very bald and of brilliant whiteness, his complexion remarkably fair. To the difficult work of his office he gave himself unsparingly. Besides struggling successfully with the financial problems of the day, he had a large share in the work of instruction, and prepared himself in minute detail for every recitation. Tutors contemplating the ministry were instructed by him. For long periods he allowed himself but four hours a day for sleep and ate a scant diet that the need of physical exercise might be lessened. He had an almost morbid sense of responsibility for the religious and intellectual welfare of the students, which increased his labors and anxiety. Under the strain he broke down physically, and died of a pulmonary affection at the age of forty-seven.

Appleton's publications were chiefly sermons and addresses. Many of these and a bibliography of all may be found in *The Works of Rev. Jesse Appleton, D.D., with a Memoir of His Life and Character,* by Alpheus S. Packard, 2 volumes (1837).

[Benj. Tappan, *A Sermon Delivered at the Interment of the Rev. Jesse Appleton* (1819); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* II (1857); I. A. Jewett, *Memorial of Sam. Appleton of Ipswich, Mass., with Geneal. Notices of Some of His Descendants* (1850); G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867); *Gen. Cat. of Bowdoin Coll.,* with hist. sketch by Geo. T. Little (1894); Jos. Dow, *Hist. of the Town of Hampton, N. H.* (1893).]

H. E. S.

APPLETON, JOHN (July 12, 1804–Feb. 7, 1891), lawyer, the son of John and Elizabeth (Peabody) Appleton, was born in the village of New Ipswich, N. H. His forebears had come from a position of prominence in Suffolk, England; the first American ancestor, Samuel Appleton, took the freeman's oath in Massachusetts in 1636; his descendants were prominent throughout the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. The boy's mother died when he was four years of age, and he was brought up in his native village by an aunt. His early education was in the schools and academy of New Ipswich. At fourteen he entered Bowdoin College, where he graduated in 1822. After a short period of school-teaching, he studied law in the offices of George Farley of Groton, Mass., and of his relative, Nathan Dan Appleton, of Alfred, Me. Admitted to the bar in 1826, he practised in the small towns of Dixmont, Penobscot County, and Sebec, Piscataquis County, until 1832, when he moved to Bangor and entered into partnership with Elisha H. Allen, who was elected to Congress in 1840. His subsequent partners were John B. Hill and his cousin, Moses Appleton.

Appleton's work was as a trial lawyer and from the outset he was a success. He had the physical and intellectual vigor and toughness which the trial lawyer needs. He was a hard worker, a zealous student of law, and an able advocate. These qualities placed him in a few years at the top of his profession in the state. His practise was large and, as times went, lucrative. In 1852 Gov. Hubbard recognized his capacities by nominating him associate justice of the supreme judicial court. Appleton served in this capacity from May 11, 1852, till Oct. 24, 1862, when he was elevated to the office of chief justice. He was reappointed at the expiration of each seven-year term until his retirement on Sept. 20, 1883, at the age of seventy-nine. Thereafter he lived in Bangor. Personally Appleton was a man of wide friendships and warm affections. He enjoyed recreation as well as work, liked a hand at whist, and was a great reader. He was married in 1834 to Sarah N. Allen, who died Aug. 12, 1874. On Mar. 30, 1876, he married Annie Greely.

The monuments of Appleton's judicial labors are to be found in the *Maine Law Reports*. His opinions begin with the case of Larrabee *vs.* Lumbert (34 *Maine* 79), and end with his opinion in State *vs.* Garing (75 *Maine* 591). They are characterized by a ready and lucid legal style, and though his language is sometimes rather more florid than is approved by modern taste, his is perhaps the most valuable single contribution to the legal literature of his state. Important and lengthy as were Judge Appleton's services on the bench, his most distinctive contribution to his times was probably as a legal reformer. He was chairman of a legislative commission which reported on a reconstruction of Maine's judicial system, and it was through his efforts that the legislature in 1852 abolished the district court and gave its jurisdiction to the supreme judicial court. But his best efforts as a student of legal theory were bent upon the abolition of the principle of common law that a party might not be a witness in his own behalf in either civil or criminal cases. In his effort in this direction, Appleton was a confessed disciple of Bentham. His articles on the Law of Evidence first published in *The Jurist*, beginning in 1833, were collected and published in Philadelphia in 1860 under the title, *The Rules of Evidence*. In 1856 he had the satisfaction of seeing the Maine legislature enact a law that no person should "be excused or excluded as a witness in any civil suit or proceeding at law or in equity, by reason of his interest in the event of the same as party or otherwise." Eight years later this principle was extended to criminal cases.

[Chas. Hamlin, article in *Great Am. Lawyers*, ed. by W. D. Lewis, IV (1908); L. C. Hatch, *Maine* (1919); *Green Bag*, VII, 510–16; H. C. Williams, *Biog. Encyc. Maine* (1885); and, most important of all, the *Maine Law Reports* mentioned in the text.] R. H.

APPLETON, JOHN (Feb. 11, 1815–Aug. 22, 1864), congressman, diplomat, was born at Beverly, Mass., a son of John W. and Sophia (Williams) Appleton, and a descendant in the direct line from Samuel Appleton of Ipswich, Mass. During most of his boyhood the Appletons lived in Portland, Me., and John gravitated in the natural course of events to Bowdoin College whence he graduated in 1834. He then returned to Portland and took up the study of law in the office of George W. Pierce. In the summers of 1835 and 1836 he attended the Harvard Law School and later worked in the law office of Willis & Fessenden in Portland. Admitted to the Cumberland County bar on June 20, 1837, he started to practise with Edward Fox who had been his fellow student and who was later United States district judge. Appleton had not been long in practise, however, before he was seized with political ambitions. On July 4, 1838, the young man delivered the oration of the day at the largest Democratic gathering that Portland had ever seen, while John Neal harangued the Whigs near by on Munjoy's Hill. The *Daily Eastern Argus* of the following day records that there were 130 Democratic speeches, 116 of which were by volunteers! Appleton's oration was described as "all that could have been wished." The same journal observed nothing in the speech which "could offend the most refined and delicate taste . . . while the principles of democracy were enforced and defended with an energy which evinced how deeply they were felt and sacredly believed by the orator." In view of this effusion it is not surprising to learn that the orator of the day became shortly after attached to the editorial staff of the *Daily Eastern Argus*. He was later appointed by Gov. Fairfield to be register of probate for Cumberland County, but this service apparently did not prevent his going on with his editorial work. On Nov. 27, 1840, he was married to Susan L. Dodge of Salem. In 1845, at the invitation of George Bancroft, then secretary of the navy, Appleton became chief clerk in the Navy Department, and there he remained until 1848 when he was transferred to the State Department then headed by James Buchanan. He was there for a few weeks only when President Polk appointed him to the inconspicuous and uncoveted post of chargé d'affaires in Bolivia. On his way to fulfil his new mission, Appleton was shipwrecked and narrowly escaped death. The

journey inland was on horseback over mountains, and the post proved on arrival scarcely more agreeable than the journey thither. Living conditions were unattractive, diplomatic amenities were few, and there was little work to attend to. Appleton projected a book on the young republic, then closing the first generation of its independence. But his ambition flagged, and on the accession of Zachary Taylor to the presidency, he resigned (May 4, 1849) and returned to Portland to take up the practise of law with Nathan Clifford. In 1851 Appleton successfully opposed William Pitt Fessenden for the Thirty-second Congress. His majority was 40 votes in 12,000 cast. He was not highly conspicuous in Congress, and congressional life seems not to have been wholly to his liking. He retired at the end of his first term on Mar. 3, 1853. In 1855 he accepted an appointment as secretary of the legation at London under his old chief, James Buchanan, now minister to the court of St. James's. Buchanan retired a few months after Appleton's arrival and procured Appleton's appointment as chargé d'affaires ad interim. Appleton did not elect to remain longer, however, and returned to take an active part in Buchanan's successful campaign for the presidency. The election over, Appleton took charge for a few months in 1857 of an administration paper known as the *Washington Union,* but this he was obliged to relinquish for reasons of health. On Apr. 4, 1857, he accepted the assistant secretaryship in the State Department, where he remained for the three succeeding years until June 8, 1860. Here he seems to have worked hard and effectively. There is considerable evidence that the most important dispatches of the day came from his pen. In 1860 he accepted the post of minister to Russia and took up his residence at St. Petersburg. Upon Lincoln's election the following November, he resigned and returned to Portland. The severity of the Baltic winter had aggravated an old tendency to tuberculosis. He lived on in Portland for nearly four years of lingering illness. Appleton was a staunch friend of the Union and of the federal constitution. His last years were oppressed by the thought that by remaining in Washington in the closing days of Buchanan's administration he might have exercised some influence toward averting the war.

[*Colls. Me. Hist. Soc.*, ser. 2, II, 337; *Cong. Globe*, 32 Cong., 1851–52; *U. S. State Dept. Reg.*, 1874.]

R. H.

APPLETON, NATHAN (Oct. 6, 1779–July 14, 1861), manufacturer, banker, politician, was the seventh son of Isaac Appleton of New Ipswich, N. H., and Mary (Adams) Appleton. He was prepared for Dartmouth College, but preferred to go into trade in Boston with his brother Samuel [*q.v.*]. Their partnership, established in 1794, prospered, and continued until 1809; then Nathan organized another company with his brother Eben. This firm was dissolved on account of the war with Great Britain, but Nathan Appleton was frank to say: "The war, however, added considerably to our profits." In 1813 he invested $5,000 in Francis C. Lowell's power-mill for making cotton cloth at Waltham; two years later his firm became the sales agent on commission for the factory. Appleton and his associates had established the principles of the American textile industry—power machinery with cheap female labor and a separate selling organization. So successful were the pioneers at Waltham that they bought water-rights on the Merrimac River, founded the industrial city of Lowell, and by 1840 had mills in operation with a capital of $12,000,000. In like manner, they built up the manufacturing centers of Manchester, N. H., and Lawrence, Mass. Appleton attributed much of their success to the fact that they invested only two-thirds of their capital in mills and machinery and kept one-third free to carry on the business (*Introduction of the Power Loom, and Origin of Lowell,* 1858, p. 30). But to him success meant not only handsome profits from large-scale production but also attractive working conditions for the employees and decreasing cost of the goods to the consumers.

The same conception of responsibility to the public guided Nathan Appleton in his banking enterprises. He championed the Suffolk system, by means of which a group of Boston banks checked rural issues of paper money, because, as he said: "The only proper basis of bank circulation is a large monied capital, exclusively appropriated to the business of banking. . . . Public security requires, that the issue of a bank should bear a small proportion to its capital" (*An Examination of the Banking System in Massachusetts,* 1831, p. 46).

He was elected to Congress in 1830 for the Boston district, as a representative of the manufacturing interest, in preference to Henry Lee, candidate for the merchants. John Quincy Adams accordingly called upon him to assist in framing the protective tariff of 1832; and Appleton defended it in May 1832 against the attacks of McDuffie of South Carolina, who argued that a duty on imports was a tax on exports and especially discriminatory against the Southern industry of cotton planting (*Congressional Register,* 22 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 3119 ff.). But Appleton did not argue

for his own mills; they were already producing on a large scale and able to compete in foreign markets (see his articles, as "Statist," in the *Philadelphia Banner of the Constitution,* 1831). He asserted that protective tariffs were for the interest of the whole nation; they would increase the consumption of Southern cotton by Northern mills, replacing the foreign with a domestic market; they would encourage competition among American mills, and thus reduce the cost of cotton goods to domestic consumers. He opposed Clay's compromise tariff of 1833 as "abandonment" of protection; he warmly commended President Jackson's proclamation against the "semi-rebellion" of South Carolina.

Seeing that the controversy over the Bank of the United States was a question of "the bank or no bank," Appleton supported Biddle and Clay against Jackson, for he believed that a national bank was essential. But acting with a group of New York bankers, he resisted Biddle's policy of contracting and expanding the bank's loans after the denial of a new charter and the "removal of the deposits" by Jackson's administration; and, following the panic of 1837, Appleton and his allies in New York opposed Biddle's wishes, secured gold from the Bank of England, and resumed the payments of specie in the spring of 1838. When Clay proposed another central bank with a national charter, Appleton wrote his masterly pamphlet, *Currency and Banking* (1841), to discuss the principles of sound finance and to show "the danger from an institution of so great power." He recommended a national bank with a capital of only ten millions. Experience with Biddle's bank had obliged him to modify his principle that a large capital was essential to success, at least when applied to the interests of the whole nation: "It was a power too great to be intrusted to any one man."

Slavery, to Nathan Appleton, was a local problem, with which fortunately New England was no longer cursed. Moreover, the greater part of the United States was developing without it; the interests of the nation should not be hampered because slavery was present in the South. Placing the Constitution and the Union above all else, Appleton would have nothing to do with that "fanatical monomaniac," William Lloyd Garrison (*Letter to the Hon. W. C. Rives of Virginia,* 1860; *Correspondence between Nathan Appleton and John G. Palfrey,* 1846), and he firmly asserted his right to vote for Zachary Taylor in 1848, in defiance of Charles Sumner's charge that there was an "unhallowed union" between "the lords of the lash and the lords of the loom" (see transcripts of letters between Charles Sumner and Nathan Appleton, in the Boston Pub. Lib.). But in 1860, when the South came to the verge of secession, Appleton plead with his Southern friend, W. C. Rives, that the Southern states should abandon political competition with the free states and be content to stay within the Union, even if in a minor position. Why could they not see that a "peaceable separation" was impossible?

In 1806 Appleton married Maria Theresa Gold of Pittsfield. Six years after her death in 1833 he married Harriet Coffin Sumner of Boston. His family of seven children was reared in an aristocratic mansion on Beacon St., with the advantages of fine schooling, travel abroad, and contact with the cultured manners and the intellectual interests of their father. Although engrossed in business, finance, and politics, Appleton still had time for an interest in science; he was one of the organizers of the Boston Athenæum and its treasurer from 1816 to 1827; he was active in the Massachusetts Historical Society and was associated with many similar organizations. He cherished, almost as a fetich, his reputation as a man of scrupulous honesty; and he especially charged his friend, Robert C. Winthrop, to make clear in the memorial of his life that money-making had not been his aim; he would have been content, he declared, with the $200,000 which he had made in trade; he had gone into the cotton industry by chance: "Accident and not effort," he said, "has made me a rich man." His quality was manifest in his religious views. He was not satisfied with attendance in the congregation of William Ellery Channing or, occasionally, in King's Chapel; Christian theology, he said, was a favorite study with him. He could not hold, however, to any theological system, for all doctrines were "mere human opinions" and knowledge went no further than understanding; for himself, he must subordinate moral sense and affection, however strong, to reason (see his correspondence with Rev. W. E. Heygate, printed as *The Doctrines of Original Sin and the Trinity* . . ., 1859). Reason did not dictate to him a belief in the immaculate conception, the Athanasian Trinity, or Calvinistic dogmas, the utter iniquity of slavery, or the wickedness of possessing riches; but the spirit within him commanded Nathan Appleton to live in frankness and candor and to face the unknown with quiet courage. When word came that his daughter, Mrs. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, had met a horrible death, he remarked with no outward display of emotion: "She has gone but a little while before me." A few days later he was buried beside her in Mount Auburn.

[The chief sources of information are Appleton's "Sketches of Autobiography," written about 1855, which

R. C. Winthrop quoted at length in his "Memoir," *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.* (1861), V, 249–306, portr., p. 249. There is a collection of Appleton papers, 29 vols., in the Mass. Hist. Soc. For geneal., see I. A. Jewett, *Memorial of Samuel Appleton of Ipswich, Mass.*, 1850.] A.B.D.

APPLETON, NATHANIEL WALKER (June 14, 1755–Apr. 15, 1795), physician, was the son of Nathaniel Appleton, a Boston merchant, and Mary (Walker) Appleton. He received his A.B. from Harvard in 1773 and his A.M. in 1774, after which he moved to Salem, Mass., to become a student of medicine. He chose as his preceptor—for these were the days before the beginnings of medical schools in New England—his father's cousin, the celebrated centenarian, Edward Augustus Holyoke. After his novitiate, Appleton returned to Boston, and on May 24, 1780, married Sarah Greenleaf, by whom he had seven children. Though a diffident man of an impersonal frame of mind, Appleton appears to have acquired a large practise, but his reputation has come down to us chiefly through his activities in the early Massachusetts Medical Society (founded in 1781). James Thacher, as quoted by Burrage, said of him: "When we consider that he was an incorporator of the Massachusetts Medical Society and its recording secretary for the first ten years of its existence; that he attended every meeting of the society and council during that time, writing and signing a record for every one, through all those years fostering the infant organization, Appleton deserves to have the meager facts of his life transmitted to future generations." He did for this early medical society much what Henry Oldenburg had done for the Royal Society of London in its early days. He aroused interest in the meetings, kept copious notes of the proceedings, and often recorded the outside activities of the members of its council. In many instances our only information concerning the early members of the Society is derived from Appleton's carefully penned minutes and records. He was also chairman of the committee which in 1790 brought out the first volume of *Medical Communications,* the official channel of publication for the members of the Massachusetts Medical Society—a journal which continued to be issued regularly for 124 years. As far as is known, Appleton's professional contributions were only two in number, published in the *Medical Communications.* The first was entitled, "An Account of the Successful Treatment of Paralysis of the Lower Limbs, Occasioned by a Curvature of the Spine" (1790, vol. I, ser. 1, p. 56); the second, "History of Hæmorrhage from a Rupture of the Inside of the Left Labium Pudendi" (vol. I, ser. 3, p. 24).

Appleton

[For our knowledge of Appleton we are indebted largely to recent investigations of Dr. W. L. Burrage recorded in his work, *Hist. of the Mass. Medic. Soc., with Brief Biogs. of the Founders and Chief Officers, 1781–1922* (1923). See also: Burrage's "Life" of Appleton in Kelly and Burrage's *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); Letters of Nathaniel Walker Appleton to his classmate, Eliphalet Pearson, 1773–84, ed. by Wm. Coolidge Lane, *Pubs. Colonial Soc. of Mass.*, VIII (1906); Rev. John Clarke's *Discourse Delivered at the First Ch., in Boston, 19th April, A.D. 1795, the Lord's-day after the Interment of Nathaniel W. Appleton, M.D.*, Boston, 1796.] J.F.F.

APPLETON, SAMUEL (June 22, 1766–July 12, 1853), merchant, philanthropist, was descended from Samuel Appleton of Suffolk County, England, who settled at Ipswich, Mass., in 1636. His son, Samuel, became a commander in King Philip's War and an opponent of Sir Edmund Andros. The grandson of this militant colonial went inland to New Ipswich, N. H.; there, his son, Isaac Appleton, grew to manhood and married Mary Adams of Concord; there, Samuel Appleton was born, the third of their twelve children. The hardships so common in the American frontier town were Appleton's early education, giving him perhaps an appreciation of values from the meagerness of his own opportunities; except for a few intervals during the Revolution, between his tenth and sixteenth years, he received no schooling; then, he himself became the district teacher. At twenty-two he helped to establish a new township in Maine, and labored for two summers to clear his farm. But the propensity for trading, so typical of New Englanders, was uppermost in him, and after storekeeping ventures in Ashburnham and New Ipswich, he went in 1794 with his brother, Nathan Appleton [*q.v.*], to open a shop in Boston. By 1799 their business had so developed that a trip to England for merchandise seemed worth while; and until 1819 Samuel Appleton was often abroad on such business. In spite of the Jeffersonian Embargo and the War of 1812, he prospered; he accumulated enough capital to invest with Nathan Appleton in the new cotton industry; he acquired valuable real estate in Boston; he soon had funds to subscribe to the railroad projects of the thirties.

Samuel Appleton never led in politics, although he sat in the state legislature from 1828 to 1831, and served as a presidential elector for Daniel Webster in 1836. He was numbered among the merchants who controlled the currency and finance of New England from State St. As these conservatives turned their capital from shipping and importing to the manufacture of cotton and woolen goods, they deserted the free-trade doctrines of the mercantile aristocracy for protective principles. They dropped their objections to the Second Bank of the United States and, following

Daniel Webster, became its defenders. With them, in opposition to Jacksonian Democracy, Samuel Appleton moved from the Federalist to the National Republican and later to the Whig party.

At the age of fifty-three he married Mrs. Mary Gore. They had no children; but their mansion on Beacon St. was a joyous open house to their nieces and nephews. When he reached the age of sixty, Appleton retired from business with the avowed purpose of spending his income upon philanthropies. He became a benefactor and trustee of the Massachusetts General Hospital; he gave to the Boston Female Asylum, New Ipswich Academy, and Dartmouth College; he was a patron of the Boston Athenæum and the Massachusetts Historical Society. Besides providing for his widow, her nieces, and her sister, for the descendants of his four brothers and two sisters, for his servants, and for his friend, Rev. Ephraim Peabody, his will allotted industrial stocks worth about $200,000—nearly a fifth of his fortune—to scientific, literary, religious, and philanthropic endeavors. Knowing his wishes, his executors distributed most of these stocks among the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, Massachusetts Historical Society, Boston Athenæum, Sailors' Snug Harbor, Massachusetts General Hospital, New Ipswich Academy, and Amherst, Dartmouth, and Harvard Colleges. With its share, Harvard built Appleton Chapel in honor of the benefactor. The portrait by Healey, now in the Boston Athenæum, of this man who began life with no wealth and few advantages, depicts him as a ponderous gentleman of culture and ease, prosperous and benign.

[The principal source of information is a memorial by his friend, Ephraim Peabody, in the *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1854, VIII, No. 1. Additional material may be found in a memoir by W. C. Bates in the *Memorial Biogs.* (1881), II, 62, of the same soc., and another by S. K. Lathrop in the *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.* (1855), III. Appleton's will was published in 1853 with remarks by N. I. Bowditch, one of his executors. Broadsides, issued in 1853 and 1854, listed the industrial and railroad stocks and the real estate of Samuel Appleton which were sold at pub. auction in the old State House at Boston. His portr. by Healey is reproduced in the *Athenæum Centenary* (1907), p. 136. For geneal., see I. A. Jewett, *Memorial of Samuel Appleton of Ipswich, Mass.* (1850).]

A. B. D.

APPLETON, THOMAS GOLD (Mar. 31, 1812–Apr. 17, 1884), essayist, poet, and artist, was a prominent member of the literary coterie which made Boston famous in the middle of the nineteenth century. His presence there was due not so much to his achievements in literature or art, as to his social graces and the brilliance of his talk. Holmes said of him that he "has spilled more good things on the wasteful air in conversation than would carry a 'diner-out' through half a dozen London seasons," and he so impressed Emerson that when the formation of the famous Saturday Club was under way, and possible members were being discussed, that sage declared him to be "desirable in a superlative degree."

His father was Nathan Appleton, a wealthy merchant of Boston, one of the founders of the textile industry of Lowell, and for two sessions a member of Congress; his mother, Maria Theresa Gold of Pittsfield, Mass. They had four other children, one of whom, Frances Elizabeth, married Henry W. Longfellow. Thomas was born in Boston, had Wendell Phillips and John Motley for playmates, spent a year at the Boston Latin School, but prepared for college at the Round Hill School, Northampton, Mass., then conducted by Joseph Cogswell and George Bancroft. He entered the sophomore class at Harvard in 1828 and graduated in 1831. In compliance with his father's wish, he continued at Cambridge a year studying law, though he had no taste for the work.

Appleton never had any fixed occupation. He felt himself lacking in the qualities that had given his father business success, and unfitted for the monotonous life of a profession. He loved to roam and was passionately fond of beauty both in nature and in art. Much of his time was spent in traveling about Europe and in its galleries and theatres. He collected books and works of art. At the same time he keenly enjoyed being with people. Nothing that was lovely or amusing escaped him. He was an habitual diner-out, and his original mind, lively fancy, and quick wit were such as to give his sayings the reputation of being the best Boston had heard since Mather Byles. His ambition was to excel in literature and art but it was not realized. He could not write as he talked, and his essays are but pleasant reading for an idle hour; his poems, formal and uninspired. His sympathies were keen and he was generous with his wealth. During the Civil War both by word and money he was a staunch supporter of his friend, Gov. Andrew. He was actively interested in the growth and improvement of Boston, and was a trustee of the Athenæum, Public Library, and Museum of Fine Arts. To the fund that insured a suitable building for the latter institution he was one of the three largest subscribers, and to both the museum and the library he donated valuable art collections.

His published works are as follows: *Faded Leaves,* poems (1872); *Fresh Leaves,* poems (privately printed, 1874); *A Sheaf of Papers,* essays (1875); *A Nile Journal,* travel (1876); *Syrian Sunshine,* a journal of travel (1877);

Windfalls, essays (1878); *Chequer Work,* essays (1879).

[Susan Hale, *Life and Letters of Thos. Gold Appleton* (1885); E. W. Emerson, *The Early Years of the Saturday Club* (1918); *Memories of a Hostess,* ed. by M. A. DeWolfe Howe (1922); O. W. Holmes, "Thomas Gold Appleton," *Atlantic Mo.,* LIII, 848–50.]

H. E. S.

APPLETON, WILLIAM HENRY (Jan. 27, 1814–Oct. 19, 1899), publisher, was born at Haverhill, Mass., the son of Daniel Appleton [*q.v.*] and Hannah Adams. His schooling ceased at sixteen, when he entered his father's business and was given an opportunity to build up a book department. The first of many business trips to Europe was taken at the age of twenty-one. Thus early, he made acquaintance with the publishers, Longmans, Murray, and Tauchnitz, also with Thomas Moore and the youthful Thackeray. A very formal and businesslike contract is still preserved (in the possession of Mary Appleton, his grand-daughter), which marks the formation of a partnership with his father, in 1838, under the firm name "D. Appleton & Co." Caution that ever characterized the father was thrown to the winds, or at any rate to one side, by the dash and enterprise of the son, and the firm of brothers, organized under William's leadership on their father's retirement in 1848, expanded the publishing business with amazing rapidity. It is said that the revival of the *Webster Spelling Book* kept one press busy all the time for several years, the sales in a single year (1866) totalling 1,596,000 (Overton, p. 44). There were hundreds of other books of an educational character, such as the *Perkins Arithmetics,* the *Cornell Geographies,* the *Quackenbos Histories.* Appleton's was the medium through which the scientific ideas of Darwin, Huxley, and Spencer came to the American public. The *Popular Science Monthly* of to-day is traceable to this enthusiasm for things scientific, the first issue coming from the Appleton press in 1872. The first *Appleton's Cyclopedia of Biography* appeared in 1856. Travelers' guides began also in this decade, one of the earliest being *Navigation Guide for United States and Canada* (1852). In the period following the Civil War the firm was keen to realize the popular veneration of the war hero, and books about Farragut, Porter, Grant, Sheridan, Sherman, and many other commanders, bore the Appleton imprint. Later, Confederate leaders became accepted authors, *e.g.,* Jefferson Davis, *The Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government.* Printing that was formerly done on the outside had now become an integral part of the firm's business. An early printing plant in Franklin St., New York City, was outgrown and a factory covering the larger part of a city block was erected (1868) in Williamsburg; over 600 workmen were employed there. Enlarged sales quarters had also become necessary and the Society Library Building at 346 Broadway was purchased and remodeled. *Gleason's Pictorial Drawing-Room Companion* (Boston), June 24, 1854, pictures and describes the retail salesroom on the ground floor with its "fourteen Corinthian columns in imitation of Sienna marble" and its "book-cases and shelving of plain oak, in length 270 feet."

Appleton was an earnest and active advocate of international copyright and was president of the American Publishers Copyright League in 1887. The Appleton Church Home at Macon, Ga., erected and endowed by him, is evidence of his interest in the church and in humanity. He married Mary Worthen of Lowell, Mass., Apr. 16, 1844, and had two sons and two daughters. The Appleton Mansion, which he occupied in the latter part of his life in the Riverdale section of Bronx Borough, is still standing (A. E. Peterson, *Landmarks of New York,* 1923, pp. 118, 122–23).

[G. M. Overton, *Portr. of a Publisher* (1925) gives much information, with reproductions of title-pages, photographs and letters of authors, newspaper advertisements, etc. A hist. coll. in the company's lib. contains letters from Darwin, Wm. H. Lecky, Huxley, James Buchanan, and other authors, also first editions of many titles including *Webster's Spelling Book,* first Appleton edition of 1855. Obituaries in the *Herald* and other N. Y. papers of Oct. 20, 1899.]

A. E. P.

APPLETON, WILLIAM WORTHEN (Nov. 29, 1845–Jan. 27, 1924), publisher, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., a son of William H. Appleton [*q.v.*] and Mary Worthen. With no education beyond private elementary and secondary schools in New York, he entered the "House of Appleton" and became a partner at the age of twenty-three. Literary and editorial interests were his from the first. He showed an uncanny ability to gauge the public's taste. Thus he was responsible for the inclusion in the company's list of English translations of Louisa Mühlbach's historical novels which sold by hundreds of thousands; for the American editions of Carroll's *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland,* and Disraeli's *Lothair,* the latter selling up to 80,000; for the addition to the list of Appleton authors of Joel Chandler Harris in fiction and William T. Osler in medicine. "Mr. Willie," a name which suggests the fondness felt toward him by every one in the organization, gave a great deal of attention to the "International Scientific Series," inaugurated in 1873 under the editorship of E. L. Youmans, in which Draper's *History of the Conflict between Religion and Science* appeared in

1875. In later years Appleton spent much time in acquainting himself with the leaders of thought in the universities of the country. This he did by extensive travel, "stopping here and there in college centers, always developing new lines of contact and bringing back suggestions for publishing enterprises" (*Publishers Weekly*, Feb. 2, 1924). An evidence of this activity is the "International Education Series" under the editorship of Dr. W. T. Harris; nearly every great educational leader of Europe and America in the late nineteenth century contributed a volume to this series. Other evidence is the long line of Appleton texts for colleges.

William W. continued his father's advocacy of the rights of literary property and gave important aid in securing the Copyright Act of 1891; later, as president of the Publishers' Copyright League, he worked hard but unsuccessfully to have the United States join the International Copyright Union. He took an active interest in the circulating library idea. When the "Sewing Circle" of Grace Church started in 1870 a little circulating library of 500 books, Appleton was invited to be one of "an advisory committee of gentlemen" (*History of the New York Public Library*, 1923, p. 201). In the following year the New York Free Circulating Library came into existence with Appleton chairman of the Committee on Library and Reading Rooms. Subsequently this library was consolidated with the New York Public Library and he was appointed a trustee of that institution and made chairman of the Committee on Circulation. His great interest made him a frequent visitor to all the branches and many librarians testify to his sympathy and generous support. For many years he was senior warden of St. Bartholomew's Church and a trustee of the Institute for the Blind, and at the time of his death was one of the trustees of the endowment fund of the American Library Association. He resided in his later years at 571 Park Ave. In 1881 he married Anna Sargent, by whom he had two sons and two daughters.

[G. M. Overton, *Portrait of a Publisher* (1925), the first twenty-five pages with portrait; collection of letters in the firm's library; obituary, also portrait, in *Publishers Weekly*, Feb. 2, 1924; other notices in the *Times*, *Tribune*, *Sun*, and other N.Y. papers of Jan. 28, 1924. Additional information from *Hist. of the N.Y. Pub. Lib.* (1923) and from Pub. Lib. officials and friends of the family.]

A. E. P.

APTHORP, WILLIAM FOSTER (Oct. 24, 1848–Feb. 19, 1913), music critic, was born in Boston, the son of Robert and Eliza (Hunt) Apthorp. He was the product of intellect and culture that dated back to pre-Revolutionary days, when several of the family, officers of the crown and of the British army and navy, were stationed in Boston. One of his ancestors, a crown official, Charles Apthorp, a merchant and an Eton scholar, was paymaster of the navy, the most distinguished of whose eighteen children was the Rev. East Apthorp, the founder of Christ Church, Cambridge. William Foster Apthorp was born into a home of culture and refinement. In the autumn of 1856, when he was but eight years of age, his parents took him to Europe for the purpose of giving him the best opportunity for studying languages and art, feeling that his latent talents lay in the latter field. In France he attended a day school; in Dresden the Marquardt'sche Schule, at the same time studying drawing with Frenzel and beginning the study of music; in Berlin he was a student in the Friedrich Wilhelm'sches Progymnasium; in Rome, in the École des Frères Chrétiens. Since he had manifested some ability for drawing, his study in Rome included drawing and painting under Guglielmi and Garelli, in order to ascertain whether he had enough talent to choose painting as a life work. He studied art also in Florence and was a fellow student with John Singer Sargent. Returning to Boston in 1860, he fitted for college at the school of E. S. Dixwell and was graduated from Harvard in 1869. In his senior year he was conductor of the Pierian Sodality. Soon after his return from Europe, he became increasingly interested in music and in 1863 he gave up painting and studied piano, harmony, and counterpoint with J. K. Paine until 1867, when Paine went to Europe. He then studied piano with B. J. Lang for several years, but his theoretical work was self-directed. He was fully aware that the dream of his devoted parents—that he would become a great painter or a great pianist—would never be realized and he was quite content to take up teaching as a profession. In 1872 and 1873 he taught piano and theory at the National College of Music in Boston. When that institution closed, he joined the New England Conservatory, where for the next thirteen years he taught piano, harmony, counterpoint, fugue, and general theory, besides having classes in esthetics and musical history in the College of Music of Boston University. In 1886 he severed his connection with both institutions.

Not until 1872 did he begin his work as music critic, in which capacity he was destined to achieve his greatest success. William Dean Howells, then editor of the *Atlantic Monthly*, founded a music department in the magazine and engaged him as musical editor, which position he held until the department was discontinued. From this beginning, he occupied successively the following

positions: in 1876 music critic of the *Sunday Courier;* in 1878 both music and dramatic critic of the *Traveller;* and finally, in 1881, music and dramatic critic of the *Transcript,* collaborating with F. H. Jenks, holding both positions until 1903, when he gave up all active work. Besides his regular work as critic, he contributed articles to the *Atlantic Monthly, Dwight's Journal of Music, Scribner's Magazine,* and occasional correspondence to the *New York Tribune.* In 1880 he delivered a course of lectures at the Lowell Institute in Boston, repeating the same in New York, Brooklyn, and the Peabody Institute in Baltimore. From 1888 to 1890 he was critical editor of Scribner's *Cyclopedia of Music and Musicians,* 3 volumes, collaborating with John Denson Champlin, Jr. From 1892 to 1901 he edited the program books of The Boston Symphony Orchestra. He was undoubtedly one of the greatest critics America has produced. His work was strikingly individual and independent, and always constructive. His intimate acquaintance with the languages and his deep knowledge of literature and philosophy contributed largely to his success as a writer. He was an incessant worker and ceased his labors only because of failing eyesight. He bore this affliction, however, with the greatest fortitude and never lost his contagious humor. Notwithstanding a certain educated pride of family and position, he was very democratic, though his exceeding diffidence was often misunderstood by those who did not know his natural shyness. He was married in 1876 to Octavie Loir Iasigi. He died in Vevey, Switzerland, whither he had gone in 1903 after giving up active work. His most important published works are *Musicians and Music Lovers* (1894); *By the Way* (1898); *The Opera, Past and Present* (1901); *Some of the Wagner Heroes and Heroines* (1889); also several translations, *Hector Berlioz—Selections from His Letters, and Æsthetic, Humorous and Satirical Writings* (1879); *Jacques Damour* and other smaller works from Zola (1895). He also edited three volumes of the songs of Robert Franz.

[*Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians, Am. Supp.; One Hundred Years of Music in America,* ed. by G. L. Howe and W. S. B. Mathews (1889); obituaries in the *Boston Herald,* Feb. 22, 1913, *Boston Transcript,* Feb. 20, 1913.]

F. L. G. C.

ARBUCKLE, JOHN (1839–Mar. 27, 1912), merchant, was the son of Scotch parents, Thomas and Margaret (MacDonald) Arbuckle, who had settled in western Pennsylvania. He was born at Pittsburgh and obtained in the public schools of Allegheny City all the formal education that he was to have. In company with his brother, Charles, he built up at Pittsburgh a business of roasting and grinding coffee and selling it in packages. In 1871 the brothers went to New York, where they greatly expanded their enterprise, soon gaining for it a national scope and reputation. This was made possible by Arbuckle's invention (in which he was aided by associates) of machinery for weighing, packing, and sealing the ground coffee. After some years (Charles Arbuckle having died in 1890) an arrangement was made with the Havemeyers, then the leading sugar refiners, to sell a part of their product in packages. Sales by the Arbuckle method were pushed rapidly, and the profits became so large as to attract the attention of the Havemeyer interests, which canceled the selling arrangements with Arbuckle and proceeded to take to themselves the profits from package sales. Then began (in 1896) a dramatic episode in the sugar industry; for Arbuckle, in open defiance of the Sugar Trust (American Sugar Refining Company), himself built a large refinery in Brooklyn and entered the sugar market as a formidable competitor, cutting sugar prices almost to cost. In retaliation the Havemeyers went into the coffee trade. The fight lasted five years and at the end of that period, after millions had been lost by both sides, it was not Arbuckle who capitulated—his refinery was still operating and the sugar magnates had withdrawn from the coffee business; but an armistice was declared. Arbuckle became one of the leading importers of the country and his ships were known in many ports. At the time of his death, in 1912, he was believed to be the largest individual owner of shipping under American registry. His extensive interests on the sea led him to give attention to the raising and salvaging of ships. He invented important machinery for that purpose, which was employed in raising several vessels of the United States Navy. In order to make a fuller use of the harbor tugs that he owned and employed about New York he went into the business of towing canal boats between New York and Albany, cutting the rates for that service.

He was a rugged, farmer-like man in personal appearance, six feet tall, with a slight stoop. He remained all his life extremely simple and unpretentious in his habits. In 1868 he was married to Mary Kerr of Pittsburgh. He resided in Brooklyn, where as a young man he had come under the influence of Henry Ward Beecher, and in the latter years of his life he gave much thought to plans for a Beecher memorial to be associated with Plymouth Church and to be a sort of clubhouse for young men and women, where evening classes could be maintained for vocational instruction. His will made provision for such a

memorial and a few years after his death the Arbuckle Institute was opened in Brooklyn, adjacent to Plymouth Church.

[Obituary and editorial in *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*, Mar. 27, 1912; obituary in *N. Y. Evening Post*, Mar. 27, 1912; character sketch by Samuel E. Moffett in *Cosmopolitan Mag.*, Sept. 1902.] W. B. S.

ARCHBOLD, JOHN DUSTIN (July 26, 1848–Dec. 5, 1916), capitalist, was born at Leesburg, Ohio. His father, the Rev. Israel Archbold, was a Methodist preacher of Irish descent; his mother, Frances (Dana) Archbold, was a daughter of the Massachusetts Dana family who migrated to Marietta, Ohio, in the early days of that settlement. After a few years of schooling Archbold began work in a country store at Salem, a few miles from the Pennsylvania oil region. As an eleven-year-old boy he had known something of the excitement that followed the discovery of petroleum near Titusville in 1859. By the time he had reached his eighteenth year he was ready to cast in his lot with the nondescript horde of fortune-hunters in the oil fields, where a new frenzy of speculation followed the close of the Civil War. Young Archbold quickly proved himself able to hold his own with experienced men in the rough give-and-take of trade under conditions not unlike those of the California gold rush in 1849. He was soon to come off winner in a hotly contested race with a group of master minds in the new industry. The South Improvement Company, in which John D. Rockefeller and other Standard Oil men were members, blocked the advance of the Pennsylvania producers and refiners, including Archbold, by obtaining from the railroads freight rebates which put the Pennsylvanians out of the running as competitors. Even in those cut-throat days, Archbold was able to unite the leading oil men of the Titusville region against an outside foe that threatened the business life of the community. He was successful; the Cleveland combination was thwarted in its plans; it acknowledged defeat—for the moment—and took the victorious young leader into its own camp, where his brains and talents were needed in working out a national organization to control the oil industry. The launching of Archbold's Acme Oil Company was followed by the expansion of the Standard Oil Company, with Archbold on its directorate.

From 1882 to the day of his death there was no question of the dominance of Archbold in Standard Oil policy and counsels. In the various investigations made from time to time by Congress and the state governments, when facts were disclosed, Archbold usually acted as spokesman for the company. He often disarmed criticism by his frankness. Asked before the Industrial Commission of 1900 whether Standard Oil was enabled by its great power to secure prices somewhat above those that were competitive, he replied, "Well, I hope so" (United States Industrial Commission, *Preliminary Report on Trusts and Industrial Combinations*, 1900, I, 569). In the period of the Standard Oil Company's rapid growth and absorption of independent companies, Archbold as vice-president was one of its most aggressive officers. After 1896, when John D. Rockefeller, although still president, had comparatively little to do with the corporation's affairs, Archbold was the real genius of the organization. Stabilization, combined with steady improvement of product, was his goal. He bent his energies to the creation of an efficient system of distribution, including the control of pipe-lines and the location of refineries at points convenient to markets; to the perfection of plants, and to the economical utilization of by-products. Thus an organization was developed that was soon beyond the reach of effective competition. In 1908 copies of letters addressed by Archbold to men in public life, notably Senators Quay and Penrose of Pennsylvania and Foraker of Ohio, were stolen from his office files and published. Although these letters did not point to actual corruption, they seemed to mark their writer as a corporation officer who had no hesitancy in calling upon men in the government service to do his bidding (*Independent*, New York, Oct. 8, 29, Nov. 5, 1908). As a result of the United States Supreme Court decision of 1911, dissolving the Standard Oil Company, Archbold became president of the Standard Oil Company of New Jersey and held that office at the time of his death. He was married in 1870 to Annie Mills of Titusville, Pa.

[*House Report No. 3112*, 50 Cong., 1 Sess. (1888); *Proc. of the Special Committee on Railroads* (Hepburn Committee, N. Y. Assembly, 1879); Ida M. Tarbell, *Hist. of the Standard Oil Company* (1904); G. H. Montague, *Rise and Progress of the Standard Oil Company* (1905); J. D. Archbold, "Effect of Trusts on Labor," *Independent*, Mar. 15, 1900, and "Petroleum: A Great Am. Industry," *Ibid.*, Mar. 5, 1908; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 6, 8, 19, 30, 1916.] W. B. S.

ARCHDALE, JOHN (*c.* May 5, 1642–*c.* July 4, 1717), colonial governor, was born in England, the son of Thomas and Mary (Nevill) Archdale and grandson of Richard Archdale, who in 1604 and 1628 acquired the manors of Loakes and Temple Wycombe in Buckinghamshire. Sons of the Archdale family were regularly educated at Wadham College, Oxford, but John was an exception and received no college training. His first connection with America came through the marriage of his eldest sister to Ferdinando Gorges, who disputed with Massachusetts Bay Colony the

ownership of Maine. In the autumn of 1664 Archdale was sent to New England to make good the Gorges claim. He landed at Piscataqua and carried a letter from Charles II, requiring the Bay Colony to cede the Maine government or to show reason to the contrary. Massachusetts answered that Maine was a part of its grant and that its claims would not be given up except by consent of the General Court (*Massachusetts Bay Colony Records,* vol. IV, pt. 2, p. 247). This unfavorable reply did not deter Archdale, who, assiduous in the proprietor's interest and zealous in the pursuance of his duties, visited every town in Maine and granted commissions to individuals who ruled independently of Massachusetts. The contest continued until the arrival of the King's agents in 1665 and the suspension of the authority of Massachusetts. But this defeat was not a triumph for Archdale, for he was ignored, and his authority set aside, so that shortly afterward he left the province (W. D. Williamson, *History of the State of Maine,* 1832, I, 414). With the withdrawal of the King's commissioners Massachusetts quietly resumed its authority in 1668, and the Gorges claim was settled by purchase in 1678.

After the return of Archdale to England, he married Ann (Dobson) Cary, a widow, in December 1673, by whom he had four children. He became identified with the Society of Friends, and it was perhaps influenced by his beliefs that he accepted a commission in 1682 from the Carolina proprietors to collect their rents in North Carolina where numbers of Quakers had settled. In this occupation he continued through 1683 (*Collections of the Historical Society of South Carolina,* I, 105–6, 110). His next connection with the American colonies occurred in 1694. Due to trouble in Carolina the resident governor had appealed to the proprietors to send out one of their number as governor. Archdale was appointed to this office, as he had supposedly bought the Carolina claim of the widow of Sir William Berkeley, but the title was clouded, hence his status was defined as "being in the nature of a proprietor." He went to Carolina by way of Virginia and was nearly a year in reaching his destination. He reported that on his arrival all was in confusion, with every faction appealing to him for relief and that "I appeased them with kind and gentle Words and so soon as possible call'd an Assembly" (Carroll, II, 101–3). His first assembly was soon dissolved because of a dispute over land questions. During the next assembly a temporary solution was secured by passing an act regulating prices, rents, and the conveyance of land. His administration was notable for the passage of the colony's first recorded liquor law, which forbade the sale of liquors under the quantity of one gallon except by license of the governor and put into effect the English law governing abuses and disorders of taverns (*Statutes at Large of South Carolina,* 1837, II, 113). His Quaker principles were revealed in the law which he secured from his assembly exempting Quakers from serving in the militia and in his policy of friendship toward the Indians (*Ibid.,* p. 108).

In 1698 he was elected member of Parliament for Chipping Wycombe, Buckinghamshire. Again he showed himself a man of strong religious principles in declining as a Quaker to take the oath, and the House refused to seat him. After this he retired from public life. In 1707 he published *A New Description of the Fertile and Pleasant Province of Carolina with a Brief Account of Its Discovery and Settling and the Government thereof to the Time, with Several Remarkable Passages of Divine Providence during my Time.*

[The chief sources for Archdale's career in America are his own account, "Archdale's Description," etc., in B. R. Carroll, *Hist. Colls. of S. C.* (1836); and Josselyn's "Chronological Observations of America" in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Coll.,* 3rd series, vol. III. A short sketch of his life is in the *Dict. of Nat. Biog.* and an account of his public career in Carolina in E. McCrady, *S. C. under Proprietary Govt.* (1897). See also W. J. Rivers, *Sketch of the Hist. of S. C.* (1856); A. Hewatt, *Hist. of S. C.* (1779).] H. B–C.

ARCHER, BRANCH TANNER (1790–Sept. 22, 1856), political leader in the Republic of Texas, was a native of Virginia. His father was a Revolutionary soldier, Maj. Peter Field Archer, of Henrico and Powhatan Counties; his mother was Frances, daughter of Branch Tanner. According to one biographer, Archer "studied medicine in Philadelphia, and for some years was a physician and politician in his native state, where he served one or two terms as a member of the legislature" (Fulmore, p. 103). It is said that his departure from Virginia followed a duel in which he shot and killed his cousin, Dr. Crump. He arrived in Texas in 1831, and immediately identified himself with a small group of malcontents who were impatient with Mexico's bungling political experiments. Brazoria was the headquarters of this group, and Archer's first public service in Texas was to represent a mass meeting of Brazoria in demanding modification of objectionable port regulations. He represented the district of Brazoria in the convention of April 1833, which adopted a provisional constitution and petitioned the Mexican Congress for the admission of Texas to the Mexican Confederation as a co-state. In November 1835 he again represented Brazoria in the consultation which was called originally for settling on a policy to be fol-

lowed with regard to the changes which Santa Anna was making in the federal constitution of 1824. Before the consultation met, war had already been precipitated by the demand of the military commandant for a cannon which the colonists had at Gonzales. Archer was elected chairman of the consultation, and made a speech at the beginning of the session, urging the members to disregard factional irritation and to devote themselves solely to the best interests of Texas (*Journal of Consultation,* pp. 6–9). The fundamental question to be settled by the consultation was, "What are we fighting for?" The answer tentatively adopted on Nov. 7 was, "For the republican principles of the constitution of 1824." On this question Archer voted aye, though he favored independence. But whether the Texans were fighting to uphold the federal constitution of Mexico or for independence, it was apparent that they would need assistance. Therefore Archer, with Stephen F. Austin [*q.v.*] and William H. Wharton, was appointed a commissioner to the United States to solicit men, money, and supplies. The three commissioners arrived at New Orleans in January 1836, and negotiated loans there for $250,000. They aroused much sympathy for the Texan cause in their progress up the Mississippi River, and were indirectly responsible for the movement of a considerable number of "emigrants" to Texas to assist in the war for independence which was declared on Mar. 2, 1836. At Washington, though Archer was related to William S. Archer [*q.v.*] who long represented Virginia in Congress, and though both Austin and Wharton had influential friends, the commissioners were unable to commit the government of the United States in any way to the policy of recognizing or aiding the new Republic of Texas. It was probably due to Archer that the personal relations of the commissioners were harmonious and cordial, for Austin and Wharton had not previously been friends. Archer and Wharton took the lead in nominating Austin for the presidency of Texas, and supported him against Henry Smith and Sam Houston. A member of the first Congress of Texas, Archer was at the second session elected speaker of the lower house. His last public service was in the cabinet of President Lamar, where he served as secretary of war. A newspaper at the time of his death speaks of his "stalwart form and Cato-like look." His portrait shows a handsome, striking face—long, lean, broad of forehead, with piercing eyes, and clearly chiseled nose, lips, and chin.

[Eugene C. Barker, *Life of Stephen F. Austin* (1925); Texas State Lib., *Calendar of the Papers of Mirabeau Buonaparte Lamar* (1914); H. S. Foote, *Texas and the Texans,* 2 vols. (1841); Z. T. Fulmore, *Hist. and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names* (1915); H. P. N. Gammel, *Laws of Texas,* I (1898); files of *Texas State Hist. Ass. Quart.*; A. M. Williams, *Sam Houston* (1893); *New Orleans Daily Picayune,* Sept. 30, 1856; Geneal. of the Archer family prepared by Wm. G. Stanard, in the *Richmond Critic,* May 8, 1889; information from Mrs. Mary Newton Stanard.]

E. C. B.

ARCHER, FREDERIC (June 16, 1838–Oct. 22, 1901), organist, was the only child of Martha (Costa) and James Archer, clergyman and professor of Latin at Magdalen College, Oxford. He was born at Oxford, and became a chorister at All Saints' Church, London, at the age of nine. Five years later he returned to Oxford as organist of St. Clement's Church and Merton College. His musical education was continued in Oxford, London, and Leipzig. His career as an organ recitalist began with engagements at the Panopticon and the Alexandra Palace, London; at the latter he gave over 2,000 recitals. Meanwhile he became active as church organist, choral conductor, and lecturer. In 1878–80 he conducted the Glasgow Select Choir, for which he composed and edited a series of part-songs. He was also conductor of the Blanche Cole Opera Company. His first trip to America was in 1881, and one of the results was his engagement as organist at Plymouth Church, Brooklyn, where Henry Ward Beecher was pastor. Later he removed to the Church of the Incarnation, New York, thence to Boston, where he conducted the Boston Oratorio Society (1887–88). In 1885 he founded, and for a time edited a musical paper, *The Keynote.* From Boston he went to Chicago, where he became organist at St. James Roman Catholic Church, and was active in musical projects connected with the World's Fair. He left Chicago to become organist and director of music at Carnegie Institute, Pittsburgh, where he was engaged from 1895 to his death, giving two organ recitals weekly in the Music Hall, and officiating (1896–98) as conductor of the Pittsburgh Orchestra.

Archer was one of the first players to popularize the organ recital in America. His wide experience in England with giving recitals before large audiences and with ordinary concert surroundings was in strong contrast to the severe and churchly associations of the average American organ recital fifty years ago. His first program at Carnegie Institute, Pittsburgh, was typical of the player. It contained Merkel's second Sonata, a Bach Toccata and Fugue, Lemmen's *Storm Fantasy,* the Air and variations from Moszkowski's first orchestral suite, Gounod's *Funeral March of a Marionette* (written for one of Archer's London orchestral concerts), and Meyerbeer's overture *Star of the North,* with smaller

pieces. Such programs he played throughout this country and Canada on his many and extended tours. This type of program, as well as its performance, helped greatly in awakening popular appreciation of organ recitals.

Of more than ordinary stature, and of commanding appearance, Archer was favored by nature for organ playing. He had fingers of unusual length, and in consequence could achieve organ effects impossible for normal hands. A real virtuoso, his manipulation of the instrument was masterly, and his registration notable for its variety and brilliance. He was a remarkable sight reader, sometimes playing in recital from orchestral scores; it is possible that he occasionally depended too much upon this facility in reading music. He was a man of great energy and constant activity. Among his published works are *The Organ, The Collegiate Organ Tutor,* and a number of organ compositions, piano pieces, songs, and choruses. His writings on musical subjects were published in English and American magazines. He was married in 1859 to Harriet Rothschild, a niece of Baron Alfred de Rothschild of England.

[Much of the above information is from a sketch written by Archer, in the possession of his family. A rather extended obituary note is in the *Musical Times* (London), Dec. 1901. See also *The Organ and its Masters* (1902) by Henry C. Lahee.]

C. N. B.

ARCHER, JAMES J. (Dec. 19, 1817–Oct. 24, 1864), Confederate soldier, was a native of Stafford in Harford County, Md. In the earlier part of his career he has been confused (*Confederate Military History,* II, 171) with John Archer also from Maryland and a graduate of West Point (class of 1826). Gen. Archer, who was not a West Point graduate, was educated at Princeton and at Bacon College in Georgetown, Ky., and became a lawyer. He served in the Mexican War, and was brevetted major for gallantry in the battle of Chapultepec, and received from the legislature of his state a vote of thanks. Returning to civil life in 1848, he reëntered the army as captain in 1855. He entered the Confederate army in 1861, and was commissioned brigadier-general June 3, 1862. The phrase "Archer's brigade" occurs frequently in the annals of the Army of Northern Virginia, for instance in the narrative of Longstreet (*From Manassas to Appomattox,* 1896). He was present in all the noteworthy engagements of 1862 and 1863, the Seven Days, Cedar Mountain, Second Manassas, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville—where he was with Jackson in the flanking march—and Gettysburg. He has been credited with a prominent part in the counter-attack at Antietam. In the campaign of Gettysburg he was in the division of Gen. Heth, and on July 1, he was attached to that portion of the army which began the three days' battle. This was in the part of the field where Reynolds and Doubleday were in command. Archer was "captured by a flank movement" (*Battles and Leaders of the Civil War,* III, 1888, p. 352), and with him were taken many in the brigade. He was a prisoner for over a year, was sent southward and exchanged, but died soon after his release.

[*Biog. Cyc. of Md., and the D. C.* (1879); M. J. Wright, *Gen. Officers* (1911); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1890); C. A. Evans, ed., *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), II, 171–72; *Tercentenary Hist. of Md.* (1925), I, 757.]

E. K. A.

ARCHER, JOHN (May 5, 1741–Sept. 28, 1810), medical teacher, founder of the Medical and Chirurgical Faculty of Maryland, was born near the present village of Churchville, Harford County, Md. His father, originally a farmer from Rathmelton, County Donegal, Ireland, was then an agent for the local iron works. John was educated at the West Nottingham Academy and at Princeton College, where he received his A.B. in 1760 and his A.M. three years later. Meanwhile he had begun the study of theology under Presbyterian auspices and had preached a trial sermon; then he turned his attention to medicine, becoming a pupil of John Morgan and beginning attendance at the courses of lectures at the Philadelphia College of Medicine, which later became the University of Pennsylvania Medical Department. The degree of Bachelor of Medicine was conferred on him June 21, 1768, the first medical degree, involving attendance at lectures, to be bestowed in this country. Even before Archer obtained his degree he had begun to practise in Newcastle County, Del.; it is said he declined an offer from Dr. Morgan to go into partnership; at all events he returned to his native county in July 1769 and began a practise which lasted nearly forty years. During the Revolution he was a member of the local committees from November 1774, and in December of the same year was captain of a militia company, becoming major in January 1776. That August he was a member of the convention which framed the Maryland constitution and bill of rights.

During his many years of practise Archer gave instruction to some fifty medical students, following the custom of the time that a student should remain as assistant to a well-known practitioner for a period of three years, this novitiate serving in lieu of a degree in medicine. His assistants formed a sort of medical society, the minutes of which are preserved in the library of

the Medical and Chirurgical Faculty of Maryland at Baltimore, the state medical society which Archer helped to found in 1799. He was on its examining board and a member of the executive committee. In 1801 he was a presidential elector and served as a representative in Congress from that date until 1807. He contributed a few papers to the *Medical Repository* of New York and introduced senega as a remedy in the treatment of croup. His health began to fail at the time of the completion of his service in Congress; he had a partial paralysis and gave up active pursuits. He died suddenly, probably from another cerebral hemorrhage, while sitting in his chair at his home in Harford County.

Archer was married in 1766 to a daughter of Thomas Harris, of the family that founded Harrisburg, Pa., by whom he had ten children, of whom five studied medicine. Several portraits of him are extant; one in the court-house at Bel-air, Harford County, Md., a second in the hall of the Medical and Chirurgical Faculty at Baltimore, and a third in the State House at Annapolis, Md.

[The chief sources of information are the *Medic. Annals of Md.* (1903); articles by Eugene F. Cordell in the *Johns Hopkins Hospital Bull.* (1899 and 1902); J. Carson, *Hist. of the Medic. Dept. of the Univ. of Pa.* (1869); *Biog. Cong. Dir. 1744–1911* (1913); *Am. Archives*, ser. 4, vol. I, p. 403; vol. IV, p. 737; ser. 5, vol. II, p. 637.] W.L.B.

ARCHER, SAMUEL (1771–Apr. 14, 1839), merchant, philanthropist, was born near the village of Columbus, Burlington County, N. J., and went to Philadelphia about 1794. In 1797 he married Elizabeth West, who was a member of the Society of Friends, and nine years his senior. The same year he began business in Philadelphia under the firm name of Archer & Newbold, described in the Philadelphia Directory as merchants. The following year he was engaged in the retail dry-goods trade, but in another twelvemonth was in the importing business. In 1804 he took in Robert L. Pittfield, an accountant, as partner, and the firm name was changed to Samuel Archer & Company, which, a few years later, became Archer & Bispham, Stacy B. Bispham entering the firm as the successor of Pittfield, who retired. Between the years 1800 and 1812, the greater part of the business in importations from India and China was transacted through Philadelphia and Archer's firm was among the largest importers of muslins from the East Indies. These goods were not then manufactured in this country. The house was also noted as an extensive importer of Chinese manufactures, but a great deal of Archer's business was in textiles of British make. So large a buyer was he and so scrupulous in all his business dealings, that it was currently said his credit in Europe was unlimited. "The business for the house in that day was immense, having reached in a single year over two million of dollars in amount" (Simpson, p. 20). In 1810–11 Archer made a visit to Europe to purchase goods. The War of 1812, which began soon after his return home, cut off the bulk of the foreign trade of the house, but after hostilities had ceased, with rare courage and business sagacity, he began to export to China American-made fabrics, the manufacture of which was just beginning here. He is credited with having been the first American merchant to export extensively American-made cotton goods to Asia. While fortune smiled upon many of his daring enterprises, it also, occasionally, frowned upon him, and he suffered several serious reverses, owing, it is said, to his generous disposition to place too much confidence in some concerns and men with whom he engaged in business. He took an active interest in the financial institutions of his adopted city, and was one of the original managers of the Philadelphia Saving Fund Society (1816), the first of its kind in the United States; and the same year he was elected a director of the Insurance Company of North America, the first marine insurance company organized in this country. In 1817 he was one of four wealthy men who presented a lot on which was erected the Philadelphia Orphan Asylum; his partner at that time, Robert Ralston, was another of the quartet. William D. Lewis, who furnished the sketch of his life which appeared in Simpson's book, wrote of him (p. 21) that he "held a prominent place among the enterprising merchants of our city for near half a century. When basking in the sunshine of great riches and prosperity, he possessed much simplicity of manners and an utter absence of all display. . . . Charity, benevolence, and uprightness seemed to be the natural qualities of his character exhibited through life." His portrait, painted by Anna C. Peale, and engraved by Samuel Sartain, pictures him in the quiet simplicity of the Quakers, whose ideals he made his own, although he was not a member of that religious society at the time of his marriage. He was buried, however, in a Friends' burial-ground in Philadelphia.

[Henry Simpson, *Lives of Eminent Philadelphians Now Deceased* (1859), portr.; Abraham Ritter, *Phila. and Her Merchants* (1860), p. 145; Jas. M. Willcox, *A Hist. of the Phila. Saving Fund Soc.* (1916); T. H. Montgomery, *A Hist. of the Insurance Company of North America* (1885). Manuscript records of the Society of Friends in Philadelphia are authority for some of the statements made.] J.J.

ARCHER, STEVENSON (Oct. 11, 1786–June 26, 1848), jurist, the son of John Archer [*q.v.*], was born at "Medical Hall," Harford County, Md., within a few hundred yards of the birthplace of Edwin Booth. He attended school in Baltimore, entered the sophomore class of Princeton College, graduated in 1805, and studied law first in the office of John Montgomery at Belair and later with Chancellor Johnson at Annapolis. Soon after coming to the bar he was elected to the legislature as an Independent, 1809, and the next year was reëlected as a Democrat. He married in 1811 Pamelia Barney Hays, whose father owned the adjoining farm. She was a capable woman, who in her husband's absence on court business took active control over hundreds of acres. Archer was elected to Congress the year of his marriage, and was twice reëlected to succeed himself. In these war years he was a reliance of the administration, and in 1817, declining a fourth term, was appointed, by President Madison, judge of Mississippi Territory. He held court at St. Stephens on the Alabama River, and also exercised gubernatorial powers of a broad character. Though he had ordered a flatboat built at Wheeling to bring his family and effects down, he concluded in less than a year to return to Harford, whence in 1819 he was again sent to Congress. His law practise had widened to embrace Harford, Cecil, and Kent Counties when, in 1824, he was appointed chief judge of the 6th judicial district, embracing Baltimore and Harford Counties. This appointment made him associate justice of the Maryland court of appeals, of which, on the death of Judge Buchanan in 1844, Gov. Pratt appointed him chief judge.

He was a tall man, of strong frame, and his portraits show a kindly, thoughtful countenance. During his twenty-five years on the bench he was deliberate and painstaking in judgment and considerate in manner. His opinions display industry and patience in details. It is said of him that "his amenity won the universal respect of the bar, while his sound judgment and . . . legal attainments commanded for his decisions entire confidence." He presided in courts on both the western and eastern shores, and during a summer session at Easton, in the flat country, contracted a fever of which, after a few days' illness, he died at his home in Harford.

[*Biog. Cyc. Rep. Men of Md. and D. C.* (1879); James McSherry, "Former Chief Judges of the Court of Appeals of Md.," in *Rept. Ninth Meeting Md. Bar Ass.*, 1904, pp. 120–21; *Bench and Bar of Md.* (n. d.), pp. 291–92; *Baltimore Sun* and *Baltimore American*, June 27, 1848; *Green Bag*, VI, 232; *Biog. Cong. Directory, 1774–1903* (1903).]

B. M.

ARCHER, WILLIAM SEGAR (Mar. 5, 1789–Mar. 28, 1855), congressman, came of a family whose emigrant ancestor, George Archer, was living in Henrico County, Va., in 1665. During the Revolution all of the Archers were warm supporters of the American cause. An uncle and several first cousins of William S. Archer were officers in the army and this uncle, Col. William Archer, was captured and died in a British prison ship. Col. Archer's son, Lieut. Joseph Archer, was killed in the battle of Brandywine and two other sons, John and Peter Field, were majors. Dr. Branch T. Archer [*q.v.*], a son of Peter Field, played a distinguished part in the early history of Texas. William Segar Archer, the son of Maj. John Archer (brother of Col. William Archer just referred to) and Elizabeth (Eggleston) Archer, was born in Amelia County, Va. He was graduated from William and Mary College in 1806, studied law, was admitted to the bar, and practised his profession during the rest of his life. He was elected to the Virginia house of delegates in 1812 and was reëlected every year till 1819 (E. G. Severn and John W. Williams, *Register of the General Assembly of Virginia*, 1918). He was a Whig and was a member of the United States House of Representatives from January 1820 to March 1835, and of the United States Senate from Mar. 4, 1841 to Mar. 3, 1847 (*Biographical Congressional Directory 1774–1911*, p. 444). Archer was nominated for the Senate on anti-Bank grounds and the success of the Whigs carried him into office. In debate in reference to the Bank, Senators Archer and Rives opposed Henry Clay, whom they charged with attacking President Tyler. Finally, however, Archer voted in support of the bank. In a letter dated June 18, 1841, Henry A. Wise wrote to Beverley Tucker: "Archer is *obliged* to be with us, or perhaps he would not be. He is weak, but not wicked. For instance, I am told that he is sophomore enough to say if Clay's plan is presented to Tyler, he must veto, but then *resign!*" (Lyon G. Tyler, *The Letters and Times of the Tylers*, 1885, II, 47). Archer was an ardent advocate of the annexation of Texas, as his printed speeches show. At the time of the annexation he was chairman of the Committee on Foreign Relations. A tall, dark man of refined appearance and gentle manner, he never married, but built for himself in Amelia County a charming home which he named "The Lodge" and which is now a picturesque ruin. There he lived with two devoted maiden sisters till death overtook him at the age of sixty-six. His epitaph in Amelia declares that: "This monument is erected to the memory of William S. Archer by his affectionate sisters to whom

he stood almost throughout their lives in the double relation of father and brother."

[*Richmond Whig*, Mar. 10, 1840; *Richmond Enquirer*, Mar. 4, 1841; for Archer's speeches in Cong. see *Annals of Cong.*, XXXVI–XLII (1820–24), *Reg. of Debates*, I–XI (1825–35), *Cong. Globe*, IX–XVIII (1841–47). Dates of birth and death from his tomb.] M. N. S.

ARDEN, EDWIN HUNTER PENDLETON (Feb. 4, 1864–Oct. 2, 1918), actor, manager, playwright, was born in St. Louis, Mo., the son of Arden Richard and Mary Berkeley (Hunter) Smith. After a common-school education he went West and became successively mine-helper, cowboy, railroad brakeman, clerk, reporter, and theatre manager. He made his début as an actor in Chicago in 1882 as a member of Thomas W. Keene's Shakespearian company. During the three years following, he played in stock as member of the Boston Museum and Madison Square Theatre (New York) companies. On Feb. 21, 1883, he was married to Agnes Ann Eagleson Keene. At about this time he wrote several plays, some in collaboration, among the most successful of which were *The Eagle's Nest*, *Raglan's Way*, and *Barred Out*. He starred in these plays for nine seasons and then, in 1895, joined the company of William H. Crane, taking among other leading rôles that of Mason Hix in *The Governor of Kentucky*. Then came a season with the Julia Arthur company, when he played Sir John Oxen in *A Lady of Quality* in support of the star. In 1898, he played Oliver West, the young husband in *Because She Loved Him So*, and the following year returned to starring in a play from his own pen called *Zorah*. On Oct. 22, 1900, he appeared with Maude Adams at the Knickerbocker Theatre, New York City, playing Prince Metternich in that actress's production of Rostand's *L'Aiglon*, his acting as the famous Austrian diplomat attracting much attention. The following year he acted with Sadie Martinot in *The Marriage Game* and was also seen in the Bellew-Mannering revival of *The Lady of Lyons*. During the season of 1902 he appeared in *The Ninety and Nine*, and also in the all-star cast of *Romeo and Juliet* at the Knickerbocker Theatre, New York. In 1904, he was with Bertha Kalich, playing the rôle of Louis in *Fedora*, and the year following he was with James K. Hackett in *The House of Silence*. After a short time spent in vaudeville, he again appeared as a star at the Powers Theatre, Chicago, in the drama *Told in the Hills*. Later, he had his own stock company in Washington, D. C.

[Walter Browne, *Who's Who on the Stage* (1908); T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (1908); *Who's Who in America* (1918–19); *Who's Who in N. Y.* (1918); *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 3, 1918.] A. H.

ARENTS, ALBERT (Mar. 14, 1840–May 15, 1914), metallurgist, was born at Clausthal, Germany, becoming one of that group of German mining school graduates who, in the seventies and early eighties, took so active a part in the metallurgical development of the Rocky Mountain region, particularly in lead-silver smelting. His education was typical of this school of young German engineers. He had two years at the University of Berlin and his technical training at the Royal Mining Academy, Clausthal. He came to America in 1865 under engagement to a small lead mine in Massachusetts and later found employment with the Eureka Consolidated Company, Eureka, Nev. The most primitive character of smelting operations greeted Arents and his associates at Eureka, the first furnace used there having been an adobe affair with only natural draft, not actually a blast-furnace. Nevertheless, Eureka may well be considered as the birthplace of American lead smelting, for Arents was responsible for many of the most important features and his "siphon lead-well" was, in fact, revolutionary in its effect upon lead blast-furnace practise. Prior to the use of his device it had been necessary to periodically "tap" the lead from the furnace, but with his improvement the lead continually overflowed from the furnace crucible, gradually as it was reduced from the ore, thus avoiding the noxious operation of "tapping" large volumes of such highly heated lead, besides materially improving all of the blast-furnace conditions. The metallurgical progress was so great that when, in the next few years, smelting spread into Utah and Colorado, the practise, except for automatic feeding and the much smaller furnaces, was practically the same as present-day operations. Arents's siphon lead-well was not a manufactured device upon which his name could be distinctly displayed, but was merely the manner of placing the brick-work in the furnace crucible, and yet universally, from general manager down to most menial workman, it was spoken of as "Arents's lead-well." Prior to 1885 Arents removed to Alameda, Cal., which remained his home until his death. That he did not altogether relinquish pyrometallurgy is shown by an indefinitely worded patent (No. 321,780, July 7, 1885) of a revolving roaster, some of its features remaining in its prototype, the widely used cement kiln of the present day. Arents devoted himself to prospecting and study of geology and mineralogy of the adjacent counties, having added "partzite" to the mineralogical list. It seems unfortunate that one, having, in so brief a time, made such an impress upon American lead-silver smelting practise, should so soon have abandoned

this particular field, but his contemporaries, and those who have followed him, have left no uncertain testimony in the technical literature as to the benefits which he conferred upon the art.

[*Trans. Am. Inst. Mining Engineers*, I, II, IV, XXII; *Engineering and Mining Jour.*, XCVII, 1216; Carl Schnable, *Handbook of Metallurgy* (1898); H. F. Collins, *Metallurgy of Lead and Silver* (1899–1900); personal recollections and letter from Arents's daughter.]

R. C. C.

ARGALL, PHILIP (Aug. 27, 1854–Mar. 19, 1922), engineer, metallurgist, son of Philip and Sarah Argall, was born in Newtownards, near Belfast, Ireland. His ancestry was predominantly Celtic and endowed him with an enthusiastic and adaptable nature. Growing up among mines and metallurgical works, he finished grammar school and obtained a grounding in Latin, but at sixteen was laboring ten hours a day for a penny an hour in a mill of the Wicklow copper-mining district, south of Dublin. At seventeen he worked eight hours a day in a mine and had two hours of daily instruction in mathematics and surveying from an ex-officer of ordnance. He profited by association with the professors of a small technical college in Dublin, forty miles away. Using second-hand chemical apparatus found at an abandoned mine, he made analyses for copper and sulphur in ores. At the age of nineteen he was promoted to shift-boss in the Cronebane mine. Two years later he was assistant manager, with the Cornish title of captain. At this early age, with little formal education, he wrote two papers on ore deposits and copper precipitation that were published by the Royal Dublin Society. In 1876 he married Frances Ellen Oates of Ovoca, Ireland, daughter of Capt. George Oates, a Cornish mining man. At twenty-five he took charge of a small metallurgical plant in Swansea, South Wales, at that time the leading metallurgical center of the world, and during a year and a half there he took a course in metallurgy. In quick succession, he was manager for an iron-ore company in Ireland, manager of a mine near Newquay in Cornwall, manager of an antimony smelter in London, and finally in 1884, at the age of thirty, went to New Zealand as manager of gold mines at Coromandel for the Kapanga Gold Mining Company. After a year in New Zealand and Australia, he returned to England and then went to Mexico as superintendent of mines in Sonora, but a year later was back in Ireland building a successful concentrating mill for an iron-ore company and acting as consulting engineer for a silver-lead company in France. All these engagements contributed to the development of his versatility and taught him not to become discouraged even though his employers went bankrupt.

In 1887, at the age of thirty-three, he came to the United States as manager of the La Plata smelter at Leadville, Colo. The smelter soon had to close because of intense competition by a number of others that were bidding for the available ore. In 1889 Argall became a naturalized American citizen. Reports began to reach America of the new cyanide process being developed in South Africa for extracting gold from ore. Many American mining men were incredulous of the new process, but a few small plants were built and experiments begun in adapting the little-understood technique to the difficult ores of Colorado. In 1894 Argall went to Cripple Creek to investigate the failure of a small cyanide plant. The Moffat railroad interests encouraged the building of the first large custom-plant to treat Cripple Creek gold ores by cyanidation. This was done by the Metallic Extraction Company whose mill Argall designed, erected, and managed. By 1895 this mill was treating 3,000 tons of ore a month, and two years later 10,000 tons a month. These telluride ores presented many problems. The clay or talc in dry-crushed ore could not be wetted; the fine ore would not leach. Argall briquetted 15 to 20 per cent of the ore and roasted it prior to cyanidation. Later he patented apparatus for separating the dust from the sand, and a method of crushing in alkaline solution. The cost of treating Cripple Creek gold ores by wet methods was reduced from $15 a ton to $3.50 in 1898 and to $1.38 in 1913. Argall advocated cyanidation, rather than chlorination, of Cripple Creek ores as simpler and cheaper. He engaged in several such metallurgical controversies, including those on dry and wet crushing, roasting and non-roasting, sliming and non-sliming. In 1906 he became consulting engineer for the British owners of the famous Stratton's Independence mine at Cripple Creek. This mine had a large amount of dump ore containing about $3 per ton, but custom mills were charging $5.50 for treating low-grade ore. Argall estimated that he could treat this ore for $1.52 per ton for an extraction of 74.22 per cent. Results for six years on 671,665 tons showed a cost of $1.5138 and an extraction of 74.57 per cent, a remarkable record. In 1905 and 1906 he had charge of the field work of the Zinc Commission appointed by the government of Canada to investigate the zinc resources of British Columbia and test the ores for metallurgical processes. He introduced the eight-hour day in Colorado mills in 1899. In 1903 he received a gold medal from the Institution of Mining and Metallurgy (London) for a paper on "Sampling and Dry

Crushing in Colorado." With two sons, he maintained an office in Denver; for a time he was consulting metallurgist for the American branch of the MacArthur-Forest Company, well-known British engineers who invented the cyanide process in Glasgow in 1887. At his death, ten children survived him; his wife died in 1903. In appearance Argall was stocky and wore a mustache; he showed Cornish and Irish characteristics with western-American adaptations.

[The best source is an interview entitled "Philip Argall and Metallurgical Progress" by T. A. Rickard, in the *Mining and Scientific Press*, Jan. 22, 1916; see also long obituary in the *Rocky Mt. News*, Mar. 20, 1922.]

P. B. M.

ARGALL, SIR SAMUEL (fl. 1609–1624), adventurer, deputy governor of Virginia, first appears in history in 1609 when he was selected to discover a short route to Virginia. The usual course led by way of the Canaries to the Island of Porto Rico in the West Indies, a long, circuitous pathway peculiarly exposed to the attacks of pirates and the interference of Spain. Argall was instructed to steer, after leaving the Canaries, straight across the Atlantic Ocean, in the hope that the reports of dangerous seas in that quarter could be proven false, and thus a far shorter pathway westward be opened up. It required only nine weeks to finish this memorable voyage; and of these, two were spent in a dead calm. Following the same route on his return, Argall reached England in October of the same year, after an absence of only five months. By this conspicuous achievement he gained lasting fame as one of England's maritime pioneers.

When, in the spring of 1610, Lord Delaware arrived in Virginia to take possession of his post of governor general, he was accompanied by Argall, probably to point out the northerly route, which he had the year before shown to be practicable. Delaware had been in the colony only a few days when he sent Sir George Somers and Argall to Bermuda to get a supply of hogs to take the place of those which had been devoured by the starving colonists at Jamestown, during Percy's rule. Somers died during the voyage, and Argall, having either accidentally or purposely missed the Bermudas, went on to Cape Cod, where he secured a cargo of fish for the immediate relief of the Virginia colony. He then aided Lord Delaware by expeditions to the Rappahannock and Potomac in search of grain, which the Indians were ready to sell for English merchandise that appealed to their fancy. On the occasion of one of these voyages, he was able to bring back to Jamestown a cargo of 1,000 bushels of corn. It was said at this time that it was chiefly through him that the disease-wracked and disheartened community there was preserved. He endeavored to advance the culture of wheat in Virginia by securing a supply of seed during a voyage to Canada; and from that remote country he also brought back to Jamestown a considerable number of horses, mares, and colts. But not all his voyages to the far North were actuated solely by a desire to replenish the live stock of Virginia, or to furnish its inhabitants with seed for new crops, or to fill their spindling larders with large quantities of dried fish from the Banks. From some points of view, the most memorable event in his career was his part in breaking up the French settlements on the coast of Maine. In 1611, although the English had by this time founded Jamestown and taken permanent possession of Virginia, Louis XIII granted all the territory lying on the Atlantic Ocean between the mouth of the St. Lawrence and Florida to a French Jesuit mission, which soon undertook to convert the Indian inhabitants to their faith. Argall was in London when news arrived of these letters-patent by an alien power. From his reputation for boldness and skill, he was selected to expel the intruders from the soil claimed by England. He promptly set out in 1613 for Mt. Desert; captured the missionaries who had established themselves there and at St. Croix and Port Royal; burned down their houses; and carried off the priests to Virginia. This was not his sole achievement in an expedition which preserved New England for English occupation, a few years later. He stopped, in the course of his voyage, at the Dutch settlement on the Hudson, and forced the Dutch governor to declare his allegiance to England.

Hardly less important was Argall's capture of Pocahontas in the previous year in one of the villages on the Potomac, where she had been living since Capt. John Smith's departure from Virginia. Argall, on hearing of her presence, while he was foraging for grain in the neighborhood, perceived at once that through her a lasting peace might be established by a formal agreement between her father, Powhatan, and the English. By connivance with the chief of the tribe with whom she was staying, he cunningly induced her to come on board of his vessel; and after a few hours of entertainment, the unsuspecting princess was carried off to Jamestown. Here she was detained; but in a spirit of so much kindness, that she became reconciled to her situation, was converted to Christianity, married John Rolfe, and accompanied Gov. Dale, Argall, and her husband, to England in the spring of 1616.

In 1617, Argall was appointed to the office of deputy governor of Virginia. His conduct, during his administration, has been a subject of controversy. At his arrival, the colony was in a state of prosperity. The cattle were numerous; the tenants were profitably at work in the public garden; and the granaries were full of corn. His first measures were further promotive of this happy condition. He required that each householder should cultivate two acres in grain to provide bread; he reserved all the hay for the cattle; he experimented in the production of wheat; he conserved the supply of powder and shot; he enforced the law relating to church attendance; and he rebuilt the governor's residence. But before the close of his administration, a different spirit was exhibited by him. The Divine and Military Laws of Dale and Gates were still in force, and Argall seems to have taken advantage of this fact. He refused to grant freedom to the tenants whose terms were up; he converted to his own use the grain from the public garden; he killed the public cattle for their hides for his private sale; he sold the tobacco belonging to the magazine to shipmasters and sailors, leaving none to pay for the adventurers' merchandise; he neglected to compel the Indians to pay their usual tributes of maize; and he permitted the rule requiring the cultivation of two acres in grain to fall into abeyance. Apparently, at the end of his government, all the public property had been dispersed or devoured, and the colony, as a whole, had fallen into a state of great poverty.

To crown the delinquencies with which he was charged, he, at the instance of the Earl of Warwick, sent the ship *Treasurer* to the West Indies, ostensibly for goats and salt, but in reality to ravish the commerce of Spain in those waters. The vessel later sailed to the Bermudas with a cargo of slaves snatched in a piratical manner. This incident led to Argall's departure from Virginia in order to justify his conduct, which, through Warwick's powerful influence at Court, he was able to do. In 1620, he was in command of the *Golden Phœnix*, which was attached to the English fleet in the Mediterranean; and, in 1625, he was an admiral in a great naval force which sailed from Plymouth and succeeded in capturing £100,000 worth of prizes. He became a member of the New England Royal Council, and was knighted for his services. But, in 1624, he was defeated in his candidacy for the governorship of Virginia. His death occurred at some time previous to 1641.

[Capt. John Smith, *Hist. of Va.* (1627); Wm. Still, *Hist. of Va.* (1747); Alexander Brown, *Genesis of U.S.* (1891); Purchas, *Pilgrimes* (1625), pt. 4; Neill, *Eng. Colonization of America* (1871), p. 187; Ralph Hamor, *True Discourse* (1615); J. A. Doyle, *Eng. Colonies* (1882); Peter Force, *Coll. of Hist. Docs. 1836–46;* P. A. Bruce, *Econ. Hist. of Va. in the Seventeenth Century* (1896).]

P. A. B.

ARMISTEAD, GEORGE (Apr. 10, 1780–Apr. 25, 1818), soldier, was born in New Market, Caroline County, Va. He was the son of John and Lucy (Baylor) Armistead. The family was known in England from the days of Queen Elizabeth, and according to one tradition it originated in Hesse, Germany. Armistead entered the United States Army as second-lieutenant, and was commissioned major of the 3rd Artillery Mar. 3, 1813. In October 1810 he was married to Louisa Hughes, sister of Christopher Hughes of Baltimore, chargé d'affaires in Denmark, Norway, and Sweden. Armistead was distinguished at the capture of Fort George in Upper Canada on May 18, 1813, but his reputation is chiefly based on his successful defense of Fort McHenry. After the burning of Washington, Aug. 24, 1814, the British fleet under Admiral Cochrane and the army under Gen. Ross sailed up Chesapeake Bay with the purpose of capturing Baltimore. While the fleet entered the Patapsco River, Ross with about 3,000 men landed at Northern Point, Sept. 12, 1814, and advanced toward the city. The mayor and citizens had made rapid preparations. Militia guarded the hastily built intrenchments, and sailors manned the batteries. The troops, inclusive of officers, present for duty numbered about 13,900, under command of Major-General Samuel Smith. Armistead was appointed to command Fort McHenry, a small fortification, but the chief defense of the harbor. He had under him about 1,000 men, regulars, volunteers, and sailors. He was the only man, so it is stated, aware of the alarming fact that the powder magazine was not bombproof. The advance by land under Ross was opposed by about 3,000 militia under Gen. Stricker. They were placed unskilfully and were routed, but the British suffered the great loss of their general. Proceeding the next day, Sept. 13, to a point within sight of Baltimore, the enemy planned a night attack, but in the meantime the bombardment of Fort McHenry and other defenses had failed. The larger vessels of Cochrane's fleet were unable to make a near approach on account of shallow water and sunken ships. Fort McHenry was but little injured, and the loss was small. The British army retreated, and the fleet returned down the bay. Maj. Armistead was brevetted lieutenant-colonel, to date from Sept. 12, and the citizens of Baltimore presented to him a salver, goblets, and a

silver bowl shaped like a bombshell. The "Hero of Fort McHenry" survived the event a few years only, dying in Baltimore in 1818. The most celebrated incident associated with the defense is, of course, the writing of the *Star Spangled Banner* by Francis Scott Key.

[Mrs. Virginia Garber, *Armistead Family* (1910). The Confederate Gen. Lewis Armistead [*q.v.*] was a member of the same family. Armistead's Report is given in *Niles' Register*, VII, 40. For the defense of Baltimore see Henry Adams, *Hist. of the U. S.* (1889–1891), VIII, 166–73.]

E. K. A.

ARMISTEAD, LEWIS ADDISON (Feb. 18, 1817–July 3, 1863), Confederate soldier, came of a prominent Virginia family. The first of the Armisteads to arrive in America was settled in Virginia about 1635. Although he came from England, tradition ascribes a German origin to the family, and the Virginia estate was accordingly named "Hesse" (G. N. Mackenzie, *Colonial Families of the United States*, 1907, I, 12). One branch of the family developed a strong taste for the military career. Five sons of John Armistead were officers of the army. One of these was killed in action at Fort Erie in 1814; one was that George Armistead who defended Fort McHenry against the attack of the British fleet; the youngest, Walker Keith Armistead, was a member of the second class to be graduated from West Point, was colonel of the 3rd Artillery and was brevet brigadier-general at the time of his death. The subject of this sketch, son of the last named and Elizabeth (Stanley) Armistead, was born at Newbern, N. C. He was admitted to West Point as a cadet in 1834, but failed in his studies on account of insufficient preparation, and returned to school to lay a more solid foundation of education. On July 10, 1839, he was appointed, from Virginia, a second-lieutenant in the 6th Infantry. He remained a member of that regiment throughout his service, and in due course was promoted first-lieutenant in 1844 and captain in 1855. He was married to Cecelia Lee Love, daughter of Richard H. Love of Fairfax County, Va. During the Mexican War he distinguished himself at Contreras, Churubusco, and Molino del Rey, and received two brevets. The rest of his service was chiefly on the frontier. He "went with his state" in 1861, resigning his commission on May 26, and making his way overland from the Pacific coast, along with several other ex-officers, the most notable of whom was Albert Sidney Johnston. Armistead was appointed to the colonelcy of the 57th Virginia Regiment, in the Confederate army, and commanded it for a few months in West Virginia and North Carolina. Upon his appointment as brigadier-general, on Apr. 1, 1862, he was assigned to the command of a brigade in what later became Pickett's division of the Army of Northern Virginia. He joined it in time to take part in the Peninsula Campaign, and with it he remained until his death, winning a reputation for distinguished courage. On the third day of the battle of Gettysburg he led his brigade in the final assault on the Union center—a conspicuous figure, noted by many witnesses. With his cap raised on the point of his sword, cheering on the handful of men who had survived the long advance across the open fields, he entered the Union position and fell mortally wounded within the lines. The monument on this spot marks the "high tide" of the Confederacy.

[F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1903), I, 169; *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), III, 576–77; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887–88), III, 354; *Official Records*, ser. I, vols. XI (pts. 1, 2, 3), XIX (pts. 1, 2), XXVII (pts. 1, 2), L (pt. 1); unpublished War Dept. records.]

T. M. S.

ARMOUR, PHILIP DANFORTH (May 16, 1832–Jan. 6, 1901), meat packer and grain dealer, was born at Stockbridge, Madison County, N.Y., the son of Danforth and Julia Ann (Brooks) Armour. His father was of Scotch-Irish and his mother of Puritan stock. Soon after their marriage, at Union, Conn., in 1825, they moved to a farm near Stockbridge. Of their eight children six were boys, five of whom were afterward to be associated in the packing and grain industry. Philip attended the district school and the Cazenovia Seminary, afterward working on the farm. In the spring of 1852, with a company of thirty men from Oneida, he started overland for California. On his arrival he found work as a miner and later was engaged in constructing sluices. With earnings of several thousand dollars he returned home in 1856. Farm life no longer interested him, and he again started west, going first to Cincinnati and then to Milwaukee, where he formed a partnership with a friend, Frederick B. Miles, in the wholesale grocery and commission business. In 1862 he married Malvina Belle Ogden, of Cincinnati. The partnership with Miles was successfully carried on until 1863, when it was dissolved. In the same year he joined with John Plankinton under the firm name of Plankinton, Armour & Co., in the business of grain dealing and meat packing. His first notable stroke in the business world was his operation in pork in the closing days of the Civil War. The price was then about $40 a barrel, with for a time an upward tendency. Confident that the Confederacy was toppling and that prices would fall heavily, he went to New York, then the chief trading market, offering to sell pork for future delivery in

any quantity. He found plenty of buyers. The series of Union victories caused prices to sag, and so far had they fallen during the ninety days of his stay that he was able to buy for $18 what he had agreed to deliver for from $30 to $40. The transaction, which ruined many traders, is said to have netted him at least two millions.

About the time of his return to Milwaukee he became financially interested in the grain commission house of H. O. Armour & Co., established in Chicago three years earlier by his brother, Herman Ossian (1837–1901). The business was enlarged by the addition of a pork-packing plant in 1868, and in 1870 it took the name of Armour & Co. The Armour interests had been gradually concentrated in Chicago, and in 1875 Philip moved there and assumed the headship of the firm.

Before any of the packers (except Nelson Morris) later to gain a world-wide celebrity reached Chicago, that city had superseded Cincinnati (1861–62) as the pork-packing center of the nation. Slaughtering and dressing were then done mainly on nearby farms, and as refrigeration was hardly known, the bulk of the shipments was made in cold weather. Armour is said to have been one of the first packers to bring live hogs to the city and to supervise his own slaughtering. Also he is said to have been one of the first to note the enormous waste in slaughtering and to plan the utilization of waste products. He was a systematizer and an innovator of methods resulting in great economies, and others were not slow in following his example. The great expansion of the industry, however, waited the discovery of a sure method of refrigeration. There is dispute as to who first made refrigeration practicable, Armour having given the credit to his brother Joseph and others having apportioned it variously. Not until 1880 was it in general use. With its adoption the industry took on a new life. Armour now bought his own cars and even established distributing plants in the eastern cities. About this time he also began on a large scale the preparation of canned meats. He next turned his attention to the export trade (though in this venture he seems to have been preceded by Gustavus Swift) and began to send refrigerated beef and pork to England and later to France and Germany. With sleepless energy he continued to extend the range of his operations. In 1879 the Armour Brothers' bank was established in Kansas City, and the fifth brother, Andrew Watson (1829–92), was brought from the New York farm to be its president. Philip Armour figured in many spectacular contests on the exchange, particularly the bear raid on pork in 1879 and the wheat deal of 1882, in each case supporting the market and making large winnings. In the panic of 1893, when runs were made on the Chicago banks and the credit of both the city and the Exposition was threatened, he bought $500,000 in gold in Europe and offered help to the big houses of the city. His last notable operation was that of breaking the "corner" in wheat attempted by Joseph Leiter in 1897. The growth of his enterprises, which in 1892 had been consolidated, was constant, and his wealth reached a total of perhaps $50,000,000. During his last five years he employed an average of 15,000 workers, and his pay-roll ran from six to ten millions a year.

Armour

The prestige of his house, as well as that of the other packing-houses, was considerably dimmed by the "embalmed beef" scandals of 1898–99. Complaints regarding the condition of the meat bought from the packing-houses and served to the troops had been made at various times during the summer of 1898. They were supported by the report (Oct. 1) of an inspector in the Chickamauga training camp and further supported by the testimony (Dec. 21) of Gen. Miles before the War Investigation Commission. President McKinley thereupon appointed a court of inquiry to examine the charges. Its report, made public on May 7, 1899, asserted that the charge made against the packers of having treated the meat with chemicals was "not established," that such instances of tainted meat as had been disclosed were due to tropical weather conditions and the injury of the containers by transportation, and that the quality of the meats served to the troops was the same as that sold to the trade. It was a report that satisfied no one and was generally regarded as a political document. Public excitement was for a time intense, and the press teemed with charges against the packers, including the allegation of bribery of government officials. It is the testimony of the friends of Armour that the scandal affected him deeply, one of them asserting that he never rallied from the shock. He steadfastly upheld the quality of his products and denied that he had ever countenanced the expenditure of a single dollar for bribery or corruption.

In the spring of 1899 his health began to fail. He sailed for Germany, took the baths at Nauheim and traveled for a time in Switzerland. On his return he spent the winter in Pasadena. Here his son, Philip D., Jr., visited him, but succumbed to a sudden attack of pneumonia, dying on Jan. 29, 1900. Armour later returned to Chicago, but was not again active in business. He died at his home of myocarditis following an attack of pneumonia.

Armour was broad-shouldered, of medium

height and heavy build, though not fleshy. The familiar portrait of his later years represents him with a bald crown, side whiskers, and no mustache. His hair was red or "sandy," and he used sometimes, says Gunsaulus, to stress the importance of "sandy-haired" men and women in history. There was no man in Chicago whose face and figure were better known. He walked "like a man intent on getting somewhere." His dress was plain, his home simple, and his art treasures were few. He spent little on himself, but much on others. He founded the Armour Mission on a bequest of $100,000 left by his brother Joseph, adding to the fund large sums of his own. He built the Armour flats for workingmen's families, and he founded the Armour Institute of Technology, opened in 1893, to which he gave between three and four millions. His bounty knew no limits, and his closest associates believed that he gave away a fortune at least the equal of that which he left. He had faith in the improvability of humankind, and his field of experimentation was the young. "I like to turn bristles, blood, bones, and the insides and outsides of pigs and bullocks into revenue now," he is reported to have said, "for I can turn the revenue into these boys and girls, and they will go on forever." He is credited with being a liberal, too—an upholder of freedom of opinion, undisturbed by the newer theories regarding the social control of property. "If the next twenty-five years make Armours impossible," he once said to Gunsaulus, president of the Armour Institute, ". . . I want these young people to be prepared for it. Don't ever let me or my business get in the way of your work." His attitude toward his employees was, however, the patriarchal one. His eulogists praise him as a kindly employer, who paid more than a living wage. It is certain, however, that he opposed collective bargaining and the organization of labor, and he seems to have believed that the "good employer" was the solution of the labor problem.

[*Who's Who in America.* 1899–1900; Howard Copeland Hill, "The Development of Chicago as a Center of the Meat Packing Industry," *Mississippi Valley Hist. Rev.,* Dec. 1923; Philip D. Armour, "The Packing Industry," in *One Hundred Years of Am. Commerce* (1895), ed. by Chauncey M. Depew; Charles Edward Russell, *The Greatest Trust in the World* (1905); Rept. of Military Court of Inquiry, *N. Y. Times,* May 8, 1899; Frank W. Gunsaulus, "Philip D. Armour: A Character Sketch," *Rev. of Rev.,* Feb. 1901; H. I. Cleveland, "Philip Armour, Merchant," *World's Work,* Mar. 1901; obituaries in the *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune,* and *Chicago Tribune* of Jan. 7, 1901.]

W. J. G.

ARMSBY, HENRY PRENTISS (Sept. 21, 1853–Oct. 19, 1921), agricultural chemist, the son of Lewis and Mary (Prentiss) Armsby, was born at Northbridge, Mass. After primary education in the schools of that town he graduated from the Worcester Polytechnic Institute with the degree of M.S. in 1871. He continued his studies at the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale University, graduating in 1874 with the degree of Ph.B. In the following year he studied in Germany at the University of Leipzig, devoting special attention to the subject of animal nutrition. Returning in 1877 he served for two years as chemist in the recently established Connecticut Agricultural Experiment Station. On Oct. 15, 1878, he married Lucy A. Harding. After two years' service as vice principal and professor of agricultural chemistry in the Storrs (Conn.) Agricultural School, he became professor of agricultural chemistry in the University of Wisconsin, doing work in the Agricultural Station, of which, in 1886, he was made associate director. In 1887 he was called to organize the Pennsylvania station, and served as its director for twenty years; from 1890 to 1902 he was also dean of the school of agriculture. In 1907 an Institute of Animal Nutrition was established at the Pennsylvania station to carry on and extend the investigations which he had planned and begun. He was then relieved of his other duties and left free to devote himself to research work as director of the Institute. In this he continued active until near the time of his death.

Armsby's study and thought bore its first fruit during his service at the Connecticut station. He began a translation of Wolff's *Feeding of Farm Animals* to supply the lack of any adequate work on the subject in English; but he soon realized that many changes and additions would be necessary to adapt it to American conditions and to include the most recent work. He therefore wrote, instead, *A Manual of Cattle Feeding, a Treatise on the Laws of Animal Nutrition* (1880), making free use of Wolff's book and all other sources of information. This work, long used as a text-book, was the first presentation in English of the results of the studies of animal nutrition which had been made abroad and of the methods by which they had been obtained. The work had great influence in awakening attention and starting a study of the subject in this country.

When he became professor of agricultural chemistry in Wisconsin, Armsby began his life work of research on animal nutrition in connection with agricultural stations, which continued without interruption till his death forty years later. For fourteen years, in Wisconsin and Pennsylvania, he carried out a variety of feeding experiments. Of these he wrote, "Fourteen years' experiments in animal feeding and study of experimental results elsewhere confirm the belief

of the writer in the urgent need of further investigation into fundamental physiological laws governing animal nutrition. Only by such investigations can we obtain the solid and indispensable basis of rational practise." As early as 1890 he suggested his view that the study of the fuel and energy value of foods would furnish a simpler method of comparing food values than the one then in use. In 1907, with the establishment of the Institute referred to above, came his opportunity to develop this thought and to begin the classic research which made him preëminent as a leader in nutrition studies.

He and his fellow workers, with the financial help of the United States Bureau of Animal Industry, developed a respiration calorimeter of sufficient size for observation on farm animals. It was an instrument of great precision with the help of which could be determined the energy value of any kind of food consumed, its loss in all the various excreta of the body, and the amount which was utilized for maintenance and production; the "net energy" of the ration. With it Armsby made the first demonstration of the validity of the principle of the conservation of energy in cattle, as it had been previously made by Rübner on the dog and by Atwater and Benedict on man. Quantitatively the principal function of food is to supply energy, hence knowledge of the relative amounts of energy which can be recovered in various methods of utilization is of prime importance in food conservation. Armsby fixed the net energy of the chief American feeding stuffs and methods of using them in compounding rations. He studied the efficiency of different types and ages of animals as converters of "waste" into animal foods. He disclosed the great waste that may be involved in the conversion of vegetable into animal foods through the agency of live stock, proving that to feed to farm animals agricultural products which can be used directly for human sustenance involves a great economic loss.

The results of Armsby's work are set forth in the following of his writings: *The Principles of Animal Nutrition with Special Reference to the Nutrition of Farm Animals* (1903); *The Nutrition of Farm Animals* (1917); *The Conservation of Food Energy* (1918); *The Animal as a Converter of Matter and Energy* (prepared after his death by his collaborator, C. R. Moulton, 1925, in the monograph series of the American Chemical Society). In recognition of his services honorary degrees came to him from the University of Wisconsin, Yale, and the Worcester Polytechnic Institute. He was elected a member of the Royal Society of Arts of Great Britain in 1911, foreign member of the Royal Academy of Sweden in 1912 and member of the National Academy of Science in 1920.

Armsby was a man of slight physique, rather retiring in nature, but with broad interests, generous in his helpfulness to others, tolerant, patient, and persistent in pursuit of his ideals. Valuable in counsel, he held office in the prominent agricultural organizations of this country. In the fall of 1918 he was sent to Europe by the United States as a member of the Inter-allied Scientific Food Commission, which rendered valuable service during the World War.

[*U. S. Dept. of Ag. Experiment Station Rec.*, vol. XLV, Nov. 1921.] E. H. J.

ARMSTRONG, DAVID MAITLAND (Apr. 15, 1836–May 26, 1918), painter, worker in stained glass, was born at "Danskammer," near Newburgh, N. Y. He was the son of Edward Armstrong and the grandson of Col. William Armstrong, a Scotchman in the British army during the Revolutionary War. His mother was Sarah Hartley Ward, daughter of Col. John Ward of South Carolina. He entered Trinity College, Hartford, in 1854, graduating with the degree of A.B. in 1858. He then read law in New York City with the view of becoming a lawyer, was admitted to the bar in 1862, and practised law for several years, but turned finally to painting as a career. He had already studied painting both in Rome and Paris, where he had Luc Olivier Merson as his instructor. Friendships formed in Europe led him to become interested in diplomatic affairs, and friends obtained for him the position as consul in the Papal States. He received this appointment in March 1869 and held the position three years. Upon the formation of the Paris Exposition in 1878, he was appointed director of the American department, a position he filled with such success that he was made a chevalier of the Legion of Honor for his services. For the World's Fair in Chicago, in 1893, he frescoed the exterior of the Machinery Hall in a renaissance manner and was also associated in a general way with the exposition. Working in stained glass occupied much of his time during his later years. Examples of his work in glass are to be found in All Souls' Chapel, Biltmore, N. C.; in the home of Mrs. O. H. P. Belmont, New York City; and in the Columbia University Chapel. In the spring of 1877 Armstrong returned to "Danskammer," remodeled an old house near his paternal acres, and lived there for about twenty years. He settled finally in New York City. In 1866 he had married Helen Neilson, a niece of Hamilton Fish. His reminiscences, entitled *Day before Yester-*

day, reflect a society-loving artist and a tireless worker. He was a great clubman and at the Century Club he frequently met Augustus Saint Gaudens, Stanford White, Charles Follen McKim, and F. Hopkinson Smith. He was a member of the American Artists Society and the Architectural League. He was elected an Associate National Academician in 1906.

[David Maitland Armstrong, *Day before Yesterday,* N. Y. (1920); *N. Y. Times,* May 27, 1918; *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19.]

T. B.

ARMSTRONG, FRANK C. (Nov. 22, 1835–Sept. 8, 1909), Confederate soldier, was born at the Choctaw Agency, Indian Territory, the son of Frank W. and Anne (Millard) Armstrong. His mother later married Gen. Persifor F. Smith. Armstrong was educated at Holy Cross Academy and College. Because of distinguished conduct in an Indian fight, while accompanying his stepfather on an expedition to New Mexico, he was commissioned second-lieutenant in the 2nd Dragoons, June 7, 1855. He accompanied Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston's expedition to Utah; was promoted captain June 6, 1861, and resigned Aug. 13, 1861. As a volunteer aide he was with McCulloch at Wilson's Creek, Aug. 12, 1861; and with Col. James McIntosh at the fight at Chustenahlah, Cherokee Nation, on Dec. 26, 1861. As a lieutenant he was an assistant adjutant-general at Pea Ridge, Mar. 6–8, 1862; and then inspector-general of Steen's Brigade in Arkansas. He was elected colonel of the 3rd Louisiana Infantry and accompanied the Army of the West, under Price, to Tupelo, Miss., in the spring of 1862. Detailed acting brigadier-general on July 7, 1862, in command of Price's cavalry, he won renown by raids on Courtland, Ala., on July 25, 1862, and in West Tennessee, about one month later. He was in command of the cavalry in the operations of Price and Van Dorn against Grant and Rosecrans in the Iuka operations, Sept. 13–20, and in the battle of Corinth, Oct. 3–4, 1862. He subsequently operated under cavalry division or corps commanders, such as Forrest, Wheeler, W. H Jackson, W. T. Martin, S. D. Lee, and Chalmers. These operations were those conducted while Bragg and Rosecrans were confronting each other at Tullahoma and Murfreesboro during the spring of 1863; those involved in the retreat of Bragg from Tullahoma, and in the ensuing battle of Chickamauga, on Sept. 19–20, 1863; the operations of Longstreet against Burnside at Knoxville, Nov. 17–Dec. 4, 1863; those of Johnston and Hood against Sherman, from Dalton to Atlanta, during the summer of 1864; Hood's campaign against Schofield and Thomas, resulting in the battle of Franklin on Nov. 30, and the Confederate defeat at Nashville on Dec. 15–16, 1864; the retreat from Nashville; and the operations against Gen. J. H. Wilson, previous to the capture of Selma by the latter on Apr. 2, 1865. Repeated recommendations gained for Armstrong, on Apr. 23, 1863, a commission as brigadier-general, to date from Jan. 20, 1863. His military character was marked by the exercise of prudence, discretion, and good sense; by stubbornness and gallantry in action; by a disposition to "march to the sound of the guns." After the close of the war he was in the Overland Mail Service; then a United States Indian inspector; and later assistant commissioner of Indian Affairs. He died at Bar Harbor, Me. He had married, first, Maria Polk Walker, daughter of Knox Walker of Tennessee; and second, Charlotte McSherry (born Combs) of St. Mary's County, Md.

[Succinct accounts of Armstrong's career may be found in the *Confed. Mil. Hist.,* VIII, 288; *Who's Who in America,* 1908–9, p. 48. A brief biog. is contained in the *New International Yr. Bk.,* 1909, p. 52. For record of his Regular Army service, see T. H. S. Hamersly, *Complete Regular Army Reg. of the U. S., 1779–1879,* p. 265. Detailed accounts of his participation in Forrest's operations are contained in John A. Wyeth, *Life of Gen. Nathan Bedford Forrest* (1889). The most complete account of his Civil War service is contained in the *Official Records.* For contemporary recognition of his ability as an organizer, and cavalry leader, see *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War,* II, pt. II. Obituaries in *N. Y. Times,* Sept. 9, 1909, and *Washington Evening Star,* Sept. 9, 13, 1909.]

W. S. G.

ARMSTRONG, GEORGE BUCHANAN (Oct. 27, 1822–May 5, 1871), reconstructor of the railway mail service in the United States, was born in County Armagh, Ireland. Of his parents little is recorded except that his mother was a Buchanan, distantly related to President Buchanan, and that they emigrated to the United States in 1830, living for three years in Newark, N. J., then moving to Virginia and later to Maryland. The youth is first heard of in Baltimore as a clerk in a commission house. About 1846 he married Julia H. W. McKee. An attraction to the postal service prompted him to apply for a clerkship, and through the influence of his noted kinsman he was appointed to a place in the Post Office Department in Washington, about 1852. Two years later, on the recommendation of his superior, he was transferred to Chicago. He resigned in 1856, to engage in business, but after two years his firm failed. In 1858 he was appointed assistant postmaster. During the Civil War Gov. Oglesby appointed him a colonel of the Illinois volunteers, but the title was probably honorary, as he seems to have continued with the Post Office.

He early became interested in the matter of a

more systematic handling of the mails. In February 1864, he personally laid before the Post Office Department proposals for a thorough-going reform of the service, his main suggestion being the abandonment of the distributing offices then in use and the sorting of the mails on trains. On July 1, after repeating his proposals by letter, he was authorized by Postmaster General Blair to make an experiment on any railroad that would grant him the privilege. The first trial was made on Aug. 28, on the Chicago & Northwestern, between Chicago and Clinton, Ia., and was soon followed by trials on other lines. By the end of the year the "traveling post office," or "post office on wheels," was regarded as a success, and in December Armstrong was appointed a special agent of the department to organize the system. By the act of Mar. 3, 1865, Congress formally recognized the innovation and authorized its further development by the Postmaster General, who thereupon divided the service, appointing Armstrong as special agent of the western section and Harrison Park of the east. At the beginning of Grant's administration a Bureau of Railway Mail Service was established, and on Apr. 4, 1869, Armstrong was appointed general superintendent, with headquarters in Washington. His remaining two years were spent in developing the service. In the spring of 1871 he returned to Chicago. On May 3 he resigned his office, and two days later he died.

Through contributions from the railway mail clerks of the country a statue to his memory, naming him as the "founder of the railway mail service in the United States," was erected on the grounds of the Federal Building in Chicago, and on May 19, 1881, was dedicated with a eulogy by Schuyler Colfax. The event brought on a spirited controversy as to Armstrong's right to the distinction given him. It was shown that the idea of the "traveling post office" had been suggested by H. A. Burr, topographer of the Post Office Department, as early as 1853, and that in the fall of 1862 William A. Davis, superintendent of mails on the Hannibal & St. Joseph railway, had tried the experiment of sorting westbound overland mail on the cars. The controversy served to confirm the theory that most inventions and innovations are the joint contribution of many minds, but also confirmed the claim made for Armstrong that it was he who elaborated the project of the railway post office, brought it to the attention of the department, obtained its adoption in spite of many formidable obstacles, and spent his last years in making it a practical success. He is eulogized by Colfax as a man of indomitable will, with a mind of great originality and force, remarkable executive ability, and a nobility of character that impressed all who came in contact with him.

[*Hist. of the Railway Mail Service* (1903); W. J. Dennis, *The Travelling Postoffice* (1916); *The Beginnings of the True Railway Mail Service* (1906), ed. by Geo. B. Armstrong, Jr.; Jas. E. White, *A Life Span and Reminiscences of Railway Mail Service* (1910); A. T. Andreas, *Hist. of Chicago* (1885), II, 391; *Chicago Tribune*, May 20, 1881.]

W.J.G.

ARMSTRONG, GEORGE DOD (Sept. 15, 1813–May 11, 1899), Presbyterian clergyman and controversial writer, was born in Mendham, Morris County, N. J., where his father, Rev. Amzi Armstrong, was pastor of the Presbyterian church. He was one of ten children, and the youngest of three sons, the other two being Amzi, who attained some prominence in New Jersey as a lawyer and politician, and William, clergyman and promoter of missionary activity in the Presbyterian denomination. On his father's side he was of Irish descent, his ancestors having emigrated to this country about 1730; through his mother, Polly, daughter of Aaron and Sarah Dod, he was of Puritan extraction. After graduating from Princeton in 1832, he taught school for a time, and in 1836 entered Union Theological Seminary, Prince Edward County, Va. In 1838 he became professor of chemistry and mechanics in Washington College, Lexington, which position he held for thirteen years, resigning to become pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, Norfolk, Va., where he remained until his death. During the yellow-fever epidemic there in 1855, he ministered to the afflicted tirelessly and without regard for his own welfare. Four of his household died, including his wife and oldest child, and he himself was taken sick and reported dead, but recovered. In 1856 he published a vivid account of the epidemic under the title, *The Summer of the Pestilence.*

Puritan in rigidness of convictions and performance of duty, he was Irish in his love of combat. Sympathizing with the views on slaveholding held in the South, and aroused by the attempt of Dr. Albert Barnes [*q.v.*] to "wrest the Scriptures respecting slavery," he published in 1857 *The Christian Doctrine of Slavery*, a detailed exposition of the teachings of Christ and the Apostles regarding that institution. This book aroused a controversy, and it was followed in 1858 by *A Discussion on Slaveholding; Three Letters to a Conservative by George D. Armstrong, D.D., of Virginia, and Three Conservative Replies by C. Van Renselaer, D.D., of New Jersey.* In 1857 he published *The Doctrine of Baptism*, an examination of the Scriptures with a view to controverting the teachings of the Bap-

tists. The most of this is included in a more ambitious work, *The Sacraments of the New Testament as Instituted by Christ,* issued in 1880, which combats Roman Catholic as well as Baptist doctrines. *The Two Books of Nature and Revelation Collated* (1886) is essentially a defense of the Biblical view of the world as against that of modern science. These writings, though narrow in outlook, show painstaking study and a keen mind. In addition he published: *Politics and the Pulpit* (1856); *The Theology of Christian Experience* (1858); *"The Good Hand of Our God Upon Us," a Thanksgiving Sermon Preached on the Occasion of the Victory of Manassas* (1861).

[Alfred Nevin, *Encyc. of the Presbyt. Ch. in the U.S. A.* (1884); *Gen. Cat. of Princeton Univ.* (1908); *Centennial Gen. Cat. . . . of Union Theol. Sem. in Va. 1807–1907.* For ancestry, see W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit* IV (1859), "Amzi Armstrong."] H.E.S.

ARMSTRONG, GEORGE WASHINGTON (Aug. 11, 1836–June 30, 1901), pioneer in the express business, was a descendant of a family of emigrants from the North of Ireland, who settled about 1722 in the Scotch-Irish stronghold of Londonderry, N. H., but later moved to Windham, N. H. George Armstrong, son of David and Mahalia (Lovering) Armstrong, was born in Boston, where his father labored as an artisan in the shipyards. The boy's schooling in the noted Old Hawes Grammar School was cut short on the death of his father in 1851. With a legacy of eighty-three dollars, a strong constitution, pluck, and the racial characteristic of aggressive tenacity, he struck out for himself. Penny postman in South Boston, office boy for the *South Boston Gazette,* newsboy on State St., and news agent for nine years on the Boston & Worcester Railroad with occasional relief as a brakeman, baggage handler, and conductor, mark the rungs of his rising ladder. In 1863, he purchased a half-interest in the restaurant at the Boston terminal of the Boston & Albany Railroad. Eight years later, he was able to buy out his partner. In 1865, he purchased King's Express, which operated over the Boston & Worcester Railroad, changing the name to Armstrong's Transfer. With a couple of coaches and a Berlin carriage, Armstrong's men transferred baggage and passengers from the Boston & Worcester station to the North End terminals. In 1869, the restaurant and news concession on the Fitchburg division were taken over. Soon the Armstrong Company controlled the transfer, news, and lunchroom service on the Boston & Albany, the Old Colony, the eastern section of the Boston & Maine, and the Boston, Revere & Lynn Railroads. The employees numbered several hundred. Armstrong did a prosperous business. Travelers appreciated his reliable service and reasonable rates, and rewarded him with an ever increasing patronage. In 1882, the concern, with a virtual monopoly of business on the New England railways, was reorganized as the Armstrong Transfer Company with George W. Armstrong as president. With Yankee intuition, he had found a new line of endeavor and developed a tremendous business.

Armstrong was twice married: in 1868 to Louise Marston of Bridgewater, N. H., who died in 1880; and in 1882 to Flora E. Greene, daughter of a distinguished Boston physician, Dr. Reuben G. Greene; he had two children by each wife. His later years were spent in his Brookline residence, where he had gathered a good library and a rich collection of antiques and bric-a-brac, and in a quiet summer cottage at Centre Harbor, N. H. Yet his business cares were heavy, for in addition to the Armstrong Transfer, he was a director of the Worcester, Nashua & Rochester Railway, the Manchester & Lawrence Railroad, and the United States Trust Company. His gift of the Armstrong Memorial Building commemorates the family name in Windham, with which town he retained a close association.

[*Representative Men of Mass.* (1898), ed. by W. F. Moore; *Men of Progress in Mass.* (1896), ed. by E. M. Bacon; *Boston of Today* (1892), ed. by R. Hernden; D. P. Toomey, *Mass. of Today* (1892); *Granite Mo.,* VIII, 191–200, XXIII, 157–63, XXVII, 22; *Boston Transcript,* July 1, 1901.] R.J.P.

ARMSTRONG, JOHN (Oct. 13, 1717–Mar. 9, 1795), Pennsylvania soldier and politician, son of James Armstrong, was born in Brookborough Parish, County Fermanagh, Ireland, and was married to Rebecca Lyon of Enniskillen in the same county. They settled in the Cumberland district of Pennsylvania, a hilly region on the border. In his capacity as surveyor Armstrong laid out the town of Carlisle. The entire frontier of the middle colonies was in constant peril from Indian attacks, after Braddock's disastrous defeat in 1755; and Armstrong, who seems to have acquired early the confidence of the authorities, was commissioned captain in January 1756 and lieutenant-colonel in May, and was sent by the governor in the following year with 300 men against Kittanning. This was a town of the Delawares on the upper course of the Allegheny River, a headquarters for scalping parties. The enterprise was completely successful; the town was taken by surprise in a night attack on Sept. 8, 1756; and Armstrong, who had been wounded in the battle, received from Philadelphia "thanks, medal, and plate." It was, in fact, one of the few outstanding British successes in the early part

of the French and Indian War. Henceforth Armstrong was often styled the "Hero of Kittanning." Two years later he was the senior officer of Pennsylvania troops in the expedition under Forbes and Washington, and had the honor of raising the flag over Fort Duquesne. He served in Pontiac's War, and for many years was judge of the court of common pleas.

When the Revolution began, experienced officers were in demand. On Mar. 1, 1776, Armstrong was commissioned brigadier-general, and was sent to take command at Charleston, S. C., receiving his instructions from Gen. Lee. He arrived in April, and commanded the South Carolina troops at Haddrell's Point. The actual defense, however, was conducted by others. He returned to the northern army, and in the dark days which preceded the battle of Trenton he was sent on a mission to his own part of the state "to stir up the people."

In the critical year of 1777 Armstrong, now a major-general, was influential in state affairs prior to and after the British invasion, as is evidenced from Joseph Reed's letter to Washington (Jared Sparks, *Correspondence of the American Revolution,* 1853, I, 389–90). He commanded the left wing below the ford of the Brandywine, but was not actively engaged in that battle. Subsequently he held the line of the Schuylkill, in the effort to delay the advance on Philadelphia. Three weeks later, at Germantown, he led a division, about 1,000 of Pennsylvania militia, and in the plan of the attack it was intended that he should support Generals Wayne and Sullivan, and fall upon the British left and rear; but this scheme failed of accomplishment, one of the various factors in that day's fiasco. Armstrong resigned that same year, but was present at a council in Valley Forge in 1778, and was sent to Wyoming Valley after the massacre. On the whole, though Armstrong's name appears frequently in the military annals of the Revolution, it does not appear that his actual achievements measured up to his reputation gained in the Seven Years' War. He was elected to the Continental Congress in 1778, and served in 1779–80, obtaining leave of absence in the latter year. He was again a delegate in 1787–88, and died at Carlisle, Pa. His occasional letters to Washington show his views on political and other subjects.

[*Jour. of the Continental Cong.* (1904–22); Wm. S. Stryker, *Battles of Trenton and Princeton* (1898); Charlemagne Tower, *Lafayette* (1895); Henry B. Carrington, *Battles of the Am. Rev.* (1876); *Chronicles of the Armstrongs* (1902), ed. by James L. Armstrong; *Papers Read before the Lancaster County Hist. Soc., Dec. 3, 1897,* containing a notice of Armstrong and a letter from him to Washington, as well as a sketch of Armstrong by F. R. Diffenderffer; narrative of the battle of Germantown in a letter from Armstrong to Thomas Wharton, Jr. (President of Pa.), Oct. 5, 1777, *Pa. Archives,* 1853, V, 645–46. The date of birth is on the authority of J. W. King, in *Western Pa. Hist. Mag.,* July 1927. 1725 is commonly given by other authorities.]

E. K. A.

ARMSTRONG, JOHN (Apr. 20, 1755–Feb. 4, 1816), soldier, explorer, son of Thomas Armstrong of Donagheady, County Tyrone, Ireland, by Jane, his wife, daughter of Michael Hamilton of Tully, County Londonderry, was born in New Jersey. As an officer of the 12th and 3rd Pennsylvania regiments in the Revolution he won distinction by his abilities and bravery, and immediately afterward (1783–84) was an officer under the state in its conflict with the Connecticut claimants at Wyoming. The active part he took there is by most writers confused with that taken by Maj. John Armstrong, author of the Newburgh Addresses. On the organization of a standing army, in August 1784, he received a commission, and thereafter was constantly engaged in arduous duties on the Ohio frontier, becoming one of the best-known woodsmen, explorers, and military characters of the early West. He was commandant at Fort Pitt, 1785–86, and in the latter year was transferred to the remote frontier. The hero of several thrilling episodes in border history, incident to his duties in the army, he at the same time, with uncommon faith in the early and rapid settlement of the regions north of the Ohio, voluntarily assumed duties looking to the future welfare of the pioneers. Col. Francis Johnston, receiver general of the land office at Philadelphia, wrote him (1790): "Your passion for improving the Ground by planting fruit Trees of various kinds & making Gardens where ever you go will redound much to your credit, & I will add to the real emolument of mankind."

In 1790, when the government had determined to attempt a secret exploration into the Spanish territory, and up the Missouri River, Armstrong was entrusted with the hazardous enterprise. Such profound secrecy veiled this undertaking, the forerunner of the Lewis and Clark expedition, that little is known of it beyond the guarded letters that passed between Gen. Harmar, Gov. St. Clair, and Knox, the Secretary of War, and a few memoranda made by Armstrong himself. A biographical sketch (1844) by his son, William Goforth Armstrong, who was intimately familiar with his father's career, states that "he proceeded up the Missouri some distance above St. Louis, not with . . . an escort, but entirely alone! It was his intention to examine the country of the upper Missouri and cross the Rocky Mountains," but owing to intertribal Indian wars he was obliged to abandon the undertaking. He was then de-

tailed to explore the Wabash River and its communications with Lake Erie, and, although it was the very eve of a war with the savages, he made this exploration through the heart of the Indian country with only two friendly Indians as companions. In Harmar's expedition, in October 1790, the first organized effort of the Federal Government to drive the Indians back from the frontier, Armstrong commanded the only regulars engaged in the initial encounter of that campaign, and with them, when deserted by the militia, stood his ground until all but seven of his men were slain. His escape from the field forms a remarkable chapter in the history of western adventure and woodsmanship. He served also in St. Clair's campaign (1791), and as commandant of Fort Hamilton, which was built chiefly under his direction. Resigning from the army in 1793, soon after his marriage to a daughter of Judge William Goforth, one of the most influential men in the formation of the Ohio commonwealth and champion of popular education, Armstrong settled at Columbia, near Cincinnati. From 1796 to the close of the territorial period he servd as treasurer of the Northwest Territory, besides holding local offices. He removed, in 1814, to Armstrong's Station, on the Ohio, which he had founded in 1796, one of the first American settlements on Indiana soil. There he died on Feb. 4, 1816.

[*Original Jours. of the Lewis and Clark Expedition*, ed. by R. G. Thwaites, VII (1905); Chas. Cist, *Cincinnati Miscellany*, I (1845); *Pa. Archives*, ser. I, 1852–56; *Am. State Papers, Mil. Affairs*, I; Jas. McBride, *Pioneer Biog.*, I (1869).]

C.F.C.

ARMSTRONG, JOHN (Nov. 25, 1758–Apr. 1, 1843), soldier, diplomat, was descended from Johnnie Armstrang or Armstrong of Gilnockie, a hero of the Scottish border in the early sixteenth century, and through him from Thomas Armstrong, Lord of Morgarten, Roxburghshire, Scotland, in the fifteenth century (*Journal of American Genealogy*, I, 149–53). A grandson of Johnnie Armstrong, a partisan of Charles I in the Civil Wars, settled in northern Ireland, near Enniskillen, County Fermanagh, where his son Edward married into the Irish house of the Maguires. A grandson of Edward, John Armstrong (1720–95), emigrated from Ireland to Pennsylvania between 1745 and 1748, and settled at Carlisle. He participated as a soldier in the French and Indian War and the war against Pontiac, and during the Revolution became a major-general in the Pennsylvania service. His wife, Rebecca Lyon, was also, it would appear, a native of northern Ireland. Their son, John Armstrong, was born at Carlisle, Pa.

When the Revolutionary War began, John Armstrong was a student at Princeton. Leaving college in 1775, he entered the colonial army and served successively on the staffs of Generals Mercer and Gates. He participated in the Saratoga campaign and was present at the surrender of Burgoyne. When hostilities ended he was serving as aide-de-camp to Gates, with the rank of major. In March 1783, while the army was camped at Newburgh on the Hudson, and while discontent was rife at the failure of Congress to meet arrears of pay, Armstrong, at the instigation of Gates, composed the notorious "Newburgh Letters," calling a meeting of the field officers and representatives of the officers of each company to consider measures of relief, and suggesting that, as its petitions to Congress had gone unheeded, the army threaten to take matters into its own hands if Congress failed to meet its just demands. The authorship of these letters, though not generally known at the time, was later expressly avowed by Armstrong. They exhibited a facility in caustic and rather sophistical reasoning, mixed with skilful emotional appeal, for which their author enjoyed a lifelong reputation. The harsh opinion which Washington at this time expressed of the letters and their anonymous author he withdrew in a letter to Armstrong fourteen years later, declaring that he had "since had sufficient reason for believing, that the object of the author was just, honorable, and friendly to the country, though the means suggested by him was certainly liable to much misunderstanding and abuse" (Jared Sparks, *Writings of George Washington*, VIII, 551–66).

When the army was disbanded with the coming of peace, Armstrong returned to Pennsylvania and promptly found political employment as secretary of the Supreme Executive Council of the State. In the summer of 1784 the Council placed him in command of 400 militia and sent him to restore order in the Wyoming Valley on the Susquehanna, where hostilities had broken out between settlers from Connecticut and the agents of a group of Pennsylvania land speculators. Instead of taking a neutral position, as he should have done, Armstrong played directly into the hands of the Pennsylvania party, treating the Yankees with bad faith and with characteristic ruthlessness. The state made amends to the Connecticut settlers, but Armstrong kept his position as secretary and was also made adjutant-general of Pennsylvania (Charles Miner, *History of Wyoming*, 1845, chaps. 21–23). He continued to act as secretary of the Council even after his election in 1787 as a delegate to Congress (*Minutes of the Supreme Executive Council of Pennsylvania*, XV, 194–95).

In 1789 Armstrong married Alida Livingston, a sister of Chancellor Robert R. Livingston of New York, and moving to Red Hook, Dutchess County, N. Y., devoted himself for eleven years to agriculture. When he again entered public life it was as a member of the Livingston clan, which in 1800 by an alliance with the Clintons carried New York for the Republican party. Armstrong, like the Livingstons, had been a Federalist, but with them, when their merits were not sufficiently recognized by Washington, Hamilton, and Adams, he had gone over to the party of Jefferson. It was characteristic of the man that his first political service to the Republicans was the composition of an anonymous petition for the repeal of the Alien and Sedition Laws, "written with his usual ability and in his usual unequalled style of bitterness and severity." This proved a useful campaign document, particularly through the publicity arising from the arrest of at least one prominent person who helped to circulate it (Jabez D. Hammond, *History of Political Parties in the State of New York,* 1842, I, 131).

The Republican victory of 1800 made George Clinton governor of New York, but the Livingston family was generously rewarded with offices. "Happy was the man who had married a Livingston," remarks a recent writer. John Armstrong's portion of the spoils was a seat in the United States Senate, to which he was chosen in November 1800 by an almost unanimous vote of the legislature (*Ibid.,* pp. 153–54). In February 1802 he resigned his seat, thus making way for De Witt Clinton. When Clinton in turn resigned from the Senate in November 1803 to become mayor of New York, Gov. George Clinton appointed Armstrong to fill his place, and he served until June 30, 1804, when he again resigned to become minister to France in place of his brother-in-law, Robert R. Livingston. Presumably this diplomatic appointment was due to the influence of the Livingstons, though it might be argued that it was Jefferson's way of disposing of a too independent senator (Henry Adams, II, 157).

There was little glory to be won by an American minister at Napoleon's court between 1804 and 1810, the years in which Armstrong resided there. It was a period of futile hopes and futile protests—hopes of securing Florida from Spain through the good offices of Napoleon, and protests against French confiscation of American shipping under the Decrees of Berlin, Milan, and Rambouillet. It is to Armstrong's credit that he objected to the subservient attitude of the American administration. He had no faith in expressions of good will by Napoleon or his ministers, and he advised his government, if it wanted Florida, to take it by force and expect no aid from Napoleon. He evidently considered discussions with the French ministers a waste of breath, and his lack of communicativeness led Napoleon to complain that Armstrong was "a morose man with whom one cannot treat," and to request his recall (*Ibid., 228–29, 251–52*). The closing event of his ministry at Paris was a famous note handed him by Cadore, the French foreign minister, on Aug. 5, 1810. The object of this note was, without really committing France to any change of policy, to convince the United States that Napoleon had revoked the Berlin and Milan decrees, and thereby to induce the United States to take hostile steps against England if the latter refused to make similar concessions. This note, with its apparent yielding to the United States, gave Armstrong an opportunity to retire from his mission in triumph, and he did so, without making any effort to probe into the true nature of the new French policy. By this bit of negligence he contributed materially to the success of Napoleon's scheme, and must thus bear part of the responsibility for the ensuing quarrel with England and the War of 1812 (*Ibid.,* V, 259–61). He left Paris for America Sept. 12, 1810.

Armstrong returned from France in a mood none too friendly to President Madison. When the War of 1812 opened, De Witt Clinton of New York, though a Republican, resolved to run for the presidency against Madison on an anti-war platform appealing to Federalists and dissatisfied Republicans. He expected Armstrong's support in his campaign, but Armstrong disappointed him by coming out in favor of Madison and accepting (July 6, 1812), a commission of brigadier-general with the command of New York City and its defenses (Alva De S. Alexander, *A Political History of the State of New York,* 1906, I, 216). In this position he used such generous means for encouraging enlistments for local service as to call forth criticism from Albert Gallatin, secretary of the treasury, who feared that his measures would interfere with the recruiting of the regular army (Albert Gallatin, *Writings,* 1879, I, 530).

In January 1813 President Madison nominated him for the post of secretary of war. Eustis had demonstrated his own incompetency for that position and had resigned in December 1812. Madison had asked James Monroe, secretary of state, to fill the office temporarily, and had wished to have him keep it, as Monroe would probably have liked to do, but northern jealousy of Virginia forbade this course. Virtually compelled to select

a northern man, Madison was urged by Judge Ambrose Spencer and Gov. Tompkins of New York to name Armstrong, and made the nomination accordingly, though without liking for or great confidence in the nominee, who had made no secret of his dislike for the Virginia school of statesmanship. The Senate confirmed the nomination by a small majority, the Virginia senators absenting themselves, and Armstrong took charge of the War Department on Feb. 5, 1813.

About Armstrong's merits as secretary of war there has been much controversy. The verdict of history has been for the most part adverse, and there seems no reason to alter that verdict. Allowances must be made for the serious if not insuperable difficulties that confronted him —the deficiency in troops and war material resulting from the niggardly measures of Congress, the untrained and generally incompetent men who held generals' commissions, and the bitter fight, amounting almost if not quite to disloyalty, waged against him from the beginning by Monroe, who rightly regarded him as a rival candidate for the presidency. In the face of these difficulties Armstrong accomplished one notable achievement: he vastly strengthened the army by the promotion of Generals Andrew Jackson, Jacob Brown, Winfield Scott, and other officers. In making a major-general of the Quaker farmer, Jacob Brown, Armstrong displayed discernment and courage. But over against this service must be set an array of mistakes and failures. With Gen. Harrison in the West he interfered too much; with Gen. Dearborn on Lake Ontario he interfered too little. Armstrong's plan for a spring campaign on Lake Ontario in 1813 was promising; in place of it he allowed Gen. Dearborn and Commodore Chauncey to substitute one of their own which had nothing to commend it and which ended in disaster. Even more discreditable to Armstrong was the autumn campaign of the same year against Montreal. Armstrong went himself to Sackett's Harbor on Lake Ontario, in order to mediate between the two generals, Wilkinson and Hampton, who were personal enemies. He started the two (Wilkinson from Sackett's Harbor and Hampton from Lake Champlain) on a campaign for Montreal which he plainly knew must fail, and then returned to Washington, leaving Wilkinson and Hampton to bear the responsibility for failure (Adams, vol. VII, ch. 8). In the following summer, when 11,000 British veterans were threatening an invasion of New York via Lake Champlain, he ordered Gen. Izard, with 4,000 men from Plattsburg on Lake Champlain to Lake Ontario, leaving only 2,000 troops to man the defenses at

Plattsburg. Many attempts have been made to fix the blame for the capture of Washington by the British, Aug. 24, 1814. Responsibility has been variously placed upon Gen. Winder, who commanded the district, Secretary Armstrong, and President Madison. The fairest conclusion seems to be that there is discredit enough for all three, and that all must share in the responsibility. Winder unquestionably was ill provided with troops and equipment, but he failed completely in using what he had. Armstrong was culpable in his failure to heed Winder's complaints, and must bear much of the blame for failure to erect even the simplest fortifications despite ample warning that the British were coming. Armstrong's criticism of Jackson's defense of New Orleans may well be turned against himself in relation to the defense of Washington. "Had the General been better acquainted with military history," wrote Armstrong in his *Notices of the War of 1812,* II, 177, "he would not have suffered a single day, of the twenty he had for preparation, to have passed, without forming one or more entrenched camps for the protection of the city." Finally, Madison was responsible for the appointment of Winder, an incompetent, over Armstrong's protest, and in a more general way, as commander-in-chief of the army, was responsible for all that was done or left undone. Armstrong stated truly that he had carried out all Madison's orders, but Madison replied as truly that in other matters Armstrong had shown enough, and sometimes too much, initiative. Each of the three exhibited, in this affair, an almost incredible degree of incompetence.

Armstrong had never been popular in Washington, and he now received the chief blame for the disaster. "Universal execration follows Armstrong," wrote a Washington lady, Aug. 30, 1814 (Mrs. S. H. Smith, *The First Forty Years of Washington Society,* 1906, p. 115). Monroe and his friends insisted that Armstrong must leave the cabinet. In an interview of Aug. 29, Madison told him that, although his resignation was not desired, he could no longer direct military affairs within the District of Columbia. Armstrong agreed to leave the city, ostensibly to pay a visit to his family in New York, and to remain until the excitement in Washington should blow over (James Madison, *Writings,* Hunt edition, VIII, 300–4), but from Baltimore he mailed his resignation to the President (Sept. 3, 1814), at the same time giving to the press a letter defending his conduct (*Niles' Weekly Register,* VII, 6-7).

The Washington disaster, coupled perhaps with Armstrong's flirtations with the Federal-

ists while in office (*Life and Correspondence of Rufus King,* V, 370–71), put an end to his political career. His friend, Judge Spencer of the New York supreme court, tried in 1815 to secure his election to the United States Senate but was unable to secure the requisite support. Armstrong retired to Red Hook, N. Y., and there devoted the remainder of his life to agriculture with occasional ventures in authorship. The most important of his publications, *Notices of the War of 1812* (1836), is chiefly an attempted vindication of his record in the War Department. In this and other published works, as well as in some of his MS. letters still extant, he showed the same command of a caustic pen which had distinguished the author of the "Newburgh Letters." He contributed a "Life of Richard Montgomery" and a "Life of Anthony Wayne" to the *Library of American Biography* (1st series, 10 vols., 1834–38) edited by Jared Sparks, and in 1839 published in book form as *A Treatise on Agriculture* a series of articles which he had written for the Albany *Argus.*

"His disposition was eminently pugnacious," says Martin Van Buren (*Autobiography,* in *American Historical Association Report,* 1918, p. 42). This quality, together with the leaning to indolence and intrigue with which he was justly charged, did much to vitiate the fruits of his unquestioned ability, and, together with the opposition of powerful rivals, rendered his public life of slight value to his country.

[There is no biog. of John Armstrong. A great deal of information about his career in France and in the War Dept. is contained in Henry Adams, *Hist. of the U. S. during the Administrations of Jefferson and Madison,* 9 vols. (1889–91). Much of his official correspondence during the same periods is printed in *Am. State Papers: Foreign Relations,* vols. II and III, and *Mil. Affairs,* vol. I. An important critical account of his failure to take adequate measures for the defense of Washington in 1814 is E. D. Ingraham, *A Sketch of Events which Preceded the Capture of Washington, by the British on the 24th of August, 1814* (1849), while Armstrong's own view is presented in his *Notice of Mr. Adams' Eulogium on the Life and Character of James Monroe* (1832).]

J. W. P.

ARMSTRONG, PAUL (Apr. 25, 1869–Aug. 30, 1915), playwright, was born in Kidder, Mo., the son of Richard and Harriet (Scott) Armstrong. His parents removing to Bay City, Mich., where his father engaged in the steamship business, he began and ended his education by attendance at public schools in that city. At twenty-one, he secured a license to be master of steam-vessels and for a short time was purser on a steamer plying between Chicago and St. Joseph, Mich. Numerous short stories which he wrote were uniformly rejected by the publishers, but, undiscouraged, he decided to enter literature by the back-door of journalism. He went to Buffalo and wrote for the *Express,* the *Courier,* and the *News* until 1896, one of his first assignments on the *Express* being a murder mystery which he unexpectedly helped to solve. He next worked for two years on the *Chicago Times-Herald* and the *Inter-Ocean,* after which he moved to New York and under the pen-name of "Right Cross" wrote on sports and pugilism for several New York newspapers. Meanwhile he had become interested in writing for the theatre. His first play, *Just a Day Dream,* was favorably read in manuscript by Joseph Jefferson and was produced by a Boston stock company, but Armstrong tried in vain to interest any New York manager in it. Three later plays, *The Superstition of Sue, St. Ann,* and the first version of *Society and the Bull Dog* were staged about 1904 without success. The reward of perseverance came, however, in 1905, with the triumphant production of *The Heir to the Hoorah.* For the next eight years Armstrong was one of the most popular of American playwrights, and his fecundity under the stimulus of success was remarkable. There appeared from his pen: *Ann Lamont* (1905), a revision of *St. Ann; In a Blaze of Glory* (1906), one act; *Salomy Jane* (1907), adapted from Bret Harte's story, "Salomy Jane's Kiss"; *Society and the Bull Dog* (1908), revised version; *Going Some* (1908), farce written in collaboration with Rex Beach; *Via Wireless* (1908), melodrama in collaboration with Winchell Smith; *Blue Grass* (1908), revision of an early curtain-raiser; *The Renegade* (1909); *For a Woman* (1909); *Alias Jimmy Valentine* (1909), written in a single week, and his most successful work, prompting a long series of imitative "crook plays" by others; *The Deep Purple* (1910), pseudo-scientific mystery play, in collaboration with Wilson Mizner; *A Romance of the Underworld* (1911), revision of *For a Woman; The Greyhound* (1912), in collaboration with Wilson Mizner; *The Escape* (1912); *A Love Story* (1913); *Woman Proposes* (1913), vaudeville sketch; *To Save One Girl* (1913), vaudeville sketch. About 1913 Armstrong's health began to fail and his work to lose its grip. *The Bludgeon* (1914) and *The Heart of a Thief* (1914) were less successful than their predecessors. *Mr. Lorelei,* a folk-comedy, was merely published posthumously in *Smart Set,* January 1916.

Armstrong was twice married. His first wife was Rella Abell, of Kansas City, whom he married in London, July 24, 1899. On Dec. 10, 1913 Mrs. Armstrong secured a divorce with alimony for herself and her three daughters, and on Dec. 12 Armstrong married Kittie Cassidy, of Baltimore, who had starred in several of his plays and

who later, as Catharine Calvert, became a prominent moving-picture actress. They had one son. Armstrong died from heart-failure at his home in New York City on Aug. 30, 1915. His plays were ephemeral, written solely for the stage with slight regard for literary merit. Nevertheless he was an effective story-teller, adept in producing crisp, pungent dialogue, with grim humor and strong climaxes. At a time when the American stage gave promise of better things he devoted his talent mainly to melodrama and was one of the last writers to compete successfully in this field with the moving-picture theatre.

[Obituaries in N.Y. newspapers of Aug. 31, 1915, also in *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror*, Sept. 8, 1915; article on Armstrong's personality by Chas. W. Collins, *Green Book* (XI, 651–66); portrait, *Green Book* (XI, 651). *Who's Who in America*, 1916–1917, gives date of Armstrong's death incorrectly as Aug. 29.]

J. L. H.

ARMSTRONG, ROBERT (Sept. 28, 1792–Feb. 23, 1854), soldier, belonged to a military family, his father, Trooper Armstrong, being a Revolutionary soldier of fine physique and great strength, and two brothers, Frank and William, each attaining the rank of major. He was born in Abingdon, Va., but early in life removed with his family to east Tennessee. Later he returned to Abingdon for his education, which ended when the country went to war in 1812. At Nashville he enlisted, becoming a sergeant, and later, when Andrew Jackson led an army against the Creek Indians, he served with it as a lieutenant of artillery. In a campaign marked by several battles, shortage of provisions, and mutiny, he cemented a close friendship with the indomitable leader of the little army. At the battle of Enotochapko, on Jan. 24, 1814, he was shot through the left hip while courageously standing by his guns. This wound, however, was not so severe as to keep him from serving gallantly on Jackson's staff at the battle of New Orleans. The life that followed these stirring times was for the most part comparatively quiet. In June 1814 he married Margaret Nichol, daughter of a Nashville merchant, and settled in that city. President Jackson appointed him postmaster there in 1829, a place which he held for sixteen years, and in 1836, when the second Seminole War broke out, appointed him brigadier-general in command of two regiments of volunteers. The short Florida campaign, ending in the battle of Wahoo Swamp, was effective though not brilliant, and the prestige of Armstrong's command made him the candidate of the Jackson-Van Buren party for governor in 1837. But the tide was running heavily against Jackson and Van Buren in Tennessee at that time, and Armstrong was decisively defeated. Appointed consul at Liverpool by Polk in 1845, he served there for four years. After his return to this country he became proprietor of the *Washington Union*, and in its columns gave steady support to Democratic policies during the three years of life that remained to him. His political papers were marked by the stately dignity that characterized the writings of the time, and betray no particular originality of thought.

[John H. Calender, "A Leaf from History. A Portrait of Gen. Robert Armstrong," *Tenn. Hist. Mag.*, July 1919; speech of Robert Ewing before Tenn. Hist. Soc., *Nashville Tennessean*, Nov. 18, 1918; John T. Moore and Austin P. Foster, *Tennessee, the Volunteer State, 1769–1923* (1923), I, 408, 415–16; Will T. Hale and Merritt Dixon, *Hist. of Tennessee and Tennesseans* (1913), II, 432, 489, III, 839; Zella Armstrong, *Notable Southern Families* (1926), III, 1-15; editorials in *N.Y. Times*, Feb. 24, 1854, and *Washington Union*, Feb. 24, 26, 28, 1854.]

O. W.

ARMSTRONG, SAMUEL CHAPMAN (Jan. 30, 1839–May 11, 1893), educator, was born on the Island of Maui in the Hawaiian Islands. His parents, Richard and Clarissa Armstrong, were missionaries of the American Board, people of the pioneer type, of keen intelligence, sincere piety, and great bodily endurance. Richard Armstrong was of Scotch-Irish descent and of vivacious and demonstrative temperament. Clarissa Armstrong was of New England Puritan stock, practical, reserved, and devout. In 1840 the Armstrongs moved to Honolulu where Richard Armstrong became the pastor of the First Church. He soon added to his missionary work many other public responsibilities. He was made a member of the King's privy council and then minister of public instruction, and later president of the board of education.

Samuel Armstrong grew up in a large family of brothers and sisters. He was a high-spirited boy, full of fun, and a proficient horseman, swimmer, and sailor. He was expert in all forms of bodily exercise, took great delight in out-of-door life and mingled in friendly fashion with the natives and in the social, political, and religious activities that centered at his father's house. He attended the Royal School at Punahou, which was under the charge of the brothers Edward and George Beckworth. The school in 1855 became Oahu College, and Armstrong finished the first two years of the college course which prepared him to enter the junior class at Williams College. His father died suddenly in 1860, and it was to carry out the father's hope for the education of his son that Samuel Armstrong sailed in the autumn of that year for the United States. Williams College was then under the charge of Dr. Mark Hopkins, and during his first winter Armstrong formed an intimate friendship with

the son of the president and was invited to share his room at Dr. Hopkins's house, thus beginning a life-long and inspiring connection. The excitements of the opening days of the Civil War changed everything for the young student. Armstrong had no particular interest in the issues of the war for he had lived quite remote from the discussions and was not an American citizen. Nevertheless, he could not but share the convictions and ardors of his associates. His classmates were enlisting almost in a body and he finally accepted a captain's commission in the 125th New York Regiment. He recruited his own company at and about Troy, N. Y., and on Aug. 30, 1862, started with his regiment for the front. The regiment had a somewhat unexciting part in the campaigns of the succeeding year, and Gettysburg was its first real battle. Armstrong distinguished himself for skill and valor. He was promoted to the rank of major and soon after, though not yet twenty-five years old, he was commissioned colonel of the 9th Regiment, United States colored troops. He took over this charge without enthusiasm but soon became keenly interested in the men of his command and in proving the capacity of the colored troops. The regiment took part in the operations before Petersburg, but at the time of the assault Armstrong was in the hospital at Fortress Monroe, very near to the scenes of his later life-work. At the end of the war he received the brevet rank of brigadier-general and commanded brigades for some months in Virginia and Texas.

The Freedmen's Bureau had come into existence in response to the crying needs of the emancipated negroes, and Armstrong, who had been conspicuously successful as a commander of colored troops, was appointed an agent of this Bureau. In March 1866 he took charge of a great camp of negroes in and about the village of Hampton, Va., and made his headquarters in an old mansion on the shore of Hampton Creek. His thoughts were more and more directed toward the need of industrial education for the freedmen. "The north," he wrote, "generally thinks that the great thing is to free the negro from his former owners; the real thing is to save him from himself."

Armstrong's early experience in Hawaii came right to hand. In his youth he had seen the development of the plan of the Hilo Manual Labor School for native Hawaiians. This was a boarding school for Hawaiian boys where they paid the expenses of their tuition by working at carpentry, housework, gardening, etc. Armstrong set himself to discover the way in which selected negro young men and women could be trained

Armstrong

to be teachers and leaders of their own people. The plan of combining mental and manual training exactly fitted the needs of the situation. In 1867 Armstrong wrote to the American Missionary Association, which was interested in negro education, recommending that the estate upon which he was then living, covering 159 acres, be purchased as the foundation of an industrial school for negro teachers. Through the Association and by the gift of one benefactor, the estate was secured and the Hampton Normal and Industrial Institute was opened in 1868. By personal solicitation among friends in the Northern states Armstrong raised the money for the first school buildings. A great institution was gradually upbuilt, and its successful administration has had a profound effect on the educational life of America. It sprang from a creative, though not a wholly original, conception, and it has been the source and inspiration of many schools which represent the same idea.

Armstrong was twice married: in 1869 to Emma Dean Walker of Stockbridge, Mass.; and in 1890 to Mary Alice Ford of Lisbon, N. H. He was a man of fascinating personality and exceptional gifts of leadership. He possessed a large measure of the warmth and vehemence of his father, and at the same time the Puritan traits of practical sagacity and indomitable persistence derived from his New England mother. The two elements in his nature made a strong and significant combination, the union of the moralist and the seer, the alliance of imagination and tenacity. He described and advocated the fundamental essential of education—education of head, heart, and hand alike—education for life; and then he made the special application and illustration of that principle at Hampton Institute.

[Edith Armstrong Talbot, *Samuel Chapman Armstrong* (1904); F. G. Peabody, *Education for Life* (1918), a history of Hampton Institute; the series of Founder's Day Addresses delivered in successive years at Hampton on Armstrong's birthday.]

S. A. E.

ARMSTRONG, SAMUEL TURELL (Apr. 29, 1784–Mar. 26, 1850), publisher, banker, statesman, was born in Dorchester (now a part of Boston), Mass. His parents, John and Elizabeth, both died before he was thirteen. The new century found the youth a printer's apprentice with Manning & Loring in Boston. His apprenticeship completed, he formed a partnership with Joshua Belcher and conducted a printing business at 70 State St. After a few years the partnership was dissolved and he moved to Charlestown, where from his printery appeared monthly the *Panoplist and Missionary Magazine United* (still current as the *Missionary Herald*) beginning

with June 1808. Returning to Boston (1811), he located his business at 50 Cornhill. His publications were generally of a religious character, such as Thomas Scott's *The Holy Bible Containing the Old and New Testaments, with Explanatory Notes* (1824), Worcester's edition of Watts's *Psalms and Hymns,* and Claudius Buchanan's *Christian Researches in Asia* (1811). Of a religious nature, too, was the publisher himself, a deacon in the Old South Church (H. A. Hill, *History of the Old South Church,* 1890, II, 489), and member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions (*Boston Recorder,* Sept. 18, 1835). His connection with the Old South Church accounts for his discovery, in 1816, in the tower of the church, of "the third volume of the History of New England in the original MS. of the author, John Winthrop, the first governor of the Massachusetts Bay" (*New England Historical and Genealogical Register,* VII, 364; *Winthrop's Journal,* 1908, I, 16). A man of civic spirit as well, Armstrong headed the subscription list "for the preservation of the Plymouth Rock," June 1835 (*Chronicles of the Armstrongs,* p. 391). This same spirit led him to accept public office; he was representative to the General Court from the City of Boston (May 1822 to May 1823; May 1828 to May 1829), lieutenant-governor (1833–35) and governor succeeding Gov. Davis after Mar. 4, 1835, when the latter went to the United States Senate. A Whig in politics, he had Anti-Masonic support, but he was not in the favor of Daniel Webster, Massachusetts Whig leader, who scorned this self-made man "of the common people" (*Boston Morning Post,* Jan. 15, 1836). Hence in the gubernatorial election of November 1835 Armstrong ran unsuccessfully as an Independent in the same field with Edward Everett, Webster's nominee. In the municipal election of the following month, however, his fellow citizens of Boston elected him mayor for the ensuing year. His administration was marked by the erection of an iron fence for the enclosure of three sides of the Common, and the extension of the mall through the burial grounds of Boylston St. His last public office was that of state senator in 1839. He continued his connection with his publishing business in the latter years of his life, but the moderate fortune he had amassed (Abigail, *née* Walker, his widow, is mentioned by Forbes and Green, *Rich Men of Massachusetts,* 1852, as being worth $150,000) enabled him to give considerable time to European travel.

[A short sketch of Armstrong, written by his contemporary and partner, Uriel Crocker, appears in *Memorial Biogs. of the New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Soc.* (1880), I, 232–36. A similar sketch accompanied by a portr. is in vol. XLIV of the Society's *Register,* pp. 137–39. A. B. Darling, *Pol. Changes in Mass., 1822–48* (1925), refers to his pol. career, as do also John Koven, *Boston 1822 to 1922* (1923); the *Boston Recorder,* Feb. 27, Mar. 6, Dec. 13, and Dec. 18, 1835; P. R. Frothingham, *Edward Everett, Orator and Statesman* (1925), pp. 128–29; and *Memoirs of J. Q. Adams,* IX, 242–43. Obituaries in *Boston Transcript,* Mar. 27, 1850, and the *Liberator,* Apr. 5, 1850.]

A. E. P.

ARNOLD, AZA (Oct. 4, 1788–1865), inventor, was born in Smithfield, near Pawtucket, R. I., the son of Benjamin and Isabel (Greene) Arnold and a descendant of Thomas Arnold, who with his family joined the English colonists in 1635 and settled in Providence, R. I., in 1661. Arnold's mother died when he was two years old and after his father's second marriage young Arnold was left to shift more or less for himself. He attended the village school, but began working as soon as he was able, first learning the carpenter's trade and then the machinist's. At the age of twenty he entered the employ of Samuel Slater in his wool and cotton machinery manufacturing plant in Pawtucket, but left after a few years to engage in the manufacture of woolen blankets. This venture proving unsuccessful, he next became associated with Larned Pitcher and P. Hovey in the operation of a machine shop in Pawtucket. Here he remained until 1819. In this year he moved with his family to Great Falls, N. H., where he built and operated a cotton-mill. Within a few years he was again back in Rhode Island, this time in North Providence, where he established a machine of his own for the manufacture of textile machinery. While with Pitcher and Hovey in Pawtucket he devised a machine for separating wool, in carding, into slivers so that it could be spun from the cards. It was a form of "endless" roving, roving previously having been in short rolls which had to be pieced together. Whether the device was patented is not known, but on Jan. 21, 1823, Arnold obtained a patent for a roving machine for spinning cotton in which he introduced a differential motion applied to the speeder. The result was a valuable improvement in cotton-roving machines, increasing both quantity and quality of product. It was introduced into England in 1825 and was characterized as being one of the most important machines for spinning cotton. While some American manufacturers acknowledged this invention and paid Arnold royalties, others, especially those outside of Rhode Island, refused to do so, and, in the course of the infringement suits which Arnold brought, the whole code of patent laws was repealed and the new code of 1836 was passed, but Arnold received no redress for the infringements. In 1838 he gave up his machine shop and moved with his family

to Philadelphia, where he operated the Mulhausen Print Works. Here he remained for about twelve years, when he went to Washington, D. C., established himself as a patent attorney, and continued in this capacity until his death. Arnold's last known invention was a "self-setting and self-raking saw for sawing machines," for which patent No. 15,163 was granted him on June 24, 1856. While it is said that he invented a machine for cutting files about 1812, no record of this invention is to be found in the Patent Office. Arnold married Abigail Dennis of Newport, R. I., on July 28, 1815.

[*Vital Record of R. I.*, VII (1895), ed. by Jas. N. Arnold; *Representative Men and Old Families of R. I.* (1908); *Hist. of Providence County* (1891), ed. by Rich. M. Bayles; *Hist. Sketch of the Town of Pawtucket* (1876), by Massena Goodrich; Patent Office Records.]

C. W. M.

ARNOLD, BENEDICT (Jan. 14, 1741–June 14, 1801), Revolutionary patriot and traitor, was born at Norwich, Conn., the son of Benedict and Hannah King (*née* Waterman) Arnold. The Arnolds had for several generations been a family of education and position in New England, an ancestor of the same name having been several times governor of Rhode Island in the seventeenth century (*American Historical Association Report*, 1906, vol. II, pp. 331–32). Arnold's training was under the influence of the strictest kind of New England religious thought, against which he displayed a distinct spirit of revolt. Biographers have extolled the fine qualities of his mother, but in the light of modern psychology it seems likely that her unwise efforts at restraint may have been responsible for much in his later character. At the age of fourteen he ran away from home to join the colonial troops then starting out for the French and Indian War. At the instance of his mother he was brought back, but he ran away a second time for the same purpose, joined the provincial troops, and saw service on Lakes George and Champlain. When the charm of the soldier's life had vanished, Arnold deserted and returned home, alone, through the wilderness. Only his youth saved him from the serious consequences of his act. At the age of twenty-one he moved to New Haven and became a druggist and bookseller. As he grew more prosperous, he invested money in the West India trade, and traveled himself between Quebec and the West Indies, selling horses and mules to the plantations in the sugar islands. On Feb. 22, 1767, he married Margaret Mansfield of New Haven, by whom he had three sons, Benedict (1768), Richard (1769), and Henry (1772). He was soon a person of some consequence in New Haven and became a captain in the Connecticut militia. His personality made a lasting impression upon observers. His black hair and dark complexion were remarked by all who tried to describe him, although his eyes were light. Thick set and well proportioned, he possessed unusual physical strength and agility, and was capable of great endurance.

When the news of the fight at Lexington reached New Haven, Arnold called his company together and asked for volunteers to aid the patriot cause. With the approval of Gov. Trumbull the company started out and reached Cambridge on Apr. 29, 1775. Since the great problem was how to fight a war without either gunpowder or artillery, Arnold told the Committee of Safety of Massachusetts that Fort Ticonderoga, on Lake Champlain, held eighty cannon left over from the French and Indian War, and he volunteered to go and get them (Force, *American Archives*, 4th ser., vol. II, p. 450). The committee promptly gave him a colonel's commission, power to enlist troops, and an order to go and take Fort Ticonderoga (*Ibid.*, p. 485). At the same time this idea occurred to some other Connecticut people, and Arnold found himself en route to Ticonderoga in company with another expedition led by Ethan Allen of Vermont. Neither was the type of man to yield precedence to the other, but the importance of their joint expedition seems to have impressed them with the necessity for some compromise. It was agreed that Allen should issue commands jointly with Arnold (J. H. Smith, *Our Struggle for the Fourteenth Colony*, I, 132). Together they assaulted and captured the fort on May 10, 1775, Allen reporting to the Albany Committee, "Col. Arnold entered the fortress side by side with me." The controversy over who was really in command continued after the victory, which tradition has usually assigned to Allen. Shortly Arnold's own troops, whom his subordinates had enlisted, joined him. He promptly left Allen at Fort Ticonderoga and sailed to the extreme northern end of the Lake and captured the fort at St. Johns. Having destroyed that post and the boats with which British reinforcements might pursue him, he returned to the south, where he was reinforced with more troops under Col. Hinman. There were now quarrels among Hinman, Allen, and Arnold as to the chief command, complicated by the conflicting jurisdictions and authority of four governments, Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, and the Continental Congress. Arnold had the mortification of seeing his signal services rewarded only by his being "investigated" and superseded, whereupon in July 1775 he returned to Connecticut, decidedly disgruntled.

In spite of the fact that he had drawn upon his personal savings and his credit for the public service, he was so badly treated by the Massachusetts authorities, in their failure to reimburse him, that even the Continental Congress, with all its poverty, voted him $800. To add to his distress, his wife died on June 19, 1775, while he was absent at the Lakes. His misfortunes, however, did not prevent him from laying before Congress an even more ambitious scheme for securing supplies for the Continental Armies. He proposed an attack on Canada. In furtherance of this he went to Cambridge, where Washington had now taken command of the armies. In the new commander-in-chief he found a sympathetic listener, and one who was already thinking of a new route for an attack on Quebec. The usual course of warlike expeditions in past campaigns had been by way of Lake George and Lake Champlain. Washington had news of a newer route by way of the Kennebec River (Maine) and the Chaudière River, leading straight to Quebec itself (*Maine Historical Society Collections,* ser. I, vol. I, p. 447). With the coöperation of Schuyler, who was now in command at Ticonderoga, two expeditions to Canada were planned. One under Schuyler was to follow the old route of the Lakes, and capture Montreal, while the other under Arnold was to take the new route through the lakes, forests, and rivers of Maine, and secure Quebec. On Sept. 19 Arnold's command left Newburyport, Mass., for Maine. Going up the Kennebec they found waiting the 200 bateaux which had been ordered ahead of time. The journey through the Maine woods is a classic in American military history; for perseverance under the utmost hardships, it is almost unparalleled. About a fourth of the army turned back, for which their leader, Enos, was promptly court-martialed on his return to Cambridge. Arnold struggled on through snow-storms and icy water, and the vanguard of his party reached the St. Lawrence opposite Quebec on Nov. 8. He found the garrison weak, but he was even weaker. It would have been madness to attempt an assault with his force decimated by disease and starvation. He therefore withdrew his troops twenty miles up the river and waited. Meantime Montgomery, who on Schuyler's illness had taken the command, had followed the Lake route and captured Montreal. He joined Arnold on Dec. 2. Quebec had a garrison of about 1,200 men by this time, while the combined forces of Arnold and Montgomery were less than a thousand. In a blinding snow-storm, they made the assault on the night of Dec. 31, 1775. Despite the most heroic conduct the attack failed utterly, Montgomery being killed and Arnold wounded. While still badly injured, Arnold took command of the shattered remnants of the army and placed them so as to blockade Quebec on the west side, while the ice blockaded it on the east until spring came. On Jan. 10, 1776, Congress made him a brigadier-general (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* L. C. ed., IV, 47). As spring came the British obtained reinforcements by sea, and it was apparent that Gen. Carleton, the British commander, would soon be in a position to drive the Americans from Canada. In June Arnold sent his army back to Crown Point from Montreal, and followed in the last boat, just as the advance guard of the British army came in sight.

Arnold

At Crown Point he immediately set to work to prepare for the contest for the control of the Lakes which was bound to come. Carleton left Quebec in pursuit of Arnold and mobilized his forces at St. Johns. Schuyler was now in command of the northern department, but Arnold was entrusted with building a fleet to resist Carleton's armament. The British plan of campaign for 1776 was that Howe should capture New York, while the army under Carleton or Burgoyne was to move south from Canada and join Howe, thus cutting the New England states from the middle colonies. This plan might well have been fatal to the American cause, and had far better chances of success in 1776 than in the following summer. Only one thing prevented its execution, and that was the work of Benedict Arnold. His extraordinary foresight and industry in building a fleet made it necessary for Carleton to delay and prepare a more ambitious expedition than he had originally planned, including the knocking down of war vessels in the St. Lawrence and transporting them in parts overland to be reërected on Lake Champlain. At St. Johns Carleton gathered a force of 12,000. Arnold met him with a fleet which was a curious assortment of schooners, galleys, and gondolas, which were open boats mounting but a single gun each. The two fleets met on Oct. 11, 1776, on Lake Champlain. Arnold had drawn his force up behind Valcour Island in such fashion that the British got between him and Fort Ticonderoga. The first day's contest was exceedingly hard fought and was a drawn battle when evening fell. Arnold realized he must get away, for another such fight would probably ruin him. With remarkable daring and skill he sailed the remains of his fleet straight through the British lines at night and was out of sight when Carleton realized what had happened. The British pursued and on Oct. 13 another desperate battle occurred just below Crown Point. Arnold's fleet was worsted, but he managed to run his own

schooner and five gondolas ashore and burn them to prevent their falling into the hands of the British. He then withdrew his force overland to Crown Point and thence to Ticonderoga. The effect of Arnold's fierce resistance completely upset Carleton's calculations, so that the British commander realized it was impossible to go on and attack, not to say, capture, Fort Ticonderoga that summer. His force retreated to Canada. The principal naval authority has said, "The little American navy on Champlain was wiped out; but never had any force, big or small, lived to better purpose or died more gloriously, for it had saved the Lake for that year" (A. T. Mahan, p. 25).

By November of 1776, his private affairs having become involved in his absence, Arnold received permission from Gen. Gates (now in command of the northern army) and also the consent of Washington to go home. He passed the winter in New England. On Feb. 19, 1777, occurred one of the first events which embittered him against the American cause. Congress promoted five brigadier-generals to be major-generals, all of whom were junior in rank to Arnold (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* VIII, 133). He was beside himself with indignation—but he was not less angry than the commander-in-chief, who immediately demanded an explanation from Congress and emphasized the extraordinary character of Arnold as a leader of men (Sparks's *Washington,* IV, 351). Congress gave the lame excuse that Connecticut already had two major-generals, upon which Washington commented "this is a strange mode of reasoning." Arnold was dissuaded from resigning by a personal plea from the commander-in-chief. It is not too much to say that for the sake of the common cause, Arnold swallowed an injustice which others would not have tolerated (Ford, *Writings of Washington,* V, 270–71 n., 403–6).

In the spring of 1777 he was about to start for Philadelphia to defend himself before Congress, when he heard of the invasion of Connecticut by Gen. Tryon. The object of the expedition was the destruction of the military stores at Danbury. The militia were rallied but did not arrive in time to save the arsenals. Arnold rode to the scene of action, gathered what troops he could, met the enemy at Ridgefield, and opposed his 500 militia against 2,000 British. As usual he was in the thick of the action, and his horse fell dead, hit by nine bullets. Arnold drew off his troops with great skill and followed Tryon on to Norwalk, where, having been reinforced by artillery, he again attacked. The British got back to their ships just in time to avoid capture. This action drew from the Continental Congress warm praise and secured for Arnold the delayed promotion to a major-generalship, without, however, restoring his rightful rank above that of the five previously appointed. Arnold went to Philadelphia, where the Continental Congress was considering some charges which had been made against him. They were proved groundless, the result of personal spite on the part of a fellow officer who had had a grievance against Arnold since the days of Fort Ticonderoga. Congress exonerated Arnold, but still failed to restore his rank above the five. Washington wrote the President of Congress expressing his pleasure at the promotion but again bringing up the question of rank. The delay was probably due to another investigation under way as to Arnold's accounts and his actions as to private property at Montreal. An officer in command of starving troops in an enemy's country might, one would have supposed, be permitted some latitude, but Arnold's enemies in Congress declined to consider the circumstances. Not receiving the satisfaction which was certainly due him, Arnold finally sent in his resignation. Congress received it in July on the same day that it received a letter from Washington telling them that Burgoyne had started south on his momentous expedition from Canada and that Arnold must be sent at once to help block him. Arnold, again upon the personal request of Washington, withdrew his resignation and left for the northern headquarters, where his services were so sorely needed.

The British campaign of 1777 involved three elements. Burgoyne was to march south from Canada. Howe was to march north from New York and join him at Albany. St. Leger was to go up Lake Erie to Oswego and come down the Mohawk Valley, meeting the other two at Albany. The American hopes for defending the Mohawk Valley depended on holding Fort Stanwix. By Aug. 3 St. Leger had surrounded that fort. On Aug. 12 Arnold reached Schuyler's headquarters and was immediately sent off with 800 men to relieve Fort Stanwix. With fewer men than St. Leger, he rushed forward with the utmost audacity, and sent on ahead a half-crazy man and a friendly Indian to tell St. Leger he was coming with an immense army. The speed of his approach and the wild story of his messenger had the effect of driving St. Leger's Indians and Tories away in confusion. When Arnold arrived the siege was raised and St. Leger was in full flight back to Oswego. This almost bloodless victory demonstrated the terror which Arnold's name held for the British.

Without waiting a moment he turned his army about and hurried back to Schuyler, now super-

seded by Gates. In September Burgoyne was face to face with the American army. Arnold's command participated in the battles of Sept. 19 and Oct. 7, at Freeman's Farm and Bemis Heights, which sealed the fate of Burgoyne's expedition. A distinct impression has been left with posterity that the fire and dash of Arnold in those battles had as much to do with the American victory as had the careful disposition of troops by Gates. Arnold's biographer, Isaac N. Arnold, has put the extreme case for his subject, giving him the principal credit for the triumph of the American arms (*Arnold,* pp. 163–212). This has been questioned by F. D. Stone (*Pennsylvania Magazine,* IV, 389) and by J. A. Stevens (*Magazine of American History,* IV, 181–91). Possibly Arnold was not present at the battle of Sept. 19, but there can be no doubt that he led the troops in person and was wounded on Oct. 7, although probably acting as a volunteer. There can also be no doubt that Burgoyne thought in terms of Arnold as much as he did in terms of Gates. After Burgoyne's surrender, Arnold was carried home to Connecticut where his own people were warm in their recognition of a "fighting general," and Congress belatedly restored to him his proper rank in the army.

In May of 1778 he was sufficiently recovered to rejoin the army under Washington at Valley Forge. In June the British evacuated Philadelphia, and at Washington's order Arnold became the commander at that city. Here he met and fell in love with Margaret Shippen, at that time the darling of Philadelphia society. He married her in April 1779, and took her to "Mt. Pleasant," a magnificent country seat which he purchased upon the banks of the Schuylkill. Philadelphia society was accustomed to the gaiety and extravagance of the British army, and Arnold seems to have felt obliged to keep up an appearance of social activity which was impossible on the small pay of a Continental officer. He was soon seriously in debt. During the period of his command at the headquarters in Philadelphia, he got into trouble with the civil authorities in Pennsylvania on several minor points. In addition it was now charged against him that he utilized his military office for private gain, and that he had made use of soldiers of the Pennsylvania militia for menial services and for his own personal work. These charges, which seem to have resulted from a combination of Arnold's hasty temper and the oversensitiveness of the Pennsylvania authorities, were brought to the attention of Congress, who referred certain of them to the commander-in-chief. Arnold demanded a court martial to clear him of the allegations. The court martial was ordered in May of 1779, but to his irritation was delayed until December. The court, while finding him not guilty of most of the charges, decided that he had violated the articles of war in permitting a vessel to leave a port in the possession of the enemy and enter a port in the United States, and further that he had been imprudent in the use of the military forces for his private purposes. For this they recommended a reprimand by the commander-in-chief. Washington's execution of the recommendation of the court martial was a model of combined firmness and regard for Arnold's better nature and his feelings.

At the time of his trouble with the Pennsylvania authorities, Arnold began actively to enter into that betrayal of the American cause indelibly associated with his name. There seems no reason to doubt that his treasonable correspondence with Sir Henry Clinton began in May or June of 1779. His motives seem to have been fourfold: (1) anger at the repeated slights of Congress, (2) resentment at the actions of the Pennsylvania authorities which culminated in his court martial, (3) the need for ready money to maintain his position and repay himself for the sacrifices and expenses to which the war had put him and for which he had received no adequate recompense from Congress, and (4) a real and sincere indignation at the French alliance, which, as a New England Protestant, and as an inheritor of the traditions of the colonial wars, he could not abide. Historians have in the past attempted to add the motive of his actually being won over to the British cause by the Tories with whom he associated in Philadelphia after becoming commander there. It has, however, been pretty well established that the Shippens of Philadelphia were not all Loyalists in the Revolution, that Edward Shippen, his father-in-law, was more favorable to the American than to the British cause, and that the stories of Margaret Shippen's flirtation with the British officers during the occupation of Philadelphia had no very serious political aspect at that time. Whether, as Arnold subsequently alleged, he was sincerely converted to the British cause, it is difficult to say (*Pennsylvania Magazine,* XXIV, 424).

There can be no doubt that he gave military information of the highest importance to the British throughout the summer of 1779 and the following year. He opened with the British headquarters an avenue of communication, the ramifications and extent of which were not dreamed of until the coming of the British Headquarters Papers to America in the winter of 1926. Information as to troop movements, numbers of forces, dispositions of supplies, the coming and

the strength of the French fleet and army was all sent regularly to Sir Henry Clinton's headquarters. Elaborate ciphers were employed and a perfect net-work of spies. It is difficult now to avoid the conclusion (which up to this time few historians have been willing to accept) that Mrs. Arnold certainly handled some of the secret dispatches, and that the same spies who carried the dispatches were also used to carry personal messages to André and the other British officers whom she had known in the winter of 1778 in Philadelphia. A document in Clinton's own handwriting, dated Nov. 14, 1792, says "his wife obtained for her services, which was very meritorious, 350 pounds."

By the early summer of 1780, Arnold had obtained from Washington the command of the American post at West Point—the key to the American positions above New York. According to his own words, "I have accepted the command at West Point as a post in which I can render the most essential services" (Arnold to André, July 12, 1780). The price offered by Clinton for Arnold's treason and the surrender of West Point and its garrison was considerable, but not definite. Arnold demanded £20,000 if he succeeded in his treachery, and £10,000 if he came over without being able to betray the fort. A meeting was arranged between Arnold and Maj. John André, the British adjutant-general, who assumed the guise of "Mr. John Anderson." They finally met at a point between the British and American lines on Sept. 21, 1780, and arranged the details of the surrender of West Point. Meantime the British war vessel, *Vulture,* which had brought André up the river was compelled to fall several miles further down because it was fired upon by the American artillery. The result was that André had to ride many miles overland to rejoin his ship while Arnold returned to West Point. In direct violation of Sir Henry Clinton's positive orders, André had changed his uniform for a disguise and carried compromising papers in his stocking. The trip back was long and circuitous and Sept. 23 found André still in the saddle trying to reach the British lines. He was furnished with a pass from Arnold, with which he got by successive American pickets, but on the morning of the 23rd, while still some distance above Dobbs Ferry, on the eastern bank of the Hudson, he was stopped by a party of irregulars. They searched him, found the papers, and suspected his errand. He was taken to the nearest American outpost, where the commander sent a note to Arnold, notifying him of the capture of "Mr. John Anderson," but sent the papers to Gen. Washington, who was at the time approaching West Point for an inspection. Arnold realized he had lost, and fled, leaving his wife in hysterics. He galloped to the river, secured a boat and rowed to the *Vulture,* leaving André to his fate. The unfortunate British adjutant-general was court-martialed, found guilty of being a spy, and executed on Oct. 2, 1780.

Arnold

Upon arriving at New York, Arnold reported to Clinton, and was received into the British army with the rank of brigadier-general of provincial troops. One of his first acts was to write a vindication of his conduct and an appeal to the American army to follow his example. This was published as a broadside. The British commander sent Arnold off on a marauding expedition into Virginia in December of 1780, which he conducted with skill and ruthlessness. Gov. Jefferson of Virginia offered a reward of 5,000 guineas to any one who would capture Arnold, and several private efforts were made by American officers to kidnap him during the remainder of his stay in America. He returned to New York in June of 1781. In September Clinton tried desperately to create a diversion which would keep the French and Americans away from their projected attack on Cornwallis. He sent Arnold on another marauding expedition to New London in Connecticut. Here Arnold blackened his name still further by attacking his old neighbors, and although he is probably not to blame for the massacre of the American defenders at Fort Griswold, he may fairly be charged with responsibility for the burning of New London, which was an unforeseen result of his intentional setting fire to the public buildings there. In the next month, Cornwallis surrendered at Yorktown, and Great Britain's chances of subduing her former colonies were over.

Mrs. Arnold had gone from West Point to her father in Philadelphia, but she was ordered out by the authorities and joined her husband in New York. In December of 1781 Arnold sailed with his family for England. Upon his arrival there he was consulted upon the conduct of the war and drew up a very able memorandum for the continuance of the conflict. But it was too late. The party of North and Germain, under which he had been induced to desert, went out of power, and Arnold found himself exceedingly unpopular in England. The scorn in which he was held led to some slurring remarks about him by Lord Lauderdale in the House of Lords, and Arnold challenged the offender to a duel. They met in July of 1792, but neither was injured. Lauderdale said something which Arnold took as an apology, and the affair was closed (*Pennsylvania Magazine,* XXV, 169). Of the rest of

his life we are well informed by the pathetic letters of his wife. Failing to procure active military service under the new régime, he attempted a number of commercial speculations, which proved in the main unfortunate. He was often absent from England, coming to Canada and to the West Indies as his business dictated. On one occasion he may have visited Detroit (*Diaries of Washington,* IV, 136). He made desperate efforts to secure further rewards from the British for his past services, in which Sir Henry Clinton seconded his demands. Pitt certainly took the matter under consideration, but little was done. The total sum Arnold received from Clinton for the actual treason was £6,315. This he felt was not adequate. There exist letters from Mrs. Arnold to Clinton in which she explains their desperate straits and begs his intercession. She was loyal to her husband, if not to her country, and endured his disgrace with all the troubles which it brought. She and Arnold had four sons and one daughter. All of Arnold's sons served with distinction in the British military and civil services. In 1797 he was granted 13,400 acres of land in Canada, but these appear to have profited him very little. As the Napoleonic Wars grew more serious, he tried again in 1798 to get active service in the British army—but without success. The remainder of his life was unhappy and tragic. He died in London of "dropsy and a disease of the lungs."

[The principal biog. study remains I. N. Arnold's *Life of Benedict Arnold* (1880). Jared Sparks's *Life and Treason of Benedict Arnold* (vol. III of his Lib. of Am. Biog., 1848) was written while personal feeling against Arnold still ran high. Shorter biogs. are G. C. Hill's *Life of Benedict Arnold* (1858) and C. B. Todd's *The Real Benedict Arnold* (1903). J. H. Smith's *Arnold's March from Cambridge to Quebec* (1903) contains Arnold's "Jour. of the Expedition to Canada." Arnold's letters on this expedition are in vol. I of the *Me. Hist. Soc. Colls.* (1865). J. H. Smith's *Our Struggle for the Fourteenth Colony* (1907) is the final word on the Ticonderoga and Quebec campaigns. J. J. Henry, one of the survivors, wrote an *Account of Arnold's Campaign against Quebec* (Albany, 1877). The campaign on the Lakes is best studied in A. T. Mahan's *The Major Operations of the Navies in the War of Am. Independence* (1913). The *Proc. of a Gen. Court Martial for the Trial of Major General Benedict Arnold* was printed in only fifty copies (Philadelphia, 1780), but was later reprinted (N.Y., 1865). Pennsylvania's case against Arnold will be found in *Proc. of the Supreme Executive Council of the State of Pennsylvania, in the Case of Major General Arnold* (Philadelphia, 1779). The *Jours. of the Continental Cong.* (L. C. ed.), vols. I–XVIII, enable us to follow his conflicts with that body. Both the Sparks and Ford editions of Washington's works should be consulted. The most detailed study of the treason is Wm. Abbatt's *The Crisis of the Revolution* (1899). One of the accomplices told his own story in Joshua Hett Smith's *Authentic Narrative of the Causes which led to the Death of Major André* (London, 1808; N.Y., 1809). H. B. Dawson's *Rec. of the Trial of Joshua Hett Smith* (Morrisania, N.Y., 1866) goes into further detail on the same points. *The Proc. of André's Court-Martial* were printed, Philadelphia, 1780; N. Y., 1780; Providence, n.d.; Albany, 1865. Winthrop Sargent's *Life and Career of Major John André* (1861) is still standard. Surprisingly little attention has been paid to L. B. Walker's "Life of Margaret Shippen, the Wife of Benedict Arnold," which is a mine of source material and includes both the Margaret Shippen and the Edward Shippen Correspondence. This large work ran through the *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.* (1900, 1901, 1902). The same magazine contains much other material about Arnold. Barbé-Marbois studied the treason in his *Complot d'Arnold et de Sir Henry Clinton* (Paris, 1816, reprinted, 1831), which was translated by Robert Walsh in the *Am. Reg.* for 1817, vol. II. James Wilkinson's *Memoirs of My Own Times* (1816) and M. L. Davis's *Memoirs of Aaron Burr* (1855) must be used with caution. Arnold's proclamation *To the Inhabitants of America* (N.Y., 1780) was also printed in the *Royal Gazette* (N.Y., Oct. 11, 1780). Of manuscript material there are the papers found at West Point after Arnold's flight, now in transcript at the Lib. of Cong., the Schuyler and Morgan Papers at the N.Y. Pub. Lib., the Gates Papers at the N.Y. Hist. Soc., and the Papers of the British Headquarters under Sir Henry Clinton, now at the W. L. Clements Lib., University of Michigan.]

R.G.A—s.

ARNOLD, GEORGE (June 24, 1834–Nov. 9, 1865), poet, was born in Bedford St., New York City. Presumably the Rev. George B. Arnold, listed in the city directory of that year as living at No. 119 was his father, but nothing definite is known of his family. From Arnold's third to his fifteenth year his parents lived in Alton, Ill. They then settled at Strawberry Farms, Monmouth County, N. J., near a Fourierite phalanstery, which at the time was in process of dissolution. Arnold was educated at home. His country boyhood made him familiar with aspects of nature which he later turned to account in his serious poetry. Contact with the Fourierites seems to have given him a bent for independent speculation, though he was never in active sympathy with any sect of reformers. In the autumn of 1852 he entered the studio of a portrait painter in New York City, but within two years found his true vocation in literature. His training in painting was not wasted, however, since it enabled him to write art criticism for the press and to illustrate his lighter verse with comic drawings. His caricature of himself in the character of "McArone" is reproduced in the preface to his *Poems* (1886), and another of the sculptor Launt Thompson is included in Ferris Greenslet's *Thomas Bailey Aldrich* (1908). According to William Winter, Arnold was for a short time employed as the sub-editor of a story paper. He soon, however, became a free lance, contributing a large quantity of fluent writing to various newspapers and magazines. He turned out stories, sketches, essays, poems, comic and satirical verse, criticisms of books and paintings, editorial articles, jokes and pointed paragraphs with equal facility. Most of them were published anonymously or under such pseudonyms as "Graham Allen," "George Garrulous," "Pierrot," and "The Undersigned."

His greatest success was attained with a series of papers signed "McArone," begun in *Vanity Fair,* Nov. 24, 1860, continued in the *Leader,* and concluded in the *Weekly Review,* Oct. 14, 1865. The sunny and preposterous absurdity of these burlesques, dealing first with the Italian campaign of 1860, then with the Civil War and miscellaneous topics, delighted the reading public at a time when spontaneous gaiety was at a premium. Arnold's lighter verse, particularly "The Jolly Old Pedagogue," also enjoyed a wide circulation. During the Civil War he served for some time with troops stationed at one of the forts on Governor's Island, N.Y. Early in 1865 his health gave way, and he died at Strawberry Farms on Nov. 9, 1865. A poem by E. C. Stedman commemorates the poet's burial in Greenwood Cemetery.

Arnold was closely associated with the "Bohemians" of Pfaff's beer-cellar, marshaled by Henry Clapp of the *Saturday Press,* and including FitzHugh Ludlow, William Winter, Fitz James O'Brien, and other young writers and artists. Stedman, Aldrich, Whitman, and "Artemus Ward" were occasional visitors at Pfaff's. "Those who met George Arnold," writes Winter, "saw a handsome, merry creature, whose blue eyes sparkled with mirth, whose voice was cheerful, whose manners were buoyant and winning, whose courtesy was free and gay." Among the not always harmonious "Bohemians" he was universally beloved. The Bohemian pose, however, was fatal to one of his easy temper. It encouraged him to take the attitude of a *farceur* and to make no effort to improve his position as an author. He never collected any of his work for book publication and his career from first to last was marked by ineffectiveness.

He contributed a few acting proverbs to Frank Cahill's *Parlor Theatricals* (1859). A comic *Life and Adventures of Jeff. Davis,* by "McArone" appeared in 1865 (chap-book). Two volumes of Arnold's poetry were edited by William Winter: *Drift: a Sea-Shore Idyl and Other Poems* (1866) and *Poems Grave and Gay* (1867). Both together were reissued as *The Poems of George Arnold, Complete Edition* (1886).

[The Memoir and Preface by William Winter in the *Complete Edition* are the chief sources of information. An obituary was published in the *N.Y. Tribune,* Nov. 10, 1865. Other references are W. Winter, *Old Friends* (1909), pp. 52–106, 350; Ferris Greenslet, *Thomas Bailey Aldrich* (1908), p. 38; L. Stedman and G. M. Gould, *Life and Letters of Edmund Clarence Stedman* (1910), I, 365; E. Halloway, *Whitman* (1926), pp. 157, 193.]

G. F. W.

ARNOLD, ISAAC NEWTON (Nov. 30, 1815–Apr. 24, 1884), lawyer, congressman, historian, was born at Hartwick, Otsego County, N.Y. He was the son of Dr. George Washington Arnold and his wife, Sophia M. Arnold, both born in Rhode Island. His grandfather was Thomas Arnold, a soldier of the Revolution. Isaac was educated at local schools. Thrown on his own resources at fifteen he taught school and studied law in the offices of Richard Cooper and Judge E. B. Morehouse at Cooperstown. In 1835 he was admitted to the bar; after a year's practise he came to Chicago in 1836, the year before its incorporation as a city (*Chicago Tribune,* Apr. 24, 1884). Here he formed a law partnership with Mahlon D. Ogden, also a New Yorker, which lasted till 1847 (A. T. Andreas, *History of Chicago,* I, 435–36). His legal practice, both criminal and civil, was large and important. In 1841 he was concerned in the case of Bronson *vs.* Kinzie decided by the United States Supreme Court (1 *Howard,* 311) in accord with his contention that the state stay law (allowing relief from foreclosure if land did not bring two-thirds its appraised value at auction) was unconstitutional (*Illinois State Historical Society Journal,* vol. VII, no. 2, p. 25). As a Democratic politician he opposed repudiation of the state's indebtedness in 1842; he was one of the persons among whom is to be shared the credit for the plan that finally extricated the state from debt. He served in the General Assembly, 1842–45, where he was chairman of the house committee on finance. He was presidential elector for Polk in 1844.

Arnold took an active part in the Free-Soil movement of 1848, going as a delegate to the national and state conventions. He was one of the Chicago committee appointed to draw resolutions of protest against the Fugitive Slave Law in October, 1850 (J. Seymour Currey, *Chicago: Its History and Its Builders,* 1912, I, 415). He was elected to the General Assembly in 1856 as a Republican. In 1860 he was elected to Congress and at once assumed a position of prominence. In December 1861, as chairman of the committee on defense of lakes and rivers, he pressed a measure for enlarging the Illinois and Michigan Canal to permit the passage of warships from the Mississippi to the Lakes. In this connection he was active in securing a National Canal Convention at Chicago in 1863. In January 1865 his measure finally passed the House but failed in the Senate (Arthur C. Cole, *Era of the Civil War,* 1919, pp. 354–56). In his second term he was chairman of the roads and canals committee (*Congressional Globe,* 38 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 18). His record continued to be one of out-spoken hostility to slavery. On Mar. 24, 1862, he introduced a bill to prohibit slavery in every place subject to

national authority, which became a law June 19, 1862 (*Ibid.*, 37 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 1340; App., p. 364). He made an able speech in support of the second confiscation act, May 23, 1862 (*Ibid.*, 37 Cong., 2 Sess., App., p. 182). On Feb. 15, 1864, he moved the amendment abolishing slavery in the United States (*Ibid.*, 38 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 659). He served as auditor of the treasury for the Post Office Department, 1865–66.

As his political career ended, his literary career began. In 1866 he published *The History of Abraham Lincoln and the Overthrow of Slavery.* In 1880 he published a *Life of Benedict Arnold.* At his death in 1884 he was on the point of finishing his *Life of Abraham Lincoln.* This is the best known of his historical works. Although frankly eulogistic, it was for some time the best biography available, and has of course to-day the value of a source. Arnold's literary style was clear, simple, and enjoyable. Compared with the standards of his time, his historical workmanship is generally competent. Arnold was one of the founders of the Chicago Historical Society and had procured its charter when a member of the General Assembly in 1857 (Currey, III, 218). He delivered the address dedicating its building, Nov. 19, 1868, and on Dec. 19, 1876, he was elected its president. A series of papers given by him before the Society has been published by it. He was twice married: first, to Catherine E. Dorrance of Pittsfield, Mass., who died Oct. 30, 1839, leaving one child; and second, to her sister, Harriet Augusta Dorrance, by whom he had nine children.

[In addition to the references given above, something is to be gleaned from Arnold's reminiscent addresses: *Abraham Lincoln,* paper read before the Royal Hist. Soc., London, June 16, 1881 (Chicago, 1881); Addresses before Chi. Hist. Soc., Nov. 19, 1868 (1877); *W. B. Ogden; and Early Days in Chicago,* paper read before Chi. Hist. Soc., Dec. 20, 1881 (1882); *Recollections of the Early Chi. and Ill. Bar,* lecture before Chi. Bar Ass., June 10, 1880; *Reminiscences of Lincoln and of Congress during the Rebellion,* lecture before N.Y. Geneal. and Biog. Soc., Apr. 15, 1882; *The Layman's Faith,* paper read before the Chi. Philosophical Soc., Dec. 10, 1883. The *Memorial Address* by E. B. Washburne for the Chi. Hist. Soc., 1889, has to be used with caution due to Washburne's consistent inaccuracy. There is a good but brief sketch by John M. Palmer, in *The Bench and Bar of Illinois,* 1889, vol. I.] T. C. P.

ARNOLD, JONATHAN (Dec. 3, 1741–Feb. 1, 1793), Revolutionary patriot, was born at Providence, R. I. He was descended from a family of early colonists believed to be of Welsh origin. In the Revolutionary assembly of the colony Arnold became a leading member; the decisive event in the birth of the new state was the statute, May 4, 1776, which repealed the oath of allegiance to England, and the original draft of this law is said to be in Arnold's handwriting. This vital statute has been described as a "solemn, deliberate, desperate act of popular sovereignty," and was followed by Rhode Island's coöperation with the other states.

Arnold's services were not confined to legislation. He had studied medicine, and in 1776 he organized the Revolutionary Hospital of Rhode Island, and was its surgeon 1776–81. During the years 1782–84 he was a delegate from Rhode Island to the Continental Congress. This was the period of the unsuccessful effort to strengthen the Articles of Confederation by laying an impost. Rhode Island was a persistent objector, and Arnold's name occurs frequently in the record of the controversy. More significant was his defense in Congress of the new State of Vermont against the claims of New York and New Hampshire, which led to his future career in the Green Mountain State. It must have been in recognition of Arnold's action, that Gov. Chittenden of Vermont in 1776 granted to him and his associates a large tract of land in Orange County (now included in Caledonia County). Thither he removed in 1787, and became the leading founder of St. Johnsbury. His own portion of the grant was 3,900 acres, and he began the settlement, working personally in the cutting of timber, surveying, and building of roads and bridges. Among his other activities, he was a judge in the court of Orange County, one of the early trustees of the University of Vermont, and one of twelve councilors who in 1791 attended the session of the Vermont General Assembly which voted to accept the Federal Constitution of the United States.

Arnold was distinguished in appearance; "of sanguine temperament, independent mind, and positive opinions"; highly respected, and obviously a natural leader. He died at St. Johnsbury, leaving a record of considerable versatility and of unquestionable value in the development of two states. By a singular coincidence he played a prominent part in the history of the last of the original thirteen to ratify the Constitution, and in that of the first of the new states to enter the Federal Union.

[Samuel G. Arnold, *Hist. of R. I.* (1859–60); Edward T. Fairbanks, *Town of St. Johnsbury, Vt.* (1914).] E. K. A.

ARNOLD, LAUREN BRIGGS (Aug. 14, 1814–Mar. 7, 1888), dairy husbandman, was the eighth child of George and Elizabeth (Grimes) Arnold. He was born in Fairfield, N.Y., where his father came from Rhode Island in 1798 and took a fifty-acre farm. After ending his study in the public school in 1833, Lauren Arnold taught in the winter and did mechanical work in the

summer. With limited opportunities he was bent on getting a college education and continued his study at Fairfield Academy. At the age of twenty-seven he entered Union College in the junior class, graduating in 1843. He planned to be a teacher, but his father persuaded him to take over the farm which he operated for a term of years. Here he became specially interested in dairying and spent the rest of his life in the discovery and teaching of better methods of dairy practise. He studied not only the handling of milk and its products but all that related to its production in the care of dairy stock. To facilitate this study he built a model cheese factory on his farm in 1867 and an excellent dairy laboratory. He published his conclusions in *American Dairying* (1876) which was for some time the leading authority on this subject. Some of his opinions met with strong opposition at the time and further studies have shown errors in them, but in the main his work stands justified by experience and is a contribution of great permanent value to the industry. Specially useful were his improvements in the manufacture of cheese, which were extensively adopted in this country and Canada and also in Scotland. He was active in forming the Little Falls Farmers' Club, one of the first in western New York, which acquired a wide reputation. In the meetings of this club he trained himself to become a ready and fluent speaker. In 1874 his health failed and he moved to a farm of five acres near Rochester, N.Y. He wrote extensively for agricultural papers and his services as a teacher and lecturer were often called for in this country and in Canada. In 1885, by invitation of the British Dairymen's Association, he was a delegate from the United States to a conference in London of delegates from nearly all the countries of Europe. In 1876 he was an expert judge in the dairy section at the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia. He was one of the founders of the Society for the Promotion of Agricultural Science. In 1852 he married Melissa Bishop, who died in 1866. He afterward married Mrs. Elizabeth Woodward, who died about 1881. Two sons survived him.

[*Cultivator and Country Gentleman*, Mar. 15, 1888, p. 214; *Farm Jour.*, May 1888; L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. of Am. Ag.* (1904), IV, 551; *Proc.*, Ninth Ann. Meeting Soc. for the Promotion of Ag. Sci., 1888, p. 11.]

E. H. J.

ARNOLD, LEWIS GOLDING (Jan. 15, 1817–Sept. 22, 1871), Union general, was born in New Jersey and appointed to the Military Academy from that state. Upon his graduation in 1837 he was commissioned in the 2nd Artillery and served with it in the Florida War, in the removal of the Cherokee Nation to the West, and at various northern stations. Accompanying Gen. Scott's army in its campaign against the City of Mexico, he was wounded slightly at the siege of Vera Cruz and severely in storming the bridgehead at Churubusco, and was twice brevetted for gallantry in action. He had further field service against the Seminoles during the hostilities of 1853–56. The beginning of 1861 found him stationed at Fort Independence, in Boston harbor. Just at this time the Washington government showed a flash of spirit, and took measures to hold the southern forts which had not already fallen into secessionist hands. Arnold was sent to Florida to occupy Fort Jefferson, in the Dry Tortugas, which, though commonly referred to in swelling phrases as the Gibraltar of America and the key of the Gulf, was still an unfinished work, ungarrisoned, and with no guns mounted. By tremendous exertions Arnold put it into a state of defense, bringing guns over from Key West, where there was a considerable surplus. As Fort Jefferson was never attacked, its very existence is now generally forgotten; but if the Confederacy had developed a strong navy, or had concluded an alliance with a naval power, the possession of this fortress would have been of high importance to the United States. This should be remembered in estimating the merit of Arnold's achievement. He was promoted to major in May, and in August was transferred to Fort Pickens, which had remained in Unionist hands from the beginning, although the city of Pensacola was held by the enemy. Though a regiment of undisciplined volunteers, largely officered by incompetents, made up the greater part of the garrison, a Confederate raid on Santa Rosa Island, where the fort is situated, was beaten off in October. Arnold was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers, Jan. 24, 1862, and was soon after assigned to the command of the department of Florida. Transferred to New Orleans in October, he drew near to service in the field, but was stricken with apoplexy while reviewing his troops, and on Nov. 10, 1862, was granted sick leave from which he never returned to duty. He was promoted to lieutenant-colonel in the regular army in August 1863, but as it became evident that he was permanently paralyzed he was placed on the retired list, Feb. 8, 1864. Arnold was a cheerful, companionable man, with a strong sense of humor and (as a friend wrote) "a laugh peculiar to himself." He was a strict disciplinarian, but careful and considerate of his men. The high estimate held of him by his superiors suggests that he would have attained distinction in the war if the opportunity had come to him.

[Josiah H. Shinn, "Fort Jefferson and Its Commander," in *Jour. of the Mil. Service Institution*, XLV, 487–97, XLVI, 121–33; G. W. Cullum: *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), I, 669–70; *Official Records*, ser. I, vols. I, VI, XV.]

T.M.S.

ARNOLD, RICHARD (Apr. 12, 1828–Nov. 8, 1882), soldier, born at Providence, R. I., was the son of Sally (Lyman) Arnold and Lemuel Hastings Arnold, governor of Rhode Island, and a descendant of Thomas Arnold who was established in New England by 1635. He entered West Point in 1846, was graduated in 1850, and was commissioned in the artillery. He served with his battery in Florida and California, and was engaged for two years in exploration and road-building in the Northwest. In 1854 he was promoted to first-lieutenant, and the next year was assigned to duty as aide-de-camp to Gen. Wool, with whom he served until his promotion to a captaincy at the beginning of the Civil War. He joined his battery at Washington, and a few days later took it into action at Bull Run, his first battle. Though heavily engaged through the day, the battery was not infected with the general panic. With other troops which preserved their cohesion and discipline, it covered the retreat of the demoralized army, and in doing so was compelled to sacrifice all its guns. "The loss of well-served guns in the defense of a position, or in close support of the other arms, is honorable" (*Drill Regulations for Field Artillery*, 1911, p. 300). Arnold began the Peninsular Campaign, next spring, as chief of artillery in Gen. Franklin's division, and at the very outset was noted for his energy and ability in getting his guns ashore. Through the greater part of the campaign, however, he was not with the artillery, but serving on the staff of the 6th corps, with which he was present at the battles of Savage Station, Glendale, and Malvern Hill. After the withdrawal of the army from the peninsula, illness kept him from the field for some months. He was then selected as chief of artillery of the Department of the Gulf, was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers (Nov. 29, 1862), and departed for New Orleans. His duties in his new position, for a great part of the time, were administrative, but he was in the field during the campaign which ended with the siege and capture of Port Hudson in 1863, and again during the disastrous Red River Expedition in the spring of 1864. In this expedition he was temporarily assigned to duty with the cavalry, and commanded the cavalry division for two months. Immediately afterward he was sent to assist in the siege of Fort Morgan, in Mobile Bay, and with its surrender in August 1864 his field service ended. He was mustered out of the volunteers a year later, and returned to battery duty. Promoted to major in 1875, he served with his regiment for a time, and then on staff duty at Governor's Island, where he died. His promotion to a lieutenant-colonelcy had fallen due only a few days before.

[G. W. Cullum: *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), II, 416–17; *Bull. Ass. Grads. Mil. Acad.* (1883), pp. 52–55; *Official Records*, ser. I, vols. II, XI (pt. 1), XV, XXVI (pt. 1), XXXIV (pts. 1, 2, 3, 4), XLI (pt. 2).]

T.M.S.

ARNOLD, RICHARD DENNIS (Aug. 19, 1808–July 10, 1876), physician, politician, was born in Savannah, Ga., the son of Capt. Joseph Arnold of Rhode Island and Eliza (Dennis) Arnold of New Jersey. After private training in Savannah, he was sent North to complete his education, first at a boarding-school near his mother's home in New Jersey, and later at Princeton College, from which he graduated in 1826. He then went to Philadelphia to take up the study of medicine and graduated with distinction in 1830 from the Medical School of the University of Pennsylvania. From 1830 to 1832 he was resident physician in Blockly Hospital, Philadelphia. In 1832 he returned to Savannah to begin the practise of his profession, and in the same year he was married to Margaret Baugh Stirk.

During the early thirties, while his practise was still relatively small, he became the owner and editor of the Savannah *Georgian*, a Democratic journal, and this position involved him in local and state politics. He soon became a leader of the "Union Democrats" of lower Georgia, taking a strong stand in his paper against the nullification movement of 1833. In 1839 he represented Chatham County in the House of Representatives at Milledgeville, and in 1842 was elected to the state Senate. He held many municipal offices, being four times elected mayor and serving at various times as city health officer, chairman of the board of aldermen, and chairman of the board of education. Because of his professional duties he consistently refused to enter the broader field of national politics. He did serve, however, as a delegate to several national Democratic conventions and maintained personal contacts with many national party leaders. He supported the secession movement in 1860, as a last resort against northern aggression. As mayor of Savannah he surrendered that city to Gen. Sherman in December 1864, and immediately took an open stand for peace, in order to prevent further unnecessary bloodshed. He became one of the "peace party" leaders of the state, and in the spring of 1865 led a delegation to Washington to request of President Johnson the establishment of a provisional government for Georgia.

Meanwhile, however, Arnold's professional interests always received his first consideration—he himself regarding his political activities as "mere episodes, not to be followed out." He carried on a large personal practise, was a contributor to medical journals, and an active worker in all fields of interest to his profession. His chief scientific studies related to the yellow and "bilious" fevers, and he rendered especially heroic service to Savannah in the terrible yellow-fever epidemic of 1854. He was one of the directors of the municipal hospital and served for fifteen years as president of the local medical society. With several other physicians he established in the forties the Savannah Medical College, in which he was professor of theory and practise for some twenty years, during which time he strove earnestly against a tendency to lower the standards of medical education. In 1846 he helped to found the American Medical Association, of which he became the first secretary, and in which he was also a member of the first committee on professional ethics. In 1851 he was elected vice-president of the Association. In the same year he helped to organize and himself wrote the constitution of the Medical Association of Georgia. In his personal life he displayed great devotion to his immediate family and never entirely recovered from the loss of his beloved wife in 1850. He died in Savannah, in the same room in which he was born.

Arnold was tall but far from handsome, popular in society, something of a *bon vivant*, and a connoisseur of old wines. He was widely read, rationalistic in his religious thinking, and a member of a small Unitarian group in Savannah,—an unusual type of person in the South of his day. Personally unselfish, he suffered several severe financial losses as a result of a too generous confidence in his associates,—as he himself put it, he "was always a fool in money matters."

[Sketch in *Trans. Am. Medic. Ass.*, XXIX, 615–18; Charles C. Jones, O. F. Vedder, and Frank Weldon, *Hist. of Savannah* (1890), pp. 439–41; Adelaide Wilson, *Historic and Picturesque Savannah* (1889), pp. 128, 153, 158; *Savannah Morning News*, July 11, 12, 1876.]

R.H.S.

ARNOLD, SAMUEL (*c.* 1838–1906). [See Booth, John Wilkes.]

ARNOLD, SAMUEL GREENE (Apr. 12, 1821–Feb. 13, 1880), historian, was born in Providence, R. I., at the corner of South Main and Planet Sts., in the house said to have been the rendezvous of the patriots who burned the *Gaspée*. He was the son of Samuel Greene Arnold and Frances (Rogers) Arnold, and was descended from Thomas Arnold, one of the earliest settlers of Providence. The family's wealth, his father and grandfather both being prominent Rhode Island merchants, permitted him to enjoy the advantages offered by private tutors, private schools in Providence, and Dr. Muhlenberg's school at Flushing, N. Y. Although ill health prevented his remaining at Brown University, which he entered in 1836, a trip to Europe, in company with the Rev. Dr. Hague, contributed to his education until he was able to return to the completion of his college course, which he finished in 1841. Following a short period spent in the counting-house of James T. Rhodes, he visited St. Petersburg, Russia. Thence he returned to Harvard Law School, secured the degree of LL.B. in 1845, and was admitted to the Rhode Island bar. A gentleman of wealth and leisure, he spent a great deal of his time in travel, including Europe, the North Cape, Egypt, Syria, and South America. In England and France he examined and copied records and state papers relative to Colonial history, having already planned, while in law school, to write the history of Rhode Island. This work, entitled *History of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation* (1859), while written in a heavy style, was scholarly and thorough.

Arnold's services to his state included three terms as lieutenant-governor, the last interrupted, however, by his selection as senator to complete an unexpired term. Although an ardent champion of freedom and union, he went as a delegate to the Peace Conference of 1861. The attempt at compromise having failed, he served throughout the war as aide-de-camp to Gov. Sprague with the rank of colonel, commanding a battery of light artillery. Always interested in public charities, he acted as trustee for the state reform school and for Butler Hospital, and contributed largely to the Charitable Baptist Society, of which he was president. His later years, mainly devoted to historical research and writing, were spent in his home, "Lazy Lawn," at Middletown, R. I. His historical addresses, read upon various commemorative occasions and before the Rhode Island Historical Society, which he served also as president, were of conspicuous merit, especially his *Memorial Papers on A. C. Greene, William Staples, and Usher Parsons*. Other works worthy of note were his *Historical Sketch of Middletown* (1880), and the centennial addresses on Providence and on the First Baptist Meeting House.

[Sketch by Edwin M. Stone in *R. I. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, 1879–80, pp. 93–96; see also *Biog. Cyc. of R. I.*, and *Providence Daily Jour.*, Feb. 16, 17, 1880. Arnold's photograph, many of his literary contributions, his autograph, and the many memorials published at his death, are in the Rider and Church Colls. of the John Hay Lib. in Brown Univ.]

H.F.K.

ARRINGTON, ALFRED W. (Sept. 17, 1810–Dec. 31, 1867), lawyer, poet, was third in the line of descent from Maj. Arrington, an ex-British army officer, who had purchased a large estate in North Carolina and whose descendants continued to be associated with that state for many years. His father, H. Archibald Arrington, a Methodist minister, married Miss Moore, a lady of Highland Scotch origin. Alfred Arrington was born in Iredell Co., N. C. He received a good education, and absorbed while still young an extraordinary amount of miscellaneous knowledge. In 1819 he accompanied his father to Arkansas, then almost a wilderness, and in 1828 became an itinerant Methodist preacher. Possessing a natural gift of eloquence, he met with great success. For five years he traveled, preaching through Arkansas, Indiana, and Missouri, but being assailed with doubts as to the truths of religion, he abandoned the ministry in 1834 and commenced to study law. He was admitted to the Missouri bar in 1835, but moved to Arkansas, where he acquired a flourishing practise, and was elected a member of the state legislature. He had no interest in politics, however, and on completion of his term went to Texas. In 1847 he visited the East, and, using the pseudonym "Charles Summerfield," published *The Desperadoes of the South West,* an eloquently written but lurid picture of lynch law drawn from personal experience. He remained in Boston and New York for two years, contributing *Sketches of the South and South West* to the newspapers and writing *The Mathematical Harmonies of the Universe,* a somewhat abstruse essay which was translated into French and German. Returning to Texas in 1849, he was elected judge of the 12th (Rio Grande) judicial district of that state in 1850. This position he retained for five years, but the climate commenced to affect his health and he was compelled to resign in 1856. He moved to New York, engaged in literary work, and published *The Rangers and Regulators of the Tanaha* (1856), again using the pseudonym "Charles Summerfield." This novel, in which he essayed to give a picture of the transition stage of Southwestern life, was somewhat heavy in style and sentiment, occasionally relieved by brilliance of language. In 1857 he went to the Northwest, settled in Chicago, and there resumed the practise of law. His ornate oratory appealed to Western audiences and juries, whilst his thorough knowledge of law and innate dialectical skill enabled him to achieve outstanding success before the appellate tribunals, particularly in constitutional cases. "Although sometimes eccentric, his briefs were models and his arguments cogent" (John M. Parker, *The Bench and Bar of Illinois,* 1899, II, 162). He died in Chicago, having shortly before abandoned his skepticism and been received into the Catholic faith. During his later years, as a relaxation from professional work and with no idea of publication, he had composed a number of poems, and these were collected and published after his death under the title, *Poems by Alfred W. Arrington* (1869). Of brilliant ability and altogether exceptional powers of oratory, he was a disappointment as far as actual attainment was concerned. The greater part of his life was passed upon the frontier. He disliked the restraints of society and lived, as far as an active professional career would permit, a solitary life, and the instability of purpose which distinguished him up to middle age was an effective obstacle to his attainment of definite eminence in either literature or law.

[The chief authority for the incidents of his career is the memoir written by his wife and prefixed to the posthumous edition of his *Poems.* This work also contains a somewhat labored estimate of his character as a lawyer and poet by C. C. Bonney; see also Usher F. Linden, *Reminiscences of the Early Bench and Bar of Ill.*(1879), p. 234, and J. M. Wilson, *Memorial to Alfred W. Arrington* (1869).]

H.W.H.K.

ARTHUR, CHESTER ALAN (Oct. 5, 1830–Nov. 18, 1886), President of the United States, was born at Fairfield, Franklin County, Vt., the oldest son among the seven children of Rev. William Arthur [*q.v.*] of Ballymena, County Antrim, Ireland, a Scotch-Irish Baptist clergyman. After his succession to the presidency, an unfriendly writer, A. P. Hinman, went to much pains in compiling a little book, *How a British Subject Became President of the United States* (1884). The argument of Hinman was that the clerical father, who practised variously as parson and teacher and who had married a Vermont girl, Malvina Stone, was in the habit of taking positions indifferently on either side of the Vermont-Canadian boundary. Hinman alleged that the oldest son of William and Malvina Arthur was born in Canada in 1828; and that a second son, who died in infancy, was born in Fairfield, Vt., in 1830. He further alleged that Chester A. Arthur, who was the elder son, and hence a Canadian by birth, had appropriated the birthday of his younger brother; and that the appropriation took place definitely after the nomination of Arthur for the office of Vice-President in 1880, when he made a secret trip to Canada to make sure that no conflicting public records were there to disprove his story. No opinion appears to have been affected by this attack; and Chauncey M. Depew, who ought to have known of it, declared in 1927 that he had never even heard of it.

Young Arthur attended Union College at Schenectady, N. Y., where he was graduated in 1848. He taught school and studied law, and was a successful practitioner in New York City before the opening of the Civil War. He had meanwhile married in 1859 Ellen Lewis Herndon (1837–80), daughter of an officer of the U. S. Navy. Arthur had no record of service with troops during the Civil War, but he performed administrative duties that were rated highly. An active Republican from the organization of the party, he was closely associated with the war governor of New York, Edwin D. Morgan, and held by appointment of the latter the posts of engineer-in-chief, inspector-general, and quartermaster-general of the State of New York. In the last capacity he had to carry heavy burdens that called for administrative skill and honesty. The volunteers for the army of the United States enlisted locally, and the states were called upon to receive and equip them in the first instance. Later they were turned over to the United States, and eventually the states were reimbursed for their outlay for clothing and maintenance. The largest single group of volunteers came from New York, and Arthur as quartermaster-general was called upon to organize and administer an extensive service. With this done, he turned over to his Democratic successor in 1863 a running department; and retired to private life with a detailed knowledge of personal and political matters affecting his whole state. He did not share in the attack upon and exposure of the Tweed ring, but held for a time an office created by it. In November 1871 President Grant recognized his importance as a working part of the Republican organization by making him collector of the Port of New York, where for seven years he was responsible for the honest handling of most of the customs revenue of the United States, and for the political utilization of above 1,000 employees who by long precedent had been the effective units of the Republican organization of the city and state.

It was Arthur's misfortune to have been trained in a school of practical politics that came under fire as American standards changed between 1869 and 1883. No trace of scandal attached itself to his private life or his capacity as a public servant. But he believed and practised, with his contemporaries, the theory that underlay the spoils system. The New York Custom House was honestly run, but it was over-staffed with clerks and laborers who recognized the obligation upon them to attend party caucuses and conventions, and to get out the vote upon election days; and who thought it no sin to slack on the government job from which they derived their pay. Arthur

was incapable of poor administration; during his incumbency the turnover of employees for political reasons was lessened far below its average of the preceding decade; and yet he, like his predecessors, viewed the Custom House as a branch of the New York political machine whose leader was Senator Roscoe Conkling. Its virtues as a political establishment, however, suddenly became a liability when in 1876 the Republican party nominated and seated in the presidency Gov. Rutherford B. Hayes of Ohio, who knew neither Conkling nor the professional Republican politicians, and whose mind and heart were filled with desires for a merit system in the conduct of the Government of the United States. John Sherman, who became secretary of the treasury, and thereby Arthur's chief, was under no impulse to uphold the power of the Conkling crowd, and was genuinely interested in removing some of the worst results of politics from the Federal civil service. An investigation of the New York Custom House was undertaken early in the new administration; and in June the tenor of the régime was indicated by Hayes's executive order directing civil servants to refrain from participation in the management of parties and campaigns. Alonzo B. Cornell, Naval Officer of the Port of New York, and Arthur's associate there, was also state chairman of the Republican organization. He resigned neither post. Senator Conkling, who was abroad on vacation, hurried home to help Cornell and Arthur fight the President and defend their party machine. And in the Republican state convention, held in September 1877, open defiance to the program of Hayes was declared.

Hayes met the opposition firmly. The commission investigating the Custom House reported its over-supply of help, and its political activity. The President accordingly nominated to the Senate in November a set of new officers for the Custom House. He was restrained from removing Arthur and Cornell out of hand by the Tenure of Office Act (1867) that Congress had enacted to hobble Andrew Johnson. Conkling succeeded in defeating the confirmation of the new appointees on Dec. 12, 1877. Hayes was forced to accept the fact of defeat, but he did not yield to it. Immediately upon the adjournment of Congress in the following July he exercised his legal right to suspend Arthur and Cornell, and to appoint substitutes to act until the Senate should have had a chance to reject or confirm them. The next session of the Senate overrode Conkling's pleas for senatorial courtesy, and permitted Hayes to fill the Custom House places with men of his own choice. Arthur and Cornell became martyrs to their political devotion. New York as a state supported

Conkling's contention that the New York jobs were perquisites of the New York senators; it elected Cornell to the governorship and reëlected Conkling to the Senate in 1879; and two years later elected as Conkling's junior associate in the Senate his political lieutenant, Thomas Collier Platt.

At the Republican National Convention in 1880 the New York group of "stalwarts" labored long and firmly for the renomination of Gen. U. S. Grant. Defeated in this, they at least made impossible the nomination of any of Grant's avowed rivals; although Garfield, the winner, came from the "half-breed" faction which had originally been divided in the convention between Blaine and Sherman. To sweeten the dose of defeat for the followers of Gen. Grant, Arthur was nominated as vice-president. So far from being placated by the recognition accorded him in the person of the martyr of the Custom House, Conkling remained lukewarm through the canvass of 1880, and gave only a grudging support to the ticket of Garfield and Arthur, which was none the less installed at Washington, Mar. 4, 1881. In three weeks the battle of the patronage was on again, as Garfield tried to make nominations to the same Custom House posts to please himself, while Conkling used every effort to maintain his privilege to dictate appointments within his state. He now had Platt in the Senate to help him; and Arthur in the chair of the vice-president. The latter was much in the chair,—so much that he did not vacate it during the short Senate session in March 1881, nor give an opportunity for the Republican majority of one to elect a president *pro tempore*. On May 14, 1881, Conkling resigned his seat in the Senate, and appealed to the legislature of his state against the claim of the President to the right to appoint. Platt, hardly settled in his seat, resigned as well, gaining thereby the nickname "me too" as he followed his chief to the test of strength. He followed him as well to private life, for in spite of the fact that Vice-President Arthur accompanied Conkling and Platt to Albany and worked for their vindication and reelection, the legislature filled their places with other men. While the contest was on, Garfield was murdered by a crazy office-seeker, who further muddied the political situation by declaring noisily that he was a "stalwart" and had committed the murder in order to make Arthur President. Garfield lingered between life and death from July 2 until Sept. 19, when Arthur took over the powers and duties of the presidency, burdened by the scandal of Garfield's assassination, and by the wide belief that he was only a spoilsman and machine politician.

Arthur

The presidential administration of Arthur was dignified, honorable, and as intelligently constructive as the even division of politics would permit. He looked the part of President, as few have done. Six feet two in height, well-proportioned and heavily built, with the shaven chin and side whiskers that his generation affected, he carried himself with constant dignity. He dressed with scrupulous care, and at times had the newly imported epithet of "dude" hurled against him. He was also, said the *World* (June 9, 1880), "one of the best salmon fishers in the country." His wife having died during the preceding year, the White House was directed for him by a sister, Mrs. John E. McElroy. For the first time since the Civil War it became the center of generous and stately hospitality. Those who had expected that the Custom House crowd would make the White House a loafing-place were happily deceived; while, as the months wore on, the members of the old organization came to feel themselves betrayed. They could not understand why Arthur did not bring into the national government the spoils system of his earlier political experience. When, instead of this, he gave immediate support to a proposed reform of the civil service, and consistent backing to the bill that was passed in 1883, they were at first bewildered and then indignant.

It was not an easy administration to direct. Arthur reconstructed the cabinet during the winter of 1881–82, but his personal appointees did not act as partisans in office. In neither house of Congress was there a good working Republican majority, and, in fact, after the election of 1882 the Democrats controlled the House of Representatives, electing John G. Carlisle, a Kentucky tariff reformer, as speaker. The most pressing questions had to do with the large and embarrassing surplus revenue in the national treasury, the rising interest in tariff reform, the movement for civil service reform which was much accentuated by the death of Garfield, and the pending prosecutions of the Star Route thieves, the willingness of Congress to spend lavishly upon local improvements, the control of immigration, and the rebuilding of the American navy. The surplus in the treasury was the product of the high tariff that had hung over from the Civil War, and the swollen importations that had come when financial stability and resumption of specie payments arrived in 1877. This surplus, for the four fiscal years 1879–82, averaged over eighty millions a year. Even before the resumption of specie payments a movement for tariff reform, based upon the idea of free trade, had made its appearance. The Democratic party, generally disposed to at-

tack the protective tariff, made the existence of a large surplus a ground of special grievance. A tariff commission was created early in 1882, to report in December upon a reduction of revenue without changing the fundamental theory of the tariff. By the date of its report the elections of 1882 had shown a popular swing toward the Democratic party, and the need for a genuine revision became great, if only for party reasons. But the lobbies of the protected interests were so effective that the tariff act of 1883 accomplished little in the way of drawing off Democratic fire; and the issue ripened for the campaign of 1884.

The Star Route frauds, hinted at while Hayes was president, were uncovered before the death of Garfield; and the latter had dismissed from the service of the United States the post office official within whose jurisdiction they had been committed. They involved a complicated plot to juggle the mail contracts upon the horse-drawn mail routes (known in post-office language as the "Star Routes") and to readjust the tables of compensation so that the corrupt contractors might receive unwarranted profits. A ring of contractors was uncovered; showing that great numbers of the contracts were let to political bidders who subsequently sublet the actual carriage of the mails while dividing among themselves the illicit profits. The secretary of the Republican national committee, an ex-senator named Dorsey, was implicated in the prosecutions, and since he had in 1880 hurried to Indiana in the closing days of the campaign to carry that state for Garfield and Arthur it was easy to make it appear that the Republican victory of that year had been aided by successful corruption. A banquet had been given Dorsey (*New York Herald*, Feb. 12, 1881), with Gen. Grant in the chair, and with Vice-President-elect Arthur there to raise a smile about the secret means by which Dorsey carried Indiana. The men under suspicion defended themselves not only in their trials but before public opinion. They threatened, if prosecuted, to carry down with them the reputation of Garfield and to show who were the beneficiaries of their work. The trials were continued under Arthur, with vigor but without effective convictions. The criminals escaped, but attention was drawn to the scandalous condition of the civil service and of the national government in which frauds could occur. Arthur's earnestness in the prosecutions and in reform was enough to lose him his former followers, but failed to secure for him the support of the leaders of the reform movement. By 1882, in New York, he was offering for governor his secretary of the treasury, Charles J. Folger, and fighting his old associate, Alonzo B. Cornell, who still had the backing of the Conkling machine. Cornell gained the Republican nomination, but was defeated for election by the Democratic candidate, Grover Cleveland of Buffalo.

In other matters of administration, Arthur showed independence and conscience. He vetoed a Chinese exclusion bill that ran counter to an existing treaty agreement with China. He vetoed also a river and harbor appropriation bill in 1882 because of its wasteful allotment of public funds for improper local purposes. This was passed over his veto by a Congress impatient with reform, and lessened Arthur's hold upon the professional political group. In non-contentious matters, he gave his approval to the early laws by which the first steps were taken for the building of a modern American navy to supersede the obsolete navy of Civil War construction.

The natural desire to succeed himself and to receive from his party and the people a vote of approval for his course led Arthur to hope that he might gain the Republican nomination for president in 1884. Lacking the enthusiastic support of the reform element, which turned finally to Senator Edmunds of Vermont, or any support from the Blaine element, which was able to dominate the convention, his candidacy never progressed beyond its early and hopeful stages. He was later accused, unjustly it seems, of working against the party ticket in the canvass. He left office with the respect if not the affection of the people, and died early in the administration of his successor.

[There are no good materials for a biog. of Arthur. A few unimportant papers are in the Lib. of Cong., but most of his correspondence is supposed to have been destroyed. Autograph collectors have found it hard to discover his holograph letters. The tendency of the historians, in gen. works, has been to treat him better than his contemporaries did. A friendly eulogy is William E. Chandler's *Address on the Occasion of the Completion . . . of a Monument and Tablet to Mark the Birthplace of President Chester A. Arthur* (Concord, N. H., 1903). The reports of the Custom House investigation are in *House Ex. Doc. 8*, 45 Cong., 1 Sess., and *House Ex. Doc. 25*, 45 Cong., 2 Sess.] F. L. P—n.

ARTHUR, PETER M. (1831–July 17, 1903), labor leader, arrived in America from Paisley, Scotland, in 1842 at the age of eleven years. His boyhood was passed on an uncle's farm in New York, where he received only a meager common school education. He began independent work on a farm at six dollars a month. Later he bought a horse and went into the carting business in Schenectady, but this proved hardly more lucrative. At eighteen he secured work as an engine wiper with the New York Central Railroad and was soon promoted to locomotive engineer. His family name was Peter McArthur, but through an error it was entered on the pay-roll as Peter

M. Arthur and so it remained. As an engineer he became active in his union, held local offices, and was delegate to several national conventions. He was associated with the Brotherhood of Locomotive Engineers from its inception in 1863. In 1874 he was elected Grand Chief of the order, an office he held continuously until his death. He built up the Brotherhood into one of the strongest and most conservative of labor unions. It always maintained independence of other unions and selected its own policies, at the same time establishing cordial relations with others. Consequently, among Arthur's critics were the more radical leaders who accused him of playing into the hands of his employers and "capitalists" generally; and the officials of the American Federation of Labor, who said that his "chief mistake consisted in his policy of isolation from the general labor movement" (*American Federationist,* Sept. 1903, p. 840). At the time of his taking office the Brotherhood had been little more than a benevolent and insurance society. Arthur made it an aggressive agent for collective bargaining. In general he declared against strikes; but there were strikes and successful ones. In every case he had to be convinced that a strike was necessary. Consequently he went into a strike with the full support of his followers. No unsuccessful strikes are attributed to him. He was known, therefore, as "an able organizer and a formidable fighter." An associate editor of *The Labor Movement: The Problem of Today* (1887), prepared under the editorship of George E. McNeill, he contributed to the volume an article entitled "The Rise of Railroad Organization." Through real-estate speculations in the city of Cleveland he acquired a comfortable fortune in his later years. His death came suddenly. At a district convention in Winnipeg he was responding to the presentation of a floral tribute when he was stricken with heart failure and died in the middle of a sentence.

[*Lit. Digest,* Aug. 1, 1903, p. 127; *Outlook,* July 25, 1903, p. 725; *Independent,* July 23, 1903, p. 1710; *Locomotive Engineers Mo. Jour.,* Aug. 1903, pp. 568–72, Sept. 1903, p. 630.]

G. G. G.

ARTHUR, TIMOTHY SHAY (June 6, 1809–Mar. 6, 1885), editor and author, the grandson of Timothy Shay, a Revolutionary officer, was born on a farm near Newburgh, Orange County, N. Y. The family was large and his parents' means limited. While he was an infant they removed to the vicinity of West Point, and his first recollections were of Fort Montgomery on the Hudson. In 1817 occurred another removal, this time to Baltimore. The boy was placed in the public schools, but proved exceedingly dull and slow, requiring several months to master the principle of simple addition. Upon his teacher's advice, he was taken from school and apprenticed to a watchmaker. Except for a brief attendance at night school his formal tuition now ceased, but he became an omnivorous reader. Before completing his apprenticeship, the combination of bench work and night reading so injured his sight that he never entered his trade. A friend obtained him light employment as a clerk in a Baltimore counting-room, and his ample leisure he employed in scribbling verse and sketches. Meanwhile, he had joined the first temperance society in Maryland, and, though not himself a teetotaler, had become a convinced enemy of saloons. In 1833 seeking to improve his income, he went west as agent for a Baltimore bank, but was recalled by its failure. By now he had begun to find that writing was a vocation rather than an avocation. Baltimore was the seat at that time of two distinct literary groups. One, the older, was led by John P. Kennedy, William Gwynn, and Lambert A. Wilmer. The younger group included Arthur, Dr. Nathan C. Brooks, Rufus Dawes, and W. H. Carpenter. Both groups had contacts with Edgar Allan Poe, who was in Baltimore 1831–35. Arthur therefore did not lack encouragement and advice in his early literary efforts (Hervey Allen, *Israfel: The Life and Times of Edgar Allan Poe,* 1926, I, 353). After his return from the West he became editor of the short-lived *Baltimore Athenæum.* We then hear of him as having editorial charge of a succession of ephemeral literary enterprises. He followed Poe's friend John H. Hewitt as editor of the *Baltimore Saturday Visitor;* later (1838–39) he was associated with Carpenter and J. N. McJilton in editing the *Baltimore Book* and the *Baltimore Literary Magazine;* in 1840 Duff Green placed him in charge of the *Baltimore Merchant,* a Harrison campaign daily.

Arthur's contributions to *Godey's Lady's Book* had begun in the late thirties, and he had found a ready market in it and other magazines for domestic tales of a moralizing tendency. Leaving Baltimore in 1841, he went to Philadelphia and began pouring tales, essays, and verse into *Godey's, Graham's Magazine,* the *Saturday Courier,* and the newspapers. He was now fully enlisted in the rising temperance movement, and his first book of importance (1842) was *Six Nights with the Washingtonians: A Series of Original Temperance Tales.* In 1845 he ventured to establish a monthly literary magazine called *Arthur's Ladies' Magazine,* which by the standards of the time had some genuine merit, but failed to attain a large circulation, and was soon abandoned. His pen had meanwhile never

stopped. In 1845 he brought out *Married and Single: or Marriage and Celibacy Contrasted,* a story to prove that celibacy is "opposed to every law of God and Man," and results in misery. In 1847 appeared *The Lady at Home,* and in 1848 *The Maiden,* the latter a novelette demonstrating that girls may pay a fearful price if they do not investigate carefully the moral antecedents of the men they marry. His ambitions in the magazine world remained strong, and in 1850 he began the publication of a weekly, devoted half to fashion and half to letters, called *Arthur's Home Gazette.* It achieved a warm public favor; in 1853 it became a monthly, *Arthur's Home Magazine,* and Arthur was still editing it at his death. Just after the Civil War (1867) he began the publication of the *Children's Hour,* an illustrated juvenile periodical which also attained a high circulation. Arthur was considered to have a marked talent for juvenile tales. From time to time he embarked upon other magazine enterprises. Thus he attempted in 1869 an eclectic review, *Once A Month,* modeled after *Littell's Living Age,* which lasted only a year. He at once followed it by *The Workingman,* a monthly journal for farmers and mechanics, which was intended to give these readers moral tales and instructive articles as a substitute for such "sensation" magazines as *Bonner's New York Ladder.* It gained a following, but Arthur shortly sold it. Such business ventures did not check the steady flow of didactic books, some of them astonishingly popular, from his pen. By 1875 there was a list of some seventy titles. *Pride and Prudence, or The Married Sisters,* in 1850, employed his favorite device of contrast. So did *Sparing to Spend; or, The Loftons and Pinkertons* (1853). These were tracts against extravagance, vanity, worldliness, and disregard of the precepts of religion. In *The Wedding Guest: A Friend of the Bride and Bridegroom,* he presented another anticipation of the Laura Jean Libbey school of sugared advice upon matters of domestic felicity. The flow of temperance stories was constant, and he edited such collections as *The Crystal Fount, For All Seasons* (1850), two volumes of tales and verse. But his greatest success was achieved in 1854 with *Ten Nights in a Barroom and What I Saw There.*

This volume at once leaped to an enormous circulation. Its sale in the fifties was second only to that of *Uncle Tom's Cabin.* Like Mrs. Stowe's book it was dramatized and played throughout much of the country with great success; indeed, it is still sold and played. It satisfied the appetite for the sensational and lurid, and yet was endorsed by all the clergy. Dealing with a once-happy village, it narrated the sad ruin wrought by the

Arthur

"Sickle and Sheaf," Simon Slade's tavern. Its characters included the drunkard, Joe Morgan; his noble wife, Fanny, and angelic little daughter Mary; Gambler Green, who met a dark and terrible death; Judge Hammond, wrecked by drink; and Frank Slade, who in a drunken passion killed his father. Few Sunday-school libraries were considered complete without a copy. It was supplemented in 1872 with *Three Years in a Mantrap,* which describes the evils of drink in a great city. The beginnings of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union crusade brought forth *Woman to the Rescue* (1874), a characteristic story of saloons closed by praying church-workers. Among Arthur's later publications in this field were *Strong Drink: The Cause and the Cure,* the first part of which was fiction and the second part a sketchy history of the temperance movement; and *The Strike at Tivoli Mills* (1879), a product of the industrial upheaval of 1877, which traced the workingman's chief miseries to drink. Arthur's other books covered a wide range, from such didactic works as *The Old Man's Bride; or, The Lesson of the Day,* to the "cabinet histories" of various states which he and W. H. Carpenter hastily compiled from obvious sources and published between 1850 and 1856. In *Cast Adrift* (1873) he included an attack upon the continuance of the lottery evil in American cities. From first to last he was an advocate of temperance by education rather than temperance by prohibitory legislation, and he did not support coercive enactments upon the subject. But for thirty years following 1840 his influence in the movement against liquor was powerful, and he accomplished quite as much with his pen as men like John B. Gough did from the platform.

At Arthur's death in Philadelphia he was still actively engaged in writing and editing. He had married, in 1836, Ellen Alden, a daughter of Capt. James Alden of Portland, Me., and a sister of Rear Admiral James Alden of the United States Navy. To them were born five sons and two daughters, of whom four sons and one daughter survived their father. The death in 1862 of the older daughter had been a sorely felt affliction. Arthur was a leading member of the Swedenborgian Church of Philadelphia. At times he occupied minor civic positions, being a member of the executive committee of the Centennial Exhibition in 1876. But his title to remembrance rests upon his temperance fiction, and above all upon his *Ten Nights in a Barroom.*

[The above is based largely on family information. Arthur prefaced a "brief autobiography" to his *Lights and Shadows of Real Life* (1867). A pamphlet sketch, *T. S. Arthur, His Life and Work, by One Who Knows Him,* was published in 1873. There are short sketches in

Scharf and Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1888), II, 1157–58, and in E. P. Oberholtzer, *Lit. Hist. of Phila.* (1906), p. 233. The best obituary appeared in the *Phila. Public Ledger*, Mar. 7, 1885. An etched portr. of Arthur is published in Hervey Allen's *Israfel* (1926), I, 353.]

A. N.

ARTHUR, WILLIAM (Dec. 5, 1797–Oct. 27, 1875), Baptist clergyman, antiquarian, was born at "The Draen" near Ballymena, County Antrim, Ireland, the only son of Alan and Eliza McHarg Arthur. After a thorough preliminary training, he entered Queen's College, Belfast, and was graduated from that institution at the early age of eighteen. Deciding to seek a career in the United States, he sailed from Liverpool to New York, and from there went to Vermont, where he attempted to earn a living by teaching school, at the same time studying law in the office of Cornelius P. Van Ness at Burlington. He soon resolved, however, to prepare himself for the ministry and began preaching in various Baptist churches. On Apr. 12, 1821, he married Malvina Stone, by whom he had seven children, of whom the second, Chester Alan Arthur [*q.v.*], future President of the United States, was born at Fairfield, Vt. Family tradition interestingly pictures William Arthur's early efforts as a Baptist preacher in this town. He at first preached in the district school-house, but his ability and eloquence soon led to a change because the building was too small to hold the crowds that gathered to hear him. A spacious barn in the neighborhood was secured, and here the young Irishman preached to a congregation seated on slabs placed on the barn floor, while the deacons and older men sat in the stalls for the horses and cattle, and the young people were grouped on the edges of the haymows above. Arthur continued to preach in various Vermont churches—Burlington, Jericho, Williston, Richford, Pownal, Waterville, and Hinesburgh—until 1835, when he removed to New York. Here he labored in the ministry successively at York, Perry, Greenwich, Schenectady, Lansingburgh, Hoosic, West Troy, and Albany. In the last city, he was pastor of the State Street Baptist Church from 1855 to 1864, when he retired, to reside at Newtonville, N. Y., and to devote the remainder of his life chiefly to literary pursuits. Here he died on Oct. 27, 1875.

Arthur was a student of the classics, especially of antiquities. When living in Schenectady he began the publication of a magazine with the lengthy title of *The Antiquarian, and General Review: comprising Whatever is Useful and Instructive in Ecclesiastical or Historical Antiquities; Serving as a Book of Useful Reference, on Subjects of Research and Curiosity.* This work he edited through four volumes, the last two being published at Lansingburgh. It contained articles quoted from historical and antiquarian reviews, accounts of recent discoveries, and some original contributions of merit, especially those written by himself on Irish antiquities and on the derivation of proper names. In 1857 he published *An Etymological Dictionary of Family and Christian Names, with an Essay on their Derivation and Import,* a scholarly work much in advance of anything written on the subject up to that time.

[The main source for his biog. is the excellent obituary in the *Albany Evening Jour.*, Oct. 29, 1875. The various Vermont and New York county histories have brief references to his pastorates, and the biogs. of his noted son, President Arthur, contain material regarding the father.]

C. S. B.

ASBOTH, ALEXANDER SANDOR (Dec. 18, 1811–Jan. 21, 1868), Union soldier, was born in Keszthely in the county of Zala, Hungary. He served in the Austrian army, and was engaged later in engineering and in the law. In the great Hungarian insurrection of 1848–49 he fought under Kossuth, shared with him his exile and internment, and accompanied him to the United States. Like many other central European revolutionary exiles, he became an American citizen, and at the beginning of the Civil War he was appointed an officer by reason of his military experience. In the autumn of 1861 he was on the staff of Gen. Frémont, and in the following winter he commanded a division under Gen. Curtis in the campaign along the borders of Missouri and Arkansas. He was wounded at the battle of Pea Ridge, March 1862, and despite his wound was in action the next day at the head of his division (*Battles and Leaders,* II, 328). The same month he was commissioned brigadier-general of volunteers. After this he was in command at Columbus, Ky., and at Fort Pickens, Fla. At Marianna in Florida in 1864 he was severely wounded in the arm and in the cheek-bone, and from the effects of these wounds he never recovered. He left the army, with the brevet of major-general, in 1865, and was appointed United States minister to Uruguay and Argentina, dying at Buenos Ayres not long after his arrival.

[M. Force, *From Fort Henry to Corinth* (1861); *Appleton's Annual Cyc.* (1868); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1903).]

E. K. A.

ASBURY, FRANCIS (Aug. 20/21, 1745–Mar. 31, 1816), pioneer Methodist preacher and bishop, was born on the edge of the colliery district, near the foot of Hamstead Bridge four miles from Birmingham, England. His parents, Joseph Asbury and Elizabeth Rogers, were in humble circumstances. The father was a tenant-farmer,

or gardener for two well-to-do families in the parish—a hard-working yeoman; the mother was of Welsh stock with much of the traditional emotional susceptibility of the race. It was the mother who left the greater impress upon the son. The death of an infant daughter had plunged her into the deepest melancholy for several years, until "God was pleased to open the eyes of her mind." Hitherto a worldly woman, she now turned for consolation to religion, seeking the company of religious people, attending services, and poring for hours over devotional books. Her house became a rendezvous for "people of God." Before the birth of her son, according to a family tradition (Asbury, *A Methodist Saint,* p. 1), she had a vision in which God appeared to her, announcing that her child would be a boy and would become a great religious leader. Cherishing this vision, she lavished upon the boy all the affection which the infant daughter had inspired. Francis grew up under the sheltering care of this emotional woman and developed a mother-love which seems to have inhibited, with one possible exception, every normal inclination toward the other sex. If his own account may be trusted (Tipple, *The Heart of Asbury's Journal,* p. 70), he was always a serious lad with "a particular sense of the being of God," greatly fearing both an oath and a lie, abhorring fighting and quarreling, and never imbibing the vices of his wicked companions. He had a very limited schooling and at the age of thirteen and a half was apprenticed to learn "a branch of business," which may have been that of blacksmith (Tipple, *Francis Asbury,* p. 47). He remained an apprentice for some six years, meantime at the age of fourteen experiencing a religious awakening. An interest in Methodism seems to have been kindled by his mother, who sent him to the neighboring village of Wednesbury to hear itinerant preachers. It was indeed a new experience for a lad brought up in the established church to hear a preacher preach without a sermon book and pray without a prayer-book. For the first time he saw men and women on their knees, shouting their Amens in an ecstacy of religious devotion. "This was not the Church, but it was better," he concluded.

From this time on he consorted more and more with Methodists, meeting with them for reading and prayer and even holding devotional exercises in his father's house. He also accompanied his mother to fortnightly meetings of women, where he read the Scriptures at first and then ventured "to expound and paraphrase a little on the portion read." Before long he was a full-fledged local preacher, visiting the surrounding shires and at the same time pursuing his calling. So he

Asbury

labored until he was twenty-one, when he went to London and was admitted to the Wesleyan Conference. Four years of itinerant preaching followed on different circuits; and then in 1771, at the Conference at Bristol, he and Richard Wright volunteered to go as missionaries to America. The reasons for this eventful decision have seemed to Methodist biographers too obvious to need elaboration. Are they not contained in the entry which he made in his Journal, after he had been eight days at sea? "Whither am I going? To the New World. What to do? To gain honor? No, if I know my own heart. To get money? No; I am going to live to God, and to bring others so to do" (Tipple, *Asbury's Journal,* p. 2). There is some evidence, however, that he had formed an attachment to a young woman which was not favored by his mother (Tipple, *Francis Asbury,* p. 316), and this disappointment may have made it easier to plunge into the wilderness. This seems to be the only suggestion of romance in his life. He never married. There may have been, too, just a little alloy mixed with the pure gold of his resolve to live to God and to bring others so to do. The assistant of the Staffordshire circuit once taxed Asbury with not obeying instructions and playing the "dictator" (Asbury, *A Methodist Saint,* p. 17). It is a note sounded more than once by those who worked with the future bishop. "Passion for superiority and thirst for domination" were always characteristic of him, according to one who knew him well (*Ibid.,* p. 16). Was it possible that America appealed to him because there, unhampered by conventions, he could make others live unto God, in *his* own way—carve out a unique career in this New World? When he embarked for America, he resolved to keep a journal, for his own satisfaction (Tipple, *Asbury's Journal,* p. 71). Ten years later, he gave another motive: the Journal when published would let his friends and the world see "how I employed my time." "People unacquainted with the causes and motives of my conduct," he wrote still later, "will always more or less judge of me improperly" (*Ibid.,* p. 547). His Journal was to be the attestation of his missionary career—if need be, his vindication (Tipple, *Francis Asbury,* p. 86).

Methodism in America did not begin with the arrival of Asbury in Philadelphia. Other missionaries had preceded him, but an overwhelming sense of responsibility for this vast country oppressed him. On the day of his arrival, he fortified his soul by praying five times, reading three chapters from Revelation, a hundred pages of Wesley's *Sermons,* and a hundred pages of Edwards's account of New England revivals. The

following week he started out on the first of his itineraries to join Richard Boardman. There is much that is significant for his whole career in his first experiences. Though he was only a helper under Boardman, who was his senior in years and service, he took himself and his work very seriously. He found much to criticize in New York: he thought the discipline lax; he did not approve of preachers staying in town; he believed frequent changes of circuit desirable "to avoid partiality and popularity." He determined to set an example. On Nov. 24, 1771, without asking leave of Boardman, he started off on a borrowed horse through the villages of Westchester County, preaching wherever chance offered—in taverns, in jails, by the wayside. He spared neither himself nor his mount; and as winter approached he defied rain and snow. As yet unacclimated, he took a severe cold but continued to preach even when suffering from chills and fever. He finally collapsed and had to take to his bed for three weeks. He was still weak when he resumed his preaching and from this time on he seems never to have had good health.

In October 1772, Asbury received a letter from Wesley, appointing him general assistant or superintendent in America, and with this authority he carried out his own ideas of discipline. He did not hesitate to shut offending brothers and sisters out of meeting, in spite of protests. "While I stay," he wrote in his Journal, "the rules must be attended to and I cannot suffer myself to be guided by half-hearted Methodists" (Tipple, *Asbury's Journal,* p. 19). But in June 1773 he had to surrender his authority to Thomas Rankin, newly arrived from England. He was never a good subordinate, however, and he was soon out of sympathy with his superior, who, it is true, never fully understood the colonial attitude toward the mother country and continually gave offense. In the end Rankin complained to Wesley, who summoned Asbury to return home (Mar. 1, 1775).

It was a critical moment in Asbury's career. With a prescience of coming events, he determined to stay on, believing that it would be "an eternal dishonor" to leave 3,000 souls in this time of danger (*Ibid.,* p. 87). There may also have been in his mind the unuttered thought that if Rankin and others departed eventually, as seemed likely, he would have a unique place in the upbuilding of a Methodist organization. There was rebellion in the air. Keener observers than Asbury scented independence as the goal of the colonies. As yet, in the words of Jesse Lee, the Methodists "were only a religious society, not a church" (Jesse Lee, *A Short History of the Methodists,* p. 47); but Strawbridge and Southern preachers were already administering the sacraments as though they were a separate organization. Two revolutions thus seemed imminent (Tipple, *Francis Asbury,* ch. VI). With the political revolution Asbury had no concern, except as it interfered with his supreme object. He attended the third Conference in Philadelphia while the Second Continental Congress hard by was wrestling with temporal problems, and he noted with apprehension that the minds of men were "full of sin and politics."

For various reasons, for which Wesley, Rankin, and his associates were chiefly responsible, the Methodists fell quite generally under suspicion as Loyalists during the Revolution and suffered some persecution. Asbury himself refused to take the oath of allegiance required by the State of Maryland and was forced to take refuge in Delaware. There he remained for the space of twenty months (1777-78) while Rankin and his colleagues fled the country. He had tried to remain neutral in the struggle between his native land and her colonies, but the logic of events drove him on. He was convinced that England could never subdue the rebellious colonists and that independence was inevitable. With no little misgiving he made his choice and became a citizen of Delaware (Strickland, *The Pioneer Bishop,* pp. 115–16).

Though Asbury made this enforced sojourn in Delaware a means of bringing some 1,800 souls into the Methodist fold, he was temporarily in eclipse. The sacramental controversy brought him again to the fore and gave him the opportunity of winning personal control of the Methodist societies at the most critical point in their history. The Southern preachers being now pretty thoroughly committed to the administration of the sacraments, as the Church of England lost its cohesion in the rebellious colonies, Asbury built up a following among the Northern preachers and got them thoroughly committed to the Wesleyan view. A split in the Methodist organization seemed inevitable after the Southern Conference took its stand in the Conference at Fluvanna in 1779. In the negotiations that followed, Asbury proved himself an adept at conciliation, procrastination, and compromise. The wisdom of the serpent was oddly mingled with the harmlessness of the dove in his composition. Prayer and practical politics went hand in hand (Asbury, *A Methodist Saint,* pp. 129–30). The outcome was a complete victory for the Northern party and a personal triumph for Asbury, who now in all but title became the head of the Methodist organization. The Baltimore Conference of 1782

confirmed his position and put an end once for all to the sacramental controversy. A month later, down in Virginia, Asbury heard "the good news" that Britain had acknowledged the independence of America (Tipple, *Asbury's Journal*, p. 209).

To deal with this new situation, Wesley resolved in 1784 upon a course which he had long had under consideration. He sent to the United States the Rev. Thomas Coke, a presbyter of the Church of England who had espoused Methodism, with instructions to act with Asbury in joint superintendence of the Methodist societies. Coke met Asbury for the first time in Barratt's Chapel in Kent County, Del. Extended conferences followed. Again Asbury evinced his practical shrewdness. Sensing correctly the temper of his associates, he insisted that he should receive his appointment not from Wesley, but from a regular conference, and he had his way. At a memorable Conference in December 1784, at Baltimore, Coke and Asbury were chosen joint superintendents; and the abridged prayer-book, liturgy, and discipline sent over by Wesley were adopted as the foundation of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States. On successive days, Asbury was ordained deacon and elder, and consecrated as superintendent—not bishop. Almost at once, however, he began to refer to himself as bishop (Asbury, *A Methodist Saint*, p. 163), a course which Wesley deprecated strongly, but the title stuck and appeared in the Conference minutes of 1787. Theoretically, he shared his episcopal functions with Coke, but the frequent absences of the latter left practical control and direction of the organization to his American colleague. Theoretically, too, he was the servant of the Methodist Conference, but between sessions he ruled as autocratically as any Pope of Rome. With an eye single to the glory of God he appointed preachers without the slightest regard to their wishes or to the preference of parishioners. There were often loud complaints and more than once his autocratic power was challenged. It was not until his strength failed and he was obviously unable to carry his burden that he accepted Richard Whatcoat as an associate bishop (1800), who became, however, little more than his understudy. It was Asbury who planned those great campaigns which sent preachers to fight the great Adversary not only in the remote parts of the old states but over the Alleghanies on the hazardous frontiers of Kentucky and Ohio. He was a master of religious strategy. It was not an idle gesture when he and Coke presented a congratulatory address, drafted by Asbury, to the newly inaugurated President, Gen. Washington, and thus secured recognition for the Methodists as the first religious body to profess allegiance to the new government (*Ibid.*, p. 201).

Asbury

A master of strategy usually stays behind the lines. Not so Bishop Asbury. He asked no more of his skirmishers and shock-troops than he was himself prepared to undergo. He sought out the Adversary for personal combat in every field from New Hampshire to Georgia, not once but many times. It has been said that he traveled all told nearly 300,000 miles. "My horse trots stiff," he wrote in his Journal, "and no wonder when I have ridden him upon an average of 5,000 miles a year for five years successively." Much of this incessant traveling was over roads that beggared description and under physical tension that would have speedily worn down a man of less resolute will. And Asbury was at no time a well man. He suffered from all sorts of maladies which he undoubtedly aggravated by injudicious treatment. Blood-letting and blistering were his favorite remedies for nearly every complaint from boils and worse skin-diseases to intestinal disorders. His condition was made worse by bad food, exposure, and lack of ordinary sanitation in the frontier cabins where he took refuge. In all these long years, he had no fixed abiding place that could be called home; and, except when sheer exhaustion forced him to a sick-bed, no rest from his labors. Yet he gloried in his sufferings and desired posterity should know what he had undergone for the salvation of souls. He was a familiar figure as he journeyed through Methodist America—a tall spare man with fine forehead and keen eyes, dressed in a plain frock-coat and small clothes, and wearing a low-crowned broad-brimmed hat. He always had a serious, almost austere, aspect to which in later life his flowing white locks added a patriarchal dignity. With the election of William McKendree as bishop to succeed Whatcoat, who died in 1806, the reins of government began to slip from Asbury's hands. More and more he left details to his "assistant bishop" as he persisted in calling his associate. Yet to the very end, when his frame was racked by a consumptive cough and he had to be lifted in and out of his sulky, he kept to the road and he died in Virginia as he was making all possible haste to reach Baltimore for the Conference of 1816.

Asbury was not a learned man. He read much by the way, to be sure, but his intellectual curiosity was easily satisfied. Life was to him only a temporary abode for a soul in transit. He was essentially an ascetic, devoid of interest in temporal affairs. He flagellated his mind as he did his body, taking a grim satisfaction in doing the

hard thing. Nor was he a great preacher, from all accounts. There is no evidence that he threw his hearers into those religious frenzies in which his itinerant preachers saw the working of Providence. Yet he preached on the same themes with profound conviction—sin and redemption with hope of Heaven and fear of Hell. It is as an organizer rather than as a preacher that Asbury has a primacy in the annals of American Methodism.

[The earliest biog. of Asbury is W. P. Strickland's *The Pioneer Bishop: or the Life and Times of Francis Asbury* (1858), and the latest is Herbert Asbury's *A Methodist Saint* (1927), a critical study of the first importance. Between these extremes are numerous lives written with varying degrees of denominational fervor. The best of these is *Francis Asbury, the Prophet of the Long Road* (1916), by E. S. Tipple, who has drawn upon manuscripts in the Emory Coll. in the Drew Theological Seminary. The same author has edited selections from Asbury's *Journal* under the title *The Heart of Asbury's Journal* (1904). *An Extract from the Journal of Francis Asbury* (Aug. 7, 1771 to Dec. 29, 1778) was published in 1792; and a continuation (to Sept. 3, 1780) in 1802. The entire *Journal* was published in three volumes in 1821. Jesse Lee, *A Short History of the Methodists, in the United States of America* (1810) is valuable as an account by a contemporary who was often in sharp opposition to Asbury. Valuable too are Henry Boehm's *Reminiscences* (1865), and *The Substance of a Funeral Discourse . . . on the Death of the Rev. Francis Asbury* (1819) by Ezekiel Cooper.]

A. J.

ASCH, MORRIS JOSEPH (July 4, 1833–Oct. 5, 1902), laryngologist, soldier, was born in Philadelphia, the second son of Joseph M. and Clara (Ulman) Asch. His early education was mainly under private tutors. He entered the University of Pennsylvania in 1848, graduated in 1852, and the same year entered the Jefferson Medical College, from which he graduated as M.D. in 1855. Soon thereafter he was appointed clinical assistant to Dr. Samuel Gross. On the outbreak of the Civil War he was appointed assistant surgeon in the United States Army. He was on duty at the surgeon-general's office from August 1861 to August 1862; subsequently became surgeon-in-chief to the artillery reserve of the Army of the Potomac, medical inspector of the Army of the Potomac, medical director of the 24th army corps, medical inspector Army of the James and staff surgeon of Gen. Philip H. Sheridan from 1865 to 1873. He participated in battles at Chancellorsville, Mine Run, Gettysburg, and Appomattox Court House. On Mar. 13, 1865, he was brevetted major for faithful and meritorious services during the war. While on the staff of Gen. Sheridan, he was assistant to the medical director, Department of the Gulf, and medical director at department headquarters and was most prominent and active in two great epidemics in New Orleans, cholera in 1866, and yellow fever in 1867. The latter epidemic under control, Sheridan was relieved and ordered to Fort Leavenworth, Asch accompanying him, but at St. Louis Asch fell ill with yellow fever. On his recoverey he joined Sheridan at the new station. His success in caring for the wounded and sick during the unprecedented cold of the winter campaign of 1868–69 against the plains Indians was often remarked by the officers in command. When Sheridan was promoted to the grade of lieutenant-general, he took Asch with him to his new headquarters in Chicago, where the latter continued rendering invaluable services, until he resigned in 1873.

On his retirement, he practised medicine in New York City, devoting himself, though not exclusively, to laryngology. He was one of the founders of the American Laryngological Association, and was appointed surgeon to the throat department of the New York Eye and Ear Infirmary and the Manhattan Eye and Ear Hospital. He soon had a large and lucrative practise and took an active part in the scientific advances in his chosen specialty, contributing largely to medical journals and often presenting special articles in text-books. Among these contributions was "A New Operation for Deviation of the Nasal Septum" (*New York Medical Journal*, LII, 1890). This came to be known as the "Asch operation" and it was, up to that time, the most successful method employed, and was performed both in this country and abroad.

Asch was tall, handsome, of commanding presence, genial and conscientious. Always young in heart, he loved to have his juniors with him, feeling that he could correct his perspective through their fresher vision. He was unmarried, and when attacked with cerebral embolism, he made his home with his sister, where he was surrounded with every comfort, until he died.

[*Trans. Am. Laryngol. Ass.*, 1902, pp. 246–51; *Medic. News* (N.Y.), LXXXI, 715, 944; *Medic. Record*, LXII, 585; *N.Y. Medic. Jour.*, LXXVI, 642; the *Laryngoscope* (St. Louis), XIII, 17–22, Jan. 1903, containing partial list of Asch's scientific publications.]

E. M—r.

ASHBURNER, CHARLES ALBERT (Feb. 9, 1854–Dec. 24, 1889), geologist, one of nine children of Algernon Eyre Ashburner, of English descent, and Sarah (Blakiston) Ashburner, was born in Philadelphia. He was educated first at the Friends' Central School in that city, then at the High School, and at the Towne Scientific School of the University of Pennsylvania, entering the university at the early age of sixteen and graduating as civil engineer, first in his class, in 1874. As a student he showed great ability in appreciation of form and structure; he was accurate, and a born artist, "seeing what he drew and

drawing what he saw" (Lesley, *post*). He showed also unusual mathematical ability. As an undergraduate he took part in a survey of the raft channel of Delaware River between Easton and Trenton and was one of the organizers of the Engineers' Club of Philadelphia in 1873. While in the university he attracted the attention of J. P. Lesley [*q.v.*], then professor of geology, through whose perhaps unconscious influence he was induced to give up the engineering profession and enter upon his life work as a geologist. On the organization of the Second Geological Survey of Pennsylvania, Lesley was appointed director and selected Ashburner as an assistant, commissioning him and his classmate C. E. Billin, to assist in the survey of the fossil iron-ore belt of the Juniata Valley. Ashburner soon acquired sufficient skill to work independently and wrote the report on the Aughwick Valley and East Broad Top coal-basin published in *Report F* in 1878. He was commissioned in 1876 to survey the counties of McKean, Elk, Cameron, and Forest, one of the most difficult as well as the most important oil districts of the state. This survey occupied two years. Realizing the importance of topography, as a first step he made a good topographic map, "contouring it with the eye of an artist who knew the geological significance of every feature and every curve" (*Ibid.*). The generalization which he was able to deduce from this work was of great economic value, enabling him to fix the limit of the oil-bearing strata and to place the calculation of the depth of well boring upon a scientific basis. In 1880, with the organization of the survey of the anthracite field, Ashburner was placed in control and produced what his chief described as a "*chef d'œuvre* of geology as an applied science." He knew and did exactly what was to be done. "He selected his assistants, taught them and worked with them, inspired them with his own zeal and lifted their work to the standard of his own" (*Ibid.*). He conducted the survey of 1880–86, resigning in the fall of the latter year to accept an engagement as scientific expert with the Westinghouse firm at Pittsburgh. To this work he devoted the rest of his life, traveling extensively and enduring hardship and exposure that brought about severe illnesses and finally an untimely death in 1889. He was a member of the American Philosophical Society, American Institute of Mining Engineers, Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences, Franklin Institute and several other organizations of similar character. In 1881 he married Roberta M. John of Pottsville, by whom he had two children.

[Sketch by J. P. Lesley in *Trans. of the Am. Institute of Mining Engineers*, XVIII, 1889–90; another by Arthur Winslow, containing full bibliography, in *Am. Geologist*, VI, 69–78.] G. P. M.

ASHBY, TURNER (Oct. 23, 1828–June 6, 1862), Confederate soldier, was born at his father's home, "Rose Bank," near what is now Markham, Fauquier County, Va. His father, Col. Turner Ashby, who married Dorothy Green of Rappahannock County, was an officer in the War of 1812; his grandfather, Capt. Jack Ashby, an officer in the Revolution. He himself never married. His education was obtained from his mother, tutors, and in Maj. Ambler's private school. He entered commercial pursuits, then bought a place near "Rose Bank," and engaged in farming. Stirred by John Brown's raid on Oct. 16, 1859, Ashby, who was enterprising, fearless, a splendid horseman, and a natural leader, gathered some mounted men and rode north. They arrived late on Oct. 19 at Charlestown, where Brown had been jailed. In January 1860, they returned home after several months spent in picketing the Potomac. Ashby believed in slavery but not in secession. But when Virginia seceded, Apr. 17, 1861, he again rode with his company of horsemen to Harper's Ferry. With his command augmented by infantry, and Imboden's artillery, he took post opposite Point of Rocks, performing bridge-guard and scouting duty (*Rebellion Records*, ser. I, vol. II, pp. 861, 868, 881, 894). In June 1861, he marched with his company to Winchester, where it was incorporated in the 7th Virginia Cavalry which Col. McDonald was officially organizing for the defense of the upper Potomac border (*Ibid.*, p. 952). From June 18, 1861, to early March 1862, he was engaged in picket and scouting duty, and in minor operations, in the Romney-Bath-Martinsburg-Harper's Ferry region, except for a short time in July, when with part of the 7th, he coöperated with Stuart's cavalry in masking Johnston's withdrawal from Winchester to Manassas (*Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, I, 230). He was commissioned lieutenant-colonel about July 23, 1861. Under official authority he organized Chew's Horse Battery on Nov. 13, 1861, which formed a part of his command. In November or December he succeeded McDonald in command of the regiment. From Mar. 4, 1862, when Banks entered Charlestown, to the latter part of April, Ashby, promoted colonel about Mar. 14, covered Jackson's retreat to Swift Run Gap, participating with great credit in the battle of Kernstown. During Jackson's movement against Milroy in early May, Ashby, with part of his command, watched Banks at Harrisonburg and followed him during his retreat to Strasburg. Leaving a few companies opposite Banks, Ashby, with the

remainder, joined Jackson in his march toward Front Royal; moved off and attacked the Federal detachment at Buckton Station; joined Jackson again at Front Royal; and moving on his left toward Middletown, struck Banks's column on the flank in retreat. He took part in the engagement at Winchester, on May 25, and in the subsequent pursuit of Banks toward Harper's Ferry. On May 27, he received his commission as brigadier-general. During Jackson's subsequent retreat up the Valley, on June 6, Ashby, while commanding the cavalry brigade, and fighting a rear-guard action, a few miles south of Harrisonburg, was shot by the enemy.

[The statement by R. L. Dabney in his *Life and Campaigns of Jackson* (1866) that, at Winchester, Ashby had undertaken an "independent enterprise," is well refuted in Avirett's *Memoirs of Gen. Turner Ashby and His Compeers* (1867), which gives a detailed account of Ashby's life. Clarence Thomas in *Gen. Turner Ashby* (1907) proves that Ashby was more than a partisan leader. G. F. R. Henderson, in *Stonewall Jackson* (1898), while not failing to comment on Ashby's early ignorance of military drill and discipline, shows how his coolness under fire, his daring horsemanship, his skill in handling his command, and his power of gaining devoted followers, won for him the affection and admiration of his own troops and of the Southern people.] W. S. G.

ASHE, JOHN (*c.* 1720–October 1781), soldier and politician of North Carolina, was the son of Elizabeth (Swann) and John Baptista Ashe, an Englishman of good family who settled in the eastern part of the colony and became a member of His Majesty's Council of North Carolina in 1733. The son was probably born at Grovely, Brunswick County, N. C., in 1720 (A. M. Hooper and S. J. Mcree, *North Carolina University Magazine,* October 1854), although John H. Wheeler claims that he was born in England in 1721 (*Historical Sketches,* II, 279). He was well educated, perhaps in England, and had a good library. Early in life he married his cousin, Rebecca Moore, sister of Judge Maurice Moore and Gen. James Moore. He was an officer of militia in the French War, and became a popular leader against the Crown. He was speaker of the Colonial Assembly 1762–65, and a leader in the Stamp Act agitation. Either he or his nephew, John Baptista Ashe [*q.v.*], siding against the anti-government Regulators in 1771, was taken prisoner by them, tied to a tree, and whipped (Hooper and Mcree, *supra*). John Ashe was, however, a strong Whig, was a member of the Committee of Correspondence, and of the Provincial Congress, and of the Committee of Safety, and led the successful attack on Fort Johnston near Wilmington in the opening year of the Revolution. He was made a colonel in 1775, and brigadier-general of North Carolina troops in 1776. He was a good public speaker, graceful in appearance, with "popular manners."

Highly regarded for character and patriotism, Ashe was nevertheless an unskilled and inexperienced commander, as was shown too clearly in the unfortunate affair with which his name is chiefly connected. He had been sent by Gov. Caswell of North Carolina in 1778 to reinforce Gen. Lincoln who commanded in Charleston, and he led a regiment recruited from the eastern counties of his state. Detached by Lincoln to pursue the English leader, Col. Campbell, he crossed the Savannah River with about 1,200 militia and some Georgia Continentals, inadequately armed. Lincoln's plan involved an attack by his whole army, and Ashe's coöperation was essential. Descending the river, Ashe occupied a strong position at Briar Creek, but neglected to defend an exposed flank, and was lacking in vigilance. Col. Prevost, brother of the English general, by a circuitous march gained the rear of the American army and took it by surprise; Elbert, a subordinate officer, and some of the troops fought well, but the bulk of the army gave way, and Prevost won a complete victory. Ashe was unable to rally the fugitives, many of whom perished in their flight to the swamps and the Savannah River. The loss was estimated at about 150 or 200, that of the enemy being trifling; many officers were among the prisoners, and a large part of the arms, ammunition, colors, and baggage fell to the English. The defeat was decisive, securing Georgia to the enemy, opening communications between that state, the Carolinas, and the Indians, and protracting the war.

Ashe was apparently inactive during the battle. It has been asserted that he neglected to supply the troops with cartridges, and he was even charged with cowardice. He was brought before a court of inquiry over which Gen. Moultrie presided. Acquitted of cowardice, he was censured "for want of sufficient vigilance"; "having," in the words of one historian, "neither judgment, skill, foresight, nor self-reliance" (William B. Stevens, *History of Georgia,* 1859, p. 197). The language of the court of inquiry was that he "did not take all the necessary precautions which he ought to have done" (William Moultrie, *Memoirs of the American Revolution,* 1802, I, 337, ff.). He was greatly depressed by these events, and was soon after in hiding during the occupation of the eastern part of the state by the English. Betrayed to the enemy in 1781, he was freed on parole, but died of smallpox in Sampson County, N. C.

[Samuel Ashe, in *Biog. Hist. of N. C. from Colonial Times to the Present*, IV (1906), 36–52; Hugh McCall, *Hist. of Ga.*, II (1816), 220–24; David Schenck, *N. C. 1780–81* (1889), p. 34; Frank Moore, *Diary of the Am. Rev. from Newspapers and Original Docs.*, II (1859), 138–41; John H. Wheeler, *Hist. Sketches of N. C. from 1584 to 1851* (1851), I, 50–51, 58, 65, 74, 79, 85, 88, II, 279–80.]

E. K. A.

ASHE, JOHN BAPTISTA (1748–Nov. 27, 1802), soldier and politician of North Carolina, was born at Rocky Point in that state, the eldest son of Samuel and Mary (Porter) Ashe, and grandson of John Baptista Ashe. He belonged to a family prominent in the commonwealth. His grandfather was a member of His Majesty's Council of North Carolina, his father was governor, and his uncle—with whom he is sometimes confused—was Gen. John Ashe [*q.v.*]. John Baptista Ashe married early in life Eliza Montfort, daughter of Col. Joseph Montfort of Halifax, N. C. She was the lady who later made the famous if doubtfully courteous retort to Col. Tarleton when he was an unwelcome guest in the home of her sister, Mrs. Willie Jones. Tarleton had been wounded at the battle of Cowpens by Col. William Washington. He commented upon the illiteracy of Col. Washington. Mrs. Ashe replied, glancing at Tarleton's scarred hand, "But you will at least agree that Col. Washington can at any rate make his mark." Serving throughout the Revolutionary War, in 1776 Ashe became a captain, and later rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. At the battle of Eutaw Springs, Sept. 8, 1781, the last important conflict of the far South, he was lieutenant-colonel of a battalion of regulars, in the brigade of Gen. Sumner who was stationed on the right. In this capacity he aided in covering the retreat of the North Carolina militia. The brigade "bore itself nobly, fighting with the coolness and resolution of veterans" (see letter of Gen. Greene, published in the *New Jersey Gazette*, Oct. 24, 1781).

After the war Ashe held nearly every political office in his state. He was a member of the House of Commons, of the state Senate and of the Continental Congress 1787–88. When the belated convention of North Carolina met in 1789 to ratify the Federal Constitution, he was one of the leading delegates. He represented his state in the House of Representatives in the First and Second Congresses 1789–93. His final political honor was election to the governorship in 1802, but before he could take office he died at Halifax, N. C.

[David Schenck, *N. C. 1780–81* (1889), pp. 25, 437, 451; Stephen B. Weeks, in *Biog. Hist. of N. C. from Colonial Times to the Present* (1917), VIII, 26–29; John H. Wheeler, *Hist. Sketches of N. C. from 1584 to 1851*, I, 80, II, 199, 281; R. D. W. Connor, *Hist. of N. C.* (1919), I, 316, II, 47.]

E. K. A.

ASHE, SAMUEL (1725–Feb. 3, 1813), jurist, governor, was born near Beaufort and died in Rocky Point, N. C. His father, John Baptista Ashe, speaker of the colonial Assembly at the time of Samuel's birth, removed soon after that event to the environs of the Cape Fear River. The boy's mother having already died, the death of his father in 1734 gave his rearing into the hands of his uncle, Sam Swan. This uncle, a vigorous advocate of popular sovereignty, was speaker of the colonial Assembly for twenty-five years. Hostility to British rule was insistent in the North Carolina of Samuel's youth, but he found himself not unwilling upon completing his education in the North and returning home to the Wilmington district, to become assistant attorney for the Crown. He was esteemed by the royal governor, who, as a fugitive some years later, singled him out with one Samuel Johnson as the only two men of integrity in the entire North Carolina Council of Safety. For all his imperial attachments, he was among the earliest Republicans, and beginning in 1774 he furthered his theories by his activities as a propagandist, and as a member of many Revolutionary organizations. In 1776 he became president of the state Council of Safety, and in 1779 he was captain of a troop of light horse. He was perhaps the most substantial lawyer in the state who unreservedly identified himself with the more aggressive implications of the Revolution. He was one of a committee of twenty-four appointed in 1776 to prepare a state constitution, and he held the first court ever conducted under that instrument. Speaker of the Senate in the first state legislature, he was elected presiding judge of the first state supreme court, an office which he retained till 1795. As judge, he championed the legislature against a group of lawyers who were defending the property claims of persons who had sympathized with England in the late war, and he also, in the case of Bayard *vs.* Singleton, took part in the decision, which asserted the right of judicial review of legislative enactments on the ground of alleged conflict with the constitution. He was "independent," he wrote to some lawyers, "in principle, in person, and in purse, and should neither court their love, nor fear their enmity" (Ashe, *Samuel Ashe*, p. 22). Made governor in 1795, he served in that office for three one-year terms. He was Jeffersonian in policies, an extremist for state rights, but in times of what he considered national crisis he would subordinate his own views to the views of his opponents in control at Washington. He was president of the board of trustees of the University of North Carolina. He was married twice, first to his cousin,

Mary Porter, and next, to another cousin, a widow, Elizabeth Merrick. His two sons who had reached maturity at the time of the Revolution were both soldiers, and later took part in local public affairs. The younger of these sons, Samuel, an ardent Federalist, is notable for having actively arrayed himself in the first decade of the nineteenth century as the leader of Federalist forces pitted against the contrary forces led by his father.

[*Cyc. of Eminent and Successful Men of the Carolinas in the 19th Cent.* (1892); S. A. Ashe, "Samuel Ashe," *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, VIII (1917); S. B. Weeks, *Colonial and State Records of N. C.*; J. Sprunt, *Chronicles of the Cape Fear River* (1914); J. H. Wheeler, *Hist. Sketches of N. C.* (1851); G. J. McRee, *Life and Correspondence of Jas. Iredell* (1858); *South in the Building of the Nation*, XI (1909); R. D. W. Connor, *Hist. of N. C.*, I (1919); F. X. Martin and J. Haywood, *N. C. Reports*, pp. 42–48 (2nd ed. 1843); J. B. Thayer, *Cases on Constitutional Law*, I, pp. 78 ff. (1895).]

J. D. W.

ASHE, THOMAS SAMUEL (July 19, 1812–Feb. 4, 1887), legislator, was a member of the Ashe family which, long of consequence in Wiltshire, England, became prominent in North Carolina very early in the eighteenth century, and contributed numerous men of note to the history of the state. Thomas, the son of Pasquale Paoli Ashe and Elizabeth Strudwick, was born at his maternal grandfather's home, "The Hawfields," in Orange County. He lived as a boy at "The Neck," the Ashe home on the Cape Fear River, in New Hanover (now Pender) County. While he was still a youth the family removed to Alabama, but he returned later to North Carolina to attend the Bingham School in Orange County and the University of North Carolina, where he graduated in 1832, and of which he was, later, an active trustee for more than thirty years. After graduation he studied law in Hillsboro, N. C., under Chief Justice Thomas Ruffin and in 1836 began practise at Wadesboro, N C. In 1842 he was elected as a Whig to the House of Commons. In 1848 the legislature elected him solicitor and he served for four years. In 1854 he was again elected to the legislature, this time as a member of the Senate. In 1859 he declined to accept a nomination to Congress. In February 1861 the legislature submitted to the people of the state the question of a convention, providing for the election of delegates at the same time. Ashe was chosen as a Union candidate, but the people refused to ratify the call and the delegates never assembled. Although originally a Union man, Ashe held that North Carolina should tolerate no attempt on the part of the United States to coerce the seceded states, and when the call for troops came he advocated secession. In November 1861 he was elected to the Confederate Congress and served one term as a consistent supporter of the administration. On Dec. 9, 1864, he was elected to the Confederate Senate, defeating Edwin G. Reade, who was supported by the peace party in the state, but before his term began the Confederate Congress had ceased to exist.

In 1868 at the first election under the Reconstruction constitution, he was nominated by the conservative party for governor. Although he was prevented by Gen. Canby's orders from voting in the election, he accepted the nomination and made an active campaign against the ratification of the new constitution. He was defeated by William Woods Holden. In 1872 he was elected a member of the Forty-third Congress, and served two terms. In his second term as a member of the judiciary committee he aided in drawing up the articles of impeachment against William Worth Belknap, secretary of war, and in the deliberations concerning the electoral commission bill. He also took some part in the investigation of James G. Blaine at the time of the Mulligan Letters exposé. The principle of rotation in office being then widely accepted in his state, he was not a candidate for renomination, but returned to the practise of law. In his profession, indeed, was to be found his major interest, and his nomination by the Democratic party, in 1878, for associate justice of the supreme court of the state opened to him the career for which by training, temperament, and taste he was best fitted. He served with credit in a court which had high standards, and his opinions rank well. Elected the first time to fill a vacancy, he was reëlected in 1880 and again in 1886.

Ashe was possessed of rather striking beauty. He was tall and imposing, with a fine head of abundant dark, later gray, hair, smiling gray eyes, firm mouth, and clear, ruddy skin. Quietly and simply religious, he was for many years a vestryman in the Episcopal Church. He married in 1837 Caroline, daughter of George W. B. Burgwin of "The Hermitage," New Hanover County.

[The chief sources of information are the N. C. newspapers; *Jour. First Confed. Cong., 1862–64*; and *Cong. Rec. 1873–77*. Ashe's judicial opinions in *N. C. Reports*, 80–95. Sketch by P. M. Wilson in the *Biog. Hist. of N. C.* (1917), vol. VIII.]

J. G. de R. H.

ASHE, WILLIAM SHEPPERD (Sept. 14, 1814–September 1862), congressman, railway president, was the son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Shepperd) Ashe, both representatives of families long prominent in North Carolina. His grandfather was Samuel Ashe, governor of that state and judge of its first supreme court. He was born

in Rocky Point and died there, or near there. He attended college at Washington (later Trinity) College, Hartford, Conn., and studied law in North Carolina under the supervision of Judge John De Rossett Toomer. He was married to Sarah Anne Green of Brunswick County, N. C., in January 1836, a few days before he was admitted to practise as an attorney. In the same year he was elected county solicitor for four counties on the Cape Fear River, but his planting interests, and his social disposition which, according to his son, "was at variance with the exactions of a professional life" (S. A. Ashe, p. 30) led him to abandon his activities as a lawyer. He found time, however, to read widely, especially in the field of politics. In 1846 and 1858 he was in the state Senate, and in 1848 he was elected both to that body and to the national Congress. As a state legislator he is memorable for his opposition to schemes for making alien Charleston the normal railway outlet for the products of all western North Carolina. For it was largely through his influence that certain new traffic lines of his state were built in general eastward to Wilmington rather than southward to Charleston. During his two terms in Congress at Washington (December 1849–August 1852) he maintained the extreme Democratic view-point except when it conflicted with interests which were more immediately local. He had little hope of efforts to compromise sectional difficulties, and felt that only secession could better the condition of the South. He knew, nevertheless, when he was seeking Federal appropriations for North Carolina river improvements, how to cajole away from the House enough of his Democratic colleagues to let his bill be voted through by his friends among the Whigs, who, fortunately, had declared no policy against bills of that kind (*Ibid.*, p. 33). Becoming in 1854 president of the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad, he filled his office with aggressive energy, and to the profit of the organization. He was a member of the state convention of 1861, but resigned at the request of his friend Jefferson Davis to assume charge, first as major and then colonel, of Confederate government transportation between New Orleans and Richmond. After a year's service in this capacity, he turned his attention in the summer of 1862 to raising a legion of soldiers of which he was to be commander. These plans were cut short. One evening, in great distress over a report that one of his two sons—both of whom were soldiers—had been wounded, he set out immediately for his home some fifteen miles distant in the hope of gaining further information. He had not gone far when the hand-car which he had commandeered was run down by an unlighted train. He survived his injuries for three days.

[*Cyc. of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas in the 19th Century*, II (1892); S. A. Ashe, "William Shepperd Ashe," *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, VIII (1917); U. B. Phillips, *Hist. of Transportation in the Eastern Cotton Belt to 1860* (1908); R. D. W. Connor, *Hist. of N. C.* (1919); *Biog. Cong. Dir.* (1903).] J.D.W.

ASHER, JOSEPH MAYOR (Sept. 23, 1872–Nov. 9, 1909), rabbi, was born in Manchester, England, the son of Rabbi Aaron Asher and Betsey (Jacobs) Asher. He was descended from Russian rabbis, among whom were to be found some of the greatest masters of the Torah or Jewish Law, and his heritage strongly influenced him in the selection of his profession. He was sent for his training to the Jews School, Grammar School, Technical School, and Owens College, then one of the constituent colleges of Victoria University, where he took his B.A. and M.A. degrees and where he received a scholarship and fellowship, the latter for excellence in philosophy. While at Trinity College, Cambridge, he came under the spell of that great scholar Dr. Solomon Schechter, who kindled in him a burning ardor for rabbinical study and research. Resolved to embark upon the career of a rabbi, and seeking to acquaint himself with German methods of scholarship, he matriculated at Bonn University in Germany. Having learned what he wanted at Bonn, he left for Russia and there entered the Yeshibot at Kovno. He remained in Russia long enough to complete his rabbinic studies and to secure his diploma as rabbi from Rabbi Katzenellenbogen of Suwalko. Returning to his native city, Manchester, he devoted himself whole-heartedly to the cause of Jewish education and all interests pertaining to orthodox Judaism. He organized the Talmud Torah schools, where studies in the lore and religion of the Jew might be ardently pursued.

Upon the reorganization of the Jewish Theological Seminary of America, in 1902, Asher was asked to serve as professor of homiletics and to take charge of the department of philosophy and ethics. Soon after his arrival in this country, he was appointed rabbi of Congregation B'nai Jeshurum of New York City. He served with distinction in this position for a number of years and then went to Congregation Orach Chaim, also of New York City. He remained as rabbi of this congregation until his death. By his eloquence in the pulpit Asher made a name for himself, not only in New York but in other communities. His popular expositions on Jewish thinkers were marked contributions to the Jewish cultural life of the time. He was equally learned in the subtleties of Talmudic disquisitions, the Maimonidean

philosophy, or the reasoning of Immanuel Kant. Little opportunity was given him for writing, because of the exacting nature of his professorial and ministerial duties, but he contributed an article on Jewish food and health laws to the *Encyclopedia Americana* (1907 edition, vol. IX; 1925 edition, vol. XVI) as well as reviews in the *International Journal of Ethics* and the *Critical Review.* His unceasing labors exhausted him, and he died at the age of thirty-seven.

[*Am. Jewish Year Bk.*, 1903–04, p. 42; *Am. Hebrew* (N.Y.), Nov. 12, Dec. 24, 1909; *Jewish Exponent* (Phila.), Nov. 12, Nov. 19, 1909; *Jewish Comment* (Baltimore), Nov. 12, 1909; *Jewish Tribune* (Portland, Ore.), Nov. 19, 1909; *Jewish Chronicle* (London), Nov. 26, 1909; *N.Y. Herald*, Nov. 10, 1909.] L.L.M.

ASHHURST, JOHN (Aug. 23, 1839–July 7, 1900), surgeon and author, was born in Philadelphia. He was the son of John Ashhurst and his wife, the daughter of Manuel Eyre, an East India merchant. As a boy his health was poor, and perhaps largely on account of his inability to partake in outdoor sports he early developed studious habits. Taught to read before he was four years old, by the age of sixteen he had accumulated a library of 3,000 volumes. He became proficient in Greek, Latin, and mathematics, and was also a skilful pianist. Throughout his life these tastes remained with him. He received his B.A. degree from the University of Pennsylvania in 1857, having made the highest average ever attained there, and in 1860 graduated from the Medical Department and received also the degree of M.A. He served first as resident physician in the Pennsylvania Hospital and later, during the Civil War, as an acting assistant-surgeon in the Chester (Pa.) United States General Hospital and as executive officer in the Cuyler United States Hospital at Germantown, Pa. In 1877 he was elected professor of clinical surgery in the University of Pennsylvania and in 1888 succeeded Dr. Agnew as professor of surgery in that institution. He was surgeon to the Pennsylvania, Episcopal, and Children's Hospitals of Philadelphia and to the Hospital of the University of Pennsylvania, and president of the Pathological Society of Philadelphia (1870–71) and of the College of Physicians of Philadelphia (1890–1900).

Ashhurst's contributions to medical literature were many and valuable. He wrote nearly all the surgical reviews in the *American Journal of the Medical Sciences* from 1867 to 1877. His monograph *Injuries of the Spine* (1867) was one of the first applications of the statistical method in medical investigation. In 1871 he published *Principles and Practise of Surgery,* which went through many editions, a justly popular textbook. As editor of the *International Encyclopædia of Surgery* (1881–86) he gained a solid reputation in Europe. He was one of the greatest authorities on the history of his profession. As a surgeon he was bold but conservative, and above all possessed sound judgment. He was wont to follow up his cases with the most scrupulous care, regarding the after-care as of equal importance with the performance of an operation. He was a deeply religious man. Of somewhat austere aspect he rather overawed younger men when they first came in contact with him, but this first impression soon melted away before his genuine kindheartedness.

Dr. Ashhurst suffered from a cerebral hemorrhage in August 1898, which paralyzed his left side. Though bedridden, his mind remained clear until his death, July 7, 1900. He had married in 1864 Sarah Stokes Wayne. They had seven children, of whom two, William and Astley Paston Cooper, became physicians.

[R. H. Harte, "John Ashhurst, Jr.: A Memoir," in *Trans. Coll. of Phys. of Phila.*, XXIV, 1902; biog. by his son A. P. C. Ashhurst, in *Am. Medic. Biogs.*, ed. by H. A. Kelly and Walter L. Burrage (1920); personal recollections. Portraits in Coll. of Phys. of Phila. and Medic. Laboratories of the Univ. of Pa.] F.R.P.

ASHLEY, JAMES MITCHELL (Nov. 14, 1824–Sept. 16, 1896), congressman, counted ancestors among the early English settlers of Virginia—the name of Capt. John Ashley appearing in the Virginia Charter of 1609. For nearly two centuries the descendants of Capt. Ashley resided in and near Norfolk. One branch of the family drifted to the frontier of Pennsylvania, settling near Pittsburgh in the early years of the nineteenth century. James Mitchell, the oldest of several children of John C. and Mary Kilpatrick Ashley, was born in Allegheny County, Pa.; shortly thereafter the family removed to Portsmouth, Ohio. Both his father and grandfather were itinerant ministers of the church founded by Alexander Campbell. He had no schooling, his early education being acquired at home, chiefly under the guidance of his mother. From his ninth to his fourteenth year he frequently accompanied his father, who preached in a circuit extending through the border counties of Kentucky and western Virginia. Here the boy glimpsed something of the system of slavery, and early came to detest it. At the age of sixteen, rebelling against the austere regulations established by his father for the government of his household, he ran away from home and secured employment as a cabin-boy and later as a clerk upon an Ohio river steamboat. A still more deep-seated abhorrence of slavery was acquired through his experiences on

the southern rivers. Time and again he saw negroes, with safe-conducts of passage, sold back into slavery; the cruel treatment of slaves on board; and the utter disregard of their persons all through the country. Abandoning his work on the river, Ashley wandered through a number of southern states, visiting, among other places, the Hermitage, an event which he subsequently asserted made a profound impression upon him. While in Virginia, his expressions in opposition to slavery were so violent that he was told to leave the state.

Shortly after his return to Ohio, Ashley entered the printing office of the *Scioto Valley Republican* (1841), and subsequently was employed in various printing offices until he became editor of the *Democrat* in Portsmouth, Ohio (1848). During his experience as an editor he studied law with Charles O. Tracy, under whom he prosecuted his studies until he was admitted to the bar (1849), shortly after which he relinquished his connection with the *Democrat*. The ensuing two years were passed in Portsmouth in the work of boat construction. In 1851 he was married to Emma J. Smith of Kentucky, and in the same year removed to Toledo, where he engaged for a few years in the wholesale drug business.

He was by this time keenly interested in the political issues of the day. Hitherto a Democrat, his intense antagonism to slavery swept him into the Free-Soil party (1848) and shortly thereafter into the Republican party (1854). He assisted in the formation of the latter in the Toledo district, and was a delegate to the Republican National Convention at which John C. Frémont was nominated for the presidency (1856). Two years later he was himself nominated as the Republican candidate for Congress from his district and was elected. To this position he was consecutively reëlected in 1860, 1862, 1864, and 1866. Among the more important measures introduced or advocated in the House by Ashley was that of minority representation, a bill being reported by him looking to the introduction of that principle in the territorial governments—his speech in support of his bill being the first on that subject made in Congress. During the extra session of July 1861 he prepared the first measure for the reconstruction of the southern states presented to Congress, and as chairman of the Committee on Territories, reported it to the House (Mar. 12, 1862). The bill was tabled by a vote of 65 to 56, and the subject was not again revived at that session, but the ideas contained in the bill and the line of policy it outlined were embodied in the reconstruction measures finally adopted and carried into effect. In connection with Lot M. Morrill of Maine, Ashley drew up and had charge of the bill to abolish slavery in the District of Columbia (Apr. 11, 1862). He introduced the first proposition to amend the Constitution of the United States, so as to abolish slavery (Dec. 14, 1863), but the measure was at first defeated in the House. On a reconsideration Ashley succeeded in converting twenty-four border and northern Democrats and secured the passage of the measure (Jan. 31, 1865). He considered this the greatest achievement of his life.

It was on the initiative of Ashley that the move for the impeachment of President Johnson was begun (Jan. 7, 1867). Like many others of the extreme radicals, he dropped from political life after the trial and acquittal of the President. He was defeated in the ensuing fall election and left Congress Mar. 3, 1869. He was appointed by President Grant territorial governor of Montana, but was removed within a year on account of his sharp criticisms of the President's policies. The final act of his political career was his active participation in the Liberal Republican convention of 1872 and his support of Greeley for the presidency in the ensuing campaign. Ashley's political principles were not formed by logical mental processes, but by sentiment aroused by personal experiences. Puritan in habit, suspicious, uncharitable of opposition and somewhat vain, he was a born radical. His personal courage, his hatred of oppression, and his love of liberty drew him into the emancipation cause—first for the negro and then, as he believed, by his warfare on Johnson, for the whole American people.

After his political career was over, he became interested in the possibility of a railroad extending from Toledo across to the Michigan Peninsula which would furnish an outlet for about 300 miles of country. He purchased valuable terminals at Toledo entirely on credit and proceeded to build the road north to Lake Michigan, which became the Toledo, Ann Arbor & Northern Michigan Railroad. He was its president from 1877 to 1893. This work illustrates perhaps better than any other the characteristic feature of his life—his pertinacity.

[*Orations and Speeches by J. M. Ashley of Ohio* (1894), ed. by Benjamin W. Arnett and published by the Afro-Am. League of Tenn., is the chief source of information. The *Cong. Globe* and the files of the *Toledo Blade* are indispensable sources for the period of Ashley's pol. career. His connection with reconstruction is detailed in "An Ohio Congressman in Reconstruction," a manuscript thesis prepared by his grand-daughter, Margaret Ashley Paddock, at Columbia Univ. James G. Blaine's *Twenty Years of Cong.* (1884) contains numerous estimates of Ashley's services from the viewpoint of a partisan Republican. Ashley's lib., containing his collection of private papers, was destroyed by fire during his lifetime.] C.E.C.

ASHLEY, WILLIAM HENRY (*c.* 1778–Mar. 26, 1838), fur trader, explorer, congressman, was born in Powhatan County, Va. He received a fair schooling, and acquired business interests in his native state that demanded his personal attention for years. Settling in Missouri at some time between 1803 and 1805, he engaged in the extraction of saltpeter at Ashley's Cave, Texas County, and in the manufacture of gunpowder at Potosi, where, in partnership with Andrew Henry, he also undertook lead-mining ventures, which, like the manufacture of gunpowder, had received a considerable impetus from the War of 1812. He served on the board of trustees of Potosi Academy and advanced in the territorial militia from the rank of captain in 1813, through that of colonel in 1819, to a generalship in 1822. In 1820 he was elected lieutenant-governor of the newly formed state of Missouri. Abandoning lead mining for the more promising venture of fur trading, in which Henry had had considerable experience, Ashley and Henry in 1822 and 1823, in the face of active hostility from the Arikara Indians in the latter year, dispatched successive expeditions up the Missouri River to the Yellowstone, where they established a post. Accompanying them was Hugh Glass, whose remarkable adventures have been justly celebrated (Neihardt, *Song of Hugh Glass,* 1915). Another Ashley party, which actually broke new ground, was that of Smith and Fitzpatrick, which set out from a trading post named Fort Kiowa in southern South Dakota in September 1823 and pushed west—in the following February or March crossing South Paso and entering Green River Valley. From 1824 Ashley continued the business on his own account under a new plan of operations, substituting for the fixed trading post or fort the annual rendezvous, which could be conducted at any accessible point and which enormously extended the range of operations of the men in the field. By using horses on the more direct westward route by land, he also avoided the dangerous and decidedly circuitous water route up the Missouri. To transport supplies to the men who had been left in the mountains, 1823–24, and to bring out their furs, Ashley set out, Nov. 3, 1824, from Fort Atkinson (the site of the present Calhoun, Nebr., some seventeen miles north of Omaha), following the valleys of the Platte, the South Platte, and the Cache la Poudre to the vicinity of Long's Peak, Colo. Traveling in the dead of winter and with insufficient feed for his horses, he accomplished the difficult feat of crossing the eastern Rockies and the lofty and barren plateau of southern Wyoming, reaching Green River near the mouth of the Sandy early in April 1825. The first to embark on the Green, which has been navigated less than half a dozen times and usually with specially constructed craft, he descended its turbulent waters in buffalo-skin boats. "As we passed along between these massy walls, which in a great degree excluded from us the rays of heaven and presented a surface as impassable as their body was impregnable, I was forcibly struck with the gloom which spread over the countenances of my men. They seemed to anticipate (and not far distant, too) a dreadful termination of our voyage, and I must confess that I partook in some degree of what I supposed to be their feelings, for things around us had truly an awful appearance" (Ashley narrative, *Ashley-Smith Explorations,* p. 145). Continuing to a point fifty miles below the Uintah River he retraced his course to the mouth of that stream, where, procuring horses from the Ute Indians, he proceeded by land to the confluence of Henry's Fork with the Green, where he conducted the first rendezvous. Leaving immediately with the accumulated furs, Ashley returned to St. Louis by way of South Pass, the Big Horn, and the Missouri. Again going west in the spring of 1826, he reached the vicinity of Great Salt Lake, where he conducted the annual rendezvous, returning this year by land, covering the distance from Salt Lake to St. Louis in the brief space of seventy days. Retiring from active participation in the fur trade he continued to supply goods to his successors in the business.

After suffering defeat for governor in 1824, Ashley ran for the United States Senate in 1829, but was again defeated. In 1831, however, he was elected to Congress on an anti-Jackson ticket to fill a vacancy caused by the death of a congressman in a duel. Reëlected twice, he retired from national politics in March 1837. Throughout his career in Congress he proved himself an active champion of western measures. On the House Committee on Indian Affairs, he consistently opposed the policy of temporizing with the Indians, "buying peace," as he called it. In 1836 he was again defeated for the governorship of Missouri. Failing health induced him to leave his magnificent residence in north St. Louis to seek change of climate at the home of his father-in-law, Dr. J. W. Moss, in Cooper County, where he died of pneumonia. He was married three times. His first wife, Mary Able, died Nov. 7, 1821. His second wife, Eliza Christy, whom he married Oct. 26, 1825, died June 12, 1830. In October 1832 he married Mrs. Elizabeth (Moss) Wilcox, who survived him.

[The most extensive account of Ashley's career is in Harrison Clifford Dale, *Ashley-Smith Explorations and the Discovery of a Central Route to the Pacific* (1918).

Short biog. sketches are available in Wm. F. Switzler, "Gen. Wm. Henry Ashley," *Am. Mo. Mag.*, 1908, XXXII, 318–30; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of St. Louis City and County* (1883), pp. 196–97; *Encyc. of Va. Biog.* (1915), II, 264; D. M. Grissom in *Encyc. of the Hist. of St. Louis* (1899), I, 53–55. The narrative of his significant expedition of 1824–25 is printed in full in Dale.]

H. C. D.

ASHMEAD, ISAAC (Dec. 22, 1790–Mar. 1, 1870), printer, son of Jacob and Mary (Naglee) Ashmead, was born at Germantown, Pa. He was well connected, and belonged to a family which had come to Philadelphia in the opening year of the colony. Ashmead's father served in the Revolution and he himself in the War of 1812. He was apprenticed to a Philadelphia printer, William Bradford, and about 1821 he established a business of his own which he conducted until his death. In 1828 he married Belina Farren, daughter of Jacob Farren of East Haven, Conn. He was prosperous in business, and a pioneer in various technical matters relating to his trade. He was the first to introduce the composition roller, and the hydraulic press for smooth-pressing wet sheets; the first also—in Philadelphia—to use the power printing press. He was active in church affairs and in establishing evening schools, and was manager of the Philadelphia Institute for apprentices. Probably his most important accomplishment was in connection with Sunday-schools. In 1819 he founded the Sunday and Adult School Union, a body which developed into the widely known American Sunday School Union. This organization, with nation-wide activities, distributed a variety of publications, and Ashmead was its printer. He was a man of wide reading, of scrupulous integrity, and was held in general esteem.

[Geo. F. Wiswell, *Sermon: Legacy of a Good Man* (Mar. 13, 1870); *Phila. Pub. Ledger*, Mar. 3, 1870.]

E. K. A.

ASHMEAD, WILLIAM HARRIS (Sept. 19, 1855–Oct. 17, 1908), entomologist, was the son of Capt. Albert and Elizabeth (Graham) Ashmead and came of excellent colonial ancestry on both sides. Born in Philadelphia, he early in life entered the publishing house of J. B. Lippincott Company, of that city, and as soon as he felt that he had had sufficient experience went to Jacksonville, Fla., and, with a brother, founded a printing house for the publication of agricultural and other books. He established an agricultural daily and weekly newspaper, the *Florida Dispatch*, in which he soon started a scientific department and was drawn to the study of injurious insects. His earlier articles in the *Dispatch* were rather crude, but he was a far-sighted young man and a great worker. He began to contribute to the scientific journals in 1879, and these contributions increased rapidly in number and importance so that at the time of his death his bibliography comprised more than 250 titles. In 1887 he was appointed special field agent of the United States Department of Agriculture, and the following year was made entomologist to the State Agricultural Experiment Station at Lake City, Fla., publishing in this capacity one of the first entomological bulletins issued by any of the state agricultural experiment stations under the so-called Hatch Act. In 1889 he was made an assistant in the Division of Entomology of the Department of Agriculture at Washington. The winter of 1890–91 he spent as a student in Berlin. In 1895 he was made assistant curator of the Division of Insects in the United States National Museum, and held this position until shortly before his death. His large private collection was donated to the Museum in 1898. When he came to Washington in 1889 he was a wealthy man, but a disastrous fire in Jacksonville destroyed the bulk of his property. The great majority of his published papers were of taxonomic character. His two great works were his *Monograph of the North American Proctotrypidæ*, published as Bulletin 45 of the United States National Museum (1893), and his *Classification of the Chalcid Flies or the Superfamily Chalcidoidea*, published by the Carnegie Museum of Pittsburgh in 1904. The preparation of these two volumes would have been enough to have monopolized the working lifetime of any ordinary man, but in addition to these he described many hundreds of new genera and species (607 genera and 3,100 species) and published a number of papers of a broad classificatory nature, several of which revolutionized the views then accepted. The greater part of his work dealt with North American insects, but he studied and described many forms from South America and Japan and, after the Spanish War, very many from the Philippines. He held many offices in scientific societies. There was much in his work of lasting value. He had a keen eye and remarkable judgment in estimating the relative value of structural characters. It was fortunate that his principal interest lay in the parasitic Hymenoptera, since the value of that group in the practical control of insect pests has become more and more evident. It is probable that his admirers did not overestimate the value of his work when they called him "a genius in taxonomy." Personally he was of genial temperament, fond of whist and billiards. In 1878 he married Harriet Holmes.

[*Proc. Entomological Soc. Washington*, X, 126–56, including lists of Ashmead's writings and of his new

genera and species, and accompanied by portrait. Shorter sketches in the *Canadian Entomologist*, XL, 437–38, *Entomological News*, XIX, 397–98, portr.]

L. O. H.

ASHMORE, WILLIAM (Dec. 25, 1824–Apr. 21, 1909), Baptist missionary, was born in Putnam, Ohio, of Scotch-Irish parentage. He was educated in the local schools, in Granville College (now Denison University), from which he received the B.A. degree in 1845, and in the Western Baptist Theological Institute in Covington, Ky. Upon graduation from the seminary in 1848 he entered upon a pastorate in Hamilton, Ohio. In 1849 he received appointment to the China Mission, toward which he set out the following year with his wife, Martha Ann Sanderson. At that time the Mission's chief work for the Chinese was conducted at Bangkok, Siam. Ashmore assumed charge of the Chinese department of the Siam Mission, giving his chief attention to learning Chinese and to personal evangelism. At the end of 1858 in Hongkong he planned the opening of a station in Swatow. Another, however, actually began the work, as Ashmore was forced to return to America by illness. At home he recovered his health and in 1861 married a second wife, Eliza Dunlevy, his first wife having died in 1858. Upon his return to China, the China war was over and Swatow open. He took up his work at the new station which in time became the center of the South China Mission. In 1872 upon the death of Mr. Johnson, who had established the station, Swatow passed into the care of Ashmore. Having at first preferred evangelism as "the more scriptural kind of labor," he became increasingly aware of the need of schools to train a Chinese ministry. To this end he conducted a "theological class," which led to the establishment in 1892 of the Biblical Training School for Men, which ultimately became the Ashmore Seminary in 1905.

Ashmore was often interrupted in his direct missionary work. At home in 1875–76 for his wife's sake, he rendered effective service through articles in the *Journal and Messenger* and addresses before the churches. For three years from 1881 he suffered from partial blindness. At home again in 1885 for the health of his wife, who died despite the furlough, he was elected home secretary of the American Baptist Missionary Union. He actually served in this capacity only during the year 1889, after a further stay in Swatow. From 1890 he not only exercised general oversight of Swatow but was charged by the executive committee at home with inspection of other fields as well. During a visit to Japan he married Mrs. Charlotte A. Brown of that Mission. With one year in America delivering masterly addresses at church gatherings, the next in China at the Swatow Bible Training School, again at home in 1899, he made his last trip to the East with the understanding that he would shortly withdraw from the foreign field and "devote the remainder of his days to service among the home churches." Coming home in 1903 he located in Wollaston, Mass., and for a time wrote constantly for the *Journal and Messenger*. His eightieth birthday was celebrated by his Board with a service in Tremont Temple and by himself with a gift, $10,000 in value, to the Swatow mission. By this gift the seminary which bears his name became possible. He continued its official head until his death.

[*Ann. Reports of the Am. Bapt. Missionary Union*, 1852–1909; "In Memoriam: Wm. Ashmore" in *Bapt. Missionary Mag.*, June 1909; "In Memoriam: Wm. Ashmore" in the *Chinese Recorder and Missionary Jour.*, Aug. 1909; G. W. Hervey, *The Story of Bapt. Missions in Foreign Lands* (1892), pp. 539, 868, 940–41; W. S. Stewart, *Early Bapt. Missionaries and Pioneers* (1926), II, 105–26.]

J. C. A.

ASHMUN, GEORGE (Dec. 25, 1804–July 17, 1870), congressman, was born at Blandford, Mass., the son of Eli Porter Ashmun. His mother was a daughter of the Rev. John Hooker, of Northampton, Mass. To a surprising extent his career duplicated that of his father, who was also born in Blandford, became a lawyer, served several terms in each branch of the Massachusetts legislature, and became a member of the United States Senate, 1816–18. George Ashmun was graduated from Yale College in 1823, studied law, and in 1828 began practise in Springfield, where he continued to make his home until his death. From 1834 to 1851 he was associated in practise with Reuben A. Chapman, later chief justice of the supreme court of Massachusetts. He served five terms in the Massachusetts House of Representatives, in the last (1841) being elected speaker. In 1838 and 1839 he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate. Elected to Congress as a Whig, he represented his district in three successive terms, 1845–51. He early took a strong stand against the extension of slave territory. On Feb. 3, 1846, he offered a resolution (upon which action was prevented) calling upon the President for information "whether the army or navy or any part of either, had been ordered to move toward that Republic [Mexico], and what occurrences had come to the knowledge of the President to require such a movement" (*Congressional Globe*, 29 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 299). When Polk's message (May 11, 1846) announced to Congress, "War exists, and notwithstanding all our

efforts to avoid it, exists by the act of Mexico," Ashmun made a bold speech, citing official documents to prove that the war with Mexico "has been brought upon us by the men who are administering the offices of Government, in disregard of the principles of the Constitution and of their duties to the people of the country" (*Ibid.*, 29 Cong., App., 1 Sess., July 27, 1846, pp. 809–12). He was one of the fourteen who voted against the army supply bill of May 13, 1846. During his years in Congress he served on committees on the Judiciary, on Indian Affairs, and on Rules. He interested himself in efforts to curb the President's power of patronage, and to restrict the immigration of persons liable to become a public charge. He was a great admirer of Daniel Webster, although he did not follow him in abandoning the Wilmot Proviso. Aside from his protests against the Mexican War, he made his strongest impress upon the country by his passionate defense of Webster in two speeches, the first in reply to C. J. Ingersoll (*Ibid.*, 29 Cong., 1 Sess., App., pp. 729–33), and the second in response to a storm of abuse from Charles Allen, following the "7th-of-March Speech" (*Ibid.*, 31 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 687). Through these speeches he won a national reputation, but they caused him to share in Webster's unpopularity, and this led to his retirement from Congress. In 1852 he was chairman of the committee on resolutions in the Whig Convention. In 1860 he was made permanent chairman of the Republican National Convention at Chicago, and "presided over the excited and enthusiastic assemblage with dignity, tact, and ability" (Henry Wilson, *History of the Rise and Fall of the Slave Power in America*, 1874, II, 691). President Lincoln often sought his advice. Within a few hours after the fall of Sumter, Ashmun persuaded Stephen Douglas to go with him to the White House (Apr. 14) where in a long conference Douglas pledged to the President hearty support in efforts to preserve the Union, maintain the government, and defend the capital. In 1866 Ashmun was chosen a delegate to the National Union Convention in Philadelphia, but took no part in its proceedings. For some time he was a director of the Union Pacific Railroad. He was a man of commanding presence and great personal magnetism, eloquent in speech, of fine literary taste and unusual social charm. In western Massachusetts he was unmatched in his profession, and was held in high regard as a clear-headed statesman of conscience and courage. He married Martha E. Hall of Springfield, in 1828.

[The most authoritative data are to be found in *Obit. Rec. Grads. Yale Univ.*, 1870–80, p. 17, and in an extended article in the *Springfield Republican*, July 18, 1870, attributed to his life-long friend, Samuel Bowles.]

G. H. H.

ASHMUN, JEHUDI (Apr. 21, 1794–Aug. 25, 1828), colonial agent, remembered chiefly for his heroic and vital connection with the colonizing of Liberia, was the second son of Samuel Ashmun, and one of a numerous family of scanty means in the backwoods settlement of Champlain, N.Y. He nevertheless succeeded in gaining a classical education; after three years at Middlebury College and one at the University of Vermont, he was graduated at the latter institution in 1816. He entered the Congregational ministry and became principal and organizer of the Maine Charity School at Hampden, the germ of the Bangor Theological Seminary. Success was crowning two years' hard work when misunderstandings arising from a hasty marriage on Oct. 7, 1818 to Miss C. L. Gray, led to his resignation. Almost penniless and without prospects, he went by sea to Baltimore and engaged in several unsuccessful journalistic ventures. These, however, led to employment in Washington as editor of the *Theological Repertory*, a monthly periodical of the Episcopal Church, which he later joined. He kept the *Repertory* on its feet for several years, contributing himself a number of able articles. Among these were several in support of the work of the American Colonization Society, whose Liberian enterprise had captured his imagination. He also wrote a sympathetic biography of the Rev. Samuel Bacon, one of the agents of the society who had gone over with the first colonists.

This interest led to his appointment as a representative of the United States Government on a mission to the colony, and so determined his destiny. In 1819 an appropriation had been made by Congress to provide a station in Africa for the return of smuggled slaves rescued by revenue officers. The fund had already been drawn upon to establish a colony in Liberia. Now a few "recaptured Africans" were to be sent back from Baltimore on the brig *Strong*. Thirty-seven new colonists of the Society were given passage. Ashmun was put in charge. He expected to return on the *Strong*, and his wife accompanied him. They landed Aug. 9, 1822. He found the colony in a desperate situation. Of the 114 settlers sent over in 1820 and 1821 many had succumbed to fever; nearly all the survivors were on the sick-list; their supplies were exhausted; the rainy season had set in; the white agents appointed to protect them had deserted; and, worst of all, the native chiefs were threatening an attack. Heroically determining to remain, Ashmun assumed leadership in caring for the sick and preparing

for the attack. Only twenty-seven men were capable of bearing arms. A few small field-pieces formed his main reliance. The expected assault was delayed, permitting earthworks to be thrown up, trees and brush cleared away, and the little force drilled. But the fatiguing labor brought on fever. Ashmun was prostrated; his wife sickened and died before his eyes; at one time scarcely a man in the colony was well. At length on Nov. 11 just before daybreak 800 savages attacked. In a desperate contest the colonists finally succeeded in bringing a brass field-piece to bear upon the dense ranks. The effect at such short range was decisive. "Every shot literally spent its force in a solid mass of human flesh. Their fire suddenly terminated. A savage yell was raised . . . and the whole host disappeared" (Ashmun, *post*, p. 29). A second attack on Dec. 2 was decisively repulsed, supplies and ammunition having been replenished by a chance English vessel on the very day before. The unusual sound of a midnight cannonade attracted another vessel, of the English navy, having on board the experienced African explorer, Capt. Laing. Through Laing's tactful mediation a peace with the native chiefs was arranged and the crisis passed. In May 1823 a new agent Dr. Ayres, arrived. In the emergency Ashmun had without authority assumed the position of agent. He now found himself superseded, his arrangements upset, his sacrifices unappreciated, his drafts dishonored, and his motives questioned. After stirring up the colony to the point of insurrection, Ayres at a touch of fever betook himself to America. The colonists, again deserted by their official protectors, turned to Ashmun who forgot his wrongs in redoubled efforts. In 1824 the Rev. R. R. Gurley, secretary of the Society, was sent over to investigate the charges against Ashmun. He not only exonerated him, but became his warmest admirer and ultimately his biographer. Ashmun, now fully authorized agent, remained the vigorous and successful head of the enterprise until 1828. In 1826 was published his *History of the American Colony in Liberia from December, 1821 to 1823*. His health failing in 1828, he sought, in vain, relief in the West Indies, whence he sailed for New Haven, which he reached on Aug. 10. On Aug. 25 he died.

[R. R. Gurley, *Life of Jehudi Ashmun, Late Colonial Agent in Liberia* (1835); Ashmun's articles, letters, and reports in the *Am. Colonization Soc. Reports*, the *African Repository*, and the *Theological Repertory*; J. H. T. McPherson, "Hist. of Liberia," *Johns Hopkins Studies* (1891); Sir Harry Johnston, *Liberia* (1906), I, 129–51, II, 813; Leonard Bacon, *A Discourse Preached in the Center Church, in New Haven, Aug. 27, 1828, at the Funeral of Jehudi Ashmun, Esq.* (New Haven, 1828).]

J. H. T. M.

ASPINWALL, WILLIAM (May 23, 1743–Apr. 16, 1823), physician, son of Thomas and Joanna (Gardner) Aspinwall, was descended from Peter Aspinwall, one of the 4,000 Puritans of 1630 who followed the *Mayflower*. He was born on the ancestral farm in Brookline, Mass., in the house which had been built by Peter in 1660. He was educated by a clergyman, the Rev. Amos Adams, obtained his degree at Harvard in 1764, and then studied medicine, first with Dr. Benjamin Gale of Killingworth, Conn., author of *A Treatise on Small Pox Inoculation*, and later with Dr. William Shippen of Philadelphia, who gave him a certificate for skill in 1769. He was in the ranks at the battle of Lexington and carried from the field the body of Isaac Gardner, whose daughter, Susanna, he later married. Immediately after Lexington he applied for a commission in the Continental army but was persuaded by Dr. Joseph Warren to enter the military medical department, in which he was appointed brigade surgeon and deputy director to an army hospital at Jamaica Plain, Mass. After peace was declared, Dr. Aspinwall opened at Brookline, Mass., an inoculation hospital for small-pox, the second of its kind in America. The "business," as it was called, prospered until the coming of vaccination in which Aspinwall recognized a method superior to that which he had been using: he thereupon closed the doors of his hospital. "This new inoculation . . . is no sham," he wrote. "As a man of humanity, I rejoice in it, although it will take from me a handsome annual income." His private practise, however, remained large, and in going his rounds on horseback he often covered as much as forty miles in one day. Although slated for appointment in a new "Massachusetts College of Physicians," he withdrew his name from the petition for a charter on becoming convinced that the proposed institution would injure the already well-established medical department at Harvard. He was a leader in the town affairs of Brookline as treasurer, warden, representative to the General Court, state senator, and member of the governor's council. An accident in youth lost him the use of one eye, and late in life he was afflicted with a cataract in the other, so that, despite an operation, total blindness resulted. He was married in 1776 to Susanna Gardner, by whom he had seven children. A portrait by Gilbert Stuart, hanging in the house of his abolitionist son-in-law, Lewis Tappan of New York, is said to have been spared by anti-slavery rioters because they mistook it for a picture of George Washington.

[A. A. Aspinwall, *Aspinwall Geneal.* (1901); James Thacher, *Am. Medic. Biog.* (1828), I, 91–95; W. L.

Burrage in *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920), pp. 44–45; J. M. Toner, *Medic. Men of the Revolution* (1876), pp. 11, 96; Ebenezer Alden, *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.*, Oct. 19, 1853.]

J. A. S.

ASPINWALL, WILLIAM HENRY (Dec. 16, 1807–Jan. 18, 1875), merchant, was born in New York City, a posthumous son of John Aspinwall, merchant and son of a sea-captain. His mother was Susan Howland. On receiving a common school training he was apprenticed to his uncles, G. G. and S. Howland, sons of a New London whaler, who had built up a leading business house in New York, which carried on a heavy trade with Mexico, England, and the Mediterranean countries. In 1832, Aspinwall was admitted as a partner with a fourth interest which meant an annual profit of about $15,000. In 1837 the older men turned the business over to William Edgar Howland and Aspinwall with a capital of $200,000. Howland and Aspinwall withstood the panic of that year, continuing to handle the largest general trading, exporting, and importing business of any house in New York. The years following 1837 were treacherous ones for a newly established mercantile house. The credit for successful carrying on was probably due to the well-established reputation of the Howlands as much as to the executive ability and far-sightedness of their young successors. At any rate, the firm retained its heavy trade with England and the Mediterranean lands and remained without a rival in the Pacific trade and scarcely an equal in the West and East Indies shipping. Favored by the president of Venezuela, Howland and Aspinwall had almost a monopoly of the American trade with that republic. With this and the Mexican business as an entering wedge, the concern made great strides in the Latin-American countries. Its fleet of clipper ships was well known in the chief ports; and its profits were rapidly making Aspinwall a leading merchant and capitalist of New York.

Affected by the gold fever of 1849–51, he resigned active leadership in the firm to enter the Pacific Railroad & Panama Steamship Company. In 1850, largely through his efforts, the New York legislature granted a charter for the Panama Railroad incorporated at $1,000,000. He and his associates, Lloyd Aspinwall, a brother, Samuel W. Comstock, Henry Chauncey, and John L. Stevens, obtained from New Granada the privilege of building a railway across the isthmus, and within five years the forty-nine miles of road were completed under the engineers George M. Tooten and John C. Trautwine. The town at the eastern terminal was named Aspinwall in honor of the man who more than any one else was responsible for the success of the hazardous undertaking. In 1848, Aspinwall, Chauncey, Richard Alsop, the Howlands, and Edwin Bartlett founded the Pacific Mail Steamship Company, incorporated under a New York statute for twenty years. This was considered highly speculative for such a conservative investor as Aspinwall, and its failure was generally predicted. California gold soon decided otherwise. Two years later, its capital was increased from $400,000 to $2,000,000, so large were the returns from carrying by way of Panama men and supplies to California and gold back to the East. With the completion of the railroad, the Aspinwall interests had control of a through water-rail route from New York to San Francisco and a monopoly of the carrying trade until the completion of the Union Pacific Railroad (1869). By 1859, the railroad alone had netted about $6,000,000. When Aspinwall resigned the presidency of this corporation (1856), he was one of the richest men of New York.

During the Civil War, he was an active supporter of the Lincoln policies, a founder and vice-president of the Union League Club, and, along with John M. Forbes a secret emissary of the President to urge the British Government to stop the building and outfitting of iron-clad rams under construction at the Laird shipyards for the Confederacy. After this time, Aspinwall was not actively engaged in business, though he or a representative of his house held a place on innumerable boards of directors of railroads, shipping concerns, banks, and insurance companies. Indeed, Howland & Aspinwall had become more of a banking and brokerage than trading firm. Aspinwall never sought or held political office, though his interest in politics was keen. He was long a leader in the Chamber of Commerce, active in social life, a trustee of the Lenox Library, a charter member of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals (1866), a patron of the drama and of fine arts, and owner of one of New York's finest art galleries, which he opened to the public. He was married to Anna L. Breck of Bristol, Pa. His later years were spent in his town house, which his hospitality made a social center, in his show place near Tarrytown on the Hudson, and in extended travel. On his death, the wealthy old merchant could be described as a good man, generous if not open-handed, lenient to debtors, and willing to meet bankrupt merchants more than halfway.

[*Diary of Philip Hone* (1889), ed. by Bayard Tuckerman, I, 101, 283, 360, II, 82, 243, 245, 270; J. A. Scoville, *Old Merchants of N.Y.C.* (1862), pp. 306–14; J. G. Wilson, *Memorial Hist. of the City of N.Y.* (1893), III, 422, 490, IV, 88, 369, 451; *N.Y. the World's Me-*

tropolis (1924), ed. by W. T. Bonner, p. 723; Moses Yale Beach, *Wealth and Pedigree of the Wealthy Citizens of N.Y.C.* (4th ed., 1842), p. 4; *N.Y. Times, N.Y. Tribune,* Jan. 19, 1875.]

R. J. P.

ASTOR, JOHN JACOB (July 17, 1763–Mar. 29, 1848), fur trader, capitalist, was born in the village of Waldorf, Duchy of Baden, Germany. His father, Jacob, according to Parton, was "a jovial, good-for-nothing butcher, . . . much more at home in the beer-house than at his own fireside," and though his mother was industrious, saving, and capable, the family was often in want. Of the three older sons, George and Henry left home at an early age, the former establishing himself in a musical-instrument house in London and the latter in a butcher's shop in New York City. After the death of the mother and the advent of a stepmother, the third son, John Jacob, decided to shift for himself. A strong, healthy lad of about seventeen, with enough schooling to enable him to read, write, and cipher, and with a crown or two in his pocket, he started afoot for the Rhine. On his way he is said to have sat down under a tree and made three resolutions—to be honest, to be industrious, and not to gamble. He got work on a timber raft, and by the time it reached the mouth of the river he had earned enough to pay his passage to England. On his arrival in London he found employment with his brother. He remained there about three years, saving money, studying the language, and learning everything he could about the land of his dreams, the United States. On the news of the signing of the Treaty of Paris in the fall of 1783 he decided to cross the Atlantic. He embarked in November, with about twenty-five dollars in money, a merchandise stock of seven flutes, and a passage paper entitling him to a berth in the steerage with sailor's fare of salt beef and biscuit. The vessel entered Chesapeake Bay early in January, but before a landing could be made was frozen in, to remain ice-bound for more than two months. Among the passengers whose acquaintance he made was a German immigrant who had been in America before and had successfully traded for furs with the Indians. Astor questioned this man persistently regarding everything connected with the fur trade, and by the time the vessel was freed he had chosen his future occupation.

He arrived in New York City in March 1784, and was welcomed by his brother Henry. Of his first years in the city the accounts are conflicting. There is a story that he served for some time as an apprentice to a baker, George Dieterich, for whom he peddled cakes, and another that his brother Henry got him a place as a helper, at two dollars a week and board, in the fur store of Robert Bowne, an aged and benevolent Quaker. Both Irving and Chittenden, on the other hand, imply that he became at once a factor in the trade and assert that in the same year (Chittenden says in the early summer) he returned with a cargo of furs to England. In 1786 he had his own place of business, a small shop in Water Street, where for a time he also sold musical instruments. In the same year (or possibly in 1785) he married Sarah Todd, a connection of the Brevoorts, who brought him $300 in cash, a clear head for business, and an especially keen sense in the valuation of furs. He worked hard, constantly planned new ventures, and bought and sold with a talent for bargaining which always kept in view, says Parton, "the simple object of giving the least and getting the most." Often he made trips to the nearby frontiers, once at least going as far as Mackinaw. The Jay treaty, with the sequent evacuation of the frontier forts by the British in the summer of 1796 and the modifying of trade restrictions between the United States and Canada, greatly increased his opportunities. By an arrangement with the Northwest Company he was now able to add to his stock by direct importations from Montreal. His energy was tireless, and his business continued to expand. By 1800, when he had amassed a quarter of a million dollars, he was acknowledged to be the leading factor in the trade.

About this time he began to ship to the Orient. On one of his visits to London an official in the East India House, whom he had known as a boy, had given him a ship license to trade freely in any port monopolized by the East India Company. A merchant friend in New York was induced to fit out a vessel which, carrying this license, voyaged to Canton and back, making profits that netted Astor $50,000. About this time, also, he began to make large purchases of city real estate, which later was to form the bulk of the Astor fortune. He now emerged from the somewhat squalid quarters in which he had dwelt, and the year 1801 saw the family handsomely housed near the corner of Broadway and Vesey St., later to become famous as the location of the Astor House.

The Louisiana Purchase opened to him illimitable vistas of the extension of the fur trade; and the reports that followed the return of Lewis and Clark in the fall of 1806 set in motion his energies toward the penetration of the West. In the following year he began to contest the hold of the Mackinaw Company, a Canadian organization, in the Upper Mississippi Valley. On Apr. 6, 1808, he incorporated, through a charter granted by the New York legislature, all his widespread interests in the American Fur Company, of which he

was the sole owner. He would doubtless at this time have entered the Far West through St. Louis, but the hostility of the traders of the frontier capital made the project hazardous. His plans were slowly forming, and by another year they had crystallized into a colossal project—a scheme, says Chittenden, "as feasible as it was magnificent." He would plant a central establishment at the mouth of the Columbia, with subordinate posts at various points in the interior. Furs would thus be gathered where they were most abundant and collected at the point at once nearest to the sources and to the richest market, China. A fleet of ships would carry them to Canton, there sell and reload, again sell and reload in Europe, and finally return to New York, while an annual ship from New York would supply the establishment with trading goods for the Indians and white trappers. Another year was spent in preliminaries, and on June 23, 1810, articles of agreement forming the Pacific Fur Company were signed by Astor and four others, three of whom were British subjects formerly with the Northwest Company. To forestall competition this company had been offered by Astor a one-third interest in the new organization. It had declined the offer, however, in the belief that it could itself control the territory, and it immediately planned a descent upon the Oregon country. Astoria was founded in the spring of 1811. But though the enterprise was begun with high hopes and prosecuted with great energy, it was destined to a brief life. The vessel that had carried the pioneers was lost, with all its crew, in June through an Indian massacre and an explosion; a party from the Northwest Company arrived shortly afterward to contest the territory, and in January 1813 came news that war had broken out between England and America and that the post was in imminent danger of capture. On Oct. 23 the post and property were sold by Duncan McDougall, temporarily in charge, to representatives of the Northwest Company for $58,000, a mere fraction of their value. On Nov. 30 a British naval vessel arrived, and on Dec. 12 its captain took possession of all the territory and rechristened the post Fort George.

But though Astor suffered reverses during the war he enjoyed more than compensating gains. His Manhattan real estate continued to increase in value. From the Government also he added enormously to his wealth. During the first two years of the war, said Greeley's *Tribune,* he loaned the Government only small sums; but in 1814, when its desperate need compelled it to pay ruinous toll for whatever money it could raise, he combined with Girard and Parish of Philadelphia to buy a large block of loan bonds at from eighty to eighty-two cents on the dollar, paying for them in bank notes worth approximately only half their face value. With the signing of peace, Astor turned again to the plan of reaching the trans-Mississippi region from the East. Through his efforts Congress was persuaded to pass the act of Apr. 29, 1816, which excluded, except by executive permit, aliens from engaging in the fur trade other than as employees. By 1817 Astor was in possession of all the Mississippi Valley posts of the Northwest Company as well as of the Southwest Company (the latter a reorganization of the old Mackinaw Company, in which he had bought a controlling interest before the war). Against the bitter opposition of the St. Louis traders he now pushed his operations toward the Missouri. In the winter of 1821–22 he succeeded in getting Congress to abolish the government trading posts which had been begun in 1796, and in the spring of 1822 he established in St. Louis the western department of the American Fur Company. Its chief competitor, the Columbia Fur Company, was absorbed in 1827, and through its field organization, the Upper Missouri Outfit, it soon monopolized the territory, afterward pushing to the west and south and putting itself in direct competition with the Rocky Mountain Fur Company of Fitzpatrick, Sublette, and Bridger. It was a bold and vigorously maintained campaign, but the returns were disappointing. The company's losses from Indians were heavy, the Rocky Mountain men were the superiors of its own men both as trappers and traders, and, moreover, the fur trade, due to changes in fashion, had begun to decline. Astor grew tired of the business, and on June 1, 1834, he sold all his fur interests. He did not again engage in commerce, but spent the remainder of his days, assisted by his son, William Backhouse Astor [*q.v.*] in administering his estate. He died in his New York home, by far the richest man in America. He had piled up a fortune conservatively estimated at $20,000,000, and all of it, except some two millions distributed in bequests, went to his son. Most of the bequests were to members of the family. He left $400,000 for the founding of a library, and to his faithful employee of many years, Fitz-Greene Halleck, the poet, he left a meager annuity of $200.

Astor is described by the *Tribune* as stout and square built, about five feet nine inches in height, with a high, square forehead and somewhat heavy features. Either he was good-natured or he held command of his passions, for his manner was urbane. He "wrote a wretched scrawl, setting spelling and grammar equally at defiance," and

yet everything he wrote revealed the virile force of the man. He never overcome his marked German accent. Regarding his character there is disagreement. Irving was his eulogist and ascribes to him both benevolence and public spirit; in fact, his frequent laudation of the man prompted the charge that he was a paid retainer, but it seems to have been baseless, Irving himself declaring that he had never accepted the slightest pecuniary aid from the magnate. Other contemporaries saw Astor in a different light. "He has exhibited at best but the ingenious powers of a self-invented money-making machine," said Bennett's *Herald* on his decease, while Greeley's *Tribune* was equally uncomplimentary. Parton, though viewing him as "one of the ablest, boldest, and most successful operators that ever lived," found him selfish, grasping, and ruthless. The stories of his extreme parsimony as well as of his exacting acquisitiveness as creditor and landlord are many, and his merciless aggression in prosecuting the fur trade is attested by official documents that cannot be questioned. His influence at Washington, combined with his great wealth and his extensive organization, enabled him to carry on his operations with a high hand. His employees on the frontier (it was reported from Green Bay about 1818), if interfered with by government agents, threatened them with dismissal; and with his increasing monopolization of the field they grew more arrogant and lawless. "They entertain, as I know to be a fact," wrote an agent in a letter to Secretary of War Cass, dated St. Louis, Oct. 31, 1831 (quoted by Myers), "no sort of respect for our citizens, agents, officers or the Government or its laws or general policy." His men shared with other traders, and of course with his approval, in the work of debauching the Indians with liquor in order to get their furs more cheaply. The amassing of wealth was his ruling passion, and few devices that could contribute to that end were neglected by him. Though in his later days he wished to be portrayed as a broad-minded patriot and even a humanitarian, there is evidence that this ruling passion still possessed him at the close.

[James Parton, *Life of John Jacob Astor* (1865); Pierre M. Irving, *The Life and Letters of Washington Irving* (1857); H. M. Chittenden, *The Am. Fur Trade of the Far West* (1902); Gustavus Myers, *Hist. of the Great Am. Fortunes* (1910); Elizabeth L. Gebhard, *The Life and Ventures of the Original John Jacob Astor* (1915); Grace Flandrau, *Astor and the Ore. Country* (pamphlet, n.d.); Stella M. Drumm, "More About Astorians," *Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, XXIV, 4 (1923); Sydney and Marjorie Greenbie, *Gold of Ophir* (1925); Walter Barrett (J. A. Scoville), *The Old Merchants of N. Y.C.* (1863); *Sen. Doc. 60*, 17 Cong., 1 Sess. (1821–22); *Sen. Doc. 90*, 22 Cong., 1 Sess. (1831–32); the *N. Y. True Sun*, Mar. 30, 1848; the *N. Y. Weekly Tribune*, Apr. 8, 1848; the *N. Y. Herald*, Apr. 5, 1848.]

W.J.G.

Astor

ASTOR, JOHN JACOB (June 10, 1822–Feb. 22, 1890), capitalist, the third of the name in America, was born in New York City, the son of William Backhouse and Margaret (Armstrong) Astor. After graduating from Columbia College in 1839 he studied at the University of Göttingen. Later he entered the Harvard Law School, from which he graduated in 1842. Shortly afterward he married Charlotte Gibbes, of a prominent but somewhat impoverished South Carolina family. At the end of a year spent in the practise of law he entered upon what was to be his lifework in the office of the family estate. At the beginning of the Civil War he enlisted and was made a colonel. His main service was on the staff of Gen. McClellan. He is said to have been a devoted student of military affairs. In later life, when he made a practise of regularly attending the meetings of the Loyal Legion, he often spoke of his army days as the best period of his life.

On leaving the army he resumed his employment in the office of the estate. Of his career thereafter few outstanding events are recorded. Like his father and grandfather, he abstained as a rule from political activities, and his one deviation from the rule is not to his credit. In 1871, when the Tweed ring was at the height of its power, Astor and five other prominent business men—Moses Taylor, Marshall O. Roberts, E. D. Brown, George K. Sistare, and Edward Schell—were induced to make a perfunctory examination of Controller Connolly's books and to hand in a report highly commending Connolly for his honesty and faithfulness to duty. It is hardly credible that either Astor or any other of these men could have been unaware of the gigantic frauds then being committed; and the collapse of the Tweed ring three years later placed all of them in a somewhat sorry light. The death of his father in 1875 brought Astor to the headship of the more important part of the estate, which required the greater administrative care. He continued the policy of buying urban real estate and always kept on deposit a large sum of money, so as to be able to take instant advantage of bargains offered. He never insured his houses, believing that he could better afford the occasional loss by fire of a whole block of buildings than the payment of the large sums required for insurance policies. He had a few business interests outside of his real estate; he became a director in the Western Union and in several banks, but it is unlikely that these affiliations engaged much of his time. He had few ambitions apart from business. It is said that President Hayes offered him the post of minister to Great Britain and that the offer did not interest him. The fostering of the Astor Library was his chief public concern. For

some years he served as its treasurer. In 1879 he deeded the institution three lots on Lafayette Place, on which he subsequently erected the extension known as the North Library Building at a cost of $250,000. The last ten years of his life were uneventful. He died at his home in New York City, of angina pectoris.

Astor was about six feet tall. His eyes were gray, and the complexion of his full and somewhat rounded face was ruddy. His later portraits show a mustache and flowing side whiskers, worn in English style. His manner, though reserved, was courteous. Like his father he was extremely methodical. Though generous in large matters, in small ones he was calculating and even parsimonious; he would take time to rewrite a telegram in order to save a word. For many years he practised, with his wife, an extreme simplicity of household management. About the time of the death of his father, it is said, his wife persuaded him that the matter of simplicity had been somewhat overdone. After that, though display of all kinds was carefully avoided, there came lavish expenditures for entertainments, paintings, furniture, and books. A first-class chef was employed, and Astor became known as a connoisseur of wines and cigars. Mrs. Astor's collection of old laces, presented to the Metropolitan Museum in 1887, after her decease, must have cost what most persons would regard as a fortune. Both Astor and his wife expended large amounts in charities and public benefactions. The sum contributed to the Astor Library probably totaled $450,000. Large sums were given to the New York Cancer Hospital, St. Luke's Hospital, and the Metropolitan Museum, while the Children's Aid Society was sufficiently financed to make it one of the foremost institutions of practical benevolence in the country. Trinity Church, of which for many years Astor was a vestryman, was a special object of his favor. There were also private benevolences of many kinds, which are believed to have amounted to several hundred thousand dollars. The fortune left by Astor is estimated at from $75,000,000 to $100,000,000.

[*Ann. Cyc.*, 1890; Morgan Dix, "Mr. J. J. Astor and His American Ancestry," *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, July 1891; Gustavus Myers, *Hist. of the Great Am. Fortunes*, I (1910); obituaries in the metropolitan press, Feb. 23, 1890, of which those in the *Tribune*, *Sun*, and *Times* are the best.]

W. J. G.

ASTOR, JOHN JACOB (July 13, 1864–Apr. 15, 1912), capitalist, inventor, and the fourth of the name in America, was born at Rhinebeck, N. Y., the son of William and Caroline Webster (Schermerhorn) Astor. He graduated at Harvard, with the degree of B.S., in 1888. The next two years he spent in foreign travel. In 1891 he returned to the United States to assume the management of the family estate and shortly afterward was married to Ava Lowle Willing of Philadelphia, by whom he had one son and one daughter. For two years (1895–96) he served on the staff of Gov. Levi P. Morton, with the rank of colonel. In 1897 he built the Astoria section of the palatial Waldorf-Astoria Hotel. At the beginning of the Spanish War in 1898 he was one of the first to offer his services to the government. He placed his palatial yacht, the *Nourmahal*, at the disposal of the Navy Department and equipped at his own expense a battery of artillery for service in the Philippines. Commissioned a lieutenant-colonel of volunteers, he assisted Major-General Breckinridge, inspector-general of the army, in the inspection of camps and troops at Chickamauga. He was later assigned to the staff of Major-General Shafter and served in the operations ending in the surrender of Santiago. At the close of the war he was recommended by Shafter for promotion to the brevet rank of colonel on account of "faithful and meritorious services," and this rank was later conferred.

Astor nourished for a time a literary ambition, and in 1894 published a semi-scientific novel, *A Journey in Other Worlds*. But his major interest apart from his business lay in the field of mechanics. He spent much time in experimenting with new devices, and invented, among other things, a bicycle brake, a pneumatic road improver (which seems to have been too fancifully conceived to be of practical use), and an improved turbine engine. In a letter published in the *Scientific American*, Nov. 8, 1902, he reported that all his applications for patents on marine turbines had been granted and that he dedicated them to the public. While his work as manager of the family estate was intermittent, during 1902 and 1903 he devoted himself to it assiduously and proved himself an able administrator. He had other business interests as well, being a director in the Western Union, the Equitable Life, the Illinois Central, and the Mercantile Trust Company. Astor and his first wife were divorced on Nov. 8, 1909. On Sept. 9, 1911, he married Madeline Talmage Force of New York City. Later, with his wife, he traveled in Europe. Beginning their return, they took passage on the ill-fated *Titanic*, which in mid-seas struck an iceberg and went down. Mrs. Astor was rescued, but Astor was drowned. The testimony of many survivors bears witness that in the catastrophe he showed a disregard of self and displayed great coolness and courage.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; H. H. Lewis, "The Quiet Control of a Vast Estate," *World's Work*, Nov. 1902; R. H. Greene, "Col. John Jacob Astor," *N.Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, Jan. 1913; *N.Y. Times*, Apr. 16, 1912, and N. Y. *Sun*, Apr. 17, 1912.]

W.J.G.

ASTOR, WILLIAM BACKHOUSE (Sept. 19, 1792–Nov. 24, 1875), capitalist, was born in New York City, the son of John Jacob Astor [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Todd) Astor and the younger brother of John Jacob Astor the second. Until the age of sixteen he attended the public schools, helping his father at the store after school hours and in vacation times. He was then sent to Heidelberg, and after two years to Göttingen, where he chose as his tutor a fellow-student, von Bunsen, later known as "the Chevalier," with whom for a time he traveled. In 1815 he returned to America and was taken into partnership by his father under the firm name of John Jacob Astor & Son. In 1818 he married Margaret, daughter of Gen. John Armstrong of Rhinebeck, N. Y., secretary of war under Madison, and thus became allied with one of the first families of the state. His part in the operations of the firm and of its chief subsidiary, the American Fur Company, though important, was always subordinate. Though he seems to have been nominally the head of the fur company during the last four or five years of the Astor ownership, the father, aided by Ramsay Crooks [*q.v.*], continued to dictate policies and methods, and it was the father who decided upon the sale of the company and the terms of purchase. The son's share in laying the foundations of the estate was thus hardly more than that of an industrious and faithful head clerk. All the bold plans by which it was built up were originated by the father. It is as his father's efficient coadjutor that the son is best known and after the father's death as the administrator and augmentor of the Astor millions.

Through a legacy of $500,000 left him by his uncle, Henry Astor, and his own share of the income of the Astor business, he became a man of great wealth. On the death of his father in 1848 he succeeded to the rank of the richest man in the United States. The elder son, John Jacob, was feeble-minded, and the bulk of the fortune—some $18,000,000 out of $20,000,000—was left to William, the remainder having been distributed in various bequests. The father's policy of buying real estate in the section of New York City south of Fifty-ninth St. between Fourth and Seventh Aves. was continued by the son until the greater part of the fortune was invested in land and buildings. He thus became commonly known as the "landlord of New York." The rapid growth of population in the metropolis greatly increased land values and brought to him a constantly augmenting rent-roll. The pressure for living quarters soon converted many of the Astor buildings into crowded tenements, for which they were wholly unfitted. Complaints of the foul and reeking condition of these habitations became general. For many years Astor was unmoved and steadfastly opposed every proposal for building and street improvements, but by 1861 he had come to adopt a wiser policy. During the next twelve years he demolished many of the old rookeries and erected in their place simple and substantial buildings appropriate to the various localities. The improvements made, however, could have constituted little more than a patch on a great social sore. Most of Astor's time was spent in close application to his business. He was extremely methodical, and for many years made a practise of leaving his home exactly at nine and walking to his place of business. Up to four days before his death he was at his desk daily, hard at work. He died at his home in New York City, of pneumonia.

Astor in his seventy-sixth year was described by a contemporary, Matthew Hale Smith, as "a tall, heavy built man, with a decided German look, a countenance blank, eyes small and contracted, a look sluggish and unimpassioned, unimpressible in his feelings, taciturn and unsocial" (*Sunshine and Shadow in New York*, 1868, p. 186). Others have portrayed him as a man of dignified culture, a student of books and affairs, and one who, though he made no new literary friends, retained as associates the scholars and penmen who had been the friends of his father. There is word also of his many and generous benefactions, of his liberality to his tenants, and of his high sense of honor. Certain it is that he corrected at once some of the niggardly bequests of his father. He raised, for instance, the annuity of Fitz-Greene Halleck from $200 to $1,500. Also, he gave $50,000 to St. Luke's Hospital. He made the Astor Library his particular care. Under his direction the edifice was completed in May 1853. Two years later he presented to the trustees an adjoining lot, and he erected thereon a similar structure, completed in 1859. His various gifts to the library totalled about $550,000. His fortune, estimated to have been from $45,000,000 to $50,000,000, he divided equally between his sons, John Jacob and William.

[The long obituaries in the New York newspapers, the *World*, *Tribune*, *Times*, and *Sun*, give a great deal of what purports to be information, but much of it is conflicting. The accumulation of the Astor fortunes and their later management is treated at length by Gustavus Myers, *Hist. of the Great Am. Fortunes*, I (1910). See also *Ann. Cyc.*, 1875.]

W.J.G.

ASTOR, WILLIAM WALDORF (Mar. 31, 1848–Oct. 18, 1919), capitalist, journalist, was born in New York City, the son of John Jacob Astor, 1822–90 [*q.v.*], and Charlotte (Gibbes) Astor. From his mother he derived a taste for intellectual pursuits. He was trained by private tutors and later was graduated from Columbia Law School. For a time he was associated with a law firm. Later he was employed under his father in the management of the family estate, but he soon tired of the work and withdrew. Persuaded, against the family tradition, to enter politics, he was elected (1877) to the Assembly as a Republican. Two years later he was elected to the Senate. He was twice a candidate for Congress, but each time was defeated. He was married on June 6, 1878, to Mary Dahlgren Paul of Philadelphia. In August 1882 he was appointed by President Arthur minister to Italy, a post which he retained for three years. A period of literary activity followed. In 1885 he published *Valentino: An Historical Romance of the Sixteenth Century in Italy;* in 1889 *Sforza, a Story of Milan;* in 1900 *Pharaoh's Daughter and Other Stories.*

On the death of his father in February 1890 he succeeded to the management of the family estate, with a personal fortune estimated at $100,000,000. He erected the Waldorf section of what ultimately became the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel. By now he had come to feel a strong dislike for his native land. It was induced, according to report, partly by his political experiences and partly by the contest waged between his wife and his aunt for the leadership of what was then known as the "four hundred" of metropolitan society. It was said further that his wife, excited over newspaper accounts of kidnappers, had come to be alarmed for the safety of her children. In September 1890 he removed with his family to England and took up his residence in an imposing mansion in London. In 1893 he bought the liberal daily newspaper, the *Pall Mall Gazette,* with its weekly edition, *The Budget,* and changed the two journals into conservative organs. The same year he established a monthly periodical, the *Pall Mall Magazine.* He then grew tired of journalism, and though from time to time contributing an article or an editorial, he rarely visited his office. Years later (1911) he bought, for some unknown reason, a Sunday newspaper, *The Observer.* Three years later he disposed of all his publications, the daily and the Sunday journals going to his son, Maj. Waldorf Astor, who shortly afterward sold them.

In 1899 he became a British subject. His dislike of his former compatriots appears in much that he wrote and said. An article on his famous grandfather, published in the *Pall Mall Magazine* for June 1899, served as a vehicle for a particularly vigorous criticism of American character and customs. Despite this antipathy he was keenly sensitive to American opinion. In July 1892, in an effort to learn what Americans thought of him, he caused a false report of his death to be published here. He was not to be enlightened, for the hoax was discovered before any obituary had appeared. His life in England was characterized by vast expenditures, a somewhat obtrusive effort to win social recognition, and a series of quarrels and squabbles over insignificant matters. He bought several estates, one of them embracing the Ann Boleyn castle at Hever, Kent, and he entertained lavishly. The Hever castle he restored at a cost said to be more than $10,000,000. On Jan. 1, 1916, he was made a peer, with the title Baron Astor of Hever Castle, and on June 3 of the following year was made a viscount. He had achieved a desired social distinction, but not without strong opposition. A considerable part of the English press denounced his elevation to the peerage as an act of recompense for financial support to the party then in power.

His estimated wealth shortly before his death was $80,000,000. On his removal to England he had reinvested a large part of his funds in London real estate. In August 1919, presumably to avoid the inheritance tax, he conveyed all his property in America to a trust in favor of his sons, Maj. Waldorf and Capt. J. J. Astor. His temperament was eccentric and his disposition irascible. He was both vain and contentious. "A strange, crotchety man," he was dubbed. His numerous quarrels culminated in the episode in which an affront was offered to Admiral Sir Berkeley Milne, which brought about a strong reaction against him in English social circles. After that he gradually retired from society. He died at Western House, Brighton.

[The basic data appear in the Am. and the British *Who's Who;* articles in many journals and periodicals over the whole period from 1890 to 1919 inclusive; obituaries in the *London Times, N. Y. Times,* N. Y. *Sun,* and *N. Y. World* of Oct. 20, 1919. A genealogical table published by Astor in the *Pall Mall Mag.* for June 1899, traced the family to Jacques d'Astorga, a Spanish cavalier who came to France in 1085. This genealogy was investigated by Lothrop Withington, a competent genealogist, and his report, declaring the table a fabrication, was published in the N. Y. *Sun* (under the erroneous signature of "Lathrop Wittington"), July 30, 1899.]

W.J.G.

ATCHISON, DAVID RICE (Aug. 11, 1807–Jan. 26, 1886), lawyer, senator, was born at Frogtown, Ky. His parents, William and Catherine (Allen) Atchison, intending their son for the ministry, named him after a pioneer Presbyterian

minister. But upon his graduation from Transylvania University, young Atchison entered, instead, upon the study of law in the office of Charles Humphreys, at the same time attending the law school in Lexington. Shortly after his admission to the Kentucky bar, in 1830, he moved to Missouri and began the practise of law in Liberty County. In 1833, along with three other Missouri lawyers, he was retained by the Mormons of Jackson County to defend them in their troubles with Gentile neighbors. Moving to Clay County, he was elected to the lower branch of the Missouri legislature in 1834 and again in 1838, but failed of reëlection in 1840. During the legislative session of 1839, he was made chairman of a special committee to investigate and report upon certain statements in the report of Gen. Zachary Taylor that reflected unfavorably upon the conduct of Missouri troops serving in the Seminole War. During these and the following years, Atchison was closely identified with the military service of the state, rising from the rank of captain to that of major-general. After removal to Platte County on Missouri's western border, he was appointed judge of the newly created circuit court for that county, in February 1841. Two years later (October 1843), upon the death of Senator L. F. Linn, Atchison, already a man of influence and distinction, was appointed to the United States Senate (W. B. Stevens, *Centennial History of Missouri,* II, 185; *Missouri Historical Review,* Apr. 1916, X, 177–79) and in January 1849 was reëlected for a full term which expired in March 1855. As senator, Atchison held the chairmanship of the important Committee on Indian Affairs, and actively promoted land-grant legislation in aid of Missouri railroads, believing that later they would form important links in a transcontinental system. He was elected president *pro tempore* of the Senate sixteen times between August 1846 and November 1854, when he resigned the office. By virtue of this position, it has been asserted that Atchison became President for one day, when the 4th of March, 1849, fell on Sunday and Zachary Taylor did not take the oath of office until the day following. But this has been shown to be without substantial foundation (G. H. Haynes, *American Historical Review,* XXX, 308–10).

While a member of the Senate, Atchison was the most powerful man in the Democratic party in Missouri, next to Thomas H. Benton. The latter's defeat for reëlection to the Senate in 1850 was due mainly to the efforts of Atchison and other leaders of the pro-slavery faction. Later, in 1852–53, Benton declared himself a candidate to succeed Atchison in 1855, and there ensued a senatorial campaign of intense factional and personal bitterness. In order to strengthen his hold upon the slave-owners of western Missouri in 1853, Atchison repeatedly pledged himself in speeches to work for and support a bill establishing territorial governments in the region immediately west of Missouri, and, in connection therewith, to bring about, if possible, the repeal of the Missouri Compromise. At the following session of Congress (1853–54), he was an important, though inconspicuous, influence in the passing of the Kansas-Nebraska bill; and afterward claimed credit for the provisions of that act repealing the Missouri Compromise. Both Atchison and Benton, however, failed of reëlection in 1855, and this defeat appears to have closed Atchison's political career.

At all events, little is known of his subsequent activities further than that he was a prominent leader of the Missouri "border ruffians" in their raids into Kansas Territory in 1855–56; that he supported the Confederate cause and was in Texas during the Civil War; and that, after the war, he returned to Missouri and resided at Gower, in Clinton County, where he was engaged in farming until his death. In February 1870 his residence was destroyed by a fire which also consumed his valuable library and collection of manuscripts (*History of Clinton County, Mo.,* 1881, pt. II, 182). The latter is said to have included a history of the Missouri Compromise repeal and of the troubles in Kansas.

A contemporary describes Atchison as "a man of imposing presence, six feet two inches high and straight as an arrow, florid complexion, and weighing about 200 pounds" (W. F. Switzler, quoted in W. B. Stevens, *op. cit.,* II, 832). His speeches were characterized by a simplicity and directness in striking contrast to the ornateness and pomposity of those of his rival, Benton. Although a Presbyterian, he indulged in intoxicants, in profanity, and in incitements to violence against the free-state settlers in Kansas. The county of Atchison, Mo., and the city of Atchison, Kan., were both named after him.

[No biog. of Atchison has been published. A very brief sketch, published during his lifetime, appears in W. B. Davis and D. S. Durrie's *Illustrated Hist. of Mo.* (1876), p. 466. Fragmentary material may be gleaned from various state and local histories, especially W. F. Switzler's *Illustrated Hist of Mo.* (1879); *The Provinces and States,* ed. by W. A. Goodspeed (1904), IV; and W. M. Paxton's *Annals of Platte County, Mo.* (1897). The Atchison-Benton senatorial contest and Atchison's connection with the Kansas-Nebraska Act are traced in detail in P. O. Ray's *Repeal of the Mo. Compromise: Its Origin and Authorship* (1909), which quotes extensively from Atchison's speeches as reported in Mo. newspapers and the *Cong. Globe.* L. W. Spring's *Kansas* (rev. ed., Boston, 1907) brings out briefly Atchison's connection with the Kansas border troubles, 1854–56.]

P.O.R.

ATHERTON, CHARLES GORDON (July 4, 1804–Nov. 15, 1853), lawyer, politician, was born in Amherst, N. H., the son of Charles Humphrey and Mary Ann (Toppan) Atherton. Both his father and grandfather were prominent and successful New Hampshire lawyers. He graduated from Harvard in 1822, was admitted to the bar in 1825, and began practise at Dunstable (later Nashua), N. H. In 1828 he was married to Ann Barnard Clark. He represented Dunstable in the legislature in 1830, was clerk of the Senate 1831–32, and again served in the lower house 1833–36, being speaker during the last three terms. He was elected to Congress in 1836, serving three terms as representative, afterward entering the Senate in 1843 for the full term. His political career began contemporaneously with a new alignment in New Hampshire parties, and he became a Jacksonian Democrat of the straitest sect. He opposed internal improvements, denounced the tariff as a method of "taxing the many for the benefit of the few," and was an ardent supporter of the independent treasury scheme as against a national bank. His strict constructionist view of the Constitution was well expressed in the famous "gag resolutions" which he introduced in the House on Dec. 11, 1838 (*Congressional Globe*, 25 Cong., 3 Sess., pp. 23 ff.). These resolutions, which made his name anathema to the abolitionists, provided for laying on the table without consideration all memorials relating to slavery, declaring that on the constitutional basis of state equality the national government even in territory subject to its jurisdiction could take no action against slavery which might tend toward the destruction of that institution in the states. Atherton spoke frequently in Congress and among his notable addresses were those on the civil and diplomatic appropriation bill of 1840—a savage arraignment of Whig policies (*Ibid.*, 26 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 405–12); against the apportionment bill of 1842 (*Ibid.*, 27 Cong., 2 Sess., App., pp. 350–51); on the tariff (*Ibid.*, 28 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 544–48); and on the financial policy of the government during the Mexican War (*Ibid.*, 30 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 410–15). Throughout his service in the House he was a member of the Ways and Means Committee, and during his last two years in the Senate, chairman of the Finance Committee, when the vigor with which he resisted riders to appropriation bills excited the approval of Senator Benton. On his retirement in 1849 he resumed professional work in Nashua and built up what was reputed to be the most extensive and lucrative practise in the state. He was a member of the constitutional convention of 1850, serving as chairman of the committee on the legislature and exercising great influence throughout the proceedings. The many democratic innovations submitted by this convention were, however, rejected at the polls. In November 1852 he was again elected to the Senate for the six-year term beginning Mar. 4, 1853. Because of his close personal and political association with President Pierce he was expected to be an influential figure in the Thirty-third Congress, an expectation disappointed by his sudden death three weeks before the session began.

[Charles H. Bell, *Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); Daniel F. Secomb, *Hist. of the Town of Amherst* (1883); *N. H. Patriot*, Nov. 23, 1855; *Biog. Cong. Dir.* (1913).]

W. A. R.

ATHERTON, GEORGE WASHINGTON (June 20, 1837–July 24, 1906), college president, son of Hiram and Almira (Gardner) Atherton, was born at Boxford, Mass., a descendant of the well-known Atherton family which settled in Massachusetts before 1630. Left by the death of his father totally dependent upon his own resources at the age of twelve, he worked his way through Phillips Exeter Academy and later through Yale College, receiving his degree at the latter in 1863. Enlisting as first-lieutenant in the 10th Connecticut Volunteers, he served with that regiment in its campaign in North Carolina and was promoted to captain after the battle of Newbern, but was forced to resign from the service because incapacitated by sickness. Four years of teaching followed in the Albany Boy's Academy, New York, and in St. John's College, Annapolis, and then in 1868 Atherton was elected a member of the first faculty of what is now the University of Illinois. Here he obtained a vision of the possibilities of the land-grant college, a vision which in a way ruled the rest of his life. A year later he was called to the new chair of political economy and constitutional law at Rutgers College, New Jersey, where he remained for nearly fourteen years. With no neglect of his college duties, he threw himself with characteristic energy into many activities both state and national. He became a member of the board of visitors to the United States Naval Academy; he was one of the commission appointed by President Grant to investigate the Red Cloud Indian Agency; he served the state on its board of tax revision, and once he ran unsuccessfully for Congress. His continued championship of the new land-grant college idea, his paper on the subject of federal aid for colleges before the National Educational Association, his numerous articles and addresses, brought him in 1882 the presidency of the Pennsylvania State College, to which he gave with untiring activity

and enthusiasm the remainder of his life. In many ways he may be counted as the real founder of the college. When he took the presidency the school was regarded by the people of the state as an experiment that had failed. There were but two buildings, one of them a mere shed, and there were but thirty-three students in the college classes. The state, having accepted the land grant, had abandoned the college seemingly for good. When Atherton died after an administration of twenty-two years there were more than thirty buildings and 1,200 students, in five thoroughly organized schools. He was married on Dec. 25, 1863, to Fannie W. L. Washburn of Plymouth, Mass.

[*Obit. Rec. Grads. Yale Univ.* (1907); *Triennial Meeting and Biog. Rec. Class of Sixty Three Yale Coll.* (1869); *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Phila. Press, Phila. Public Ledger*, July 25, 1906.] F. L. P—e.

ATHERTON, JOSHUA (June 20, 1737–Apr. 3, 1809), lawyer, Loyalist during the Revolution, early anti-slavery leader, was born in the town of Harvard, Worcester County, Mass., the second son of Peter and Experience (Wright) Atherton. Educated in the common schools and under the tuition of a clergyman, at the age of twenty-one he entered Harvard College, from which he was graduated in 1762. He studied law under James Putnam of Worcester, the King's attorney-general for the province. In 1765 he was married to Abigail Goss, of Bolton, Mass. Locating in southern New Hampshire, he practised his profession in the towns of Litchfield and Merriman from 1765 until 1773, when having been appointed register of probate for the County of Hillsborough, he removed to its shire town, Amherst, which was his home during the rest of his life. His rise at the bar of the province, which now seemed assured, was soon halted by the outbreak of the American Revolution. Hillsborough County early became a stronghold of the Sons of Liberty, but, apparently because of his natural conservatism and strong belief that the liberties of the colonies would be best insured by their remaining subject to Great Britain, Atherton firmly refused to join them. Becoming at length a "suspect," he was arrested on Aug. 21, 1777, as a "disaffected person" whose presence at large would be dangerous to the liberties of the country, and he was confined in jail until June 5, 1778. In January 1779, probably convinced by the surrender of Burgoyne and the American alliance with France that it was useless longer to oppose the independence of the United States, he took the oath of allegiance to the State of New Hampshire and was admitted to practise in its courts.

After the establishment of peace, the marked personality, legal ability, and strong character of Atherton soon sufficed to dispel the prejudice created by his record as a Tory. His law practise rapidly grew, and he was repeatedly elected to important public positions. He was a member of the convention which drafted the first permanent constitution of New Hampshire, that of 1784, and also of the convention of 1792, the first summoned to revise that organic law. In each of these bodies he took a leading part and had large influence in shaping both the substance and form of the present constitution of the state. In 1788 he was the leader of the opposition in the state convention called to act upon the adoption of the proposed Federal Constitution. The most memorable event in its debates was his strong and impassioned argument against ratification of the proposed constitution without its prior amendment prohibiting the slave trade, allowed by Article 1, section 9, till 1808. His opposition contributed to delay the final action of the convention for three months, until on June 21, 1788, ratification was carried by a narrow margin. In 1792 and again in 1793 Atherton was a member of the state Senate, then a body of only twelve, in which he sought, though unsuccessfully, to remedy existing defects in the state law by investing the superior court of judicature with the powers and jurisdiction of a court of equity. The high position which Atherton now had won at the bar led to his appointment by Gov. Josiah Bartlett on June 11, 1793 to the office of attorney-general of the state. Four years later, when only sixty years of age, he began to suffer from an organic affection of the heart which gradually so impaired his powers that he was forced to resign this office in 1801 and also to withdraw from the private practise of his profession. He passed the remainder of his life with his family and books, gracefully dispensing, after the manner of an aristocratic country gentleman, his habitual hospitality to members of the bench and clergy and to distinguished visitors.

[C. H. Atherton, *Memoir of the Hon. Joshua Atherton* (1852); D. F. Secomb, *Hist. of Amherst, 1728–1882* (1883); C. H. Bell, *Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); J. B. Walker, *Hist. of N. H. Convention for Ratification of Federal Constitution* (1888).] J.F.C.

ATKINS, JEARUM (fl. 1840–1880), inventor, was born in Vermont and like many another son of that region went west as a young man to seek his fortune. As early as 1840 he was plying his trade as a millwright in northern Illinois near Chicago. Two years later a fall from a wagon inflicted serious spinal injuries and he did not walk again for twenty-four years. Confined to

bed he turned his attention to mechanical invention but for a considerable period met with only moderate success. The first decade of Atkins's illness coincided with the introduction and development of reaping machinery in the west. On numerous occasions he had heard farmers complain because of the hard manual labor involved in raking the severed grain from the platforms of reapers, and it occurred to him that if he could eliminate the man used for the purpose and substitute a mechanical device, he would not only increase the efficiency of such machines but perhaps make his fortune as well. Day after day, lying upon his back with a drawing-board suspended above his head, Atkins gave thought to this problem, and finally in the spring of 1852 achieved sufficient progress to justify the construction of an experimental appliance. This was attached to a reaper and tried in the harvest. The apparatus worked surprisingly well and Atkins at once applied for a patent which was granted on Dec. 21, 1852. This ingenious and complicated apparatus, known as Atkins's automaton or self-rake, was designed to imitate the motion of human arms. The favorable result of the first trial attracted the attention of John S. Wright, editor of the *Prairie Farmer* of Chicago, and after investigation he applied for and obtained the right to build and attach them to a reaper for which he had secured a construction license. Forty machines were manufactured and sold in 1853, and 300 the next year, distributed among twenty states. The automaton by now had proved a sensation. Its ingenious mechanism wherever it was exhibited drew curious and wondering crowds. Despite bitter attacks from competing manufacturers, most of whom still made the old hand-raking reapers, the craze, as they termed it, for Atkins's automaton persisted. Orders poured in so fast that although construction was quadrupled for 1855, and rose to nearly 5,000 in 1856, it fell short of the demand. Newspapers and the agricultural press both here and abroad widely discussed its merits and faults. Scientific and agricultural societies vied with each other in awarding premiums to Atkins, the machine, and the manufacturer. It is said that over three hundred medals, cups, and diplomas were won by them between 1853 and 1856. At the height of its fame Atkins's automaton disappeared from the market almost overnight. In the attempt to expand manufacture too rapidly the machines of 1856 were made of green wood and poor materials. As a consequence they broke down everywhere and were returned to Wright in such numbers that he went into bankruptcy, and dragged Atkins down with him, the latter receiving only $7,000 for an invention reputed to have had a commercial value during the life of the patent of over $2,000,000. Walter Wright of Chicago, who succeeded to the control of the patent, set too high a price for licenses to build, with the result that manufacture was never again resumed. Atkins might have retrieved his misfortunes in part by selling or licensing the rights to the extension of his original patent after 1866, but through a misunderstanding the Commissioner refused to renew it. Congress corrected the error by special legislation in 1871 but the renewal only had two years to run and the gesture was too late to be of value to Atkins. Manufacturers by that time had taken up other types of self-rakes and were no longer interested in his device. As a last resort Atkins appealed to Congress for $100,000 as a partial return for his contribution to agricultural advancement. Congress refused to listen, and thenceforth Atkins dropped from sight.

[Items relating to Atkins and his invention are scattered through the *Prairie Farmer*, 1852–57; *Northwestern Farmer and Cultivator*, 1852–57; *Mich. Farmer*, 1852–57; *Ohio Cultivator*, 1852–57; *Country Gentleman*, 1852–57; *Am. Agriculturist*, 1853–57; *Genesee Farmer*, 1852–57; *Am. Farmer*, 1852–57; *Southern Planter*, 1852–57. See also the Catalogues of John S. Wright, 1853–56; and the *Memorial for the Relief of Jearum Atkins* (1880).]

H. A. K.

ATKINSON, EDWARD (Feb. 10, 1827–Dec. 11, 1905), industrialist, economist, was a descendant of John Atkinson who was born about 1640, whether in England or America is not known, but who, according to tradition, was a son of Henry Atkinson, barrister, who came with his brother Theodore to America and settled in Newbury, Mass. A great-grandson of John, Lieut. Amos Atkinson, was one of the minutemen at Lexington and Concord. His son, Amos Atkinson, married Anna G. Sawyer, and was the father of Edward Atkinson, who was born in Brookline, Mass. After attending private schools in Brookline and Boston, Edward went to work as a boy of fifteen, for a Boston textile commission house, doing chores which ranged from the building of fires, sweeping of floors, and packing of goods, to the more responsible work of confidential clerk. He gave five years to general apprenticeship of this type, advancing in 1848 to more important clerical and financial responsibilities, until he assumed the treasurership of several textile-manufacturing companies. In 1855 he was married to Mary Caroline Heath.

In the eighties Atkinson turned his attention as a business man to factory mutual insurance. He helped to establish the Boston Manufacturers Mutual Insurance Company, of which he later

became chief executive. Its central feature was the now well recognized one of mutual insurance in a restricted field, in which the factor of "exposure" was greatly reduced. Both hazard and loss were diminished by insisting on safeguards governing construction and use, and making precaution the corner-stone of the plan. Textile factories, cordage plants, paper-mills, machine-shops, and wood-working establishments were made better risks from the standpoint of the underwriter than the average public building. The industrial architecture of the country improved appreciably as a result. In a number of articles and pamphlets, Atkinson developed the ideas underlying these innovations. In his own judgment, his greatest single contribution to future well-being was the invention of the Aladdin oven, the outgrowth of an interest revealed and expanded in *The Science of Nutrition* (1896), which went through ten editions. The oven was a fully insulated piece of apparatus with heat applied from a common lamp in which a little over two pints of kerosene oil would do the work of 120 pounds of coal burned in an ordinary cooking stove. In the middle nineties it was a hobby with Atkinson to entertain in his house guests who dined on sumptuous viands prepared in their presence through the use of his invention. It was characteristic of him that he did not patent it.

A diligent statistician, gifted public speaker, economist, financier, and industrious and prolific writer, Atkinson left a long list of published works, among which the following are the more important: *Cheap Cotton by Free Labor* (1861); *Our National Domain* (1879); *Labor and Capital Allies not Enemies* (1880); *Railroads of the United States* (1880); *Cotton Manufacturers of the United States* (1880); *What is a Bank?* (1881); *The Railway and the Farmer* (1881); *Distribution of Products* (1885); *Facts and Figures, the Basis of Economic Science* (1904). He wrote many pamphlets and delivered numerous addresses on wages, fire loss, nutrition, banking, economic legislation, peace and war, and many other questions of social concern. The Cotton Exposition at Atlanta in 1881 had its inception in an address by him in that city a few years earlier. He advised more widely diversified agriculture for the South, and he foresaw and encouraged the development of the Southern cotton-manufacturing industry. In 1887 he served, by special appointment of President Cleveland, as special commissioner to report upon the status and prospects of bi-metalism in Europe. This appointment was due to Atkinson's consistent advocacy of sound money as a basis of honest commercial practise.

Physically, Atkinson was of massive build, in appearance impressive, dignified yet benign, in manner genial yet urbane, in expression positive often to the point of obstinacy. But he was always fortified with facts which under the spur of a vigorous sense of justice in human relations, gave his opinions unusual force. He was a consistent free trader, sound-money advocate, pacifist and anti-imperialist.

[The materials for this sketch were obtained mainly from a scrutiny of Edward Atkinson's published writings, from a statement made by Henry Mandell Atkinson, of Atlanta, Ga., and from geneal. data furnished by the N.Y. Geneal. and Biog. Soc. A striking obituary editorial will be found in the *Commercial and Financial Chronicle*, Dec. 16, 1905; other obituaries in *N.Y. Times*, *N.Y. Herald*, *Brooklyn Eagle*, *Boston Journal*, *Boston Daily Globe*, *Boston Post*, and *Boston Daily Advertiser*, all of Dec. 12, 1905.]

R. C. M.

ATKINSON, GEORGE FRANCIS (Jan. 26, 1854–Nov. 15, 1918), botanist, son of Joseph and Josephine (Fish) Atkinson, was born in Raisinville, Monroe County, Mich. He attended both Olivet College and Cornell, and graduated at the latter in 1885. In 1885–86 he was assistant professor of entomology and zoology in the University of North Carolina, and in the latter year was promoted associate professor; in 1888 professor of botany and zoology in the University of South Carolina; in 1889 professor of biology and botany at the Alabama Polytechnical Institute; in 1892 assistant professor of botany at Cornell, where in four years he rose to be head of the department, remaining such until his death. He was the first president of the American Botanical Society, and in 1905 was sent as a delegate to the International Botanical Congress at Vienna, and again represented his country before the Brussels meeting of 1910. He was the author in all of 150 scientific papers. An examination of their titles, chronologically arranged, reveals not only a great variety of biological interests, but a transition in his field of work. Beginning as a zoologist, he early turned his attention to parasitic animals, winning his scientific spurs with a study of the nematode so injurious to field crops, *Heterodera radicicola*. The animal parasites drew his interest to the parasitic plants, and he became a mycologist of the first rank. His early mycological work was a survey of the fungi of the high mountains of North Carolina; rapidly this broadened into an interest in the entire field of mycology, covering the physiology, economic importance, systematic classification, and theoretical relationships of the fungi. He was especially interested in the evolution of the various families of fungi and the outline of their family trees, and, mindful of the law that embryology

mirrors life stages of evolution, he gave more attention to the early life stages of the higher fungi than had any other American botanist. In his *Studies of American Fungi* (1900), Atkinson accomplished the first successful attempt to write a book on the higher fungi which would be at once thoroughly popular and irreproachably scientific. His *Biology of Ferns* (1893), a gem of natural-history study, has also delighted more readers than the purely scientific. For the most part his work did not take book form, however, but appeared in multitudinous short papers in strictly botanical publications. As an inspirer of students and a tireless contributor to the record of scientific detail, Atkinson takes rank among the first two or three mycologists of this country. The passing of a delightful figure evoked more than perfunctory expressions of grief, and though really in the sixties, he was thought of as one who died young; such was the vigor of his personality and the momentum of his work. His death occurred under peculiarly tragic circumstances. In the summer of 1918, lured by the rich fungus flora of the rainy Northwest coast, he explored the slopes of Mount Rainier. As autumn drew on, his students and assistants returned to other duties, and alone, late in the season, Atkinson returned from a storm in the alpine regions in a condition of exhaustion, and was removed to a hospital at Tacoma, Wash., where influenza was followed by pneumonia. In his delirium he attempted to dictate his mycological observations to his nurse; he died quite alone, his friends unknowing that he was even ill. Students hastened to Tacoma when word of his death was received, and cared for his collections and valuable notes.

[No life of Atkinson has yet been written; at the time of his death friends and students wrote brief articles in technical journals, but these are appreciations rather than biogs. or critical estimates of his work; *vide* W. A. Murrill in *Jour. N.Y. Bot. Gard.*, XIX, 314–15; H. H. Whetzel, in *Bot. Gazette*, LXVII, 366–68; H. M. Fitzpatrick in *Science*, XLIX, 371–72.] D. C. P.

ATKINSON, GEORGE HENRY (May 10, 1819–Feb. 25, 1889), Congregational clergyman, educator, community builder, the son of William and Anna (Little) Atkinson, was born at Newbury, now Newburyport, Mass. He attended Bradford Academy; Dartmouth College, graduating in 1843; and Andover Theological Seminary, graduating in 1846. In the latter year he married Nancy Bates of Springfield, Vt. In the winter of 1847–48 he sailed from Boston "around the Horn" as a representative to the Pacific Northwest of the American Home Missionary Society, an organ of the Congregational churches. Settling in Oregon City, he organized one of the first Congregational churches in Oregon and continued as its pastor for fifteen years. He then became pastor of the First Congregational Church of Portland, remaining till 1872. Thereafter, until the date of his death, he was engaged in missionary activities in both Oregon and Washington.

He was a natural enthusiast—this trait emerging with special clearness in his attitude toward the subject of education. The Home Missionary Society, concerned about the development of academies and colleges, gave him encouragement toward their establishment. The Society also provided him with an equipment of school books valued at $2,000, which he brought with him to Oregon. He promptly started a school for girls at Oregon City and, learning about the beginnings of academic instruction already made at Forest Grove, he at once joined in organizing Tualatin Academy which grew into Pacific University, of which Atkinson was a life-long trustee and a powerful supporter. When Gov. Joseph Lane arrived at Oregon City to set up the territorial government in March 1849, Atkinson impressed upon him the need of a general system of public schools. He drafted the section of the governor's first message on that subject, advocating the Massachusetts system, with some modifications. The framework of that system was ultimately provided for Oregon. Development was retarded by circumstances, but the state was permanently benefited by the educational ideas which Atkinson injected during the formative period.

In his missionary service he traveled widely through the interior and took the opportunity to gather specimens of soils which later were subjected to chemical analysis. He became convinced that millions of acres of hill land in Oregon and Washington would grow wheat in place of bunch grass. Fortified with comparative analyses of the soils of wheat areas in this and other countries, he spread his propaganda far and wide by means of conversations, lectures, newspaper articles, and pamphlets. He called the process he advocated "reclaiming this interior basin from mere pastures to farm lands" (*The Northwest Coast*, p. 45). He worked out and presented the principles of "dry farming" applicable to the inland empire wheat lands. He prevailed on individual settlers to experiment with wheat planting. In a word, he was the prophet and the pioneer scientist of a movement which rescued that region from an almost exclusively pastoral economy and transformed it into one of the world's great wheat areas. His detailed knowledge re-

specting the Northwest as the potential home of a vast population caused him to be much sought by railway engineers and promoters. He published a pamphlet on the Northwest Coast consisting of "a series of articles upon the Northern Pacific Railroad in its relations to the Basins of the Columbia and of Puget's Sound." Legislation by Congress favorable to the railroad was one object of the publication.

Atkinson has been described as the ideal "booster," because he was wholly unselfish, his opinions were based on careful research, and he favored no particular localities as against others. He had the reputation, for many years, of knowing more about the Pacific Northwest than any other man and by his standing in eastern communities, where he delivered lectures, he was able to advance the interest of the Northwest in that quarter. In theology he was strictly orthodox, but his nature was so generous that he was able to live on terms of close friendship with men of all shades of belief. This was one secret of his success in promoting favorite causes. Eager interest, a fine presence, and splendid voice coupled with knowledge of the subjects he discussed, cooperated to render his advocacy successful. He was a community builder after the grand manner. His sermons were usually carefully prepared written discourses, delivered in conversational tone. His lectures were apt to be more charged with imagination and more rhetorical. But whether in the pulpit, on the rostrum, in convention hall or parlor, he was always impressive, persuasive, and usually convincing.

[The *Biog. of Rev. G. H. Atkinson* (1893), compiled by Nancy Bates Atkinson and prepared for the press by Rev. Myron Eells, contains his jour. of the voyage to Oregon in 1848, selected addresses, printed articles, and a particular account of his church work in the Pacific Northwest. His quasi-scientific writing is illustrated by *The Northwest Coast* (Portland, 1878). His "Occasional Address" on the subject of Oregon Pioneers of 1848, *Oregon Pioneer Ass.*, 1880, affords a sample of his oratory. The best account of his educ. work is in J. R. Robertson, "A Hist. of Pacific Univ.," *Oregon Hist. Soc. Quart.*, VI, 114–23. There is an account of his personality, his preaching, his coöperative spirit, his gospel of wheat growing, his appearance, by George H. Himes, in a letter of Feb. 28, 1927, addressed to Joseph Schafer, and filed in the State Hist. Lib. of Wisconsin.]

J.S.

ATKINSON, GEORGE WESLEY (June 29, 1845–Apr. 14, 1925), author, lecturer, jurist, was born on a farm in Kanawha County, Va., now West Virginia, son of James and Miriam (Rader) Atkinson. A product of the "old field" schools of his state, he received his higher education in Ohio Wesleyan University, from which he was graduated, A.B., 1870, M.A., 1873. The following year he graduated in law from Howard University, Washington, D. C., and was admitted to the bar of his native state in 1875. Subsequently he took a graduate course in literature in Mount Union College, Alliance, Ohio, from which he received the doctorate, *pro merito,* in 1885. Literary interests occupied an important place in his life, as is attested by an impressive list of works from his pen, including: *History of Kanawha County* (1876); *West Virginia Pulpit* (1878); *After the Moonshiners* (1881); *Hand Book for Revenue Officers* (1881); *A. B. C. of the Tariff* (1884); *Dont's or Negative Chips from Blocks of Living Truths* (1887); *Prominent Men of West Virginia,* jointly with A. F. Gibbens (1895); *Psychology Simplified* (1897); *Public Addresses* (1901); and *Bench and Bar of West Virginia* (1919). Atkinson also contributed to the press, being editor of the *Evening Standard* (Wheeling) 1877–78, and subsequently for a period of nine years, joint editor of the *West Virginia Journal.* Throughout West Virginia he was in demand as a public lecturer on the Sunday-school, prohibition, and literary themes. He was, however, best known politically. Before he graduated from college he was a member of the board of education of Charleston, W. Va., which city he served as postmaster from 1876 to 1881. As United States marshal for the District of West Virginia, 1881–85, he won temporary publicity because of his war on moonshiners. He was Federal collector of internal revenue, 1878–81. Meanwhile, he moved to Wheeling, and in 1888 was elected to Congress as a Republican. He declined renomination and practised law until 1896, when he was elected the first Republican governor of West Virginia in a quarter century. As governor he was vigorous and constructive, standing, among other things, for better public schools, permanent roads, reforms in state election laws, the right of labor to organize, and encouragement of immigration (*Public Addresses,* pp. 74, 211, 523). Almost immediately after the expiration of his term as governor, he became United States district attorney for southern West Virginia, which office he filled until Apr. 15, 1905, when President Roosevelt appointed him judge of the United States Court of Claims. On Apr. 17, 1916, he retired to private life. He was twice married: first, on Dec. 2, 1868, to Ellen Eagan of his native county, by whom he had five children, and who died in 1893; and second, on June 24, 1897, to Mrs. Myra (Hornor) Camden, widow of Judge G. D. Camden of Clarksburg, W. Va.

[*Charleston* (W. Va.) *Daily Mail,* Apr. 4, 15, 1925; Jas. Morton Callahan, *Hist. of W. Va., Old and New* (1923); Atkinson's *Public Addresses* (1901).]

C.H.A.

Atkinson

ATKINSON, HENRY (1782–June 14, 1842), soldier, was born in North Carolina. Concerning his parentage and youth no records are available. He entered the army, July 1, 1808, as a captain in the 3rd Infantry. He was made colonel of the 45th Infantry, Apr. 15, 1814, and a week later transferred to the 37th Infantry. On the reorganization of the army after the War of 1812 he was appointed (May 17, 1815) colonel of the 6th Infantry. In 1819 he was assigned to the command of the "Yellowstone expedition," a grandiose project, fathered by the secretary of war, John C. Calhoun, for taking an army of 1,100 men to the mouth of the Yellowstone, as a warning to the Indians and the British fur traders. In September, Atkinson and a part of his force reached Old Council Bluffs, in the present Nebraska, where a post was established, named Camp Missouri, later renamed Fort Atkinson and still later Fort Calhoun. Nothing further came of the project except the exploratory journeys, in the summer of 1820, of Maj. Stephen H. Long to Pike's Peak and of Capt. Matthew J. Magee to the mouth of the Minnesota. Returning to St. Louis, Atkinson was put in command of the right wing of the Western Department, with the rank of brigadier-general (appointed May 13, 1820), but on the revision of army ratings in 1821 he was reappointed colonel of the 6th Infantry, with his brigadier-generalship reduced to a brevet.

On the authorization by Congress in 1824 of another expedition to the upper Missouri he was assigned to the command and was also appointed one of two commissioners (his colleague being Benjamin O'Fallon, the Indian agent) to make treaties with the Indians. With a force of 476 men he left St. Louis on Mar. 20, 1825, held councils with a number of tribes, and arrived at the mouth of the Yellowstone on Aug. 17, where he met Gen. Ashley, returning from the Rockies with his first cargo of furs. A few days later, giving safe escort to Ashley, he started for home, and after halting at several points to make treaties, arrived in St. Louis on Oct. 20, without the loss of a boat or a man. He selected the site for the historic post of Jefferson Barracks, ten miles south of St. Louis, which was occupied July 10, 1826, and which subsequently became his home. Early in 1827 he dispatched Col. Henry Leavenworth to choose a site for a new post on the Kansas frontier—a mission that resulted in the establishment of Fort Leavenworth (May 8) and the abandonment of Fort Calhoun. In July, on the news of a serious outbreak among the Winnebagos, he hurried to Prairie du Chien, and by a swift concentration of troops, restored peace. He was in general command of the troops in the Black Hawk war of 1832 and in immediate command on the second day's fight at Bad Axe, Aug. 2, when the Sauk chief's forces were almost annihilated. In 1840 he supervised the earlier stages of the removal of the Winnebagos from Wisconsin to the Neutral Ground in Iowa, where a post was established May 31, in the following spring, named Fort Atkinson. His remaining days were spent at Jefferson Barracks, where he died.

Atkinson was married in Louisville, Ky., Jan. 16, 1826, to Mary Ann Bullitt, who with a son, Edward Graham Atkinson, survived him. He was highly regarded by those who knew him, and his funeral was largely attended by volunteer companies and private friends from St. Louis. He is praised by Chittenden for his uniform exhibition of practical good sense. Though the first Yellowstone expedition was a fiasco, the fault is charged to the officials of the War Department, by whom it was "smothered in an elaboration of method." His second expedition, planned by himself, was in every way a conspicuous success. His name is inseparably connected with the earlier period of the conquest of the frontier, and the part he bore is equaled in importance by that of no contemporary with the possible exception of William Clark.

[F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1903); H. M. Chittenden, *The Am. Fur Trade of the Far West* (1902); Bruce E. Mahan, *Old Fort Crawford and the Frontier* (1926); "Jour. of S. W. Kearny, 1820," in Mo. Hist. Soc. *Colls.*, III, 1 and 2 (1908); manuscript notes supplied by Miss Stella M. Drumm.]

W. J. G.

ATKINSON, JOHN (Dec. 6, 1835–Dec. 8, 1897), Methodist clergyman and historian, was born at Deerfield, N. Y. His educational advantages were restricted to the country school. He early developed an oratorical gift, and at the age of eighteen became a preacher. He joined the New Jersey Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1853. In 1856 he married Catharine O'Hanlon. He held pastorates in numerous small towns in New Jersey, in Newark, in Jersey City, in Chicago, in Bay City, Mich., and again in Newark, and in Jersey City. At the time of his death he was pastor in Haverstraw, N. Y. Beecher-like in appearance, tall, with large smooth face, long hair, and splendid voice, he was a strong and popular preacher, fervent, sometimes fiery, inclined to speak everywhere as though addressing a congregation. His first books were the outcome of his work as pastor: *The Living Way* (1856), *The Garden of Sorrows* (1868), and *The Class Leader* (1875). Permanently important were his histories. *Memorials of Methodism in New Jersey* (1860) unearthed interesting facts and incidents. *The Cen-*

tennial History of American Methodism, 1784–1816 (1884) was unfortunate only in its title, suggested by the celebration of the centennial organization of the church. For the first time from a Methodist Episcopal hand the facts and their true interpretation were recorded. This notable book has not received the attention it deserves. More elaborate is *The Beginnings of the Wesleyan Movement in America 1766–73* (1896), where the story is told with a devotion, particularity, historical sense, and investigation worthy of all praise. In literary skill Atkinson is behind Stevens but he has searched the facts more critically. He was also something of a poet, and his hymn "Shall We Meet Beyond the River?" is known in all English-speaking countries.

[H. A. Buttz in *Minutes of the Newark Conference, 1898*, pp. 80–82; J. M. Buckley in *Christian Advocate*, Dec. 16, 1897, p. 2; private letters.]

J.A.F.

ATKINSON, THOMAS (Aug. 6, 1807–Jan. 4, 1881), Episcopal bishop, the son of Robert and Mary Tabb (Mayo) Atkinson, was born on his father's plantation, Mansfield, in Dinwiddie County, Va. After due preparation in the schools of Petersburg (near his home) he entered Yale College, but in his junior year transferred to Hampden-Sidney College in Virginia. From the latter institution he graduated with the honors of his class at the age of eighteen. He first entered the legal profession, after pursuing his studies under Judge Henry St. George Tucker of Winchester, Va. In 1828 he was licensed to practise law and successfully followed that profession for eight years. He then abandoned the law to enter the ministry. At Christ Church, Norfolk, Va., Nov. 18, 1836, he was ordained deacon by the Right Rev. William Meade, then assistant bishop (later diocesan bishop) of Virginia. He was advanced to the priesthood in St. Paul's Church, Norfolk, May 7, 1837, by the Right Rev. Richard Channing Moore, bishop of Virginia. During his diaconate he was assistant rector of Christ Church, Norfolk; and, after his elevation to the priesthood, became rector of St. Paul's Church, in the same city, where he remained until 1843. In the year last named, he was elected rector of St. Peter's Church, Baltimore. He and some of the parishioners of St. Peter's withdrew and built Grace Church, Baltimore, soon after 1850, and he remained there until 1853, when he was elected bishop of North Carolina. While rector of Grace Church he was twice elected bishop of Indiana, and twice declined. He was consecrated bishop of North Carolina on Oct. 17, 1853. On his removal to North Carolina he at first lived in Raleigh, but two years later removed to Wilmington. He aided in efforts to establish the University of the South at Sewanee, Tenn., before the Civil War, but that institution could not be built until after the war. The religious enlightenment of the negroes had a strong advocate in Bishop Atkinson. After the outbreak of the war, the diocese of North Carolina withdrew from its former union with the Northern dioceses and allied itself with the "Protestant Episcopal Church in the Confederate States of America." Bishop Atkinson, a devoted Southerner, loyally upheld the government of the Southern Confederacy. After the surrender of Gen. Lee, and the consequent end of the war, he was instrumental in effecting a union between the Northern and Southern branches of the Church. In 1866 Bishop Atkinson made a six months' tour of Europe (June–December) for the benefit of his health. Almost immediately upon his arrival he was invited by the Archbishop of Canterbury to take part in the consecration of some English colonial bishops, but circumstances forced him to decline. He was also present by invitation at an Anglican Conference in York. In 1867 he attended and participated in the First Lambeth Conference at Lambeth Palace. In 1873 Bishop Atkinson was given an assistant bishop in the person of the Rev. Dr. Theodore B. Lyman, who became diocesan bishop upon Atkinson's death, which occurred in Wilmington, N. C., Jan. 4, 1881.

[M. De Lancey Haywood, *Lives of the Bishops of N.C.* (1910), pp. 143–204; Bishop J. B. Cheshire, *The Ch. in the Confed. States* (1912); obituaries in the *Sun* (Baltimore), Jan. 5, 1881, *News and Observer* (Raleigh), Jan. 6, 1881.]

M. DeL. H.

ATKINSON, WILLIAM BIDDLE (June 21, 1832–Nov. 23, 1909), obstetrician and medical biographer, was the son of Isaac S. and Mary (Biddle) Atkinson. His ancestors were among the earliest settlers of Burlington, N. J., but he was born at Haverford, Pa. After graduating from the Philadelphia Central High School, he received his M.D. from Jefferson Medical College in 1853. During the Civil War he was an acting assistant-surgeon. He was a very successful obstetrician, serving in that capacity on the staff of the Howard Hospital, but his chief claim to distinction is as the author of a large work on American medical biography entitled *The Physicians and Surgeons of the United States*, the first edition of which appeared in 1878, and the second two years later. This book is of great value as a work of reference. Atkinson edited or assisted in editing various medical journals. He was a frequent contributor to medical periodicals and wrote two other books, *Hints in the Obstetric Proceeding* (1875) and *Therapeutics of Gynecology and Obstetrics* (1880). He also edited the

Medical Registry and Directory of Philadelphia. For many years he was secretary of the Medical Society of the State of Pennsylvania and of the American Medical Association. In 1877 he was elected professor of sanitary science and pediatrics in the Medico-Chirurgical College of Philadelphia. He was for some years a medical inspector for the State Board of Health of Pennsylvania. Owing to his connection with the state and national medical societies he had a very large acquaintance with the members of his profession, which with his literary experience peculiarly qualified him as the biographer of American physicians. He was twice married, first to Jennie R. Patterson, and after her death to Miss S. J. Hutchinson, both of Philadelphia.

[Sketches in *Biog. of Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons* (1894), ed. by R. French Stone; *Physicians and Surgeons of Am.* (1896), ed. by Irving A. Watson; Kelly and Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Phila. Pub. Ledger,* Nov. 24, 1909; personal recollections.]

F.R.P.

ATKINSON, WILLIAM YATES (Nov. 11, 1854–Aug. 8, 1899), governor of Georgia, was the son of John Pepper Atkinson, 1804–73, born in Brunswick County, Va., educated at Oxford, N. C., who moved in 1853 to Georgia and established himself as a well-to-do farmer at Oakland. His mother was Theodora Phelps Ellis, of Putnam County. He was the sixth of eight children. Born on the farm, up to his seventeenth year he shared in all phases of farm work, attending irregularly the county schools and taught at home by his parents. Thrown upon his own resources by his father's death, he earned money to complete his education and, prepared in part at a local private school of some reputation kept by Wm. T. Revill, and in part by his elder brother, a teacher, and by his brother-in-law, he entered the University of Georgia, where, after a brief elective course in the academic department, he transferred to the law school and was graduated in 1877. The following year he began the practise of law at Newnan, Ga. Gov. Colquitt appointed him solicitor of the county court, and a successful career began. He married on Feb. 23, 1880, Susie Cobb Milton, a direct descendant of Christopher, brother of John Milton the poet, and member of a family which had included John Milton (1740–1804) the first secretary of state of Georgia, John Milton [*q.v.*], governor of Florida, and Senator W. H. Milton.

The young county solicitor took naturally to politics and in 1888 was elected to the state House of Representatives. He developed skill in political leadership and was twice reëlected, in his third term becoming speaker. In 1890 he served as president of the state Democratic convention and as chairman of the state executive committee. Among the measures which he championed in the General Assembly were bills making the office of commissioner of agriculture elective, placing telegraph and express companies under the regulative control of the railroad commission, limiting the pay of oil inspectors to $1,500 a year, and creating the State College for Women at Milledgeville. In 1894 he became a candidate for governor against Gen. Clement A. Evans, a popular and eloquent Confederate veteran and Methodist preacher. It was deemed a triumph of Atkinson's popularity and political ability when Evans foresaw defeat and withdrew before the election. It is said to have been the first time an ex-Confederate was ever defeated by a civilian in Georgia. Gov. Atkinson later appointed Evans to a post on the prison commission. He was reelected in 1896 without opposition. His administration was without salient features, but his popularity steadily increased and he exercised a dominant influence on the policies of his party. On the expiration of his second term in 1898 he resumed law practise at Newnan, where he died the following year. He was a man of considerable ability, a good speaker, and an astute political leader. He was not robust physically, but possessed powers of endurance and courage. In appearance he was tall and spare, with regular features, high brow, and crisply curling dark hair.

[*Men of Mark in Ga.,* ed. by W. J. Northen (1910), IV, 377; Lucian Lamar Knight, *Ga.'s Landmarks, Memorials, and Legends* (1914); *Hist. of Ga.* (1926), ed. by Howell Clarke; Lucian Lamar Knight, *Standard Hist. of Ga. and Georgians* (1917); *Atlanta Jour.,* Aug. 8, 1899.]

J.H.T.M.

ATKINSON, WILMER (June 13, 1840–May 10, 1920), journalist, was born on a farm in Warwick township, Bucks County, Pa., the third child of Thomas and Hannah (Quinby) Atkinson. His parents were Quakers, opposed to slavery and to drinking, and sympathetic with the woman's rights movement, then just starting. He attended a rural school and Foulke's Quaker Boarding School, Gwynedd, Pa., and then spent a year in Freeland Seminary, Collegeville, Pa. He took much interest in writing and speaking. After leaving Freeland, he taught a country school near his home and also helped his father on the farm. In 1862 he and Howard M. Jenkins, who later married Atkinson's sister, purchased the *Norristown Republican,* a weekly newspaper. They were barely started in the publishing business when Pennsylvania was threatened with invasion by Lee's Confederate army. The two youths enlisted to resist the expected attack. When the

danger was past, they were discharged and returned to their paper. Atkinson's work was interrupted twice more by army service, and before his final discharge he became a second-lieutenant. In 1864 he sold his interest in the *Republican.* Two years later he and Jenkins went to Wilmington, Del., and founded the *Wilmington Daily Commercial,* the first daily newspaper in the state. The same year Atkinson was married to Anna, daughter of Samuel Allen of Philadelphia. While living in Wilmington, he served on the Board of Education. In 1876 he sold his interests and moved to Philadelphia.

Here he began the enterprise that was to absorb the rest of his life—the publication of a monthly agricultural paper, the *Farm Journal.* The first number appeared in March 1877. Atkinson dedicated his journal to "practical, not fancy farming." He filled the publication with crisp, compact articles, and concise, often epigrammatic paragraphs. "Ginger" and "gumption" were favorite words of his, and he put into his work the qualities for which they stand. His writing also had much of the shrewdness and humor traditionally characteristic of the farmer. Atkinson followed Orange Judd, publisher of the *American Agriculturist,* in excluding doubtful advertising, and the *Farm Journal* was the first periodical in America specifically to bar advertisements of patent medicines. The paper announced in its first number that it would "refuse quack medical advertisements at any price." In 1880 it inaugurated the first guaranty ever instituted by any publication against fraudulent practises by its advertisers. The *Farm Journal* grew rapidly, attaining eventually a circulation of more than a million. In 1910 Atkinson started a farm almanac under the title of *Poor Richard's Almanac Revived.* He edited it personally for five years, then turned over the direction of it to a member of his staff. In 1915 he was elected president of the Pennsylvania Men's League for Woman Suffrage and directed a vigorous but unsuccessful campaign for a suffrage amendment to the state constitution. In 1917 he retired from the editorship of the *Farm Journal* after forty years' service. He devoted the last part of his life to writing his autobiography, which was almost completed when he died. He was a force not only for better agriculture, but for a more satisfying rural life. His advocacy of rural free delivery of mail, postal savings banks, protection of birds, and modernization of farm homes was especially effective.

[*Wilmer Atkinson, An Autobiography* (1920); *Who's Who in America,* 1903–21; *Farm Journal,* June 1920; *How It Works* (n. d.), a pamphlet issued by the *Farm Journal,* discusses the guaranty of advertising inaugurated by Atkinson, and its results. Atkinson seldom signed anything in his paper, but a large proportion of its contents, especially in the early days, was written by him, and his personality appears clearly throughout the files of the publication during his editorship.]

N. A. C.

ATLEE, JOHN LIGHT (Nov. 2, 1799–Oct. 1, 1885), surgeon, the son of Col. William Pitt Atlee and Sarah Light, was born in Lancaster, Pa., where he passed almost his entire life. He received his early education in Lancaster except that in the winter of 1813–14 he attended the Gray and Wylie Academy of Philadelphia, a noted school of its day. He intended to enter college; but his plans were upset by the death of his father, who left his widowed mother with six children, of whom John was the eldest. At an early age he began the study of medicine in Lancaster under Dr. Samuel Humes, who later became the first president of the State Medical Society. At the age of eighteen, Atlee entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, but, being too young for graduation the following year, he continued his studies with Dr. Humes, under whose direction in the winter of 1818–19 he attended many cases of variola, this being the first time the disease had made its appearance in America after the discovery of vaccination. He attended another course of lectures at the University of Pennsylvania in the winter of 1819–20 and in the spring of 1820 received the degree of Doctor of Medicine. He immediately began his medical career in his native town, and practised there without interruption until the day of his death sixty-five years later. Although a general practitioner of medicine, Atlee's reputation was gained chiefly in surgery and obstetrics. He performed no less than 2,125 important operations, mainly on the eye, ear, and nose, and attended 3,264 parturitions. Operations of ovariotomy had been successfully performed 1809–13 by Dr. Ephraim McDowell, but the method had been looked upon with general disfavor. Impressed by an account of McDowell's procedure, Atlee revived the operation in 1843. Altogether he performed it seventy-eight times, with a mortality rate of eighteen per cent, a very creditable showing when it is considered that Sir Spencer Wells's estimated mortality of these cases before 1860 was fifty per cent. Cholera made its appearance in Lancaster in 1855. Atlee was an active member of the Sanitary Commission of Lancaster County which was formed to combat it. The deaths were but twenty-six (considered a small number at the time), due largely to the precautions taken by the Commission. Medical organizations greatly interested Atlee from the beginning of his career. He was one of the founders

of the Lancaster County Medical Society in 1844, was present at the birth of the State Medical Society in 1848, and in 1882 was made president of the American Medical Association. He was a man of singular probity of character, with dignified bearing, which at once commanded attention and respect. He was for forty years a member of the public school board, a promoter of Franklin and Marshall College, a trustee of the State Lunatic Asylum at Harrisburg and a vestryman of St. James's Church of which he was a regular attendant. On Mar. 12, 1822, he married Sarah Howell Franklin, daughter of Judge Walter Franklin of Lancaster County.

[John L. Atlee, *Address Delivered before the Medic. Soc. of the State of Pa.* (1858); Washington Atlee, "A Table of all the Known Operations of Ovariotomy," in *Trans. Am. Medic. Ass.* (1851); J. L. Ziegler, *Report to the Sanitary Committee of Lancaster, May 26, 1855;* "John Light Atlee," in the *Practitioner,* Jan. 1883; B. H. Detwiler, "Personal Recollections of Doctors John L. and Washington L. Atlee" in *Penn. Medic. Jour.,* Oct. 1904; E. A. Barber, *Geneal. Recs. Atlee Family* (1884).]

T. D.

ATLEE, WASHINGTON LEMUEL (Feb. 22, 1808–Sept. 6, 1878), surgeon, brother of John L. Atlee [*q.v.*], was born in Lancaster, Pa., the youngest of six children of William Pitt Atlee and Sarah Light. His father was a son of the Hon. W. A. Atlee, an active Whig in the Revolutionary War and a judge of the supreme court of Pennsylvania from 1777 until his death in 1793; his maternal grandfather, Maj. John Light, was also an officer in the Revolutionary War. When he was seven years of age, his father died and he went to live with his grandparents. At fourteen he was clerk in a dry-goods and grocery store. At sixteen he entered the office of his brother John and began the study of medicine. It was apparent at an early age that he was an earnest student; for with meager opportunities he acquired several languages and developed a fondness for chemistry and botany and later for practical anatomy. During his apprenticeship he worked in the Lancaster County Hospital. After the customary two full years at Jefferson Medical College, he graduated in the spring of 1829. While a student at Jefferson he became a private pupil of the distinguished surgeon, George McClelland. He was now twenty-one; and armed with his medical diploma, he settled in Mt. Joy, a substantial village about twelve miles from Lancaster. We have no record of his early practise, but it may be surmised that he was not wholly occupied by it when we learn that he collected 400 botanical specimens, to which he attached written descriptions, and that he delivered a temperance lecture and one on "Falling Stars." The next year he married Ann Eliza Hoff, by whom he had ten children. In 1834 he moved to Lancaster, his native town, and soon thereafter was elected to the staff of the hospital. In 1837 he was made treasurer of the Commissioners of Lancaster County. For several years he instructed private classes in chemistry. He was active in the organization of the Lancaster Conservatory of Arts and Sciences and gave lecture courses in hygiene. He was one of the founders of the Lancaster County Medical Society in 1844; and the same year accepted an invitation to fill the chair of medical chemistry in the Medical College of Philadelphia. He continued in this position until 1852 when he resigned to devote his entire time to a growing surgical practise. His love for surgery had probably been fired by his brother John, who the year before had returned from two years' study in Paris and Berlin.

No date can be set for the beginning of his surgical career, but soon after he settled in Lancaster in 1834 he performed an operation for vesical calculus. In 1843 he assisted his brother John in the latter's first ovariotomy operation. He performed his own first operation for ovariotomy the next year on a patient in Lancaster, with fatal result. His second operation was performed later in the same year, and a third was done in 1849. Shortly after the first operation, he encountered the disapproval of his colleagues, some going so far as to say that he committed murder and others, less violent, saying the operation was untried and did not have the approval of the medical profession. Possessing argumentative ability and gifted with ready speech, Atlee ably defended himself. After a time, Gross, Chapman, McClelland, and other leading surgeons of Philadelphia indorsed him, and the opposition faded away. In 1851 Atlee prepared a notable paper in which he exhibited in tabulated form all the operations of ovariotomy from 1701 to 1851, comprising in all 222 cases. Dr. J. M. Toner wrote in 1878 that Washington Atlee himself had at that time performed 378 ovariotomies which he believed, with the exception of one other surgeon, was the largest number done by any living operator. In 1861, while he was performing an operation in Williamsport, on the second floor of a frame building, surrounded by an eager group of colleagues, the floor gave way and the patient, operator, and onlookers, were precipitated to the floor below. In the midst of the confusion, unmindful of the discomfort of his audience, Atlee calmly completed the operation. Like his brother John, he was a medical organization man, and president of the Pennsylvania State Medical Society in 1874, and vice-president of the National Society in 1875.

[*Lecture Introductory to the Course of Medic. Chemistry in the Medic. Dept. of Pa. College by W. L. Atlee* (1844); W. L. Atlee, "A Table of all the Known Operations of Ovariotomy," *Trans. Am. Medic. Ass.* (1851); J. M. Toner, *Biog. Sketch of Washington L. Atlee* (Lancaster, 1878); E. A. Barber, *Geneal. Rec. Atlee Family* (1884); *Phila. Inquirer*, Sept. 10, 1878.] T. D.

ATTUCKS, CRISPUS (*c.* 1723–Mar. 5, 1770) was the leader of the mob which precipitated the so-called "Boston Massacre." Almost nothing is known definitely of his life previous to the event which brought him prominence and death. It is possible that he was a sailor on a whaling-ship. There had been a period of "unrest" in Boston, due to the presence of British troops, and relations were visibly strained. On the evening of Mar. 5, 1770, Attucks at the head of a crowd of fifty or sixty men, mostly sailors, marched from Dock Square to the present State Street, a figure, according to John Adams, "almost a giant in stature" (J. B. Fisher, "Who was Crispus Attucks?" in the *American Historical Record*, I, 1872). A collision ensued with a small group of British troops under Capt. Preston. Shots were fired, and three citizens—including Attucks—were killed, and two others mortally wounded. In the trial which followed, Attucks's name was necessarily often mentioned, and he is the one most prominently associated with the "Massacre."

In the common accounts Attucks is described as a mulatto, supposed to have been owned by Deacon William Browne of Framingham, Mass., who advertised for the recovery of a runaway slave named Crispus in the *Boston Gazette*, Oct. 2, Nov. 13, Nov. 20, 1750 (the advertisement is reprinted in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, XIII, 300). The belief that Attucks was a mulatto or negro underlay the proceedings at the unveiling of the monument on Boston Common in 1888, where the chief speaker was John Fiske and the poet was John Boyle O'Reilly. On the other hand J. B. Fisher argues strongly that Attucks was an Indian, probably of the Natick tribe from the neighborhood of Framingham. Frederick Kidder, in his *History of the Boston Massacre* (1870) suggests that he was of mixed Indian and negro blood. In the *Works of John Adams* (II, 322), under date of July 19, there is cited a denunciatory address in the name of Attucks, to the royal governor, Hutchinson, which, according to a footnote by C. F. Adams, "seems to have been intended for publication in a newspaper."

[In addition to the references above, see *Attucks Memorial* (1889); J. H. Semple, *Hist. of Framingham, Mass.* (1887); Geo. Livermore, "An Historical Research Respecting the Opinions of the Founders of the Republic on Negroes as Slaves, as Citizens, and as Soldiers," in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, ser. I, vol. I.] E. K. A.

ATWATER, CALEB (Dec. 25, 1778–Mar. 13, 1867), pioneer, author, was born at North Adams, Mass., the son of Ebenezer and Rachel (Parker) Atwater and a descendant of David Atwater, one of the first settlers of New Haven. His father was a carpenter. His mother died when he was about five years old, and he was then placed in the home of a Mr. Jones, a neighbor, who reared him. He entered Williams College, from which he graduated in 1804 with the degree of M.A. Removing to New York City, he kept a school for young women, at the same time studying theology, and later becoming a Presbyterian minister. He married Diana Lawrence, who lived only about a year after the wedding. His health failing, he gave up the ministry. He then studied law and after a few months was admitted to the bar. On Apr. 3, 1811, he married Belinda Butler, of Pompey, N.Y. A business venture proving disastrous, he resolved to go west, and in 1815 settled in Circleville, Ohio. For the next six years he practised law, giving his spare time to the study of the earthworks and other antiquities of the state. In 1820 he contributed to the American Antiquarian Society a paper on the subject, published in *Archæologia Americana*, vol. I, the Transactions for that year.

In 1821 he was elected to the lower house of the legislature, where he at once became prominent through his advocacy of digging canals, improving highways, and providing for popular education. As chairman of the committee on school lands and later of a state board to formulate a system of education he carried on a vigorous campaign for public schools. He was an unsuccessful candidate for Congress in 1822, and the following year he served on the Circleville school board. The election of 1824 registered a notable victory for his public policies and marked the beginning of Ohio's school system and fostering of internal improvements. In May 1829, he was appointed by President Jackson one of three commissioners to treat with the Winnebago and other Indians in the vicinity of Prairie du Chien, Wis. The treaties were promptly concluded and were carried by him to Washington, where in December they were ratified by the Senate. An account of the episode, with descriptions of the regions traversed and a discussion of the relations of the government to the Indians was published by him two years later. In 1833 the paper on antiquities and the account of the trip to Prairie du Chien and thence to Washington, with some additional matter, were published in a volume entitled *The Writings of Caleb Atwater*. In

1838 he published *A History of the State of Ohio, Natural and Civil,* which except for the brief historical sketch introducing Salmon P. Chase's compilation of Ohio laws, was the first published history of the state. In 1841 appeared *An Essay on Education,* characterized by C. L. Martzolff as "the best thing he ever wrote" and a treatise which "makes good pedagogical reading even at this time." His later years were spent quietly at his home among his books. He died at Circleville, where he had lived for fifty-two years.

Atwater was one of the intellectual and social pioneers of the Middle West. He lived and died poor, too deeply concerned in questions of science and of human welfare to bother about making money. He was perhaps the first advocate of forest conservation; he was one of the first to predict the success of the railway; he was the first historian of his state and the founder of her school system. It was his fate to have outlived his time and to have been forgotten by his contemporaries a full decade before his death.

[L. Martzolff, "Caleb Atwater," *Ohio Archeol. and Hist. Quart.,* July 1905; Francis Atwater, *Atwater Hist. and Genealogy,* II (1907); R. L. Rusk, *The Lit. of the Middle Western Frontier* (1925).]

W. J. G.

ATWATER, LYMAN HOTCHKISS (Feb. 3, 1813–Feb. 17, 1883), clergyman, educator, was widely known in his day as a versatile scholar and able controversialist. A descendant of David Atwater, one of the original planters of New Haven, Conn., he was born in Cedar Hill, then a suburb of that city, the son of Lyman and Clarissa (Hotchkiss) Atwater. He prepared for college under Dr. H. P. Arms, a Congregational minister, entered Yale at the age of fourteen, where he formed a life-long intimacy with his classmate, Noah Porter, graduated with honors in 1831, taught the classics for a year at Mount Hope Seminary, Baltimore, and then pursued the prescribed course in the Yale Divinity School, during the last two years of which he also served as tutor in Yale College. On July 29, 1835, he was ordained pastor of the First Congregational Church, Fairfield, Conn., where he remained for nineteen years. For the rest of his life he was a professor in the College of New Jersey, Princeton. His original appointment was to the chair of mental and moral philosophy, but when Dr. James McCosh became president, Atwater consented to the transfer of those subjects to him, while he himself took the chair of logic and moral and political science. He married, Oct. 7, 1835, Susan, the daughter of Elihu and Susan Howell Sanford, of New Haven, by whom he had four sons and a daughter.

He was a prolific writer of articles of a polemic nature. The most of these, more than a hundred, appeared in the *Princeton Review,* with the editorship of which he was long connected. They cover a wide range of subjects, including doctrine and apologetics, biography, history, education, metaphysics, ethics, political economy, and finance. His chief interest, however, was in philosophy and theology. This had been greatly stimulated in his youth by his reading of Coleridge, to whom he confessed great indebtedness (see article on Coleridge, *Princeton Review,* April 1848). Coleridge's effect upon him in the end, however, was to stiffen his orthodoxy, and he became one of the ablest champions of the old order as against the theological and social changes which characterized the middle of the nineteenth century. His first contribution to the *Princeton Review,* "The Power of Contrary Choice," October 1840, was a defense of the old-school Calvinism, and an arraignment of the theory of personal responsibility advanced by Dr. Nathaniel W. Taylor [*q.v.*], his old pastor and professor. For Horace Bushnell [*q.v.*] as a man and preacher he professed great admiration, but deemed him poorly fitted to try to reconstruct theology, and lamented that he did much "to undermine and confuse the true conception of the Trinity, Incarnation, Atonement, of language, logic, and creeds" (*Presbyterian Review,* January 1881). The tendency of the new theology to create the form of preaching advocated by Dr. Charles G. Finney [*q.v.*], which would "multiply converts with unexampled rapidity," was abhorrent to him ("Revivals," *Princeton Review,* January 1842). Naturally he combated the philosophy of Herbert Spencer, and repudiated the evolutionary hypothesis, exulting that in so doing he had Agassiz on his side ("Herbert Spencer's Philosophy," *Ibid.,* April 1865). In his political and social views he was equally orthodox. True progress he said must be based, not on skepticism, but on "stability," *i. e.* adherence to the fundamental truths revealed in the Bible ("The True Progress of Society," *Ibid.,* January 1852). Civil government, the family, and tenure of property, he termed "great ordinances of God for the social regulation of man." The woman's-rights movement he characterized as a "mad enterprise." No less conservative was he in his views on education, criticizing adversely the freedom given to students at Harvard under President Eliot, and supporting the policies favored by his friend President Porter ("Proposed Reforms in Collegiate Education," *Ibid.,* July 1882). Although sharp in his criticisms and sometimes given to strong invectives, he was extremely fair in stating the arguments of his opponents, ap-

preciative of their excellences, and uniformly kind in spirit. His writings are still of value, both because of the information and wisdom which, in spite of their conservatism, they contain, and also because of the light which they shed upon the intellectual and religious movements going on during the period in which they were written. He published also several addresses and one book, *Manual of Elementary Logic* (1867).

[The best sources of information are a series of addresses delivered by Noah Porter, James McCosh, Archibald A. Hodge, and Wm. M. Taylor, published under the title, *Addresses Delivered at the Funeral of Lyman Hotchkiss Atwater* (1883). See also *Princeton Theol. Sem. Necrological Report* (1883); *Princeton Univ. Gen. Cat.* (1906); Francis Atwater, *Atwater Hist.* (1901).]

H.E.S.

ATWATER, WILBUR OLIN (May 3, 1844–Sept. 22, 1907), pioneer in agricultural chemistry, the son of William Warren and Eliza (Barnes) Atwater, was born at Johnsburg, N.Y. He was educated at the public schools, studied at the University of Vermont for two years (his father was a minister in Burlington), and obtained his bachelor's degree at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1865. The chance acquaintance of several unusually intelligent farmers who had thought much about scientific agriculture, turned his attention from engineering to agricultural chemistry; and upon their advice he went to Yale to study under Dr. Samuel W. Johnson. He remained there until 1869, when he received his Ph.D. degree on a thesis dealing with the chemical composition of maize, a paper which for the first time showed the possibilities of the application of modern chemical methods to American food materials. For the next two years he studied at Leipzig and at Berlin, obtaining the most advanced chemical information that could then be given, and becoming acquainted with agricultural experiment stations in Europe. On his return to America he taught first at the University of Tennessee and then at the Maine State College (now the University of Maine). He was married in 1873 to Marcia Woodard of Bangor, Me. In the same year he was appointed professor of chemistry at Wesleyan University, and here he remained until his death, developing agricultural chemistry in this country as it had never been developed before. In 1875, largely through the pleadings of Atwater and his former teacher Johnson, the Connecticut legislature established at Middletown the first state agricultural station in the United States. For the next two years the agricultural station had its quarters in Middletown, and Atwater was the director; then in 1877 it was moved to New Haven, its present quarters,

and Atwater gave place to Johnson. But the removal of the experiment station did not lessen Atwater's desire to carry on agricultural investigations. He inaugurated an ambitious program to study fertilizers, and by 1881 was in a position to draw one very important conclusion from these investigations: that free atmospheric nitrogen is assimilated by leguminous plants. Largely through Atwater's efforts, Congress passed the Hatch Act of 1887, which provided that every state should be allowed $15,000 a year for the maintenance of at least one experiment station. He impressed upon people the importance of regarding such stations not merely as testing laboratories for fertilizers but as places in which fundamental work in agriculture could be carried out. "The future usefulness of the stations," he wrote, "will depend upon what they discover of permanent value, and this must come largely from the most abstract and profound research; to forget this will be fatal."

In a sense, the turning point in Atwater's career came from a visit to Voit's laboratory in Munich in 1887, where he came in contact not only with Voit himself, but with Voit's chief assistant, Max Rubner. It was through these men that he became interested in calorimetry; and it was this interest which led him, in conjunction with E. B. Rosa, then professor of physics at Wesleyan University, to build what has since become the famous Atwater-Rosa calorimeter. This was begun in 1892 and not completed until five years later. With the help of his calorimeter, Atwater demonstrated that the law of the conservation of energy is valid for human beings as it is for everything else: the quantity of heat produced by an individual is no more and no less than the amount of heat produced when the foods he consumes are oxidized. Another important result of his interest in calorimetry was the preparation of elaborate tables giving the calorific value of various foodstuffs—tables first published in 1896 and still used everywhere. In 1888 Atwater became founder and chief of the Office of Experiment Stations, United States Department of Agriculture. This position was merely an addition to his professorial duties, and was undertaken primarily to foster research. Not long before Atwater's death, the Carnegie Institution of Washington decided to endow the work in calorimetry and to build a special laboratory for him. It was also during these days, when the laboratory sponsored by the Carnegie Institution was taking shape, that he conceived the notion of experiments on an international scale, involving relations between the diet, labor power, and the success and health of nations; and in this scheme he

was more encouraged by his European than by his American colleagues. He was in the very midst of these activities when he died.

Atwater's work was recognized in Europe to an extent which was unusual for that period. Many of his articles were translated into French by Armand Gautier and Paul Heger, into Russian by Likhacher and Smolenski, and into Swedish by Tigerstedt. "In Berlin, the center of German thought in the field of metabolism and problems of nutrition," writes F. G. Benedict, "Atwater's work is most fully appreciated. Magnus-Levy in his book on the physiology of metabolism suggests certain fundamental problems in nutrition that can be solved only with the aid of the apparatus possessed by America" (meaning the apparatus devised by Atwater and still further refined by Benedict).

References to some important individual papers by Atwater (the total number runs into several hundred) are: "On the Acquisition of Atmospheric Nitrogen by Plants" (*American Chemical Journal,* 1885, VI, 365–88); "Investigations on Metabolism in the Human Organism: Experiments on the Income and Outgo of the Body with Different Food Materials" (with C. D. Woods and F. G. Benedict, *Annual Report, Storrs Agricultural Station,* 1896, p. 163); "A Respiration Calorimeter and Experiments on the Conservation of Energy in the Human Body" (with E. B. Rosa, *Ibid.,* 1897, p. 212); the following, published by the United States Department of Agriculture, Office of Experiment Stations: "The Chemical Composition of American Food Materials" (*Bulletin XXVIII,* 1896 and 1899), "Report of Preliminary Investigations on the Metabolism of Nitrogen and Carbon in the Human Organism, with a Respiration Calorimeter of Special Construction" (with C. D. Woods and F. G. Benedict, *Bulletin XLIV,* 1897), "Description of a New Respiration Calorimeter and Experiments on the Conservation of Energy in the Human Body" (with E. B. Rosa, *Bulletin LXIII,* 1899), "Experiments on the Metabolism of Matter and Energy in the Human Body" (with F. G. Benedict and others, *Bulletin LXIX,* 1899); "A Respiration Calorimeter with Appliances for the Direct Determination of Oxygen" (with F. G. Benedict, *Carnegie Institution of Washington, Publication No. 42,* 1905); "Dietetics" (*Encyclopædia Britannica,* 1902).

[Much of the material in the above account was derived from Miss Helen W. Atwater, editor of the *Jour. of Home Economics,* and from Dr. F. G. Benedict, of the Carnegie Institution of Washington. There are good sketches of Atwater in *Science,* Oct. 18, 1907, and in *Obit. Rec. Grads. Yale Univ.* (1908); portrait in *Pop. Sci. Mo.,* Dec. 1907; articles by Prof. Graham Lusk and Dr. Charles A. Browne in the *Jour. Am. Chemic. Soc.* (1926), vol. XLVIII; good descriptions of the Atwater-Rosa calorimeter in Graham Lusk, *The Elements of the Science of Nutrition* (1906) and in T. B. Robertson, *Principles of Biochemistry* (1920); a very complete discussion of energy metabolism in *Practical Physiological Chemistry* (1926) by P. B. Hawk and Olaf Bergeim.]

B. H—w.

ATWOOD, CHARLES B. (May 18, 1849–Dec. 19, 1895), architect, son of David and Lucy (Bowles) Atwood, was born in Charlestown, Mass. His architectural interest began early; already at seventeen he was studying architecture, and in 1868 he entered the course in architecture at the Lawrence Scientific School of Harvard University, remaining there two years. From Harvard he entered the office of Ware & Van Brunt, then one of the few firms of architects of high professional standing in the country, where he remained until 1872, when he opened his own offices in Boston. During a three-year period of independent practise, Atwood's work was largely in the neighborhood of Worcester, near which, at Millbury, his family then resided. His most important works of this time were the Merchants Fire Insurance Building at Worcester, and the Five Cent Savings Bank at Lowell. He was also the successful prize winner in various minor competitions. In 1875 he was called to New York to take charge of the architectural work of Herter Brothers, the well-known fashionable decorators. While with them he designed the twin Vanderbilt houses on Fifth Avenue between Fifty-first and Fifty-second Streets. Later, he left the employ of Herter Brothers, and again entered independent practise, designing, among others, the Twombly and Webb houses, and a great deal of work on the estate of Mrs. Mark Hopkins at Great Barrington.

In 1890, D. H. Burnham's partner, John W. Root, had died, and Burnham was in a quandary as to his successor, for it would have been impossible for Burnham to do by himself the immense amount of work thrust on him by his position as chief of construction and consulting architect for the contemplated Chicago World's Fair. William R. Ware (of Ware & Van Brunt), then professor of architecture in Columbia College, at once suggested Atwood, and, despite the doubts expressed by C. F. McKim, Burnham selected him. By the spring of 1891 the reorganization was completed, and Atwood thus became "Designer-in-Chief" of the Chicago World's Fair. Moore states that he designed "more than sixty of the Fair buildings besides various ornamental features." The most important were the combination of Music Hall, Peristyle, and Casino, in one composition, and the Art Building, the artistic crown of the Exposition and Atwood's undoubted

chef-d'œuvre. Augustus Saint-Gaudens said that the Art Building had been "unequaled since the Parthenon" and Burnham that "his Art Building in design was the most beautiful building I have ever seen."

In 1893 Burnham originated a new firm, D. H. Burnham & Co., with Atwood in control of "all artistic matters . . . including making designs." Among the buildings which Atwood designed under this arrangement was the Ellicut Building in Buffalo. After the completion of the World's Fair work, however, he seems never to have been completely happy in the Burnham firm. At first a genial, companionable person, he grew more and more peculiar as the years drew on, more and more a recluse. Moore notes that Atwood lacked certain qualities needed for success in commercial undertakings; moreover, the state of his health prevented steady work. His artistic skill was the product of an intense artistic temperament, which had many of the peculiarities and deficiencies that occasionally accompany it. He resigned on Dec. 10, 1895, and died, somewhat under a cloud, on Dec. 19.

[Charles H. Moore's *Daniel H. Burnham* (1921) contains many references to Atwood and his work, as well as a portrait, and a charming description of his appearance and personality. An extended notice of his death appeared in the *Am. Architect and Building News*, Dec. 28, 1895, and shorter notices in *N.Y. Herald*, Dec. 20, 1895, and *Chicago Tribune*, Dec. 21, 1895.]

T. F. H.

ATWOOD, DAVID (Dec. 15, 1815–Dec. 11, 1889), editor, politician, was born in Bedford, N. H. David Atwood, his father, was a Presbyterian and of English stock; his mother, Mary (Bell) Atwood, was Scotch-Irish. His early training was that of the average boy on a New England farm. At seventeen he apprenticed himself to a printing house at Hamilton, N.Y., in which his brother had an interest. The death of the other partner left the firm in financial straits, and to meet the difficulty David undertook to market an eight-volume digest of Federal and state court decisions, *The American Common Law.* The work entailed traveling by horse and democrat through the Middle Atlantic states and the Old Northwest. The next five years David spent in Hamilton in journalistic work with his brother. In 1840 and 1844 he supported the Whigs, and his labors in the second contest so injured his health that in 1845 he migrated to the West where two years of farming in Stephenson County, Ill., ruined him financially but restored him physically. He decided to establish himself in Wisconsin Territory, which had been authorized to form a state constitution. Coming to Madison in 1847, he immediately secured a position on the *Madison Express,* the only Whig paper at the capital. His most important duty was reporting the proceedings of the constitutional convention. In October 1848, he became a partner in a firm that bought the *Express* and changed the title to the *Wisconsin Express.* This journal supported the Free-Soil wing of the Whig party, while a rival Whig paper, the *Statesman,* founded in the spring of 1850, favored the Fillmore administration and the Compromise of 1850. A consolidation of these papers into the *Palladium* was effected in 1851, but it soon collapsed and Atwood alone in September 1852 established the *Wisconsin State Journal,* which for a quarter century played an important part in Wisconsin political life. First Whig and then Republican, it remained strictly regular both in state and national politics. Though partisan, its news was accurate; a correspondent of a Chicago paper says that its record was considered by out-of-town reporters as reliable as the legislative journals. Atwood was an active supporter of Coles Bashford in the latter's contest for the governorship in 1855–56. In 1861 he represented Madison district in the lower house of the state legislature, and in 1862 was appointed United States internal revenue assessor for the second congressional district. In 1866 he was removed from office after his paper had strongly opposed President Johnson. Mayor of Madison, 1868–69, he was elected to Congress in 1870 to fill the unexpired term of Benjamin F. Hopkins, deceased. He was for many years president of the Madison Mutual Insurance Company, also president of the Madison Gas Light & Coke Company, and director in several railroad enterprises. Well-proportioned medium stature, good features, and, in later years, a full flowing white beard gave him an impressive appearance. Conscious of this and of his prominence, Atwood was vain, always formal and immaculate in dress, and extremely distant in public. In more intimate relations, however, he was kind and courteous. He was married on Aug. 23, 1849, to Mary Sweeney.

[Horace Rublee, "Gen. Atwood" in *Proc. Wis. Press Ass.* (1890), pp. 63–71; R. G. Thwaites, "Gen. David Atwood" in the *Mag. of Western Hist.* (Feb. 1887). A sketch that Atwood himself published is in H. A. Tenney and D. Atwood, *Memorial Rec. of the Fathers of Wis. containing Sketches of the Lives and Careers of the Members of the Constit. Conventions of 1846 and 1847–48, with a Hist. of Early Settlement in Wis.* (1880), pp. 294–95.]

H. J. D.

ATWOOD, LEWIS JOHN (Apr. 8, 1827–Feb. 23, 1909), inventor, manufacturer, was born in Goshen, Conn., the son of Norman and Abigail (Woodward) Atwood. One of nine children,

he was compelled to assume his share of the family support at an early age. When but fifteen he entered the employ of Amos Gridley, a merchant of Watertown, Conn., from which position he went to Waterbury, Conn., in 1845 to continue in mercantile activities for a short time before starting the manufacture of brass buckles and buttons with Samuel Maltby in that city. When this enterprise failed from lack of capital, Atwood entered the employment of Holmes, Booth & Haydens, brass-manufacturers. It was at this time (1855) that petroleum came on the market and increased the demand for lamps. To meet this demand there was a movement by brass-manufacturers to adapt sheet brass to the making of lamps and their fittings. Atwood and Hiram W. Hayden [*q.v.*] were the two men who led in the successful invention and use of sheet-brass lamp burners, Atwood himself obtaining some fifty patents in this field. Because of this activity he is credited by some as having done "more to develop the science of domestic lighting" than any other mechanic. It is certain that his inventions enabled his company to take a leading place in brass-manufacturing and did as much for the American industry, in general, as did the tariff. Atwood also devised a scrap-metal press which has been used in the trade to the present day. This press accomplished the work known as "cabbaging," or the compacting of scrap metal preparatory to remelting. This work formerly was accomplished by hand, the metal being pounded with sledges into a cast-iron mortar. In 1869 Holmes left Holmes, Booth & Haydens and organized the Holmes, Booth & Atwood Manufacturing Company (afterward changed to Plume & Atwood), in which Atwood became a stockholder and officer and later (1890) its president. This new firm bought a brass-mill in Thomaston, Conn., which had been organized to roll metal for clocks, and also a small concern in Waterbury, and became one of the important factors in the trade. The company was essentially a remanufacturing concern, and by means of control of patents and the trade that it had in certain specialties it enjoyed a large, non-competitive business. When the American Brass Company was formed in 1899 as a merger of brass-sheet, rod, and wire mills, Plume & Atwood remained outside the amalgamation as one of the larger independent concerns. Atwood remained in Waterbury as president of the company until the time of his death. He was active in many public-welfare enterprises, being especially interested in the Y. M. C. A.; he was chairman of the committee having in charge the construction of the Waterbury branch of which he was president for five years. He was married on Jan. 12, 1852 to Sarah Platt, by whom he had three children.

[Joseph Anderson, *The Town and City of Waterbury, from the Aboriginal Period to the Year 1895* (1896); Joseph W. Roe, *Eng. and Am. Tool Builders* (1916); *Metal Industry*, Mar. 1909; *U. S. Pat. Office Recs.*]

F. A. T.

ATZERODT, GEORGE A. (*c.* 1832–1865). [See Booth, John Wilkes.]

AUCHMUTY, RICHARD TYLDEN (July 15, 1831–July 18, 1893), philanthropist, was born in New York City and received the first and middle names of his father, an officer in the United States Marine Corps, through whom he inherited the Scotch blood and family name of the Auchmutys of Fifeshire. The first Auchmuty of the line to settle in America was Robert [*q.v.*]. Samuel [*q.v.*], the second son of Robert, was rector of Trinity Church, New York City, before and during the early part of the Revolutionary War, in which three of Samuel's sons served with the British army. One of them, Robert Nicholas Auchmuty, returned to New York City at the close of the war; he was the father of Richard Tylden Auchmuty, Sr., who married Mary Allen, great-grand-daughter on the paternal side of Chief Justice Allen of Pennsylvania and, on the maternal side, of Philip Livingston, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Richard Tylden Auchmuty, Jr., entered Columbia College at the age of sixteen, withdrawing in his junior year on account of ill health and spending some months in European travel. On coming home he studied architecture in the office of James Renwick and in a few years was admitted to partnership. At the outbreak of the Civil War he was commissioned a captain in the Federal army, and as an officer of the 5th army corps took part in a number of important battles. Colonel by brevet for gallantry at Gettysburg, he was transferred, because of impaired health, from field service to duty in the War Department at Washington, assisting the next year (1864) in the defense of the city against Early's attack. The war over, he resumed residence in New York City, but established a summer home in Lenox, Mass., where he interested himself in local affairs and held various public offices. He was one of the pioneer members of the summer colony there, and his influence contributed much to its growth.

Retiring from the architectural profession, Auchmuty gave more and more of his time to his interests in Lenox and to the trade school which in 1881 he opened in New York City. In establishing this school the founder sought to provide an opportunity for mechanically inclined

young men in poor circumstances to learn a trade without having to submit to the conditions imposed by the labor unions in the matter of apprenticeship. He felt that the length of the apprenticeship period and the limited number of apprentices allowed by the unions were keeping many young men out of fields, particularly in the building trades, of which immigrants trained in Europe were taking possession. The curriculum of the New York Trade School combined theoretical instruction and shop practise in a manner which was then new to American education. Until 1892 the institution was maintained solely through the liberality of Auchmuty and his wife (formerly Ellen Schermerhorn). In this year it was incorporated under the state laws and a board of trustees appointed. J. Pierpont Morgan donated a large sum to the endowment, and the school is still operating under its original charter, with nominal tuition fees, "neither in the interest of, nor in opposition to, any trade organization, whether it be employers or journeymen" (*Forty-sixth Annual Catalogue,* 1926–27).

From available accounts Auchmuty seems to have been a man of strong opinions and vigorous personality, conservative in belief and conscientious in speech and action. In addition to these qualities his friends found in him a strain of gentleness. He was a vestryman of Trinity Church, New York City, and likewise held lay offices in Trinity Church, Lenox. He died at Lenox, at the age of sixty-two.

[The latest annual catalogue of the New York Trade School contains a few historical paragraphs regarding the school, of which an account may also be found in Frederick William Roman, *The Industrial and Commercial Schools of the United States and Germany* (1915). An appreciation of Auchmuty is found in *A Sermon Preached in Trinity Church, Lenox, on Sunday, July 23, 1893, Being the Sunday Following the Funeral Services of Richard Tylden Auchmuty,* by William M. Grosvenor. Obituaries in the *N.Y. Times, N.Y. Tribune,* July 19, 1893.]

R. G. F.

AUCHMUTY, ROBERT (d. 1750), colonial jurist, was born in Scotland. He studied law in London, being admitted to the Middle Temple, Apr. 5, 1705, and was called to the English bar Nov. 23, 1711. Some time later he came to America, won prominence as a lawyer in Boston, and was judge of admiralty in Massachusetts 1733–41. He was sent to England in 1741 as the agent for his colony in a boundary dispute with Rhode Island, and he acted in the settlement of various boundary controversies. In 1744, or possibly earlier, he wrote a pamphlet advocating an expedition to Louisburg (the one which was carried out in 1745), and thereby the historian Smollett gained the wrong impression that Auchmuty originated the project. He left a reputation for wit and shrewdness. In the words of his younger contemporary, John Adams, he "sits up all night at his bottle—Argues to admiration the next day" (Adams, *Works,* II, 357). In 1733 he bought an estate in Roxbury (now included in Boston), a part of which descended to his son and had notable associations.

[E. A. Jones, *Am. Members of the Inns of Court* (1924), p. 10; Francis S. Drake, *The Town of Roxbury* (1878); Emory Washburn, *Sketches of the Judicial Hist. of Mass.* (1840); "Diary of Samuel Sewall" in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* ser. 5, vols. V, VI, VII.]

E. K. A.

AUCHMUTY, ROBERT (d. November 1788), colonial jurist and Loyalist, was born in Boston, the son of Judge Robert and the brother of Samuel Auchmuty [*q.v.*], rector of Trinity Church. He was privately educated. Like his father he became a prominent lawyer in Boston, learned and successful, and was associated with the group of which Otis, Quincy, and John Adams were members. In 1767 he was appointed judge of vice-admiralty for Massachusetts and New Hampshire. With Adams he was counsel for Capt. Preston in the case of the so-called "Boston Massacre" in 1770. Adams, an unfriendly critic, describes him as heavy and dull, voluble and addicted to repetitions, but flat in wit, and he wonders why such a speaker should be considered a leader of the bar (Adams, *Works,* II, 198). Returning to the subject he writes that Auchmuty "maintains the air of reserve, design, and cunning" (*Ibid.,* II, 364).

Auchmuty received from his father a part of his estate in Roxbury (Boston), and on it he built a house about 1761. This mansion had a noteworthy history. It was a rendezvous for officers of the Crown, Hutchinson, Bernard, and others. Thither Gov. Bernard summoned a council, and in it were quartered British officers during the siege of Boston. It was confiscated in 1779, and after the war it was occupied for a time by Gov. Increase Sumner. Auchmuty, like his brother, was an ardent Loyalist, and his letters written to correspondents in England were sent to America by Franklin in 1773, being considered in the same category with Hutchinson's letters. (One of them was published with the Hutchinson letters in the *Copy of Letters sent to Great Britain,* Boston, 1773.) He removed to England in 1776, and belonged to the New England Club of Loyalists, formed that year in London. Since his property was confiscated, he was greatly reduced in means during his later years. His library in 1784 was sold at Boston by order of the authorities. From the British government he received a pension of £100 (A. C. Flick, *Loyalism in New York,* 1902, p. 202).

[F. S. Drake, *Town of Roxbury* (1878); Justin Winsor, *Memorial Hist. of Boston* (1881), II, 343; Lorenzo Sabine, *Biog. Sketches of Loyalists of the Am. Rev.* (1864); John Adams, *Works* (1850–56); Emory Washburn, *Sketches of the Judicial Hist. of Mass.* (1840).]

E. K. A.

AUCHMUTY, SAMUEL (Jan. 26, 1722–Mar. 4, 1777), Anglican clergyman, Loyalist, the son of Judge Robert Auchmuty [*q.v.*], was graduated at Harvard in 1742, was admitted to holy orders by the Bishop of London in 1747, and in the following year became assistant minister of Trinity Church, New York. Here his duties embraced the reading of prayers, the assisting of the rector in his parochial work, and the serving as catechist to the colored population. By reason of faithful service he became rector in 1764. He won the respect of his community, and received the degree of S.T.D. from Oxford in 1766, and from Kings (Columbia) in 1767. The parish in his time had two assistants, and under his auspices St. Paul's Chapel was completed and opened for service in 1766. In 1771 he wrote an address to the Virginia Episcopalians, favoring an American Episcopate. He was a High Churchman, and in the Revolution a strong Loyalist, like most of the Anglican clergy in America. His attitude at the outbreak of the war is indicated by these extracts from a letter addressed to him: "They [parishioners] recollect a Sermon, in which you strongly inculcated the Doctrine of Non-Resistance and Passive Obedience . . . I am very sorry to find you such an enemy to Congresses, 'to Hancock, Adams, and their followers.' Whatever you may think of them, Sir, the Wise and Virtuous now applaud their Conduct . . . 'We have lately been plagued with a rascally Whig mob' is hardly a decent Expression for a Clergyman to use, and your Reflection on our worthy Magistrates is exceedingly illiberal . . . I would recommend to you . . . to avoid Party Spirit and Party Prejudice" (*Letter to the Rev. Dr. Auchmuty*, signed C. J., and incorrectly dated Mar. 12, 1775, bound with the *Hazard Pamphlets*, XXX, in the Library of Congress; it is evidently a reply to *Dr. Auchmuty's Letter to Capt. Montresor, Chief Engineer, at Boston*, dated Apr. 15, 1775, to be found in the Massachusetts Broadsides, Manuscripts Division, Library of Congress). Trumbull in his satirical poem *McFingal* refers to Auchmuty in these lines:

> "What warnings had ye of your duty
> From our old rev'rend Sam. Auchmuty."
>
> "While mitres fall, as 'tis their duty,
> On heads of Chandler and Auchmuty."

He was ill and absent in New Brunswick, N. J., at the time of Washington's occupation. Soon after occurred the great fire of September 1776, which destroyed Trinity Church, the charity school, and the parish tenements, and Auchmuty's house and library. His personal loss was heavy, and destruction of church property was estimated at about £22,200. Services were carried on in the chapels, but Auchmuty did not long survive the disaster, his death being hastened perhaps by the fire and the circumstances of the war. He was married in December 1749 to "Mrs. Tucker, widow of the late Capt. Tucker" (Dix, I, 250), and was the father of Sir Samuel Auchmuty, who fought on the royal side during the Revolution, and later was a distinguished English general.

[*Hist. of the Parish of Trinity Ch.*, ed. by Morgan Dix (4 vols., 1898–1906), I; Wilkins Updike, *Hist. of the Episc. Ch. in Narragansett, R. I.* (1907); Lorenzo Sabine, *Biog. Sketches of Loyalists of Am. Rev.* (1864); Chas. C. Tiffany, *Hist. of the P. E. Ch. in the U. S.* (1895); *Memorial Hist. of the City of N.Y.*, ed. by Jas. Grant Wilson (1892–93).]

E. K. A.

AUDSLEY, GEORGE ASHDOWN (Sept. 6, 1838–June 21, 1925), architect, organ designer, author, son of John James Audsley, was born in Elgin, Scotland. He received his architectural education in his birthplace, being apprenticed at an early age to A. & W. Reid, who at that time had a considerable reputation in Scotland. At the age of eighteen he went to Liverpool, where he worked under John Weightman, the borough surveyor; a little later he went into partnership with one John Cunningham, and later still with his talented younger brother, W. J. Audsley—a partnership which continued until the latter's death. Entering the practise of architecture in the heyday of the Gothic Revival, and at a time of much building throughout Great Britain, he established an early reputation that brought him and his brother many important commissions, among which may be mentioned the Welsh Church, St. Margaret's Church, Christ Church, and the Racquet Club in Liverpool, and, in association with N. S. Joseph, the West End Synagogue in London (biographical notice by Hall Caine, *Biograph*, vol. V. no. 26, pp. 198–206). Later, Audsley moved to London, and lived there, confining himself to writing, until 1892, when he and his family (he was married to Mary Maclellan) came to New York, in the neighborhood of which he passed the rest of his life, especially in Yonkers, Plainfield, and Bloomfield. In New York he and his brother opened offices for the active practise of architecture. Especially notable among their works in America were the old Bowling Green Building (now destroyed), the Milwaukee Art Gallery (Audsley's favorite work), and the Catholic Church of St. Edward

the Confessor in Philadelphia. During his latter years Audsley became enthralled by an interest in organ building, which had begun in his apprentice days, and which had grown rapidly through constant attendance at W. T. Best's recitals on the great organ of St. George's Hall in Liverpool. This interest culminated in the construction of an organ for his own home, built with his own hands over a period of seven years, which included many innovations in the usual practise of the time. This organ, though of only nineteen registers, sold at auction, when their English home was broken up, for 5,000 guineas; it is now, slightly altered, the property of Lord Dysart, at Ham House, Petersham. Audsley's reputation as an expert in organ construction led to his selection as designer of the great organ in the Festival Hall of the St. Louis Exposition, an organ now in the John Wanamaker Store in Philadelphia.

As with so many artists and architects, particularly in England, the enthusiasm of the Gothic Revival led Audsley to a careful study of ornament, and especially of polychrome ornament. This study found expression in a long list of scholarly and lavishly produced books on ornament and illumination which form, even more than his work as practising architect, the foundation of his wide reputation. A list of his books is given below; in addition he was a frequent contributor to art and musical periodicals and especially to the *American Organist,* to whose editor, T. Scott Buhrman, he left his valuable library of organ literature—some ten thousand volumes, now constituting the Audsley Memorial Library. As an architect, he was one of the sanest of the Gothic Revivalists, willing to depart from Gothic where necessary (as in the Bowling Green Building). His design is careful and scholarly. Color interested him particularly, as is evident in the polychrome marble treatment of the chancel of his Philadelphia church, or the organ case designed by himself for the Church of Our Lady of Grace, in Hoboken. Strongly under the influence of Ruskin, his fullest interest lay in ornament, in craftsmanship, in a loving care of detail, that made him, at enormous expense of time and money, supervise every process in the making of the color plates for his books, and made even his manuscripts, handwritten in pencil, works of art. At the time of his death he had not yet completed a valuable work on the *Pointed Architecture of England,* to be illustrated with many photographs taken by himself. His published works, several of them in collaboration with his brother, include: *Guide to the Art of Illuminating and Missal Painting* (1861); *Taste Versus Fashionable Colours, a Manual on Colour in Dress* (1863); *Handbook on Christian Symbolism* (1865); *Notes on Japanese Art* (1872); *Keramic Art of Japan* (1875); *Influence of Decorative Art and Art Workmanship in Household Details* (1876); *Outlines of Ornament in All Styles* (1881); *The Art of Chromolithography* (1883); *The Ornamental Arts of Japan* (perhaps his *magnum opus,* 1884); *The Practical Decorator* (1887); *The Art of Organ Building* (1905); *Guide to the Art of Illuminating on Vellum or Paper* (1911); *Artistic and Decorative Stencilling* (1911); *Amateur Joinery in the Home* (1912); *The Organ of the Twentieth Century* (1919); *Organ Stops and their Artistic Registration* (1921); *The Temple of Tone* (published posthumously, 1925).

[A sketch by T. Scott Buhrman as an appendix to *The Temple of Tone* (1925); *Am. Organist,* July 1925; *Diapason,* July 1, 1925.] T. F. H.

AUDUBON, JOHN JAMES (Apr. 26, 1785–Jan. 27, 1851), artist and ornithologist, perhaps the most popular naturalist of America, has so long been a figure of sentiment and idealism, and as a man and a scientist has suffered so from the touching up of enthusiastic biographers, that it has been difficult to divorce the romance of fiction from that of truth in what was in any case a most colorful and adventurous life. The facts of Audubon's birth and parentage, long obscured by the haze of legend, have been established through the researches of Prof. Herrick. Audubon's father, Jean Audubon, a native of Les Sables d'Olonne on the Bay of Biscay, from boyhood had followed the sea. In 1770 he entered the Santo Domingo trade, and from 1774 captained his own ship. Captured by the British in 1779, he was held a prisoner in New York for several months. A short time after his release he was placed in command of the *Queen Charlotte,* with which in October 1781 he joined the fleet of De Grasse before Yorktown. After commanding successively several armed and trading vessels, in 1783 he was engaged by a firm of colonial merchants at Nantes to take charge of their West Indian trade, which centered at Les Cayes, Santo Domingo. He resided almost continuously at Les Cayes for a period of six years, and as merchant, planter, and dealer in slaves amassed a considerable fortune. During these years his wife, Anne Moynet Audubon, whom he had married in 1772, remained in France.

On his father's plantation at Les Cayes the future naturalist was born. Little is known of his mother except that she was called "Mlle. Rabin" and was "a Creole of Santo Domingo" (Herrick, I, 52); it is probable that she died within a year

after her son's birth. In 1789 Jean Audubon with the boy, who was called Fougère, or sometimes Jean Rabin, and his younger half-sister called Muguet, the daughter of another Creole, returned to France, where he settled in Nantes and became a prominent local figure in the Revolution. His wife received the children tenderly, and in 1794 they were legalized by a regular act of adoption in the presence of witnesses as the children of Jean and Anne Moynet Audubon. On Oct. 23, 1800, at Nantes, Fougère, "adoptive son of Jean Audubon . . . and of Anne Moynet his wife" was baptized Jean Jacques Fougère Audubon. Confusion has been caused to biographers by the fact that young Audubon adopted for a time the fanciful name La Forest; some of his bird drawings of 1805–07 and possibly others of later date, are signed "J. L. F. A." or "J. J. L. Audubon," but he used the La Forest only sporadically, and later dropped it (*Ibid.*, p. 61).

Audubon's education was that of a well-to-do young bourgeois; he was instructed in mathematics, geography, music, and fencing, but his father, occupied with the affairs of the Republic, left the supervision of the boy's studies to the indulgent stepmother, with the result that the formal schooling was sometimes neglected. Audubon, years afterward, regretted that as a boy he had had no drill in writing his native tongue. He did, however, absorb the atmosphere of the revival of interest in nature which Rousseau, Buffon, and Lamarck had made popular, and by the time he was fifteen had begun a collection of his original drawings of French birds. Recognizing the boy's lack of discipline, his father put him into a military school for a year, but the experience did not have much permanent effect, and, having always encouraged the lad's taste for natural history and drawing, in 1802–03 Jean Audubon enabled him to study drawing for a few months under David at Paris.

In the autumn of 1803 young Audubon left France for America. Early in 1804 he reached the estate which his father had bought in 1789, "Mill Grove," near Philadelphia, where for a time he lived the life of a country gentleman, essentially free from money cares, hunting with dog and gun, a sentimental and enthusiastic observer of nature. The Audubon Societies that now form a league of bird protection over the country have created a picture of Audubon as a passionate protector of wild life. In his early years, at least, he was, by his own admission, a great sportsman, killing for amusement as well as food, and he remained a hunter even after he had achieved a reputation as an ornithologist. Only to the middle period of his life, too, belongs

Audubon

the familiar picture of Audubon as a pioneer; in his early years he roamed the placid Pennsylvania countryside in satin pumps and silk breeches. Nevertheless, it was during this period that he began his studies of American bird life. Peewees nesting in a cave attracted his attention; he took the cave for a study, and "it must be set down to Audubon's credit that in the little cave on the banks of the Perkioming, in April 1804, he made the first 'banding' experiment on the young of an American wild bird." He fastened a light silver thread to the legs of some of the baby peewees, and the next spring found that two of them had returned to the region and were nesting a little way up the creek from their place of birth. "Little could he or anyone else then have thought that 100 years later a Bird Banding Society would be formed in America to repeat his test on a much wider scale, in order to gather exact data upon the movements of individuals of all migratory species in every part of the continent" (*Ibid.*, pp. 107–8).

In 1804, also, he met and became engaged to Lucy, daughter of William Bakewell, an Englishman settled on a neighboring estate. Early in 1805, having quarrelled with his father's agent, who owned an interest in a lead mine at Mill Grove, and was acting as Audubon's guardian, he walked to New York, obtained money to pay his passage from Benjamin Bakewell, the uncle of his fiancée, and went back to France. After a year, during which he may have served for a time in the French navy, in 1806 he formed a partnership with Ferdinand Rozier, the son of one of his father's business associates, and returned to America. For a time they tried without success to operate the lead mine, then sold the Audubon interest in Mill Grove; Rozier found a position in Philadelphia, and Audubon entered Benjamin Bakewell's counting-house in New York. In August 1807 the partners decided to seek their fortunes in the West, bought a stock of goods in New York, and went to Louisville, where they opened a general store. Although the business suffered somewhat as a result of the Embargo Act, Audubon went to Philadelphia in June 1808, married Lucy Bakewell, and took her back to Louisville.

In Kentucky, then almost a wilderness, Audubon's penchant for natural history had fresh scope and encouragement, and, entirely out of touch with other ornithologists, working as an artist and a lover of nature more than as a scientist, he went on with his bird paintings. But his interest in mercantile affairs was not sufficient to win success against competition in the growing town of Louisville, so in the spring of 1810 he and Ro-

zier loaded their goods on a flatboat and floated 125 miles down the Ohio to Henderson, Ky. Here history was repeated; "during their stay in Henderson Rozier was in his habitual place behind the counter and attended to what little business was done, while Audubon with a Kentucky lad named John Pope, was was nominally a clerk, roamed the country in eager pursuit of rare birds, and with rod and gun bountifully supplied the table" (*Ibid.*, p. 237).

At Henderson and in other parts of Kentucky to which business vicissitudes or whimsy removed him, Audubon gathered a rich store of the flavor and the personalities of pioneer life on the Ohio, which formed the basis of the sketches of western life scattered throughout the *Ornithological Biography*. His acquaintance with Daniel Boone has perhaps been overstressed by some biographers, and has gone far to tinge with the color of the great huntsman and explorer the really very different personality of Audubon. During these Kentucky years he was visited by some famous personages, and each visit has built up the curious picture of Audubon which tradition has left. Possibly the most famous of these episodes is the chance meeting, in 1810, with Alexander Wilson, the foremost ornithologist of America at that time, over the counter of Audubon's store. The two had never met nor heard of one another before, and the interview was not cordial. Audubon, out of jealousy, as he admits (*Audubon and His Journals*, vol. II, p. 200), did not subscribe for a set of Wilson's ornithological works, and found the little Scotch stranger dour and secretive, while Wilson records of his visit that "science or literature has not one friend in this place" (*American Ornithology*, IX, 39). This meeting and the charges of plagiarism growing out of it formed the basis for a feud, revived and nurtured in later years by George Ord, the friend and biographer of Wilson. Another episode, the visit of Constantine Samuel Rafinesque in 1818, is an exhibition of the prankish and unpredictable character of our artist-naturalist, but unfortunately had consequences not foreseen at the time. Rafinesque was gullible in the extreme, and Audubon could not resist the temptation to sketch for him, in all solemnity, fishes and birds most marvelous and mythical, which Rafinesque proceeded to publish as new species, much to the bewilderment of later zoologists. Here and in some of his own bird drawings, Audubon showed a carelessness of the veracity that science demands which has done irreparable hurt to his reputation as a naturalist.

The business partnership with Rozier was not a success, so after another fruitless venture it was dissolved, though the friendship continued. Audubon then, in association with his brother-in-law, Thomas Bakewell, and others, attempted successively several different enterprises, the last being a steam grist and lumber mill, at Henderson, which was too elaborate for the needs of the new country and failed in 1819. Audubon, the heaviest loser, was jailed for debt, but was released on the plea of bankruptcy with only the clothes he wore, his gun, and his original drawings. This disaster ended his business career. Turning to account his artistic skill, for a time he did crayon portraits at five dollars a head, then, in the winter of 1819–20, he took his family to Cincinnati, where he became a taxidermist in the new Western Museum, just founded by Dr. Daniel Drake. Some time in 1820 the possibility of publishing his bird drawings occurred to him, and thereafter his life had a definite aim. In October of that year he started down the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, exploring the country for birds, and paying his expenses by portraits. After a period in New Orleans, where Audubon worked as tutor and drawing teacher, and even painted street signs, Mrs. Audubon obtained a position as governess and took upon her shoulders the burden of the needy family—a burden she sustained for some twelve years.

In 1824 Audubon made a journey to Philadelphia, in search of a publisher. He was encouraged by C. L. Bonaparte, and by Thomas Sully, who gave him lessons in the use of oils, but encountered the opposition of the friends of Alexander Wilson, under the leadership of George Ord. Bonaparte and the engraver Fairman advised him to seek a publisher in Europe, where he would find a greater interest in his subject, and the requisite skill to reproduce his drawings. He returned to the West by way of Niagara Falls and the Great Lakes, and spent the next year with his wife at St. Francisville, La., teaching music and drawing to her pupils. In the summer of 1826, with the funds raised in this way added to Mrs. Audubon's savings, he took his drawings to Europe. He was favorably received at Liverpool, where he obtained his first subscribers, and he was lionized in Edinburgh. He formed a pleasant acquaintanceship with Sir Walter Scott, and in March 1827 was elected to the Royal Society of Edinburgh. The man of the hour in Scotland, he continued, as during the lean years in America, to pay his expenses by painting, though copies in oils of his birds had superseded portraits. In 1827 he went to London, with many letters of introduction but was not so enthusiastically received as he had been at Edinburgh, though at last the king subscribed for his books and set the fashion in his favor.

Wm. Lizars, the Edinburgh engraver who had undertaken the work of publishing the birds, gave it up after producing ten plates, and Audubon was forced to find another engraver. He finally reached an agreement with Robert Havell, Jr., of London, "who, through eleven years of the closest association with his new patron became one of the greatest engravers in aquatint the world has ever seen" (Herrick, I, 362).

The *Birds of America,* in elephant folio size, began to appear in 1827, in parts: it occupied in its serial publication and subsequent reprintings eleven years, and necessitated frequent trips to and from America. During all this time Audubon was engaged in obtaining subscribers, a task more favorable in Europe with a ready scientific audience, than in America. Among the people whom he approached was the famous Baron Rothschild, with whom Audubon had, as he relates it, an unpleasant dealing, discreditable to the Baron's honesty. Whatever the rights of the case may be, it is evident that as success crowned his work, Audubon became by turns increasingly vain, touchy, and buoyantly good-natured. He has been called egotistic, but there was nothing so ponderous in his character; he had, rather, an almost womanish vanity, that extended to his handsome face, his clothes, at first elegant, then consciously rustic, and to the long backwoodsman ringlets which he would wear, no matter where he went.

In October 1830 he and Mrs. Audubon settled temporarily in Edinburgh, where he began the work on the text of his *Birds of America,* to be called *Ornithological Biography.* He had considered asking William Swainson, with whom he had become intimate, to collaborate on the text, but finally made connection with Wm. MacGillivray, than whom "a better trained or more competent helper . . . could hardly have been found in Great Britain or elsewhere" (*Ibid.,* I, 438). Edinburgh publishers would offer nothing for the first volume, so it was published in 1831 at Audubon's expense, and although several competing works appeared at about the same time, "was well received and drew forth immediate and unstinted praise from many sources" (*Ibid.,* I, 445).

Having achieved a European reputation, Audubon returned to America in 1831 acclaimed the foremost naturalist of his country. His first American notice had appeared in the *American Journal of Science* in 1829; in November 1830, upon nomination of Edward Everett, he was elected a Fellow of the American Academy, and in 1832 was the subject of the first of a series of able articles by W. B. O. Peabody in the *North American Review.* There were controversies and

Audubon

criticisms, of course—Charles Waterton was the most persistent heckler—but on the whole the stay in America between 1831 and 1834 was a pleasant and fruitful one. The year of his return Audubon met John Bachman [*q.v.*] in Charleston, and began what was to be a life-long friendship, cemented in 1837 and 1839 by the marriage of Audubon's sons to Bachman's daughters. He went on several expeditions, in the company of his younger son, his friend and patron Edward Harris, and others, exploring the dunes and lagoons of the Texas coast, the palmetto groves of Florida, and the wild coast of Labrador, where the destruction of the gannets in their rare breeding-grounds awoke from him a passionate cry of protest that still rings with the appeal and authority of great poetry. His Labrador Journals are stirring reading, and distinctly the best contributions to natural history among his diaries.

In 1834 he went back to Edinburgh to continue his work on the *Ornithological Biography.* Havell issued the last part of the *Birds of America* in June 1838, completing the work begun in Edinburgh in 1826; the concluding volume (vol. V) of the *Ornithological Biography* appeared in May of the next year, followed, in the summer, by the *Synopsis of the Birds of North America,* a methodical catalogue of the birds then known, prepared with the efficient help of MacGillivray.

The great work finished, Audubon returned to America, began work on a "miniature edition" of the *Birds,* and almost immediately undertook the preparation, in collaboration with John Bachman, of the *Viviparous Quadrupeds of North America.* In 1841 he bought land on the Hudson, and the next year settled finally on his estate, "Minnies's Land," which is now Audubon Park, New York City. With old age came a kindly attitude toward his former rivals; he was the adviser and encourager of young scientists (notably Spencer F. Baird [*q.v.*], who had begun a correspondence with Audubon at the age of seventeen), the revered and adored sage, and patron saint of the birds. His latter years, indeed, accorded closely with the popular legend that has grown up about him, so that at the time of his death in January 1851 the real man was already merged in the traditional Audubon of romance. His powers had failed in the last few years, and the completion of the *Quadrupeds* for which he had finished about half of the large drawings was left to his sons. The colored plates (originals by J. J. and J. W. Audubon) were published in two volumes (1842–45), and the text in three volumes (1846–54).

The legacy of Audubon's work must be judged by a dual standard—as art and as science. Artists

have thought him too photographic, scientists find his work too emotional and impressionistic. Though Cuvier said of the drawings that they were "la plus magnifique monument que l'art ait encore élevé à la science," others have thought his work greatly overpraised, and even an admirer like Coues admits that many of his birds are posed in attitudes anatomically impossible. Where Audubon was interested in a bird he would lavish on its representation a microscopic detail satisfying to the most critical scientist. In other cases he washed in his colors with an eye only to the impressionistic effect produced by the bird in some strained pose caught in a split second of time. His passion for representing birds in violent action had obvious advantages and defects, but it bears witness to the fact that he studied and painted birds in life, not stuffed in museum cases. Audubon was above all an out-of-doors naturalist; he possessed no formal scientific training and no aptitude for books or taxonomy, nor did he care particularly about describing new species of birds, though he certainly observed numerous such. The Latin nomenclature and the scientific identification of most of the species in the *Birds of America,* is largely the work of MacGillivray, whilst most of what may be called systematic science in the *Quadrupeds of America* is probably due to Bachman, Audubon supplying the brilliant drawings, the fund of incident and personal observation, and the peculiar literary flavor of the biographical part, which is sometimes sentimental but always vivid. Weighed with all detractions in the balance, however, Audubon remains, with Alexander Wilson, at the head of early American ornithology. Contrasted with the work of Wilson, Audubon's ornithology had a greater general usefulness in that it included many birds that Audubon had never seen but merely knew by report, while Wilson confined himself to his own observations, which had been more limited than Audubon's in any case. As a pioneer manual of American ornithology, Audubon's work stands out preëminently, whilst the earlier work of his great rival Wilson was more original, more steadily scientific, and more circumscribed. As to the literary style and the magnificence of the illustrations, there can be no choice between the work of the two men; the honors go to Audubon even when all his inaccuracies and mannerisms have been acknowledged.

[F. H. Herrick, *Audubon the Naturalist,* two vols. (1917), is the product of much careful research, and contains an extensive bibliography. Another valuable work is M. R. Audubon, *Audubon and His Journals, with ... Notes by Elliott Coues,* two vols. (1897). For source material, see bibliography in Herrick. Lucy Audubon, *The Life of John James Audubon, the Naturalist* (1869), is a reproduction of an earlier work by Robert Buchanan, which, though based on materials supplied by Mrs. Audubon, is not very reliable.]

D. C. P.
E. R. D.

AUGUR, CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS (July 10, 1821–Jan. 16, 1898), Union soldier, son of Ammon and Annis (Wellman) Augur, was sixth in descent from Robert Augur who came from England and was living at New Haven, Conn., in 1673. He was born at Kendall, N. Y., moved in 1821 with his widowed mother to Michigan, and was appointed as a cadet to the United States Military Academy in 1839. He graduated in 1843, standing sixteenth in a class of thirty-nine members, which included U. S. Grant and a dozen others who distinguished themselves on one side or the other during the Civil War. In 1844 he was married to Jane E. Arnold of Ogdensburg, N. Y. Assigned to the 4th Infantry, he served with credit in the Mexican War at the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma under Gen. Zachary Taylor, and as aide-de-camp for several brigade commanders. He had active service on the frontier in the new territories of Washington and Oregon, during the years 1852–56, in campaigns against the Yakima and Rogue River Indians, with engagements at Two Buttes, Big Bend of Rogue River, and Sohomy Creek. At the beginning of the Civil War, he had reached the grade of major and was serving as commandant of cadets at the West Point Military Academy, with the *ex-officio* rank of lieutenant-colonel. He was promoted to brigadier-general of volunteers in November 1861, and placed in command of the advance defenses of Washington until March 1862. This was followed by active service on the Rappahannock and the first capture of Fredericksburg by his command March–July 1862.

When Gen. Pope took command of the Army of Virginia, Augur was given Sigel's division of Banks's 5th corps on Aug. 9, which was ordered in a few days to threaten Gordonsville on the Virginia Central Railroad. Pope brought up the remaining corps, but did not place them at supporting distance. Banks thought that he was ordered to advance and attack the enemy, and in doing so found himself in the presence of Jackson's entire force, about four times as great as his own, at Cedar Mountain. He was driven back with great loss. Augur was severely wounded late in the day and the other division commanders were wounded or captured. The rank of major-general of volunteers and of brevet-colonel in the regular army was conferred upon him for "gallant and meritorious services" on this occasion, one of the few commissions given for specific acts during the war. In the fall of 1862, when Banks organized his expedition to New Orleans, at his

request Augur was assigned as second in command. He commanded the district of Baton Rouge for some months; commanded in the action at Port Hudson Plains, May 21, 1863; commanded the left wing of the army in the siege of Port Hudson until the surrender of the Confederate force under his classmate, Frank Gardner, in July. It was a long and tedious siege with much fighting. He opposed in council the disastrous assault of May 27 as premature and without proper study of the ground. He was ill and on leave of absence and president of the Warren court of inquiry and other military commissions until Oct. 13, 1863, when he was assigned to the command of the Department of Washington and the 22nd army corps, which he maintained until the end of the war. He was brevetted brigadier-general in 1865 for gallant and meritorious service at Port Hudson and major-general for services in the field during the war. He was mustered out of volunteer service in 1866, reverted to his position as colonel of the 12th Infantry in the regular army, and was promoted to brigadier-general by Gen. Grant to fill one of the vacancies created by his own election to the presidency in 1869.

In the years following the Civil War there were many new problems requiring solution by military commanders. The building of the Union Pacific Railroad and the migration of thousands of home seekers to the West aroused the Indian tribes to the defense of their hunting-grounds. Augur commanded various military departments during that period and directed operations against nearly every one of the hostile tribes in the years from 1867 to 1885. While in command of the Department of the Gulf during the reconstruction days of 1876, when opposing factions were on the verge of open war because of the disputed election of that year, he settled the affair without bloodshed. He retired from active service July 10, 1885, and died Jan. 16, 1898, at Georgetown, D. C.

[Edwin P. Augur, *Family Hist. and Geneal. of the Descendants of Robert Augur* (1904), pp. 83, 138–46; *Ass. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad., Ann. Reunion* (1898); *Official Records*, vols. LXXXIV, CII, CIV; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.; Papers of the Mil. Hist. Soc. of Mass.*, II (1895); *Campaigns of the Civil War*, vol. IV (1881), vol. VIII (1882); John Codman Ropes, *Story of the Civil War*, II (1898).]

E. S.

AUGUR, HEZEKIAH (Feb. 21, 1791–Jan. 10, 1858), sculptor, was one of eight children born to Hezekiah Augur and his second wife, Lydia Atwater. The father was a house carpenter and joiner in New Haven, where the young Hezekiah was born. The boy learned to use his father's tools and early devised various machines, but his father was unwilling to have him continue his own trade and apprenticed him, at nine years old, to a grocer. After four or five years of this work, he was set to learn the apothecary's trade. To qualify he had to study anatomy and this, though he continued it only one year, was of use to him later on. At sixteen he was placed, as clerk, in a mercantile house and at nineteen he became acting partner in a business concern. A few years later he became a partner in a dry-goods business of which he acted as sole manager. He came successfully through the difficult business years of 1815 and 1816, but in December of the latter year, as the result of a misunderstanding, the partnership was dissolved and Augur found himself a bankrupt. Not only did he find that his original capital had disappeared but also that, for some inexplicable reason, he was in debt as well. His father and some of his relatives became indebted for him. This financial catastrophe preyed upon him and he became somewhat of a recluse; for many years his one desire was to free himself from a situation for which he was not to blame. At first he assisted his father, but after four or five months borrowed $200 and set up a small fruit and cigar stand which he kept for about two years. Previously he had carved the frame of a harp and when he had taken it to be varnished it had attracted sufficient attention to encourage him to continue, so after he had sold his fruit stand he opened a carving establishment. His business grew and he soon added mirrors to his output. From this period came one of his numerous inventions—an improvement on the artificial leg. After having relieved his relatives by annual payments from their indebtedness for him, he was at last able, in 1823, to make a final settlement with his former partner. It required, however, the selling of his mirror establishment and left him in somewhat straitened circumstances. In this same year he began, at the suggestion of S. F. B. Morse, to carve in marble the head of the Apollo Belvedere. It was finished the following year and was much praised at the time. Since his father had died in 1818 he now felt free to follow his own bent and continued to interest himself in sculpture. He did a head of George Washington and a Sappho. One of the few public commissions he received was for the bust of Oliver Ellsworth in the Supreme Court room in the Capitol at Washington. Another of his early works is the bust of Prof. Alexander M. Fisher, made in 1827 and presented to Yale College by members of the professor's class. Though carved in marble it shows the technique of wood-carving. Another bust—an idealized subject, called "Resignation," —is now in the possession of a member of his

family in Portland, Ore. His principal work, "Jephthah and His Daughter," consists of two separate small statues. Though executed sometime in the thirties, they still recall the technique of the wood-carver, particularly in the folds of the drapery. They show, however, artistic imagination and a degree of characterization and emotional expression rare in works of that period. After its completion, sometime before the end of 1837, the group was acquired by the Trumbull Gallery at Yale. Previously the college had, in 1833, bestowed upon the sculptor the honorary degree of Master of Arts. Up to the year 1837 Augur had been living with his mother and sister, but after the death of the former in that year he moved into bachelor quarters. The following year he was commissioned to design the bronze medals for the two hundredth anniversary of the settlement of New Haven. According to his diary, he made, in 1840, a monument for Miss Ogden, but all trace of it has apparently disappeared. His sculpture, however, seems not to have been very remunerative, for in 1845 he was forced to sell his effects at auction. Among the items sold of which all trace has been lost were an Apollo and a Washington in marble, probably the ones previously mentioned, a Franklin and a "Sleeping Cupid." It was a disheartening period for Augur. In his diary he speaks of a single ray of light, which refers possibly to a carving machine which he perfected at about this time. He patented it and became a member of a company for exploiting it in New England. It was perhaps the most important of his various inventions, among which were a machine for making worsted lace, and the bracket-saw. His financial difficulties seem to have emphasized his somewhat reserved and unassuming manners. They likewise prevented him, except at rare intervals, from indulging his fastidious taste in dress. He was a small man and in stature resembled his mother's family. In features he is said to have resembled portraits of Jefferson. Considering all the obstacles he had to face in his career as sculptor—paternal objection, financial difficulty, entire lack of training—his accomplishment is praiseworthy and, though exercising no influence, he remains an interesting figure in early American sculpture.

[Edwin P. Augur, *Family Hist. and Geneal. of the Descendants of Robert Augur* (1904); *Am. Hist. Mag.* (New Haven), I, no. 2; H. W. French, *Art and Artists in Conn.* (1879); Lorado Taft, *Hist. of Am. Sculpture* (1903), pp. 24–28.]

E.G.N.

AUGUSTUS, JOHN (1785–June 21, 1859), philanthropist, was a self-appointed pioneer probation officer and friend of the unfortunate, in Boston, Mass., for more than twenty years. In 1841 he was a humble shoemaker in Boston, employing several assistants. Present in the police court one day that year, he became interested in a man charged with being a common drunkard. At Augustus's request and offer of bail, sentence was deferred for three weeks and the man released. At the end of that short probation the man was able to convince the judge of his reformation, and received a nominal fine. Thereafter, Augustus was present daily, at first in the police, and later in the municipal court, acting as counsel for prisoners, and furnishing bail. He also found homes for juvenile offenders, and made possible a fresh start in life for men and women who through intemperance or vice had gone wrong. He is described as a thin man, of medium height, his face somewhat wrinkled, and his features of a benevolent expression. Hurrying about on his errands in a chaise, he became one of the familiar sights of the city. He was warm-hearted, impulsive, and direct of speech, often in trouble with court officials, sometimes because they thought him presumptuous and a hindrance to the transaction of business, and often because his activities lessened their fees. Between 1842 and 1858, according to the court records, he bailed 1,946 persons, making himself liable during that period to the extent of $243,235.

For five years after taking up this work, Augustus conducted his shoe shop, often working all night, he says, to make up the time spent in court. All he earned he devoted to his philanthropies. Others voluntarily contributed, though never large amounts, his receipts for five years averaging $1,776. In 1846 he gave up his business, having acquired, apparently, a meager income upon which to support himself. He was never the agent of any sect or society and never received salary or remuneration. When seventy-four years of age he died from a general prostration due to overtaxing his powers. The sentiments and convictions which underlay his activities have won general approval, and work similar to his is now carried on widely by institutions private and public.

[Information regarding Augustus's antecedents and early life is lacking. A good idea of the man and his work may be derived from *A Report of the Labors of John Augustus* (1852) and *Letter Concerning the Labors of Mr. John Augustus, from One Who Knows Him* (1858). See also obituary notice in *Boston Herald*, June 22, 1859.]

H.E.S.

AUSTELL, ALFRED (Jan. 14, 1814–Dec. 7, 1881), financier, was born near Dandridge in East Tennessee. His father, William Austell, a farmer of that region, and his mother, Jane Wilkins) Austell, were of English descent. Growing up without educational advantages except of

the most limited sort, Austell found himself, at twenty-two, engaged in merchandising and farming with his brother at Campbellton, a village near Atlanta, Ga. The two brothers located there in 1836. The elder brother died early, but Alfred, whose business acumen was of a high order, prospered and became the leading merchant and farmer in his section. In 1853 he was married to Franchina Cameron of La Grange. In 1858 he closed out his business at Campbellton and moved to Atlanta. Though the future capital of Georgia had at the time less than 10,000 inhabitants, its location at the junction point of three important railroads convinced Austell that it was destined to be an important city. In the stirring political controversies of the period he took no active part. He was, however, an ardent Unionist and anti-secessionist and used his influence on the side of conservative action. With secession an accomplished fact, he supported the Confederacy and was an important factor in the industrial and financial aspects of the war. The title "General," by which he was universally known, dated back to Campbellton days when he was a brigadier in the state militia. On the collapse of the Confederacy Andrew Johnson, a personal friend, urged on him the appointment as provisional governor of Georgia, but Austell declined. Again in 1868 tradition has it that Austell could have received the Democratic nomination for governor. He preferred, however, to continue his quiet efforts toward material rehabilitation and declined to be drawn into the political maelstrom.

His name is associated in the history of Georgia and the South with the great task of laying the foundations of a stable economic structure to take the place of the old regime. He realized that the primary needs were strong financial institutions and more extensive railroad development. In September 1865 he organized the Atlanta National Bank, the first Southern institution chartered under the National Banking Act of 1863. As its first president (he held the position until his death) Austell created one of the strongest of the Southern commercial banks, one that has played a large part in the development of Atlanta. At a time when the extension of credit was on a less impersonal basis than at present, Austell established a reputation as a remarkably keen judge of character and business ability. As a railroad builder he also achieved much. He was associated with a number of railroad enterprises, the most important of which was the Atlanta & Charlotte Air Line (now part of the Southern system). This road, 265 miles long, provided a direct connection with Washington. Austell was the first chairman of its board, acted as its financial agent, and was its vice-president for ten years. In addition to these activities in the banking and railroad worlds, Austell organized the cotton firm of Austell & Inman, later Inman, Swann & Company, one of the greatest cotton commission houses in the country. These ventures, invariably managed with conspicuous ability and success, brought to Austell a commanding position in the world of Southern business. He was a leader in that army of enterprisers who rebuilt the South after the ruin of the Civil War. His wealth, large for the period, he freely gave to all deserving causes.

[Lucian Lamar Knight, *Standard Hist. of Georgia and Georgians* (1917), VI, 3040–43; Bernard Suttler, "Alfred Austell," in *Men of Mark in Ga.*, ed. by Wm. J. Northen (1911), III, 357–65.] R. P. B—s.

AUSTEN, PETER TOWNSEND (Sept. 10, 1852–Dec. 30, 1907), chemist, was born at Clifton, Staten Island, the son of John H. and Elizabeth (Townsend) Austen, and a descendant of Peter Townsend of Sterling Iron Works who in 1776 had introduced into America from Germany a new process for the manufacture of steel (Benjamin F. Thompson, *History of Long Island*, 3rd ed., II, 351). Peter Townsend Austen, after attending a local private school and the Columbia School of Mines, went abroad for three years' further study. In 1876 he received the degree of Ph.D. from the University of Zurich and returned to America to become instructor in chemistry at Dartmouth. Two years later he went to Rutgers as full professor of general and applied chemistry. This connection continued for thirteen years, during which he served also on the faculty of the New Jersey Science School, as state chemist, and as adviser to various state and municipal boards. As a pioneer in university extension work he was a pleasing and popular lecturer who obtained much satisfaction from public speaking, a taste possibly derived from his father, a well-known auctioneer. Austen left Rutgers expecting to devote himself thenceforth to private practise, but he soon resumed college work at the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute. A few years later (1896) he gave up educational work altogether and established a consulting office and laboratory in New York City. He belonged to a number of chemical societies at home and abroad and was at one time chairman of the New York section of the American Chemical Society. His pleasing personality, his keen insight into technical problems, and his facility as a speaker won for him recognition among his fellow chemists. During a comparatively short scientific career he published a number of text-books, one of the best-known of which was his translation and revision of Adolph Pinner's *Introduction to the Study of Organic*

Chemistry (1883). He was the author of about fifty scientific papers which appeared in the *American Chemical Journal* and in the *Proceedings of the Chemical Society of Berlin.* But his interests were not confined to pure science. They included the popular presentation of the subject and the practical applications of chemistry to the arts and industries. His lectures on "Science Teaching in the Schools," "Scientific Speculations," and "The Chemical Factor in History" aroused much interest as did also his article entitled "Harnessing the Sun," which appeared in the *North American Review,* June 1895. He invented several manufacturing processes used in dyeing and bleaching (see Patent Indexes, 1880–1900), and was a frequent contributor to chemical trade journals. He was married in 1878 to Ellen M. Monroe.

[*Am. Men of Science* (1906), ed. by J. M. Cattell and *Who's Who in America* for the same year contain the most reliable information, since the data were probably supplied by Austen himself. Obituary in *N.Y. Tribune,* Jan. 1, 1908.]

H. C.

AUSTIN, BENJAMIN (Nov. 18, 1752–May 4, 1820), political leader, was born in Boston, the son of Elizabeth (Waldo) Austin and Benjamin Austin, merchant and member of the Council of Massachusetts. The Waldos were mostly Tories; the Austins belonged to a small group of mercantile families in eastern Massachusetts who became ardent disciples of Samuel Adams, and were unable to understand that the formulas of 1775 were inadequate if not mischievous in 1785 and 1795. Benjamin Austin, Jr., made a tour of Europe in 1783, and was married to Jane Ivers in 1785. During the war he had written patriotic orations in the Boston press, but he gained his reputation in 1786 by a series of *Observations on the Pernicious Practice of the Law* signed "Honestus," exposing the evil conditions of legal procedure in the Commonwealth, and demanding the abolition of lawyers and the exclusion of English common law. In their stead he proposed (1) that petty cases be decided by referees, (2) the adoption of a plain and simple law code that any educated citizen could understand, (3) that parties be required to do their own pleading in civil cases, or be represented by a friend who must declare on oath that he is receiving no fee, (4) that the Commonwealth appoint an advocate general to appear on behalf of all persons indicted by the attorney-general (*Independent Chronicle,* Apr. 20, 1786). The last proposal foreshadows the public defender of modern law reformers; and Austin's suggestions were not unfitted for the needs of the times, but the lawyers of course assailed him, and accused him of fomenting

Shays's Rebellion, which broke out shortly after. The injustice of this charge turned Austin's zeal to bitterness, and his courage to contentiousness. He succeeded Sam Adams as favorite of the Boston mob, and was elected to the state Senate in 1787, and from 1789 to 1794. J. Q. Adams describes his flooding the town meeting with 700 men "who looked as if they had been collected from all the Jails on the continent, with Ben. Austin like another Jack Cade at their head" (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* 2nd ser., IV, 63). By 1790 he was opposing Washington's administration, and his local faction for which he accepted the name Democratic (*Independent Chronicle,* May 14, 1795) was one of the urban groups whose adherence Jefferson accepted with some misgivings. "Aristocracy," "monarchical influence," "the Essex Junto," "the British Treaty," were phrases that Austin used like bludgeons. "Lank Honestus with his lanthorn jaws," was a terror to the Federalists and the target of their satire, for which his violent, demagogic manner of speaking, and his business of rope-making rendered him singularly vulnerable. His probity, however, was unquestioned, and throughout the period of Federalist ascendancy he occupied positions of trust such as Overseer of the Poor, and manager of the Harvard College lotteries. He was a leader in the Boston Constitutional Club, one of the "self-created societies" of 1794 that interfered with the authorities, promoted riots, frightened property-holders, and quickly brought conservative reaction. He was defeated for the state Senate in 1795, and although returned on Apr. 4, 1796, he definitely lost political control of Boston three weeks later at a town meeting on Jay's treaty, and was not again reëlected.

"Every attempt to restore the liberties of mankind, or to check the progress of arbitrary power, is now styled Jacobinism," wrote Austin in 1797 (*Constitutional Republicanism,* p. 52). He kept Republican principles before the people in frequent newspaper articles, the republication of which in 1803 was followed shortly by a presidential appointment as commissioner of loans. His caustic tongue on one occasion got him a beating by a Federalist editor, and on another had tragic consequences. Having accused T. O. Selfridge, a Federalist lawyer, of barratry, Austin failed to give satisfaction when the charge was proved false. Selfridge posted him in the Boston *Gazette* as a coward, liar, and scoundrel. That afternoon, Aug. 4, 1806, Austin's son Charles, a Harvard student, assaulted Selfridge with a hickory stick and was shot dead. The trial of Selfridge for manslaughter developed into a con-

test of strength between Federalists and Republicans; his acquittal by a Federalist jury, following a charge by Justice Parker, added bitterness to the party conflict. Although regarded as a dangerous radical, Austin was essentially a conservative always opposing local improvements and changes. He liked the political vintage of 1775 too well to accept the new wine of Federalism.

[Benjamin Austin, Jr., *Constitutional Republicanism, in Opposition to Fallacious Federalism; as Published Occasionally in the Independent Chronicle*, Boston, 1803. The "Honestus" articles of 1786 ran in the Boston *Independent Chronicle* from Mar. 9 to June 15; a digest of them was published in a pamphlet, *Observations on Pernicious Practice of Law* (Boston 1786, 2nd ed. 1819). Austin's other newspaper pseudonyms were "Brutus" (during the Revolution), "Old South" (after 1795), and "Examiner" (after 1812). For political satire, see *The Democratiad* (Phila., 1795); J. S. J. Gardiner, *Remarks on the Jacobiniad* (Boston, 1795, 1798); and files of the *Chronicle* and *Federal Orrery*. For the Selfridge case, see *Trial of Thomas O. Selfridge . . . for Killing Charles Austin* (Boston, 1807); T. O. Selfridge, *Correct Statement of the Whole Preliminary Controversy between Tho. O. Selfridge and Benjamin Austin* (Charlestown, 1807); B. Austin, *Memorial on the Grounds of Excusable Homicide to the Leg. of Mass.* (1806); A. E. Morse, *Federalist Party in Mass.* (1909).] S. E. M.

AUSTIN, DAVID (Mar. 19, 1759–Feb. 5, 1831), Congregational clergyman, widely known in his day because of his predictions and writings regarding the millennium, was born in New Haven, Conn., a descendant of John Austin, and the son of David, a prosperous merchant, and Mary (Mix) Austin. He graduated from Yale in 1779, studied theology under Dr. Joseph Bellamy [*q.v.*] of Bethlehem, Conn., and was licensed to preach by the New Haven Association of Congregational Ministers, May 30, 1780. In 1781 he went to Europe and spent nearly a year in travel. Upon his return he supplied several churches, and while at Norwich, Conn., became engaged to Lydia, daughter of Dr. Joshua Lathrop, whom he married June 5, 1783. On Sept. 9, 1788, he was ordained and installed pastor of the Presbyterian church in Elizabeth, N. J.

While here he undertook several literary enterprises, editing *The Christian's, Scholar's and Farmer's Magazine*, a bi-monthly, the first number of which was for April and May 1789. He also published by subscription *The American Preacher*, containing sermons by living divines without respect to denomination. The first three volumes of this appeared in 1791 and the fourth in 1793. He was a man of great energy, lively imagination, and excitable temperament, regarded from boyhood as brilliant but erratic. As early as 1791 he had become interested in the study of prophecy and was soon convinced that the millennium was at hand. This belief became an obsession. A severe attack of scarlet fever in 1795 aggravated his eccentricities. Thereafter, he thought of little but the second advent, and finally predicted that May 15, 1796, would be the date of its occurrence. With a crowd of excited people he awaited the event in church, but as the day wore on and nothing unusual happened, he finally arose and preached from the text, "My Lord delayeth his coming." His ingenuity found excuses for his mistake, and his faith in the imminence of the advent was more ardent than ever. At length his church felt obliged to ask the presbytery to dissolve the pastoral relation, at which request he withdrew from the Presbyterian denomination. His subsequent career was a checkered one. Returning to New Haven he expended his fortune in building houses, stores, and wharfs for the Jews who he believed would assemble there on their way to the Holy Land to await the Messiah. He affiliated himself with the Baptists for a while, spent considerable time in New York, Washington, and New Jersey where he sought unsuccessfully to get reinstated in the Presbyterian Church. Finally, in 1815, he became pastor of the Congregational church in Bozrah, Conn., and remained there until his death.

His publications include: *The Millennium; or, The Thousand Years of Prosperity, Promised to the Church of God, in the Old Testament and the New, Shortly to Commence, and to be Carried on to Perfection* (1794); *The Voice of God to the People of These United States* (1796); *A Prophetic Leaf* (1798); *Masonry in Its Glory; or Solomon's Temple Illuminated* (1799); *The Millennial Door Thrown Open* (1799); *The Dance of Herodias, through the Streets of Hartford, on Election Day, to the Tune of the Stars of Heaven, in the Dragon's Tail; or A Gentle Trip at the Heels of the Strumpet of Babylon* (1799); *A Discourse on the Occasion of the Death of George Washington* (1800); *The Dawn of Day* (1800); *The National "Barley Cake"* (1802); *Republican Festival* (1803); *Proclamation for the Millennial Empire* (1805); *The Rod of Moses Upon the Rock of Calvary* (1816). He also edited Jonathan Dickinson's *The True Scripture Doctrine* (1793) and Jonathan Edwards's *History of Redemption* (1793).

[E. F. Hatfield, *Hist. of Elizabeth, N. J.* (1868); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit*, II (1857); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll.*, IV (1907).] H. E. S.

AUSTIN, HENRY (Dec. 4, 1804–Dec. 17, 1891), architect, son of Daniel and Adah (Dorman) Austin, was born at Mt. Carmel, Conn. A carpenter at fifteen, he was then for some years in the office of Ithiel Town, who about 1810

opened an office for the practise of architecture in New Haven. Town had what was undoubtedly the finest collection of books on architecture at that time in this country. Austin made the most of his opportunities, opened an office of his own in 1836, and, on account of the number of men trained in his office in the fifty-five years of his professional life, became locally known as the "Father of Architects." In 1842 he was commissioned to design a library for Yale College, a design, everything considered, never surpassed by any building erected by Yale. Modeled, it is said, after King's College Chapel at Cambridge, England, it had the charm of relative smallness of scale. In designing this building, Austin was assisted by Henry Flockton, an Englishman then employed in his office. Another notable design of Austin's, happily unaltered, is the massive brown-stone gateway (1845–48), in the Egyptian style, of the historic Grove Street Cemetery, New Haven. Of excellent proportions and large enough to be imposing, this is an impressive design, with its bold inscription, "The Dead Shall be Raised." In 1861 Austin was commissioned to design a City Hall for New Haven, in which he was assisted by David Russell Brown of his office. This building, in the Italian Gothic style, with its bold tower, was greatly admired, and gains much from its location but is inferior, as a design, to the other designs mentioned.

Among Austin's other buildings were the old Railway Station at the intersection of Union and Chapel Sts. with a clock-tower rising 140 feet above the pavement; the old New Haven House (now replaced by the Hotel Taft), of which it was said, "Even the garret chambers were good enough for a Prince"; the Cutler and Hoadley Buildings (the latter now demolished); the Yale, Tradesmen's, Mechanics, and New Haven Savings Banks; Eaton School; a bank in Springfield; Trinity Church Home. He built so many private residences that it was said that almost every street in New Haven bore marks of his taste. Most of these were in the then fashionable so-called Tuscan or Italian style, with flat roofs; they had dignity and solidity, were extremely well-planned, and were eminently gentlemanly. Austin also built many churches throughout the state and elsewhere, tidy, well proportioned, spired, of which the most notable was the "Pride of Danbury," in 1857, burned down in 1907. In constructing the spire, rising to a height of 210 feet, he attempted to emulate Town, who constructed the spire of Center Church on the level in one piece within the tower and raised it by an ingenious system of windlasses to its final position; but after Austin's spire had been raised to within some few inches of its final position, one of the guy ropes gave way and the spire turned up-side-down and crashed through the roof of the building. The spire was rebuilt *in situ*. Austin also designed the monument erected in 1846 in Coventry, Conn., to the memory of Nathan Hale, the youthful hero of the Revolutionary War.

Austin's work was done in what may be viewed as the worst period of American architecture; he had neither the genius nor the opportunities of training of Town, his master: but his designs were for the most part restrained, sound, and had the exceptional merit of attachment to their sites. It would be difficult to class him as a stylist, so eclectic was he in his taste. In personal appearance, he was below middle height, stocky. In his later years, he wore a brown wig, contrasting oddly with a very wrinkled face. Customarily, he wore a black broadcloth frock-coat. A man of fine personal qualities, he was genial, generous, large-minded, helpful. He was twice married.

[On his death, in 1891, Austin left a large library containing many books from the library of Town, but his books and drawings were, unfortunately, dispersed. The Yale University Library contains two volumes of his designs, and the full plans and specifications of one of his houses. Representations of the College Library and of the Grove Street Cemetery Gateway will be found in Mrs. L. C. H. Tuthill's *Hist. of Architecture* (1848).]

G. D. S.

AUSTIN, JAMES TRECOTHICK (Jan. 10, 1784–May 8, 1870), lawyer, Massachusetts politician, was born in Boston, the son of Jonathan Loring and Hannah (Ivers) Austin. He prepared for college first under Caleb Bingham, next at Andover, and finally at the Boston Latin School. He entered Harvard College in April 1799, at the third quarter of the freshman year, and graduated third in his class in 1802. Studying law with the Hon. William Sullivan, he was admitted to the bar in 1805, and on Oct. 3, 1806, he married Catherine, daughter of Elbridge Gerry. In 1807 Gov. Sullivan appointed him county attorney for Suffolk County, which office he held until 1832. Two years later he became town advocate and in 1811 was appointed a director of the state prison, serving in the latter capacity for a number of years. In 1816 President Madison appointed him as public agent under the terms of the Treaty of Ghent. Four years later Austin was a delegate to the convention that met to revise the state constitution and in 1826 he became a member of the Harvard Board of Overseers. He represented Boston in the state Senate for several terms. In 1828 he was appointed by Gov. Levi Lincoln as commissioner to settle the boundary line between Massachusetts and Connecticut east of the Connecticut River, and in

1832 Gov. Lincoln appointed him attorney-general of Massachusetts, which office he held by successive appointments until 1843, when the office was abolished. The most striking incident of his career as attorney-general was the case of the Commonwealth *vs.* Abner Kneeland (20 *Pickering,* 206). Later Austin returned to private practise, in which he was recognized as being one of the leading lawyers of the day in Massachusetts. He was president of the Suffolk County Bar Association in 1835. In politics he was a stanch Republican, a decided opponent of the Federalists, and later a Whig. He was very much opposed to the anti-slavery agitation, as he considered slavery to be permanently established. In this connection his greatest effort was his speech at the memorial meeting for the Rev. Elijah Lovejoy, Dec. 8, 1837, in which he compared the Alton mob with the patriots of the Boston Tea Party and demanded to know what Lovejoy had done to merit the distinction of being commemorated by a meeting in historic Faneuil Hall (*Boston Daily Advocate,* Dec. 9, 1837). A rather fertile writer, he was editor of the Boston *Emerald,* an ephemeral magazine of light literature (1806–8); published, in 1811, a series of articles over the name "Leolin" in the *Boston Patriot* on the subject of resistance to the laws of the United States; wrote *The Life of Elbridge Gerry* (1828–29); furnished a life of his father to *The Hundred Boston Orators . . . 1770 to 1852* (1852); and in 1853 published his *Remarks on Dr. Channing's Slavery.* He also contributed numerous articles to the *Christian Examiner* and the *Law Reporter.* He is described as having a face well-molded, long, exceedingly expressive, with piercing eyes, and something of a sandy complexion. In his later years his mind was impaired. He died at his home in Tremont St. at the age of eighty-six.

[Jas. S. Loring, *The Hundred Boston Orators . . . 1770 to 1852* (1852), pp. 470–76; *Necrology of Harvard Coll., 1869–72* (1872), pp. 5–7; scattering references in the *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams . . . 1795 to 1848,* 12 vols. (1874–77); Wm. H. Channing, *The Life of Wm. Ellery Channing* (1880), pp. 503–7, 557–63; *Boston Daily Jour.* and *Boston Daily Evening Transcript,* May 9, 1870.]

F. E. R.

AUSTIN, JANE GOODWIN (Feb. 25, 1831–Mar. 30, 1894), author, was a writer of stories and novels, the best known of which are descriptive of early New England life. Her interest in this field sprang from the fact that she herself was a *Mayflower* descendant, and that all her immediate ancestors had been born and reared in Plymouth. Her father, Isaac Goodwin, was a lawyer, antiquarian, and authority on Pilgrim history; her mother, Elizabeth Hammatt, a writer of poems. At the birth of Jane (named by her parents Mary Jane), they were living in Worcester, Mass., to which place they had gone from Plymouth, carrying with them many old traditions and records. When Jane was very young her father died, and her mother went to live in Boston. Browsing about in the family records as she grew up she was inspired to write stories, at first for her own amusement, and later for publication. At the age of nineteen, however, she married Loring Henry Austin of Boston by whom she had three children, and there followed a period of some thirteen years when she did no writing. She then began to contribute stories to the *Atlantic Monthly, Harper's Magazine, Putnam's Magazine, Emerson's Magazine,* and the *Galaxy,* a collection from which is to be found in *David Alden's Daughter and Other Stories* (1892). Thereafter, she was constantly engaged in literary work.

The most of Mrs. Austin's life was spent in the vicinity of Boston. For a time she lived in Concord and was on friendly terms with Emerson, Louisa Alcott, and the Hawthornes. She was a woman of instinctive graciousness, and in her later years her rooms were the weekly resort of admirers, and especially of those who were of direct Pilgrim descent. Her summers were spent in Plymouth gathering material for her stories. The "Pilgrim Books" constitute a series, the proper sequence of which is *Standish of Standish* (1889), *Betty Alden* (1891), *A Nameless Nobleman* (1881), *Dr. Le Baron and His Daughters* (1890). They cover a period from the landing of the Pilgrims to 1775. She had planned a fifth and completing volume which she did not live to write. They afford an excellent idea of the atmosphere, customs, and characters of early New England days. It was her practise, Mrs. Austin states in her preface to *David Alden's Daughter,* to put nothing down as a fact which she had not carefully determined to be such.

Besides the books already mentioned, Mrs. Austin published: *Fairy Dreams* (1859); *Dora Darling, the Daughter of the Regiment* (1865); *The Novice* (1865); *The Tailor Boy* (1865); *Outpost* (1867); *Cipher, A Romance* (1869); *The Shadow of Moloch Mountain* (1870); *Moonfolk* (1874); *Mrs. Beauchamp Brown* (1880); *The Desmond Hundred* (1882); *Nantucket Scraps* (1883); "Safe in Purgatory" (in *Vignettes: Real and Ideal,* ed. by Frederic Edward McKay, 1890); *It Never Did Run Smooth* (1892); *Queen Tempest* (1892); *The Twelve Great Diamonds* (1892).

[*Boston Transcript,* Mar. 30, 1894; *Boston Herald, Boston Journal,* Mar. 31, 1894; *Lit. World,* XXV, 111;

Book Buyer, n. s. XI, 194. See also Mary LeBaron Stockwell, *Descendants of Francis LeBaron of Plymouth, Mass.* (1904).]

H. E. S.

AUSTIN, JONATHAN LORING (Jan. 2, 1748–May 10, 1826), was a younger brother of Benjamin Austin [*q.v.*]. Born in Boston, he graduated from the Latin School and Harvard College (1766) and became successively a merchant at Kittery, Me., major in a volunteer New Hampshire regiment (1775), secretary to the Massachusetts Board of War (Nov. 21, 1776) and official messenger to convey the news of Burgoyne's surrender to the American commissioners at Paris. He sailed on the snow *Penet* from Boston on Oct. 31, 1777, arrived at Nantes on Nov. 30, and delivered the dispatches to Franklin at Passy on Dec. 4. On Jan. 31, 1778, Franklin sent Austin on a secret mission to London, in order to supply the opposition leaders with information that would enable them to demonstrate the uselessness of continuing the war. Austin moved about London freely, dined with Lord Shelburne and Dr. Price, visited his Loyalist cousins near Bristol, and left for France on Mar. 23, 1778, when warned by the French ambassador that communications would soon be closed. The American commissioners to France employed him in secretarial work until September, when he left for home via Holland, where he engaged in some sort of speculation (Franklin MSS., XI, 152), sailing about Nov. 15, and finally arriving at Virginia, via St. Eustatius, in April. He was recommended by the commissioners to the generosity of Congress, which rewarded him by assuming a debt for 130 louis d'or that he had borrowed from Franklin (*Jours. of Congress*, June 26, 1779). The State of Massachusetts-Bay sent him abroad in January 1780 to raise a loan of £150,000. He was captured by a Jersey privateer, was released through the exertion of his English friends, and pursued his mission with no other success than the purchase on credit of £3,000 worth of military clothing in Holland (Massachusetts Archives, CCLXXXVIII, 126–55; CLXXXVII, 305–17). Returning to Boston in the summer of 1781, he married Hannah Ivers, a sister of his brother Benjamin's wife, became his brother's partner, and a merchant. Until the party division of 1793, when the "Honesti" were ostracized by Federalists and confined to the society of the few gentlefolk who became Republicans, Austin was a man of fashion. He was elected to the state Senate from Boston in 1801, to the House from Cambridge in 1803 and 1806; served as secretary of the commonwealth under Gov. Sullivan (1806–8) and as treasurer under Gov. Gerry (1811–12), whose daughter married his son, James T. Austin[*q.v.*]. He died in Boston, on May 10, 1826.

[Austin's MS. journal of his journey to Paris and London—extracts printed in E. E. Hale, *Franklin in France* (1887) and in Francis Wharton, *Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States* (1889); Benjamin Franklin Stevens, *Facsimiles of Manuscripts in European Archives Relating to America*, III (1890), XXI (1894), XXII (1894); *Acts & Resolves of Province of Mass. Bay*, XXI (1922). A highly imaginative memoir of J. L. Austin in the *Boston Mo. Mag.*, II, 57–66, probably by J. T. Austin, is the basis of several biog. notices.]

S. E. M.

AUSTIN, MOSES (Oct. 4, 1761–June 10, 1821), merchant and mine owner, son of Elias and Eunice Austin, was descended from Richard Austin, who landed at Boston from the south of England in 1638. In 1674 Anthony, a son of Richard, became the first town clerk of Suffield, Conn. About the middle of the eighteenth century, Elias, a grandson of this Anthony, crossed the state to Durham and became there the father of Moses. Part of Moses Austin's boyhood was passed at Middletown, Conn., where, during the American Revolution, important lead-mining and smelting operations were carried on. It is probable that his attention was attracted there to the industry that occupied much of his mature life. In 1783, with the return of peace, Austin became connected in some way with the firm of Manning, Merrill & Co. at Philadelphia, and, in his own words, "commenced the importation of dry goods from England." His older brother, Stephen, was also a member of the Philadelphia firm, and in 1784 the two brothers seem to have reorganized and expanded the business, the older brother remaining at Philadelphia, while the younger established a branch under the name of Moses Austin & Company at Richmond, Va. By 1789 the Richmond firm had acquired the Chiswell lead mines in southwestern Virginia, and shortly thereafter Moses Austin moved to the mines, though the business at Richmond was continued. There is no authentic history of these mines. They were an important asset to the patriot government during the Revolution, but there are no figures on their output either before or after the Austins got possession. That the output was large is indicated by a reference to the accumulation of slag, which they were resmelting in 1801. Stephen Austin wrote then, "there still remains sufficient for your children and grandchildren." The Austins worked the mines with slave labor and cultivated adjacent farms to provide food for the slaves and the animals. When not absorbed by his other enterprises Moses Austin turned an odd penny by acting as a land scout for dealers in Virginia bounty warrants.

During the winter of 1796–97 Austin made a

reconnaissance of the great lead fields in southeastern Missouri. He recorded in his diary that the mineral was encountered within three feet of the surface, "in great Plenty and better quality than I have ever seen either from the Mines of England or America." Forming a strategic partnership with two local officials, he applied for and received a grant to a league of land, including the old workings known as Mine à Burton. On or near this grant he established the town of Potosi, to which his own contribution was an improved furnace, a shot-tower and a plant for making sheet lead, a saw-mill and flour-mill, a store, and a house for his family. For the next twenty years he carried on the variegated, miscellaneous business that characterized the frontier, most of it conducted by barter and credit. In 1812 he estimated that his property was worth $160,000, the mines being valued at $150,000; but the turnover in his various ventures was very slow, collections were uncertain, and his debts were chronically pressing. In 1816 he joined with others in organizing the Bank of St. Louis, and its subsequent failure wiped out his whole estate. The depression in the West which preceded and followed the panic of 1819 left him no heart to struggle against adverse fortune in Missouri. He turned his eyes again toward the frontier.

In December 1820 he appeared at San Antonio, Tex., and applied to the Spanish governor for a permit to establish 300 familes in Texas. Though details of his plan are lacking, it was evidently his intention to charge colonists a small fee for the privilege of settling in his grant. The permit was given by the commandant-general of the Eastern Interior Provinces on Jan. 17, 1821; but Austin died before concluding his arrangements for moving to Texas.

Moses Austin embodied the characteristic qualities of the westward movement. He was intelligent, enterprising, energetic, sanguine, and persevering. He enjoyed the confidence and esteem of the government and of the citizens wherever he lived. He was captain of his militia district in Virginia, and was presiding judge of the first court organized in the St. Genevieve district after the purchase of Louisiana by the United States. In 1784 he married Maria Brown in Philadelphia—descended on the mother's side from two of the Quaker proprietors of New Jersey—and left at his death a daughter and two sons, one of whom, Stephen F. Austin [*q.v.*] was to carry out successfully the colonization of Texas.

[The chief sources of information about Moses Austin are *The Life of Stephen F. Austin* (1925) by Eugene C. Barker, and "The Austin Papers," in *Am. Hist. Ass. Report*, vol. I (1919), vol. II (1924). *The Bates Papers* (2 vols., 1926), ed. by Thomas Maitland Marshall, are a valuable source for frontier conditions in Missouri.]

E. C. B.

AUSTIN, SAMUEL (Oct. 7, 1760–Dec. 4, 1830), Congregational clergyman, prominent in the theological and political controversies of his day, was born in New Haven, Conn., the son of Samuel and Lydia (Wolcott) Austin. After the Revolutionary War, in which, although but sixteen years old, he served as a substitute for his father, he taught school and later studied law with Judge Charles Chauncey of New Haven. When twenty-one years old he entered the sophomore class at Yale, graduating in 1783. His interest having turned from law to religion, he studied theology under Jonathan Edwards, the younger, then a pastor in New Haven. For a time he was principal of a newly formed academy in Norwich, Conn. Called to the Fair Haven Church, New Haven, in 1786, he was ordained its pastor Nov. 9. On Sept. 14, 1788, he married Jerusha, daughter of Rev. Samuel Hopkins of Hadley, Mass. His stay in New Haven was short. Dissatisfied with conditions in his church and especially with its adherence to the half-way covenant to which he was vigorously opposed, he asked for dismissal, which was granted by ecclesiastical council, Jan. 19, 1790. Immediately he was called to Worcester, Mass., where he was pastor of the First Congregational Church for twenty-five years. In 1815 he was persuaded to accept the presidency of the University of Vermont, which had been closed during the war with Great Britain. His church first granted him leave of absence, but on Dec. 23, 1818, the pastoral relation was dissolved. For six years he worked with reasonable success to rehabilitate the University, but he was not happy out of the ministry, and, resigning in March 1821, he took charge of the Congregational church in Newport, R. I. In 1825, his health failing, he resigned, and later sank into a condition of religious melancholy which resulted in his death.

His most important work was done in Worcester, but his influence extended beyond the city. He was instrumental in organizing the General Association of Massachusetts Ministers and the Massachusetts Missionary Society. Tall, erect, well-proportioned and courtly in appearance, with a face quickly expressive of his emotions, widely informed and with unusual command of language, animated and often vehement in delivery, he became known as one of the ablest preachers of his day. Theologically he was of the school of Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*] and Samuel Hopkins [*q.v.*], and none was a more effective

champion of orthodoxy against the Unitarian heresy which threatened to spread over the commonwealth (Samuel W. S. Dutton, *History of the North Church in New Haven,* 1842, pp. 77–83). The views of the Baptists he combated in *An Examination of the Representations and Reasonings Contained in Seven Sermons Lately Published by the Rev. Daniel Merrill, on the Mode and Subjects of Baptism* (1805); in *Mr. Merrill's Defensive Armor Taken from Him* (1806); and in *A View of the Economy of the Church of God . . . Particularly in Regard to the Covenants* (1807). In sermons delivered on special occasions, he took a decided political stand. *A Sermon Preached at Worcester on the Annual Fast, April 11, 1811* (1811), severely arraigns Thomas Jefferson, and *The Apology of Patriots, or the Heresy of the Friends of the Washington and Peace Policy Defended* (1812), is a defense of those who disagreed with the policies of the party then in power, especially respecting war with Great Britain. Numerous other sermons and addresses of his were published. (For a full list see F. B. Dexter, *Biographical Sketches of the Graduates of Yale College,* 1907, vol. IV, pp. 248–57.) He was the author of *Dissertations upon Several Fundamental Articles of Christian Theology* (1826), and editor of *The Works of President Edwards,* eight volumes (1808–9), to which is prefixed a memoir of Edwards's life, and annotations. He also published an American edition of Rev. Thomas Haweis's *Impartial and Succinct History of the Revival and Progress of the Church of Christ.*

[Besides references above, see Sam. S. Riddel, "Memoir of Rev. Samuel Austin, D.D.," *Amer. Quart. Reg.,* Feb. 1837; Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit,* II (1857); Wm. Lincoln, *Hist. of Worcester, Mass.* (1837), 174–374, *passim.*] H. E. S.

AUSTIN, STEPHEN FULLER (Nov. 3, 1793–Dec. 27, 1836), founder of Texas, was born at the lead mines (now in Wythe County) on the southwestern frontier of Virginia. His father was Moses Austin [*q.v.*], and his mother was Maria (Brown) Austin, descended on the maternal side from two of the Quaker proprietors of New Jersey. When the Austins moved to Missouri in 1798 the total population of that territory did not exceed 4,000—mostly French and Spanish, but with a sprinkling of adventurous Anglo-Americans who had responded during the past four years to Carondelet's liberal bid for immigrants. Austin was familiar from childhood, therefore, with the mingled social types that must be harmoniously combined later in the successful colonization of Texas. His incidental training for his life-work was nearly perfect. During the impressionable years from eleven to fourteen he was a student at Colchester, Conn., in the severe atmosphere of Yale College. The next two years until April 1810, he was at Transylvania University, Lexington, Ky., in the genial atmosphere of Henry Clay at his prime. Then back to a varied experience in Missouri—storekeeper, manager of the lead mines, director of the ill-fated Bank of St. Louis, adjutant of militia, member of the territorial legislature (1814–20). When the family fortunes collapsed in Missouri, Austin followed the frontier into Arkansas, where, in June 1820, the governor appointed him judge of the first judicial circuit. He qualified, but probably never held court, for he proceeded immediately to New Orleans and began the study of law, while assisting in the editorial department of the *Louisiana Advertiser.* With training and experience of such breadth and versatility, and with intimate knowledge of frontier life, Austin at twenty-seven was well prepared to be the founder and patriarchal ruler of a wilderness commonwealth.

Austin yielded with some reluctance to his father's sanguine enthusiasm for the Texas venture, but, having yielded, he spent himself in singular devotion to the task. He visited Texas in 1821; obtained the governor's consent to settle the 300 families stipulated in the grant to Moses Austin; selected for the colony a fertile and well-watered site, bordering on the Gulf; and in January 1822 planted the first legal settlement of Anglo-Americans in Texas. In the meantime, Mexico had established its independence, and belated doubts occurred to the governor concerning his authority to sanction Austin's enterprise, which had been authorized by the Spanish régime. The governor's doubts sent Austin to Mexico City, and the turbulent confusion which accompanied the birth-pangs of the new republic kept him there a year, but he returned to Texas with his grant fully confirmed. His sojourn in the capital had been trying but valuable, having given him a practical knowledge of the language, a profound insight into the national psychology, and powerful friends.

Austin returned to Texas with extraordinary powers. Until 1828, speaking broadly, he was executive, law-maker, supreme judge and military commandant. He had, in addition, absolute authority to admit immigrants to his grant or to exclude them from it; and, acting with a representative of the government, he could invest settlers with land titles. His political functions passed after the organization of constitutional government in Texas, but his influence remained great both with the settlers and with the superior authorities, and in effect he continued to direct the local government until 1832.

By 1825 Austin had settled the 300 families permitted by his original grant, when the legislature of Coahuila and Texas, acting under a federal statute, opportunely passed a general colonization law. The system established by this law was the same as that under which Austin had settled his first colony, and was substantially that which Spain had employed in Louisiana. It permitted immigration agents, known as *empresarios,* to contract for the introduction of multiples of a hundred families, and provided that for this service they should receive generous land bounties from the government and fees from the immigrants. Each married settler was entitled to a league of land (4,428 acres) at a total cost of less than $200 on easy terms. Under the state law Austin made contracts in 1825, 1827, and 1828 for 900 families, and settled some 750 of these before the last contract expired in 1834. Other *empresarios* obtained contracts aggregating many thousands of families, and several of them partially fulfilled their contracts. Austin alone, however, was conspicuously successful; and it seems obvious that, without his wise management and the results of his success to lean upon, the others would have accomplished little or nothing.

Austin's conception of his task was expressed in a striking comparison which he made in 1832: "Such an enterprise as the one I undertook in settling an uninhabited country must necessarily pass through three regular gradations. The first step was to overcome the roughness of the wilderness, and may be compared to the labor of the farmer on a piece of ground covered with woods, bushes, and brambles, which must be cut down and cleared away, and the roots grubbed out, before it can be cultivated. The second step was to pave the way for civilization and lay the foundation for lasting productive advancement in wealth, morality, and happiness. This step might be compared to the ploughing, harrowing, and sowing the ground after it is cleared. The third and last and most important step is to give proper and healthy direction to public opinion, morality, and education . . . to give tone, character, and consistency to society, which, to continue the simile, is gathering in the harvest and applying it to the promotion of human happiness." To another correspondent he wrote: "My ambition has been to succeed in redeeming Texas from its wilderness state by means of the plough alone, in spreading over it North American population, enterprise, and intelligence; in doing this I hoped to make the fortunes of thousands and my own amongst the rest. . . . My object is to build up, for the present as well as for future generations."

It would be impossible to exaggerate the importance of Austin's labors during the early years of the colonization of Texas. He once complained that too much of his time was consumed in settling "neighborhood disputes about cows and calves," but it was the patience with which he devoted himself to minutiæ as well as his intelligence and ability in larger things that accounts for his success. He fixed the land system; pushed back the Indians; mapped the province and charted its bays and rivers; promoted commerce with the United States, and kept a steady stream of immigrants flowing in; encouraged the erection of gins and sawmills and the establishment of schools; and exercised a most remarkable influence at the state and federal capitals in matters affecting Texas. To mention only the more important instances of his influence with the government: he was responsible in large measure for the liberal terms of the colonization law; his arguments prevented the constitutional abolition of slavery in 1827 and obtained the contract labor law of the next year permitting the continued introduction of slaves in the form of indented servants; in 1829 he induced the legislature to pass a sweeping homestead law to protect colonists from suits to collect debts contracted before immigration; and in 1830 he induced the federal authorities to sanction the continued settlement of colonists from the United States in his own and DeWitt's grants, though an act passed by Congress on April 6 of that year plainly meant to stop such settlement. A judiciary law which he outlined in 1824, providing appellate courts and trial by jury in Texas, was passed by the legislature in 1834. He was a member of the legislature of Coahuila and Texas, 1831–32, and was elected for the term beginning in 1835, but as appears below, was unavoidably prevented from serving.

The attraction of immigrants to Texas was a matter that caused Austin little concern. The restless surge of the Westward Movement had carried the American frontier to the borders of Texas before his first colony was established. Economic conditions in the Mississippi Valley, produced by the establishment of the Second United States Bank, the panic of 1819, and the abolition of credit in the public land system, were sufficient to push an increasing stream of settlers into Texas as the news spread that Austin could give them valid land titles at relatively low cost. The problem, rather, that taxed all Austin's skill was that of maintaining, on the one hand, among the swelling tide of settlers, an attitude of tolerant patience toward the habitual political bungling of the Mexicans, and that, on the other hand, of holding the confidence of Mexican

statesmen and soothing their growing fear of the ultimate absorption of Texas by the United States. His success with both colonists and Mexicans proves him a great leader and a great diplomat. Much of his influence with Mexican officials is attributable to his loyalty. When he moved to Texas he transferred his whole-hearted allegiance to Mexico. Writing to his confidential friend and secretary in 1831, Austin said: "You are well aware that in my intercourse with this govt. I have followed a few fixed rules. . . . In the first place, I came with pure intentions. I bid an everlasting farewell to my native country, and adopted this, and in so doing I determined to fulfill rigidly all the duties and obligations of a Mexican citizen." This declaration is abundantly supported by facts. Until 1830, at least, Austin believed without reservation that the surest road to happiness and prosperity for Texas lay through its development as a Mexican state. The liberal land system and the hope of free trade with England, in contrast with the land policy and protective tariff of the United States, were the chief reasons for this belief. During the next few years his faith in the ultimate stability of Mexico wavered; but when he thought—as he sometimes did—of the possible necessity of secession, he favored independence rather than annexation to the United States.

Aloofness from party contests was the very keystone of Austin's political policy. In discussing the reason for this in 1831, when Guerrero and Pedraza were fighting for the presidency, he explained that Mexican parties were not clearly defined, had no fixed character, nor permanency of purpose; if the colonists took part in the scramble, they would be "like children in a mob, and as likely to be trodden upon by friends as by foes." "Play the turtle," he more than once enjoined, "head and feet within your own shell." If they were ever compelled to make a declaration, they must say, "that they will do their duty strictly as Mexican citizens—that they will adhere to Mexico and to the federal and state constitution, and resist any unjust attacks upon either, by any or by all parties."

Despite the well-tried wisdom of this policy, attested by its happy results, grinding, inescapable necessity compelled a declaration for Santa Anna in July 1832. Thereafter catastrophe was not to be long held back. In April 1833 a convention, assembled against Austin's better judgment, petitioned for separation of Texas from Coahuila and the erection of state government in Texas. Austin was in full accord with the object but doubted the expediency of the method. Despite his hesitation, he was sent to Mexico as the man best qualified to obtain the government's approval of the petition. He took the position with Congress and the vice-president, Gomez Farias, that elevation of Texas to statehood was the only way to save it to Mexico; that the people did not want to secede, but that they were determined to separate from Coahuila and assume control of their own local government. By pressing his arguments too impetuously he offended Gomez Farias, and was imprisoned on the vague and wholly baseless charge of attempting to revolutionize Texas and annex it to the United States. After a year in prison, followed by six months' detention under bond, he was released by a general amnesty law in July 1835, without having been brought to trial. On his arrival in Texas Austin found the people at the verge of revolt; a convention had been called to adopt a policy toward Santa Anna's evident design to centralize the republic. Austin was still opposed to a declaration of independence, because he did not believe that Texas yet had the resources either to win or maintain independence. Expediency, he thought, pointed rather to alliance with the Liberal party which was opposing Santa Anna in Mexico. To effect this end he exerted himself, as chairman of a central committee of safety and correspondence, to make the coming convention a truly representative body, able to speak for all the people. Before the date set for the meeting, however, the war of the Texas revolution was precipitated. Austin was first called to the command of the volunteer army; then, in December 1835, was sent by the provisional government—with William H. Wharton and Branch T. Archer—to the United States to negotiate loans and credit, enlist sympathy, and test the sentiment of the Jackson Government toward recognition and eventual annexation. This mission—through no fault of Austin and his colleagues—was only partially successful. Austin returned from the United States in June 1836; was defeated for the presidency of the Republic of Texas by Sam Houston in September; accepted office with Houston as secretary of state in October; and died in December at the age of forty-three.

But for the extraordinarily tactful work done by Austin prior to 1825 the settlement of Texas from the United States would have been impossible, or at the least greatly delayed. It was he, and no other, who opened the door and by leadership of high order held it open. The colonists were sometimes impatient at his cautious, temporizing policy with Mexican officials; but to himself, at least, the answer was sufficient: "It was my duty to steer my precious bark [the colony] through all the shoals and quicksands re-

gardless of the curses and ridicule of the passengers. I knew what I was about—they did not." For seven years the government of the American settlements was absolutely in his hands; for the remaining eight years of his life no important step was ever taken by the colonists without his counsel and concurrence.

There is no definite contemporary description of Austin. He was evidently a small, slight man. One gathers the impression that he was about five feet five or six and weighed around 135 pounds. His portraits, of which there are several, show a fine, strong face, with firm chin, thin lips, prominent nose, good eyes, and a high, intellectual forehead. His hair, of which a lock exists, was dark brown, with a tinge of bronze, worn long, and inclined to wave. In spite of slight stature and severe illnesses, his constitution was naturally wiry and resilient. He was a grave, gentle, kindly man, charitable, tolerant, affectionate and loyal, naturally impetuous but restrained by habit, sensitive, and lonely. Though he enjoyed social companionship, his position set him apart from the colonists and made close friendships with them difficult and rare. He smoked, danced, loved music, and drank moderately. He was well educated, widely read for his opportunities, and a clear thinker and writer. His letters in their straightforward precision and naturalness remind one of Franklin. He worked incessantly, unselfishly, and generally most patiently. He never married, and the only representatives of his branch of the family now living are the descendants of his sister.

[Besides numerous editorials and articles contributed to the *Texas Gazette*, Austin published in 1829, *Translation of the Laws, Orders and Contracts on Colonization . . . with an Explanatory Introduction to the Settlers of What Is Called Austin's Colony in Texas*—seventy pages. This was the first bk. published in Texas. In January 1835 he published in Mexico City, *Esposición al Público sobre los Asuntos de Tejas*, a pamphlet of thirty-two pages—translated by Ethel Zively Rather in *Texas State Hist. Ass. Quart.*, VIII, 232 ff. "The Austin Papers," comprising Austin's collected writings as well as correspondence and documents received by him, edited by Eugene C. Barker, is published in the *Am. Hist. Ass. Reports* for 1919, 1922 (issued 1924, 1928), with a concluding volume by the Univ. of Texas Press (1927). The only biog. of Austin is that by Eugene C. Barker (1925).] E. C. B.

AUSTIN, WILLIAM (Mar. 2, 1778–June 27, 1841), author, came of ancestors who had been prominent in the affairs of Charlestown, Mass., since 1651. The burning of the town during the battle of Bunker Hill drove his father, Nathaniel, to Lunenburg, Worcester County, Mass., where William was born. Soon after his birth the family returned to Charlestown, and there he spent the most of his life. Nathaniel was a pewterer by trade, but through speculation in real estate acquired some wealth. On Nov. 19, 1766, he had married Margaret Rand, daughter of Deacon Isaac Rand of Charlestown. They had six children of whom William was the third. Though her husband was a staunch patriot, Margaret was a spirited Tory, and never failed to characterize each observance of Bunker Hill Day as "the celebration of a defeat." Political differences, however, seem never seriously to have disturbed the peace of the Austin family, for in later years William, an ardent Jeffersonian Republican, and his brother, Nathaniel, a strong Federalist, ran against each other for a seat in the General Court of Massachusetts with no lessening of their regard for each other.

William prepared for college at Rev. John Shaw's school, Haverhill, and graduated from Harvard in the class of 1798. He early became imbued with the philosophy of Rousseau, and in his senior year wrote *Strictures on Harvard University*, criticizing the official restraints on college life. When older, however, he acknowledged that his prejudices had been unfounded. He declined an election to Phi Beta Kappa, because he was opposed to secret societies, and also because he thought an injustice had been done one of his classmates. In 1802–03 he studied law at Lincoln's Inn, London, having secured the necessary means by serving as schoolmaster and chaplain on the United States frigate *Constitution*. Austin is said to have been the first chaplain appointed in the navy by government commission. While in England he wrote *Letters from London*, which were published by William Pelham, a Boston bookseller. They attracted a good deal of notice in their day and are still of interest as illustrating the attitude of a New England Republican toward English institutions and manners.

Returning to Charlestown in 1803, Austin soon built up a large law practise, took an active part in civic and political affairs, and represented the town in the General Court in 1811, 1812, 1816, 1827, and 1834, and the County of Middlesex in the Senate in 1821, 1822, and 1823. He was also a delegate in the convention of 1820 for revising the constitution of Massachusetts. He was twice married and had fourteen children. His first wife was Charlotte Williams, daughter of Deacon Isaac Williams, whom he married June 17, 1806. Charlotte died, Dec. 10, 1820, and on Oct. 3, 1822, he married Lucy Jones, daughter of Peter Jones of Charlestown.

Austin was fervent in his convictions, independent, impulsive, quickly stirred to indignation by any apparent injustice, and blunt and forceful in the expression of his feelings. These characteristics, involved him in a duel, March 31, 1806,

with James Henderson Elliot. Capt. Joseph Loring, Jr., an officer in the militia, and a Democrat, was tried for alleged disobedience of orders. He was acquitted, but the court was sworn not to divulge its findings until they were approved or disapproved by Gen. Simon Elliot. The latter did nothing for several months. Political feeling was running high at the time, and all appeals to Gen. Elliot and the Governor, who were Federalists, failed to get Loring out of prison. Austin wrote a letter, signed "Decius," which was published in the *Independent Chronicle* of March 17, 1806, violently attacking the general for his part in the affair, and the latter's son, James, sent a challenge to the writer. Since duelling was forbidden in Massachusetts, the event took place near Providence, R. I. So bitter was the feeling that the parties fired three shots although the articles of agreement called for but two. Austin was wounded in the neck and thigh, but Elliot was uninjured.

Austin's varied activities left him little freedom for literature, and writing was more or less a pastime with him. Of the five stories which he wrote, one, however, not only had great popularity in its day, but has lived, and is of significance in the history of American fiction, "Peter Rugg, the Missing Man," published in the *New England Galaxy* for Sept. 10, 1824. The scene is laid in 1820, and the story is that of a man who, driving toward Boston with his little daughter, fifty years before, with a storm threatening, had sworn he would reach home that night or never see home again. All the intervening years he had been seeking it in vain, and his old-fashioned chaise drawn by a galloping white-footed black horse, always heralding a storm, had become a frequent sight on the roads. With the exception of "Rip Van Winkle," it is perhaps the most original and imaginative American tale before the days of Poe and Hawthorne. The latter confessed that it made a deep impression upon him, and to the method of its art some critics have thought him indebted (see Thomas W. Higginson in the *Independent,* Mar. 29, 1888). The other stories are of less interest, but show imaginative ability, sense of humor, and the morality and mysticism of New England Puritanism.

The following is a list of Austin's publications: *Strictures on Harvard University* (1798); *Oration before the Artillery Company, Charlestown, June 17, 1801* (1801); *Letters from London* (1804); *Essay on the Human Character of Jesus Christ* (1807); "Peter Rugg, the Missing Man," *New England Galaxy,* Sept. 10, 1824; continuation, *Ibid.,* Sept. 1, 1826; Jan. 19, 1827; "The Sufferings of a Country Schoolmaster," *Ibid.,* July 8, 1825; "The Late Joseph Natterstrom," *New England Magazine,* July 1831; "The Origin of Chemistry, a Manuscript Recently Found in an Old Trunk," *Ibid.,* Jan. 1834; "The Man with the Cloaks: a Vermont Legend," place and date of publication uncertain; "Martha Gardner; or Moral Reaction," *American Monthly Magazine,* Dec. 1837.

[The principal sources of information are *Literary Papers of William Austin, with a Biog. Sketch,* by his son, James Walker Austin (1890); and *William Austin,* by Walter Austin (1925). The latter contains a copious bibliography of references to Austin and his writings, and all the stories except "The Sufferings of a Country Schoolmaster."]

H. E. S.

AVERELL, WILLIAM WOODS (Nov. 5, 1832–Feb. 3, 1900), Union soldier, was born in Cameron, Steuben County, N. Y. The family's first American ancestor appears to have been William Avery or Averell, who, marrying Abigail Hinton of Oxford, England, emigrated to Ipswich, Mass., about the year 1637. William Woods Averell's great-grandfather, Solomon Averell, was born in Preston, Conn., in 1719, and had four sons who took part in the American Revolution (*Landmarks of Steuben County, N. Y.,* ed. by Harlo Hakes, 1896, II, 331); his grandfather was Ebenezer Averell, born in Preston, Conn., in 1762, who moved to New York in 1791; while his father was Hiram Averell (born in Harpersfield, N. Y., in 1795) and his mother, Huldah Hemenway of Greenwood, N. Y. Hiram Averell was for some time constable and collector of the town of Addison, N. Y., and in his later years was postmaster and justice of the peace in Cameron (Clara A. Avery, *The Averell-Averill-Avery Family,* 1914, p. 347). After a common school education, young Averell became a drug-clerk in the village of Bath, N. Y., until opportunity came to receive an appointment to the United States Military Academy at West Point, July 1, 1851. After four years of thorough training as a soldier, he was graduated number twenty-six in a class of thirty-four. He was immediately commissioned brevet second-lieutenant of mounted rifles, and during the next few years underwent experiences in the West which were to prepare him in many ways for the nation's great struggle which followed. His first army station was at Jefferson Barracks, Mo.—then regarded as the frontier, and there he remained with his regiment during the years 1855 and 1856, when he received his full commission as second-lieutenant of mounted rifles. The young officer, energetic and ambitious, felt the need of advanced instruction in duties not covered by the curriculum at the Military Academy, for we find him next as a student-officer at the Cavalry School for Practice, Carlisle, Pa. This training completed in the year 1857, he was ordered to

New Mexico, where he received full measure of arduous field service; escort duty for the commanding general, Department of New Mexico; participant in the Navajo Expedition of 1858; in a skirmish with Kiowa Indians; and in additional skirmishes during 1858 with hostile Kyatanos and at the so-called "Puerco of the West," where he was severely wounded in an Indian night attack. Reluctant to give up his field duties, it was only after an additional Indian engagement in the year 1859 that he was persuaded to take an extended leave of absence on account of wounds, —an absence which was prolonged until the beginning of the Civil War. During this formative period in Averell's military career, he gained a deserved reputation for bravery, energy, and good judgment as an Indian fighter. Then came the great war between the states, with all its sudden opportunities and responsibilities.

With the initial organization of what later became the Army of the Potomac, there was a crying need for experienced officers. Early in the summer of 1861, Averell became an assistant adjutant-general on the staff of Gen. Andrew Porter, and as such the young officer participated in the hastily planned first battle of Bull Run. After that discreditable experience for the poorly trained Union army, Averell was placed on provost duty in the city of Washington. On Aug. 23, 1861, his abilities were recognized by his appointment as colonel of the 3rd Pennsylvania Cavalry, United States Volunteers, and he was placed in command of a cavalry brigade in front of the defenses of Washington. Here he remained until the following spring, when, on Mar. 9–10, he and his cavalry were honored with leading the advance on Manassas of Gen. McClellan's newly organized army. Thereafter, he followed the army's fortunes in the severe Peninsular Campaign, and participated actively in the siege of Yorktown (Apr. 5–May 4); the battles of Williamsburg (May 4–5), Fair Oaks (June 1), and Malvern Hill (July 1); and in skirmishes at Sycamore Church (Aug. 2) and at White Oak Swamp (Aug. 5, 1862). These arduous battle experiences were followed by a short illness (Sept. 5–24), but Averell's ability as a cavalry commander was rewarded, Sept. 26, 1862, by his appointment as brigadier-general, United States Volunteers, at less than thirty years of age. Meanwhile (July 17, 1862), he was commissioned to a captaincy in the regular army. Events moved rapidly, and in the month of November, we find Averell and his cavalry scouting and skirmishing along the upper Potomac, and in small engagements with the Confederate forces at Upperville, Markham, Corbin's and Gaines's Cross Roads, and at Amissville (Nov. 2–10, 1862). The Army of the Potomac then embarked on the sanguinary Rappahannock campaign, and Averell's command took part in the battle of Fredericksburg (Dec. 13, 1862). Following this disaster for the Union army, Averell and his cavalry initiated a series of small raids into Virginia, the nature of which is shown in part by a short extract from one of the cavalry commander's despatches: "Dec. 21, 1862.—My column has marched, climbed, slid, and swum, 340 miles since Dec. 8!"

From Feb. 22 to May 4, 1863, Averell took over command of the important 2nd cavalry division. Beginning with a small skirmish at Hartwood, Feb. 25, the division's operations reached a climax in the great cavalry combat at Kelly's Ford, Mar. 17, 1863—an engagement which military experts agree to have been brilliant in conception and in execution. The battle really *made* the Union cavalry, and changed the hitherto contemptuous assertion of "Who ever saw a dead cavalryman!" into a spirit of confidence and faith in the mounted arm, which formed the basis, later, of Gen. Sheridan's great cavalry achievements. At the time, Gen. Butterfield characterized the battle at Kelly's Ford as "the best cavalry fight of the war." And although Gen. Hooker thought Averell overcautious in alleged inaction after the engagement, Secretary of War Stanton sent Hooker the following characteristic dispatch: "I congratulate you upon the success of Averell's expedition. It is good for the first lick. You have drawn first blood. . . . Give my compliments and thanks to Averell and his command." For "gallant and meritorious services" in the battle of Kelly's Ford, Averell was awarded the brevet of major in the regular army. The cavalry division was not long idle, and soon after Kelly's Ford, Averell and his command took part in the famous "Stoneman's Raid" toward Richmond (Apr. 29–May 8, 1863). On the latter date, however, Averell was transferred to West Virginia for operations of the 4th separate brigade, and with characteristic energy, engaged hostile forces at Beverly (July 1), Hedgeville (July 19), Moorfield (Aug. 7), Rocky Gap (Aug. 26), and at Droop Mountain (Nov. 6, 1863). For the last named action, he received the brevet of lieutenant-colonel. After a short rest, his cavalry took part in the important "Salem Raid," which cut the Tennessee railroad, and destroyed large quantities of Longstreet's clothing, rations, and equipment. Every effort was made by the enemy to capture or destroy this bold raiding party, but, eluding every Confederate column, Averell

rejoined the Union lines with 200 prisoners and 150 horses. For this brilliant achievement, he was brevetted a colonel in the regular army. After a short sick-leave in the early part of the important year 1864, he assumed command of the 2nd cavalry division, and engaged in a series of cavalry actions under Sheridan, which materially affected the collapse of the Confederacy. The most important of these were Winchester (July 24), Opequan (Sept. 19), Fisher's Hill (Sept. 22), and Mount Jackson (Sept. 23). These engagements rounded out, in large part, Averell's fine military career. On Mar. 13, 1865, he was made brevet brigadier-general, United States Army, for his services during the entire war; and on the same date, was honored with brevet major-general, United States Army, for gallant services at the battle of Moorfield, Va.

He resigned on May 18, 1865, and was appointed by the President consul-general for British North America at Montreal, which office he held for three years. He then returned to private life. On Sept. 24, 1885, he was married to Kezia Hayward. Until 1888, he was interested in engineering and in manufacturing. Among other things, he invented a system of conduits for electric wiring, and also secured valuable patents for asphalt paving. In the year 1898, after twenty years of litigation, the Supreme Court awarded him infringement damages of $700,000 in his suit against the Barbour Asphalt Paving Company. Meanwhile, after having been reappointed by Congress a captain on the army retired list, Averell had been made assistant inspector-general of the Soldiers' Home at Bath, N. Y., holding this office for ten years. In 1898, his patents having made him financially independent, he resigned his inspectorship and prepared to enjoy a well-earned rest. But after a lingering illness, he died at Bath, Feb. 3, 1900, leaving uncompleted the manuscript of reminiscences of an eventful life.

[*Rep. Ass. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.*, 1900; Cullum's *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed. 1891), II; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887–88); C. D. Rhodes, *Hist. of the Cavalry of the Army of the Potomac* (1900); Jacob B. Cooke, *Battle of Kelly's Ford* (1887); John Bigelow, *Campaign of Chancellorsville* (1910); *Officers of the Army and Navy in the Civil War* (1894).]

C. D. R.

AVERY, BENJAMIN PARKE (Nov. 11, 1828–Nov. 8, 1875), journalist, diplomat, was born in New York City, the son of Samuel Putnam and Hannah (Parke) Avery, and brother of Samuel Putnam Avery [*q.v.*]. His father, a hotel keeper, died during the cholera epidemic of 1832, leaving a widow and six children in poverty. Mrs. Avery is credited with unusual capabilities of mind and character. Benjamin often spoke of her in after years as his "polar star" and as a mother who taught her family the highest principles of honor. Though the boy early developed a taste for literature and the plastic arts, he had no opportunities for formal education. He learned the trade of bank-note engraving, and was so employed when news of the gold discovery at Sutter's Mill fired him with a determination to go to California. On the sailing ship *Orpheus,* which rounded the Horn, he arrived at San Francisco July 8, 1849. For several years he vainly followed prospecting, and was often destitute and ill. In 1856, with savings earned as a druggist and general storekeeper, he started a weekly newspaper, the *Hydraulic Press,* at North San Juan, Nevada County. It was a Republican and anti-slavery organ, and the community was hostile. In 1860 he moved to Marysville and with Noah Brooks established the *Appeal,* the first daily newspaper in the state outside of San Francisco. In 1861 he married Mary A. Fuller, of Michigan. In September of the same year he was elected state printer, and at the end of his two-years term moved to San Francisco. He now became editor of the *Bulletin,* a post which he retained for ten years. During this period he organized the San Francisco Art Association and spent much time in writing and speaking in its behalf. Failing health caused him to retire from daily journalism, and in January 1874 he accepted the editorship of the *Overland Monthly.* A few months later he was appointed by President Grant minister to China, and in August sailed for Peking. Among several diplomatic achievements he is credited with an important share in composing the differences between China and Japan, then at the verge of war. He died at Peking. The body was embalmed by the surgeon of the Russian embassy and after impressive ceremonies was carried by the U.S.S. *Monocacy* from Tientsin to Yokohama. It was there transferred to the *City of Tokio* and was then brought to San Francisco, where on Jan. 26, 1876, after a largely attended memorial meeting, it was interred.

The portrait of Avery shows a refined and sensitive face. He had the quality of inspiring the warm regard and admiration of those with whom he was most closely associated. "He appears to me," said the historian John S. Hittell, at his funeral, "the best man I ever knew, without exception." Of his influence in his own community the tribute of Samuel Williams, who succeeded him as editor of the *Overland Monthly,* bears striking witness: "Perhaps no one person did so much to educate the people of the state

in the right direction—to lift the thoughts of men above the sordid interests of the hour and the mean ambition of personal gain." His one separately published work, *Californian Pictures in Prose and Verse,* which appeared posthumously in 1878, hardly justifies the praise that has been given to him as a writer. The verse is mediocre, and the prose, though indicative of a feeling for the beauty and grandeur of the physical world, has few qualities of distinction. Among his literary remains was an unfinished work on "Art and Its Uses."

[The chief sources of information are the *Geneal. Rec. of the Dedham Branch of the Avery Family in America* (1893) and the pamphlet, *In Memoriam, Benjamin Parke Avery, 1875.* The latter, which carries no publication place or date but was evidently printed in San Francisco in 1876, is a collection of tributes from intimate friends. The biog. matter included reveals many discrepancies as to dates and events. A brief biog. sketch, with a woodcut portrait, appeared in *Harper's Weekly,* May 2, 1874, and other sketches are given in various reference books.]

W. J. G.

AVERY, ISAAC WHEELER (May 2, 1837–Sept. 8, 1897), Confederate soldier, journalist, politician, was born in St. Augustine, Fla., the son of Isaac Wheeler and Mary Moore (King) Avery. On his father's side he was descended from Gov. Winthrop of Massachusetts. He was educated at Oglethorpe University, and studied for the bar. Enlisting in the 8th Georgia, he fought from the first battle of Bull Run nearly to the close of the war, and reached the rank of colonel and the command of a brigade. For a short time he was a prisoner, having been captured by Gen. Sheridan, and in 1864 while serving under Gen. Johnston he was severely wounded at the battle of New Hope Church. Of his conduct in this engagement the commander-in-chief wrote: "Although desperately wounded in the onset Col. Avery, supported in his saddle by a soldier, continued to command, and maintained the contest until the arrival of forces capable of holding the ground" (J. E. Johnston, *Narrative of Military Operations,* 1874, p. 328). The wound injured his spine so that for years afterward he used crutches. After the war he practised law, and was active in the politics and journalism of the Reconstruction era in Georgia. He married Emma Bivings, Jan. 1, 1868. For a number of years he was editor-in-chief of the *Atlanta Constitution* and for a short time owned the *Atlanta Herald.* He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention of 1872 and held at one time a position in the United States Treasury Department. He was one of the leaders in the South in promoting direct trade between the United States and other countries, particularly with the lands to the south. His *History of the State of Georgia from 1850 to 1881* (1881) is mainly political. As a writer he was associated with the *National Cyclopædia of American Biography.* His death removed "one of the old cavaliers of the old south. He was a type that is now growing so rare" (*Atlanta Constitution,* Sept. 10, 1897). His resemblance to this "type" is emphasized in his own dictated statement, that he had taken part in four "affairs of honor."

[Maj. Chas. Hubner, in *Nat. Cyc. of Am. Biog.* (1891), III, 238, from data furnished by Avery; E. M. and C. H. T. Avery, *The Groton Avery Clan* (1912).]

E. K. A.

AVERY, JOHN (Sept. 18, 1837–Sept. 1, 1887), linguist, was born at Conway, Mass., the son of Joseph and Sylvia (Clary) Avery, but was left at an early age dependent on his own resources. He was fitted for college at Williston Seminary and graduated from Amherst in the class of 1861. He then taught at Leicester Academy for a year and in 1862 was a tutor at Amherst. In 1863 he entered upon a four years' course of study in philology at Yale College under Prof. Whitney and for the last two years of that time was also tutor in physics in the Sheffield Scientific School, teaching what was to him a distasteful subject in order to be able to pursue the study of his favorite languages. On Aug. 21, 1866 he was married to Cornelia M. Curtiss of New Haven, Conn., by whom he had one child. From 1867 to 1868 he studied Sanskrit and Zend at Berlin and Tübingen, in Germany. For the remainder of his life his scholarly interests were chiefly concerned with the languages and literature of India. He was elected a member of the American Oriental Society in 1870, and furnished papers at each of its meetings. From the year 1875 until his death he was assistant editor of the *American Antiquarian and Oriental Journal.* He was the first American to be admitted to the Royal Asiatic Society of London. It is said that he was master of fifteen languages. For over twenty years he devoted himself to the antiquities, ethnology, and philology of the ancient tribes of northern India and at the time of his death he was engaged upon a book on the aboriginal tribes of India (never published). From 1870 to 1871 he was professor of Latin and from 1871 to 1877 professor of Greek at Iowa College, Grinnell; and from 1877 to 1887 professor of Greek at Bowdoin. As a teacher he was industrious and conscientious rather than inspiring, while his erudition was sometimes over the heads of college boys. In June 1887 he retired from his professorship in order to devote himself to his favorite study of Sanskrit, but died in the ensuing September, at North

Bridgeton, Me., from a disease contracted in nursing his only son.

[*Obit. Rec. Grads. Amherst Coll.*, 1888; *Lewiston* (Me.) *Evening Jour.*, Sept. 5, 1887; address of President William DeWitt Hyde, Bowdoin College Chapel, Sept. 18, 1887, in *Bowdoin Orient*, Sept. 28, 1887.]

K. C. M. S.

AVERY, SAMUEL PUTNAM (Mar. 17, 1822–Aug. 11, 1904), art connoisseur, philanthropist, was born in New York City, the son of a leather merchant, Samuel Putnam Avery and of Hannah (Parke) Avery. His parents were both of good Massachusetts stock. In 1832 the father died of the cholera, and his son, ten years of age, with a younger brother and three sisters, inherited the father's name—and little else. School days were cut short; but so far as Samuel was concerned self-training and culture continued for seventy years. A passion for the beautiful turned the lad's thought and effort to the art of engraving on wood and copper. There were years of apprenticeship to a calling that brought slight material rewards, but laid the foundation of a long career that in the passing of time led step by step to an appreciation of much in the world of art which America before his day had overlooked or neglected. At first he learned to engrave on copper and was employed by the American Bank Note Company; but he turned from that to wood engraving for publishers and printers. An edition of *Chevalier Bayard*, by W. G. Simms, was illustrated by Avery for Harper & Brothers in 1847. It was not long before this self-taught descendant of English Puritans was a collector of rare paintings and etchings, advising Americans who had money to spend in the importation of such works from the galleries of Europe. These well-to-do Americans with artistic interests gave Avery the opportunity to accumulate a fortune. They encouraged him in starting an art business in New York, in which he prospered because of his skill in appraisal and the confidence that buyers reposed in his discrimination. When the International Exposition at Paris was opened in 1867, Avery already had a recognized standing among the few Americans whose judgment in matters of art was generally respected. It was natural that he should be appointed United States Commissioner at that exposition and that his attendance there should notably widen his acquaintance among European art-lovers, and open to him doors that otherwise might have remained closed. Relationships thus formed continued unbroken to the end of his life. He was interested especially in old Dutch paintings and in romantic French landscapists. Two American buyers who were influenced profoundly by him were William T. Walters of Baltimore, and William H. Vanderbilt of New York. As one of the founders of the Metropolitan Museum in New York City, he induced Vanderbilt to place his valuable collection of paintings in that institution. As a memorial to his son, Henry O. Avery, he gave to the Columbia University Library a collection of 15,000 volumes on art and architecture, long regarded as the best architectural library in the United States. To the New York Public Library he gave his priceless collection of engravings and etchings—17,000 in number—containing many Whistlers and artists' proofs of other great etchers (the series of Flameng, for example, is more complete than that in Paris). Avery's public spirit is indicated by the munificence of his gifts. He was married in 1844 to Mary Ann Ogden, who survived him. His eldest son, Samuel Putnam Avery, followed the calling of art collector and died in 1920.

[T. L. De Vinne, in *N.Y. Geneal. and Biog. Rec.*, XXXVI, 1–4; *Who's Who in America* 1903–05; S. P. Avery, *The Avery, Fairchild, and Park Families* (1919); *Editorials and Resolutions in Memory of Samuel Putnam Avery* (privately printed, 1905); *N.Y. Times*, Aug. 13, 14, 1904; *N.Y. Tribune*, Aug. 14, 1904; *35th Ann. Rept. of Metropolitan Museum of Art, N.Y.* (1905); R. Sturgis, "Samuel Putnam Avery," in *Columbia Univ. Quart.*, VII, 14–23.]

W. B. S.

AVERY, WILLIAM WAIGSTILL (May 25, 1816–July 3, 1864), lawyer, was born in Burke County, and died in Morganton, N. C. He was descended from Christopher Avery, who came to Massachusetts from England in 1631, and from Waigstill Avery, who, going south in 1769, soon after his graduation from Princeton, became one of the prominent Revolutionary patriots of North Carolina. His father was Isaac Thomas Avery, a rich planter of literary tastes, and his mother Harriet Eloise Erwin, a representative of a family long distinguished in local public affairs. Entering the University of North Carolina in 1833, he found his preparation so inadequate that it was necessary for him to remain there in study for two years without any vacation. He was graduated at the head of his class in 1837, and in 1839 he was admitted to the bar. A year later he was an unsuccessful candidate for the state legislature, but he was elected to that body in 1842, and served for one term before retiring to his already important law practise. His political convictions were largely those of John C. Calhoun. In 1846 he was married to Corinna Mary Morehead, daughter of Gov. John Motley and Ann Elizabeth (Lindsay) Morehead. He was a state legislator in 1850 and 1852. In 1856 and in 1860 he was a

state senator, and head of the North Carolina delegation to the National Democratic Convention. On the election of Lincoln as president, he advocated that North Carolina secede immediately. He was a member of the Confederate Provisional Congress throughout its existence. Having procured authority from Jefferson Davis, he planned in 1862 to recruit a regiment for the Confederate army, but gave over this project out of regard for his domestic status—he was married and had five children—and out of regard also for his aged father, three of whose sons were already in military service. In the summer of 1864 he went with a hastily organized body of citizens in pursuit of an irregular organization of hostile troops which had advanced into North Carolina from Tennessee. A skirmish ensued and he was shot. Brought home, he died of his wounds three days later. He was the third of his father's sons to be killed in battle within one year.

[E. M. and C. H. T. Avery, *Groton Avery Clan* (1912); K. P. Battle, *Hist. Univ. N. C.* (1907); S. A. Ashe, *Biog. Hist. N. C.*, VII (1908); J. P. Arthur, *Western N. C., a Hist.* (1914).]

J. D. W.

AWL, WILLIAM MACLAY (May 24, 1799–Nov. 19, 1876), alienist, was born in Harrisburg, Pa., the son of Samuel Awl, lawyer and senator, and Mary (Maclay) Awl. He began the study of medicine at the age of eighteen under a physician of his home town. Two years later he entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, but did not graduate. He began to practise in Harrisburg, Pa.; tramped with a knapsack to Lancaster, Ohio, in 1826; practised his profession successively in several towns in that state; and finally took root in Columbus in 1833, to remain there for the rest of his life. In his early career he devoted himself to anatomy and surgery, gaining the reputation of being the first surgeon west of the Alleghanies to tie the left common carotid artery (*Lancaster Gazette,* Mar. 20, 1827; *Western Medical and Physical Journal,* October 1827). After reaching Columbus he gravitated toward the treatment of mental diseases. He had a knack in the management of the insane that was quite unusual. He was a tall, slender individual of fair complexion and blue eyes but afflicted with a spasmodic wry neck. Every few moments his head gave a sudden twist to one side. He boasted that if he could once fix his eyes on those of even the most violent lunatic he could control him without difficulty. Some of the scoffing onlookers believed that as he was unable to fix his own eyes he could not rivet the attention of the mentally unbalanced. But as a matter of fact he did; and he often appeared in court as an expert in cases of doubtful sanity. He was a member of the legislature with Marmaduke B. Wright, another prominent medical man of the time. They promoted a bill to place the insane of Ohio in the care of the state. The bill became law in 1835 and the "State Hospital" was opened in 1838 with Awl as superintendent. In the same year he became president of the Association of Superintendents of Asylums for the Insane of the United States and Canada, retaining the position until 1851. He drew the bill for the founding of the schools for the education of the blind and the feeble-minded in Ohio. In 1846 he joined with Daniel Drake and other leading members of the profession in establishing the Ohio State Medical Society. He was married on Jan. 28, 1830, to Rebecca Loughey.

[*Trans. Ohio State Medic. Soc.*, 1877, pp. 67–80; *Trans. Am. Medic. Ass.*, 1880, pp. 1009–11; Otto Juettner, *Daniel Drake and His Followers* (1909), pp. 176, 207, 434.]

W. L. B.

AXTELL, SAMUEL BEACH (Oct. 14, 1819–Aug. 6 or 7, 1891) lawyer, politician, jurist, was born on a farm in Franklin County, Ohio, the fourth child of Samuel Loree and Nancy (Sanders) Axtell. He graduated in 1844 from Western Reserve College (now Adelbert College of Western Reserve University), studied law, and was admitted to the Ohio bar. He married Adaline S. Williams of Summit County, Ohio, Sept. 20, 1840, and in 1843 moved to Mt. Clemens, Mich. In 1851, two years after the discovery of gold in California, he joined the great migration to the Pacific Coast. Not long after his arrival in California, he began a political career of some distinction. Upon the formation of Amador County in 1854 he became its first district attorney and held office for three successive terms. In 1860 he removed to San Francisco and six years later was elected to Congress on the Democratic ticket and served two terms (Fortieth and Forty-first Congresses). Axtell gave up his Democratic affiliation while in Congress and definitely aligned himself with the Republican party. For several years after his return from Washington, he was more or less active in California politics; and in 1874 President Grant appointed him governor of Utah. Because of the bitter controversy between Mormon and anti-Mormon factions in the territory, Axtell's tenure of office was brief and somewhat stormy. His failure to identify himself vigorously with the anti-Mormon party led to much criticism and is sometimes given as the reason for his failure to retain the governorship. He left this office in June 1875, but was appointed governor of New

Mexico almost immediately thereafter. In this new office Axtell again found numerous disturbances. A violent feud among the cattlemen was intensified by the presence in the territory of many desperate characters who had fled from near-by states, and had found a safe refuge in the thinly populated territory of New Mexico. It was these conditions that later gave rise to the "Lincoln County War." Axtell remained governor of New Mexico until 1878, when he was succeeded by Gen. Lew Wallace. Four years later he was made chief justice of the supreme court of New Mexico and served from 1882 till 1885. He exercised considerable influence upon the legal development of the Territory and sometimes in the discharge of his duty was called upon to face personal danger. During a criminal trial at Las Vegas a search of attendants and spectators revealed no less than forty-two revolvers which had been brought into the court-room (R. E. Twitchell, *Leading Facts of New Mexican History,* 1912, II, 419). In 1890 Axtell became chairman of the territorial Republican committee of New Mexico. He died at Morristown, N. J., the former home of his family.

[H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Utah* (1889); O. F. Whitney, *Hist. of Utah* (1892–1904); *Biog. Cong. Dir., 1774–1911* (1913); *Gen. Cat. of . . . Adelbert Coll. 1826–95; Appleton's Ann. Cyc. 1891; The Axtell Record,* ed. by E. S. Axtell (1886).]

R. G. C.

AYALA, JUAN MANUEL DE (fl. 1775), Spanish navigator, appears just once in American history. In connection with the occupation by the Spanish of the Bay of Monterey (1770) as an outpost against the Russians, the Viceroy of New Spain, Antonio Maria Bucarely, by way of preparation for a land expedition under Juan Bautista de Anza [*q.v.*] gave orders (1774–75) for a naval exploration of the Bay of San Francisco. To this end he sent northward a ship, the *San Carlos,* charged with the duty of exploring the bay, but also carrying provisions for Monterey. Of this ship Juan Manuel de Ayala, replacing an officer who had just "gone mad," was made commander. The *San Carlos* set sail from the port of San Blas in March 1775. The ship reached Monterey June 27 and about July 24 left for the Bay of San Francisco. Ayala spent August and much of September in exploring the bay, and on Nov. 9 reported to the Viceroy that it was the best port he had seen northward from Cape Horn. He had found that the bay had a practicable entrance and not merely one port but many. He returned to Monterey, arriving Sept. 22, and reached San Blas on Nov. 6, having accomplished his task of exploration. Of the results the viceroy wrote that the place was well adapted to settlement. There was plenty of fresh water, fire-wood, and stone. The climate was cold but healthful, and free from the fogs which beset Monterey! In his survey of the bay through his two pilots, José Canizares and Juan Bautista Aguirre, Ayala makes mention of points familiar to us such as Angel Island, Round Bay (San Pablo), and Mission Bay.

[H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.,* I (1884), ch. XI; I. B. Richman, *Cal. under Spain and Mexico* (1911), p. 109, with chart of the bay of San Francisco, by Ayala, pp. 110–11, and with a subsequent map of the bay pp. 112–13; and see p. 421 n. 66; C. E. Chapman, *Founding of Spanish Cal.* (1916), pp. 238–39, 243, 314, 326–27.]

I. B. R.

AYCOCK, CHARLES BRANTLEY (Nov. 1, 1859–Apr. 4, 1912), governor of North Carolina, was born in Wayne County, N. C., the youngest of ten children of Benjamin Aycock and Serena (Hooks) Aycock. His early years were passed when opportunities for public education were meager almost everywhere in the South. In such private schools as were accessible he received preparation sufficient for admission to the state university, where he promptly attained a position of leadership. He was graduated in the class of 1880. A year later he married Varina (Davis) Woodard who died in 1890, and in 1891 he married Cora Woodard, a younger sister of his first wife. Immediately after graduation he began the practise of law in Goldsboro. In 1888 he canvassed his congressional district as presidential elector for Grover Cleveland and gained distinction as an orator and political debater. He was elector-at-large on the Cleveland ticket four years later and in 1893 received appointment as United States attorney for the eastern district of North Carolina, a post which he held until 1897. In the spring of 1900 he was unanimously nominated for governor by the Democratic state convention, and became the leader in a notable campaign to secure an amendment to the state constitution requiring literacy as one of the qualifications for suffrage. In August of that year he was elected by the largest majority that had ever been received by any candidate in the state. He served from 1901 to 1905, when he returned to Goldsboro to resume the practise of his profession, moving to Raleigh in 1909. In 1911 he yielded to a widespread demand and became a candidate for the Democratic nomination to the United States Senate, but he died before the campaign opened.

Aycock's greatest achievement was in the cause of popular education. In this he early became interested. As a boy he had seen his mother make her mark to a deed and the incident greatly impressed him with the failure of his state to

provide schools. Educational conditions were inadequate when he reached manhood. Throughout the South the principle of public education had not yet been practically accepted. Economic desolation, racial conflicts, defective school arrangements, and the blight of partisan politics were among the obstacles which stood in the way of substantial social progress. Conflicts over the elimination of the negro vote were fierce and demoralizing. As candidate for governor on a platform of white supremacy and education, Aycock led the movement which took the ballot from the illiterate negro until he could be prepared by education and training for its proper use, thus committing the state to a program of universal education. When he was inaugurated governor in 1901 the annual school term of the state was less than four months, the monthly salary of teachers was only $25, the schoolhouses were inferior, and nearly a thousand districts had no schoolhouses. Most of the teachers were poorly trained. There was almost no professional supervision. One-fifth of the white population above ten years of age was illiterate. Aycock gave the prestige of his office to a movement to improve these conditions. He organized and led campaigns to arouse the people to the need for increased school funds for longer terms, increased salaries for teachers, better schoolhouses, improved school teaching and management, and other features of improved public educational work. Wide publicity was given to the state's educational needs, through the press, by meetings in court-houses, schoolhouses, churches, and wherever the people could be assembled. Educational rallies were held in each county. Public men of almost every calling followed Aycock's leadership and liberally gave their services as speakers and workers in behalf of better schools. Improvements appeared almost immediately. Larger legislative appropriations were made, increased local taxes were voted, the school term was lengthened, facilities for the training of teachers were provided, the salaries of teachers were established, illiteracy was gradually reduced, provision was made for the establishment of rural high schools (1907), all as a result of the movement inspired and led by Aycock.

[The chief source of information is Connor and Poe, *The Life and Speeches of Charles B. Aycock* (1912); a sketch of his life and an account of his educational influence in Connor, *The Program of Exercises for North Carolina Day* (State Dept. of Pub. Instruction, Raleigh, 1912); a sketch of his life to 1905 in *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, ed. by Samuel A. Ashe (Greensboro, 1905), I, 76–82. His educational influence has been appraised by Edgar W. Knight, in *Pub. School Educ. in N. C.* (1916); by E. A. Alderman in a chapter in *Southern Pioneers*, ed. by H. W. Odum (1925); and by French Strother, in "N. C.'s Dreams Come True," *World's Work*, Nov. 1924. In the *Rept. of the N. C. Bar Ass.*, 1912, is an account of his legal career. His state papers are in the *Pub. Docs. of N. C.* (1901-5).] E. W. K.

AYER, EDWARD EVERETT (Nov. 16, 1841–May 3, 1927), railway lumberman, bibliophile, collector, was born at Kenosha, Wis., the son of Elbridge Gerry and Mary (Titcomb) Ayer. The son of a pioneer of Wisconsin, as a boy he had but little schooling. At the age of eighteen he joined an overland expedition to California. He stopped in Nevada, where he found a job in a quartz mill, working twelve hours a day, but as soon as possible he went on to San Francisco, where he arrived with twenty-five cents in his pocket. Here he found work in a planing-mill, where he remained until the outbreak of the Civil War. He enlisted in the First California Cavalry, company E, and during the following three years served in Arizona and New Mexico, winning the rank of lieutenant. Mustered out in the summer of 1864, he returned to his home in Harvard, Ill., and with the gift from his father of a third interest in a general store he settled down and began his business career. On Sept. 7, 1865, he was married to Emma Augusta Burbank. Within a brief period he began buying timber, first for the use of the Chicago & Northwestern Railway, and later furnishing ties and telegraph poles for most of the western roads, including the Union Pacific, the Santa Fé, and the Mexican Central. About the year 1880 he came to Chicago, and in 1893, together with John B. Lord, formed the Ayer & Lord Tie Company.

While a soldier in Arizona he had chanced upon a copy of Prescott's *Conquest of Mexico*. The book fascinated him and opened to him a new world. He became a student of history; later, as wealth came to him, a collector of historical books and manuscripts, and still later a collector of antiquities of many kinds. He gradually built up one of the finest private libraries in the United States, particularly noteworthy for its source material on the native races of North America, the Hawaiian and the Philippine Islands. This library, containing more than 17,000 printed books, 4,000 manuscripts, and thousands of maps, prints, drawings, and photographs, he gave, in 1911, to the Newberry Library of Chicago, where it is separately housed and administered as the Edward E. Ayer Collection on the North American Indian.

Ayer was one of the founders of the Field Museum of Natural History of Chicago. He, probably more than any other person, aroused the enthusiasm of Marshall Field in the proposal to utilize the remarkable and choice collections left

from the World's Fair in Chicago as the nucleus of a great museum, and it was he who, more than any one else, persuaded the merchant prince to give his millions for endowment and thus made the dream of a great natural-history museum in Chicago an actuality. Ayer was its first president, serving from 1893 to 1898, when he resigned, but remained a trustee to the end of his life. When the old Fine Arts Building of the World's Fair became the Field Museum he presented to it his large collection of Indian paraphernalia and his fine library of illustrated books on ornithology, besides many antiquities from Italy, Egypt, and other lands.

Ayer was a trustee of the Newberry Library from 1892 to 1911, a trustee of the Art Institute, president of the Archæological Society, a member of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin, the American Historical Association, the American Anthropological Association, the Chicago Historical Society, and numerous others. During many years, with his wife, he made extensive tours abroad, one of which—a journey in Northern Africa—was narrated by Mrs. Ayer in *A Motor Flight Through Algeria and Tunisia* (1911). In the midst of his other activities he found time to serve (1912–18) on the Board of Indian Commissioners, and in 1913 made a personal investigation of the Menominee Reservation in Wisconsin. Besides his home in Chicago, he maintained a summer home on Lake Geneva, Wis., and during the last fifteen years spent much time in California, where he was particularly identified with the effort to save the redwood forests. He died in Pasadena, Cal., and was buried in Harvard, Ill.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; Charles Moore, *Daniel H. Burnham, Architect, Planner of Cities* (1921), I, 123–24, 232, 236–39, II, 148; Donald Wilhelm, "A Lumberman Bibliophile," *Outlook*, Aug. 25, 1915; J. C. Bay, "Edward Everett Ayer," *Am. Collector*, July 1927; *Chicago Tribune*, *Chicago Evening Post*, May 4, 1927; additional information from Mrs. Ayer and from George B. Utley, Librarian of the Newberry Lib., Chicago.]

W.J.G.

AYER, FRANCIS WAYLAND (Feb. 4, 1848–Mar. 5, 1923), advertising agent, was the ninth in descent from John Ayer, who emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1636 and became one of the founders of Haverhill. He was born in Lee, Mass., the son of Nathan Wheeler and Joanna B. (Wheeler) Ayer. His father, a graduate of Brown University, was admitted in 1852 to the Massachusetts bar, but preferred to make his living by school-teaching. Ayer passed his boyhood and youth in western New York, where he taught district schools for five years and attended the University of Rochester for another year. Early in 1869 he came to Philadelphia, where his father had opened a girls' school. He found employment as advertising solicitor for a religious paper, liked the work, and on Apr. 1, 1869, started business for himself under the firm name of N. W. Ayer & Son, the firm consisting of himself and his father, a book-keeper, and $250 in cash. The remaining fifty-four years of Ayer's life saw American advertising grow from a small, unintelligent, less than reputable craft into a well organized business that exerted a powerful influence on the national life. To that growth Ayer probably contributed as much as any one man. When he first took up the work, the advertising agent played a catch-as-catch-can game for his profits, making as much as he could out of both the advertiser and the publisher whose space he sold, and feeling little regard for the welfare of either. By his "open-contract" plan of operation Ayer made himself the responsible agent of the advertiser. Not only did he account to his clients for how their money was spent, but he spent their money so as to bring them the greatest possible returns. He developed trade-marks, slogans, pictorial displays, and all the other paraphernalia of the business as it is now conducted—a business that incidentally made possible the modern newspaper and popular magazine. A by-product of the firm's activities was the well-known *American Newspaper Annual and Directory*. Himself of irreproachable honor, he did much for the ethical standards of advertising men. As his business expanded, he showed excellent judgment in selecting employees who ultimately became his partners. Ayer's interests, however, extended into other fields. He was president of the Merchants' National Bank of Philadelphia from 1895 till 1910, when it was merged with the First National. Ordered by his doctor to spend as much time as possible in the open air, he developed a farm of 2,000 acres at Meredith, N. Y., imported pure bred Jersey cattle, and went into the butter, milk powder, and stock-raising business on a large scale. Fine dairy cattle from his farm were shipped to all parts of the United States, and even to South America, China, Japan, and India. His thirty-five years as a dairy farmer and stock breeder was in itself a distinguished career. A devout Baptist, he gave freely of his time, money, and judgment to the Baptist Church. For a half century he was superintendent of the Sunday-school of the North Baptist Church of Camden, N. J., where he made his home, was president of the New Jersey State Convention of Baptists for more than twenty-five years, was president of the Northern Baptist Convention, and held other im-

portant positions in the work of the church. He likewise gave generous support to the Y. M. C. A. He was married twice: on May 5, 1875, to Rhandena Gilman, who died Oct. 3, 1914, and on Apr. 21, 1919, to Martha K. Lawson.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; B. C. Forbes, "The Man Who Led Advertising Out of the Darkness," in *Forbes*, July 21, 1923; C. A. Barbour, "F. W. Ayer: An Appreciation," in the *Watchman Examiner*, Mar. 22, 1923; *F. Wayland Ayer 1848–1923* (privately printed, n. d.); *F. Wayland Ayer, Founder* (privately printed, 1923); J. W. Jordan, ed., *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, XIII (1921); statement by W. W. Fry, senior partner of N. W. Ayer & Son; G. P. Rowell, *Forty Years an Advertising Agent* (1906); *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 6, 17, 1923; *Vital Records of Lee, Mass., to the Year 1850* (1903).]

G. H. G.

AYER, JAMES COOK (May 5, 1818–July 3, 1878), physician, patent-medicine manufacturer, capitalist, was born at Ledyard, Conn., where his father, Frederick Ayer, owner of a saw and grist mill, died when the child was seven years old. The widow, born Persis Cook, moved to the adjacent town of Preston at which her father operated a small flannel-mill. In this factory James Cook Ayer had his first mechanical training. He also attended school at Preston and Norwich. Then he was sent to his uncle, James Cook, a manufacturer and one of the early mayors of the newly established city of Lowell, Mass. Under Cook's supervision the boy's studies were continued at the Lowell High School, whence he desired to enter college but met with opposition from his relatives. He accordingly entered the apothecary shop of Jacob Robbins and simultaneously began to study medicine with Dr. Samuel L. Dana, a local practitioner. This preparation enabled young Ayer to gain his M.D. degree from the University of Pennsylvania.

In 1841 Ayer bought the Robbins drugstore for $2,486.61 with money borrowed from his uncle which he repaid in three years. He devised a remedy, reputed to be beneficial for pulmonary troubles, which he placed on the market as "Ayer's Cherry Pectoral," a pioneer among the now multifarious American patent medicines. Discovering that advertising pays, the young physician-manufacturer pushed the sales of this first preparation, added sugar-coated pills (1854), extract of sarsaparilla (1855), an ague cure (1857), and "Ayer's Hair Vigor" (1869). A brother, Frederick Ayer, was admitted to partnership in 1855. The company at first occupied various rented quarters, but in 1857 it bought the property between Middle and Market Sts., Lowell, at which location the manufacture is still, in 1928, conducted. In his shop Ayer was master of every process. His versatility and mechanical ingenuity were remarkable; there was scarcely a machine in the entire establishment outside of the printing department which was not wholly invented by Dr. Ayer or improved by his changes and additions.

Ayer married, Nov. 14, 1850, Josephine Mellen Southwick. He bought an old stone tavern on Pawtucket St., a historic structure and landmark, which became the family residence, and which is now the Ayer Home for Young Women and Children, endowed by Mrs. Ayer and Frederick Fanning Ayer. A fast-growing bank account enabled Ayer to invest in textile enterprises, in several of which he became the largest shareholder. In their management he took little interest until 1857, when the collapse of companies at Lowell and Lawrence led to his investigating the conduct of their officers. An exposure was written by "Historicus" (Charles Cowley) from material furnished by Ayer. Feeling ran high, and a personal encounter ensued between Ayer and Richard S. Fay, treasurer of the Middlesex Company. In 1863 Ayer published *Some of the Usages and Abuses in the Management of Our Manufacturing Corporations*. He personally combined the Tremont and Suffolk Mills at Lowell, which, under a treasurer of his choice, entered on a period of prosperity. A feud concerning freight rates subsisting between Ayer and the Boston & Lowell Railroad led to his building the Lowell & Andover Railroad, connecting with the Boston & Maine and providing a parallel and competing service between Lowell and Boston. This was opened Dec. 1, 1874.

Ayer had meantime become interested in mining. In 1865 he was awarded patents for ore-reducing processes. He bought into the Lake Superior Ship Canal & Railroad & Iron Company, which he successfully financed. He acquired timber lands in Florida and erected on them saw-mills which he operated from Lowell. He made two European journeys, after the first of which he presented to his city, in 1866, the Victory monument now standing before the Lowell city hall. In his honor the town of Groton Junction, Mass., was renamed on Mar. 6, 1871. The Ayer town hall, dedicated in 1876, was a gift of the Ayer family to this town. A project to build an interoceanic canal over one of eight proposed routes located between Panama and Tehuantepec was cut short by Ayer's death, which occurred at Winchendon, Mass., July 3, 1878, as the result of many years of continuous overwork. After an elaborate funeral service at Huntington Hall, he was buried in the Lowell Cemetery, where a massive lion marks his grave. Mrs. Ayer, who outlived her husband many years, became a prominent figure in New York and Paris society.

[Charles Cowley, *Reminiscences of James C. Ayer and the Town of Ayer* (1879) is an authentic memorial biog.; F. W. Coburn, *Hist. of Lowell and Its People* (1920), has a sketch of Ayer with portr. and, in the narrative part of the hist., accounts of the controversy with the manufacturing corporations and of the dedication of the Victory monument. Ayer's home life is eulogistically described in *Josephine Mellen Ayer, a Memoir* (1900); his benefactions to the town of Ayer are set forth by G. J. Burns in vol. II of D. H. Hurd's *Hist. of Middlesex Co.* (1890).] F.W.C.

AYLLON, LUCAS VASQUEZ DE (*c.* 1475–Oct. 18, 1526), Spanish explorer, a native of Toledo, was one of the group who came to Hispaniola (Santo Domingo) in 1502 with Gov. Nicolas de Ovando. In no sense a warrior, "never having donned a corselet or borne a sword to earn his wages therewith" (Oviedo, quoted in Lowery, p. 154), he is said to have had a talent for "conversation." He was of good character, intelligent, and well educated, and received from Ovando various offices. Made a judge of the supreme court of Hispaniola, he was granted 400 Indians in *repartimientos*, or fiefs, and was therefore considered rich. He was, however, not so rich as not to care to become richer. Countries of fabulous wealth, islands or a mainland, were said to lie to the west and north. So Ayllon formed a partnership with the clerk of the Audiencia of Hispaniola, and in 1520 sent a ship under Francisco Gordillo as captain and Alonzo Fernandez Sotil as pilot with orders to sail northward until they should reach land.

Near the island of Lucayoneque, Gordillo fell in with Pedro de Quexos, who had been sent out from Hispaniola by another judge, Juan Ortiz de Matienzo, in quest of Caribs to sell as slaves. The commanders decided to go north together on a search for land, and incidentally for slaves as well. In June 1521, according to Quexos, the two ships came upon land in latitude 33° 30′ at the mouth of a considerable river to which was given the name of San Juan Bautista (the Peedee? J. G. Johnson, *Georgia Historical Quarterly*, 1923, p. 340, n. 5). The Indians are thought to have called the country Chicora. On June 30, 1521, Gordillo and Quexos took possession of the newly discovered country and by help of a native guide made exploration into the interior. Gordillo, contrary to instructions from Ayllon, lured to his ship 150 Indians and with them sailed for Hispaniola. On his return he was brought before a commission under Diego Columbus which freed the captives and ordered their return to their people.

Ayllon, soon after this, proceeded to Spain to secure his discovery by royal grant. With him he took a native of the new country who had been baptized as "Francisco Chicora" and who had learned to speak Spanish. In his own country, said Chicora, there dwelt a race of men with long flexible tails which obliged them to pierce holes in the seats where they wished to sit down. He said, too, that the region was one of great treasures, with numerous islands of which the royal grant mentions the names of nineteen. On June 12, 1523, Emperor Charles V issued a decree conferring upon Ayllon and his descendants the titles of *adelantado* and governor. By this decree Ayllon was empowered to navigate the coast for 800 leagues in vessels furnished at his own cost. In particular he was to search for an interoceanic strait leading to the Spice Islands. He was required to start on his expedition the following year, 1524, and was allowed three years from the day his fleet left Hispaniola in which to complete it.

His grant secured, Ayllon returned to the West Indies with the intention of following up his undertaking. He was, however, embarrassed by a *residencia* (a public and official investigation of his conduct) and by the non-appearance of vessels from Spain bringing the armament for his ships. While thus delayed, he, in 1525, sent to the new land two ships under Pedro de Quexos, probably Matienzo's former pilot. Quexos explored the coast for 250 leagues, taking possession in the King's name and returning the same year to Hispaniola. He brought back with him some gold and silver and a few pearls. In June or July 1526, Ayllon was himself able to go to the new land and begin the planting of his colony. He sailed from La Plata in Hispaniola with a fleet of "three large vessels" and some lesser ones. He took with him from the West Indies five or six hundred men and women and eighty or ninety horses in addition to the necessary outfit for the colony. The pilot Quexos again accompanied him. Among the colonists were three Dominican friars, one of whom, Fr. Antonio Montesino, became world famous as first to preach against the enslavement of the natives. Ayllon landed at the mouth of a river (33° 40′) which one of his pilots named the Jordan (the Cape Fear? J. G. Johnson, p. 344; Lowery, p. 165). On entering the river Ayllon lost a ship but saved the crew. Meanwhile some of his captains explored the interior, while others followed up the coast searching for a strait. Francisco Chicora, who was with the expedition, deserted and returned to his people.

Thereupon Ayllon turned southwestward for about 115 miles until he came to a great river (Gualdape) which Lowery (p. 166) thinks may have been the Peedee, but which Johnson is confident was the Santee. John Gilmary Shea (Win-

sor, p. 241), thinking Ayllon's course to have been northward, believed the Gualdape to be the James (Virginia), as does Edward Channing (p. 61); while Henry Harrisse (*The Discovery of North America*, 1892, p. 213) identifies it with the Cape Fear River between Wilmington and Smithville. On the Gualdape, in any event (above 33°), was begun the settlement of San Miguel de Gualdape. The region was flat and marshy and the settlement did not prosper. Many of the colonists sickened and died. Ayllon himself died on St. Luke's Day, 1526. His survivors, 150 in number, placed his body on a tender and set sail for Hispaniola; but the boat foundered and the ocean became his sepulchre, "where," observes Oviedo, "have been and shall be put other captains and governors" (Lowery, p. 168).

[Oviedo, Herrera, Navarrete, and in gen. the sources in Spanish cited by W. Lowery, *Spanish Settlements in the U. S.*, 1513–61 (1901), esp. Appendix H; J. G. Shea, "Ancient Florida," in Justin Winsor, *Narr. and Crit. Hist. of America* (1886), II, ch. IV; E. G. Bourne, *Spain in America* (1904), ch. X; Edward Channing, *Hist. of the U. S.* (1905), I, ch. III; sketch map of the Tierra of Ayllon, Lowery, *supra*, ch. II.] I. B. R.

AYLWIN, JOHN CUSHING (*c.* 1780–Jan. 28, 1813), naval officer, the son of Thomas Aylwin, a merchant of Boston, and Lucy (Cushing) Aylwin, a sister of William Cushing, justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, was born in Quebec, whither his parents had removed at the time of the siege of Boston. Receiving an excellent education, the lad, who manifested a love for the sea, was rated on board a frigate in the British navy; but the odious system of impressment pursued by England at that time producing in him a strong aversion, he took service aboard a vessel engaged in the London trade, with the stipulation that he should enjoy six months' tuition at a naval academy. This promise, however, was not kept, and young Aylwin was forced to continue in the West Indian trade. His progress in seamanship was so rapid that he was promoted to be mate of his ship at the age of fifteen. Some dispute having arisen between him and the captain, the latter connived at the kidnapping of the youth by a press-gang. Aylwin was forced to serve aboard a gun-brig, where every artifice was employed to cause him to enter the British navy voluntarily. The lad, however, steadfastly refused, with the result that he continued his enforced service in the navy for six years. It was only when his health temporarily declined and his usefulness consequently diminished that he was allowed his freedom, when he immediately rejoined his parents in Boston, to which they had meanwhile returned from Canada. Recovering his health, he served as captain of several merchant ships out of Boston, and, at the outbreak of war in 1812, he was appointed sailing-master with the rank of lieutenant of the frigate *Constitution*, under Capt. Hull, in which capacity he earned a large share of the credit for this famous vessel's escape from the powerful British fleet, after a chase of sixty hours. Continuing his service as sailing-master in the *Constitution* under Capt. Bainbridge, he took a prominent part in the battle which resulted in the capture of the British frigate *Guerrière*, and heroically ended his career and his life during the fight of the *Constitution* with the *Java*, living long enough to witness the latter's capture. Bainbridge gave the following account of Aylwin's share in these events: "In the action with the *Guerrière* he stood on an elevated situation, by the side of his brave comrades, Morris and Bush, at the time the two vessels came in contact, and was wounded in the left shoulder with a musket ball. . . . In the late action [with the *Java*] he commanded the forecastle division, and his bravery and marked coolness throughout the contest gained him the admiration of his commander, and all who had an opportunity of witnessing him. When boarders were called to repel boarders, he mounted the quarter-deck hammock cloths, and, in the act of firing his pistols at the enemy, received a ball through the same shoulder. Notwithstanding the serious nature of his wound, he continued at his post until the enemy had struck; and even then did not make known his situation until all the wounded had been dressed. His zeal and courage did not forsake him in his last moments, for, a few days after the action, although laboring under considerable debility and the most excruciating pain, he repaired to quarters, when an engagement was expected with a ship. . . . He bore his pain with great and unusual fortitude, and expired without a groan."

[The best account of Aylwin's short but eventful life is his biog. in Isaac Bailey's *Am. Naval Biog.* (1815), pp. 242–47.] E. B.

AYRES, ANNE (Jan. 3, 1816–Feb. 9, 1896), original member of the Sisterhood of the Holy Communion, was the first woman in this country to become a Protestant Sister. For many years she was prominently associated with the philanthropic work of Dr. William Augustus Mühlenberg [*q.v.*], rector of the Church of the Holy Communion, New York. At her death she left the request that all her journals and writings which would tend to perpetuate her memory be destroyed, in order that her work might be known only as a part of Dr. Muhlenberg's.

Born and educated in London, England, she came to New York with her father, Robert

Ayres, when she was twenty years old. There she secured pupils from families of social prominence, among whom was a niece of Dr. Muhlenberg. Upon hearing him preach a sermon on "Jephtha's Vow," in the chapel of St. Paul's College, College Point, N. Y., she was moved to devote her life to religious service, and was by him consecrated a Sister of the Holy Communion on All Saints' Day, 1845. At this time no Protestant orders of the kind existed, either in this country or in England. Other women joined her later, and the sisterhood was formally organized in 1852. Sister Anne conducted a parish school and worked among the poor. During the epidemic of 1849, she rendered valuable aid in the cholera hospitals. She conducted an infirmary in the rear-tenement of an alley near the church, which was the real beginning of St. Luke's Hospital, also one of Dr. Muhlenberg's projects. The patients were moved from the tenement to the memorial home of the Sisterhood, given by Mr. and Mrs. John H. Swift in 1853, and in 1858, from there to St. Luke's, where Sister Anne and her associates were put in charge of the nursing. Here she died thirty-eight years later. During her life of modest and unselfish ministry, she found time to write *Evangelical Sisterhoods, In Two Letters to a Friend* (1867), edited by W. A. Muhlenberg, and *The Life and Work of William Augustus Muhlenberg,* a carefully prepared and interesting biography, which first appeared in 1880 and has passed through several editions.

[Considerable information about Sister Anne and her work may be gleaned from her life of Dr. Muhlenberg. See also Henry C. Potter, *Sisterhoods and Deaconesses* (1873); *The Living Church,* Feb. 22, 1896; and obit. notice in the *N. Y. Herald,* Feb. 12, 1896.] H. E. S.

AYRES, BROWN (May 25, 1856–Jan. 28, 1919), college president, was born in Memphis, Tenn., the son of Samuel W. and Elizabeth (Cook) Ayres. After attending private schools in Memphis and New Orleans, he studied engineering at Washington and Lee University in Virginia, and graduated (1878) at Stevens Institute of Technology. He was one of the remarkable group of Fellows who went to Johns Hopkins in the later 'seventies, the attraction for him being the well-known physicist, Prof. Rowland. In 1880 he was elected professor of physics and electrical engineering at Tulane University, and twenty years later professor of physics and astronomy. As dean of the College of Technology from its organization in 1894 till 1900 he displayed such administrative ability that he was elected dean of the academic department and vice-chairman of the faculty, and in 1904 acting president of the university.

He served as president of the Southern Association of Schools and Colleges (1904–05) and as a member of the faculty of the first large summer school in the South, at the University of Tennessee. He was recognized as the logical successor of Charles W. Dabney when the latter resigned the presidency of the University of Tennessee in 1904. Ayres held this position until his death, Jan. 28, 1919. Like most state universities in the South, the university had been only nominally a state institution; it had only a small faculty and student body and almost no income from appropriations for maintenance or buildings. Ayres began at once to arouse the people of the state to their duty and obligations. In 1917 a conference was called of leading citizens to put before the legislature a program of expansion. The result was that in that year a half-mill tax was levied for the maintenance of the university and a million-dollar bond issue was made for buildings. Tennessee was thus the first state in the South to put its university upon a financial basis that made unnecessary many special appropriations. With the agricultural, engineering, law, and academic departments at Knoxville, the medical and dental departments at Memphis, and demonstration and extension departments at other points in the state, plans were made by Ayres that resulted in a progressive institution, the head of the educational system in reality as well as in name. While many had a part in the work of reorganization, to Ayres must be given the credit for outlining the plans and seeing the vision. He was far removed from the emotional agitator or crusader, but he appealed to reasonable men by his scientific method, practical sense, and zeal for higher education. His influence was not confined to Tennessee. He was president of the national Association of State Universities (1909–10) and vice-president of the Association of Land Grant Colleges the year of his death.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1918–19; *Knoxville Jour. & Tribune,* Jan. 29, 30, 31, 1919; additional information in an unpublished paper prepared by the Trustees of the Univ. of Tenn.] E. M—s.

AYRES, ROMEYN BECK (Dec. 20, 1825–Dec. 4, 1888), Union soldier, was born in Montgomery County, N. Y., the son of a country physician, who took a strong interest in the education of his sons. That young Ayres was regarded as an authority on Latin by his classmates at the Military Academy, does not, of course, indicate any great attainments, but does show that at least some part of what he had learned clung to him in the unclassical atmosphere of West Point. Graduating in 1847, about the middle of his class, he was commissioned in the artillery and sent to Mex-

ico, but was too late to take part in any of the active operations of the war. He served at many posts, from Maine to California, on routine duties, and was promoted to captain just at the outbreak of the Civil War. He commanded a battery at the first battle of Bull Run, and was with the Army of the Potomac from its organization until the end of the war. As chief of artillery of a division and later of a corps, he served in the Peninsular campaign, at Antietam and at Fredericksburg. Then and for many years after, the artillery was regarded as a kind of necessary appendage to the real army, and it was the usual thing for the chief of artillery of a large command to be, like Ayres, only a captain. Even the chief of artillery of the Army of the Potomac never ranked higher than brigadier-general. So when Ayres was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers (Nov. 29, 1862), he was soon removed from artillery duties and assigned to the command of a brigade, as being an employment suitable to his rank. As a brigade and division commander in the 5th corps, he fought at Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Petersburg, and Five Forks. He was repeatedly brevetted for gallantry in action and for meritorious services, and his appontment as major-general of volunteers was under consideration when the war ended. His muster out of the volunteer service left him once more a captain of artillery, but on the reorganization of the army in 1866 he was appointed lieutenant-colonel. He was promoted to the colonelcy of the 2nd Artillery in 1879, and died at Fort Hamilton, N. Y., while still in active service. Ayres was a tall man, of distinguished presence, erect and soldierly. Like a good many military men of his type, he was somewhat vain of his appearance and meticulous as to dress. He was by no means a mere show soldier, however, but an energetic, determined, hard-fighting commander. The rank he attained and the responsibilities he carried all came to him as the result of faithful and efficient service.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed. 1891), II, 325–29; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887–88), II, 259; *Official Records*, ser. I, vols. I, XI (pts. 1, 2), XIX (pt. 1), XXI, XXV (pts. 1, 2), XXVII (pts. 1, 3), XXIX (pts. 1, 2), XXXIII, XXXVI (pts. 1, 2, 3), XL (pts. 1, 2, 3), XLII (pts. 1, 2, 3), XLVI (pts. 1, 2, 3), LI (pt. 1).]

T. M. S.

AZARIAS, BROTHER (June 29, 1847–Aug. 20, 1893), educator, author, was born near Killenaule, County Tipperary, Ireland, the eldest son of Thomas and Margaret (Ryan) Mullany. His baptismal name was Patrick Francis. The family emigrated to Deerfield, N. Y., in 1851, leaving Patrick behind for a few years, owing to his delicate health. After his arrival in the United States he attended the Union School of Deerfield, and later, the Christian Brothers' Academy of Utica. There he fell under the magnetic influence of the late Brother Justin, and at the age of fifteen, desiring to become a religious and a teacher, he successfully applied for admission to the Brothers of the Christian Schools, a society of lay religious educators, founded in France in 1861 by Saint John Baptist De La Salle, and conducting schools in most parts of the world. Brother Azarias was further educated in the training schools and academies of the society. Subsequently he taught in Albany, New York, and Philadelphia. His natural abilities and devotion to study are evidenced by his call at the age of nineteen to the professorship of mathematics and literature at Rock Hill College, Ellicott City, Md. Here he laid under contribution the ready and convenient library resources of Washington and Baltimore, pursued literary and philosophical studies, cultivated the acquaintance of neighboring scholars, taught his classes, lectured occasionally before learned societies, and began his career of independent authorship. In 1877, somewhat broken in health, he went to Europe for rest and recuperation, but the occasion gave him his first opportunity to visit the great libraries of the Old World and so to lay the foundation for extensive reading and research which he was to use to full advantage some ten years later. In 1879, he was named to the presidency of Rock Hill College, a position that he held with marked success till 1886, when, his constitution shattered by sickness and intense literary work, he again sought health in Europe. On his return to the United States, somewhat restored, he went to De La Salle Institute, New York City, and continued to occupy himself partly in teaching, but mainly in collating and extending the materials gathered abroad. An attack of pneumonia, following a series of lectures on education at the Catholic Summer School, Plattsburg, N. Y., of which he was one of the founders, caused his death.

Singularly modest and almost shy, Brother Azarias was, however, an inspiring teacher and a fascinating lecturer. A peculiar merit of his work may be found in his presentation of the literary, educational, and philosophical claims of the Roman Catholic Church in a style free from the bitterness of controversy, and appealing to non-Catholics and Catholics alike. His chief works are: *An Essay Contributing to a Philosophy of Literature* (1874); *The Development of Old English Thought* (1879); *Aristotle and the Christian Church* (1888); *Books and*

Reading (1890); *Phases of Thought and Criticism* (1892); *Essays Educational, Essays Philosophical, Essays Miscellaneous* (1896), gathered and published after his death.

[J. T. Smith, *Brother Azarias* (1897); *Addresses and Letters Read at the Memorial Meeting in Honor of Brother Azarias* (1894); J. A. Mooney, *Memoir of Brother Azarias* (1901).]

B. E.

BABBITT, BENJAMIN TALBOT (1809–Oct. 20, 1889), inventor, manufacturer, was born at Westmoreland, Oneida County, N. Y. His father, Nathaniel Babbitt, a farmer and blacksmith, had migrated as a young man from Connecticut and had married Betsey Holman, the daughter of another Connecticut immigrant. Oneida County in the first decade of the past century represented the newest frontier, and Benjamin's boyhood was characterized by a minimum of educational advantages and a maximum of labor. Arduous work on the farm and in the blacksmith shop, relieved by hunting and trapping expeditions, laid the foundations of a strong physique and at the same time whetted the appetite of the boy for larger opportunities. At the age of eighteen he left the farm, but so valuable had he become to his father that the parental objections were overcome only by an agreement whereby the boy consented to pay his father $500 annually for five years. This money he obtained by hiring out in the winter as a lumberman, and in the summer as a mechanic.

Babbitt was a mechanical genius and intensely eager to learn. His application made him, within three years, an expert wheelwright, steam-pipe fitter, file maker, blacksmith, and general mechanic. He persuaded some of his fellow workmen to rise an hour earlier so that they might quit work an hour sooner two days a week, and induced a professor from Clinton College (now Hamilton) to come to Utica on those days and conduct a class in chemistry and physics. This was Babbitt's introduction to chemistry. By the time he was twenty-two he had acquired not only a foundation knowledge of mechanics, but enough money to establish a machine-shop at Little Falls. Here he labored for twelve years manufacturing pumps, engines, and various kinds of farm machinery. Among his products at this time was one of the first workable mowing machines in this country. After his mill had been twice destroyed by floods, Babbitt left for New York, leaving accounts amounting to $5,000, which owing to the dishonesty of his agent he never received.

Arriving in New York in 1843, he turned his restless brain for a moment from mechanics to chemistry, developed an original and cheaper process of making salaratus, put it on the market in convenient packages, and eventually became the dominant figure in the manufacture of salaratus. He soon added a yeast baking-powder, one of the earliest baking-powders made, a soap powder, and various brands of soap. He also manufactured soda and potash. "Babbitt's Best Soap" became a household word, and his soap business brought him an immense fortune. His interest in soap manufacture never flagged; he was taking out patents in this field as late as 1886, and practically all of the apparatus in his factories was of his own invention. Improved methods of putting up caustic alkali, extracting glycerine, bleaching palm-oil, and boiling soap are among the inventions to his credit. His early factory was in New York, but the plant was later moved to New Jersey.

Babbitt's interests were as diverse as his brain was ingenious. Between 1842 and 1889, 108 patents were issued to him for his own inventions, and these covered almost every conceivable field. His first patent (Oct. 7, 1842) was for a pump and fire engine, his second (1846) for a brush-trimming machine, his third for a car ventilator. Like other inventors and manufacturers, he turned his attention during the Civil War to ordnance and armor-plates, and this interest remained with him all his life, one of his latest patents being an improvement in ordnance. He patented an ordnance projector and a mould for casting gun-barrels, and spent much time in designing an "armoured fighting craft with steam controlled steering gear and the vitals protected by coal bunkers" with a "screw at the bow and stern so that the vessel might be propelled in either direction or turned almost in the center" (Leonard, p. 872). After the war Babbitt became absorbed in the steam-engine. He was granted six patents for the use of steam, and eight for new types of steam-boilers. In the same field he patented an automatic boiler feeder, an apparatus for cleaning a steam-generator, a rotary engine, and a balance-valve. He also experimented on gas-engines. In his later life he became interested in the use and control of air, inventing an air-pump, an air compressor, wind motors, pneumatic propulsion of various types, and air-blasts for forges. He likewise turned his attention to new methods for steering and propelling vessels, for which he obtained several patents. In 1882 he patented a plan for an elevated railroad structure over the Erie Canal, upon which engines could draw the canal boats.

Unlike many inventive geniuses, Babbitt possessed an interesting personality. With curly hair, broad face, large features, and ready smile,

he left an impression of high intelligence and a capacity for human enjoyment and friendship. A close friend of P. T. Barnum, he has often been compared with him as an advertising genius. He was one of the first to advertise by giving his products away, and to adopt the custom of advertising on stage curtains. He also knew how to obtain much free advertising; his six immense kettles for boiling soap, with an aggregate capacity of 3,500,000 pounds and requiring $216,000 worth of materials to fill them, were long one of the sights of New York. Babbitt was the typical ingenious Yankee carried to the *n*th degree—a jack of all trades and a master of most. He was married to Rebecca McDuffie, by whom he had two daughters.

[W. B. Browne, *The Babbitt Family Hist., 1643–1900* (1912); J. W. Leonard, *Hist. of the City of New York 1609–1909* (1910), pp. 869–72; *N.Y. Tribune* and *N.Y. Times*, Oct. 21, 1889.]

H. U. F.

BABBITT, ISAAC (July 26, 1799–May 26, 1862), inventor, son of Zeba and Bathsheba (Luscombe) Babbitt, was descended from Edward Bobet, who was the founder of the Babbitt family in America and who joined the Plymouth colony in 1643. Babbitt's branch of the family settled in Taunton, Mass., where he was born. He had very little schooling but by the time he was twenty-four years old he was a full-fledged goldsmith. About this time britannia ware was being imported into the United States from England, so Babbitt with his knowledge of alloys began experimenting with the idea of manufacturing britannia ware to compete with the imported metal. His first products were marketed in 1824 and were the first of the kind produced in the United States. After satisfying himself that he could make an alloy and cast it, he entered into partnership with a friend, William Crossman. They made and sold on a small scale such articles as inkstands, cups, and shaving-boxes, and received awards from numerous exhibitions for their products. In 1827 they had a brick factory built in Taunton, and two apprentices, Henry G. Reed and Charles Barton, were employed. Successful competition with imported britannia ware was apparently short-lived, for in a few years Babbitt and Crossman sold their holdings to their apprentices. The latter continued the manufacture of britannia ware, later substituting silverware, and Reed & Barton silver plate has been made and sold continuously since that time.

Following this venture, Babbitt went to Boston in 1834 and obtained employment as superintendent of the South Boston Iron Works, sometimes known as Alger's Foundry and Ordnance Works. Here he succeeded in making the first brass cannon ever cast in the United States. It was also while with this company that Babbitt invented a journal-box and received United States patent No. 1,252 for it on July 17, 1839. The specifications for this patent contained an incidental suggestion that a good lining for the box to serve as the bearing surface for a journal or an axle could be had by melting up fifty parts of tin, five of antimony, and one of copper. This alloy was found subsequently to be so satisfactory and was used so extensively that Babbitt's name became and has continued to be associated with it. The popularity and great utility of this alloy so overshadowed the journal-box invention that the latter was all but forgotten and there developed the general popular belief that Babbitt had invented a bearing-metal, something that was never in his mind. On May 15, 1840, he received British patent No. 9,724 for his journal-box, and in 1847 the idea was patented in Russia. Probably his largest award for the invention was that of $20,000, granted by Congress in 1842. The Secretary of the Navy in that year made a tentative agreement with Babbitt to purchase for $20,000 the rights to use his patented journal-box and "anti-attrition" metal in the United States navy. The agreement, together with letters of recommendation as to the value of the idea, including one from the prominent engineer, John Ericsson, was presented to Congress by Secretary Upshur during the third session of the Twenty-seventh Congress, and appears in *House Executive Document No. 163.* Just how long Babbitt continued with the Alger Foundry in the manufacture of journal-boxes is not known. Toward the close of his career he became associated with a relative, B. T. Babbitt [*q.v.*] in the manufacture of soap. He was twice married: first to Sally Leonard, who gave birth to five children who all died in infancy and who herself died nine years after marriage; and second, to Eliza Barney, who bore him three daughters and a son. Overwork and the overstraining of an unusual brain eventually necessitated his commitment to the McLean Asylum, at Somerville, Mass., where he died in his sixty-third year.

[Wm. Bradford Browne, *The Babbitt Family Hist., 1643–1900* (1912); Edward W. Byrn, *Progress of Invention in the Nineteenth Cent.* (1900); *U. S. Pat. Office Recs.*]

C. W. M.

BABCOCK, GEORGE HERMAN (June 17, 1832–Dec. 16, 1893), engineer, inventor, was the son of Asher M. and Mary E. (Stillman) Babcock. He came by his mechanical aptitude naturally from both sides of the family, his father being a well-known mechanic and inventor,

and his mother coming from a family of mechanics. He was born at Unadilla Forks near Otsego, N. Y., but moved to Westerly, R. I., when he was twelve. He there became the friend of his future partner, Stephen Wilcox. He did not at once take up engineering but devoted himself to daguerreotypy and newspaper work, which last in connection with job printing was his vocation until 1854. Then followed the invention, with his father, of the first polychromatic printing-press, which was ahead of its time, and of a job printing-press which was commercially successful and is still manufactured. In 1860, Babcock moved to Brooklyn, N. Y., where he was engaged for several years in the office of T. D. Stetson, patent solicitor. In the evenings he gave instruction in drawing at Cooper Institute, N. Y. He was employed for a time at the Mystic Iron Works and then became chief draftsman of the Hope Iron Works at Providence, R. I. Here he fell in again with Wilcox, and they invented and brought out the Babcock and Wilcox steam-engine, one of the early automatic cut-off engines of excellent design and much utility. It was manufactured in Providence and Baltimore until the expiration of the early Corliss patents flooded the market with cheap engines with which the Babcock and Wilcox engine could not compete in price. During this association at Providence, the two inventors formed a partnership and secured a patent for a boiler. Wilcox had patented a safety water-tube boiler in 1856, and the joint patent of 1867 is based, in principle, on the earlier one. The primary idea of the boiler was the ability to withstand high pressures and safety against disastrous explosion, which made possible a far more powerful machine than had previously been used. In 1868 the partners moved to New York to carry on the manufacture of the boiler. They had other manufacturing interests also, but by 1878 the boiler business took all their time, and in 1881 the firm was incorporated, with Babcock as president. He appears to have devoted himself mainly to the exploitation of the merits of the boiler by lectures at technical institutes and colleges, attendance at technical societies, and the business end of affairs, Wilcox giving his special attention to design, invention, manufacture, and experiment. The boilers were built, at first, at Elizabethport, N. J., and later at the specially designed plant at Bayonne, N. J.

Babcock was a devoutly religious man, a member of the Seventh-Day Baptists, to whose interests he devoted much of his time and means. He was president of the board of trustees of Alfred University, to which he contributed liberally during his lifetime and by bequest. He was a resident for many years of Plainfield, N. J., and was active in civic affairs, being president of the Board of Education and of the Public Library. He was president of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers for 1887, and was a constant contributor to its proceedings. His versatility is shown by his acquiring a working acquaintance with French when he was nearly sixty. He was a man of commanding presence and attractive personality, a good friend and a considerate employer. He was married four times.

[*Trans. Am. Soc. Mech. Engineers*, vol. XV (1894); obituaries in *N.Y. Tribune*, *N.Y. Herald*, Dec. 18, 1893; additional information from relatives.] W. M. M.

BABCOCK, JAMES FRANCIS (Feb. 23, 1844–July 19, 1897), chemist, born in Boston, was the son of Archibald D. and Fannie (Richards) Babcock, and a direct descendant of early Puritan settlers (Stephen Babcock, *Babcock Genealogy*, 1903, p. 512). He attended the English High School and was a student in the Lawrence Scientific School at Harvard in 1860–61. He then established a private office and laboratory in his native city. He became so well known as a chemical analyst and investigator that he was frequently called upon for expert testimony in criminal cases, and was often consulted in food investigations and patent suits. Later (1869–74) he served as professor of medical chemistry in the Massachusetts College of Pharmacy; then for six years in a similar position at Boston University. During this latter period his work on alcoholic beverages was begun and it was this work as state assayer of liquors (1875–85), together with his later attention to the milk problem of Boston, which made him celebrated as a chemist. Babcock is credited with having brought about the introduction into the Massachusetts Statutes of the "three per cent limit" as defining an intoxicating liquor. As city inspector of milk he established rigid enforcement of the laws against the adulteration of milk and other dairy products; his methods finding favor in other cities. That he possessed some versatility is shown by the fact that he was a skilful analyst, a recognized investigator, a public lecturer, and the inventor of the Babcock fire-extinguisher. With the exception of official reports concerning pure foods and sanitation he wrote only an article, "Blood Stains," which appeared in Hamilton's *Legal Medicine*, and a brochure entitled *Laboratory Talks on Infant Foods* (1896). His interest in medicines and drugs appears to have been continuous, for in later life (1894) we find him president of the

Druggists' Association of Boston. He was twice married: on Mar. 28, 1869, to Mary P. Crosby of Boston, who died in 1890; and on Aug 24, 1892, to Marion B. Alden, also of Boston.

[*Hist. Reg. Boston Univ.* (1891), p. 25; *Am. Druggist and Pharmaceut. Rec.*, Aug. 10, 1897, p. 86; *Boston Morning Jour.*, July 21, 1897.] H. C.

BABCOCK, JAMES WOODS (Aug. 11, 1856–Mar. 3, 1922), psychiatrist, was born in Chester, S. C., the son of Dr. Sidney E. Babcock and Margaret (Woods) Babcock. His father was a surgeon in the Confederate army and a practitioner of medicine in Chester before and after the Civil War. Babcock was educated at Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., and Harvard College, where he was graduated in 1882. Four years later he received his M.D. degree from the Harvard Medical School. After his graduation he was appointed assistant physician to the McLean Hospital, then located in Somerville, Mass., where he remained from 1887 to 1891. In the latter year he accepted the superintendency of the State Lunatic Asylum, Columbia, S. C., a position which he held until 1914. He was professor of mental diseases at the South Carolina Medical College from 1915 until his death. During his residence in the South Carolina State Hospital for the Insane, as it was later called, Babcock did most of his important work. He not only made his institution one of the best in the country, but also investigated or stimulated investigation in many important problems of psychiatry and of the care of the insane. In 1894, in a timely paper, he called attention to the prevalence of tuberculosis in hospitals for the insane and outlined a sound scheme for prevention of this disease (*American Journal of Insanity*, 1894–95, LI, 182). The next year he made a plea, which had far-reaching effects, for the better care of the colored insane (*Alienist and Neurologist*, 1895, XVI, 423). His most important work, however, was with pellagra. Patients with pellagra were observed at his hospital in 1907, and the next year Babcock and others presented to the South Carolina State Board of Health a report on nine cases and a careful review of the literature of the subject, the first comprehensive account of the disease to be published in this country (*Journal of the South Carolina Medical Association*, 1908, IV, 64). In 1910, he collaborated with Dr. C. H. Lavinder in a translation into English of Dr. A. Marie's *La Pellagre*, a book which was used extensively in this country and, combined with Lavinder's later reports for the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, served to establish the disease here as a clinical entity. Babcock founded the National Association for the Study of Pellagra and through this organization vigorously conducted a fight against this malady, especially in the southern states.

In 1892 he married Katharine Guion of Lincolnton, N. C., a graduate of the Massachusetts General Hospital Training School for Nurses, by whom he had three daughters. He was a great lover of literature and old books. In addition, he made a remarkable collection of antique furniture, which was much admired by his numerous friends from both the North and the South, who often enjoyed the hospitality of his home. He died Mar. 3, 1922, of heart disease.

[The principal sources of information about Babcock's life are to be found in the obit. notices in the *Jour. S. C. Medic. Ass.* (1922), XVIII, 338 (by J. H. Taylor), and the *Am. Jour. of Psychiat.*, 1921–22, I, 709 (by Herbert B. Howard). An important estimation of the value of his work on pellagra appeared in the *Rivista Pellagrologica Italiana*, Apr. 1922; see also the *Trans. Nat. Ass. for the Study of Pellagra*, 1909 and 1912.] H. R. V.

BABCOCK, JOSEPH WEEKS (Mar. 6, 1850–Apr. 27, 1909), congressman, was the grandson of Joseph Weeks of Massachusetts, who migrated to Vermont, sat for that state in the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth Congresses, and became the father of Mahala Weeks, who married Ebenezer Wright Babcock. Joseph was born in Swanton, Vt., but at the age of five he was taken to Iowa, where his education was irregular. He was successful in business. After 1872 he was continuously interested in lumber, as employee, partner, and owner; first, at Dubuque, Ia., and later at Necedah, Wis., where the rich forests of the upper valley of the Wisconsin River were yielding great rewards to the pioneer lumbermen. In 1896 his firm is said to have cut 25,000,000 feet of lumber. He served for two terms in the Wisconsin Assembly, during the political upset of 1890, which broke the old Republican control of the state. In the new alignment for the election of 1892 (for the Republicans had carried only one of the nine congressional districts of the state in 1890), Babcock secured nomination and election to Congress from the third Wisconsin district; and in Congress, among the thin ranks of the Republican minority, he took a prominent position from the day of his entrance. He was assigned to the Committee on the District of Columbia, becoming its chairman after the Republican victory of 1894, and remaining throughout his service a leader in matters affecting the government of the National Capital. He was named as the Wisconsin member of the Republican Congressional Campaign Committee when it organized in the autumn of 1893. The resignation of its chairman in the following spring brought him into unexpected prominence as acting chairman,

and then as chairman of the committee. He had full charge of the campaign of the Republican party in 1894, showing himself to be adroit and patient, with a head for detail. He gained the confidence of his associates and retained the chairmanship through five ensuing campaigns. Under his direction the control of Congress was taken from the Democratic party, and thereafter it was a question only of the size of the Republican majority. In his state relationships he was contestant for the United States Senate, to succeed John L. Mitchell, but was defeated by a Republican rival, Joseph V. Quarles. He was induced by this defeat to give his support to Robert M. La Follette, who was then fighting the regular organization of the Republican party, and who was elected governor in 1900. But he broke with La Follette before the next election in 1902, and with the latter ascendant had difficulty in securing renomination in 1902 and 1904. In 1906, at the first test of the new primary election law, he won his eighth consecutive nomination; but he was defeated in the election by a Democrat to whom the La Follette progressives gave many votes. In 1900 and 1901 Babcock was greatly alarmed by the big business mergers, and he advocated a repeal of the protective duties upon steel products a year before the so-called Iowa Idea was launched. After his defeat in 1906 he removed his residence further north in Wisconsin, into Vilas County; and thereafter he divided his time between his new home and Washington, where he died in 1909.

[The best sketches of his life are his obituary in the *Milwaukee Sentinel*, Apr. 28, 1909, and an article by Bessie A. Safford in *The Vermonter*, Mar. 1902.]

F.L.P—n.

BABCOCK, MALTBIE DAVENPORT (Aug. 3, 1858–May 18, 1901), Presbyterian clergyman, author, was born in Syracuse, N. Y. He was of good stock, had remarkably varied gifts, and was afforded ample opportunity to develop them. His father, Henry Babcock, traced his descent from James Babcock, an Englishman who settled in Portsmouth, R. I., in 1642, and his mother, Emily Maria Maltbie, was the daughter of Rev. Ebenezer Davenport Maltbie, and the grand-daughter of Henry Davis, second president of Hamilton College. He prepared for college in the public schools, his character, varied talents, and athletic prowess early winning him popularity and leadership. Graduating from Syracuse University in 1879, he at once entered Auburn Theological Seminary, where he finished his course in 1882. At college he took high rank as a student, was leader of the glee club, director of the orchestra, and president of the baseball team. His interest in sports lasted throughout his life; he loved the out-door world, and was an enthusiastic fisherman. Had he chosen, he could have had a successful career as a musician, for he was a singer of more than ordinary ability, and a proficient player of several instruments, among them the organ, for which he composed a number of works of merit. He wrote some excellent poetry, mostly of a religious nature, could impersonate with marked success, was clever at drawing, and had a knack with tools. Yet despite his versatility and the ease with which he seemed to do whatever he attempted, he was industrious and methodical in the extreme.

As soon as he had completed his theological training, he was called to the First Presbyterian Church of Lockport, one of the most important churches in western New York. Here he was ordained by the Presbytery of Niagara, July 13, 1882. On Oct. 4, following, he was married to Katherine Eliot Tallman, daughter of Judge John P. H. Tallman of Poughkeepsie. After five years' ministry in Lockport he became pastor of the Brown Memorial Church, Baltimore, where he soon became greatly beloved for his unselfish service to all classes, and achieved a reputation as a preacher which travelled far. When in 1899 he resigned his charge to become the successor of Dr. Henry van Dyke at the Brick Presbyterian Church of New York, it was in the face of a vigorous protest from the whole city of Baltimore. His success in New York was immediate, the church was filled to the doors and even the steps of the pulpit covered with hearers. Unfortunately his ministry here was brief. On a trip to the Holy Land in 1901 he was stricken with Mediterranean fever at Naples and taken to the International Hospital there. Some fifteen years before, in Lockport, he had suffered for six months from acute melancholia. A second attack now visited him, during which, while his nurse was out of the room, he cut the arteries of his wrists and drank corrosive sublimate.

Maltbie Babcock was not a theologian, or even a deep thinker. His reasoning frequently will not stand the test of rigid logic. Toward the Bible and doctrine his attitude was not critical, but he presented spiritual and ethical truths with freshness and effect. He had an agile mind, a wide range of information, dramatic ability, fluency of speech, and a magnetic personality. His physical characteristics contributed to his power. He was tall, broad-shouldered, sinewy, and graceful in form and gesture, with a face remarkably expressive of the emotions, and a voice vibrant and sympathetic. His sermons were full of original illustrations, touches of humor, which were never

in bad taste, and pungent epigrams. His main interest was in life and the needs and possibilities of men and women and in an extraordinary degree he was able to inspire his hearers with hope, courage, and the will to overcome. In this power, and as much, perhaps, in his own personal goodness, lay the secret of his success.

Babcock himself published nothing, but after his death there appeared, *Thoughts for Everyday Living from the Spoken and Written Words of Maltbie Davenport Babcock* (containing collection of poems), edited by Katherine Tallman Babcock and Mary R. Sanford (1901); *Three Whys and Their Answer* (1901); *Letters from Egypt and Palestine* (1902); *The Success of Defeat* (1905); *Fragments that Remain,* selections from sermons, reported and arranged by Jessie B. Goetschius (1907); *The Joy of Work,* reprinted chapters from *Fragments that Remain* (1910).

[Charles E. Robinson, *Maltbie Davenport Babcock* (1904); John T. Stone, *Footsteps in a Parish* (1908); *N. Y. Times,* May 19, 20, 1901; *Baltimore Sun,* May 20, 21, 1901.]

H. E. S.

BABCOCK, ORVILLE E. (Dec. 25, 1835–June 2, 1884), engineer, soldier, the son of Elias Babcock, Jr., and Clara Olmstead, was born at Franklin, Vt., a small town on the Canadian border close to Lake Champlain. His military career began in 1861 with his graduation from West Point and his assignment to the engineer corps as a second-lieutenant. At the opening of the Civil War he assisted in organizing and instructing a battalion of engineers, in which he commanded a company. On June 13, 1861, he was ordered to the headquarters of the Department of Pennsylvania, in July to the Department of the Shenandoah, and in November to the Army of the Potomac. In 1862 Gen. W. B. Franklin, then in charge of the left grand division of the Army of the Potomac, placed Babcock on his staff. In January 1864, Babcock was made acting chief engineer of the Department of the Ohio, with headquarters at Knoxville, Tenn., to have entire charge of positions, defenses, bridges, and so forth. Shortly afterward he was attached to Grant's staff as an aide-de-camp. During his advance in rank from the position of a second-lieutenant in 1861 to that of a brigadier-general by brevet in 1865, Babcock apparently enjoyed the enthusiastic approval of his superiors. In 1861, Gen. J. G. Barnard mentioned his "great gallantry"; Gen. Patterson referred to his "efficient" work; and Gen. McClellan in 1862 noted that his work was "splendidly" done and urged his promotion. Grant used Babcock in a wide variety of

circumstances to carry orders and counsel, to gather information, and to survey positions. Thus in 1864 he sent Babcock to observe Sherman's army and then to Secretary Stanton to convey news and information that might be useful. The tenacity with which Grant later shielded his staff officer against attacks becomes understandable in the light of these experiences in the field, as when Grant sent Babcock—"in whom I have great confidence"—to Burnside during the operations about Spottsylvania Court House, with instructions to give every assistance in his power. On June 6, 1865, Grant recommended promotion "for meritorious services in the defense of Knoxville, Tenn., and especially for gallant conduct in the defense of Fort Sanders, . . . gallant conduct in the battle of the Wilderness, . . . gallant conduct in the battles in front of Petersburg, and in the pursuit and capture of the Army of Northern Virginia."

Just after the close of the war, on Nov. 8, 1866, Babcock was married in Galena, Ill., to Annie Eliza Campbell. For several years he was private secretary to President Grant, and superintendent of buildings and grounds in the city of Washington. While holding the former office he visited Santo Domingo (1869) in the interest of Grant's attempt to annex the island. At this time Babcock became associated with a group of men in the Internal Revenue Service who were defrauding the government of great sums of money. In particular, he was friendly with John McDonald, supervisor of Internal Revenue at St. Louis, known to be one of the leaders of the "Whisky Ring," and had received costly presents from McDonald. On Dec. 9, 1875, the grand jury at St. Louis returned a true bill against Babcock "for conspiracy to defraud the revenue." Grant found it impossible to believe that his old army friend and aide had been guilty of such practises. He accordingly volunteered a deposition to the effect that he knew of nothing suggesting guilt on Babcock's part, and that he believed his secretary innocent. Subsequently, in February 1876, the court returned a verdict of not guilty, and Babcock returned to his duties at the White House for a short time, but soon left permanently. He retired to private life and was drowned at Mosquito Inlet, Fla., on June 2, 1884.

[A sketch appears in the *Babcock Genealogy* (1903), pt. 2. His mil. career may be followed in the *Official Records* (1880–1901). On the Whisky Ring, see *House Misc. Docs.,* 44 Cong., 1 Sess., no. 186 (1876). See also works on the period of Civil War and Reconstruction, by James F. Rhodes, W. A. Dunning, and E. P. Oberholtzer; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed. 1891), II, 771; *Times-Union* (Jacksonville, Fla.), June 4, 1884; and the several biographies of Grant, esp. that by L. A. Coolidge (1917).]

C. R. L.

BABCOCK, WASHINGTON IRVING (Sept. 26, 1858–Aug. 7, 1917), naval architect, was born at Stonington, Conn., the son of Capt. David S. and Charlotte (Noyes) Babcock. When he was seven, his parents moved to Brooklyn, where in 1876 he graduated from the Polytechnic Institute. He studied for two years in Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, and on graduation, in 1878, secured a position with the Morgan Iron Works, New York. A year later he joined the staff of the Tehuantepec Interocean Railroad Company. More valuable than this experience was the training which he received at the Delaware Iron Shipbuilding and Engine Works, Chester, Pa., during 1880–85. In the latter year he became assistant superintendent of the Providence and Stonington Steamship Company and, in 1887, superintendent of the Union Drydock Company, Buffalo. He then turned promoter. The result was the organization, in 1889, of the Chicago Shipbuilding Company, of which he became manager and later president. When it was absorbed by the American Shipbuilding Company in 1900, he began practise as a naval architect in New York, forming a partnership with Henry Penton in 1907.

Fair-haired and well-proportioned, with an easy manner and a pleasant disposition, he differed little in appearance or address from any prosperous manufacturer. Nevertheless, he made notable advances in naval design and construction. Incited by recurrent difficulties with the riveters in the yards at Chicago, he invented a mechanism which made it possible to employ pneumatic tools. He also introduced the mould system of construction, which has since become universal. His most important innovations, however, were connected with lake carriers. Since the eight steel vessels on the St. Lawrence route in 1886 were Clyde-built and unsuited for inland traffic, he constructed the *Owego,* a typical freighter, in 1887, and in 1895 designed and launched the first lake vessel 400 feet over all. Intended for the bulk trade, his *Victory,* which was one of the earliest ships laid down on the channel system, was arranged so that the entire space between the living quarters and the engine rooms, fore and aft, was reserved for cargo. Babcock was also a pioneer in the development of the passenger type represented by the *Manitou.* He was the author of various technical papers on naval architecture. He died at his home in New York, Aug. 7, 1917.

[The only sketch of Babcock is that in Henry B. Nason, *Biog. Rec. Officers and Grads. Rensselaer Polytechnic Inst.* (1887). His most notable achievements, however, are treated in his papers in the *Trans. Soc. Naval Architects and Marine Engineers,* vols. VI, pp. 29–35, VII, pp. 173–82, XIII, pp. 187–94. An obituary appeared in vol. XXV, pp. 341–43.] R. P. Ba—r.

BACHE, ALEXANDER DALLAS (July 19, 1806–Feb. 17, 1867), physicist, was the great-grandson of Benjamin Franklin, and the grandson of Richard Bache, Franklin's successor as postmaster general from 1776 to 1782; on his mother's side he was the grandson of Alexander James Dallas, secretary of the treasury in President Madison's cabinet. His grandmother, Sarah (Franklin) Bache, was the "Sally" Bache, so well known for her ministrations to the soldiers during the Revolution. He was born in Philadelphia, the oldest child of Richard and Sophia (Dallas) Bache. Having completed his studies in a classical school, he was permitted, because of unusual mental ability, to enter the United States Military Academy at the early age of fifteen years. He graduated at the age of nineteen with highest honors and with the rare record of not having received a single mark of demerit during his entire course. Following his graduation he served three years, first as assistant professor in the Academy and then as lieutenant of engineers in the construction of Fort Adams, Newport, R. I. On Sept. 16, 1828, he was appointed professor of natural philosophy and chemistry at the University of Pennsylvania, and resigned from the army. About this time he married Nancy Clarke Fowler of Newport, who proved a helpful companion throughout their married life. In Philadelphia he quickly made his influence felt in the newly-established Franklin Institute, the chief research work of which was placed in his charge, and in the American Philosophical Society, founded in 1727 by his great-grandfather. On his thirtieth birthday he became the first president of Girard College and was sent abroad for two years to study educational institutions. On his return he prepared a voluminous report on *Education in Europe,* published in 1839, which did much to improve educational methods in this country. Owing to delay in opening the college, he spent three years in reorganizing the public schools of Philadelphia so successfully that his system became a model for other cities. The opening of Girard College being still further delayed, Bache resumed in 1842 his former professorship in the University of Pennsylvania, but the following year, on Dec. 12, 1843, as the result of recommendations of leading learned societies and other influence, he became superintendent of the United States Coast Survey, which position he held until his death. He was eminently well-fitted to build on the foundation laid by Hassler, the first superintendent, and to impress Congress with the needs of the Sur-

vey; with added funds he expanded its operations, and by his own enthusiasm and achievements in devising instruments and methods, he stimulated the efforts of his staff. He was also a member of the Lighthouse Board and superintendent of weights and measures, a subject in which he had long been interested.

Throughout his career, in spite of interruptions and the cares of administrative office, Bache kept up his interest in scientific research and a long list of papers and reports attests his many-sided activities. Stimulated by the work of the two famous German magneticians, Gauss and Weber, he became interested in terrestrial magnetism and in 1830 began making observations in a small building attached to his house. From time to time during the rest of his life he continued to make magnetic observations, both at home and abroad; his published results contributed effectively to the elucidation of fundamental facts. Chiefly through his instrumentality the first magnetic observatory in this country was established at Girard College; it was in operation from 1840 to 1845, following a program of work conforming to that of about thirty similar institutions in different parts of the globe. In the summers of 1840–43, he made a detailed magnetic survey of Pennsylvania and adjacent parts. Later he saw to it that magnetic work was made an important part of the regular operations of the Coast Survey. In 1846 he was made regent of the Smithsonian Institution. In the founding of the National Academy of Sciences, of which he was the first president, he took a leading part, and he bequeathed to it $42,000 for research. From learned institutions at home and abroad he received many honors and marks of distinction. During the Civil War he served his country as adviser to the President and his war secretaries and was vice-president of the Sanitary Commission. He also planned the defenses of Philadelphia. In appearance we are told that he was of medium height and had a particularly pleasing expression; his portrait shows a kind, intellectual face, that of a man not lacking in a sense of humor. He wore his waving hair rather long and had a full, somewhat pointed beard.

["Address in Commemoration of Alexander Dallas Bache," by B. A. Gould, *Proc. Am. Ass. for Advancement of Sci.* (1869), pp. 1–47, to which a bibliography is appended, pp. 48–56; "Eulogy on Prof. Alexander Dallas Bache," by Prof. Joseph Henry, *Smithsonian Institution Report* for 1870, pp. 91–116, and in *Nat. Acad. Sci., Biog. Memoirs,* vol. I (1877), pp. 181–212, also containing bibliography; *Coast Survey Reports,* 1844–66; *Centennial Celebration U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey,* Washington, D. C., 1916.] L. A. B.

BACHE, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN (Aug. 12, 1769–Sept. 10, 1798), one of the most prominent journalists in the early history of the Democratic-Republican party, was born at Philadelphia. His mother, Sarah Bache, was the only daughter of Benjamin Franklin; his father, Richard Bache, was a Whig merchant. As a boy he accompanied Franklin to Europe, studied in France and Geneva, and, after his return, in the college at Philadelphia. In Paris he learned the rudiments of his trade in the printing-house of Didot.

Bache's career began in 1790 with the founding of the Philadelphia *General Advertiser,* better known later under the name the *Aurora.* He announced the plan of the journal on Oct. 4 of that year, and put as a heading his motto, "Truth, Decency, Utility." Political parties were taking shape during Washington's first term, and each side felt the need of an organ. The Federalists had Fenno's *United States Gazette,* and the mouthpiece of the Republicans was the *National Gazette,* edited by Philip Freneau. When the latter periodical suspended, because of the epidemic of yellow fever, the *Aurora* succeeded to its influence. Among the subscribers at one time were Jefferson and the President himself. It was a newspaper quite catholic in its scope in some respects; it contained, for those days, extended accounts of European affairs, and published quite fully the proceedings of Congress and papers by the Executive. But its notorious feature was the virulent personal abuse for which that decade of journalism was famous. Washington wrote, "The publications in Freneau's and Bache's papers are outrages on common decency" (*Writings,* edited by Jared Sparks, X, 359). Bache, nicknamed "Lightning-Rod Junior," usually maintained the anonymous editorial attitude. Often the columns were open to contributors, as when a "Calm Observer" charged that the President had overdrawn his salary and was a common defaulter. Other examples of the paper's treatment of Washington are found in the issues of 1796, when the accusation was made that he had violated the Constitution, when a burlesque poem was printed for his birthday, and when the *Aurora* reprinted forged letters of Washington, originally issued by the British in 1776.

In the summer of 1795 there was knowledge in the United States that Jay had signed a treaty with England, but the details were unknown beyond the circle of the President and Senate. Before Washington made public the text of the treaty, Senator Mason of Virginia sent an advance copy to Bache. The latter printed the substance in the *Aurora* of June 29, and published the full treaty in pamphlet form on July 1. The

excitement was intense; as the *Aurora* said on July 4, "The fountains of the great deep are broken up." Another instance of Bache's actions was at the time of the election, near the close of 1796, when he opened his columns to the French minister Adet. This diplomatist sent four notes to Pickering, secretary of state, and copies of them simultaneously to the *Aurora;* they contained a decree of the Directory, an address to the French in America, and sentimental appeals. Bache's final utterance concerning the administration was his abusive "valedictory," when Washington retired from office in March 1797: "If ever there was a period for rejoicing, this is the moment—every heart in unison with the freedom and happiness of the people, ought to beat high with exultation that the name of *Washington* from this day ceases to give a currency to political iniquity, and to legalize corruption."

The *Aurora's* early commendation of President Adams soon changed to severe attacks. The bitterness at that time was intense, as is shown by the fact that Bache on a visit to the shipyard in Philadelphia was beaten by Humphreys, the son of the builder of the frigate *United States;* this act, it was alleged, was in return for newspaper abuse. The Federalists, in turn, charged that the editor was in the pay of the Directory, a charge which Bache denied. The same year 1798 was that of the XYZ sensation, and of the Sedition Act. Jefferson had noted in a letter to Madison dated Apr. 26 that the "*Aurora* was particularly named" in preparing the Sedition bill. On June 26 Bache was arrested on the charge of libeling the President and Executive, but was released on parole. He had just printed, June 16, Talleyrand's note to the United States Commissioners, and, June 20–23, their reply. The circulation of his journal fell off during the XYZ excitement, and his own activities were nearly over. He fell a victim to yellow fever in Philadelphia, Sept. 10, 1798. On Nov. 17, 1791, he had married Margaret Hartman Markoe, of a Danish family. She carried on the paper after his death and married Duane, who had been associate editor.

[See the files of the *Aurora* 1794–98; *Remarks Occasioned by the Late Conduct of Mr. Washington* (1797); *Truth Will Out* (1798), a pamphlet giving Bache's version of the circumstances in the issuing of the Talleyrand letter; J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884); *The Franklin Ancestry and Descendants in the Col. Louis Bache Line to 1889* (1889); *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, VIII, 374; *Writings of George Washington* (ed. by Jared Sparks, 1836), X, 359, XI, 183.] E.K.A.

BACHE, FRANKLIN (Oct. 25, 1792–Mar. 19, 1864), teacher, chemist, physician, was the great-grandson of Benjamin Franklin. His parents were Benjamin Franklin Bache and Margaret (Markoe) Bache. He was born in Philadelphia. In 1810 he received the degree of A.B. from the University of Pennsylvania, in 1814 the degree of M.D. In 1811 he published in the Philadelphia *Aurora* (established by his father) a contribution on the composition of hydrochloric acid in which he contended that chlorine is simple and by its union with hydrogen gives hydrochloric acid. He contributed three excellent papers to the *Memoirs of the Columbian Chemical Society* (1813), bearing the titles, "An Inquiry into what circumstance will warrant us justly to reckon a substance a principle of a common property of any set of bodies"; "An Inquiry whether M. Berthollet was warranted, from certain experiments, in framing the Law of Chemical Affinity, 'that it is directly proportional to the quantity of Matter' "; "Thoughts on the Expediency of changing parts of the chemical nomenclature." These papers were valuable contributions to the development of chemical theory in America.

The War of 1812 temporarily interrupted his scientific activities. He enlisted as an assistant-surgeon in the army in 1813, was promoted to surgeon in 1814, and resigned in 1816. In 1819 there appeared Bache's *System of Chemistry for the Use of Students in Medicine.* In 1821, with Robert Hare [*q.v.*], he edited an edition of Andrew Ure's *Dictionary of Chemistry,* in 1823 he prepared a supplementary volume to William Henry's *Elements of Experimental Chemistry,* and in 1825 he published an anonymous edition of James Cutbush's *System of Pyrotechny,* while during 1826–31 he conducted the *North American Medical and Surgical Journal.* He was professor of chemistry in the Franklin Institute from 1826 to 1832, and in 1830 revised the *Pharmacopœia of the United States;* he also at this time began his excellent *Dispensatory of the United States of America,* which passed through eleven editions during his life. He was made Fellow of the College of Physicians, Philadelphia, 1829, and acted as its vice-president, 1855–64. From 1831 to 1841 he was professor of chemistry in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy and Science. In 1836 he edited the third edition of Robert Hare's *Compendium of the Course of Chemical Instruction in the Medical Department of the University of Pennsylvania,* and between 1819 and 1841 brought out four American editions of Edward Turner's *Elements of Chemistry.*

In 1841 he assumed the professorship of chemistry in Jefferson Medical College, delivering a notable introductory lecture whose tenor is indicated by the lines: "But here, gentlemen, let me stop to inquire is chemistry in its applications to

medicine and pharmacy worthy of your regard? This is an important preliminary question; for if you follow the ensuing course under the erroneous impression that you can be reputable physicians without being chemists your attention will flag." Similar introductory addresses were delivered by him in 1843, in 1844, in 1848, in 1849, and in 1852. For eighteen years he was secretary of the American Philosophical Society, vice-president for ten years, and finally president (1853–55). In 1818 he had married Aglae Dabadie, who entered heartily into her husband's literary and scientific pursuits, but died in 1835, leaving him "as her best legacy, a young family of sons and daughters to give exercise to his affections and comfort to his declining years." He was regarded by his colleagues as a man of excellent reason and judgment, clear in thought and correct in conclusion; in mental action, as in bodily movements, slow and deliberate; a delightful companion because of his faculty of humor. His writings and teachings were marked by simplicity, clearness, and accuracy.

[J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884); G. B. Wood, *Biog. Memoir of Franklin Bache* (1865); Edgar F. Smith, *Franklin Bache, Chemist* (1922).]

E.F.S.

BACHE, RICHARD (1737–July 29, 1811), a merchant of New York City, was born in Settle in the West Riding of Yorkshire, England. According to William B. Bache, *The Franklin Ancestry and Descendants in the Col. Louis Bache Line* (1889), the date of birth was Feb. 23; according to Oscar E. Schmidt, *Smaller New York and Family Reminiscences* (1899), and Thomas E Satterthwaite, *Biographical and Historical Sketches* (1923), it was Sept. 12. The family traced its origin to the Middle Ages, one tradition carrying it back to the Norman Conquest. The name was originally Bêche, or de la Bêche (beech), and—according to one statement—the anglicized pronunciation was *Beech*. Richard was a younger brother of Theophylact Bache [*q.v.*]. Their parents were William and Mary (Blyckenden) Bache. In 1765 Richard followed his brother to New York, becoming his business partner. He removed to Philadelphia, made the acquaintance of Benjamin Franklin, and in 1767 married Franklin's daughter Sarah. His firm had an extensive business with foreign lands, including the West Indies and Newfoundland; in addition, Bache issued private insurance policies, as these were the years prior to the formation of regular companies of life insurance. The opening of the war, leading to a divergence of political sentiment between the brothers, caused the dissolution of their partnership, though not the severance of their personal relations. Richard Bache adhered to the Whigs; he was a member of the Committee on Non-Importation Agreements, of the Committee of Correspondence, and was on the Board of War. He succeeded his father-in-law, Franklin, as postmaster general, and remained in that office until 1782. Sarah Bache, as was natural for a daughter of Franklin, played a patriotic part during the contest; in the gloomy days of 1780 she was active in collecting money and clothing for the destitute soldiers. In later years, the family retired to their farm on the banks of the Delaware River.

[In addition to the works mentioned above, see obituary in *N. Y. Columbian*, Aug. 2, 1811, and numerous references in J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884). A number of Bache's letters are listed in the *Calendar of tha Papers of Benj. Franklin in the Lib. of the Am. Phil. Soc.* (1908).]

E.K.A.

BACHE, THEOPHYLACT (Jan. 17, 1734/35–Oct. 30, 1807), a merchant of New York City, son of William and Mary (Blyckenden) Bache, was a native of Settle in Yorkshire, England. He came to New York City in 1751, and was soon associated in business with his uncle by marriage, Paul Richard, mayor of New York from 1735 to 1739. A few years later the uncle died, and Bache inherited the business, goodwill, and £300. When his brother Richard [*q.v.*] arrived, he was taken into partnership. The business of the firm was chiefly with the West Indies and Newfoundland, and Bache was also agent for transatlantic packets. His standing in the mercantile community is shown by the fact that he was a Royal Incorporator of the Marine Society of New York in 1770, as well as by his election to the presidency of the New York Chamber of Commerce; he was chosen to that office in 1773, and later served as vice-president, 1788–92. When the Revolution began he was at first inclined toward the Whigs, but by 1776 was classed as a Loyalist, though he wrote to Philip Livingston denying that he was hostile to American rights. A. C. Flick (*Loyalism in New York*, 1901, p. 34 note) states that he belonged to the following class, "With nothing to lose and everything to gain, policy made them Loyalists." The brothers dissolved partnership, but they continued to be friendly. Theophylact Bache was cited to appear before the provincial congress, but wrote a letter declining to do so. He soon passed within the British lines, and had a narrow escape from capture. During the occupation of New York and western Long Island by the enemy, Bache resided either in the city or in Flatbush. While living in his country house, he was captured one night in 1778, members of his family were severely treated, and the house was

plundered; Bache was hurriedly taken to Morristown, N. J., but was soon exchanged. The incident does not appear to have affected his conduct, for he had a reputation for unusual humanity during the war. After its termination, he resumed business; but the times were unsettled, especially as the contests of the French Revolution and Napoleonic period disturbed American trade, and Bache, like other merchants, suffered severe losses in his last years.

Socially he was well connected, and was highly esteemed as a courteous gentleman. He was married on Oct. 16, 1760, to Ann Dorothy Barclay, daughter of Andrew Barclay and Helena Roosevelt, by whom he had fifteen children. For many years he was vestryman of Trinity Church, and his tomb is in the churchyard, next to that of Hamilton. He was governor of New York Hospital, and president of its board, and from 1788 to 1799 he was president of the St. George's Society. He died in New York City.

[See works mentioned under Richard Bache; also Lorenzo Sabine, *Biog. Sketches of Loyalists of the Am. Rev.* (1864); *Mem. Hist. of the City of N.Y.* (1893), ed. by Jas. Grant Wilson; Jos. Bucklin Bishop, *Chamber of Commerce of the State of N.Y.* (1890), comp. by Geo. Wilson.]

E. K. A.

BACHELDER, JOHN (Mar. 7, 1817–July 1, 1906), inventor, manufacturer, was born at Weare, N. H., the son of William and Mary (Bailey) Bachelder, and directly descended from the Rev. Stephen Bachiler, the non-conformist who founded the town of New Hampton, N. H. His father was variously a lumberman and a blacksmith, successful enough to afford John a common school and academic education. Bachelder taught school for three years, went to Boston, worked as an accountant for a transportation company operating on the Middlesex Canal, and shortly after formed a partnership and engaged in the same business until the completion of the railroad to Manchester caused him to suspend. In 1843 he was married to Adaline Wason. He engaged in the dry-goods business at Boston and in 1846 visited England to establish connections for the successful importing business that he organized as Bachelder, Burr & Company. In the winter of 1847 Bachelder became interested in the sewing-machine as it had been developed by Elias Howe, believing that it could be materially improved. Becoming more and more interested, he bought a small machine-shop, retired from business, and devoted his time to mastering the machinist's trade. He spent five years' time and $16,000 before achieving success, but at the end of that time (1849) had developed the continuous feed, the vertical needle, and the horizontal table, all features of the modern sewing-machine. The importance of these inventions is indicated by the statement that "the patents of Howe, Bachelder, and Wilson cover all the fundamental principles of the sewing-maine," a statement indorsed by all well-informed men within the industry. The importance of these devices is further reflected in the marked reduction in the price of sewing-machines that was made when the patents expired. From this reduction their actual value has been estimated at $100,000,000. Unfortunately he was forced to sell his patents immediately, realizing but little more than enough to pay his debts. With this experience as an inventor Bachelder turned to manufacturing and with help from friends was able to buy (1852) a cotton-factory at Lisbon, Conn., but a disastrous fire so reduced his resources that he was unable to weather the depression following the war and was forced to sell his interest in this and other mills. He served as postmaster and town treasurer at Lisbon, and was a director of the First National Bank of Norwich and a trustee of the Chelsea Savings Bank. In 1875 he went to Napa, Cal., and established a manufacturing plant only to be caught in the panic of 1877–78 and forced to retire from active business. While in Napa he became interested in library work and was trustee and president of the board of the Public Library. He wrote one book, *A. D. 2050* (1890), suggested by Bellamy's *Looking Backward*. Returning to the east, he spent his later years in Milwaukee, Wis. He died at Houghton, Mich.

[Sketch in *Boston Globe*, June 24, 1916; E. W. Byrn, *Progress of Invention in the Nineteenth Cent.* (1900); F. C. Pierce, *Batchelder, Batcheller Geneal.* (1898); F. M. Caulkins, *Hist. of Norwich, Conn.* (1866); records of Singer Manufacturing Co.; information from Bachelder's son, Mr. Chas. S. Bachelder of Napa, Cal.]

F. A. T.

BACHER, OTTO HENRY (Mar. 31, 1856–Aug. 16, 1909), etcher and illustrator, was born in Cleveland, Ohio, the son of Henry and Charlotte Bacher. He began his art studies under De Scott Evans, but in 1878, in company with Willis S. Adams and Sion L. Wenban, he went to Munich. Later he studied under Carolus Duran, Boulanger, and Lefebvre. By 1880 he was one of the group of young Americans working with Duveneck in Venice. He came also under the influence of Whistler, to whom he pays warm tribute in his *With Whistler in Venice* (1908), drawing a sympathetic picture of the famous artist making etchings and pastels from the windows of Bacher's quarters and using the younger man's press. In Venice, Duveneck and others of

the group took up monotype, painting upon a plate with burnt sienna or ivory black, and printing on Bacher's press; the product they called "Bachertype." At the first exhibition of the Royal Society of Painter Etchers, London, 1881, Bacher was represented by seventeen etchings. Late in 1883 he left Venice for America, via London and Paris; in 1885–86 he revisited London. His life thenceforth was passed in New York City and in Bronxville, where he settled in October 1896. At the Pan-American Exposition (Buffalo, 1901) he was awarded honorable mention, and at the Louisiana Purchase Exposition (St. Louis, 1904) a silver medal. He drew many illustrations, especially of still life for *Harper's* and the *Century*. He was a member of the Royal Society of Painter Etchers (London), the New York Etching Club, the Society of Illustrators, and the Society of American Artists where he occasionally exhibited a painting; in 1906 he became an associate of the National Academy of Design. He was married to Mary Holland in Cleveland, 1888, and died in Bronxville, 1909, leaving a widow and four sons. A memorial exhibition of his etchings was held at the Cleveland Museum of Art in 1921.

Bacher's etchings date from his early sojourn in Bavaria, when the *Danube* series was produced. Such plates as *Auf Stauffa-Bruck* and *Schwabelweiss* show a style already free, though more restrained than that of his later Venetian work. In the latter, says Koehler, "his manner o'erleaped itself and degenerated into wildness. And yet it is impossible to close oneself against the telling effect of these plates. A stormy life surges in them." Of this Venetian set Sir Seymour Haden writes, "The whole of it, accessories and all, evinces a strong artistic feeling. Bold and painter-like treatment characterizes it throughout." Bacher gave the effect of tone with comparatively few lines, placed with almost impetuous irregularity. He later took up illustrating in pen-and-ink "with more pleasure," he said (*New York Times,* Feb. 16, 1907), "than any other form of black-and-white work." He became one of the leading American pen-and-ink artists of the eighteen-nineties. "W. H. Drake and O. H. Bacher rendered arms and armor . . . in an excellent manner," writes Pennell; "no American artists have done as good work in rendering the play of light on old silver, or jeweled caskets, or bronze, or ivories."

[Facts verified by Mrs. Bacher, widow of Otto Bacher; obituaries *N.Y. Evening Post* and *N.Y. Times,* Aug. 18, 1909, *Am. Art News,* Sept. 20, 1909, and *Am. Art Ann.,* VII, 1909–10; criticisms by S. R. Koehler, *Am. Art Rev.* (1881), II, 51, 231, and *Die Radirung der Gegenwart* (Vienna, 1892); J. R. W. Hitchcock, *Etching in America* (1886); Mrs. M. G. Van Rensselaer, in *Century Mag.,* Feb. 1883, and Joseph Pennell, *Pen Drawing* (1920).]

F. W.

BACHMAN, JOHN (Feb. 4, 1790–Feb. 24, 1874), naturalist, Lutheran clergyman, was born in the village of Rhinebeck, Dutchess County, N. Y., the youngest son of Jacob Bachman, a farmer. The Bachman family is traditionally supposed to have come to Pennsylvania with William Penn seven generations earlier, though this is not a matter of precise record. The family took its origin in the canton of Berne, Switzerland, and one of its members, Lieut. Bachman, was killed with the Swiss guards who died in the defense of the Tuileries in 1789. John Bachman's father fought in the American Revolution; his mother's family came from Würtemberg. "From my earliest childhood I had an irrepressible desire for the study of Natural History," Bachman testified, but it was not encouraged and he pursued his studies surreptitiously. By catching beavers and skinning them he earned enough money to buy some coveted natural-history books. While yet a boy he was made secretary to Knickerbocker in an exploring expedition and embassy to the Oneida Indians. It is said that he entered Williams College at an early age (Haskell-Bachman; name not in college catalogues) and that his close application to study resulted in a menacing collapse of health which forced him to leave his college work uncompleted. For some time he lived out-of-doors, studying the Bible and Luther.

His first contact with men of science was his meeting in Philadelphia with the ornithologist, Alexander Wilson, who gave him an introduction to the great explorer and naturalist, Baron von Humboldt, then visiting this country. Bachman taught school at Ellwood, Pa., and later in Philadelphia, and in 1813 he was licensed to preach in the Lutheran Church. His first charge was "Gilead Pastorate," composed of three churches near Rhinebeck. He was ordained in December 1814. His call to the Lutheran pulpit of St. John's in Charleston, S. C., brought him in 1815 into what was, for his time and denomination, a religious frontier, and at the same time it threw him in with the group of naturalists gathered about the old medical school of Charleston in the first half of the nineteenth century. In 1816 he married Harriet Martin, daughter of a German Lutheran minister of Charleston. For many years he was tireless in building up his congregation, giving especial attention and benevolence to the negroes. He initiated the Lutheran Synod of South Carolina, was its first president, and founded South Carolina's Luther-

an theological seminary. As a religious leader he was undoubtedly a persuasive figure, swaying an adoring congregation and known to every one of all creeds throughout his state. His chief religious tract was *A Defense of Luther and the Reformation* (1853), brought forward in answer to alleged attacks by local Catholics. His sermons when re-read even to-day, appear liberal, as well as gracefully eloquent and forthright.

As a naturalist, Bachman was very modest about his attainments. His celebrated association with Audubon, the great ornithologist and painter, began in October 1831, when Audubon spent a month under his roof. His letters to Audubon often reveal rather more scientific caution and acumen than Audubon himself sometimes showed, and his judgment of the two great rivals, Audubon and Wilson, was kind yet discerning and candid. At first too busy with religious duties to give much attention to natural history, by 1835 he had begun to show himself of indispensable service to Audubon by his collections of southern animals and his trustworthy studies of their habits and habitats. He wrote monographs on squirrels and hares, and took, besides, a warm interest in botany and agriculture. He practically founded the State Horticultural Society in 1833, contributing studies on useful animals and plants, and in 1834 he prepared *A Catalogue of the Phænogamous Plants and Ferns Native and Naturalized, Found Growing in the Vicinity of Charleston, S. C.*

Bachman is best known for his collaboration with Audubon upon *The Viviparous Quadrupeds of North America,* three volumes (1845–49), with its sequels and re-editions. According to Witmer Stone ("Audubon," in Jordan's *Leading American Men of Science,* p. 83), Bachman "wrote a large portion and edited all of the work"—a monumental task. The two friends were further united by the marriage of two of Audubon's sons to Bachman's daughters. In 1838 Bachman took a vacation in Europe, traveling about the British Isles with Audubon, and visiting Humboldt at Berlin, where the university gave him the degree of Ph.D.

The Civil War and the approach of the evolutionary controversy gave great disturbance to Bachman, personally, intellectually, morally. His book *The Unity of the Human Race* (1850) was a criticism of and exegetical retort to Nott and Gliddon's *Types of Mankind.* As against his opponents, he maintained that humankind is all of one species, a point of view now upheld by the best anthropologists. In dignified terms, by no means devoid of good scientific thinking, he tried, unsuccessfully, to reconcile Scripture and Science. In the hostility between the states of the North and South he was equally unsuccessful in his efforts at a middle course. During the Nullification agitation he was noted for his Unionist views, yet when at last South Carolina met to enact an ordinance of secession it was he who opened the meeting with prayer. Throughout the war he was a soldier of mercy, giving his entire time to the sick and dying. Much against his will he was persuaded to escape from Charleston by the last train before the evacuation of the town, as his part in the Secession meetings marked him for Northern hatred. He did not escape indignities and loss of property. His death by paralysis occurred in Columbia, S. C. Thousands came to view his body, especially negroes who had known his kindness, and hundreds of children were lifted to kiss the face of a leader especially beloved. In person he was at once simple and urbane. Thoroughly American, there was something about him so *hertzlich* as to recall his foreign origin. His letters and sketches deserve to be better known, for they have, if not real literary pretensions, a powerful sense of the picture and the moment, an easy flow of the best words, and a bubbling humor and heartiness.

[At Bachman's death a scant and perhaps not wholly accurate unsigned article was published about him in *Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.,* IX (o. s.), 330–31 (1874). The only other source is a detailed compilation and sketch of 463 pages, *John Bachman, the Pastor of St. John's Church, Charleston, S. C.: Letters and Memories of His Life* (1888). It was begun by J. B. Haskell, a kinsman, and completed by Miss C. Bachman. Cf. also H. E. Jacobs, *Hist. of the Evangelical Lutheran Church in the U.S.* (1893).] D.C.P.

BACKUS, AZEL (Oct. 13, 1765–Dec. 9, 1817), Congregational clergyman and first president of Hamilton College, son of Jabez and Deborah (Fanning) Backus, was born in a section of Norwich, Conn., which later became the town of Franklin. He was brought up by a pious mother and a step-father "distinguished neither by industry, prudence, nor probity." Asked in after years what education his step-father gave him, Backus replied, "He took me with him to steal hoop-poles." The piety of the mother could not prevail against other influences, and the boy early declared himself an infidel. At the age of seventeen, however, he went to live with his uncle, the Rev. Charles Backus, pastor of the Congregational Church at Somers, Conn., whose wise treatment of the lad resulted in his conversion. In 1787 he graduated from Yale, where he ranked high as a scholar and was popular with his fellows. Inclined to enter the ministry, he hesitated, fearing that his buoyancy of spirit and love of fun unfitted him for sacred duties. Fi-

nally he decided to go into the army, but once more his uncle dissolved his doubts, and he prepared for the ministry under the former's tuition. On Feb. 7, 1791, he married Melicent Deming, and on Apr. 6 of the same year he was installed as pastor of the Congregational Church at Bethlehem, Conn., succeeding the noted Dr. Joseph Bellamy. That his misgivings about his fitness for the ministry had some foundation is shown by the fact that the only serious criticism of his preaching was that he could not keep his drolleries out of the pulpit, and that his witticisms were not always in good taste. He combined humor and pathos in his preaching and was frank and emphatic in his utterances. After supplying a neighboring pulpit he was asked if he dared preach that way at home, and replied, "The sermon you have heard is a hazel switch; when I am at home I use a sled-stake." His qualities made him much sought after as a preacher for special occasions. He took interest in civil affairs and was passionately opposed to what he deemed the atheism and license of Jefferson and his following. Invited to preach the election sermon in 1798, with Absalom as an example he portrayed the character of the demagogue in such a way as to leave no doubt as to what living politician he had in mind. The sermon was published (1798), and is said to have been twice republished in England. Some years later, for alleged libelous statements made about President Jefferson, he was arraigned in the United States district court (*Connecticut Courant,* Oct. 1, 1806; Sept. 30, 1807). The case aroused much excitement; lawyers volunteered their services in his behalf, and friends offered financial aid. The case never was tried.

He was almost as well known as a teacher. At Bethlehem he carried on a preparatory school and enjoyed a high reputation as a wise and kindly disciplinarian. Boys hard to manage were frequently put under his care, and he had great success with them. In September 1812, he was elected president of Hamilton College. He supervised the young institution in a paternalistic way and with reasonable success, but his career was cut short by a fever contracted while watching over a sick tutor. His publications include *A Sermon Delivered at the Funeral of His Excellency Oliver Wolcott, Governor of the State of Connecticut, Dec. 1, 1797; Absalom's Conspiracy* (1798); *An Inaugural Discourse Delivered in the Village of Clinton, Dec. 3, 1812, by Rev. Azel Backus, D.D., on the Day of His Induction into the Office of President of Hamilton College* (1812); *The Importance of Ministerial Fidelity* (1813), a sermon at the ordination of John Frost; *A Sermon at the Ordination of John B. Whittlesey* (1814).

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. of Yale Coll.* (1907); F. W. Bailey, *Early Conn. Marriages* (1898); *Hist. of the Town of Kirkland, N. Y.* (1824); Pomroy Jones, *Annals and Recollections of Oneida County, N.Y.* (1851); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. II (1857); Wm. Cothren, *Hist. of Ancient Woodbury, Conn.* (1854).] H. E. S.

BACKUS, ISAAC (Jan. 9, 1724–Nov. 20, 1806), Separatist and Baptist minister, historian, champion of religious liberty, was born in the village of Yantic in the town of Norwich, Conn. The first paternal ancestor of whom we have information was Stephen Backus, one of the original settlers of Norwich (1660). His grandson Joseph represented Norwich in the colonial legislature for several years. A consistent opponent of the Saybrook Platform of 1708, when the Norwich church accepted the Platform, he and others withdrew and set up their own public service, a foretoken of the important Separatist movement of a generation later. The church censured the group, reporting the matter to the legislature, which expelled Joseph Backus and Richard Bushnel, another representative who had acted with him in this controversy. Later Joseph Backus made a visit to the Mathers in Boston and to John Wise in Ipswich in the interest of the conservation of a pure Congregationalism. Joseph's son, Samuel, was a farmer who owned the only industry in Yantic, the Iron Works, which were greatly developed by his son, Capt. Elijah Backus. The Backus Iron Works, making all kinds of iron products for domestic purposes, became especially important and prosperous during the Revolution. Here and in important land holdings in the Delaware and Susquehanna Purchases is found the economic basis for the extensive travels of Isaac Backus, who evidently was never dependent upon his pastoral field for his financial support. Samuel Backus married Elizabeth Tracy, a descendant of Edward Winslow of the *Mayflower,* a woman of genuine piety and moral courage. Of this marriage Isaac Backus was the fourth child. The extant correspondence between mother and son shows mutual esteem and affection, and on the part of the son an appreciation of his mother's influence in shaping his own religious feelings and convictions.

Writing in 1768 (*A Fish Caught in His Own Net,* pref., p. ix), Backus says he "is a person of very little note in the learned world and never was a member of their schools," referring to colleges and theological seminaries. He may have studied under Dr. Lord, the minister at Norwich; as a ministerial tutor might not have had so much interest in the minutiæ of learning

as in its broader scope, this conjecture is in harmony with the striking paradox of Isaac's intellectual equipment. When only in his eighteenth year he considered himself well grounded in doctrine, yet his journals and letters abound in misspelling and in awkward and incorrect grammar. He was not, however, unaware of qualities of literary style; in his MS. account of his debate with Mr. Scales (1769) he discusses the use of a neuter noun and quotes from the "British Grammer" (*sic*). He was included in a committee of the Warren Association (1782) to bring out a new spelling book; he served for thirty-four years on the Board of Rhode Island College, and in 1797 was honored with its degree of Master of Arts. The lapses and crudities in his style are transcended by a native strength of intellect and precision of aim.

In June 1741, the Great Awakening reached Norwich with the preaching of Dr. Eleazar Wheelock. But it was not till the arrival of James Davenport in early August that Isaac entered into the experience typical of the Awakening—heart-searchings, obsession by the sense of original sin, and consciousness of overt transgression. "As I was mowing alone in the field, Aug. 24, 1741, all my past life was opened plainly before me, and I saw clearly that it had been filled up with sin" (MS. Autobiography, 1724–56, p. 16; Hovey, *Memoir,* p. 39). It was two days before he recognized this experience as conversion. Already he was dissatisfied with conditions in the Norwich church and it was not until the following year (1742) that he joined it, "concluding to bear those things as a burden and to hope for a reformation" (MS. Autobiography, p. 22). For several years he remained in a quiescent attitude, content to stay in the background. In 1745 he heard Whitefield preach in five different towns. When the church voted to admit to membership some who made no claim of any change of heart and when the minister gave his support to the Saybrook Platform, which the church had repudiated at the time of his settlement, a large minority withdrew—forming, with some additions, a New Light Church, July 16, 1746. It is not surprising to find the Backus family in this group. The trials and tribulations of the Norwich Separatists have been frequently described. Some years after Isaac had left home his pious mother and brother were cast into prison. In a letter dated Nov. 4, 1752, she wrote: "Your brother Samuel lay in prison twenty days. October 15, the collectors came to our house, and took me away to prison, about nine o'clock, in a dark, rainy night. . . . We lay in prison thirteen days, and were then set at liberty, by what means I know not" (*Memoir,* p. 28).

Backus

For a decade Isaac Backus is numbered among the Separatists of New England Congregationalism. In September 1746, he had an experience which he interpreted as a call to preach, and almost immediately he started out upon the first of a long series of preaching tours. At least eight of these can be distinguished in the next twelve months, including one to Rehoboth, Mass., where he first met Susanna Mason, who was to become his wife. Late in 1747 he visited Rev. Joseph Snow, a Separatist pastor in Providence, who told him of a needy field in Massachusetts. This was the precinct of Titicut, lying partly in Bridgewater and partly in Middleborough. Here Snow and Backus preached alternately twenty-four times in ten days, and the precinct committee invited Backus to remain as minister, after examination and approval by the neighboring ministers. He expressed his willingness to be thus examined, but refused to submit to the ministers or to the committee his own right to preach. Although not yet twenty-four years of age, he had come to a definite position in regard to the call to preach and the civil control of the church. In February, a group of people asked Backus to draw up articles of faith and a covenant, which he did. In March, they invited him to become their minister and on Apr. 13, 1748, he was ordained. A visit of a few days was to be prolonged to a residence of almost sixty years.

A little later we find him refusing to pay a tax of five pounds for support of the standing order; he was arrested but the statement that he was imprisoned does not seem well founded; in the crisis, Capt. Eleazar Edson paid the tax. In season and out, Backus was insistent in carrying on the recognized duties of a New Light minister. This involved constant preaching and pastoral calling in the home field with evangelistic tours and visitations to other Separatist flocks where counsel might be needed or opportunity for preaching afforded. His sermons contained much doctrinal discussion and exhortation; he relied largely upon the inspiration of the hour. His diaries frequently admit that he was "straitened in spirit" or acknowledge that he had "delightful liberty." Although he made eight journeys beyond his parish during the first year of his pastorate, totaling almost 800 miles, the membership of his own church about doubled. The next year he entered in all conscientiousness into marriage. "We solemnly covenanted together in July, were published in September, and were married on Nov. 29, 1749. Thus Susanna Mason of Rehoboth became the companion of my life, and the greatest temporal blessing which God ever gave me, for nearly fifty-one years, for which I trust I shall praise him to eternity" (MS.

Autobiography, p. 69. Cf. also *Memoir*, p. 81, for his own account of the simple marriage ceremony). At about this time he purchased a small farm in Middleborough which was his home for the rest of his life.

The most striking aspect of Backus's pastorate was its controversies, the details of which are readily accessible (*Memoir*, chaps. VII and VIII). The most disturbing of them was over the question of baptism. The Half-Way Covenant had been repudiated by the New Lights as inconsistent with the principles of a regenerate church membership. Was not infant baptism likewise inconsistent with this principle? While Backus was on a visit to his old home, two leading members of his church declared that they had adopted Baptist principles (Aug. 7, 1749). Upon his return, Backus was perplexed, but was suddenly carried over and preached a sermon holding the immersion of believers as the only true baptism. Within a few days he abandoned this view, but the question continued to agitate his mind. In July 1751 he again announced his conviction that infant baptism lacked scriptural warrant, and on Aug. 22, he and his wife and five others of his church were immersed by the Baptist elder, Benjamin Pierce of Warwick, R. I. Then began the great period of controversy, involving discipline and fellowship, the holding of ecclesiastical councils, the exclusion of Backus by a majority of the church, and the final consideration of the questions by a general council of New Lights at Exeter, R. I., in May 1753. This council favored mixed communion, and the church and Backus were virtually committed to what to-day would be considered "open membership." When he baptized three members "whom others thought had been baptized before," it was construed as his official repudiation of infant baptism, and further sharp contention arose. For a year and a half, the factions could not meet for communion. This led Backus directly to the logical principle of close communion, and with a few of the New Lights, on Jan. 16, 1756, he organized a Baptist church in Middleborough, and was ordained its pastor on June 23. This office he held for the rest of his life.

Again Backus must build an ecclesiastical organization. It was over a year before they could erect a church building, upon which Backus worked with his own hands as well as upon clearing a road to it. There is no indication of any change in his conception of his duties as a minister, but he was now in a position where he could apply more consistently the conclusions he had reached regarding the Christian life, the church, and its place in human society. Except during the last few years of his long pastorate, he attended to the routine duties of his work, his diaries and some of his published writings giving occasional glimpses of his experiences. He continued his itinerant missions, finding in the rapidly growing Baptist denomination opportunity for his constructive ability. His tours may be viewed as somewhat apart from his pastorate, for he kept a separate record of them, but they were a vital part of his ministry. He compiled a summary of his journeys from his arrival in Titicut, beginning with January 1748 and extending through December 1802, showing 918 trips exceeding ten miles in length, aggregating over 68,600 miles. This was for the most part on horseback. He combined various objectives in these tours. Numerous trips to Connecticut usually permitted visits to his old home and transaction of personal and family business there; in passing through Providence he had frequent consultation with President James Manning [*q.v.*]; he visited Harwich and other places where there were difficulties with the standing order; he was called from home by councils of ordination and associations; on a journey to New Hampshire (1769), he engaged in an interesting debate on Baptism with Mr. Scales, the minister of the church at Hopkinton. From the time he began to work upon his *History*, he was indefatigable in seeking information, locating and copying records, letters, and other documents. He was ever alert to advance the cause of the freedom of the Church from civil control; but the primary object of most of his journeys was to preach the gospel and to promulgate Christian doctrine as he understood it. He did not tarry so much as did his friend Hezekiah Smith [*q.v.*] of Haverhill for the distinct purpose of organizing Baptist churches, though many of these were in part the product of his preaching tours. These activities disclose a broad interest which lifts Backus out of his rôle as pastor, although his leadership there made Middleborough the strongest Baptist community in Massachusetts during his lifetime, and the fifty years' pastorate should not be underestimated. But it was in three fields not circumscribed by parish boundaries that the place of Backus in history is found.

In the realm of ecclesiastical polity in the second half of the eighteenth century, his was perhaps the keenest mind in America. Amid complicated situations, he safeguarded the independence of the local church and its democratic control. Although he served as clerk at the first meeting of the Warren Association, his church waited three years before joining and then came

in "upon the express condition that no complaint should ever be received by the Association against any particular church that was not of the Association, nor from any censured member of any of our churches." Here is evidence of his alertness in the field of polity. He was from this time a recognized leader, in influence the peer of Hezekiah Smith and James Manning. In 1771 he was made agent to represent Baptist interests in relation to the civil government, involving duties yet to be considered. In 1773, at the request of Manning, he journeyed to Connecticut, where he was instrumental in attaching some Separatist churches to the Baptist cause (Backus MS.). As late as 1788, when the Baptists of Virginia sent to the Warren Association for assistance and advice, that body turned to Backus for this important mission, necessitating the longest journey in his career. Sailing from Newport on Jan. 2, 1789, he landed in North Carolina. Although he gave a report of this tour to the Warren Association on his return, we have very few details of his activities; but he attended a number of Associations and in about five months "travelled on horseback 1,251 miles . . . and preached 117 sermons" (*Memoir,* p. 272).

It was as a protagonist of religious liberty, however, that Isaac Backus has his chief claim to a fame which will probably increase as the strategic position of his contribution to what is now recognized as a triumphant cause becomes more fully known. Though many others joined in the protest against civil control of religion and there were other leaders in the effort to secure separation of Church and State, no individual in America since Roger Williams stands out so preëminently as the champion of religious liberty as does Isaac Backus. Long before he became a Baptist he had grasped the distinction between toleration and religious freedom. Through his first-hand acquaintance with affairs at Norwich, he knew the disadvantages from establishment in Connecticut, while his experience and observation in Massachusetts showed him a cause worthy of the best endeavors of the strongest years of his ministry. At a meeting of the Warren Association before the Middleborough church joined, Backus was named on a committee to collect information concerning the difficulties under which the Baptists were laboring, and for years he served on this Committee on Grievances. In 1772, he became Agent for the Association and from that time was considered the chief spokesman of the Massachusetts Baptists in all relations with the state. Through visitation and correspondence, he amassed a wide and accurate knowledge of affairs, and drafted reports and other documents through which the Baptists expressed their protests against the existing system of control. He was a conscientious objector against the system of certification by which Baptists might obtain remission of ministerial rates, and denied the legal right of the tax as well. He was largely instrumental in winning the Warren Association to this view in 1773 and himself drafted the *Appeal to the Public,* which in over sixty pages indicts the blend of civil and ecclesiastical authority in Massachusetts and justifies the Baptist insistence upon separation of Church and State.

The public career of Backus is nowhere more on the defensive than in connection with his mission to the First Continental Congress in the fall of 1774, for this was represented as an intention to embarrass the Massachusetts delegation and even to sow discord in the Congress itself. Backus went only at the earnest solicitation of several leaders of the denomination, including President Manning, who himself went to Philadelphia and presented the Baptist memorial at a conference with some of the delegates. The attitude of Backus was decidedly moderate. The whole broad field of liberty was being tilled at Philadelphia and the Baptists feared lest one important part should be neglected. In letters in the press later, Backus vindicated his own attitude and action. On the Sunday following the conflict at Lexington, Backus took a definite stand, justifying the Americans (MS. Diary), and from that time on through the Revolution his patriotism was beyond reproach.

While Backus was frequently occupied in efforts to improve the status of the Baptists, special opportunity came in connection with the adoption of the Massachusetts constitution in 1780 and with the ratification of the Federal Constitution in 1788. The Congregational standing order was virtually continued through Article III of the Declaration of Rights in the Massachusetts constitution. Backus had a considerable part in the discussion of this Article and became involved in controversy in the newspapers. His signing a certificate at this time was assailed as inconsistent, but he pointed out that his act was not in conformity to any law, for the certificate law was not then in force; while Article III, which forbade "subordination of any one sect to another," precluded the reënactment of such a law. He gives the essential facts in the *History* (edited by Weston, II, 225–31).

Backus was himself a member of the Massachusetts convention called to consider the ratification of the Federal Constitution. When the town of Middleborough selected its four dele-

gates, he was the first named. "When I was first informed of it on Dec. 20," he wrote in his diary (*Ibid.*, II, 335), "I thought I should not go, but as religious liberty is concerned in the affair, and many were earnest for my going, I consented." He testifies to the liberty of discussion in the convention and to his own reception of light upon public affairs; although two-thirds of upward of twenty Baptist members present voted against ratification, he himself voted for it. "The exclusion of any hereditary, lordly power, and of any religious test, I view as our greatest securities in this constitution" (*Ibid.*). His criticism of the Massachusetts legislature for indifference toward the first amendment implies interest in the latter, but he himself took no active part in securing its adoption.

The third field in which Backus appears with a wider horizon than his parish is that of his literary activities. Here he does not rise to high level except in his historical work. The few sermons in print do not disclose any remarkable homiletic power. His earliest published discourse, *Nature and Necessity of an Internal Call to Preach* (1754), and one of his latest, *The Liberal Support of Gospel Ministers* (1790), set forth two important aspects of his views on the ministry. His controversial temper may be studied in his famous reply to Rev. Joseph Fish, in *A Fish Caught in His own Net* (1768), and in his *Reply to a Piece . . . by Mr. Israel Holly* (1772). His most important printed contributions to the cause of religious liberty were *A Seasonable Plea for Liberty of Conscience* (1770); *A Letter to a Gentleman in the Massachusetts General Assembly Concerning Taxes to Support Religious Worship* (1771); *Appeal to the Public* (1773); and, above all, the work popularly known as his "History of the Baptists."

Reference has already been made to the thoroughness of Backus in his search for documents and every other source of information for his *magnum opus*. More than the dominant majority realized, there was significance in the title which he framed. It was indeed *A History of New England, with Particular Reference to the Denomination of Christians Called Baptists* (vol. I, 1777; vol. II, 1784; vol. III, 1796. Revised, edited by David Weston, 2 vols., 1871). His style is often turgid and diffuse; he indulges in preachments and presents much from a partisan point of view; yet he never intentionally misrepresents, and much that his partisanship pointed out was being completely ignored by his opponents. Every interpreter of New England history of the colonial period and through the eighteenth century in all matters pertaining to the Church and religion and their relation to civil government must use the documentary evidence which Backus brought forth and pay some heed to his strictures upon the prevailing system of control.

In physique Isaac Backus was a man of large proportions in features and in body. While occasionally his diaries refer to rheumatism and other ailments, only a robust constitution could have borne the fatigue of his long journeys and an indomitable spirit have endured the trials of his long life.

[There is only one biog. of Isaac Backus, *A Memoir of the Life and Times of the Rev. Isaac Backus, A.M.*, by Alvah Hovey, D.D. (Boston, 1859). This is based primarily upon the manuscript diaries, accounts of journeys, letters, and other papers, to be be found in the New Eng. Bapt. Lib., Ford Building, Boston. These MSS. and a few others at Brown Univ. Lib. are listed somewhat in detail in W. H. Allison, *Inventory of Unpublished Material for Am. Religious Hist. in Protestant Ch. Archives and Other Repositories* (Carnegie Institution of Washington, 1910). A few MSS. will be found in the Samuel Colgate Bapt. Hist. Coll., Hamilton, N. Y., and in private possession at Norwich, Conn. The *Minutes* of the Warren Bapt. Ass. to 1806 are important. David Weston, *The Bapt. Movement of a Hundred Years Ago* (1868) and D. B. Ford, *Hist. Discourse on the Dedication of the Backus Monument* (1893) give information not otherwise easily accessible.]

W. H. A.

BACKUS, TRUMAN JAY (Feb. 11, 1842–Mar. 25, 1908), educator, the son of Mercy (Williams) Backus and the Rev. Jay Spicer Backus, a Baptist clergyman, was born at Milan, N. Y. As his father later moved to New York City with his family, Truman Backus received his early education there. He then attended the University of Rochester, from which he graduated with honors in 1864. At the close of the Civil War he organized a school for colored people in Richmond, Va., while that city was still under martial law. He later returned to Rochester and completed work for the degree of Master of Arts. On Jan. 9, 1866, he married Sarah Glass of Syracuse, N. Y. In 1867 he accepted a call to Vassar College to teach rhetoric and English. Vassar, the earliest American college for women, was then in its infancy; and Backus rendered effective pioneer service to the cause of the education of women in coöperating with Dr. John Howard Raymond, its first president, and Miss Maria Mitchel, professor of astronomy, in planning the work of the institution. He was offered a professorship of English at Harvard University, as well as the presidency of Vanderbilt University, both of which he declined. While he was teaching at Vassar his first wife died; and in 1883 he married Helen Hiscock of Syracuse, a graduate of Vassar in the class of 1873 and until her marriage a member of the English department of that institution. In 1883 he accepted the presidency

of the Packer Collegiate Institute of Brooklyn, a well-known educational institution for girls and young women, partly preparatory, partly collegiate in character. He continued in the presidency until his death. As an administrator he combined a grasp of detail with an ability to eliminate unessentials and to solve the larger problems. Above all, his joyous spirit infected the whole institution. "Lugubriousness was a quality he could not bear. There was so little for it to feed upon under his directorship that it soon disappeared." Despite the pressure of teaching and administrative work, Backus found time for literary, civic, and other activities. He revised Thomas B. Shaw's *New History of English Literature* (1884) and was himself the author of *The Great English Writers from Chaucer to George Eliot* (1889) and the *Outlines of Literature, English and American* (1897). He served as civil service commissioner in Brooklyn under two mayors. He held office, also, as president of the board of managers of the Long Island State Hospital, president of the Head Masters Association of New York City, and president of the Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools of the Middle States and Maryland.

[Obituaries in the *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* and the *N.Y. Tribune*, Mar. 25, 1908; *Who's Who in America*, 1908; *Minutes of the Trustees of the Packer Collegiate Institute* (transcribed on their permanent records); letter from Miss Cornelia Raymond of Vassar Coll. to the writer.]

J.F.S.

BACON, ALICE MABEL (Feb. 6, 1858–May 1, 1918), writer, teacher, lecturer, was born in New Haven, Conn., the youngest daughter of Catherine (Terry) Bacon and of Leonard Bacon [*q.v.*], and educated at private schools in that city. She passed the Harvard examinations for women in 1881. Her interest in other races took her to Hampton Institute, where she taught from 1883 to 1888. Japanese friends then made possible the extraordinary experience of teaching in the conservative and anti-foreign Peeress's School under the management of the Imperial Household. For a year she lived an almost completely Japanese life, sharing a house with three Japanese teachers and several Japanese girls. Her observations and experiences in this environment, and later in another school, were the subject of books and lectures in which she attempted to interpret Japanese civilization to Americans. In letters to her brothers and sisters, collected in *Japanese Girls and Women* (1891) and in *A Japanese Interior* (1893), she describes the domestic life and the customs, the popular beliefs and superstitions, of all classes, whom she was particularly well able to observe. She was a familiar guest in many Japanese households, and her contact with ladies almost untouched by foreign influence was very close. Returning to America in 1889, she taught again at Hampton until 1899, and founded the Dixie Hospital for the training of colored nurses in 1890. In 1896, in connection with the Atlanta Exposition, she published a survey and evaluation of the development of the colored race. But Japan called her once more in 1899 and she crossed the Pacific to teach for two years at the Higher Normal School in Tokyo. Again in America, she was a teacher for one year in Miss Capen's school in Northampton, Mass. Until shortly before her death she spent her summers in managing Deep Haven camp in Holderness, N. H., where for successive years large numbers of her friends gathered.

Her published works are *Japanese Girls and Women* (1891, republished in 1902, in a revised and enlarged edition, with illustrations by Keishu Takanouchi); *A Japanese Interior* (1893); *The Negro and the Atlanta Exposition* (*Occasional Papers*, No. 7, published by Trustees of the John F. Slater Fund, Baltimore, 1896); *In the Land of the Gods* (1905). She edited *Human Bullets, A Soldier's Story of Port Arthur*, by Tadayoski Sakurai (1907).

[The sources of information are Miss Bacon's own published writings; *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Woman's Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; *New Haven Jour.-Courier*, May 3, 1918; Thomas W. Baldwin, *Michael Bacon of Dedham, 1640, and His Descendants* (1915).]

M.A.K.

BACON, AUGUSTUS OCTAVIUS (Oct. 20, 1839–Feb. 14, 1914), lawyer, senator, was born in Bryan County, Ga., though his parents were residents of Liberty County. On one side his progenitors were among the earliest settlers of Virginia, on the other they were of the colony of Puritans who settled in Dorchester, Mass., in 1630, whose descendants later in a body emigrated to South Carolina, and in 1753 moved to Georgia and founded what was known as the Midway Colony. He was named for his father who died four months before the son was born; his mother, Mary Louisa (Jones) Bacon, died before he was a year old. He was reared by his grandmother, a daughter of Dr. Henry Holcombe, an eminent Baptist minister. At the age of sixteen he entered the University of Georgia, receiving the A.B. degree in 1859 and the following year his law degree. He selected Atlanta as the place to practise his profession, but soon after joined the Confederate army and was made adjutant of the 9th Georgia Regiment. Afterward, with the rank of captain, he was assigned to general staff duty. He was married Apr. 19, 1864,

to Virginia Lamar, in Macon, Ga., which city after the war became his permanent residence. He at once took high standing as a lawyer and commanded a large clientele. Notwithstanding the demands of his law practise, and the exactions of a long and brilliant service in the state legislature, he published in 1872 a digest of the decisions of the supreme court of Georgia. His advent in politics came in 1868, when he was nominated by the state Democratic convention for presidential elector. Two years afterward he was elected a member of the Georgia House of Representatives. He was reëlected to that body continuously for a period of twelve years, and was subsequently again elected for a term of two years. He was speaker *pro tempore* for two years, and speaker for eight years. In 1883, he was a candidate for the governorship of his state, and in the Democratic convention he lacked but one vote of receiving the nomination which would have been equivalent to an election.

In 1894 he was chosen United States senator by the General Assembly of Georgia. In 1900 he was nominated at a Democratic state primary for the Senate, and was afterward unanimously elected by the legislature. In 1906 he was again indorsed in the state Democratic primary, having no opposition, and was again unanimously elected to the Senate. He was the first Georgian to be elected to a third consecutive full term in the Senate. In 1912 he was again renominated in the state Democratic primary. Before the legislature convened, the change in the method of selecting senators had become effective. When the legislature met, it promptly provided machinery for the election of a senator by the people, and Senator Bacon had the distinction of being the first member of the United States Senate elected under the operation of the Seventeenth Amendment to the Constitution. He was elected president *pro tempore* in the Sixty-second Congress. In 1913 he became Chairman of the Committee on Foreign Relations. At the time of his death he had served but one year of his fourth term as United States senator.

In the Senate he was a frequent debater, discussing practically every important subject that came before Congress during his service of about nineteen years. He was especially strong in debate on constitutional questions and matters of foreign relations. One of his most notable efforts was in opposition to the acquisition of the Philippines. He introduced a resolution "declaring the purpose of the United States not permanently to retain the islands, but to give the people thereof their liberty." The vote was a tie, the resolution being defeated by the vote of the vice-president.

The debate on this resolution between Senator Bacon and Senator Spooner of Wisconsin has justly been characterized as one of the great debates in the history of the Senate. No senator took a more active part in the debates when the Dingley tariff bill was before the Senate, and later, in 1909, when the Payne-Aldrich bill was under discussion. He had a deep concern for the proprieties of the Senate and was sensitive as to its rights and jealous of its constitutional prerogatives.

The time when Congress was not in session he usually spent in foreign travel. He was interested in public education and was for many years a trustee of the University of Georgia and a regent of the Smithsonian Institution. He was of medium size, physically strong and vigorous, dignified in carriage and deportment. He died in Washington after a brief illness, on Feb. 14, 1914. In his will, after making bequests to his kindred, he donated to the city of Macon, Ga., as a public park and recreation ground, his home "Baconsfield" and a valuable tract of land surrounding it on the Ocmulgee River.

[L. L. Knight, *Landmarks, Memorials, and Legends* (1914); I. W. Avery, *Hist. of the State of Georgia from 1850 to 1881* (1881); James Stacy, *Hist. of the Midway Congreg. Ch., Liberty County, Ga.* (1903); *Cong. Rec.* 1895–1914; *Recs. in Court of Ordinary, Bibb County, Ga.;* Hull, *Hist. of the Univ. of Ga.* (1894); memorial addresses in the Sen., Dec. 17, 1914, and in the House, Feb. 21, 1915, in *Cong. Rec.*, 63 Cong., 3rd Sess., pp. 296–303 and 4244–55.]

W.G.

BACON, DAVID (Sept. 4, 1771–Aug. 27, 1817), Congregational clergyman and missionary, was born at Woodstock, Conn. His father, Joseph Bacon, was a direct descendant of Michael Bacon, who came to Massachusetts from England in 1640; his mother was Abigail Holmes. His son, Rev. Leonard Bacon [*q.v.*], tells us that in David's early life, a "deep and thorough religious experience" brought him into special sympathy with David Brainerd, the famous missionary to the Indians whose life was written by Jonathan Edwards. He had slight educational opportunities; learned and practised the trade of a wheelwright; but must have been something of a student, for he was also a teacher. He married Alice Parks, at a date not recorded, and was led, perhaps by his interest in David Brainerd, to give himself to the ministry, studying theology, according to the custom of the time, with a clergyman. His teacher, Rev. Levi Hart, seems to have been a classical scholar, as his translations of Virgil are named in the catalog of the Library of Congress.

In August 1800, Bacon was commissioned by the Connecticut Missionary Society to "explore

and experiment" among the Indian tribes beyond Lake Erie; and made the journey "alone, on foot, luggage strapped upon his back." The next year, accompanied by his young wife, and her fourteen-year-old brother (Beaumont Parks), he entered on his missionary work on Mackinac Island. Alarmed by the expense, the trustees directed him to return to Hudson in the Western Reserve, then sometimes called New Connecticut; and here he learned that his drafts had been protested, and it was necessary for him to return to Connecticut. Again, on foot, alone, he made the journey, met the trustees, triumphantly vindicated himself, and received full payment for his protested drafts and reappointment to remain in Hudson and give half time to the church there. Here he conceived the idea of a community built from the beginning upon the foundation of New England Puritanism. Returning to Connecticut, he contracted with Benjamin Tallmadge of Litchfield for his interest in a township in the Western Reserve: about 12,000 acres at $1.50 each. In 1807 Bacon came, the pioneer, built his log cabin and surveyed and plotted the town of Tallmadge. By 1809, twelve families had arrived, and in his cabin a Congregational church was organized; but Bacon was not to share in the further growth of church and town. Hard times, Jefferson's embargo and bank failures, checked emigration. He returned to Connecticut, tried unsuccessfully to meet his obligations, and died at Hartford, in August 1817.

[T. W. Baldwin, *Michael Bacon of Dedham and His Descendants* (1915); biog. sketch by E. N. Sill, and address by his son, Rev. Leonard Bacon, both in *Proc. in Commemoration of the Fiftieth Anniversary of the Settlement of Tallmadge* (1857); Charles Whittlesey, *Sketch of the Settlement and Progress of Tallmadge* (1842); E. O. Randall, "Hist. Sketch of the Settlement of Tallmadge," in *Ohio State Archæol. and Hist. Soc. Quart.*, vol. XVII, 1908, no. 3.] C.N.

BACON, DELIA SALTER (Feb. 2, 1811–Sept. 2, 1859), author, daughter of Rev. David Bacon [*q.v.*] and Alice (Parks) Bacon, was born in the log cabin which constituted the first house in Tallmadge, Ohio. A year later her heroic father's pioneering enterprise had failed, and he returned with his family, broken-hearted, to Connecticut. His death in 1817 left his wife and six children in utter poverty. Delia was charitably brought up by Mrs. Delia Williams of Hartford, where she attended the excellent school of Catharine Beecher [*q.v.*] until she was fifteen. Obliged at this early age to become self-supporting, and embarrassed by constant ill health, she endeavored unsuccessfully for four years, in conjunction with an elder sister, to establish a school of her own, at Southington, Conn., at Perth Amboy, N. J., at Jamaica, N. Y. She also published a collection of short stories, called *Tales of the Puritans* (1831), and later a closet drama, *The Bride of Fort Edward* (1839). Meanwhile she had found a source of income in lecture courses upon literature and history which she delivered with remarkable success in the larger eastern cities. Fair, slight, and graceful, she made upon her audiences an impression of radiant enthusiasm.

It was this fatal gift of enthusiasm, an inherited trait, which determined her later life. Having become convinced by 1852 that the Shakespearian plays were the work of a literary coterie, headed by Bacon, Raleigh, and Spenser, who produced the plays in order to set forth a liberal political philosophy which they could not present openly, she henceforth devoted all her energy and talent to the establishment of this strange thesis. Emerson, who seems to have been temporarily converted, encouraged her, and in May 1853 she sailed for England to prosecute her studies there. Carlyle, to whom she carried a letter of introduction from Emerson, at first warmly befriended her, but she turned a deaf ear to his suggestions of original sources, preferring to follow her inner illumination stimulated by the historical scenes about her. She lived in and near London for three years in shabby, unheated quarters with barely enough food to sustain life, quite alone and voluntarily friendless. *Putnam's Magazine,* after virtually contracting for a series of articles, published one and refused to accept the rest. Emerson, after being indirectly responsible for the loss of a bundle of her manuscripts, visibly cooled toward the whole enterprise. Her brother, Rev. Leonard Bacon [*q.v.*], pastor of the First Church, New Haven, who had had from the first no sympathy with her undertaking, offered to pay her way home if she would abandon it, but otherwise practically washed his hands of her. In these circumstances she found a needed friend in Nathaniel Hawthorne, then consul at Liverpool. With little faith in her thesis, he thought that it at least deserved a hearing, secured an English publisher for her book, loaned her money, and bore with her subsequent ingratitude when her mind began to fail. In the spring of 1856 she became obsessed with the idea that certain documents which would finally prove her theory were buried in the tomb of "Lord Leicester's stableboy," as she habitually called Shakespeare. Going to Stratford, she had actually succeeded in making arrangements to have the tomb opened, when she seems to have been overcome with doubts. Her indications were not sufficiently clear; perhaps the documents were buried in Bacon's tomb

or Raleigh's rather than Shakespeare's. Her *Philosophy of the Plays of Shakspere Unfolded* appeared in April 1857. It was greeted by the critics with ridicule and contempt, but of this Delia Bacon was happily unaware. Her mind, long unhinged, definitely gave way shortly after the publication of her book and she became violently insane. Through the ministrations of Hawthorne she was cared for in England until April 1858, when her nephew, George Bacon, returning from China, took her home with him. She died a few months later. Her book, containing a few pages of valuable criticism amid a mass of prolixity, remains one of the curiosities of literature. Hawthorne in later years averred that he had met one man who had read it through; there is no record of another. But to its author remains the credit, or discredit, of having first inaugurated the most absurd, and, in other hands, the most popular, of literary heresies.

[Theodore Bacon's *Delia Bacon* (1888) is a thorough and entirely satisfactory biog. See also Hawthorne's "Recollections of a Gifted Woman" in *Our Old Home* (1863), and Mrs. John Farrar's *Recollections of Seventy Years* (1866), ch. XL.] E. S. B.

BACON, EDWARD PAYSON (May 16, 1834–Feb. 16, 1916), grain trader, was born in the town of Reading, Steuben (now Schuyler) County, N. Y., the eldest son of Matilda (Cowles) Bacon and Joseph F. Bacon, a tailor, both of early New England families. In 1838 the father, because of ill health, gave up his business and took the family to a farm near Geneva, N. Y. When Bacon was fifteen he was spared from the farm and entered the Collegiate Institute, Brockport, N.Y., to prepare for the ministry. Unfortunately, his father's health failed completely, and Bacon, to aid in supporting the family, obtained a position as freight and ticket clerk with the New York & Erie Railroad, at Hornellsville, N. Y. After four years (1851–55) with this company, he became chief clerk of its freight department in New York City. In 1855 he accepted a similar position in the new Chicago office of the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana Railroad. The next year he began a nine-year connection with the Milwaukee & Mississippi Railroad. The systems of accounts and the method of conducting the freight and passenger departments as originated here by Bacon were adopted generally by the western roads, and the equipment which he devised for handling coupon tickets in the passenger department is in general use to-day. In 1865 he left the railroad in order to organize at Milwaukee the firm of Bacon & Everingham, grain traders. Successful from the start, he organized, in turn, the firm of E. P. Bacon & Company, and the E. P. Bacon Company, extended his operations to Chicago and Milwaukee, and became known as the leading grain trader of the Middle West. In this connection, and as a member and official of the Milwaukee Chamber of Commerce, he was able to institute many important changes in grain trading methods. The most important public work in which he engaged was a successful campaign for the enlargement of the powers of the Interstate Commerce Commission. He personally convinced President Roosevelt of the need for legislation, appeared before Congressional committees, was a delegate to the Conference of Commercial Organizations at Chicago, November 1899, and was chairman of the executive committees of the Interstate Commerce Law Conventions of 1900, 1904, and 1905. The result of these activities was the enactment of the law of 1906 empowering the Interstate Commerce Commission to determine reasonable rates and, after full hearing, to substitute the reasonable for the existing rates, the new rates to continue in effect until reversed by the courts. This is considered one of the most far-reaching acts of legislation intended to promote trade, and more credit for its realization is due Bacon than any other man. He had a large part in the founding of the Milwaukee Y.M.C.A., of which he was president from 1889 to 1891, and he was vice-president of the board of trustees of Beloit College, where he founded the Bacon Fellowships. He was married in 1858 to Emma Hobbs of Paterson, N. J., who died in 1892, and to Mrs. Ella C. Baird of Pelham Manor, N. Y., in 1895. He died at the age of eighty-two in his winter home at Daytona, Fla.

[*Grain Dealer's Jour.*, Mar. 10, 1916; Beloit Coll. Recs.; *Beloit Daily News*, Feb. 26, 1916; *Who's Who in America*, 1909.] F. A. T.

BACON, EDWIN MUNROE (Oct. 20, 1844–Feb. 24, 1916), journalist, author, was born in Providence, R. I., of good Scotch and English ancestry on both sides, being the son of Henry Bacon, a Universalist clergyman, and of Eliza Ann (Munroe) Bacon. After an education at private schools in Providence, Philadelphia, and Boston, rounded off with a few months at an academy in Foxboro, Mass., he started, at nineteen, his career as a journalist, beginning as a reporter on the *Boston Daily Advertiser*. He rapidly advanced through various subordinate positions, securing additional experience by working for a year with the *Illustrated Chicago News* and (1868–72) with the *New York Times* as assistant night editor and news editor. In 1873 he was appointed editor of the *Boston Globe*,

resigning, however, in 1878 over a matter of policy. He then returned to the *Daily Advertiser,* of which he became chief editor in 1883. In May 1886 he took over the editorial control of the *Boston Post,* holding the position until 1891, when he withdrew because of impaired health. He was married, Oct. 24, 1867, to Gusta E. Hill, daughter of Ira Hill of Boston, by whom he had one daughter.

After abandoning active newspaper work, Bacon devoted himself chiefly to the preparation of books descriptive of Boston and of New England. In succession he published *A Dictionary of Boston* (1886), *Boston Illustrated* (1893), *Historic Pilgrimages in New England* (1898), *Literary Pilgrimages in New England* (1902), *Boston: A Guide Book* (1903), *The Connecticut River and the Valley of the Connecticut* (1906), and *Rambles Around Old Boston* (1914), the last being a very pleasant volume, attractively illustrated with drawings by Lester G. Hornby. Bacon knew Boston as few of its residents have known it, and no one has written better than he about interesting spots in that city. He died, Feb. 24, 1916, in Cambridge, being survived by both his wife and his daughter.

Bacon was described by a fellow newspaper man as "a journalist of the old conscientious school," a man who "wrought his personality into every line of the newspaper at whose head he stood." Many younger men were trained under him to be thorough and accurate. Although he was not in any marked degree either original or brilliant, he insisted on high standards in his profession and he set a fine example for others to follow. By realizing the responsibility of his editorships and making the most of the opportunities which they offered, he performed an important service in his community.

[Obituaries in *Boston Transcript, Boston Globe,* and *Boston Herald,* Feb. 25, 1916; *Who's Who in America,* 1916–17; private information.]

C. M. F.

BACON, FRANK (Jan. 16, 1864–Nov. 19, 1922), actor and playwright, was born in Marysville, Cal., the son of Lyddell and Jane (McGren) Bacon. Leaving school in San José at the age of fourteen, he became successively a sheep-herder, an advertising solicitor, a photographer, a newspaper writer, and a candidate for the California legislature. He began his stage career after he had reached maturity; joining a stock company at the Garden Theatre in San José in 1890 he made his first appearance there as Sample Switchell in *Ten Nights in a Barroom* and acted over six hundred rôles during his ensuing seasons in that city. For a time he managed a company of his own in Portland, Ore., and then he began a long season at the Alcazar Theatre in San Francisco, where he further enlarged his repertory by acting a different character each week. After the San Francisco earthquake he came east with his wife, Jennie Weidman, whom he had married June 27, 1885, and they with their son and daughter played vaudeville engagements on the way. Arriving in New York, he was successful in securing first-class engagements, among them being the parts of William Carr in *Stop Thief,* Sam Graham in *The Fortune Hunter* (his tours in that play later taking him back to San Francisco), Hiram Higgins in *The Miracle Man,* and Jerry Primrose in *The Cinderella Man.* In collaboration with Winchell Smith he wrote *Lightnin',* which was based on a vaudeville sketch of his own entitled *Truthful James,* its principal character being especially constructed to fit his own manner and temperamental qualities. It opened in Washington, Jan. 28, 1918, and on Aug. 26, 1918, began its long run at the Gaiety Theatre in New York, where it continued uninterruptedly, with the exception of a few days when the theatre was closed on account of the actors' strike, through to Aug. 27, 1921, a total of 153 weeks and 1,291 performances. Bacon died suddenly in Chicago, where he was playing at the Blackstone Theatre. After his death, the play was performed with success in many American cities and also in London. The character of Lightnin' Bill Jones, so called ironically because he was leisurely in speech and action, gained the affection of an audience through its homely simplicity and humor, and through Bacon's quaint personality and natural style of acting. Among his other works for the stage was his collaboration with James Montgomery in the writing of *Me and Grant,* in which Bacon acted another Bill Jones, and with Freeman Tilden in the authorship of *Five O'Clock.* A play entitled *Everybody's Friend* was all his own.

[References are scattered through many periodical sources, and include notices of the plays in which he acted and interviews with him. A brief biog. sketch appears in *Who's Who in the Theatre,* ed. by John Parker, 4th ed., 1922. Long obituaries in *N. Y. Times, Tribune, Herald,* Nov. 20, 1922.]

E. F. E.

BACON, HENRY (Nov. 28, 1866–Feb. 16, 1924), architect, the son of Henry and Elizabeth (Kelton) Bacon, both of Massachusetts, was a direct descendant of Michael Bacon who settled in Dedham, Mass., in 1640. His father, a civil engineer, was employed in the early development of the Illinois Central Railroad, and it was while he was living in Watseka, Ill., that his

son Henry was born. In the later practise of his profession the father moved from place to place, finally settling in Wilmington, N. C. as government engineer in charge of the Cape Fear River improvements. Henry Bacon went to school in Wilmington and at the age of fifteen was sent north to enter the Chauncy Hall School in Boston. He also attended the University of Illinois for one year. His architectural studies began in the office of Chamberlain & Whidden, in Boston, but he soon left to enter the office of McKim, Mead & White, in New York City. In 1889 he won the Rotch Traveling Scholarship for architectural students and this gave him two years of study and travel in Europe. On his return he went back to the office of McKim, Mead & White which was then at work on designs for certain of the buildings for the World's Fair in Chicago. Bacon soon found himself actively at work on these plans and he was later sent to Chicago in connection with their execution. There he met Daniel H. Burnham [*q.v.*], with whom a lifelong friendship ensued. On Apr. 27, 1893, he married Laura Calvert, daughter of the British consul at the Dardanelles.

In 1897 Bacon left the office of McKim, Mead & White to found, with James Brite, also of New York, a new partnership. The firm won the competition for the Jersey City Public Library and thereafter built a number of public buildings and private houses. The partnership was dissolved in 1902 and Bacon practised under his own name until his death. His connection with McKim, the winning of the Rotch Scholarship, and other circumstances which brought him intimately into the sphere of Greek culture, contributed toward the formation of his architectural predilections. He was a devoted adherent of the theory of Greek architecture and his work is profoundly marked by that influence. If his technique was somewhat austere, it sufficed to win him such laurels as few architects have enjoyed during their life. The history of American architecture records no more impressive occasion than that in May 1923, when Bacon stood, under the evening sky, on the steps of the Lincoln Memorial, his crowning work, at Washington, and received from President Harding the Gold Medal of the American Institute of Architects, the highest distinction it was in the power of his fellow craftsmen to confer. Very early in his career Bacon had become interested in monumental work, the designing of pedestals, and the accompanying architectural settings for statues. He collaborated with various sculptors and executed a great deal of work jointly with Augustus Saint-Gaudens and Daniel Chester French, all of which seemed to lead logically to his final achievement at Washington.

He designed, among others, the following buildings: Public Library, Paterson, N. J.; Memorial Day Nursery, Paterson, N. J.; Halle Brothers Department Store, Cleveland, Ohio; Railroad Station, Naugatuck, Conn.; Waterbury General Hospital, Waterbury, Conn.; Memorial Bridge, Naugatuck, Conn.; Union Square Savings Bank, New York City; Chelsea Savings Bank, Chelsea, Mass.; National City Bank, New Rochelle, N. Y.; Citizens & Manufacturers National Bank, Waterbury, Conn.; Court of the Four Seasons, Panama-Pacific Exposition, San Francisco; Electrical Society Building, Middletown, Conn.; Astronomical Observatory, a dormitory, and the general plan of the University in connection with its future extension, Middletown, Conn.; gates for the University of Virginia, Charlottesville, Va.; First Congregational Church (alterations), Providence, R. I.; Woodmere High School, Woodmere, N. Y.; Public Bath, Brooklyn, N. Y. In collaboration with Daniel Chester French there were designed some fifty memorials and monuments, of which the principal ones are: Parkman Monument, Jamaica Plain, Mass.; Melvin Monument, Concord, Mass.; Oglethorpe Monument, Savannah, Ga.; Marshall Field Monument, Chicago, Ill.; Spencer Monument, Atlanta, Ga.; Lincoln Monument, Lincoln, Nebr.; Draper Monument, Milford, Mass.; Longfellow Monument, Cambridge, Mass.; Spencer Trask Memorial, Saratoga Springs, N. Y.; Lafayette Monument, Brooklyn, N. Y.; Republic Monument, Chicago, Ill.; Du Pont Fountain, Washington, D. C.; War Memorial for the State of Massachusetts, St. Mihiel, France. With Saint-Gaudens there were designed the Parnell Monument, Dublin, Ireland; Hanna Monument, Cleveland, Ohio; Whistler Monument, West Point, N. Y.; Magee Memorial, Pittsburgh, Pa.; Gov. Flower Memorial, Watertown, N. Y.

[See C. H. Whitaker, "Five Architects and One Truth," *Jour. of the Am. Inst. of Architects*, Sept. 1924; *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Tribune*, Feb. 17, 1924. At Wesleyan University there is to be a Memorial Room, a duplicate of Bacon's private office, in which will be placed his library, together with the furnishings of his office and all his original drawings and architectural sketches.]

C. H. W.

BACON, JOHN (Apr. 9, 1738–Oct. 25, 1820), Congregational clergyman, legislator, the son of John and Ruth (Spaulding) Bacon, and a descendant of Nathaniel Bacon who emigrated to America in 1640, was born at Canterbury, Conn. He was graduated from the College of New Jersey (Princeton) in 1765, was licensed to preach by the presbytery at Lewes, Del., and

preached for some time in Somerset County in that state. On Sept. 25, 1771, he was installed as pastor of the Old South Church, Boston. Two months later he married Elizabeth Goldthwaite, the widow of his predecessor, Rev. Alexander Cumming. Trouble soon arose in his parish. His training as a Presbyterian may have made it difficult to enter into the traditions of the Congregationalists of Massachusetts, while his severe manner, tenacious opinions, and fondness for argument created opposition. Furthermore, he offended patriot sentiment by publicly reading Gov. Hutchinson's proclamation calling upon the people to observe a day of thanksgiving particularly for the preservation of their civil and religious liberty. Hence his parishioners were all the more ready to criticize his theological views, and on Feb. 8, 1775, he was dismissed from the pastorate. In 1781, at Bacon's request, the parish gave him a testimonial of its confidence and respect and stated that its only differences with him related to the doctrine of the Atonement and the practise of the Half-way Covenant. Upon leaving the Old South he removed to Stockbridge, where he became a farmer and resided until his death. The constitution submitted to the voters of Massachusetts in 1778 excluded "negroes, Indians, and Molattoes" from the suffrage. Bacon opposed this on the ground that such persons would then be taxed without representation and "would be justified in making the same opposition against us which we are making against Great Britain." The provision was retained but the constitution was rejected by the people and that adopted in 1780 contained no race discrimination. Although not a lawyer, Bacon served as associate judge of the court of common pleas of Berkshire County from 1779 to 1807 and as presiding judge from 1807 to 1811. He was twice a member of the General Court and served twelve terms in the Massachusetts House of Representatives and ten in the Massachusetts Senate. In national politics he was a Jeffersonian Democrat and as such served in the national House of Representatives from 1801 to 1803 and was a presidential elector in 1804.

[Accounts of Bacon appear in Electa F. Jones, *Stockbridge, Past and Present, Records of an Old Mission Station* (1854), p. 257, and in the *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1890, pp. 122–23. The controversy at Old South Church which led to his dismissal is described in Hamilton Andrews Hill, *Hist. of the Old South Church (Third Church) Boston, 1669–1884* (1890), II; Benjamin Blydenburgh Wisner, *Hist. of the Old South Church in Boston* (1830), p. 53; and Leverett W. Spring, "A Case of Church Discipline in the Berkshires," *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, XLIX, 96.] L. B. E.

BACON, LEONARD (Feb. 19, 1802–Dec. 24, 1881), Congregational clergyman, was born at Detroit, Mich., the son of Rev. David Bacon [*q.v.*] and Alice (Parks) Bacon. In his sixth year the family removed to Tallmadge, Ohio, and one of the boy's first memories was of a school exhibition in the neighboring town of Hudson in which he and John Brown, later of Harper's Ferry fame, conducted a dialogue. At the age of ten, after his missionary father's defeat and poverty-stricker return to Connecticut, the boy was put under the care of an uncle, whose name he bore, in Hartford. So well was he trained at the Hartford Grammar School that at fifteen he entered the sophomore class of Yale College. Although maintaining a good rank, he fell below the expectations of his classmates, and, at the end of the course (1820), one of them, Theodore D. Woolsey, reproved him because "he had not studied enough and was in danger of hurting himself by superficial reading." This warning and a maturing sense of responsibility so influenced his habits in Andover Theological Seminary, which he entered in the autumn of 1820, that upon graduation he was assigned the principal address. On Sept. 28, 1824, he was ordained as an evangelist by the Hartford North Consociation; it being his intention to go as a missionary to the Western frontier. The next day brought a letter from the ecclesiastical society of the First Church of New Haven, asking him to supply their vacant pulpit. After preaching fourteen sermons he was called by the society with a vote of 68 to 20 to become its minister at a salary of $1,000. He was installed over this noted church on Mar. 9, 1825, when he was twenty-three years of age. The young man was rather appalled by the weight of his responsibilities. In the pews before him sat Noah Webster, the lexicographer, James Hillhouse, senator, Eli Whitney, inventor of the cotton-gin, and many of the faculty of the college. The congregation was accustomed to a high order of ministerial ability. His immediate predecessor was Nathaniel W. Taylor, whose sermons were an intellectual event; before him, Moses Stuart, distinguished for scholarship and effective speech, had been the pastor. Evidently Leonard Bacon did not at first fulfil the hopes of his parish, for after some months a committee waited upon him, intimating that his sermons were not worthy of the high place he held. His answer was, "Gentlemen, they shall be made worthy." With the years he grew in power and gained hold upon the affections of his people. They were proud of his unusual influence in the city, of the commanding position he occupied in Congregational councils, and of the reputation which extended beyond the boundaries of the denomination. He

was the sole and active pastor of the First Church for forty-one years, and pastor emeritus until his death. When it became known that he was leaving the active ministry the corporation of Yale offered him a chair in the Divinity School, and he was acting professor of revealed theology from 1866 to 1871, when he became lecturer on church polity and American church history, holding this position until his death in his eightieth year. He was twice married: in July 1825, to Lucy Johnson of Johnstown, N. Y., and in June 1847, to Catherine E. Terry of Hartford, Conn. Fourteen children were born to him.

Bacon was not primarily a great preacher. Although his sermons were always solid and dignified, they could be on ordinary Sabbaths very dull. But no occasion of unusual significance found him unequal to his task. As a theologian he was in sympathy with the system of thought known as the "New Haven School," yet he held his convictions in a spirit of abundant charity. His style in writing was the clear expression of a practical understanding, glowing with moral earnestness. At times it was made graceful by phrases of rare felicity. A gift of genuine poetic sentiment found expression in several hymns used in the churches of his order. The one beginning

"O God, beneath Thy guiding hand,"

written in 1838 for the second centennial of New Haven and of his church, sprang into immediate popularity and has secured a permanent place in American hymnology.

A natural controversialist, he was never so completely awake and self-possessed as in public debate with no moment available for preparation. Yet he fought as a champion, not as a gladiator. He engaged in no warfare which did not engage his conscience. "He inherited in large measure," wrote a friend, "the old Puritan zeal for making things straight in this crooked world, for compelling magistrates to rule justly, and for beating down the upholders of demoralizing institutions and customs." Yet he was a controversialist who sought to quell controversy. Two theological battles convulsed the Congregational churches of Connecticut during the early years of his ministry. The first was the famous Taylor-Tyler dispute on certain doctrines concerning man's freedom of choice. After the conflict had become so bitter that the followers of Dr. Tyler founded a new theological seminary at East Windsor, since removed to Hartford, Bacon wrote an *Appeal to the Congregational Ministers of Connecticut against a Division* (1840), in which he showed that the two warring factions agreed on twenty-six points; as these more than covered the essential tenets of the Christian religion, he urged that, although the differences might be of importance to the science of theology, they afforded no occasion for brethren to renounce each other. The next pronounced disquiet grew out of the revolutionary teachings of Horace Bushnell [*q.v.*]. In 1847 Bushnell published his *Christian Nurture* in which he rejected the prevalent view of the necessity of conscious conversion and advanced the opinion that a child in a Christian household should "grow up a Christian," be trained in the Christian faith, and at the proper time be received into the church without experiencing a dramatic conversion. This was followed in 1849 by a still more unsettling book entitled *God in Christ,* in which was advanced what has since become known as the "moral influence" theory of the Atonement, in opposition to the prevailing substitutionary or governmental explanation. Bushnell, fiercely attacked, was defended by the Hartford Central Association. So intense was the feeling that fifty-one ministers petitioned the General Association of the state to exclude the Hartford Association from fellowship. Bacon, though not holding Bushnell's views, was influential in passing an ambiguous or mollifying resolution which prevented a division. If he was regarded as the most formidable polemical writer and speaker in the American Congregationalism of his day, he was equally distinguished for the soundness of his judgment. During the Beecher-Tilton controversy, a council of churches called by Beecher's opponents in 1874 chose Bacon as moderator, while a later council held in Plymouth Church in 1876, the largest advisory council of its kind ever convened, also elected him moderator.

Perhaps Bacon's chief service to his denomination was his work in arousing Congregationalism to self-consciousness and confidence in its polity. In his early ministry the churches of this order were in a slough of self-distrust. A form of semi-presbyterianism was common among them, and a "Plan of Union," entered into with Presbyterianism, hindered Congregational polity from entering into the developing West. Bacon, as one of the editors of the *Christian Spectator* from 1826 to 1838, as one of the founders and editor for a score of years of the *New Englander,* by his speeches at conventions and his influence in national missionary societies, and by his historical studies, did more than any other to awaken the churches of this faith to the value of their heritage. In 1839 he published *Thirteen Historical*

Discourses, but his most elaborate and permanent work, *The Genesis of the New England Churches* (1874), was the fruit of his old age. In this he told the story of the beginnings of Congregationalism in England, its establishment at Plymouth, Mass., and its struggle until success was assured. It is worthy of note that this successor of John Davenport was much more in sympathy with the principles and polity of the Pilgrims than with those of the Puritans.

Bacon's most conspicuous claim for remembrance rests on his leadership in the anti-slavery cause. In his student days at Andover he wrote a report *On the Black Population of the United States* (1823) which was extensively circulated in New England, and its severest passages quoted even in Richmond. On going to New Haven he organized a society for the improvement of the colored people of that city. With Garrison and the extreme abolitionists he had no sympathy, and he received from them malignant attacks. In 1846 he published a volume entitled *Slavery Discussed in Occasional Essays.* This fell into the hands of a comparatively unknown lawyer in Illinois, Abraham Lincoln. A statement in the preface made a profound impression on the future emancipator: "If that form of government, that system of social order is not wrong,—if those laws of the southern states, by virtue of which slavery exists there and is what it is, are not wrong, nothing is wrong." The sentiment reappeared in Lincoln's famous declaration, "If slavery is not wrong, nothing is wrong." In 1848 the name of Leonard Bacon appears as one of the founders and the senior editor of the *Independent,* which asserted as a motto, "We stand for free soil." Bitter opposition resulted from his anti-slavery work, even in his own church, but looking back on that epoch, he said: "I make no complaint—all reproaches, all insults endured in a conflict with so gigantic a wickedness against God and man, are to be received and remembered, not as injuries but as honors." During the Civil War he was a steadfast supporter of the administration.

In appearance Bacon was of slight and sinewy frame, with a massive head, bushy hair and beard, a face suggestive of thought and intense energy, blue-gray eyes, lips mobile for wit, yet set in firmness, the whole figure denoting a man of vital force expressing itself in intellectual strength.

[Williston Walker, *Ten New England Leaders* (1901); *Leonard Bacon, Pastor of the First Church in New Haven* (1882); S. A. W. Duffield, *English Hymns* (1866); *Congreg. Yr. Bk.* 1882, pp. 18–21; *New Haven Evening Register,* Dec. 24, 25, 1881.]

C. A. D—e.

BACON, LEONARD WOOLSEY (Jan. 1, 1830–May 12, 1907), Congregational clergyman, known chiefly for his historical and controversial writings, was born in New Haven, Conn., the son of Rev. Leonard Bacon [*q.v.*] and Lucy (Johnson) Bacon. After graduating from Yale in 1850 he went abroad with his father and traveled in Europe and the East. Upon his return he studied theology for two years at Andover Seminary and for another at the Yale Divinity School, graduating from the latter in 1854. He then studied medicine, and in 1856 received the degree of M.D. from the Yale Medical School, but on Oct. 16 of the same year was ordained to the Congregational ministry at Litchfield, Conn. On Oct. 7, 1857, he married Susan, daughter of Nathaniel and Almira (Selden) Bacon. He served the church in Litchfield until 1860, and for the next eleven years was successively state missionary of the general association of Connecticut, and pastor in Stamford, Brooklyn, and Baltimore. The next five years he spent abroad, during a part of which time he was pastor of the American Church in Geneva. From 1878 to 1892, his pastorates took him from the Park Church, Norwich, Conn., to Philadelphia, where he had charge of the Woodland Presbyterian Church, then to Savannah, where he served the Ancient Independent Presbyterian Church, and finally back to Norwich, where from 1887 to 1892 he was at the Second Congregational Church. The next ten years he devoted to study and writing, but from 1902 to 1906 he again engaged in pastoral work, this time at Assonet, Mass. His first wife died in 1887, and on June 26, 1890, he married Letitia Wilson Jordan.

He was a restless, intense man, brilliant but erratic, widely informed and versatile, with a taste for historical investigation, a forceful speaker, and a vigorous, slashing writer. His lack of tact, frankness in speaking his mind, and polemic spirit were not conducive to long pastorates. A born controversialist, he scented opportunity for combat from afar, and his essays on "Two Sides of a Saint" (St. Francis de Sales) and "William Lloyd Garrison" in *Irenics and Polemics* (1895) reveal with what relish he corrected perversions of history and discredited popular idols. His own bias is always apparent in his writings, but he sought diligently for facts and endeavored to be fair. Interest in the Old Catholic movement led him to publish several volumes of translations from Père Hyacinthe in 1869, 1870, and 1871, and in the following year, *An Inside View of the Vatican Council.* He also published another translation, *The Abbé Tigrane* (1875).

His *History of American Christianity* (1897) is the final volume in the American Church History series, and sums up what is described in the preceding volumes without adding much that is new. *The Congregationalists* (1904) is a brief popular work. Other writings of his include *Fair Answers to Fair Questions* (1868); *Church Papers* (1876); *A Life Worth Living, Memorial to Emily Bliss Gould* (1879); *The Sabbath Question* (1882), with G. B. Bacon; *The Simplicity that is in Christ* (1886); *Norwich, The Rose of New England* (1896); *Young People's Societies* (1900), with C. A. Northrop; *Anti-Slavery before Garrison* (1903). He also edited several hymnbooks and wrote much for periodicals.

[*Obit. Record Grads. of Yale 1900–1910* (1910); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–7; *Cong. Yr. Bk.* 1908; T. W. Baldwin, *Bacon Geneal.* (1915).] C. N.

BACON, NATHANIEL (Jan. 2, 1647–October 1676), colonial leader, celebrated in history as the Rebel, was the son of Thomas Bacon of Friston Hall, Suffolk, and a cousin of Lord Chancellor Francis Bacon. Educated at Cambridge University and at Gray's Inn, he afterward traveled widely on the Continent; married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Edward Duke; emigrated to Virginia; and settled at Curl's Neck on James River. His talents and kinship to the astute senior Nathaniel Bacon of the Council led to his appointment to a seat in that body soon after his arrival in Virginia. From the beginning, his sympathies were with the people at large; and he chafed under the wrongs which they were made to suffer. In 1676, when Gov. Berkeley's failure to check the Indian invasion brought the popular discontent to a head, Bacon was chosen by the people to lead them in an excursion against the common foe. Having lost an overseer by the tomahawk and resenting the Governor's delays, he entered the campaign with fierce ardor. But the conquest of the savages was not the limit of his plans. He aimed at a reform of the whole system of colonial laws in order to remove the grinding inequalities that existed. At the head of a small army, he penetrated the forest domain of the Pamunkey Indians without waiting for Berkeley to give him a commission; and he next forced the Governor to summon a new assembly to exact the reform measures so generally desired. Before this assembly convened, Bacon, with a strong following, assaulted the forts of the Susquehannocks and Occaneechees in the Fork of Roanoke River, and having dispersed these tribes, returned to the settlements. He was soon elected a member of the projected reform assembly and, with an escort, sailed down the river to Jamestown. On arriving there, his sloop was seized, and he and his companions were brought before Berkeley, who, after violent reproaches, pardoned him, and readmitted him to the Council.

Fearing secret plots against his life, Bacon deserted Jamestown at night; then returning with a large body of incensed supporters, he held a stormy interview with the infuriated Governor, and extorted from him a commission to march against the Indians. The Falls in the James was named as the rendezvous; but hardly had his soldiers assembled there, when news arrived that Berkeley was riding up and down the country trying to raise a force to put down "the rebels." The cry arose: "To Jamestown"; but before Bacon could get there, the Governor had fled to the Eastern Shore. Bacon now, by proclamation, called upon the principal planters of the colony to coöperate with him in restoring peace and reforming the laws. He next seized the colony's guard-ship in order to transport commissioners across the bay and to demand the Governor's surrender. But Berkeley, instead of being captured by these commissioners, was successful in capturing them. In the meanwhile, Bacon had invaded the villages of the Pamunkey Indians. While this expedition was in progress, Berkeley returned in triumph to Jamestown. Informed of this fact, Bacon made a rush for that place with a large force, and after a sharp battle on its outskirts, captured it, and burnt it to the ground. Berkeley again fled to the Eastern Shore.

Withdrawing to Green Spring near the town, Bacon drafted an oath of fidelity to himself which he compelled every citizen in his power to sign. All opposition to his supremacy having ceased, he became conciliatory in spirit, so as to consolidate his support; but before he could fully develop this statesmanlike policy, he was taken ill in Gloucester County, died, and was buried in the waters of one of its rivers. The spot of his interment has never been known down to the present day. With the withdrawal of his guiding hand, the rebellion gradually collapsed.

[The only formal biog. of Nathaniel Bacon in existence was written by Mrs. Mary Newton Stanard, *The Story of Bacon's Rebellion* (1907). There is, however, an extraordinary wealth of original material relating to the events of his life. The following are among the most authoritative: "The Beginning, Progress, and Conclusion of Bacon's Rebellion in Va.," by Thos. Mathew in Force's *Tracts*, vol. I (1835); *Strange News from Va.* (1677); "True Narrative of the Rise, Progress, and Cessation of the Late Rebellion in Va.," *British Colonial Papers*, XLI, 79; "Grievances of the Several Counties," *British Colonial Papers*, republished in the *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, vols. I, II, III, and the

Bacon

William and Mary College Quart. Mag., vols. II, III, IV, VIII, IX, XI. Proc. of Courts Martial, W. W. Hening, *Statutes at Large*, vols. II, III. There are valuable reprints in the *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, 4th ser., IX, 177–84; also numerous reprints in John Burk, *Hist. of Va.*, vol. II (1805).] P.A.B.

BACON, ROBERT (July 5, 1860–May 29, 1919), banker, diplomat, soldier, came of a line of sturdy Puritans. The emigrant ancestor, Nathaniel Bacon of Stratton in Cornwall, arrived at Barnstable, Mass., in 1639. Admitted a freeman in 1646, he subsequently held several town offices of trust, was one of the seven assistants to the governor, and a member of the Council of War. His wife was Hannah, daughter of the Rev. John Mayo. Nathaniel Jr. married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Hinckley, governor of Plymouth Colony. The grandfather of Robert, Daniel Carpenter Bacon, shipped before the mast in 1809 and was in command of a ship when just over twenty. Later he was a shipowner and merchant. William Benjamin, his second son, was the father of Robert. After graduation from Harvard, he went to China as supercargo and later with his elder brother became a member of the firm of Daniel G. Bacon & Company. His second wife was Emily Crosby Low, a noted beauty. Robert Bacon, the second son of that marriage, was born at Jamaica Plain, Mass. He went to Hopkinson's School and Harvard, graduating in June 1880, the youngest man of a class which included Theodore Roosevelt, of whom he was always a devoted friend and follower. His closest friend at college was Dr. Henry Jackson, who writes of him: "He was singularly blessed by nature with a superb physique to which was added a manly beauty; he may well be chosen as a type of the perfection of manhood at its best." His superb physique placed him in a position to excel in any sport. He was a member of the freshman football team; first base and captain of the freshman baseball team; member of the University football team, and one year its captain; winner in heavy-weight sparring, 100-yard dash, and quarter-mile run; and number seven in the university crew.

After a trip around the world, he settled down to a business career with the firm of Lee, Higginson & Company, whom he left in 1883 to become a partner in the firm of E. Rollins Morse & Brother. On Oct. 10 of this same year he married Martha Waldron Cowdin of New England ancestry, but then living in New York. He remained with the Morse firm until 1894, when he accepted a partnership in J. P. Morgan & Company. Three of the most important enterprises in which Bacon took part in the latter firm are given by Dr. James Brown Scott, his biographer, as: the relief of the Government in the panic of 1895; the formation of the United States Steel Corporation in 1901, and the negotiations resulting in the Northern Securities Company. He resigned from the firm in 1903.

In July 1905, Elihu Root was offered the secretaryship of state by President Roosevelt to succeed John Hay. In carrying out his own and Hay's policies, Root needed an assistant secretary who could understand and help to execute them and he offered the position to Robert Bacon. During Root's absence at the Pan-American Conference at Rio de Janeiro in the summer of 1906 and his subsequent trip through South America, Bacon was acting secretary. Early in 1909, Root resigned and was succeeded on Jan. 27 by Bacon for the few remaining weeks of Roosevelt's administration. President Taft appointed him ambassador to France in December 1909, but he resigned in January 1912, to become Fellow of Harvard, of which he had been an Overseer. At the request of the Carnegie Endowment he made a trip to South America in 1913. His addresses on this trip were published in a volume entitled, *For Better Relations with Our Latin American Neighbors: A Journey to South America* (1915).

From the outbreak of the World War Bacon realized its seriousness and that ultimately the United States would be forced to take part. As early as August 1914, he sailed for France, and while Mrs. Bacon was raising funds for the "American Ambulance," he was personally helping the work and even driving an ambulance at the front. Toward the end of 1915 he made a hasty trip to the United States, where he threw himself into the campaign for preparedness and attended the military training camp at Plattsburg, N. Y., which he entered as a private. In the summer of 1916, he announced his candidacy for the United States Senate on a platform of support for the Allies and preparedness. Although not running as a candidate of the regular organization, he polled an enormous vote in the primaries (144,366 of a total of 297,739), even with the handicap of being a last-minute candidate.

In May 1917, he was commissioned a major in the quartermaster corps of the Army and sailed for France with Gen. Pershing. His military service was distinguished and as Chief of the American Military Mission at British General Headquarters his work was most valuable. Shortly before the Armistice he was promoted to be a lieutenant-colonel of infantry and left Paris for home in March 1919, a physical wreck from over-exertion and strain. On May 29 of the same year he died. Never a great man, he was of the highest type of sportsman, business man, and

public servant. His entire devotion to his country, his integrity, his patriotism and sacrifices for the Allied cause were notable.

[The chief source of information is *Robert Bacon. Life and Letters* (1923), by James Brown Scott, an admirable and sympathetic biog. by a competent scholar and warm friend. Bacon's important papers while secretary of state and his dispatches to the department while ambassador to France may be found in *Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1906–12, and in the MS. archives of the State Dept.]

M. S.

BACON, THOMAS (*c.* 1700–May 24, 1768), clergyman of the Church of England in Maryland, leader in educational and philanthropic activity there, was born on the Isle of Man. He was a brother of Sir Anthony Bacon, who was a graduate of the University of Dublin, a London shipping merchant with Maryland connections, and later a resident of Glamorganshire. Mention is made of another brother who kept a coffee-house in Dublin ("Callister Papers," quoted in *Maryland Historical Magazine,* VI, 219). Thomas acquired a good education, and if the British Museum catalogue is correct in this instance, he was "of the Custom House, Dublin" in 1736–37, when he published *A Compleat System of the Revenue of Ireland, in Its Branches of Import, Export, and Inland Duties.* On Sept. 23, 1744, having previously studied under Thomas Wilson, Bishop of Sodor and Man, he was by him ordained deacon at Kirk Michael; and on Mar. 10, 1744/5 he was made priest "in order to go into the Plantations" (John Keble, *The Life of the Right Reverend Father in God, Thomas Wilson,* 1863, II, 920). He arrived at Oxford, Talbot County, Md., in October of the same year, having been appointed domestic chaplain to the Proprietary, an honorary office apparently, though it seems to have ensured his support of the Proprietary, a support which later made him many enemies who did not hesitate to attack his character, and interfere with his projects (see *Archives of Maryland,* IX, "Correspondence of Gov. Horatio Sharpe," ed. by Wm. H. Browne, 1890, p. 417; also Ethan Allen, "Rev. Thomas Bacon," *Quarterly Church Review,* XVII, 448). He was appointed curate of St. Peter's parish, and at the death of the incumbent, a few months later, he became rector. In 1747 he made Dover his residence.

A man of varied ability, social proclivities, and musical talent, he soon became popular and influential. Although himself a slaveholder, he was a pioneer in the education of the negro. He preached two sermons to slaves addressing them as "my dear black brothers and sisters," and assuring them as large a share in the kingdom of heaven as the greatest man alive, if they behaved themselves aright (*Two Sermons Preached to a Congregation of Black Slaves at the Parish Church of S. P. In the Province of Maryland, By an American Pastor,* London, 1749). The motive of their publication, he says, was to "raise a spirit of emulation among his brethren to attempt something in their several parishes toward bringing home so great a number of wandering souls to Christ." They were followed by *Four Sermons upon the Great and Indispensable Duty of All Christian Masters and Mistresses to Bring up Their Negro Slaves in the Knowledge and Fear of God,* London (1750), which was placed in the list of books for distribution by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge in England. In 1750 he inaugurated a movement which resulted in the establishment of a Charity Working School, a free manual-training school, in which there was no distinction of sex, race, or condition of servitude. Troubles came to him in his later years. His wife died in 1755, and his only son was drowned at sea. The same year a mulatto, Rachel Beck, charged him with an offense against law and morals. He seems to have been acquitted, or the case dropped, for later he sued her successfully for slander. In 1757 he married Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Thomas Bozman of Oxford Neck, whom in 1755 he had united to Rev. John Belchier. The latter proved to be an adventurer with a wife living in England. For not publishing the banns or securing licenses in either case, Bacon was heavily fined. Nevertheless, in 1759, he was appointed reader at All Saints, Frederick, the most valuable living in the Province, and in 1762 was inducted as rector. Here also he exerted himself in behalf of popular education. After years of painstaking labor, and in the face of political opposition, he finally published in 1765, a work of much importance, *Laws of Maryland at Large,* etc., a compilation of all the laws of the Province, beginning with the first legislation in 1638. It was printed in Annapolis, and "in many particulars it formed the most elaborate and laborious piece of editorial work until that time undertaken in America," and "it happens also to have been a specimen of typography which was not exceeded in dignity and beauty by any production of a colonial press" (L. C. Wroth, "The Reverend Thomas Bacon, and His Edition of the Laws of Maryland at Large," *A History of Printing in Colonial Maryland,* 1922). Bacon died in Frederick but his burial place is now unknown.

[In addition to references above, see S. A. Harrison and O. Tilghman, *Hist. of Talbot County, Md.,* I (1915); B. C. Steiner, *Hist. of Education in Md.* (1894); *Md. Hist. Mag.* (1911); W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit,* V (1859).]

H. E. S.

BADEAU, ADAM (Dec. 29, 1831–Mar. 19, 1895), author, soldier, diplomat, the son of Nicholas Badeau, a descendant of a French Huguenot family, was born in New York City, received a secondary-school education at Tarrytown, N. Y., and wrote articles for newspapers. He then procured an appointment as clerk in the State Department. At the outbreak of the Civil War, Badeau became an aide on the staff of Gen. T. W. Sherman, and in 1862 on that of Gen. Q. A. Gillmore. On Apr. 8, 1864, Gen. Grant announced the appointment of "Lt. Col. Adam Badeau" as a military secretary on his staff. Grant seems to have relied heavily on Badeau's abilities, and on Feb. 20, 1865, recommended that he be made colonel by brevet. During these two years began the friendship that so completely made the remainder of Badeau's life—he became attached to the person and fortunes of Grant. He continued on Grant's staff until March 1869, retiring in May with the rank of brigadier-general by brevet. After Grant's inauguration as president, Badeau became secretary of the legation at London, and in May 1870 was appointed consul-general at that port. He remained in London almost all the time until 1881 except as he accompanied Grant for a time on his travels. In 1881 he was nominated by Garfield to be chargé d'affaires at Copenhagen, but the nomination met opposition in the Senate. In 1882 he accepted the position of consul-general at Havana, where he busied himself, in addition to his ordinary duties, in making a report on the defenses of Havana, and in writing an article for the *Century* (February 1884) on "Lieut.-Gen. Sheridan." In 1884 Badeau disagreed with the administration policy in regard to Cuba, on the ground that the interests of Americans there were being "grossly neglected"; and he declared also that "culpable frauds" had been committed at the Havana consulate. When the state department failed to investigate the accusation, Badeau resigned (Badeau, *Grant in Peace*, 1887, pp. 535, 542, 549, 552, 556–57, 559, 560). On his return to America, he collaborated with Grant on an article about the battle of Shiloh, and at the latter's suggestion went to live at Grant's house to aid in the preparation of the General's *Memoirs*. His connection with this task ended in May 1885. After Grant's death in the same year Badeau wrote many articles on military and other subjects. He died at Ridgewood, N. J., Mar. 19, 1895. The career of Badeau was to an unusual degree concerned with the activities of a single associate—Gen. Grant. His *Military History of Ulysses S. Grant* (in 3 vols., 1868, 1881) is a technical work of high order (J. K. Hosmer, *Outcome of the Civil War*, 1907, p. 308; Henry Adams, *The Education of Henry Adams*, 1907, p. 263). Badeau's *Grant in Peace* (1887) is a detailed study of Grant's activities and characteristics, and not least informing are Badeau's admissions concerning the weaknesses of President Grant. Cabinet appointments were determined upon, he asserts, partly because Grant liked the appointees as companions or as personal friends, and in part because Grant was unwilling to have any "rivals near the throne." As a whole, the volume deserves a high place in the literature of the period of political reconstruction.

[The best source of information about Badeau is his volume *Grant in Peace* (1887), esp. the coll. of letters in ch. 50. See also *Mil. Hist. of Ulysses S. Grant* (1868, 1881), II, 19–20. Other writings of Badeau are *The Vagabond* (1859), *Conspiracy: A Cuban Romance* (1885), *Aristocracy in England* (1886). See J. D. Cox in J. N. Larned, *Lit. of Am. Hist.* for estimates of the *Mil. Hist.*; W. H. Powell, *List of Officers of the Army of the U. S. 1779–1900*; obituary in *N. Y. Evening Post*, Mar. 20, 1895; *Ann. Cyc.* 1895 (1896).] C.R.L.

BADGER, GEORGE EDMUND (Apr. 17, 1795–May 11, 1866), jurist, secretary of the navy, senator, was born in New Bern, N. C. His father, Thomas Badger, a native of Windham, Conn., after attending Yale, went to New Bern, where he studied law and, in 1793, married Lydia, a daughter of Richard Cogdell, a Revolutionary leader. He died early, after attaining some distinction at the bar, leaving a widow and several children. George, the first child and only son, attended a local academy and was for two years a student at Yale, but was forced, on account of poverty, to leave without graduating. Returning to New Bern he studied law and was admitted to the bar at the age of nineteen, and soon thereafter, by appointment, became solicitor for his district. In 1814 he served for a short time as aide with the rank of major in the militia which was called out to repel a threatened British invasion. Two years later he was elected to the House of Commons by the borough town of New Bern, and at the conclusion of the session he moved to Hillsboro to take the practise of Thomas Ruffin, who had been elevated to the superior bench. There he remained several years, moving finally to Warrenton, the home of his wife, Rebecca, daughter of Gov. James Turner. In 1820 he was elected a judge of the superior court and served five years, resigning to begin the practise of law in Raleigh. His first wife having died, he married Mary, daughter of Col. William Polk, and sister of Leonidas Polk, later bishop and Confederate general. Upon her death he married a widow, Delia Williams, daughter of Sherwood Haywood of Raleigh, who survived him.

Born and educated a Federalist, Badger separated from the party during the War of 1812, and was in 1828 an ardent supporter of Jackson, who was confidently expected to appoint him attorney-general. He broke with Jackson in 1832, by 1836 had become a Whig, and in 1841 was appointed secretary of the navy by President Harrison. As he resigned when the cabinet broke up under President Tyler, he had, as secretary, little opportunity to make any lasting contribution to the navy. He recommended, however, a home squadron to patrol the Caribbean and the Gulf, and he secured authority for the construction of two steam vessels. In 1846 he was elected to the United States Senate and served until 1855. Entering in the midst of the Mexican War, he strongly opposed the policies of the administration. He combated the Wilmot Proviso but believed it constitutional. He was in favor of all the compromise measures of 1850 except the abolition of the slave trade in the District of Columbia. His influence, with that of his colleague, Willie P. Mangum, secured the success of the compromise advocated by Daniel Webster in the Seventh-of-March speech. Badger refused to accept the doctrine of "squatter sovereignty," but he voted for the Kansas-Nebraska Act, later regarding this as the greatest mistake of his political life. A nationalist in theory, he was nevertheless in practise in full accord with his section in questions having a bearing upon slavery. Shortly before he left the presidency, Fillmore, after the Senate had been polled as to confirmation, nominated Badger for associate justice of the Supreme Court. But the Senate failed to act; Badger's residence outside the circuit where the vacancy was, and the control of the Senate by the Democrats, combined to defeat him. When he retired, two years later, the Senate paid him the tribute of a unanimous resolution of regret.

Upon his retirement, Badger continued the practise of law. He served for a number of years as regent of the Smithsonian Institution and he was chairman of the county court of Wake. His only other public service was in the crisis of 1860–61, when he took an active and leading part in the organization of the Constitutional Union party and was a candidate for elector on the Bell and Everett ticket. In February 1861 the legislature submitted to the people the question of a convention and provided for the election of delegates at the same time. Badger was elected as a Union candidate, but the people refused the call and the delegates, in consequence, never met. In May he was also elected to the convention called for the purpose of seceding. A nationalist as ever, he could not accept secession as a constitutional doctrine, and he offered in the convention a declaration of independence. After its rejection, however, he finally voted for the ordinance of secession and later signed it. During the duration of the convention (1861–62) he supported the war with vigor, if not enthusiasm. His health failed in 1863, but he lingered for three years afterwards.

A wide reader, Badger had unusual capacity to assimilate and use what he learned. He was a combination of scholar, orator, lawyer, and humorist, with more than a touch of statesmanship added. In appearance he was impressive with a fine figure and striking head and face. In spite of his brilliance in law and politics, he lacked something of power, the humorous flippancy which characterized him being, perhaps, a good index to the reasons for the deficiency. His chief success was at the bar. His presentation was at once brilliant and persuasive. He won distinction and success in the trial courts by his power with a jury, and in the courts of appeal by his powerful exposition of the law. The peer of any in North Carolina in a day of great lawyers, he ranked before the Supreme Court of the United States with Webster, Crittenden, Berrien, and Cushing.

[The *Cong. Globe,* 1849–55, and the various newspapers of the time, are the most important sources. Wm. A. Graham's *Discourse in Memory of the Life and Character of the Hon. Geo. E. Badger* (1866) is the most extended study and is valuable as the view of a close pol. and personal friend. A sketch by S. A. Ashe appears in the *Biog. Hist. of N. C.* VII, 35–44, and a somewhat exaggerated estimate of Badger's work as secretary of the navy, by P. M. Wilson, is in the *N. C. Booklet,* vol. XV, no. 3.] J. G. de R. H.

BADGER, JOSEPH (Mar. 14, 1708–1765), colonial portrait painter, was unknown to Dunlap, Tuckerman, and other early historians of American art. He first received his rightful recognition through the researches of Frank W. Bayley (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* XLIX, 259–61) and Lawrence Park (*Ibid.,* LI, 158–201). Only a few references to him had previously been made, as in *The Diary of William Bentley* (vol. III, 1911, p. 368), in which portraits of Rev. Otis Gray of the Brick Church, Boston, are said to be "both by Badger." Beginning with little definite information, the investigators recovered a fairly complete story of a painter many of whose portraits are of historic importance. Park prepared a list of about eighty canvases attributed by him to Badger, this including several works formerly attributed to Copley, Blackburn, and Smibert. Badger was born at Charlestown, Mass., a son of Stephen Badger, tailor, and Mary (Kettell) Badger. He was baptized and called into full communion of the First Church of Charlestown, Jan. 21, 1728. He married, June 2, 1731, Katharine,

daughter of Samuel and Katharine (Smith) Felch of Reading. About 1733 Mr. and Mrs. Badger seem to have moved into Boston, for Brattle Square Church records show baptisms of four of their children, the first on Jan. 20, 1734. Badger is recorded variously as painter and glazier, his portraiture presumably occupying only a portion of his time. Dedham town records show that he painted a house there in 1739. It is reasonably conjectured that he was poor and of slight social consequence. He died intestate in the summer of 1765, and his widow was appointed administratrix of his insolvent estate, on Aug. 23, 1765. She later was given by the court permission to sell his small house of three rooms on the west side of Temple St. to pay his debts. An inventory set the value of his estate at £140 10s., including "a Coat-of-Arms," "a chaise Body and Carriage" and "pots, brushes, stones, etc."

From whom Badger learned to paint is unknown. His works were not signed. He apparently had low prices, even as estimated by eighteenth-century standards. In 1758 he received £5 each for the large portraits of Timothy Orne and wife. In 1764 he was paid by George Bray £12 for making five pictures. His talent was not that of a sensitive and highly competent painter. He had well-defined mannerisms. The heads were placed high on the canvas; in color they were often livid and unlovely. The hands were badly drawn. The best Badger portraits nevertheless have the charm of sincere, stiff, archaic work. His children are peculiarly naive. From about 1748, when Smibert's health was failing, until about 1760, when the vogue of John Singleton Copley was beginning, Badger was the principal portrait painter in Boston. That he taught Copley to paint has been conjectured by Park, though without evidence other than that of a general resemblance between the Badger portraits and the earliest of Copley's works. The Pelhams and Badgers were near neighbors in Boston, but Peter Pelham, painter and engraver, was himself capable of instructing the boys of his household, Copley and Henry Pelham, both of whom became artists. Among notable portraits by Badger are those of James Bowdoin (Bowdoin College), Rev. William Cooper (Massachusetts Historical Society), Rev. Ellis Gray and Rev. Thomas Prince (American Antiquarian Society, Worcester), Mrs. Norton Quincy (Worcester Art Museum), Miss Mary McIntosh Royall (New England Historical and Genealogical Society, Boston).

[In addition to the references above, a brief account of Badger is given in the supplementary list of artists in William Dunlap's *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the United States* (Bayley and Goodspeed ed., 1918), III, 282.] F.W.C.

BADGER, JOSEPH (Feb. 28, 1757–Apr. 5, 1846), pioneer missionary, was a descendant, in the fourth generation, of Giles Badger, who came from England about the year 1635 and settled in Newbury, Mass. He was the son of Henry and Mary (Langdon) Badger. Born in Wilbraham, Mass., he was brought up in rural remote Peru, Mass., without educational advantages. Three weeks after the battle of Lexington, when eighteen years old, he enlisted. He engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill and later was with the expedition to Canada. His versatility is evidenced by his being called to act as nurse, physician, and cook, in addition to making mechanical comforts for the sick and wounded. Honorable discharge was granted after two years' service and he came to Connecticut just at the time the British burned Danbury, only to reënlist and serve a year as orderly sergeant. Hiring out as a weaver in New Preston, Conn., he proved himself rapid and expert. To improve his limited education he became a boarder in the family of Rev. Jeremiah Day, the Congregational pastor, father of President Day of Yale College, then a six-year-old boy and as advanced as Badger was in his twenty-second year. He prepared for Yale, supporting himself during his course by manual labor, teaching day and singing schools and doing college chores. In his senior year he constructed a planetarium for which the Corporation awarded him $100. He graduated creditably in 1785. Two years later he was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in Blandford, Mass., and served with success for thirteen years. In 1800 he was appointed by the Missionary Society of Connecticut as one of the earliest missionaries to Ohio. For a year he labored as itinerant preacher to the sparse wilderness settlements and even to the Indians through an interpreter. He founded the first church on the Western Reserve at Austinburg. Convinced of the future development and importance of this territory he returned to Massachusetts and placing wife, six children, and a few necessary articles of household furniture in a covered wagon he started westward. The trip took over two months, as they encountered snow, mud, streams, and forests. The next twenty-five years were spent in arduous, often perilous, missionary pilgrimages, and the peace and prosperity of the churches in those new settlements during that period were largely due to his indefatigable toil, wise counsel, and earnest preaching. During the War of 1812 he was invited to visit the forces sent to guard the frontier and without consent or consultation was

appointed by Gen. Harrison as brigade chaplain. In his seventieth year, when the task of travel and toil became too great, he received a pension of ninety-six dollars as a Revolutionary soldier and planned retirement. The ruling spirit, still strong, however, could not refuse an invitation from a small group of immigrants in Gustavus, Ohio. He organized a church, became the settled pastor, and served eight years. His long and constantly used voice grew feeble and he was dismissed at his own request on June 26, 1835. His declining days he spent with his only surviving daughter at Perrysburg, Ohio, where he died in his ninetieth year. He was twice married: in October 1784 to Lois Noble, who died Aug. 4, 1818; and in April 1819 to Abigail Ely of North Wilbraham, Mass.

[Badger's autobiography in *Am. Quart. Reg.*, XIII, 317–28 (also in H. N. Day, *Memoir of Joseph Badger*, 1851), gives in fulness and detail four-score years of his life. In Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit*, III (1858), the editor completes the life, followed by two appreciations, one written by President Pierce of Western Reserve Coll. See also F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, IV (1907), and *Conn. Courant*, Apr. 21, 1846. Letters of Badger were published in the *Am. Pioneer*, June, Aug. 1843, and in the *Conn. Evangelical Mag.*, Dec. 1800, Mar., Sept. 1801, Feb., Sept. 1803, Mar. 1804, Feb. 1806.]

S. S.

BADGER, OSCAR CHARLES (Aug. 12, 1823–June 20, 1899), naval officer, was the son of Albert Allen and Asenath (Crosby) Badger, and eighth in descent from Giles Badger, one of the original settlers of the town of Newbury, Mass., in 1635. He was born at Mansfield, Conn., and was appointed to the Naval Academy in 1841 by his cousin, George E. Badger of North Carolina, at that time secretary of the navy. In 1843, as a midshipman on board the *Saratoga*, he took part in the destruction of the Berribee villages on the west coast of Africa, and in 1855 he commanded a landing party from the *John Adams*, which attacked and destroyed the town of Vutia, Fiji Islands, both of these expeditions being punitive in character. During the Mexican War he served on board the frigate *Mississippi*. During the winter and spring of 1862, while in command of the gunboat *Anacostia*, he was engaged in a number of attacks on the Confederate batteries in the Potomac River and Aequia Creek, as well as in the shelling of Yorktown, Va., and the defenses at Gloucester Point. In different attacks on Forts Wagner, Gregg, and Sumter he commanded with distinction the ironclads *Patapsco* and *Montauk* in the summer of 1863. On Sept. 1 of that year, while he was acting as fleet captain on board the *Weehawken* during a night bombardment of Forts Moultrie and Sumter, his right leg was shattered by an iron splinter driven by a round shot which struck the *Weehawken's* turret. The commander-in-chief, Admiral John A. Dahlgren [*q.v.*], in his report to the secretary of the navy dated Sept. 2, said, "I shall feel greatly the loss of Capt. Badger's services at this time; he has been with me for more than eight years, and his sterling qualities have rendered him one of the very best ordnance officers in the Navy" (*Official Records*, ser. I, vol. XIV, pp. 532–33). From this wound Badger never fully recovered. He was promoted to be commander July 25, 1866, captain Nov. 25, 1872, and commodore Nov. 15, 1881. His last duty was from 1882 to 1885 as commandant of the navy yard at Boston, and he retired on Aug. 12, 1885. He was considered one of the most brilliant officers in the navy, and an authority on ordnance. He was married on Oct. 27, 1852, to Margaret, daughter of Capt. Z. M. Johnston, and had two children, Annie Mansfield, who became the wife of Major-General G. F. Elliott, and Rear Admiral Charles J. Badger. The destroyer *Badger* was launched and named in his honor in 1918.

[See publications of the Office of Naval Records and Library, Navy Dept., Washington, as well as manuscripts preserved there; Daniel Ammen, *The Atlantic Coast*, being the second volume of the series, "The Navy in the Civil War" (1883), pp. 128, 134.]

E. B.

BADIN, STEPHEN THEODORE (July 17, 1768–Apr. 19, 1853), missionary, had the distinction of being the first Roman Catholic priest to be ordained within the United States, whither he had come in 1792, fleeing from the dangers of the revolutionary party in France. A native of Orleans, and the eldest son of the family, he had been destined for the church and educated at Collège Montaigu, Paris, and at the Sulpician Seminary in Orleans. After arrival in America, he continued his studies at Baltimore, where, on May 25, 1793, he received from Bishop Carroll the order of priesthood. Soon thereafter he was appointed to the new state of Kentucky where he estimated there were about three hundred Catholics, widely scattered. En route to his missionary parish he visited the French settlement at Gallipolis, where he baptized several children. His first mass in Kentucky was celebrated in a private house; and for several years Badin's home was the saddle, as he traveled from one isolated community to another, cheering, comforting, exhorting, advising the members of his scattered flock. He was imperfectly acquainted with the language of his parishioners, knew nothing of backwoods life, and suffered many hardships, often being hungry, cold, and weary.

He built for himself a small log shelter in the present Marion County, fifty-seven miles south of Louisville, which he called St. Stephen's; and by the end of the century had founded six or seven small log chapels, and was vicar-general for Kentucky. The first Catholic chapel in Lexington was built in 1800, and a brick Gothic church dedicated there by Father Badin May 19, 1812 (George W. Ranck, *History of Lexington, Ky.*, 1872, pp. 190–92). At Louisville he built the first chapel, named for St. Louis, in 1811. His people were poor, and so was the priest; yet his wit, learning, and good temper made him popular, and he made friends among the Protestants of his region, notably with Col. Joseph Daviess, after whose death at the battle of Tippecanoe, Father Badin composed a Latin elegy in his honor ("Epicedium," translated in Martin J. Spaulding, *Sketches of the Catholic Missions to Kentucky*, 1844, Appendix). Another poem, "Carmen Sacrum," was written on the appointment of his early friend, Benedict J. Flaget, as bishop of Bardstown. Not long afterward, however, Father Badin had a disagreement with the Bishop on land titles, and in 1819 retired to his native land. There he remained for nine years, employed in collecting funds for his American missions, in a visit to Rome, and in serving parishes in France and Belgium.

In 1828 the call of America grew so loud that Badin determined to return, all the more that his younger brother, François Vincent Badin, was a priest on the northern frontier, and his Sulpician colleague, Gabriel Richard, was preaching in Detroit. Arrived at this place Father Stephen Badin accepted a parish of French Canadians at Monroe, on River Raisin, where he officiated about eighteen months. Then came a call to an Indian mission in western Michigan, where the Potawatomi lived and retained memories of Father Claude Allouez [*q.v.*], who a century and a half earlier had lived and died in this locality. The Chief Pokagon received Badin into his own cabin, and the priest labored zealously to reclaim those of the redmen that had listened to Baptist teachings. He was present at the treaty of 1832 and wrote from the treaty grounds letters asking a land grant for his services (*American Catholic Historical Researches*, 1911, XXVIII, new series, VII, 197–202). He obtained at about this time, either by purchase or grant, the land upon which the University of Notre Dame is built at South Bend, Ind.; thither his remains were removed in 1904, and a replica of his first log church on this site now stands on the University grounds, containing a memorial tablet to his memory.

While among the Potawatomi Badin visited the village of Chicago, where he performed several baptisms and said mass in private houses. After leaving the Indian mission he became a peripatetic priest, visiting many of his old parishes, serving for a few months here and there throughout the West. He grew somewhat eccentric with age, but for the sake of his services in the past he was everywhere received with loving devotion. He died at the house of Bishop Purcell in Cincinnati. Tall, slender, wiry, and indefatigable in efforts for his people, Badin was a well-known figure in the West for over half a century. A colleague said on seeing his portrait, "I never saw him quiet before."

[The best life is that of W. J. Howlett in *U.S. Cath. Hist. Soc., Hist. Records and Studies*, IX, 101–146. Badin's own book, *Origin et Progrès de la Mission du Kentucky, Etats Unis d' Amérique par un Témoin Oculaire*, was published in Paris, 1821, and gives a vivid account of his early Kentucky mission; several of Badin's letters from the Potawatomi mission are in *Annales de la Propagation de la Foi*, XXIII, 154–77. See also Ben J. Webb, *Centenary of Catholicity in Kentucky* (1884); and Martin J. Spaulding, *Sketches of Cath. Missions of Kentucky* (1844), written with the assistance of Badin; there is a brief sketch in *Ill. Cath. Hist. Mag.*, IV, 155; and an account of his tomb at South Bend, *Ibid.*, V, 223.]

L. P. K.

BAER, GEORGE FREDERICK (Sept. 26, 1842–Apr. 26, 1914), lawyer, railroad president, the son of Maj. Solomon Baer and Anna (Baker) Baer, was descended from a German immigrant who arrived prior to 1740 and settled in Northampton County, Pa., in 1743. Born near Lavansville, Somerset County, Pa., Baer received some schooling at the Somerset Institute and the Somerset Academy and at thirteen became a "printer's devil" in the office of the *Somerset Democrat*. After working there for two years he entered Franklin and Marshall College at Lancaster. In 1861 he and his brother Henry became owners of the *Democrat*. Its political policy aroused resentment, and at one time a mob attempted to wreck the plant, but was beaten off. About this time Henry enlisted as a soldier, and George was left to manage the paper alone. He set type, wrote articles, and looked after the business generally, and at odd hours studied law. In the summer of 1862 he organized a company, of which he was elected captain, for the 133rd Pennsylvania Volunteers. The regiment was assigned to Humphreys's division of the Army of the Potomac and joined the army at the time of the second battle of Bull Run. Capt. (afterward Maj.) Baer served through the Antietam, Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville campaigns and was then detailed as adjutant-general of the 2nd brigade. At the end of a year's service he re-

turned to Somerset and resumed the study of law. He was admitted to the bar in April 1864. On June 14, 1866, he was married to Emily Kimmel.

Two years later he removed to Reading, where he soon built up a lucrative practise. He successfully conducted several damage suits against the Philadelphia & Reading Railway Company, and the energy and ability which he displayed in this work brought about, in 1870, his employment by the company as counsel. He invested his earnings in various manufacturing enterprises, in many of which he became a director, and he was also chosen a director of the Reading company. Early in his business career he formed an association with John Pierpont Morgan as the magnate's local representative and coöperated with him in his plan of uniting all the coal-carrying roads with terminals in New York City. The plans of the Reading company, under the presidency of Angus McLeod, for the invasion of the territory of the New Haven railroad, then dominated by Morgan, were opposed by Baer, who withdrew from the company. Morgan later gained control of the Reading properties, and in the reorganization that followed (1901) Baer was made president of each of the three Reading companies and was later placed at the head of the Central company.

Under his administration the Reading properties are said to have prospered. But early in May 1902, came the great strike declared by the United Mine Workers of America throughout the anthracite region—a strike in which 147,000 wage-earners were thrown out of employment and an invested capital of $500,000,000 went idle. From the beginning the owners maintained a stubborn refusal to deal with the strikers. Morgan declined to be drawn into the controversy, and Baer at once became the leader of the interests resisting the strike. "We will give no consideration," he declared, in June, in a statement to the press, "to any plan of arbitration or mediation or to any interference on the part of any outside party." He was brought into instant and nation-wide fame by the publication of a letter dated July 17, and signed "Geo. F. Baer," addressed to W. F. Clark, of Wilkes-Barre, who had appealed to him to end the strike. "The rights and interests of the laboring man," read one of the sentences, "will be protected and cared for—not by the labor agitators, but by the Christian men to whom God in his infinite wisdom has given the control of the property interests of the country, and upon the successful management of which so much depends." A storm of jeering and denunciatory comments followed the appearance of the letter. The time was one of great popular dissatisfaction with the policies of the monied interests, and this inept expression of an obstinate and anti-social attitude served only to array public sentiment more solidly against the owners. For a time, however, they ignored the warning. As late as Sept. 16 Baer gave out a statement that the operators would not yield. President Roosevelt, however, now intervened, and on Oct. 3 brought together representatives of both sides in a conference. Eleven days later the President announced that the operators were willing to arbitrate. Under a provisional agreement the miners resumed work Oct. 23, and a commission, during the following winter, settled, for the time being, the outstanding issues of the conflict.

Baer's later life was uneventful. He was a student and spent much time with his books. Occasionally he spoke at public dinners. In mental characteristics it was said of him that he was more like Morgan than any other man with whom the great magnate was ever associated, both having to a superlative degree the qualities of determination, confidence, and self-control. His manner was quiet, and though he was sometimes brusque in business contracts he is said to have been always genial to friends. He is reported to have had a keen sense of humor, but the evidence is not conclusive. He was about five feet six inches in height, of wiry build, slight and erect, and with a well-poised head. "He had," writes one observer, "almond eyes, like those of an Oriental." All his portraits show a mustache and short beard. He left a fortune estimated at $15,000,000.

[Comment upon Baer's character and policies will be found in many of the newspapers and periodicals of the summer and fall of 1902. A number of biog. sketches have appeared. A "character sketch" by W. C. Hollister in the *Cosmopolitan* for Dec. 1902, except for certain errors in details, will be found helpful. The long obituaries in the *Sun* (N. Y.) and the *N. Y. World* for Apr. 27, 1914, give much information, though not all of it is dependable. The brief sketch that appeared in *Who's Who in America* during the last twelve years of his life corrects some of the blunders as to events and dates appearing elsewhere. An interesting light on the fiscal manipulations of the Reading companies is given by Charles Edward Russell, in *Railroad Melons, Rates and Wages* (1922). The biog., *Henry Demarest Lloyd* (1912), by Caro Lloyd (later Mrs. George H. Strobell), gives a vivid account of some phases of the coal strike and of the work of the commission. It contains also (vol. II, opp. p. 190) a facsimile of the letter which made Baer for a time famous. On his seventieth birthday, nearly ten years after the letter was published, Baer denied its authenticity. He did not allege that a forgery had been committed, but only that words had been ascribed to him which he had not used. In just what sense his disavowal of the letter is to be accepted cannot be determined. The document bears every sign of genuineness.]

W. J. G.

BAERMANN, CARL (July 9, 1839–Jan. 17, 1913), teacher of music, pianist, was the fourth of his family to attain distinction as a musician. His grandfather, Heinrich Joseph, born at Potsdam Feb. 14, 1784, was one of the greatest clarinet players of all time, an intimate friend of Mendelssohn and von Weber, both of whom, inspired by his masterly playing, wrote compositions for him. Having attracted the interest of Prince Louis Ferdinand of Prussia, he was placed in the regiment of guards at Berlin, and later went to the court band at Munich. He toured Germany, England, France, Italy, and Russia, and was everywhere acclaimed a great artist. He died in Munich, July 11, 1847, leaving not only a fame (to quote von Weber) as "a truly great artist and a glorious man," but many compositions for clarinet which are still in the repertoire of every great clarinettist. An elder brother of Heinrich was a celebrated bassoonist. Karl, son of Heinrich, who was born at Munich in 1820 and died there in 1885, like his father was a clarinettist, and became equally great. With the added prestige of his father's reputation, he toured Europe with the greatest success, though he later took a regular place in the court band at Munich, in which he had played frequently since early boyhood. Carl Jr., son of the preceding, was born in Munich and at a very early age began the study of the piano under the best teachers of his native city, among whom was Franz Lachner. Later he studied with Liszt and became one of his really favorite students. His friendship with Liszt remained unbroken and he corresponded with the master, as his father and grandfather did with von Weber, Mendelssohn, and Moscheles. He became well known through his concert performances and was appointed teacher at the Royal Music School at Munich, King Ludwig of Bavaria a little later conferring on him the title of professor. Here he taught many American students and in 1881 he obtained leave of absence to visit America, where he expected to remain two years. He decided, however, to settle in Boston and for the next twenty-four years became a large factor in the musical development of the country. He appeared as recitalist and as soloist with various symphony orchestras, but his chief influence was as a teacher. His students were numerous, the most distinguished being Mrs. H. H. A. Beach, Frederick L. Converse, and, in later years, Lee Pattison. His compositions are not numerous (only a few, including a set of twelve piano studies, having been published), but all are of high order. He married in Munich, in 1865, Beatrice von Dessauer, member of a fine Bavarian family. He returned to Europe at various times for concertizing and also to attend the performance of an orchestral work, a Festival March, in Munich. He adhered to the classical ideal both in teaching and in writing and did much to guide the musical taste of the land of his adoption. He died in Newton, Mass.

[Louis C. Elson, *Hist. of Am. Music* (1925); *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 18, 1913; *Boston Sunday Post*, Jan. 19, 1913; *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians*, vol. I, also *Am. Supp.*]

F. L. G. C.

BAGBY, ARTHUR PENDLETON (1794–Sept. 21, 1858), governor of Alabama, senator, diplomat, fourth in descent from James Bagby, a Scotchman who settled in Jamestown about 1628, was born in Louisa County, Va., in 1794, the son of Capt. James Bagby and Mary Jones of Gloucester County. Well educated for the times and enjoying the prestige of a fine Virginia name, he was induced by the unfavorable economic conditions in his home state to migrate westward as a young man. Traveling on foot, with all of his worldly goods in a pack on his back, he reached Alabama in 1818 and settled at Claiborne, in Monroe County, a distributing point for immigrants and at that time one of the most important towns in Alabama, where he found a number of fellow Virginians, read law, and was admitted to the bar in 1819. He was twice married, first to Emily Steele, of Georgia, second (1828) to Anne Elizabeth Connell, of South Carolina. His majestic personality and striking physical appearance, the fluency and grace of his speeech, his growing reputation as a criminal lawyer attracted the attention of his fellow citizens, and he was soon a notable figure in that vigorous frontier community. With a penchant for politics he entered the lower house of the state legislature in 1821 and made so favorable an impression on his colleagues that, on reëlection in 1822, he was chosen speaker, the youngest man ever to hold that office in Alabama. While continuing his legal career, Bagby was again in the House in 1824, in the state Senate in 1825, and in the House again in 1834, 1835, and 1836, serving once more as speaker in the latter year.

Although he was originally a National Republican and a supporter of John Quincy Adams, a change in his political faith appeared in 1831 when he opposed the proposal to commit Alabama to the support of a national bank. When Jackson issued his proclamation against nullification in 1832 Bagby came to his support and henceforth was a Jackson Democrat. As a result of his adherence to the Jackson cause he was nominated by the Democrats in 1837 for the

governorship and elected over S. W. Oliver, Whig, of Conecuh County, by 21,800 to 17,663. Two years later he was reëlected practically without opposition. In a series of able state papers, he urged readjustment and reform in the financial system of Alabama which was suffering from the panic of 1837 and from an inefficient and corrupt banking system. His personal influence and political prestige, however, could not avail against corrupt politics and his actual accomplishments in remedying financial conditions were small. Bagby secured the establishment of chancery courts, forced the creation of a penitentiary system, and brought about a satisfactory settlement of the irritating boundary dispute with Georgia. He advocated the improvement of river navigation, lent his support to the Bestor movement for a good system of public schools, and consistently urged support for higher education. He secured the passage of a law providing for the general ticket system of electing representatives in Congress, which scheme he advocated later in the federal Senate.

On the expiration of his term as governor (1841), Bagby was elected to the United States Senate to fill an unexpired term and in 1842 was reëlected for a full term. Here his support of the movement for the annexation of Texas created some dissatisfaction among the Democrats of Alabama, but he successfully met the opposition to his course. He opposed Tyler's aspirations for a Democratic nomination for the presidency, and, on Polk's election, became a strong administration man. Polk rewarded him in the summer of 1848 with an appointment as minister to Russia, where he served acceptably but without particular distinction from June 16, 1848, to May 14, 1849, resigning when party control changed in national politics. On his return to Alabama, he served on the committee to codify the laws of the state, his last public duty. In 1856 he removed to Mobile, where he died in 1858 during an epidemic of yellow fever. His public career was seriously marred by his utter carelessness and inefficiency in his personal financial affairs and he was constantly in great financial difficulties.

[Wm. Garrett, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Ala.* (1872), and Willis Brewer, *Ala.: Her Hist., Resources, War Record, and Public Men* (1872), are the most valuable sources of information. Accounts of Bagby's public career are in Thos. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), and Wm. Garrott Brown, *Hist. of Ala.* (1900). Bagby's defense of his course on the Texan question may be found in his *Letter to the People of Ala.* (1845). Benj. Perley Poore, *Perley's Reminiscences of Sixty Years in The National Metropolis* (1886), gives a description of his personality and appearance and contains extracts from his speech against the nomination of Tyler.]

T. H. J.

Bagby

BAGBY, GEORGE WILLIAM (Aug. 13, 1828–Nov. 29, 1883), author, editor, the eldest son of George and Virginia (Evans) Bagby, was born in Buckingham County, Va., but spent his early years in Lynchburg, where his father was a merchant. His mother died when he was a lad of six and he was sent to a boarding-school at Prince Edward Court House and to the Edgehill School at Princeton, N. J. He attended Delaware College for two years and then the University of Pennsylvania as a medical student, where he graduated in 1849. For a short time he had an office in Lynchburg, but after the success of a series of articles in the Lynchburg *Virginian* he was drawn more and more into literary work, assisting James McDonald, editor of the *Virginian,* and soon abandoning entirely the idea of practising medicine. With George Woodville Latham he purchased the Lynchburg *Express* and for two or three years during the fifties kept it going in spite of poor business management. He was later a newspaper correspondent in Washington, D. C., until 1859. In 1860 he succeeded John R. Thompson as editor of the *Southern Literary Messenger* in Richmond. At the outbreak of the Civil War, Bagby promptly joined the Confederate army, but his health, which was never robust, suffered from camp life and he was fortunately detailed for clerical work at headquarters, until he was discharged on account of ill-health. He returned to the editorship of the *Messenger,* which he retained until January 1864, but he was busy chiefly as a correspondent for papers throughout the South. His vivid pen gave a truthful picture of the Southern capital. He married in 1863 Lucy Parke Chamberlayne of Richmond by whom he had ten children. After the close of the war, he went to New York as a journalist, but the weakness of his eyes forced him to return to Virginia and undertake a career as a popular lecturer. He had tried himself out some years before with his lecture, "An Apology for Fools." His success in Virginia in 1865–66 with a new humorous lecture, "Bacon and Greens," was immediate; and later "Women Folks" and "The Disease Called Love" were equally popular. When in 1867 he became part owner of the *Native Virginian,* which he edited at Orange, Va., he continued his lectures. Three years later his friend James McDonald secured his appointment as custodian of the State Library and he held the position for three administrations. Meantime, besides contributing articles to magazines and newspapers, he traveled through Virginia giving his most famous lectures, "The Old Virginia Gentleman" and "The Virginia Negro." His *John M. Daniels'*

Latch Key (1868), published in Lynchburg, and *Canal Reminiscences* (1879), a pamphlet published in Richmond, were characteristic sketches of Virginia just after the Civil War. So popular that every educated Virginian of Bagby's generation was familiar with them were *What I Did with My Fifty Millions: by Moses Adams* (1874) and *Meekins's Twinses* (1877). Bagby's reputation during his latter days rested largely upon these slight publications, his newspaper writings, and his lectures; but it is no exaggeration to say that if he was little known outside of his native state, within it his fame was universal. He had never published a collection of his writings, but in a rural state, although lectures were usually free and money painfully lacking, he could always be sure of an audience. He died in Richmond, Va., Nov. 29, 1883. Soon after his death, his widow prepared one volume of *Selections from the Miscellaneous Writings of Dr. George W. Bagby* (1884), with a sketch of Bagby by Edward S. Gregory; a second volume followed the next year; both were privately printed in limited edition.

Bagby was the portrayer of old Virginia. The intensity of his localism is both his strength and his weakness. His pictures and his humor are so intimately a part of one place and one time that they have little universality of appeal. To Virginians who know the spirit or the memory of the life he portrayed, he is the truest as he is the most representative interpreter of the old order in their state. He was in the details of his writing a realist, but the intensity of his devotion to a passing civilization touched much that he wrote, even of humor or satire, with a feeling so intense that the spirit of his writing and its effect are idealistic. His most widely known piece is *Jud Browning's Account of Rubenstein's Playing*. His humor was homely and fresh but never subtle. His serious writing was often sentimental but always vivacious and nervously alive, and sometimes full of tender power and beauty. *The Old Virginia Gentleman, The Virginia Editor, Bacon and Greens, Flize,* and *Meekins's Twinses* are among his most characteristic writings.

[Edward S. Gregory's biog. sketch in the 1884–85 edition of the *Selections from the Miscellaneous Writings* is the usual source of the biog. accounts that have been printed. Gregory's sketch was reprinted, somewhat altered, in the edition of *The Old Virginia Gentleman and Other Sketches* (1910), ed. with an introduction by Thos. Nelson Page. The best short account, however, is by Churchill Gibson Chamberlayne in the *Lib. of Southern Lit.*, I (1909). The only full biog. is that by Jos. Leonard King, *Dr. Wm. Bagby, a Study of Virginian Lit., 1850–80* (1927).]

J. S. W.

BAILEY, ANN (1742–Nov. 22, 1825), a scout and messenger on the Virginian border, was a native of Liverpool. Her maiden name was Ann Hennis. Her father had been a soldier in the campaigns of the Duke of Marlborough. She came to America in 1761, and her life henceforth was identified with the frontier. Her first husband was Richard Trotter, a pioneer in the Shenandoah Valley. He was one of the survivors of Braddock's expedition of 1755, and, serving in Lord Dunmore's war against the Indians, was killed at the battle of Point Pleasant, Oct. 10, 1774. After his death his widow assumed male costume, and became noted as a scout and messenger along the frontier, and especially in the valley of the Kanawha. Her second husband, John Bailey, was also a border leader. She was an excellent shot, horsewoman, and an adept in woodcraft. Many stories were told of the marvellous adventures and narrow escapes from the Indians of the "White Squaw of the Kanawha." Her most famous exploit was in 1791. Fort Lee, on the site of Charleston, West Va., was besieged by Indians, and the supply of ammunition ran low. Ann Bailey made a solitary ride of about a hundred miles through a forest wilderness to the fort on the site of Lewisburg, and returned to Fort Lee with a supply of powder. The siege was raised, and the achievement has been retold in prose and in indifferent verse. To her other occupations she added those of letter carrier and express messenger. After her husband's death she lived with her son, removed with him to Ohio, and died in Gallia County in that state.

There is a dubious version of her earlier life, according to which she was born in 1700, and was kidnapped (Mrs. James R. Hopley, in *Ohio Archæological and Historical Quarterly*, 1907, pp. 340–47). If this version be credited, she performed her noted exploits in extreme old age, and lived to be 125 years old.

[Virgil A. Lewis, *Life and Times of Anne Bailey* (1891); *Ann Bailey: Thrilling Adventures of the Heroine of the Kanawha Valley* (1907), ed. by Mrs. Livia Simpson-Poffenbarger, containing accounts by Virgil A. Lewis, and by Mrs. Lillian R. Messenger.]

E. K. A.

BAILEY, ANNA WARNER (October 1758–Jan. 10, 1851), heroine of two incidents in American wars, was a native of Groton, Conn. She was an orphan, and was brought up in the family of her uncle Edward Mills. On the day of the battle of Groton Heights, Sept. 6, 1781, she missed her relative, and walked from the farm to the scene of fighting. How she found her uncle who was desperately wounded, how

she returned to the farm and conducted the wife and children to the bedside of the dying man, became one of the cherished stories of the period. Soon afterward she married Capt. Elijah Bailey, the postmaster; and in the War of 1812 "Mother Bailey" again appeared on the scene. In the summer of 1813 the British fleet was off the coast of Connecticut, blockading Commodore Decatur's vessels, and raiding or threatening attacks upon the towns. Among the soldiers at Groton who had assembled for the defense of the coast, there was a shortage of flannel, which was needed in those days as wadding for cartridges. In partial remedy for this need, Mrs. Bailey contributed her flannel petticoat, and the "martial petticoat" has become celebrated in song and story. A local chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution bears her name.

[N. H. Burnham, *Battle of Groton Heights* (1907), pp. 277–78, contains a portr. and a sketch; Frances M. Caulkins, *Hist. of New London, Conn. . . . 1612 to 1852* (1895), pp. 631–32, also gives the "flannel" story.]

E.K.A.

BAILEY, EBENEZER (June 25, 1795–Aug. 5, 1839), educator, was the son of Paul Bailey, a thrifty farmer, and Emma (Carr) Bailey. Though the youngest of four children, he was the only one sent to college. He entered Yale in 1813 and graduated four years later with honor. He then purchased, one knows not how, the goodwill and fixtures of a private school in New Haven. At the same time he started to study law. But the double work proving too much, he went to Richmond, Va., to become private tutor in the family of Col. Carter. In his journal he recorded appreciation of Southern hospitality but disapproved of Southern "frivolity." After a year in Virginia he returned to Massachusetts and established a private school for young ladies in Newburyport. In 1823, however, he left to become headmaster of the Franklin Grammar School for boys in Boston. In 1825 he married Adeline Dodge, daughter of a merchant of Newburyport. Early in the year 1826 the Girls' High School of Boston was opened and Bailey was made principal. The first high school for girls in Massachusetts and one of the first in the United States, it was looked upon as a doubtful experiment, and in 1827 the mayor, Josiah Quincy, pronounced it an "entire failure." In a *Review of the Mayor's Report* Bailey indignantly denied the mayor's assertion; and many citizens shared his indignation. The truth seems to be that the school's "failure" was that it had succeeded too well. Far more girls applied for admission the second year than limited accommodations could permit to enter. The question therefore arose whether the accommodations of the High School should be extended or the curriculum of the lower schools be advanced to meet the girls' demands. The latter alternative was chosen and the Girls' High School died. In December 1827 Bailey opened the Young Ladies' High School, a private institution which he conducted with extraordinary vigor, enthusiasm, and success. The crisis of 1837, however, brought its collapse. Pupils were withdrawn, bills remained unpaid; and Bailey, who had been generous and hospitable rather than thrifty, had to sell the school and its appurtenances. Unfortunately the man to whom he sold died insolvent after the papers had been signed but before a single payment had been made. There was nothing left for Bailey but to start life over again. This he did, opening a school for boys in Roxbury in 1838. The following year he transferred this school to Lynn. Prospects for happiness and success seemed bright once more. But toward the end of July he met with an accident and contracted lockjaw. During his brief but terrible illness his chief anxiety seems to have been, not for himself, but for his family. He was undoubtedly one of the most brilliant teachers of his day, but his abundant energies found outlet also in other channels than teaching. He was one of the founders of the American Institute of Instruction, a member of the Common Council of Boston, and a director of the House of Reformation. A writer of repute, he contributed frequently to the *Courier* and was the author of a number of poems better known in his own day than in ours. His text-books included: *The Young Ladies' Class Book, Bakewell's Philosophical Conversations* (1833) and the very popular *First Lessons in Algebra* (1833).

[Barnard's *Am. Jour. of Ed.*, XII, 215, 429–52, XIII, 243–58; E. E. Brown, "The Girls' High School of Boston," *School Review*, VII, 286–94; A. J. Inglis, *The Rise of the High School in Mass.* (1911).]

J.F.S.

BAILEY, FRANCIS (*c.* 1735–1815), printer, journalist, was the son of Robert Bailey (1708–98) and his wife Margaret McDill, early settlers in Lancaster County, Pa. On Dec. 4, 1766, Robert obtained from Thomas and Richard Penn a patent for over 230 acres of land in Sadsbury township. Meanwhile Francis, one of six children, had been bred a carpenter but had acquired from Peter Miller, the Dunkard printer at Ephrata since 1745, familiarity with making and setting type. He came forward in this occupation in 1771 when he began to publish his quarter-century series of the *Lancaster Almanac*, at first with Stewart Herbert, but after 1772 from his own shop, with the assistance of his brother Jacob and sister Abigail. In 1773 Bailey bought out

William Goddard and by Sept. 18, 1777, had completed the purchase from Christian Ilgnes of the land upon which his shop stood. Among his Lancaster issues were the almanacs mentioned, *A Sermon on Tea* (1774), a fourth edition of Paine's *Common Sense* (1776), *The Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union* (1777), *Das Pennsylvanische Zeitungs-Blat* (Feb. 4–June 24, 1778), and reprints of various foreign and domestic publications. In 1777 Bailey was also coroner of Lancaster County, and when his father joined the Whig Associators Francis served as brigade-major of state troops at Valley Forge 1777–78. In April 1778 Bailey was one of the officers charged with conducting prisoners from Winchester, Va., to Lancaster. Later in 1778 Hugh Henry Brackenridge persuaded him to join in the publication at Philadelphia of the *United States Magazine.* The first number appeared in January and the last in December 1779, but the move was important. On Jan. 13, 1780, Bailey sought patronage from the Continental Congress for an edition of its *Resolves.* This was not granted, but later in the year, following the death of his brother Jacob, the Congress authorized Bailey to publish *The Constitutions of the Several Independent States of America, The Declaration of Independence, and The Treaties between His Most Christian Majesty and the United States of America.* These made a 226-page volume of which 200 copies were printed in 1781, and other editions in 1783. Bailey became official printer for Congress and the State of Pennsylvania, with his main office at Market above Third St., Philadelphia.

On Apr. 25, 1781, Bailey began to edit *The Freeman's Journal or the North American Intelligencer,* a weekly "open to all parties but influenced by none." This journal justified its motto and became a successful paper to which all parties resorted. It supported George Bryan [*q.v.*] and the Pennsylvania constitution and helped toward a stronger national government. Prominent contributors were Bryan himself, Philip Freneau, George Osbourne, Jonathan Sergeant, and James Wilson. During this decade Bailey was also active with special imprints, including an edition of Freneau's poems, and with the invention and presentation to Washington of a style "of marginal figures for notes, certificates, etc., which could not by the ingenuity of man be counterfeited" (Washington's Diary in *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography,* XX, 44). He served also in the state militia during the critical period 1783–87 before the adoption of the national Constitution. Busy in Philadelphia, he retained his Lancaster property until 1805, and when the state legislature held its sessions there, Bailey continued his state printing at his old shop.

On Oct. 19, 1797, Robert Bailey and wife conveyed the Sadsbury estate to Francis, who erected there a large stone printing office and thenceforth divided his work between Sadsbury, Philadelphia, and his small country residence at Octoraro, fourteen miles east of Philadelphia, where the Acts of Assembly 1804–05 were printed. Gradually he withdrew from the printing business in favor of his son Robert, whose widow, Lydia Bailey [*q.v.*], carried it on after Francis's death in 1815.

[J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.,* XXI, 363; Alexander Harris, *Biog. Hist. of Lancaster County* (1872); Isaiah Thomas, *Hist. of the Art of Printing* (1810), with William McCulloch's additions in *Am. Antiq. Soc. Proc.,* Apr., 1921; E. P. Oberholtzer, *Lit. Hist. of Phila.* (1906); *Jour. of the Continental Cong.,* Lib. of Cong. ed. (1904–22); *Annals of Cong.,* 1789–1815; Phila. Directories to 1816; Phila. contemporary press, esp. the *General Advertiser,* the *Aurora,* the *Freeman's Journal,* Oswald's *Independent Gazetteer, Pa. Archives and Colonial Records;* additional help from the Librarian of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.]

C. H. L—n.

BAILEY, FRANK HARVEY (June 29, 1851–Apr. 9, 1921), engineer, naval officer, son of James and Sarah (Hurd) Bailey, was born at Cranesville, Pa. He was educated in the public schools of Gowanda, N. Y., at Scio College, Scio, Ohio, and at the United States Naval Academy, where he was in the third class of two-year cadet engineers, graduating in 1875 at the head of his class. Then followed the alternation of duty at sea and on shore usual in the navy, with promotion through the various grades. Bailey was professor of marine engineering at Cornell University 1885–88, where he gained the respect of all for his ability in his own specialty as well as his broad knowledge of engineering. In 1896 he was promoted to the position of chief engineer. Having come into the navy at a time of profound peace, most of his sea service was uneventful, but he took part under Admiral Dewey in the Battle of Manila Bay, May 1, 1898, where he was chief engineer of the *Raleigh.* Probably his most important achievement was as chief designer of the Bureau of Steam Engineering for eight years under Melville, where his ability took shape in the machinery of the famous flyers *Columbia* and *Minneapolis,* which were the fastest large vessels of their day (1890–1900). On the amalgamation of the engineer corps with the line of the navy, he became a lieutenant commander and passed through the various grades, to rear admiral. He was inspector of engineering and ordnance material for the New York

district for two years and completed his active duty by two years of service as inspector general of engineering under the Bureau of Engineering. He retired for age in 1913, but during the World War was recalled to active duty, and assigned to the design division of the Bureau of Engineering, where his ripe experience and sound judgment enabled him to render valuable service. After the war he returned to the retired list. He died suddenly of heart failure while on a visit in Arizona.

Although an engineer by genius as well as occupation, Bailey was devoted to the Service as a whole and was one of the earliest to recognize the progress of the evolution which made inevitable the amalgamation of the line and the engineer corps, with the future naval officer what Roosevelt called a "fighting engineer." This was the greatest change in naval personnel since the latter part of the seventeenth century, and the favorable attitude of Bailey and other progressive officers was an important factor in overcoming the inertia and prejudice of such a conservative organization as the navy.

Bailey was married on Dec. 28, 1881, to Anna J. Markham by whom he had three sons and one daughter. He was a handsome man, tall and portly, of amiable and engaging personality. With an unusual fund of information, he was modest to a fault, tolerant of opinions that differed from his, and always ready to listen to suggestions.

[Walter M. McFarland, "Rear Admiral Frank Harvey Bailey, U. S. N.," in *Jour. Am. Soc. Naval Engineers,* May 1921, pp. 373–76.] W. M. M.

BAILEY, GAMALIEL (Dec. 3, 1807–June 5, 1859), journalist, anti-slavery agitator, was born at Mount Holly, N. J., the son of Rev. Gamaliel Bailey, a Methodist clergyman. Soon after his son's birth, his father removed to Philadelphia, where the boy, after attending private schools, entered the Jefferson Medical College, graduating in 1827. For a few months he taught in a New Jersey country school. Then, suffering in health, he shipped before the mast on a trading vessel bound for China. At Canton so much sickness developed among the sailors that he became temporarily ship's surgeon. On returning to America he opened a physician's office, but was soon installed as editor, in Baltimore, of the *Methodist Protestant,* the short-lived organ of the sect so styled—an unusual appointment considering that Bailey had then no experience in writing and was not a church-member. This position soon failing him, he departed to St. Louis to join an expedition to Oregon, only to find the venture a fraud. Practically penniless, he walked back to Cincinnati. Here a severe epidemic of cholera broke out soon after his arrival (1831), and through friendly influence he became physician in charge of the "Hospital for Strangers," where by his heroic work he gained favorable introduction to the city. In 1833 he married Margaret Lucy Shands of Virginia. In 1834 occurred the Lane Seminary debates on slavery, which immediately enlisted the interest of Bailey, who was lecturing there on physiology. After due reflection he became an ardent abolitionist and associated himself (1836) with J. G. Birney in editing the *Cincinnati Philanthropist,* the first anti-slavery organ in the West. A year later Bailey became sole editor and proprietor. The influence of his pen in the ensuing years is evidenced by the fact that his office was thrice mobbed; on one occasion printing outfit and building were entirely destroyed but three weeks later new presses were turning out the *Cincinnati Philanthropist* as usual—a remarkable accomplishment for that time. The third assault (1843) was suppressed by the police and a reaction in Bailey's favor followed; on the strength of this he launched a daily, the *Herald.* When the American and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society decided to publish a national periodical in Washington he was the logical choice for editor-in-chief. Disposing of his Cincinnati journals, he assumed his new duties at the nation's capital in January 1847, and for twelve years efficiently served the Anti-Slavery cause through the *National Era,* a weekly journal, of which during the Frémont campaign of 1856 Bailey issued a daily edition at considerable personal sacrifice. In 1848 he again faced a mob, which for three days threatened his printing-plant and even his house, the rioters erroneously assuming his connection with the escape of certain slaves. His conduct at this time was thoroughly characteristic. Unarmed he appeared at the door of his house, and calmly entered on a frank statement of his innocence of the charge preferred and his right as an American citizen to complete freedom of utterance. His angry auditors yielded to his persuasive logic and, as he finished his appeal, dispersed. He was not molested again.

The career of the *Era* was remarkably successful. Whittier, Theodore Parker, Mrs. Southworth, Grace Greenwood, and particularly Mrs. Stowe, with *Uncle Tom's Cabin,* were contributors, but the directing mind and will were Bailey's. He exerted a wide moral and political influence for the Anti-Slavery movement, the more so because, besides integrity, good business judgment, and determination, he possessed literary ability and

a fair-minded tolerance that compelled the respect even of opponents. He condemned the Know-Nothing movement, though it cost him money and friends.

Physically he was delicate-looking, but possessed a good physique, with well-shaped head, intellectual face, and magnetic manner. Political and social Washington flocked to the gatherings at the Bailey home, where the charm and wit of host, hostess, and guests added friends to their cause. In 1853 his health necessitated a trip to Europe, and in 1859, again ill, he embarked on a second voyage thither. He died at sea but his body was brought back to Washington for burial.

[*The Atlantic Monthly*, June 1866, XVII, pp. 743–51, contains an anonymous article "A Pioneer Editor," dealing with Bailey's career. A more intimate sketch is "An American Salon," by Grace Greenwood, in the *Cosmopolitan*, Feb. 1890, VIII, 437–47. The files of the *National Era* (1847–59) reflect the mind and heart of the man. His obituary appeared in the issue of June 30, 1859, and an account of his funeral in that of July 7, 1859, with a tribute by Whittier entitled "Gamaliel Bailey."]

R. S. B.

BAILEY, JACOB (1731–Mar. 22, 1818), pioneer missionary of the Church of England in Maine, Loyalist, was born in Rowley, Mass., a descendant of James Bailey, one of the first settlers of that town. His parents, David and Mary (Hodgkins) Bailey, were poor, and as a boy he had to work long days on the farm, but he shortened his sleeping hours in order to read and write. An early distaste for democratic conditions seems to have been created in him by the disfavor with which such efforts to elevate oneself were viewed by his fellows; for in after years he referred with feeling to the "ignorance, narrowness of mind, and bigotry" which prevailed in his native town, where a boy was "whipped for saying Sir to his father," and "nothing could be more criminal than for one person to be more learned, religious, or polite, than another" (William S. Bartlet, *The Frontier Missionary: A Memoir of the Life of the Rev. Jacob Bailey*, 1853, p. 3). A composition of his fell into the hands of the village parson, Rev. Jedediah Jewett, who, impressed by its excellence, prepared the author for college. At Harvard, where he was a member of the class of 1755, he was supported largely by the gifts of the charitably inclined, and on the class list, arranged according to the social standing of its members, his name was at the bottom. For several years after graduating he taught school, first, in Kingston and Hampton, N. H., and later in Gloucester, Mass.

Although he had been licensed to preach, June 4, 1758, by the Association of Congregational Ministers in Exeter, N. H., his temperament inclined him toward the established church, and in 1759 he wrote to Dr. Caner of King's Chapel, Boston, acknowledging the loan of *Potter on Church Government*, and saying: "I have carefully perused it, with Bennet's Abridgment, and find all the objections against Episcopal Ordination, and Conformity to the Church of England, answered entirely to my satisfaction" (W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the American Pulpit*, V, 202). To secure ordination, he set sail for England on the British gunship *Hind*, and after a trying trip of twenty-eight days, reached his destination, and on Mar. 16, 1760, was ordained priest by Dr. Terrick, Bishop of Peterborough. The Society for Promoting the Gospel in Foreign Parts, appointed him Itinerant Missionary on the Eastern Frontier of Massachusetts.

This frontier extended up the Kennebec River to Canada on the north and indefinitely to the east. Arriving on the field, July 1, 1760, he fulfilled his mission faithfully for nineteen years. He brought there as his wife Sally, daughter of Dr. John Weeks of Hampton, N. H., whom he married in August 1761. He lived first in the barracks of Fort Shirley, afterward in Fort Richmond, and later in Pownalborough, the county seat of Lincoln County, where St. John's Church and parsonage were built for him in 1770. He traveled among the widely scattered people on foot, horseback, by canoe, and when the river was frozen, by sleigh, frequently suffering from hunger and exposure, and in the summer "afflicted with extreme heat, and assaulted with armies of flies and musketoes" (Bartlet, p. 91). When the Revolution came he remained loyal, refusing to read the Declaration of Independence in church, to take the oath of allegiance to Congress, or to refrain from praying for the King. He was subjected to all manner of persecution, and frequently had to go into hiding to save his life. Writing in 1776, he says: "My Presbyterian neighbors were so zealous for the good of their country that they killed seven of my sheep,—and shot a fine heifer as she was feeding in my pasture" (Bartlet, p. 111). His name was placed on the list for transportation, but in town meeting the people voted to strike it off. He was summoned before the Committee of Safety and tried on several counts, but defended himself well, and was not convicted. Finally, on the plea of poverty, since, as he said, the magistrates would not consider the plea of conscience, he procured permission of the Council at Boston to remove to Nova Scotia. After much difficulty he succeeded in chartering a schooner,

and with his family and some of his effects escaped to Halifax, thankful when he reached that place that he was in a land of freedom. He settled at Annapolis, Nova Scotia, where he served as rector until his death.

Considering the strenuous life which Bailey led, he was a prolific writer, publishing little, if anything, but leaving behind sermons, extensive journals, a "History of New England," a "Description of the Present Province of New Brunswick," an "Account of the Suffering of the American Loyalists," dramatic sketches of a political nature, poems, and text-books. "Observations and Conjectures on the Antiquities of America by Rev. Jacob Bailey of Annapolis-Royal in Nova Scotia" is printed in *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society for the Year 1795,* and his description of the burning of Falmouth, Me., is in the *Collections of the Maine Historical Society,* V (1857).

[In addition to the authorities mentioned above, see Chas. E. Allen, *Rev. Jacob Bailey; His Character and Works* (1895); Marguerite Ogden, *One Hundredth Anniv. of the Diocese of Me.* (1920); Arthur H. W. Eaton, *Hist. of Kings County, Nova Scotia* (1910); Wm. A. Calnek, *Hist. of the County of Annapolis,* ed. by A. W. Savary (1897).]

H. E. S.

BAILEY, JACOB WHITMAN (Apr. 29, 1811–Feb. 27, 1857), botanist, chemist, geologist, was the son of Rev. Isaac and Jane (Whitman) Bailey of Ward (now Auburn), Mass. He early gave evidence of a taste for scientific studies, a taste which seems to have come by direct inheritance from both branches of his ancestral lines, his great-grandmother Whitman having been especially distinguished for her work in botany and astronomy, and his great-grandfather, Rev. Ralph Emerson, also having been a lover of science. Owing to the limited resources of the family he was, at the age of twelve, placed in a circulating library and bookstore in Providence, R. I. In this position he was so earnestly studious as to attract the attention of John Kingsbury, secretary of Brown University, who invited him to spend certain evenings of the week in his house for the purpose of studying Latin. The remaining evenings of the week were spent in the study of French. During these years he also found time to make a large collection of shells and insects. In July 1828 he received an appointment as cadet at West Point, graduating, fifth in his class, in 1832. After serving at various posts as second-lieutenant of artillery, he was, in 1834, appointed assistant professor of chemistry at West Point, serving in that capacity until 1838, at which time he was made incumbent of the newly created chair of chemistry, mineralogy, and geology, a position held until the time of his death in 1857.

Among his earlier scientific passions was that for botany, and throughout his life, even though his chair was in a different field, he continued its study. While he did noteworthy work in chemistry and geology, his distinction as a scientist rests mainly upon his botanical research. He was the pioneer worker with the microscope in this country and it was through his knowledge and mastery of it that he won a distinctive place in the botanical world.

Bailey was especially distinguished for his researches among the minor algæ and especially the diatomaseas (which he was the first to detect in a fossil state in this country); for his microscopical investigations concerning the crystals contained in the tissues of plants, and for the detection of vegetable structures in the ashes of anthracite. His numerous scientific papers are all clear, explicit, and as unpretending as they are thorough, and every one of them embodies some direct and positive contribution to science.

He was married on Jan. 23, 1835, to Maria Slaughter of West View, Va. Her tragic death, along with that of his only daughter, in the burning of the steamer *Henry Clay* near Yonkers in July 1852, shadowed his later years. He was modest and reserved in manner, except to those to whom he had given his friendship; bright and sparkling in his intercourse with the chosen few; of a rich poetic taste, strong in his hate of wrong; faithful and painstaking in duty. To fully appreciate his work, it must be remembered that his was the task of breaking paths in hitherto untrodden fields; that he worked without assistance, without literature, without appliances save those devised by his own ingenuity; that while thus working, he was filling with distinction his chair in the Military Academy at West Point. Yet, this pioneer in American science, in the midst of his duties, with all the new world he had discovered to explore, found leisure to draw hundreds of carefully finished sketches of knights and ladies, castles and palaces for the amusement of an invalid son.

[Stanley Coulter, "Jacob Whitman Bailey," *Bot. Gazette,* XIII, 118–24; see also address of A. A. Gould, Aug. 19, 1857, *Proc. Am. Ass. for the Advancement of Science,* 1857–58, pp. 1–8; and G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.*]

S. C.

BAILEY, JAMES ANTHONY (1847–Apr. 11, 1906), showman, was a native of Detroit. His parentage and early childhood are obscure, and his boyhood seems to have been passed in poverty, with little education. He worked his way upward and while still a very young man became connected with a circus. At one time during the Civil War he was a sutler's clerk at

the front. He reëntered the circus field, and developed an extraordinary advertising talent and business capacity. In 1872 the firm of Cooper & Bailey was founded, and Bailey was soon in the front rank of his "profession." An achievement unusual at that time was his conducting, with his show, a tour around the world, in the course of which he visited South America, India, Australia, and islands of the Pacific. He had become a serious competitor of P. T. Barnum [*q.v.*], but in 1881 the two showmen wisely abandoned the contest, united forces, and exhibited the combined shows in New York. He was already proprietor of the Great London Show, and in 1890 he bought the Forepaugh circus. In the united Barnum & Bailey shows he had a large part in the management. Many of the special features of note were his projects, for instance the "Ethnological Congress," the spectacle "Nero," and—particularly—Jumbo. This renowned and gigantic elephant was purchased by Bailey in England from the Royal Zoological Society. His transfer to the United States excited some resentment, and the matter became for a time an "international incident."

Bailey exhibited his show in England, France, Germany, and various European countries. In Germany many thrifty citizens, having seen the parade in the mornings, declined to attend the regular performances of the circus as paying patrons; whereupon Bailey discontinued the parades for that country. In the course of his journeys he had made a considerable collection of works of art, which were placed in his house in Mount Vernon, N. Y. He died suddenly at Mount Vernon, shortly after building his house. He left the reputation of a man kind to his many employees, and decidedly more retiring than his famous partner. "Mr. Bailey never subscribed to this sentiment ['the public likes to be humbugged']. His motto was: 'Give the people the best—spare no expense in doing it—and they'll reward you'" (*New York Times,* Apr. 12, 1906). He was married to Ruth Louisa McCaddon of Zanesville, Ohio, who survived him; there were no children.

[N. Y. *Sun, Times, Tribune,* Apr. 12, 1906. According to the *Tribune,* Bailey's name was McGinness.]

E. K. A.

BAILEY, JAMES MONTGOMERY (Sept. 25, 1841–Mar. 4, 1894), humorous journalist, "Danbury News Man," may be called the father of the "colyumist," for humor, when he introduced it, was a new feature in journalism. The son of James and Sarah (Magee) Bailey, he was born at Albany, N. Y. His father, a carpenter, died from injuries due to a fall when his son was but two years of age, and three years later (1846) his mother married Daniel Smith, of Rome, N.Y. James received a common-school education, and served an apprenticeship as carpenter, apparently at Albany; in 1860 he went to Danbury, Conn., where he practised this trade for two years. He then enlisted in company C, 17th Connecticut Volunteers, starting for the South shortly before his twenty-first birthday. He remained in the army three years, being captured at Gettysburg and for two months a prisoner on Belle Isle. Already his special talent had manifested itself. An article written in 1860 was accepted by the New York *Sunday Mercury,* which continued to print his efforts for over a year. While a soldier he wrote for a Danbury journal humorous sketches of army life.

The war over, Bailey with Timothy Donovan, a printer and fellow soldier, purchased the *Danbury Times* (1865), conducting it as a Democratic organ. In 1870 they consolidated with it the *Jeffersonian,* a Republican paper, thus initiating the *Danbury News,* "an eight-page journal containing statements almost TOO GOOD TO BE TRUE"; and Bailey now assumed the name "The Danbury News Man." This weekly newspaper soon launched on a career unique in journalistic history. Its circulation of 1,920 in January 1873, leaped to 30,000 in September of the same year. It was read and quoted with delight the country over, and even abroad, for years thereafter. The cause was Bailey, who had a faculty for injecting humor into commonplace events or inventing ridiculous situations, and portraying them, sometimes with side-splitting effect, and again with sly humor less hilarious but equally satisfying. Undoubtedly he lightened care in thousands of homes. This was not through the *News* alone, but through his books, whereby he gave new life to the products of his pen. *Life in Danbury* and the *Danbury News Man's Almanac* (both 1873) were followed by *They All Do It* (1877), *England from a Back Window* (1878), *Mr. Phillips' Goneness* (1879), and *The Danbury Boom* (1880). The popularity of these publications may be inferred from the fact that 33,000 copies of his first book sold within eleven weeks. His *History of Danbury,* Conn., appeared after his death.

In 1873 he visited California and in 1874 Europe. As usual he saw the merry side of everything—witness his *England.* In 1876 he appeared as a truly *popular* lecturer. Two years later Donovan withdrew from partnership with Bailey, who, thenceforth sole editor and proprietor of the *News,* added a daily, the *Danbury Evening*

News, in 1883. Realizing that his humorous efforts sometimes faltered, he gradually withdrew from this field, building up a strong local newspaper. In appearance he was tall, dignified, and athletic, with handsome face, dark hair and mustache, and mirthful eyes. One of his traits was a liking for dogs; another his aversion to wearing a necktie. His humor was always natural and kindly. He was a close observer of men and things, and wisdom mingled with his drollery. The English amused him, but he admired their real worth. His writings and speech alike abounded with wit. Yet he was a man of mercurial nature, passing suddenly from sunny moods to fits of depression. Although at its zenith his income attained $40,000, he died comparatively poor, for, while he lived plainly, he gave lavishly, even when he knew he was imposed upon. His interests were not solely journalistic. He became president of the Danbury Board of Trade, was a founder and president of the Danbury Hospital, and president of the Danbury Relief Society. He supported liberally the Children's Home and was active in the Baptist Church. He was married (1866) to Catharine Douglass Stewart of Danbury, who survived him.

[The best available account of Bailey is a sketch in the opening pages of his *Hist. of Danbury*, completed by Susan Benedict Hill (1896). A chapter is devoted to Bailey in Robert Ford's *Am. Humorists* (1897), pp. 193–212. He is the subject of an article "A Yankee Humorist," by G. W. Hallock, in *Munsey's Mag.*, XI, 238–41. His obituary appeared in the *Danbury News* of Mar. 5, 1894. A later issue of the *News* contained an address on Bailey by the Rev. Andrew C. Hubbard.]

R. S. B.

BAILEY, JOSEPH (May 6, 1825–Mar. 21, 1867), Union soldier, engineer, was born in Pennsville, Ohio, and journeyed with his parents, while still a boy, to Illinois. Here he studied civil engineering, married Mary Spaulding in 1846, and the following year, moved to Kilbourn City, Wis., where he successfully engaged in lumbering and in engineering construction. At the outbreak of the Civil War he raised a company in the 4th Wisconsin Regiment. Of this company he was appointed captain and was mustered into federal service, July 2, 1861. With his regiment, he was sent immediately to Maryland, and, in the following spring, to New Orleans with Gen. Benjamin Butler's expedition. The remainder of his war service was along the Gulf. He was promoted major of his regiment, May 30, 1863; lieutenant-colonel, July 15, 1863; and colonel, May 3, 1864. During much of this time he was on detached service and, owing to his engineering skill, was successively engineer

2nd division, 19th corps, distinguishing himself at Port Hudson in July 1863, chief engineer defenses of New Orleans, and military engineer 19th corps. It was in 1864, on Gen. Banks's Red River expedition, that Bailey rendered his outstanding service. The army marched overland accompanied on the river by a fleet of light-draft gunboats and transports which, aided by high water, passed upstream without difficulty. When, however, the retiring army reached Alexandria on Apr. 26, the water had subsided and the fleet could not pass over the falls. In this emergency, Bailey, then engineer 19th corps, recommended construction of wing dams to raise the water in the river high enough to permit the boats to pass over the falls. He executed this task with such skill and energy that in twelve days the entire fleet, thirty-three vessels all told, had cleared the obstruction. More than $2,000,000 had been saved to the government. For this act Bailey was granted the thanks of Congress, was brevetted brigadier-general June 7, 1864, and was presented by Admiral Porter with a sword. Participating later, with distinction, in the reduction of Mobile, he was appointed, on Nov. 10, 1864, brigadier-general of volunteers and on Mar. 13, 1865, major-general by brevet for gallant and meritorious services in the campaign of Mobile. Resigning on July 7, 1865, he settled in Vernon County, Mo. In the fall of 1866 he was elected sheriff, and on Mar. 21, 1867, was murdered, near Nevada, by two bushwackers whom he had arrested and who, while returning to the county seat, shot him in the back of the head.

[M. M. Quaife, *Wis.; Its Hist. and Its People* (1924), I; *Hist. of Columbia County, Wis.* (1914), ed. by J. E. Jones, I; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1890), p. 101; *Official Records*, see Index; Muster Rolls, 4th Wis. Inf. Records, A. G. O.]

C. A. B.

BAILEY, LYDIA R. (Feb. 1, 1779–Feb. 21, 1869), was for sixty years connected with the printing industry in Philadelphia, being one of the first women printers in that city. She was nineteen years of age when she married Robert Bailey, a printer (son of Francis Bailey [*q.v.*]) of the Quaker City, in the autumn of the year 1798. At that time an epidemic of yellow fever in Philadelphia caused a general stoppage of business and an exodus of many of the inhabitants, which may account for the fact that no record of her marriage has been found. Robert Bailey died in March 1808, and left his widow impoverished, in debt, and with four children, the youngest only four months old. But she was a practical printer, and proceeded to carry on such business as she had. Philip Freneau, the poet of the Revolution, some of whose works

had been printed by Francis Bailey, learned of the widow's plight, and gave her the publication of a new edition of his *Poems,* marked "Third Edition" on the title, which was issued in two volumes in 1809. In a few years, through her care as a printer, and the influence of her husband's family, Mrs. Bailey prospered. "During the old Whig Administration she had a rich and valuable patronage from Councils and the departments" (*Sunday Dispatch,* Philadelphia, Feb. 28, 1869). For a long period—from about 1830 to 1850—she was designated the City Printer for Philadelphia. Her specialty was book work, in which she was assisted by her son, Robert William, when he became old enough to stand at a case. In her later years she depended considerably upon her son, and when he died, in 1861, she realized that she was unequal to the task of continuing the business, and retired. "Steam presses were fatal to her courage and she surrendered to an instrumentality she could neither comprehend nor compete with" (*North American,* Feb. 24, 1869). She died in 1869, three weeks after reaching her ninetieth birthday, and was buried in the Bailey vault in the burial ground of the Third Presbyterian Church, Philadelphia, to which congregation she made the initial gift for an endowment fund. Mrs. Bailey's printing office had the distinction of having produced a number of men who became leaders in the trade in Philadelphia. At the time of her death the *North American* spoke of her as "one who enjoyed woman's rights to the full, though living before a formal exposition of that doctrine, and who as a practical printer had considerable deserved local fame."

[Records of the Third Presbyt. (Old Pine Street) Church, Phila., and the obituary notices in the newspapers of that city, are the main sources of information. The date of Mrs. Bailey's birth is derived from the inscription on her tombstone. See also H. O. Gibbons, *A Hist. of Old Pine Street* [Church] (1905).]

J. J.

BAILEY, RUFUS WILLIAM (Apr. 13, 1793–Apr. 25, 1863), Congregational clergyman, college president, was born at North Yarmouth, Me., the son of Lebbeus and Sarah (Myrick) Bailey. After graduating from Dartmouth College in 1813, he taught for a short time in academies at Salisbury, N. H., and Blue Hill, Me., and then studied law in the office of Daniel Webster. After a year of this study, however, he decided to go into the ministry, and went to Andover Theological Seminary to prepare himself. He spent one year at Andover and then finished his preparation with Francis Brown, president of Dartmouth College. During the year 1817–18 he was employed as a tutor at Dartmouth, after which he was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church at Norwich, Vt. Later he held a pastoral charge at Pittsfield, Mass., but gave it up in 1827 for reasons of health, moving to the South where he engaged in a long and active career of teaching and preaching in South Carolina, North Carolina, and Virginia. In 1854, he became professor of languages at Austin College, Tex. He was made president of that institution in 1858 and held this office up to the time of his death. He was twice married: in 1820 to Lucy Hatch, the daughter of Reuben Hatch of Norwich, Vt., and after her death to Mrs. Mariette (Perry) Lloyd, of Waterbury, Conn.

Bailey was a prolific writer. To the *Patriarch,* of which he became editor in 1841, he made numerous contributions. A number of his letters written to newspapers on the subject of slavery were later collected and published in a volume called *The Issue* (1837). Many of his sermons were published, a number of them in a little book, entitled *The Family Preacher* (1837). But he was perhaps best known in his own day and later for his text-books on spelling and grammar which were widely used in the South. Over half a million copies of his *Scholar's Companion* (1830) had been sold before the time of his death; and it continued to sell long afterward. In his writings the moral-religious purpose was almost always, if not always present. In the introduction to the 1863 edition of his *Scholar's Companion,* he says of his book: "Beyond mere orthography and correct pronunciation, it is designed to introduce the young mind into the inner life of words, and thus into the inner life of the soul. It is a spelling-book, but that is not all. It teaches correct pronunciation, but that is not all. It is a defining Dictionary,—but still more, it discriminates the nicest shades of difference in words, in thought, and contributes eminently to form the mind to truth, and the character to uprightness, and the soul for its immortal destiny." This sublime confidence in the power of precept seems to have animated Bailey's other writings and very probably his whole career.

[G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867), p. 163; *Barnard's Am. Jour. of Ed.,* XIII, 215; *The Patriarch, or Family Library Mag.,* vols. I and II, 1841–42.]

J. F. S.

BAILEY, THEODORUS (Apr. 12, 1805–Feb. 10, 1877), naval officer, was born at Chateaugay, in the north-eastern part of New York, and received his early education at the academy in

Plattsburg, less than thirty-five miles distant. Thus he breathed the very air of Macdonough's operations on Lake Champlain in the War of 1812, resulting in the famous victory of September 1814. This had its influence, and three years later, Jan. 1, 1818, the boy secured an appointment as midshipman. There were advantages in being the son of Judge William Bailey and Phœbe Platt and the nephew of Gen. Theodorus Bailey (the latter holding at different times several offices of distinction in both the State and city of New York), but he did not find that family connections made naval life easy or promotion rapid. His first two years of service were spent off the coast of Africa in the frigate *Cyane*. Then he was transferred to the ship of the line *Franklin,* ordered to the Pacific. His advancement to the lieutenant's grade came Mar. 3, 1827; and, assigned to the *Vincennes,* he sailed about the Pacific, to China, and then home by way of the Cape of Good Hope, the cruise lasting three years and two months. On June 23, 1830, he married his cousin, Sarah Ann Platt. In 1846, he was given his first independent command, the store-ship *Lexington.*

In the Mexican War, Bailey rendered efficient service. Embarking company F, 3rd Artillery, with three officers later to become famous, Sherman, Halleck, and Ord, he sailed from New York, around the Horn, to Monterey, the voyage taking 198 days (for a detailed account of the voyage, see Sherman's *Memoirs*). During the latter part of the Mexican War he conducted troops to Lower California and blockaded San Blas, which he captured. He was promoted to commander Mar. 6, 1849, and to captain, Dec. 15, 1855. From 1853 to 1856 he commanded the *St. Mary's,* visiting the Marquesas, Society, Samoan, and Fiji Islands, and improving the relations between the natives and American citizens in the last two places. On his return, arriving opportunely at Panama during an uprising in April 1856, Bailey was "of great assistance to our commerce and citizens," affording "protection to the persons and property of the thousands of our countrymen crossing the Isthmus, from the violence of an ungoverned population" (*Annual Report of the Secretary of the Navy,* 1856, p. 408).

Shortly after the breaking out of the Civil War, Bailey was ordered to command the large steam frigate *Colorado,* engaged in the blockade of Pensacola. There he matured the plan and attended to the details of fitting out the expedition that destroyed the privateer *Judah,* Sept. 14, 1861 (*Official Records,* XVI, 670). His greatest service was with Farragut in the attack on New Orleans, where he was second in command. Since the *Colorado* was too large to be taken over the bar into the Mississippi, he transferred his flag to the little gunboat *Cayuga.* Though a medical survey reported that his health was such that it would be dangerous for him to take part in the fight, he ignored this except to protest indignantly to Farragut, "I'll lead your fleet up the river, if I burst my boiler" (Headley, p. 236). On Apr. 24, 1862, he led the way past Forts Jackson and St. Philip, fought (for a while unsupported) the Confederate river defense fleet, captured the Chalmette Regiment, and attacked the Chalmette batteries (Alden, pp. 117, ff.). Bailey characterized the fight "as a contest between iron hearts in wooden vessels and ironclads with iron beaks—and the iron hearts won" (Report to Secretary of the Navy, May 7, 1862). When the fleet had arrived at New Orleans he was sent into the city, and attended only by Lieut. George H. Perkins as his aid, without a guard and without arms, he passed through an excited and hostile mob. "Through the gates of death those two men walked to the City Hall to demand the town's surrender. It was one of the bravest deeds I ever saw done" (George W. Cable, in *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War,* II, 21). Still suffering from ill health, Bailey was sent north and was honored by being the bearer of dispatches and reports of the victory to Washington. After a brief tour of duty at Sacketts Harbor he had sufficiently recovered to be ordered, Nov. 4, 1862, to relieve Rear Admiral Lardner in the command of the East Gulf blockading squadron. Here again he showed efficiency, and in eighteen months his force captured 150 blockade runners. In the spring of 1864, learning that Farragut was preparing an attack on Mobile, he volunteered to join forces, but yellow fever, breaking out at Key West, and spreading through the East Gulf blockading squadron, thwarted the plan. Shortly after, Bailey, showing evidence of wear from his long service in an enervating climate, was relieved and ordered to command the Portsmouth Navy Yard, Sept. 30, 1864. He was promoted to the rank of rear admiral July 25, 1866, and was retired Oct. 10 of the same year. His last years were spent in Washington, D. C.

[The best sketch of Bailey's career is to be found in J. T. Headley, *Farragut and Our Naval Commanders* (1867), ch. 10; a briefer article is by Katharine Mimmack, in *Biog. Sketches of the Bailey-Myers-Mason Families* (1908); an obituary appeared in the *Army and Navy Jour.,* Feb. 17, 1877. His letters and reports are included in the *Official Records* (1894–1917). For an account of Bailey and the *Cayuga* at New Orleans, see C. S. Alden, *George Hamilton Perkins* (1914).]

C. S. A.

BAILLY, JOSEPH ALEXIS (Jan. 21, 1825–June 15, 1883), sculptor, was born in Paris, the

son of Joseph Philidor Bailly, a manufacturer of cabinet furniture. He studied for a time under Baron Bozio in the French Institute, worked in his father's factory, was a conscript in the Garde Mobile and during the Revolution of 1848 shot at his captain, escaped to New Orleans, and, after sojourns in New York, Philadelphia, and Buenos Ayres, settled in Philadelphia. In 1850 he married Louisa, daughter of Louis David of Brie, France. He at first devoted himself to wood-carving and the cutting of portraits in cameo but soon took up sculpture, turning out numerous portraits—busts, medallions, and statues. He was an indefatigable and rather facile worker. The Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts possesses two examples of his portraits—a bust of his wife and a plaster medallion of William Emlen Cresson. For the grave of the latter in Laurel Hill Cemetery he did a seated bronze effigy (1869) and near-by a similar seated figure of William F. Hughes (1870). Both have the characteristic realism of the latter nineteenth century, and the statue of Cresson the added characteristic of an accumulation of accessories on the base. Busts of Gen. Grant and Gen. Meade are likewise recorded. Bailly's work, however, was not confined to private commissions, for Philadelphia possesses several public monuments by his hand. One of the earliest was a standing figure of Franklin cut from Brunswick stone and placed on the corner of the Public Ledger Building in 1866. This work was removed when the present edifice was built. In 1869 he made a marble statue of Washington, which was placed in front of the rear façade of Independence Hall. For better preservation it was later removed from its open-air pedestal to a position on the second floor of the City Hall, in a window overlooking the central courtyard, a position it still occupies. Its place near Independence Hall was taken by a bronze replica. Of all the effigies of Washington it is perhaps the most vacuous. The bronze statue of Witherspoon, erected in Fairmount Park in 1876, possesses a certain graceful dignity which makes it somewhat more pleasing than the earlier statues. Though most of his work was for Philadelphia, Bailly made for Washington, D. C., a statue of Gen. John A. Rawlins (1874), which was cast from Confederate cannon captured by Grant's armies. When the Centennial Exposition was held in Philadelphia in 1876, Bailly exhibited an equestrian statue of President Guzman Blanco of Venezuela, which is now in Caracas, where is also another statue of Blanco by him. At the Exposition, likewise, was a statue of "Spring," which has since disappeared. Of the same order of idealized subject as this last statue are two marble groups in the Pennsylvania Academy, "The Expulsion" and "The First Prayer." These works, in treatment and execution, recall the work of mid-nineteenth century French sculptors such as Perraud and Crauk. Bailly evidently attained to considerable reputation in Philadelphia, for he was made an Academician in 1856 and was an instructor at the Pennsylvania Academy from 1876 to 1877. He died of heart disease and was buried in Mount Peace Cemetery, where there is no longer even a headstone to mark his grave.

[Article in *Biog. Encyc. of Pa. of the 19th Cent.* (1874), possibly by Bailly himself; brief notices in C. E. Clement and L. Hutton, *Artists of the 19th Cent.* (ed. of 1885); L. Taft, *Hist. of Am. Sculpture* (new ed., 1924), p. 505; brief obituary in Phila. *Public Ledger*, June 19, 1883.] E.G.N.

BAIN, GEORGE LUKE SCOBIE (May 5, 1836–Oct. 22, 1891), merchant-miller, the son of Robert Scobie Bain and Charlotte Murdoch Brown, natives of the central lowlands of Scotland, was born at Stirling, where he received his early education. Despite the fond hopes of his mother, who desired her son to become a minister of the Free Church of Scotland, he ran away from home at the age of fifteen and obtained employment as a cabin-boy on a ship whose destination was Montreal, Canada. When young Bain arrived in that city, he decided to remain, and was soon at work in an accountant's office. Three years later he removed to Portland, Me., where he obtained his first knowledge of the flour business while employed by the commission house of Mackintosh & Company. In 1856 he succumbed to the lure of the West and removed to the growing young city of Chicago, where he secured a position in the flour department of a prominent commission house. The following year, at the age of twenty-one, he made his début in the business world by organizing a commission house under the name of Bain & Clarke. After a varied business career in Chicago, he moved to St. Louis in 1865, and there shortly afterward established the commission house of George Bain & Co. This firm did a successful business in flour, grain, and other products. But in 1871 Bain severed his connection with the commission house, and purchased a half interest in the Atlantic Mills, then one of the largest establishments in St. Louis. During the next twenty years he was actively engaged as a manufacturer and shipper of flour, contributing in no small degree toward making St. Louis one of the greatest milling centers in the United States. He was the pioneer in developing the direct exportation of flour from St. Louis to foreign countries. He was one of the organizers of the millers in Missouri and through-

out the country. In 1874 the Missouri Millers' Association elected him its first president, and in the same year the Millers' National Association chose him its first vice-president. In 1875 he was elected president of the latter body, and held that position for eight consecutive years. While he took a prominent part in the business life of St. Louis, he was also active in politics, fraternal circles, and philanthropic work. Possessed of great energy and initiative, Bain had, according to a eulogy delivered in 1891, "positive views on all questions that had two sides, and hesitated not to express them, regardless of numbers or consequences." On Nov. 5, 1857, he married Clara C. Mather at Chicago, Ill.

[Geneal. of the Bain Family (MS. in the Mo. Hist. Soc. Lib., St. Louis); Robt. E. M. Bain, Statement, Oct. 14, 1927, St. Louis; *Northwestern Miller*, Oct. 30, 1891; L. U. Reavis, *Saint Louis, the Future Great City of the World* (1882), pp. 231–33; *Encyc. of the Hist. of St. Louis* (ed. by Wm. Hyde and Howard Conard (1899), I, 101–02; E. D. Kargau, *Mercantile, Industrial, and Professional Saint Louis* (1902), pp, 101–02, 109.

R. P. Bi—r.

BAINBRIDGE, WILLIAM (May 7, 1774–July 27, 1833), naval officer, was born at Princeton, N. J., fourth son of Absolom Bainbridge, a physician of eminence who shortly afterward moved to New York. Dr. Bainbridge, descended from a good English family prominent in New Jersey since the middle of the seventeenth century, had married the daughter of John Taylor of Monmouth County, N. J., who, at his own request, was entrusted with the education of his grandson. This education appears to have been an excellent one and was continued until the lad's fifteenth year, at which age his family, yielding to his pleadings, and sensible that his sturdy physique and adventurous nature fitted him for an active life, allowed him to go to sea, placing him under the care and patronage of a sea captain of reputation who commanded a Philadelphia merchantman.

His progress in seamanship and his development of the qualities of command were steady and swift, and these, added to his vigorous personality, a fair education and influential family connections, led to rapid advancement in his profession. Within three years he was made an officer and at the age of eighteen chief mate, in which capacity, during a voyage to Holland, he recovered his ship from the hands of mutineers by a display of sheer fearlessness and dash, and was rewarded with the command of the ship when not yet twenty. From this time until 1798 he commanded vessels in the European trade, which was carried on at the height of the excitement of the hostilities following the French Revolution. Occasions were not lacking, even for merchant captains, that required much tact and determination. In 1796, his ship lying in the Garonne, Bainbridge was entreated by a brother American captain to help quell a serious mutiny, which he succeeded in doing by prompt and vigorous action though at the expense of a painful injury. Shortly after this, his ship the *Hope*, armed only with four nine-pounders and with a crew of eleven, was attacked near the West Indies by a small British privateer of double his force, which began the action without displaying her colors. Upon receiving a broadside from the *Hope*, she ran up the British ensign, which, however, not only failed to intimidate the American skipper, but caused him to attack so furiously that the Englishman struck his flag. Bainbridge's crew were eager to take possession of the prize, but this could not be permitted, since the armament of the *Hope* was legally for defense only. Instead, Bainbridge contented himself with hailing the English captain, ordering him to go about his business and to report to his masters that, if they wanted his ship, they would have to send a bigger vessel or a better commander. On the voyage home a sailor was taken out of his ship, under the pretense that he was a deserter, by the powerful English cruiser *Indefatigable*. The protest of the American commander being derided, he declared that he would take a man out of the next British ship of his own strength he fell in with, as compensation, and within a week he made good his threat by seizing a sailor on board a British merchantman of greater force than the *Hope*.

In 1798, when the aggressions of France and the depredations of the Barbary States called into being the new American navy, Bainbridge received command of the *Retaliation*, 14 guns, with the rank of lieutenant commandant. In September of that year, while cruising in the West Indies, the consorts of his ship having made sail to the eastward in chase of three vessels supposed to be British, Bainbridge was left alone to cope with three other craft approaching from the west, two of which proved to be the French frigates *L'Insurgente* and *Volontier*, forming an overwhelming force, to which the mortified but powerless young commander was obliged to strike his flag. Taken aboard the *Volontier* a prisoner, he was able, by his quickness of wit, to save from capture his two consorts, the *Montezuma* and *Norfolk*, with which the faster French frigate, *L'Insurgente*, was about to close, being much more than a match for both. Of this latter fact, however, the captain of the *Volontier*, the French superior officer, was unaware, and, to assure himself on the point, turned to Bainbridge,

Bainbridge

standing at his side, and inquired as to the armament of the American vessels. Bainbridge's ready answer that the ship carried 28 long twelves and the brig 20 long nines, in reality double the actual force of the American vessels, so impressed the French commander that he recalled his consort by signal, and the *Montezuma* and *Norfolk* made good their escape. Taken a prisoner to Guadaloupe, Bainbridge was subjected to the equivocal machinations of the French governor, who, by alternately ill-treating the American prisoners and making flattering promises, endeavored to persuade the young commander to make certain political concessions which far exceeded his authority and which were promptly refused, as was also the suggestion that he should return in command of his ship to the United States, but refrain from all acts of hostility toward French shipping. The diplomatic tact and firmness displayed under these difficult circumstances were appreciated by the Government, and Bainbridge, on his return home, was promoted to be master commandant and given command of the *Norfolk,* 18 guns, one of the vessels which his presence of mind had saved for his country. It is likely that Bainbridge's account of the cruelty and indignities suffered by the Americans at Guadaloupe was partly responsible for the prompt passing by Congress of the Retaliation Act, a direct consequence of the unjust decrees of the French Republic; Vice-President Jefferson wrote at the time, "Within an hour after this [Bainbridge's arrival] was known to the Senate, they passed the retaliation act" (Harris, p. 33).

Joining Commodore Truxtun's squadron, Bainbridge took the *Norfolk* into the harbor of St. Kitts to renew her topmasts lost in a desperate attempt to overhaul a large schooner, and was directed to assemble a convoy of over a hundred sail and escort them to the United States. Falling in with an enemy frigate, he signaled the convoy to disperse, and so occupied the frigate by inducing her to chase that every one of the vessels under his protection escaped, while he himself, under cover of night, gave his enemy the slip and rejoined his convoy at the appointed rendezvous, a feat highly praised by naval experts. After numerous successes in the West Indies he was ordered to cruise off Havana with two other vessels under his command, and rendered such excellent service in convoying and in blockading enemy privateers, that on May 2, 1800, he was promoted to be captain, at that time the highest rank in the navy, still wanting six days of being twenty-six years of age.

The same month he was given command of the *George Washington,* a small converted merchantman rated as a frigate, carrying 24 guns, and received orders, with what grace may be imagined, to bear his country's tribute to the Dey of Algiers. At this time the Barbary States claimed jurisdiction in the Mediterranean and adjacent waters, the methods employed in the execution of which were little short of piratical. No concerted, energetic attempt had ever been made by the Christian nations to put a stop to a system under which they paid blackmail euphemistically termed tribute, for the protection of their maritime commerce. The United States had presented the Dey of Algiers with a handsome new frigate in 1798 and two schooners in 1799 in partial payment of our dues, which the Republic was too poor to honor in full. Bainbridge was not spared even a deeper humiliation than that felt by his fellow officers of the Navy. Having delivered the tribute of his country to the Dey, and while preparing for his return voyage, he was astonished and confounded to receive from the Dey, who was a vassal of the Sultan of Turkey, a request, tantamount to a command, to proceed in the *George Washington,* manned by her American complement but under the Ottoman flag, to Constantinople with a special embassy from the Dey to the Sultan. After repeated desperate attempts on the part of Bainbridge and the American agent, Mr. O'Brien, firstly to avoid the mission altogether and then at least to sail with the American flag at the main, the American commander was in the end forced to accede to all the demands of the Dey. Bainbridge himself wrote to a friend concerning this incident: "The unpleasant situation in which I am placed must convince you that I have no alternative left but compliance, or a renewal of hostilities against our commerce. The loss of the frigate and the fear of slavery for myself and crew were the least circumstances to be apprehended, but I knew our valuable commerce in these seas would fall a sacrifice to the corsairs of this power, as we have here no cruisers to protect it . . . I hope I may never again be sent to Algiers with *tribute,* unless I am authorized to deliver it from the mouth of our cannon" (*Ibid.,* p. 45). The voyage to Constantinople and the sojourn there of several weeks were uneventful, but resulted in creating an excellent impression in Turkey of the young American republic, of which the port authorities there had never heard. Upon his return to Algiers, Bainbridge was met with another request to carry an embassy to the Sultan, and his refusal led to a show of fury on the part of the Dey which was only quieted by the production of a special letter of protection which the powerful Capudan Pasha had given the American com-

Bainbridge

mander. Americans were thereafter no longer molested; Bainbridge even succeeded in rescuing from slavery a number of French citizens, though his own country was practically at war with France, and landing them at Alicante; his humanity and chivalry drawing from Napoleon, then First Consul, a letter of "acknowledgment and thanks."

On his return to the United States, Bainbridge had the satisfaction of learning, not only that his conduct under the trying circumstances of his European mission had received the full approval of the government, but that, although he stood only twenty-seventh on the list of twenty-eight captains in the Navy, he had been selected as one of the nine allowed by the new reduction law to be retained. Given command of the *Essex,* 32 guns, he proceeded to the Mediterranean with the squadron of Commodore Dale, whose orders were to put a stop to the depredations of the Bashaw of Tripoli; but upon his reporting that his ship was in unseaworthy condition, Bainbridge was directed to take her home in the summer of 1802, when she was laid up for repairs. After a visit to his family in Philadelphia and various shore duties which occupied him until May 21, 1803, he received on that day the command of the frigate *Philadelphia,* 44 guns, with orders to join the Mediterranean squadron of Commodore Preble, operating against Tripoli. Arriving at Gibraltar the last of August, he was successful in capturing several Barbary corsairs in which he found a number of American prisoners, and then proceeded to the harbor of Tripoli; but at its very entrance occurred another of those mischances to which Bainbridge, entirely without fault of his own, was subjected in the course of his career. On Oct. 31, 1803, while chasing a Moorish craft into the harbor, the *Philadelphia,* though provided with the best maps and making repeated soundings, ran fast aground on an uncharted reef several miles from the city of Tripoli. Desperate efforts were made to lighten and float her, even to throwing overboard all save the stern gun, but in vain. The helpless frigate was soon surrounded by numerous Tripolitan gunboats, and finally Bainbridge, after rendering his ship as unseaworthy as possible under the circumstances, was obliged to surrender with his crew, numbering 315 persons. The captives were humanely treated by the Bashaw, but remained prisoners until the end of the war. The *Philadelphia* was soon afterward floated, taken into the harbor, and was in process of being fitted out as a Tripolitan cruiser, when Stephen Decatur [*q.v.*], acting upon a suggestion contained in a letter from Bainbridge to Commodore Preble, succeeded in the brilliant exploit of cutting out and burning to the water's edge the captured vessel during the night of Feb. 15, 1804. The chagrined Bashaw retaliated upon Bainbridge and the other American captives by removing them to the dungeons of the castle, whence they witnessed the several bombardments of Tripoli by the American squadron. In the spring of 1805 negotiations were begun between the American consul-general to the Barbary States and the Bashaw, and, several obstacles arising, Bainbridge was, by common consent, chosen to discuss these with the American representatives. Leaving his own son, a naval officer, in the hands of the Bashaw as a hostage, he went aboard the American flagship, the *Constitution,* and in the end was not a little responsible for the peace which followed in early June 1805. A naval court of inquiry, consisting of Captains J. Barron, H. G. Campbell, and Stephen Decatur, which convened at Syracuse on June 29, completely exonerated Bainbridge from all blame in connection with the loss of the *Philadelphia,* a result which was made a foregone conclusion by a letter to Bainbridge signed by the entire complement of his vessel, praising his caution, courage, and resourcefulness on the occasion. One of his first acts upon returning to the United States, where he encountered only sympathy and admiration, was to initiate negotiations through the Secretary of the Navy which led to a resolution of thanks by Congress to the Danish consul at Tripoli, N. C. Nissen, whose friendly offices had rendered less distressful the captivity of the American seamen.

Bainbridge was assigned to the navy-yard at New York, but finding his financial situation somewhat embarrassed on account of his long captivity, he obtained a furlough and entered the merchant service as captain and part owner. An incident at this period nearly terminated his career on account of his inability to swim, an odd circumstance in the life of a sailor and athlete. Falling into the sea while boarding his vessel from a small boat, he was only rescued, after sinking three times, by the efforts of his colored servant. He continued in the merchant service with success until March 1808, when he was ordered to Portland, and soon after received command of the fine frigate *President,* 44 guns, with jurisdiction over the southern half of the coast, flying his broad pennant of commodore for the first time.

In 1810 he once more returned to the merchant service, in the European trade. While entering the Baltic on a voyage to St. Petersburg, his ship was stopped by a Danish cruiser and taken into Copenhagen. His plight, however, was soon end-

ed by the mediation of his friend, Nissen, and his vessel released. Soon after this, the affair between his old ship, the *President,* and the *Little Belt,* coming to his ears, he hurried home, reaching Washington in February 1812, and placed his services at his country's disposal. To his mortification, however, he learned that it was seriously contemplated to lay up all the vessels of the Navy, lest they might fall into the hands of the powerful fleets of Great Britain. In dismay and indignation he allied himself with another officer of spirit, Commodore Charles Stewart [*q.v.*], and the two drew up and sent to Congress through the Secretary of the Navy, a protest couched in such insistent yet logical terms, that the Government refrained from further action, and a design which would have rendered the United States defenseless on the seas at the outbreak of the second war with Great Britain was frustrated. It is related that later, when the news arrived of the third signal victory of an American frigate over a British rival within a few months, the Secretary of the Navy remarked to Commodore Stewart, "We are indebted to Bainbridge and yourself for these flags and victories. Had it not been for your strong remonstrance, not a vessel of war belonging to the government would have left its anchorage" (Harris, p. 136).

At the outbreak of the war, June 18, 1812, Bainbridge was commandant of the navy-yard at Charlestown (Boston), and when Isaac Hull [*q.v.*], after his victory over the *Guerrière,* applied for leave of absence, Bainbridge asked for and obtained command of the victorious *Constitution,* the frigate *Essex* and the sloop of war *Hornet* completing his squadron, which was to operate in the Southern Atlantic. On Dec. 29, while cruising without his consorts in the neighborhood of Bahia, Brazil, he fell in with a large British frigate and at once attacked. A spirited action ensued, both ships maneuvering to rake and to avoid being raked. Early in the fight Bainbridge received a musket-ball in the hip, and a few minutes later a second injury, but continued to direct the battle from the quarter-deck. The second wound was received when the steering wheel of the *Constitution* was knocked into splinters by an enemy shot, making it necessary to steer the ship by means of two tackles below decks, a serious handicap in a battle between two sailing vessels. The outcome of the furious encounter was decided by the superior gunnery of the American frigate. The British ship had on board the British governor of Bombay and other passengers, and Bainbridge's humane treatment of his prisoners and of the wounded earned him the praise of his enemies.

Returning to Boston in February 1813, he remained there for the rest of the war, superintending the construction of the *Independence,* a line-of-battle ship of 74 guns, the command of which he took, joining the squadron of Commodore Decatur in the Mediterranean. He arrived, however, after the latter had brought the war against the Dey of Algiers to a successful close. Remaining in European waters, Decatur's successor as commander-in-chief, Bainbridge arranged several difficulties with the Barbary powers, and on returning to the United States spent some years at Boston and Newport, flying his pennant on the *Independence.* In the spring of 1820 he proceeded for the fifth time in his life to the Mediterranean, flying his flag on the new and powerful line-of-battle ship *Columbus,* 80 guns, and remaining abroad about a year, for the purpose of impressing the several predatory nations with the present power of the United States. This was Commodore Bainbridge's last service afloat. He died of pneumonia at Philadelphia on July 27, 1833, leaving a son and four daughters by his wife, a lady of the West Indies named Susan Hyleger (the date of his death is usually given as July 28 on the authority of his tombstone, but the correct date is found in military and naval announcements of July 27). He was of handsome and commanding presence, ardent and sanguine in temperament, and though excitable, was calm in moments of danger. His bravery, chivalry, and generosity were proverbial in the Navy.

[Thos. Harris, *Life and Services of Commodore Wm. Bainbridge* (1837); Jas. Fenimore Cooper, *Lives of Distinguished Am. Naval Officers* (1846), I, and *Hist. of the Navy* (2nd ed., 1846); Livingston Hunt, "Bainbridge under the Turkish Flag," in *U. S. Naval Institute Proc.,* June 1926; G. W. Allen, *Our Navy and the Barbary Corsairs* (1905); Stanley Lane-Poole, *Story of the Barbary Corsairs* (1890); MSS. in the Office of Naval Records and Lib. at Washington.]

E.B.

BAIRD, ABSALOM (Aug. 20, 1824–June 14, 1905), Union soldier, was born at Washington, Pa., the son of William and Nancy (Mitchell) Baird. His father was a distinguished member of the Pennsylvania bar and his grandfather, Dr. Absalom Baird, a surgeon in the Revolutionary army. His great-grandfather, Lieut. John Baird, participated in the Forbes expedition against the French and Indians at Fort Duquesne in 1758. Upon graduation from Washington College, Absalom Baird studied law but the threatened rupture between the United States and Mexico induced him to seek admission to the United States Military Academy in 1845, in order to prepare himself for the war that was impending. He was graduated in 1849 and assigned to the artillery. Three years campaigning against the Seminole

Indians were succeeded by six years as instructor at West Point and these by duty in Texas, a frontier then distinctly unfriendly.

Shortly after the outbreak of the Civil War, Baird was appointed captain and assistant adjutant-general, and when McDowell's army marched into Virginia accompanied it as adjutant-general of Tyler's division, participating in the engagement at Blackburn's Ford and in the battle of Bull Run. Returning to the War Department he was promoted, Nov. 12, 1861, to major and assistant inspector-general and during the winter gained an understanding of volunteers that later proved invaluable. When, in the spring of 1862, McClellan's army moved to the Peninsula, Baird forsook his desk for the remainder of the war. As inspector-general and chief of staff, 4th corps, he took an active part in the operations at Yorktown and Williamsburg. For his services he was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers, Apr. 28, 1862, and ordered to Kentucky, where he participated with his brigade in the capture of Cumberland Gap in June and later was directed to organize a division in Gen. Gordon Granger's Army of Kentucky. This organization he pushed with restless energy and, in a month, the division moved to central Kentucky, to guard that section against Confederate cavalry raids until January 1863. As part of Rosecrans's army during the eight months following, Baird's division engaged in minor operations near Franklin and Shelbyville, Tenn. At the request of Gen. George H. Thomas, commanding the 14th corps, Baird was transferred to that corps in August 1863.

At this time, which marks the beginning of his distinguished military service, Baird was in the prime of life, active, energetic, ambitious; a just commander, a strict disciplinarian, and an aggressive fighter. With the 1st division he crossed the Tennessee River and the mountains and gained contact with Bragg's army on Sept. 11. On Sept. 19, the first day of the battle of Chickamauga, his division was heavily engaged and suffered severe losses. On Sept. 20, it was on the left of Thomas's corps and of the Union army. To obtain possession of the roads to Chattanooga, in the rear of the Union army, the Confederates during the forenoon launched three powerful attacks against Baird's division, all of which were repulsed, the last largely through his personal exertions. The fighting continued ceaselessly throughout the afternoon, and when Thomas, at nightfall, retired to Rossville Gap, Baird's division was the last to leave the field, having suffered greater losses than any other division engaged except Brannan's. For his gallantry and steadfast courage Baird was brevetted lieutenant-colonel in the regular army, and both Rosecrans and Thomas recommended his promotion to major-general of volunteers. In the battle of Chattanooga which followed, his division, on Nov. 25, as part of Thomas's corps, stormed Missionary Ridge in superb style. For this he was brevetted colonel in the regular army and again recommended for promotion to major-general by Grant and Thomas. A winter spent in outpost duty and skirmishing with the enemy was followed by participation in Sherman's Atlanta campaign, during which Baird's division was under fire nearly every day from May to August 1864. At the battle of Jonesboro he personally conducted a successful charge by one of his brigades against the enemy's entrenchments. For this he was awarded a medal of honor and for services rendered in the campaign Sherman recommended his promotion to major-general. He accompanied Sherman on his march to Savannah, where he received his brevet as major-general of volunteers, Sept. 1, 1864, and again through the Carolinas until Johnston surrendered.

After the war Baird served as assistant commissioner in the Freedman's Bureau until September 1866, when he was discharged from the volunteer service and reverted to his permanent grade of major and assistant inspector-general. Shortly thereafter he received his brevets as brigadier-general and major-general in the regular army. He was promoted successively lieutenant-colonel and, in September 1885, brigadier-general and inspector-general. About the War Department the impressive dignity of his manner, his long white mustache, and the high beaver hat he favored, made him a notable figure. In 1887 he attended the maneuvers of the French army and received from the French Government the decoration of commander of the Legion of Honor. Retired for age on Aug. 20, 1888, he died near Relay, Md., June 14, 1905, and was buried at Arlington National Cemetery.

[Old Files Section, A.-G. O.; *Official Records*, see Index; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.*, vol. II; Files Hist. Section, Army War College.]

C. A. B.

BAIRD, CHARLES WASHINGTON (Aug. 28, 1828–Feb. 10, 1887), Presbyterian clergyman, historian, the second son of Robert Baird [*q.v.*] and Fermine (Du Buisson) Baird, was born in Princeton, N. J. He was educated abroad and at the University of the City of New York, from which he graduated in 1848. In the spring of 1852 he graduated from Union Theological Seminary and immediately went abroad to become chaplain of the American Chapel in Rome under the care of the American and Foreign

Christian Union. Returning to America in 1854, he found himself prevented by ill health from taking a parish and devoted himself instead to liturgical studies. In 1855 he published his *Eutaxia or the Presbyterian Liturgies; Historical Sketches by a Minister of the Presbyterian Church,* and in 1856, *A Book of Public Prayer, Compiled from the Authorized Formularies of Worship of the Presbyterian Church, as Prepared by the Reformers, Calvin, Knox, and Others.* In 1859 he became pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church of Bergen Hill in South Brooklyn, N. Y. In 1861, he accepted a call to the Presbyterian Church of Rye, Westchester County, N. Y., in whose service he remained until his death twenty-six years later. Soon after accepting this call he was married to Margaret Eliza Strang, a young lady of Huguenot descent.

A man of handsome appearance and refined manners, he displayed as pastor a tact and sympathy which made him beloved. His scholarly tastes found expression not only in addresses like that delivered before the Phi Beta Kappa Society of the University of the City of New York (1886) on "The Scholar's Duty and Opportunity," but in two very solid historical works, both based on prolonged and careful study of original sources. The first of these grew out of a Thanksgiving Day sermon, elaborated in six years of labor into *The Chronicle of a Border Town: A History of Rye, 1660–1870* (1871). The subject of the second, *The History of the Huguenot Emigration to America,* 2 vols. (1885), was undoubtedly suggested to him by his long residence abroad in boyhood, and by the fact that his mother and his wife were both of Huguenot descent. It is a careful and scholarly production of some 800 pages, based as far as possible upon original sources. He himself had conducted researches in London at the State Paper Office, the British Museum, the Library of Lambeth Palace, etc., and correspondents had explored for him archives at Paris, Leyden, and La Rochelle. The work was unfortunately left incomplete at his death; it does not describe the Huguenot settlements in the Southern and Middle States, or conclude with the general discussion of Huguenot character and the Huguenot element in the population of this country, as promised in the preface.

[*Memorials of the Rev. Charles W. Baird* (1888); sketch in *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Rec.,* Oct. 1890; obituaries in *N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Herald,* Feb. 11, 1887.]

P. V–D.

BAIRD, HENRY CAREY (Sept. 10, 1825–Dec. 30, 1912), publisher, economic writer, the son of Eliza Carey and Capt. Thomas J. Baird, a West Point graduate, was born at the United States Arsenal, Bridesburg, Pa., where his father was in command. His grandfathers, Henry Baird and Mathew Carey [*q.v.*], were both Irish political refugees to America, and the Celtic love of contest and vigor in debate were prominent characteristics through his long life. He was educated in private schools until the age of sixteen, when he entered the publishing house of Carey & Hart in Philadelphia, which had been founded by his grandfather and was carried on by his uncles. Soon the old firm was dissolved, and Baird established a new enterprise under the style Henry Carey Baird & Company, which in 1849 became the first publishing house in America to make a specialty of books on technical and industrial subjects. In September 1850 he married Elizabeth Davis Pennington of Philadelphia. The principal interest in Baird is as an expositor and popularizer of the economic teachings of his uncle Henry C. Carey [*q.v.*], and in a wider sense of the "Pennsylvania school" of "national economists," which had received its original impulse from Mathew Carey. Baird was not an original thinker, rarely departing from the conclusions of his preceptors. He was, however, thoroughly convinced of the revolutionary importance of the doctrines which he inherited, and made himself an ideal disciple. The happenings of the time confirmed him in his views, and afforded a stage on which he could play an active part. His writings were controversial rather than systematic, consisting chiefly of a large number of newspaper and periodical articles. He preferred the bayonet rather than long-range artillery. His whole appearance and manner were alert and forceful, his reasoning was quick and bold, and he had an unusual aptitude for turning an occasion to his uses.

To Baird it seemed that the old teachers of political economy had seriously erred in extending their doctrines and making them applicable to the dealings of the whole world, for in so doing the fact was lost sight of that the nation, as the unit of economic activity, interposed itself between the individual and the universe of people, modifying most of the principles which had been laid down. He held that association is the central requirement in producing wealth and utilizing resources. This association, being by national units, naturally leads to the encouragement of a diversity of employments within every country, and this in turn calls for protective tariffs and a denial of free trade as a hurtful fetish. He contended that money (which he held to be a standard of payment rather than of value) should be a thing of a country, not of the whole world, and

that the currency of a nation "should in no wise be based upon the precious metals," which were liable to export beyond the control of the authorities of a state. He thus advocated permitting the circulating medium to be regulated in amount by the business demands of the community. Particularly he was eager to break industrial and financial tyrannies by a liberal issue of notes as opposed to bank loans which open the way to concentration of economic power. In common with all the members of his school, Baird was an optimist. He was not impressed with the importance of conserving wealth in goods and gold, but pleaded for the augmenting of economic capacity in the people and in their instruments of production and means of enjoyment. A free-flowing circulation of money, he held, had a fructifying influence on this capacity.

At first a Whig, he became a Republican, but left that party after the Civil War and was one of the organizers (1874–76) of the Greenback party. By this party he was nominated for treasurer of Pennsylvania (which nomination he declined) and for mayor of Philadelphia. In 1876 before the Committee on Ways and Means of the House he successfully argued against the issue of $500,000,000 of 30-year 4½ per cent gold bonds, and in the same year gave testimony before the United States Monetary Commission supporting the remonetization of silver. Two years later, before the House Committee on Banking and Currency, he opposed the resumption of specie payments. In 1884 he supported Blaine as a protectionist but had no political affiliations thereafter. In his last years, illness compelled him to give up active attention to his business. He died at his home at Wayne, Pa.

Most of Baird's two score of papers, the vast majority of them on economic subjects, were published or republished by his firm; among them may be mentioned, as typical, *Protection of Home Labor* (1860); "Money and Its Substitutes," in *Atlantic Monthly,* March 1876; *The Necessary Foundations of Individual and National Well-Being* (1883); "Of Money, the Instrument of Association," in *National Review,* May 10, 1890; *Money and Bank Credit in the United States, France and Great Britain* (1891); and "Carey and Two of His Recent Critics," in *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society,* 1891, vol. XXIX. Baird contributed three articles—"Bank," "Money," and "Political Economy"—to the *American Cyclopedia;* these are less partisan than his other writings, and the last is particularly detailed and informing.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1899–1912; F. B. Catchings, *Baird and Beard Families* (1918), p. 128; "Docs. Accompanying the Rept. of the U. S. Monetary Commission," *Senate Rept. 703, pt. 2,* 44 Cong., 2 Sess.; *Publisher's Weekly,* LXXXIII, 18–19.] B. M.

BAIRD, HENRY MARTYN (Jan. 17, 1832–Nov. 11, 1906), Presbyterian clergyman, historian, son of Robert Baird [*q.v.*] and Fermine (Du Buisson) Baird, and brother of Charles Baird [*q.v.*], was born in Philadelphia. A large part of his boyhood was spent with his parents in Geneva and Paris; he graduated from the University of the City of New York in 1850. His bent for linguistic and historical study was already declared. He spent a year in historical studies at home in New York, a year in Athens, and a year in Rome. He then studied theology for two years at Union Theological Seminary in New York, but graduated from the Seminary at Princeton in 1856. He served, 1855, as a tutor in classics at Princeton College, pursuing at the same time graduate studies in the Seminary. At the end of that period he accepted a call to the chair of Greek language and literature in New York University. Soon after this, he was married, Aug. 15, 1860, to Susan Elizabeth Baldwin, who, together with four children, survived him. He continued in the service of New York University until in 1902 increasing age inclined him to seek relief from the regular duties of teaching. Four years later he died in Yonkers, N. Y., of apoplexy, in his seventy-fifth year.

In addition to the labor of teaching, Baird wrote very widely. He produced many addresses and articles like "The Diplomatic Services of Benjamin Franklin," an address before the American Philosophical Society, Apr. 17, 1890 (*Proceedings,* XXVIII, 209–25), and "Hotman and the Franco-Gallia," *American Historical Review,* July 1896. He also published nine volumes. These were not in the field of Greek language or literature, with the single exception of a book of travel entitled *Modern Greece* (1856), which devotes fifty pages to the modern Greek language and modern Greek literature.

Besides *The Life of the Rev. Robert Baird* (1866) and *Theodore Beza, the Counsellor of the French Reformation* (1899), his most important works were six volumes on the Huguenots: *The History of the Rise of the Huguenots of France* (1879) in two volumes; *The Huguenots and Henry of Navarre* (1886) in two volumes; *The Huguenots and the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes* (1895) in two volumes. This series, on which the writer spent more than thirty years, deserves a permanent place among the monuments, all too scanty, of American historical writing upon European subjects. It is based to a great extent upon original contemporary

sources, which are freely cited by extract and reference upon practically every page. For manuscript research the author had little opportunity, but he knew the printed original sources thoroughly. To be sure, his enthusiasm for the Huguenots occasionally suspended the full operation of his critical faculties. For example, he writes of the abjuration of Henry of Navarre, which brought peace to France and to Europe, that he shall be obliged "to trace the decadence which led to an act as disastrous to public morality as disgraceful to the King himself." But his treatment is straightforward and free from all taint of casuistry, and no observant reader has any trouble in eliminating the personal equation of the investigator. His deep and broad scholarship, his candor, and the vivacity of his narrative atone for his inability to maintain always a judicial attitude.

[*Necrological Report, Princeton Theol. Sem.* (1907), pp. 460–61; sketch by Samuel M. Jackson in *Book Buyer*, Sept. 1895; obituaries in *N. Y. Tribune*, *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 12, 1906.]

P. V–D.

BAIRD, MATTHEW (1817–May 19, 1877), locomotive builder, was of Scotch-Irish stock and was born near Londonderry, Ireland. The father, a coppersmith, brought his family to America in 1821, settling in Philadelphia. The boy attended school until he was about fifteen; he then went to work in a brick-yard and was later for a time employed as assistant to a professor of chemistry in the University of Pennsylvania. At the age of seventeen, he entered as an apprentice the copper and sheet-iron works of the New Castle (Del.) Manufacturing Company, where he remained two or three years. For a time following he was superintendent of the New Castle railroad shops. In June 1838 he was made foreman of the sheet-iron and boiler department of Baldwin's locomotive works at Philadelphia. Twelve years later he left this employment and with his brother John went into the marble business. In 1854 he bought from Matthias W. Baldwin [*q.v.*] an interest in the Baldwin works, the firm becoming a partnership under the name of "M. W. Baldwin & Company." On Baldwin's death (Sept. 7, 1866), Baird became sole proprietor. The next year he reorganized the firm, taking as partners George Burnham and Charles T. Parry and changing the name to "The Baldwin Locomotive Works, M. Baird & Company, proprietors." In April 1873 he retired from the firm, closing out his interest for $1,660,000. For a time he was inactive, but the jewelry firm in which one of his sons was a partner having failed, Baird bought the son's interest (1876) and assumed management of the business, which he conducted until his death. He was married three times, and a large family survived him. His fortune, despite the great shrinkage of values following the panic of 1873, was estimated at $2,000,000.

Baird was a skilled mechanic, with a turn for experimentation. He has been sometimes represented as a notable inventor, but his gift in mechanics seems rather to have been a talent for making practical the inventions of others. The first spark-arrester, with which his name is associated, may have been quite as much the invention of Richard French as his own; but the substitution of a deflector of fire-brick for the plate of destructible metal first employed is credited to him alone. To this knack of improving technical processes was added great executive ability. *The Iron Age*, on his decease, spoke of him as one who had "won distinction and fortune by honest and intelligent application," combined with natural mechanical gifts, and said that the success of the Baldwin works was "largely due to [his] energy, skill and honesty." He had wide business interests outside of his special line, having been a director of several railroad and manufacturing companies as well as a director of the Central National Bank and an incorporator of the American Steamship Company. He was a kindly, generous man and made many gifts to welfare organizations.

[J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884); *The Iron Age* (editorial), May 24, 1877; obituaries in the *Inquirer*, the *Press*, and the *Public Ledger* of Phila., May 21, 1877.]

W. J. G.

BAIRD, ROBERT (Oct. 6, 1798–Mar. 15, 1863), Presbyterian clergyman, was born on a Pennsylvania farm not far from Pittsburgh, of a Scotch family which had reached America by way of Northern Ireland. His father, Robert Baird, a soldier in the army of Washington, had, at the conclusion of the Revolution, bought several hundred acres of virgin forest, settled upon it with his wife, Elizabeth (Reeves) Baird, and by assiduous toil subdued it to fertility. At the age of fifteen Robert was sent, clothed in homespun, to the Academy of Uniontown, where he had the good fortune to fall into the hands of a teacher who read his New Testament in Greek and nearly wore out his copies of Horace, Virgil, and Cicero. He next attended Washington and Jefferson Colleges (then separate institutions), studied theology at Princeton Seminary, graduating in 1822, and spent five years as principal of the Princeton Academy. On Aug. 24, 1824, he was married to Fermine Du Buisson, a young lady of Huguenot descent. Becoming intensely interested in the establishment of a proper school system in the state, he wrote a series of letters on

education "To the People of New Jersey," which were published in the principal newspapers of the state, and he also devoted himself to lobbying in the legislature. In the judgment of a competent observer, President MacLean of Princeton, he did more than any other man "to direct the public attention to this subject and to induce the Legislature to pass the requisite laws for the establishment and maintenance of a system of common schools" (Baird, p. 60).

He then became interested in Sunday-schools and in 1829 was appointed general agent of the American Sunday School Union. During five years spent in this service he traveled all over the settled parts of the United States and founded thousands of schools, many of them in places where no churches existed. He wrote reports, addresses, and communications to the religious periodical press, and in addition published *A View of the Mississippi Valley* (1832) and *A Memoir of Anna Jane Linnard* (1835).

In 1834 the French Association, composed of people who desired to aid the Protestant Church of France, was formed in New York, and Baird was sent abroad as their agent to reside in Paris and "make himself acquainted with the religious condition and prospects of France and other countries of the continent." During his stay at Paris he became interested in the prospects of beginning a movement in Europe similar to that of the American Temperance Society and its affiliated organizations. At the suggestion of the American ambassador at the court of France, he wrote his *Histoire des Sociétés de Temperance des États Unis d'Amérique* (Paris, 1836), which was translated into German and Swedish. In the interests of prohibition, he made three tours of the countries of Northern Europe, which carried him from Brussels to Moscow. When the French Association developed into the Foreign Evangelical Society, and later into the American and Foreign Christian Union, Baird remained in its service and he subsequently became an ardent advocate of the Evangelical Alliance for the Protestant world. In the service of these organizations he crossed the ocean nine times and traveled more than 300,000 miles. Besides the works mentioned above, he wrote: *L'Union de l'Église et de l'État dans la Nouvelle Angleterre considerée dans ses effets sur la Religion aux États Unis* (Paris, 1837); *Memoir of the Rev. Joseph Sanford, A.M., Pastor of the Second Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia* (1836); *Visit to Northern Europe or Sketches, Descriptive, Historical, Political and Moral of Denmark, Norway, Sweden, and Finland, and the Free Cities of Hamburg and Lübeck* (1841); *Religion in the United States of America* (1843); *Sketches of Protestantism in Italy Past and Present, Including a Notice of the Origin, History and Present State of the Waldenses* (1845, 2nd ed., 1847), *The Christian Retrospect and Register: A Summary of the Scientific, Moral and Religious Progress of the First Half of the 19th Century* (1851).

[Henry Martyn Baird, *Life of the Rev. Robert Baird* (1866); John F. Hageman, *Hist. of Princeton and Its Institutions* (1879); John MacLean, *Hist. of the Coll. of New Jersey* (1877), II.]

P. V–D.

BAIRD, SAMUEL JOHN (Sept. 17, 1817–Apr. 10, 1893), Presbyterian clergyman and author, son of Rev. Thomas Dickson Baird, by his second wife, Esther (Thompson) Baird, was born at Newark, Ohio. His early years were spent at Pittsburgh, where he helped his father in the publication of *The Christian Herald*. He began his collegiate education at Jefferson College, Pa., but on account of ill health was obliged to suspend it, and after a brief rest he took charge in 1839 of a school near Abbeville, S. C. Subsequently he opened a Female Seminary at Jeffersonville, La. Resuming his studies, he prepared himself for the Presbyterian ministry by finishing his college course at Centre College, Danville, Ky., and his theological training at the Indiana Theological Seminary, New Albany, Ind., where he graduated in 1843. In 1840 he was married to Jane Jemima Wilson. On the completion of his theological studies he preached as a licentiate, first in Baltimore, Md., and later in Kentucky and the Southwest. In 1854 he was ordained by the Presbytery of Cedar [later Cedar Rapids] and became the pastor of the Presbyterian church at Muscatine, Ia. Here he served until 1857. From 1857 to 1865 he was the pastor of the church at Woodbury, N. J. He left this field in order to promote the work of the American Bible Society with which the Virginia Bible Society coöperated in the state of Virginia. This position he occupied for ten years, surrendering it in 1875 in order to assume the pastorate of the Third Presbyterian Church in that city. His next field of service was in the church of Ronceverte, W. Va. This he held from 1884 to 1888, with his residence at Fort Spring in the same state. From 1888 to 1891 he lived in retirement at Blacksburg, Va., and removed the next year to Staunton. He died at the residence of his son, Robert W. Baird, in West Clifton Forge, Va. Baird made a special study of the Presbyterian form of church government, and of its practical workings. What the Presbyterian Church most needed in the first half of the nineteenth century was an adequate codified collection of the decisions made by its governing body, the General Assembly. Before

the year 1821, nothing but brief excerpts of the deliverances of this body were available. At various intervals between 1821 and 1854 efforts had been made to supply the need, but their success was only partial. Baird undertook single handed the work of producing his *Collection of the Acts, Deliverances, and Testimonies of the Supreme Judicatory of the Presbyterian Church to the Present Time* (1854). This work was revised and reissued in a second edition (1856) and was commonly called "The Assembly's Digest." The General Assembly of 1856 (o. s.) gave the work such recognition as raised it to the rank of a semi-official statute book. Baird's other works in the same field are: *The Church of Christ, Its Constitution and Order* (1864); *A History of the Early Polity of the Presbyterian Church in the Training of Ministers;* and *A History of the New School and the Questions Involved in the Disruption* (1868). He also published books of more general theological interest, among them, *The Socinian Apostacy of the English Presbyterian Churches* (1857); *The First Adam and the Second: the Elohim Revealed in the Creation and Redemption of Man* (1860); and *The Great Baptiser; a Bible History of Baptism* (1882). He was a man of scholarly instincts and intuitions, careful and accurate in research, and exhaustive in treatment. His powers as a public speaker were not above the average, and his general temper was that of the conservative rather than the aggressive thinker.

[*The Presbyt. Encyc.* (1884), to which Baird himself gave a brief sketch of his life; the *Gen. Biog. Cat. of McCormick Theol. Sem.* (1912), p. 5; the *Minutes of the Gen. Ass. of the Presbyt. Ch., 1854–92;* Fermine Baird Catchings, *Baird and Beard Families* (1918), pp. 57, 109, 111–12, 115–16.]

A. C. Z.

BAIRD, SPENCER FULLERTON (Feb. 3, 1823–Aug. 19, 1888), zoologist, son of Samuel Baird and Lydia McFunn Biddle, was born in Reading, Pa., the third of seven children, all of whom reached maturity with a degree of personal distinction. Back of them on both sides lay an ancestry of God-fearing, intelligent, energetic forebears, almost entirely of English and Scotch blood. Spencer's father was a man of culture and ability, a lawyer by profession. After his death in 1833, Mrs. Samuel Baird made her home in Carlisle, Cumberland County, Pa., where at the age of thirteen young Spencer entered the local Dickinson College, in which his brother William, his closest associate for many years, was already a senior. In the physical surroundings of Carlisle the two boys, both possessed by a passion for natural history, found abundant satisfaction. Fields, woods, streams, and ponds offered a peculiarly rich nature fauna, while the regional limestone carried many interesting fossils. From extended rambles over the countryside the lads would return laden with specimens of birds and beasts to be preserved and studied. Together they undertook to secure a complete series of the birds of Cumberland County. A new species of fly-catcher thus obtained in 1840 led to a warm friendship between young Spencer and Audubon, the ornithologist, the first of a succession of scientists whom the youth modestly laid under tribute to his insatiable thirst for knowledge of natural history. Vacations he devoted largely to collecting excursions, to visiting all zoological workers and museums within reach, or to copying zoological descriptions and plates from books he could not himself own. The growing list of scientific acquaintances recorded even in his early diaries reads a little like a catalogue of recognized authorities of the day. In some of their homes, especially in that of Audubon, the engaging youth was a welcome guest.

In 1840 Spencer took his A.B. degree at Dickinson College; and in 1843 the institution conferred upon him the degree of Master of Arts. During this period he began and abandoned the study of medicine, finding it unsuited to his tastes; but meanwhile he greatly enlarged his scientific connections of all sorts and read extensively. At the same time he was studying both French and German as a means of acquainting himself at first hand with foreign researches in natural history. Ultimately he also acquired at least a working knowledge of Italian, Spanish, and Danish. Drawing, mathematics, mineralogy, iron metallurgy, and chemistry he pursued with enthusiasm. Tutoring occupied him to some extent. The home collection of bird skins and other material grew at an embarrassing rate, especially after he instituted a series of exchanges both in this country and abroad; by the summer of 1845, a special workshop had to be provided. All this rather to the scandal of certain relatives who thought he should be preparing "seriously" for a life work!

In the fall of 1846 Baird entered the faculty of Dickinson College as professor of natural history, having shortly before married Mary Helen Churchill (1821–91), a well-educated, highly intelligent young woman, daughter of Col. Sylvester Churchill, inspector-general during the Mexican War. The union was most happy. Mrs. Baird's charm and devotion to her husband's welfare made his home continuously a center of delightful hospitality. Unfortunately she suffered much from ill health, but so far as possible she forwarded his activities, and was of especial help in his literary work. Their daughter, Lucy Hunter Baird, shared her father's in-

terests to a marked degree, even in childhood, and cared tenderly for her mother's declining years.

At Dickinson the handsome young professor became very popular, inaugurating independently in America the method of field study of botany and zoology so successfully used already by Agassiz at Neuchâtel and, later, in this country. Baird's first meeting with Agassiz took place in the fall of 1847. Their future relations were friendly and mutually helpful; and only Agassiz's multifarious activities prevented the coöperation of these two outstanding naturalists of the day in a contemplated monograph on American fishes. Most of Baird's students were but little younger than himself, then only twenty-three. In several members of the group he inspired a permanent love of natural history. Two of them (Dr. Caleb B. R. Kennerly and John B. Clark) later became valuable aids as collectors for the National Museum. Baird now augmented his former scientific repertory by elaborate studies of fish and reptilian forms. "Forty live snakes in a barrel" he boasts of having, in one of his many letters to his brother Will. He was making the college museum (which had already received the bird-collection) "look quite smart with the additions." Afterwards, the relative tractability of harmless reptiles as household pets seems to have commended them to the family; and little Miss Lucy had for a "favorite playmate" at one time a black snake six or seven feet long—at least when the creature rode around with her on her father's shoulder, "its tail touched the floor." In 1848 the chair of chemistry was added to that of natural history at Dickinson, a fact which brings to mind Baird's surprising knowledge, in after years, of general science, as to the progress of which he kept well informed. His early study of foreign language was, of course, of great assistance here. In March 1849 he undertook the contributing editorship of *The Iconographic Encyclopedia,* published by Charles Rudolph Garrigne in 1852, and later accepted several other similar assignments, notably *The Annual Record of Science and Industry* put out by the Harpers from 1871 to 1877.

In 1850 Baird went to the Smithsonian Institution at Washington as assistant secretary to the venerable head, Joseph Henry, the physicist, upon whose death, in 1878, he was unanimously elected to the secretaryship. Among his original duties as "Keeper of the Cabinet" was "to take charge of the making of collections for the Smithsonian Museum and to request of officers of the Army and Navy . . . and of other persons such assistance as might be necessary for the accomplishment of the intended object." Construing these instructions literally and building upon a multitude of personal connections already laid, Baird developed a huge network of agencies, both private and governmental, by means of which a steady stream of material flowed into the Smithsonian from practically all over the world. In 1879, Congress authorized a building to house these collections. It is now one of the great museums of the world, a center of important work in ethnology and related fields as well as in zoology and botany.

For nearly twenty years Baird was a most prolific writer on birds. In his efforts to clear up tangled and useless synonymy and ensure accuracy in the recognition of species, he departed widely from the loose and general type of description hitherto current. He always began with a particular individual and then indicated with precision any deviations due to age, sex, geographical separation or other influences which other specimens might exhibit. Such minute exactness made the definition of local subspecies possible, and went far toward establishing the theory that, whatever other factors may occur in evolution, changes due to separating barriers constitute a main element in the differentiation of forms. Baird was not a theorist and did not worry much over the origin of forms; much of his work in fact antedated Darwin's illuminations. He described what he saw, and in such fashion that no subsequent observer had any doubt as to what he meant. This persistence in accuracy is the foundation of the "Baird School" in ornithology, so ably represented by Elliott Coues, Joel A. Allen, Robert Ridgway, John Cassin, Thomas M. Brewer, and the American ornithologists of to-day. Among Baird's extensive publications may be cited: *Catalogue of North American Birds* (1858); *Review of American Birds* (1864–66); *A History of North American Birds* (1874), in collaboration with T. M. Brewer and R. Ridgway; *North American Reptiles* (1853), in collaboration with Charles Girard; and *Catalogue of North American Mammals* (1857). His other publications, including official reports, bring the number of his titles up to 1,068, according to the bibliography prepared by his assistant, Dr. G. Brown Goode.

The third stage in Baird's career dates from the organization in 1871 of the United States Commission of Fish and Fisheries. In addition to already heavy duties, he was now asked by President Grant to assume the headship of the new Commission. For this position he was the logical selection, having actively interested himself in the study and collection of fishes for many

years previous to this date. As the original plans did not seem to involve excessive or long-continued investigations, "only the summer months of one or two years, requiring comparatively little trouble and responsibility," he felt willing to undertake the additional duty—without pay, however, in order to keep the office out of politics. In the end its increasing usefulness, with manifold connections, made great inroads not only on Prof. Baird's time and strength, but on his purse and private residence as well. In view of these facts, and in recognition of his extraordinary volunteer service, Congress appropriated after his death a considerable sum for the support of his wife and daughter. It also made the office of commissioner a salaried one for the future.

The position of Fish Commissioner brought Baird's knowledge and influence into the direct service of the government, while the effort further constituted a most effective move for the preservation of wild life. It also gave him a vastly increased opportunity to assist young naturalists and to develop in the aggregate more research than he could personally have accomplished had he refrained from executive burdens. Thorough studies of the life and life histories of American fishes, including those of Mexico and Canada, were instituted; by means of the steamer *Albatross,* the deep waters of the Atlantic and Pacific were explored; numerous fish hatcheries increased the abundance of local fishes and the extension of the range of trout and other valuable forms, besides carrying out the introduction and acclimatization of several foreign species. In brief, the work of the new Commission comprised all possible forms of ichthyological knowledge and fish-protection. The principal headquarters for investigation were at Wood's Hole, Mass., where the rough buildings contained tables for a few summer students invited by Baird to work on the abundant material daily brought in. Alongside of this informal beginning grew the present great marine laboratory of Wood's Hole, regarded as "the lineal descendant" of Agassiz's famous school at Penikese.

One of Baird's most cherished ideals was that of coöperating bureaus of science, that is, he would have the various workers supported or aided by the government join together as associates and friends, not as rivals, in the increase and diffusion of knowledge, This meant the development of a special morale based on high principles which would give government service a dignity rare in other quarters of the capital. He would weed out all those who, in Cassin's words, "look on science as a milch cow, rather than as a transcendent goddess." To a large extent he was successful in these aims; and it is not too much to say that in the seventies and eighties government science reached a degree of dignity and effectiveness it had not before possessed.

In person, Baird was slightly over six feet in height and of robust build. Keen, kindly, clear-grey eyes looked out from under a fine forehead. In later years he always wore a beard. His general appearance carried the impression of a self-reliant man of affairs. It would seem that he attended church with some regularity, though with a considerable degree of denominational tolerance. He had only one "vice"—that of over-work. Indefatigable labors from youth up resulted in dangerously recurring attacks of heart-trouble from which he died on Aug. 9, 1888, at Wood's Hole, whither he had gone to await the end. Shortly before his death, he asked to be wheeled all around the Commission station and through the laboratory for a final contact with the work of his hands. He is buried at Oak Hill Cemetery, Washington, but at Wood's Hole a granite boulder bears a bronze tablet placed there in his memory in 1902 by the American Fisheries Society.

It has been wisely observed that no man was more typical of our nation at its best than Spencer Fullerton Baird. In the front rank of American naturalists, one of the ablest teachers of natural history, a great administrator of great affairs, with personal character above reproach, he lived in the open, and spent himself in the service of humanity.

[Wm. H. Dall, *Spencer Fullerton Baird* (1915), a masterly biog. by a lifelong associate; G. B. Goode, "Biog. Sketch of Spencer Fullerton Baird," *Bull. U.S. Natl. Museum,* vol. XX (1883), containing an elaborate bibliography; J. S. Billings, *Memoir of Spencer Fullerton Baird* (1895); C. F. Holder, *Spencer Fullerton Baird* (1910); David Starr Jordan, "Spencer Fullerton Baird and the U.S. Fish Commission," *Sci. Mo.,* Aug. 1923.]

D. S. J.
J. K. J.

BAKER, BENJAMIN A. (Apr. 4, 1818–Sept. 6, 1890), playwright, actor, manager, was born in New York City. After escaping from the trade of harness-maker to which he had been apprenticed, he made his stage début in Natchez, Miss., Feb. 14, 1837, as one of the soldiers, McStuart, in *Rob Roy.* For a season he followed the fortunes of this traveling company, sharing its hardships and gaining experience as a "walking gentleman," playing among other parts Brabantio to the elder Booth's Othello. In 1839 he went to New York, continuing to support Booth at times, and, after a period at the New Chatham Theatre he was engaged as prompter and actor by Mitch-

ell, who was about to open the Olympic Theatre. Baker began his playwriting with burlesques such as *Amy Lee,* suggested by the then popular *Amelie,* but his best-known play brought into being almost a new dramatic variety. It was produced at the Olympic Theatre, Feb. 15, 1848. According to the rules, each member of the company could choose the play to be presented at his benefit and Baker wrote for his own a sketch descriptive of the seamy side of New York life, called *A Glance at New York in 1848.* It was built around the character of Mose, the New York volunteer fireman, the part being created for Frank Chanfrau [*q.v.*]. At first Mitchell refused to allow the play to be put on, because of what he considered its vulgarity, but Baker insisted, and when Chanfrau appeared, dressed in the red shirt and surmounted by the plug hat and soap locks of the "Bowery boys," the house rose to him. The realism with which Baker had portrayed one of the city's institutions, and the skill with which Chanfrau acted the part, made them both celebrities. Baker wrote a companion play, *New York As It Is,* produced at the Chatham Theatre, Apr. 17, 1848, Chanfrau acting in both plays on the same evening. Other playwrights imitated the character of Mose in New York, Philadelphia, and other cities, and a species of play in which local conditions were made the background of vivid melodrama arose, to continue till the present day. Baker himself contributed *Three Years After* (National Theatre, June 4, 1849) and *Mose in China* at the same theatre, June 24, 1850. None of these has been printed except *A Glance at New York* (New York, n. d.).

In 1851 he managed jointly with W. B. English the Howard Athenæum, in 1852 conducted the National Theatre in Washington, D. C., and then went to San Francisco, where he managed the Metropolitan Theatre for Mrs. Sinclair after her divorce from Edwin Forrest. An engagement to manage Edwin Booth's Company brought him back to the East in 1856, where he continued to act as manager and theatrical agent either in New York City or elsewhere. In 1885 he became assistant secretary of the Actors' Fund in New York and remained in that office until his death. He was known in theatrical circles as "Uncle Ben Baker" and was widely known and beloved.

[The chief sources of information are G. O. Seilhamer, *An Interviewer's Album* (1881), pp. 97–104; T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1870), p. 17; and the New York newspapers, especially the *N.Y. Herald,* Sept. 7, 11, 1890. For the plays see T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the N.Y. Stage* (1903), I, 282–85; J. N. Ireland, *Records of the N.Y. Stage* (1867), II, 507–10, 533–35, 539; A. H. Quinn, *Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923), pp. 304–7.]

A. H. Q.

BAKER, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN (July 10, 1811–Mar. 11, 1889), musician, teacher, composer, son of John and Sally Baker, was born in Wenham, Mass. The family removed to Salem in 1822, where at the age of fourteen he took up the study of music and sang in the Howard Street Presbyterian Church. In 1831 he began to teach singing. From 1828 to 1833 he lived in Boston, studying, teaching, and singing in churches. In 1833 he traveled with a concert company, after which he went to Bangor, Me., where he spent several years, combining business and music. He did not decide to make music-teaching his profession until 1837, when he returned to Boston to reside permanently. He studied with John Paddon and sang in the choir of the Chauncy Place Church. In 1839 he took charge of the music in Dr. William Ellery Channing's church, which position he retained until 1847. In 1841 he held the first of a series of musical conventions which were very popular from 1841 to 1848. In 1841 he was elected successor to Lowell Mason as teacher of music in the public schools of Boston. He held this position until 1850, personally instructing about 8,000 students weekly. He also introduced music into the schools of neighboring cities, Lowell and Lawrence. He was president of the Boston Musical Education Society for seven years and vice-president of the Handel and Haydn Society for six years, appearing as soloist in many of the concerts of the latter organization. In 1847 he began preliminary efforts toward establishing a music school, with the aim of placing the finest instruction in all branches of music within the reach of all. There was no such institution in the United States at that time. It did not materialize, however, until 1857, when the Boston Music School was opened, with all departments fully organized with capable teachers, Baker being principal of the school and instructor in voice. The opening of this school was an epochal event for American music, and it flourished unrivalled until 1868, when Baker retired from active work and closed the school. He had given liberally of his time to the development of a desire for music in other cities, as well as in Boston, yet he found time for contributing to periodicals and for composition. For several years he edited the *Boston Musical Journal.* His earliest publication was a book of songs which he edited in collaboration with Isaac B. Woodbury in 1838. This was followed by the *Boston Musical Education Society's Collections* (1842), *Choral* (1845), both of these also with Woodbury; *Haydn Col-*

lection of Church Music (1850), with L. H. Southard; *Melodia Sacra* (1852), with Johnson and Osgood. Among his own compositions are the following: *Death of Osceola,* a vocal quartet (1846); *Stars of the Summer Night,* vocal quartet (1865); and three cantatas, *The Storm King* (1856), *The Burning Ship,* and *Camillus the Roman Conqueror,* the two latter published in 1865. He was also the author of the text-books *Theory of Harmony* (1847) and *Theoretical and Practical Harmony* (1870). In all he published some thirty books including selections of church music and glees. He was married on Nov. 21, 1841, to Sabra L. Heywood of Grafton, Mass.

[*Cyc. of Music and Musicians* (1888), ed. by J. D. Champlin and W. F. Apthorp, p. 111; Theodore Baker, *Biog. Dict. of Musicians* (3rd ed., 1919), p. 44; *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians, Am. Supp.; Boston Post* and *Boston Evening Transcript,* Mar. 12, 1889.]

F. L. G. C.

BAKER, DANIEL (Aug. 17, 1791–Dec. 10, 1857), Presbyterian clergyman, educator, was descended from members of a Puritan congregation which settled at Dorchester, Mass., in 1630. In 1695 a group of descendants of this congregation formed a church which removed to the Ashley River just above Charleston, S. C. In 1752 came another removal to Midway, Ga., in what is now Liberty County. Here Daniel Baker was born. Left an orphan while still a child, he went to Savannah when fourteen years old and worked for the next six years in various commercial establishments. But the deeply religious atmosphere in which his early years were spent had left a deep impress upon the mind of the sensitive boy and he determined to be a preacher. Fully aware of the need of an education, in 1811 he took advantage of an opportunity to go to Hampden-Sidney College in Virginia. Here he spent two years in hard study and then went to Princeton where he graduated in 1815. While in Princeton his religious zeal manifested itself in organizing prayer meetings among his fellow students. He then studied theology for a year under a Presbyterian minister in Winchester, Va. In 1816 he married a Virginia girl, Elizabeth McRobert. After this he held various Presbyterian pastorates—at Harrisonburg, Va., Washington, D. C., Savannah, Ga., and Tuscaloosa, Ala. His growing reputation for persuasive eloquence drew him into much evangelistic work.

In 1840 he was sent to the Republic of Texas as an evangelistic missionary. He participated in the organization of the first presbytery of his church in Texas and proposed the establishment of a church college for young men. He remained in the Republic but a short time, soon accepting a pastorate at Holly Springs, Miss. But his interest continually turned to Texas and in 1848 he was recalled there. He found that the establishment of a college had been agreed upon by the presbyteries but that little had been done on the project. He threw himself into the work with characteristic energy, selected Huntsville as the site, was made "general agent," and began soliciting subscriptions. In November 1849 the legislature granted a charter to Austin College, so named in honor of Stephen F. Austin. In spite of the poverty of Texas at that time and the small membership of his own church, Baker was markedly successful in obtaining funds both for its maintenance and endowment. In 1853 he became president as well as general agent. He repeatedly made extensive tours over both Texas and the United States as a whole in search of funds and equipment. For several years he endeavored to obtain grants from the state legislature in the form of endowed scholarships, but state policy was against grants of public money to denominational schools and he never succeeded. His advocacy of a general public-school system, however, probably had much to do with the passage of the act of 1854 to provide a system of public schools. As the college grew the problem of obtaining support became heavier, and in January 1857 he resigned the presidency in order to devote his whole time to the work of the agency. But his work was nearly over, for he died suddenly at the home of his son, W. M. Baker, in Austin. His name has been perpetuated in Daniel Baker College, established at Brownwood, Tex., in 1889.

[*The Life and Labors of Daniel Baker* (1858), by his son William Mumford Baker, based largely upon a manuscript autobiography, is the only extensive biog. A good brief sketch is in Henry A. White, *Southern Presbyterian Leaders* (1911). Considerable material on Baker's work in Texas may be found in contemporary Texas newspapers, in the *Texas Presbyterian,* in the records of Austin Coll. (which was removed to Sherman in 1878), and in an unpublished thesis in the Lib. of the Univ. of Texas, "The Hist. of Austin Coll.," by P. E. Wallace.]

C. W. R.

BAKER, EDWARD DICKINSON (Feb. 24, 1811–Oct. 22, 1861), soldier, senator, was born in London, England, the son of a school teacher, and was brought with the family to Philadelphia in 1815. He lived in the latter city until 1825. For a time he was apprenticed to a weaver. The family moved to New Harmony, Ind., in 1825, for a year or more, and then went to Illinois, settling at Belleville, St. Clair County. As a boy Edward gave evidence of promising intellectual gifts and was an avid reader, but had little sys-

tematic education. Studying law in the office of Judge Caverly of Carrollton, he was admitted to the bar at the age of nineteen. On Apr. 27, 1831, he was married to Mary A. Lee, a widow with two children. He was a private soldier in the brief Black Hawk War. In 1835 he moved to Springfield for the serious practise of his profession, becoming one of a brilliant circle who won fame both in the law and in politics, among them Lincoln, Douglas, Browning, Yates, and Trumbull. Already he was acquiring reputation as an orator, and this naturally took him into politics. From 1837 to 1840 he represented Sangamon County in the General Assembly, and was state senator from 1840 to 1844. Lincoln and Baker were rival Whig candidates for congressional nomination, but Baker won and was elected, the only Whig chosen in Illinois for the Twenty-ninth Congress. Although out of harmony with his party, he supported the policy of President Polk on the Oregon question. When the Mexican War began he promptly went to Illinois, raised a regiment of volunteers, and led them to join Gen. Taylor. In December 1846 he was back in Washington as bearer of dispatches. Being still a member of the House and speaking in uniform, he advocated with telling effect better measures for the equipment of the soldiers. Then he resigned his seat, went to the front, and served with distinction at Cerro Gordo. The command of a brigade devolved upon him when Gen. Shields was wounded. Soon thereafter, his regiment not reënlisting, he resigned his commission and returned to the practise of law.

In 1848 he moved into the Galena district, announced himself an Independent Whig candidate for Congress, and won a personal triumph in that Democratic district—this after a residence of only three weeks. He was also one of the unsuccessful Taylor presidential electors. Lincoln and other Whigs in Illinois, Iowa, and Wisconsin urged his appointment to a cabinet position, and Baker was grievously disappointed in not being chosen. There was little save for certain displays of oratorical eloquence to distinguish his service in the Thirty-first Congress. In 1851 he carried out a contract to grade a section of the Panama railway, but was obliged to return home to recover from fever. In 1852 he was attracted to California, where he at once became prominent as a lawyer and public speaker. California was Democratic, but he was active as a Whig and then as a Republican in the face of discouragements. Public disfavor fell upon him when he followed his sense of duty in defending the notorious Cora, opposing the Vigilance Committee of 1856. Yet he was in demand as an orator, his

Baker

most notable speech being the funeral oration on Senator Broderick, on Sept. 18, 1859. Shortly thereafter the Republican organization of Oregon sent a committee to invite him to go to that state to give popular leadership, with the understanding that he would be the preferred candidate of the party for United States senator. He embraced the opportunity to realize a life-long ambition, moved to Oregon in February 1860, and was elected senator in October by a combination of Republicans and Douglas Democrats. This was a famous victory over the regular Democrats led by the redoubtable Joseph Lane, and contributed materially to the choice of Lincoln electors. Starting promptly for Washington, Baker was given a reception in San Francisco which was utilized for the national campaign with great and perhaps decisive effect in the close contest to win California for Lincoln. Baker entered on his duties Dec. 5, 1860, the only Republican from the Pacific Coast sent to support the new administration. This circumstance, coupled with his reputation as an orator and his known intimacy with Lincoln, gave him immediate prominence. Lincoln invited him to Springfield for a personal conference, which was held in the latter part of December, and continued to rely greatly on his advice about checkmating secession movements in the Pacific states. The first of two remarkable replies to Senator Judah P. Benjamin was delivered on Jan. 2, 1861 (*Congressional Globe*, 36 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 224–29, 238–43). Of this effort Sumner said: "That speech passed at once into the permanent literature of the country, while it gave to its author an assured position in this body" (*Ibid.*, 37 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 54). In New York on Apr. 19 Baker was one of the speakers at an enormous mass meeting in Union Square, delivering an oration of great popular effect. His famous reply to Senator Breckinridge was delivered in the Senate on Aug. 1, 1861 (*Ibid.*, 37 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 377–79), when he came in uniform directly from training the troops he was commanding. On the 21st of April he had accepted an invitation to help raise and to be the colonel of a "California regiment" to be enlisted in New York and Pennsylvania. The effort was so successful that Baker was given charge of a brigade. He declined successive offers of appointments as brigadier-general and major-general, because acceptance would require resignation as senator from Oregon. He was killed in action at the unfortunate affair of Ball's Bluff on Oct. 22, 1861.

[Jos. Wallace, *Sketch of the Life and Pub. Services of Edward D. Baker* (1870); John D. Baltz, *Hon. Edward D. Baker* (1888); Elijah R. Kennedy, *The Contest for*

California in 1861 (1912); *Biog. Cong. Dir.* (1913), p. 452; Wm. D. Fenton, "Edward Dickinson Baker," *Quart. Ore. Hist. Soc.*, Mar. 1908, pp. 1–23; *California and Californians*, ed. by R. L. Hunt (1926), II, 578, V, 143–44.]

C. A. D—y.

BAKER, FRANK (Aug. 22, 1841–Sept. 30, 1918), anatomist and historian, was born at Pulaski, N. Y., the son of Thomas and Sybil (Weed) Baker. His ancestors, who came from Gloucestershire, England, settled in New England and fought in the Revolutionary War. In 1861, Baker enlisted in the 37th New York Volunteers, serving until 1863; he then entered the government service at Washington, D. C. He was graduated with the degree of M.D. from Columbian (now George Washington) University in 1880. After some years of practise in Washington, he became, in 1883, professor of anatomy in the Georgetown University School of Medicine, holding this chair continuously for thirty-five years until his death. During this entire period he contributed many papers on anatomy and allied subjects to scientific societies. He also reported frequently on various phases of medical history, a subject in which he took the greatest interest.

His anatomical papers dealt especially with the teaching of anatomy. He visualized anatomy as a living subject and used his knowledge of anthropology and embryology to emphasize its dynamic character. He founded the biological and anthropological societies of Washington, D. C., served as president of the Association of American Anatomists, 1897, secretary of the Washington Academy of Science from 1890 to 1911, and edited the *American Anthropologist* from 1891 to 1898. He collaborated with Dr. John S. Billings in the *Medical Dictionary* (1890), and contributed the section on medical and anatomical terms in the *Standard Dictionary* (1890), as well as the anatomical article in Buck's *Reference Handbook of the Medical Sciences*. In 1889, he was appointed superintendent of the United States Life Saving Service and from 1890 to 1916 served as superintendent of the National Zoological Park, D. C. He read a number of papers on medical history before the Johns Hopkins Medical Society and was one of the founders of the Medical History Club of Washington. His "History of Anatomy" in Stedman's *Reference Handbook of the Medical Sciences* (1913), I, 323–45, is one of the best accounts of the subject ever written. He collected a valuable library on anatomy, which was divided after his death between the library of the Surgeon-General's Office, Washington, and the medical library of McGill University.

Baker's fine presence and his lively sense of humor made him a most popular teacher. His lectures to art schools were largely attended. He was a life-long friend of Walt Whitman and John Burroughs, all three having been in the government service together. By his confrères he was considered as "probably the most erudite physician in Washington." On Sept. 13, 1873, he married Mary E. Cole of Sedgwick, Me. His death occurred in Washington, Sept. 30, 1918, and his widow and six children survived him.

[The chief biog. reference is Dr. Fielding H. Garrison's obituary in the *N. Y. Medic. Jour*, 1918, CVIII, 859 (bibliography). Baker's most important anatomical papers will be found in the *Medic. Rec.*, 1884, XXV, 421–25, and in the *N. Y. Medic. Jour.*, 1887, XLVI, 451–57. An important hist. paper, on "The Two Sylviuses," appeared in the *Bull. of the Johns Hopkins Hospital*, 1909, XX, 329–39.]

H. R. V.

BAKER, GEORGE AUGUSTUS (March 1821–Apr. 2, 1880), portrait painter in oils and miniature, was born in New York, the son of a miniature painter, George Augustus Baker, who was born at Strassburg, France, and settled in New York City. From his father he received his first instructions in art and at the age of sixteen he started on his professional career as a miniature painter. He was so successful at painting portraits on ivory that his work was in constant demand and during his first year he painted 150 miniatures at five dollars apiece. For seven years he continued the profession of miniature painting, studying all the while at the National Academy of Design to equip himself as a portrait painter in oils. He then sailed for Europe, where he studied from 1844 to 1846, returning in the latter year to New York City, where he became as popular a painter of portraits in oils as he had been a miniature painter. In 1851 he was elected National Academician. He excelled in his portraits of women and children, and his portrait of one of the children of A. M. Cozzens was exhibited at the Paris Exposition in 1867. After 1866 he lived in Darien, Conn. Although a life-long sufferer from neuralgia and afflicted with serious eye-trouble, he produced a great many portraits and had orders for two years in advance. His work is highly finished and carefully drawn and he confined himself almost entirely to painting portraits. "Love at First Sight," "Wild Flowers," "Faith," and "The May Queen" are the titles of some of his compositions. His portrait of the artist John F. Kensett is owned by the Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York. Many of his paintings were bought by G. M. Vanderbilt for his collection.

[H. C. Tuckerman, *Bk. of the Artists* (1867); H. W. French, *Art and Artists in Conn.* (1879); T. Bolton, *Early Am. Portr. Painters in Miniature* (1921); *N. Y. Tribune*, Apr. 3, 1880; Clement and Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Cent.* (1879).]

T. B.

Baker

BAKER, HARVEY HUMPHREY (Apr. 11, 1869–Apr. 10, 1915), first judge of the juvenile court of Boston, was the son of James Baker, a merchant from Cape Cod, and Harriet M. (Humphrey) Baker, whose father owned a farm in Brookline, Mass. He was born in the old farmhouse in Newton St., and there he lived until his death, the day before his forty-sixth birthday. He prepared for college at the Roxbury Latin School; graduated from Harvard in 1891, with membership in Phi Beta Kappa, and from the Harvard Law School in 1894, receiving the degree of Master of Arts at the same time. He began immediately the practise of law, and soon became a member of the firm known later as Hayes, Williams, Baker & Hersey, keeping this connection until his death. In the town meetings and other affairs of Brookline he took an active part, serving as clerk of the police court for a year and as a special justice from 1895 to 1906. When the Boston juvenile court was established in 1906, Governor Curtis Guild selected him to be the first judge. The appointment did not escape criticism. Baker's life had been free from financial care, sheltered from temptations and even from much contact with such problems as confront the boys and girls who would come into the court. Though his intimate friends knew him as the best of story-tellers, the joyous companion of country walks, to the casual acquaintance his premature grayness, a pronounced stoop, and the habitual seriousness of his expression gave an impression of reserve and austerity. He was not even married. How could he be expected to understand the wayward children of the city? On his own side, when he accepted the appointment, after visiting many of the existing juvenile courts and institutions for delinquent children in the country, it was not only with a modest sense of duty but also in a spirit of adventure. In the nine years that remained before his early death he established the Boston juvenile court in a position of leadership in the country; and for himself he found increasing satisfaction in the work, which demanded the full exercise of every faculty.

His success as judge of the juvenile court was due to the simplicity and sincerity of his character; to the quality of his intelligence and knowledge; and to his unsparing use of mind and time and energy on the problems which came before him. Fairness, patience, tact, ability to see many conflicting points of view, firmness when necessary, were characteristic of his dealings. The atmosphere of his court was serious, almost solemn. There were no distracting decorations in the room. Few persons were present: sometimes no one but the judge and the child; frequently only the probation officer in addition. He liked to think of the court as a dispensary and of the officials as physicians, concerned not to treat symptoms, represented by the offense which brings the child into court, but to study the child's conduct as a whole, and give a prescription that will cure whatever is wrong in the situation.

In finding the right prescription and in seeking to understand his cases, he developed a high degree of coöperation between the juvenile court and the various social agencies of the city. But with the best use of existing facilities he was increasingly oppressed with the conviction that "juvenile courts and all other agencies are dealing with children without sufficient knowledge of what is really the matter." In his review of the first five years of the court (cited below) he urged the creation of a "clinic for the intensive study of baffling cases." When after his death his friends and associates established a memorial of him and his work it took the appropriate form of an endowment for such a clinic, organized in April 1917, and named the Judge Baker Foundation.

[*Harvey Humphrey Baker, Upbuilder of the Juvenile Court,* published by the Judge Baker Foundation, Boston, 1920 (133 pp.), contains a sketch of his life, by Roy M. Cushman, secretary of the Foundation, who had been associated with him as probation officer; Judge Baker's "Review of the First Five Years of the Boston Juvenile Court," and an article by Judge Baker on "The Procedure of the Boston Juvenile Court," reprinted from the *Survey* of Feb. 5, 1910; short articles by C. C. Carstens and Charles F. Dole in the *Survey* of Apr. 24, 1915.]

L. B.

BAKER, JAMES (Dec. 19, 1818–May 15, 1898), trapper, guide, pioneer settler, was born at Belleville, Ill. His parents are said to have been of Scotch-Irish stock and to have come from South Carolina. He early learned the use of firearms, but had little schooling. At nineteen he started west, and in St. Louis met James Bridger, then recruiting a company of trappers for the American Fur Company. On May 25, 1838, he left the city with the Bridger party for the annual rendezvous in the mountains. The journey was, according to Baker, a hazardous one, for the Indians along the trail "were as thick as bees" and unusually bellicose. The pacifying genius of Bridger, however, carried the party safely to its destination. Baker spent the next two years in trapping. In the summer of 1840 he returned to St. Louis and also made a brief visit to his boyhood home; but in the spring of 1841 he started again for the mountains. He was in the desperate fight at the junction of Battle Creek and Little Snake River, on the Colorado-

Wyoming line, Aug. 21–22, when thirty-five trappers beat off a large force of Sioux, Cheyennes, and Arapahos, though with the loss of their leader, Henry Fraeb, and three others. In the spring following the famous "cold winter of '45" (which seems actually to have been the winter of 1843–44), when most of the horses and even many of the wild animals in the mountains perished, he took part in a trappers' raid on the horse-herds of the Southern Californians. Though the decline of the fur trade in the early forties drove most of the trappers to abandon the field, Baker stayed on. Little is known of his movements, however, from 1844 to 1855, when he emerged as a chief of scouts for Gen. W. S. Harney at Fort Laramie. In 1857 he guided as far as Fort Bridger a part of the Federal army sent against the Mormons. With Tim Goodale as assistant, he served as guide to Capt. Marcy's expedition which left Fort Bridger on Nov. 24 to cross the Colorado mountains to Fort Massachusetts—an adventure in which both guides lost their way and in which the party narrowly escaped destruction. Returning by the foothills east of the Rockies, and passing by the future site of Denver, where one of the men discovered gold, the expedition reached Fort Bridger on June 9, 1858. Baker remained for a short time in the Green River region, and then returned to the Colorado placers and built a cabin on Clear Creek, near the present Denver. At some time between 1866 and 1869 he returned to Green River. In 1873 he chose for his permanent home a spot in the valley of the Little Snake River, near the scene of the famous battle, erected on it a cabin with a watch tower, and began to raise livestock. Here he died. His grave, which is marked with an inscribed stone, is about a mile from the town of Savery, Wyo.

Baker was three times married—each time to an Indian woman—and had a number of children. He was one of the most picturesque figures of the old frontier. He adopted Indian dress and habits and to a considerable extent was swayed by Indian superstitions. His stalwart form was crowned by a thick shock of chestnut hair which curled in ringlets all over his head, and which was still but slightly grizzled when he reached the age of seventy. All who knew him esteemed him highly. Capt. Marcy wrote of him as "a generous, noble-hearted specimen of the trapper type who would peril his life for a friend at any time or divide his last morsel of food." In 1917 the Wyoming legislature appropriated a sum for the purchase and removal of his cabin to Frontier Park, Cheyenne, and on July 23 of that year, in its new location, it was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies.

[C. G. Coutant, *The Hist. of Wyoming from the Earliest Known Discoveries* (1899); R. B. Marcy, *Thirty Years of Army Life on the Border* (1866); Frank Hall, *Hist. of the State of Colorado*, I (1889); Alice P. Hill, *Tales of the Colorado Pioneers* (1884); J. Cecil Alter, "Jim Baker: Frontiersman," in *The Salt Lake Tribune*, May 13, 1923; Maggie Kilgor, article in *The Wyoming Tribune* (Cheyenne), July 23, 1917.] W.J.G.

BAKER, JAMES HEATON (May 6, 1829–May 25, 1913), politician, soldier, journalist, was the son of Henry and Hannah (Heaton) Baker, Ohioans of early American stock. When he was an infant the family moved from Monroe, Ohio, his birthplace, to Lebanon. The death of his mother caused him to be sent to his grandfather's home near Middletown, where studies in the local academy prepared him for matriculation at Ohio Wesleyan University in 1847. He was graduated with honors from that institution in 1852, and the following year, after a few months of teaching, he entered the field of journalism by purchasing the *Scioto Gazette* of Chillicothe, Ohio. This newspaper furnished a bridge to politics, for Baker espoused the cause of the new Republican party after its establishment in 1854. In return for his vigorous support of the organization in Ohio he was placed as candidate for secretary of state upon the ticket headed by Salmon P. Chase in 1855, and, with other candidates of the party, he was elected (*History of the Republican Party in Ohio,* 1898, edited by J. P. Smith, I, 37, 40). After the expiration of his term of office, in 1857, he removed to Minnesota Territory, then on the eve of statehood. His marked gifts as a speaker found a ready outlet in the struggle of the Republican party for political control in Minnesota. The party gained an overwhelming victory in 1859 and Baker found himself for the second time a secretary of state. Acceptable service in this position brought him a reëlection. During his second term he resigned to accept the colonelcy of the 10th Minnesota Volunteer Regiment, which was being organized for Civil War service. The Sioux outbreak in the summer of 1862 delayed the departure of his regiment for the South. It was for a time assigned to frontier guard duty and in 1863 formed a part of Gen. Sibley's punitive expedition into Dakota against the fleeing Sioux and gave valiant service in the battle of Stony Lake (*Official Records,* ser. 1, vol. XXII, p. 370). After the return to Minnesota, Baker was ordered to report at St. Louis, where he was placed in command of the post and his regiment assigned to provost guard duty. When the regiment was sent to the front in April 1864 citizens of St. Louis requested that Baker be continued in command of the post, and to his regret he was separated from his

regiment. Before the war ended he was made provost marshal general of the military department of Missouri and brevetted brigadier-general.

After the war he spent two years at Booneville, Mo., as register of the land office, and then returned to the farm that he had bought in Blue Earth County shortly after his arrival in Minnesota. In 1871 Grant appointed him United States commissioner of pensions, a position that he held until 1875. In his first report he called attention to the need of consolidating the more than forty laws relating to pensions and his recommendation resulted in the codification act of 1873 (*House Executive Documents,* 42 Cong., 2 Sess., vol. I, pt. 5, p. 379; J. W. Oliver, *History of the Civil War Military Pensions, 1861–85,* ch. 2). For four years after 1875 he held a second federal appointment, that of surveyor general of Minnesota, and did much to arouse popular interest in the state's rich iron deposits. In 1879 he purchased two newspapers in Mankato and consolidated them in the *Mankato Free Press,* which he published for two years. He was elected state railroad commissioner in 1881, and served as chairman of the Railroad and Warehouse Commission created in 1885. He joined the ranks of the Farmers' Alliance, and was placed on its first Minnesota ticket, in 1890, as a candidate for Congress from the second district, but was defeated. The remaining years of his life were spent in comparative retirement, though his interest in politics never waned and he frequently appeared as a public speaker. A taste for history caused him to publish several studies, including a history of transportation in Minnesota (*Minnesota Historical Collections,* IX, 1–34) and a volume entitled "Lives of the Governors of Minnesota" (*Minnesota Historical Collections,* XIII). The chief value of the latter work, a series of slight sketches in journalistic style, lies in the fact that the author had known each of the eighteen governors portrayed. Baker was twice married: in 1852 to Rose L. Thurston of Delaware, Ohio, who died in 1873, and in 1879 to Zulu Bartlett, who survived him.

[Several memorial addresses in Baker's honor appear in *Minn. Hist. Coll.,* XV, 753–57. Sketches of his career are published in W. H. C. Folsom, *Fifty Years in the Northwest* (1888); C. E. Flandrau, *Encyc. of Biog. of Minn.* (1900); Thomas Hughes, *Hist. of Blue Earth County, Minn.* (1909); and *Mankato: Its First Fifty Years* (1903).] T.C.B.

BAKER, JAMES HUTCHINS (Oct. 13, 1848–Sept. 10, 1925), college president, was born on a farm near Harmony, Me., the son of Wesley and Lucy (Hutchins) Baker, both natives of Maine. A background of stern and rockbound coast, a family English and Revolutionary, childhood and youth passed on a small New England farm, these had implications of ruggedness of body and lankness of limb; of shyness and stubborn aggressiveness; of sound integrity. Twenty weeks a year in the red schoolhouse, a short term in a private academy, the formal clean-cut drill of the Latin school preparatory for college, four years and the B.A. degree in 1873 at Bates College, Lewiston, Me., interspersed with terms of country-school teaching; the result was a New England schoolmaster of the seventies. Two years as principal at Yarmouth, Me., in a public school just evolved from an academy, in the transition stage between the aristocratic Latin school and democracy's high school, sent Baker to his physician, who advised him to go West. Appointed principal of the Denver High School in 1874, he continued there seventeen years. To this pioneer high school in the West he gave a standing in character and scholarship that was recognized by great eastern colleges. January 1892 saw him president of the University of Colorado at Boulder, an institution fifteen years old with sixty-six students. He labored there for twenty-two years, building and reënforcing. In 1914 he retired, his eye undimmed, his natural forces unabated, leaving a university of 1,306 students and an able faculty, with a standing among class A universities.

Baker proposed in the National Education Association the Committee of Ten whose report in 1893 offered the first comprehensive program of secondary education. In 1907 in the same organization he proposed the Committee on Economy of Time in Education. The report of this committee of which he was chairman, delayed till 1913, had no small influence on the nation-wide organization of junior high schools and in the development of the junior college. He published *Elementary Psychology* (1890); *Education and Life* (1900); *American Problems* (1907); *Educational Aims and Civic Needs* (1913); *University Reform and College Progress Relative to School and Society* (1916); *After the War, What?* (1918); *Of Himself and Other Things* (1922). He was president of the National Council of Education in 1892 and of the National Association of State Universities in 1907. At the time of his death in Denver he had just completed plans as editor for the writing of the history of Colorado under the auspices of the State Historical Society as a feature of the semi-centennial anniversary of the state's admission to the Union. A week before his death he remarked, "I anticipate no early taking off, but should anything happen my part of the writing is practically

finished." He was married on June 20, 1882, to Jennie Hilton of Denver, who survived him.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *Univ. of Colo. Bull.*, 1914; *Colo. Alumnus*, XV; *Rocky Mt. News*, Sept. 11, 1925.]

H.M.B.

BAKER, LA FAYETTE CURRY (Oct. 13, 1826–July 3, 1868), chief of the United States Secret Service, was born at Stafford, N. Y. His father, Remember Baker, was the grandson and namesake of the Vermont border warrior who shared with Ethan Allen the fame or notoriety derived from leadership of the "Green Mountain Boys." La Fayette Baker attained his majority in Michigan, and from 1848 to 1860, as an itinerant mechanic, became a bird of passage, stopping only for brief residences in New York, Philadelphia, and San Francisco. He was in New York at the outbreak of the Civil War, and, having gained some experience, as a San Francisco Vigilante, in the use of high-handed and surreptitious methods of government, he went to Washington seeking employment best suited to his talents. Sent by Gen. Scott on a secret mission to Richmond, Baker succeeded in reaching his objective as a Confederate prisoner, secured the desired information while Jefferson Davis was trying to determine whether he was a spy, then escaped and returned to Washington.

The Richmond episode secured for Baker permanent employment as a detective, and, with later successes, it gained for him a colonel's commission, an appointment as special provost marshal of the War Department in 1862, and the rank of brigadier-general in 1865. Armed with wide powers and unlimited resources he became a veritable Fouché. Due process, warrants for arrest and search, and other constitutional guarantees were disregarded while the chief of detectives ferreted out plotters, traitors, war speculators, bounty-jumpers, and amassed a small fortune for himself. Nevertheless, Baker's ability and service as a detective are unquestionable, as his planning and direction of the expedition that captured John Wilkes Booth and D. C. Herold demonstrated (*Congressional Globe*, 39 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 4187). But his reputation suffered when Congress in distributing the rewards for the capture of the Booth conspirators reduced the Claims Committee's award of $17,500 to Baker, to $3,750, largely because "he was building a big hotel in Lansing" (*Ibid.*, p. 4186; App. p. 423), and when President Johnson dismissed him from office for his insolence in maintaining an espionage system at the White House. His last bid for notoriety was in the rôle of star witness against President Johnson in the impeachment proceedings, where his alleged Adamson letters were to uncrown Cæsar. Curiously, those fabulous documents, like the Canadian letters linking Jefferson Davis with the Booth conspiracy, "eternally eluded the grasp of their pursuers, and the chase ever resulted only in aiding the depletion of the public treasury," with the result that Baker "to his many previous outrages . . . added that of wilful and deliberate perjury" (*House Report No. 7*, 40 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 110–11). This habitual carelessness in mixing truth and fiction was not overcome in his *History of the United States Secret Service* (1867). He died in Philadelphia, his wife, Jennie C. Curry, to whom he was married Dec. 24, 1852, surviving him.

[B. P. Poore, *The Conspiracy Trial for the Murder of President Lincoln*, 1 (1865), p. 4; R. S. Baker, "The Capture, Death, and Burial of John Wilkes Booth," *McClure's Mag.*, IX, p. 574; *Official Records*, ser. 1, II, III; the *Press* (Phila.), July 4, 1868; D. M. DeWitt, *The Assassination of President Lincoln* (1909), p. 276.]

T.D.M.

BAKER, LAURENCE SIMMONS (May 15, 1830–Apr. 10, 1907), Confederate soldier, was born at Coles Hill, Gates County, N. C., the son of Dr. John Burgess Baker and Mary (Wynn) Baker. (By some clerical error his first name was recorded in the War Department as *Lawrence*, and so spelled, officially, while he was in the army.) He graduated at West Point in 1851, was commissioned in the Mounted Riflemen, and served with his regiment for ten years, chiefly on the frontier. In March 1855 he was married to Elizabeth Earl Henderson of Salisbury, N. C. He was promoted to first-lieutenant in 1859. Although he was opposed to secession, he accepted the decision of his state, resigned his commission (May 10, 1861), and entered the Confederate service. He was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the 1st North Carolina Cavalry, of which another former officer of the regular army (Ransom) was colonel. Under their direction the regiment was at once subjected to a strict discipline and thorough training unusual in newly-raised volunteer regiments. There was bitter feeling at first, among both officers and men, which disappeared as the necessities of military service were realized, and finally changed to pride. In the spring of 1862, Baker was promoted to the colonelcy of the regiment. In June the regiment was ordered to join the Army of Northern Virginia, then engaged in the Peninsular campaign. It arrived on the 28th, after a forced march, and the next day had a spirited engagement with the 3rd Pennsylvania Cavalry, whose colonel—Averell, afterward brigadier-general—had served with Baker in the Mounted Riflemen. For the next year, the regiment, under Baker's command, was

actively engaged in all the operations of Lee's army. In the cavalry fight on the last day of the battle of Gettysburg, Wade Hampton, the brigade commander, was wounded, and Baker succeeded him, receiving promotion to the rank of brigadier-general a few days later. His right arm was wounded in a skirmish on the night of July 31–Aug. 1, 1863, and he was sent to the general hospital in Richmond for treatment. The following year he was assigned (June 9) to a territorial command in North Carolina, with headquarters at Goldsboro. Though again wounded in a skirmish on Sept. 22, he soon returned to duty, and late in the year went to South Carolina with a brigade of reserves—boys and exempts brought together by the last desperate effort of the Confederacy—to join the forces which Bragg was assembling to meet Sherman's expected march northward. For a few days he commanded a division, but on Dec. 26 he was relieved and sent back to Goldsboro, disabled on account of intense suffering caused by an old wound—the one received in 1863, apparently, and not the more recent one. He was back in the field again with his brigade for the campaign in the spring of 1865, and was present at the battle of Bentonville. His command was detached, at some distance from the main army, when the news of Lee's surrender reached him. Johnston's army, now the only considerable Confederate organization in existence in the east, evidently needed every available man. Baker's attempt to join it with all his troops was destined to failure, for the roads were almost everywhere blocked by Union soldiers; so, disbanding his force, he tried to make his way across country with some fifty volunteers. On Apr. 20, however, he learned that Johnston was negotiating for surrender, and gave up the struggle. He was paroled at Raleigh on May 8, and began life again as a farmer. In 1878, he became railroad station agent at Suffolk, Va., and continued there until his death.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.*, II, 304; *Bull. Ass. Grads. Mil. Acad.*, 1908, p. 83; *Hists. of the Several Regiments and Battalions from N. C.* (1901); *Confed. Mil. Hist.*, IV, 291–94.]

T. M. S.

BAKER, LORENZO DOW (Mar. 15, 1840–June 21, 1908), sea captain, planter, and merchant, was born at Wellfleet, Mass., the son of David and Thankful (Rich) Baker, of a line of Cape Cod mariners dating from the seventeenth century. Trained by his father from boyhood for a seafaring life, Lorenzo had only the winter months each year in the Wellfleet public school and later a short term in Wilbraham Academy. The elder Baker had been a whaler and the son

became a successful fisherman. He was a sailor boy at ten, master of a ship at twenty-one, and was never in his life of nearly seventy years more than two weeks out of sight of the ocean. In 1870, as owner and master of a schooner, he contracted to convey a party of gold-miners, with their machinery and supplies, 300 miles up the Orinoco River in Venezuela. On his return voyage he put into Jamaica, seeking cargo. There his attention was drawn to bunches of bright yellow bananas—a wild fruit that had never been imported to the United States in quantity. He covered the deck of his schooner with the ripe fruit, purchased at twenty-five cents a bunch, and on arrival at Boston was able to dispose of the bulk of the shipment at prices ranging from $2.50 to $3.25 a bunch. This is believed to have been the first cargo of bananas sold at Boston. When the fruit reached the market, most of it was over-ripe and Capt. Baker profited by the experience; thereafter he bought his bananas green, making several voyages a year to Jamaica and back. In 1879 English capital organized the Atlas Line of steamships, and Baker was made the Jamaica agent of the enterprise, receiving five per cent on shipments to American ports. The banana trade had now become important, largely through Baker's energy and business acumen. The sugar industry in Jamaica had ceased to be profitable; the stimulus to banana-growing given by the new American market came at the right time. Baker encouraged both whites and negroes on the island to cultivate the fruit, which had not before been done extensively. Gradually a profitable industry was built up, which brought wealth to Baker and a diffusion of prosperity in Jamaica. A British colonial officer said in 1905, "Capt. Baker has done more for Jamaica than all the Governors and Governments." While he was the Atlas Line representative he continued his heavy shipments of bananas to Boston. He brought about the organization of the Boston Fruit Company in 1885, became its president, and after the formation of the United Fruit Company in 1897, he was managing director of its Jamaica division. Although the latter years of his life were largely passed in Jamaica, Baker was interested in various New England corporations and institutions. A loyal member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, he was for several years a trustee of Boston University. He was married on Dec. 19, 1861, to Martha M. Hopkins, who like himself was a descendant of Stephen Hopkins of the *Mayflower*. There were four children of this marriage.

[Frederick Upham Adams, *Conquest of the Tropics* (1914); Eugene P. Lyle, Jr., "Capt. Baker and Ja-

maica," *World's Work*, Mar. 1906; Samuel Atkins Eliot, *Biog. Hist. of Mass.* (1913), IV.] W. B. S.

BAKER, MARCUS (Sept. 23, 1849–Dec. 12, 1903), geographer, the son of John and Chastina (Fobes) Baker, was born in Kalamazoo, Mich. He was educated in the common schools, in Kalamazoo College, and the University of Michigan, graduating from the latter in 1870. He taught mathematics at Albion College, 1870–71, and was instructor in mathematics at the University of Michigan, 1871–73. He was married in 1874 to Sarah Eldred, who died in 1897. In 1899 he was married to Marion Una Strong, who, with two children, survived him. His first conspicuous work was with Dr. W. H. Dall in a survey of little known and difficult Alaskan waters in 1873. He aided in preparing the *Coast Pilot of Alaska* and the bibliography of Alaskan geography. In Los Angeles in 1882 he conducted a magnetic observatory. Beginning with 1886 he was for many years a member of the United States Geological Survey and he contributed much to that creative and fruitful period of the Survey's history. He directed the topographic work of the north-eastern division and thus had much to do with the mapping of southern New England and other regions. For a time he was the editor of topographic maps for the Survey. He contributed to American geography constantly and largely as a member of the Board of Geographic Names, serving much of the time as secretary and editor. In addition to many problems of research in the Survey he prepared for the United States Government an elaborate report on the Venezuelan boundary question and was for a long time employed by Venezuela as an expert in that case. As a member of the Geological Survey he prepared "A Geographic Dictionary of Alaska" (*Survey Bulletin No. 187*, 1902). He had an influential place in scientific societies, notably as a founder and manager, until his death, of the National Geographic Society, and as secretary, editor, and president of the Philosophical Society of Washington. Near the end of his life he became assistant secretary of the Carnegie Institution.

[Sketch by William H. Dall, *Natl. Geographic Mag.*, XV, 40–43; another in *Carnegie Institution Yr. Bk.*, No. 2.] A. P. B.

BAKER, OSMON CLEANDER (July 30, 1812–Dec. 20, 1871), Methodist bishop, was born at Marlow, N. H., the son of Dr. Isaac Baker, and of Abigail Kidder. At fifteen he entered Wilbraham Academy, in Massachusetts, was converted there, received his license to exhort at the age of seventeen, and in 1830 enrolled in the first class in Wesleyan University, at Middletown, Conn., whose president, Wilbur Fisk, who had also been his principal and teacher at Wilbraham, profoundly influenced him. On account of serious ill health he had to leave college in his senior year. In 1834 he became teacher in the seminary at Newbury, Vt., and in 1838 principal. In the jubilee year of Methodism (1839) the matter of a theological school was agitated by the New England and New Hampshire Conferences, and in 1840–41 Newbury, Vt., was selected as the site. This led Baker to organize in 1840 the theological society of Newbury Seminary for the training of ministers, and in 1841 he and his associates began regular theological classes. In 1843 a portion of the Seminary building was formally dedicated as a theological school. This made Baker the first professor in such a school in Methodism in America, though W. M. Willett had been teaching Hebrew in Wesleyan since 1830. In 1844 Baker resigned to become pastor in the New Hampshire Conference, but had served only two churches, Rochester and Manchester, when in 1847 he was made presiding elder (district superintendent). That same year saw the theological institution (the Methodist General Biblical Institute) reorganized and opened at Concord, N. H., with Baker as professor of homiletics, Methodist discipline, etc. Both in his character and instruction—for he was a born teacher—he left a deep impress upon his students. In 1852, he was elected bishop by the General Conference which met that year in Boston, but Concord remained his home until the end. As bishop he was conscientious, kind, fair, and competent. His unrivalled knowledge of Methodist law comes out in his *Guide Book in the Administration of the Discipline of the Methodist Episcopal Church* (1855, revised ed. 1869). For nearly two generations this was a hand-book for perplexed bishops and pastors, in those years when that mighty little book, *The Doctrines and Discipline of the Methodist Episcopal Church*, was taken seriously. Baker was six feet tall with a smooth, florid, intelligent face. He married Mehitabel Perley, of Leinster, N. H., in 1833. She survived him, dying at Concord May 8, 1890.

[*Christian Advocate* (N.Y.), Dec. 28, 1871, Jan. 4, 1872; *Zion's Herald*, July 24, 1912; Chas. Adams, in *Meth. Quart. Rev.*, Jan. 1878, pp. 111–20; private letters from W. F. Warren, M. D. Buell, and C. S. Nutter, Librarian of the Meth. Hist. Soc. of Boston; O. E. Baker, *The Last Witness* (1853).] J. A. F.

BAKER, PETER CARPENTER (Mar. 22, 1822–May 19, 1889), printer and publisher, was born in North Hempstead, N.Y., the son of John

and Margaret (Boyce) Baker. The father moved to New York while Peter was a child and the latter went to the Harlem Academy to school. When he was but twelve, he exchanged school for business, first in Kasang's printing-office and bookstore on Division St., and later with W. E. Dean, who was an extensive printer and publisher of legal and classical books. Attracted by the mechanical side of these establishments, Baker decided to learn the printer's trade. His apprenticeship completed, he became superintendent for John F. Trow, who was at that time the printer for many large publishers, including D. Appleton & Company and George P. Putnam. The young man derived much satisfaction in supervising the printing of all the volumes of Washington Irving's revised edition of his works. Always keenly interested in the printer's art, he expressed himself publicly in later life thus: "A printer who has no heart in his business, no pride in his calling, who only sees wood and iron and lead about him might better have been born and remained in a junk shop. There must be, if we would give pleasure—and profit may accompany the pleasure—a pride in our profession, a heart in our work, and an ambition to excel" (*Annual Dinner of the Typothetæ, Jan. 17, 1885,* pp. 10–11). In 1850 Baker formed a partnership with Daniel Godwin, and this firm achieved almost a national reputation in the printing business; for an example of their superior workmanship see *Vertoogh van Nieu Nederland* and *Breeden Raedt,* two tracts translated from the Dutch (1854). In 1866 he entered the law publishing field with the firm of Baker, Voorhis & Company. He continued to consider himself primarily a printer, however, and his was a leading part in the organization of the Typothetæ, the purpose of which was stated to be "the general benefit of the trade and the improvement of the typographic art" (*N. Y. Times,* Mar. 22, 1865). Employing printers found such an organization so necessary amidst the chaotic industrial conditions following the war that almost every large city followed the lead of New York and established its Typothetæ.

Baker was much sought as a public speaker, was a strong advocate of the temperance cause, and was also active in charitable enterprises, the Hahnemann Hospital being a particular object of his favor. He was married to Malvina Lockwood, by whom he had three daughters.

[The best source of information is a ten-page sketch by W. W. Pasko in *Old New York,* Dec. 1890, II, 327–38, containing portrait. Obituaries in *Publisher's Weekly,* June 1, 1889, and in *N. Y. Times,* May 21, 1889, are helpful. Baker's personality is portrayed in his addresses, such as *European Recollections, a Speech Before the N. Y. Typographical Soc.* (pamphlet, 1861); *Franklin,* before the same society (pamphlet, 1865); an address at Cooper Union advocating municipal reform, *N. Y. Times,* Sept. 4, 1864.] A. E. P.

BAKER, REMEMBER (June 1737–August 1775), soldier, the son of Remember and Tamar (Warner) Baker, was born at Woodbury, Conn., in June 1737. He was fifth in descent from Alexander Baker, the emigrant, who arrived in Boston from London in 1635, aged twenty-eight (F. V. Virkus, *Abridged Compendium of American Genealogy,* I, 1925, p. 54). Remember Baker, Jr., was the first cousin of Ethan Allen [*q.v.*], through Allen's mother; and of Col. Seth Warner [*q.v.*], through Warner's father. As a young man in his early twenties Baker took part in the French and Indian War, serving on Lake George and Lake Champlain. It was undoubtedly during this service that he saw the possibilities of the country now known as Vermont, then called the New Hampshire Grants, for he settled at Arlington, with his wife and child in 1764. Together with his cousins, Allen and Warner, he early became prominent in the controversy which raged between the governments of New Hampshire and New York over the jurisdiction of the territory. The cousins sided with those who received their grants from New Hampshire, and persistently fought off the grantees of the New York government. To accomplish this the Green Mountain Boys were organized under the command of Ethan Allen, with Remember Baker in charge of one of the companies. They had made themselves so obnoxious to the government of New York by December 1771 that on the 9th of that month, Gov. Tryon issued a proclamation offering a reward of twenty pounds for the capture of Allen, Baker, and others. To this Allen, Baker, and Robert Cochran replied with a burlesque proclamation, dated at Poultney, Feb. 5, 1772, offering a similar reward for the apprehension of James Duane and John Kempe, two of the New York grantees. As a result, a serious effort was made to capture Baker, who was attacked in his house at Arlington on Mar. 22, 1772, when he was wounded and carried off by Justice John Munro, and his wife and son were injured. A rescue party was formed by some of the New Hampshire grantees, the Munro party captured, and Baker, weak from the loss of blood, brought back in triumph to Bennington (Hiland Hall, *The History of Vermont from Its Discovery to Its Admission into the Union, in 1791,* 1868, pp. 135–37; *Records of the Council of Safety and Governor and Council of the State of Vermont,* I, 1873, pp. 148–50, footnote). The activities of the Green Mountain

Boys continued, and reached such a height that Gov. Tryon issued a second proclamation, Mar. 9, 1774, increasing the amount of the reward for the capture of Baker and Allen to £100.

Baker was with Allen in the Crown Point campaign in the spring of 1775, and the following summer he accompanied Gen. Schuyler on a scouting party up Lake Champlain toward Canada. He was killed in a skirmish with the Indians near St. Johns, in August 1775.

He married, Apr. 3, 1760, Desire, daughter of Consider and Patience (Hawley) Hurlbut, by whom he had an only son, Ozi, who became the grandfather of La Fayette C. Baker [*q.v.*], and the great-grandfather of Ray Stannard Baker, the biographer of Woodrow Wilson. Remember Baker's widow married, secondly, Thomas Butterfield of Colchester, Vt.

[In addition to references cited above, see Wm. Slade, *Vt. State Papers* (1823); Ira Allen, *The Natural and Political Hist. of the State of Vt.* (1798); E. B. O'Callaghan, *Documentary Hist. of the State of N.Y.*, IV (1851). There is a short sketch of his life in A. M. Hemenway's *Vt. Hist. Gazetteer* (1868), I, 765–70.]

G. H. D.

BAKER, WILLIAM MUMFORD (June 5, 1825–Aug. 20, 1883), clergyman, author, was born in Washington, D. C., the son of Daniel and Elizabeth (McRobert) Baker. His father, a native of Georgia, was pastor of the Second Presbyterian Church. William's youth was spent in various parts of the South, where his father, who was becoming known as an evangelist, held many pastorates. He graduated with honor from Princeton College in 1846 and attended Princeton Seminary in 1847–48. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of New Brunswick, N. J., Apr. 26, 1848, and was ordained by the Presbytery of Little Rock, Ark., in 1850. He married Susan John Hartman at Raleigh, Tenn., Jan. 5, 1850. After preaching for a short time in Galveston, he reorganized the First Presbyterian Church of Austin, Tex., in May 1850, and remained in this pastorate until 1865. Though devoted to the South and especially to the state of his adoption, he was a firm Unionist and found his position during the Civil War a trying one. During this time he kept a record of his experiences, thinly veiled as fiction, which was published in 1866 under the title of *Inside: A Chronicle of Secession*. Soon after the war he removed to the North and held various pastorates—at Zanesville, Ohio, 1866–72; at Newburyport, Mass., 1872–74; and at South Boston, 1874–76. In the meantime he had published a number of books, and he now resigned his pastorate and for the next four years devoted himself to writing. In 1881 he accepted the pastorate of the South Church in Philadelphia. He continued to write, but his health was bad and after two years he returned to Boston, where he died. Though an effective and even eloquent pulpit orator, Baker is better remembered by his writings. These are marked by a style which, though by no means distinguished, is facile and quietly humorous, shows considerable insight into character, and is penetrated by deep religious feeling. His first book was *The Life and Labors of Daniel Baker* (1858), a memoir of his father. *Inside: A Chronicle of Secession* (1866) was published under the pseudonym of "George F. Harrington." The characters in it are supposed to be drawn from his friends and acquaintances in Austin. Though of slight literary merit, the book has some value to the historical student. After Baker's removal to the North other books appeared with regularity. Most of them reflect his earlier experiences in Texas and other parts of the South. These were: *Oak Mot* (1868); *The New Timothy* (1870), which embodies many of his earlier experiences in Texas; *Mose Evans* (1874); *Carter Quarterman* (1876), which is generally supposed to be the story of his noted father told in a more attractive form than in his earlier book; *The Virginians in Texas* (1878), a story of adventure for boys; *A Year Worth Living* (1878) and *Colonel Dunwoddie, Millionaire* (1878), both of which are descriptive of southern life; *His Majesty, Myself* (1880), descriptive of conditions at Princeton as he saw them when a student there, and published anonymously, as was the book immediately preceding; *Blessed Saint Certainty* (1881); *The Ten Theophanies* (1883), which is probably his chief work of a distinctly religious character; and *The Making of a Man* (1884), which was published posthumously.

[*Princeton Theol. Sem. Necr. Rept.* 1884; *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 21, 1883; personal information from W. S. Red of Austin.]

C. W. R.

BALBACH, EDWARD (July 4, 1839–Dec. 30, 1910), metallurgist, was born in Karlsruhe, Baden, Germany, and came to this country with his father, Edward Balbach, Sr., in 1850. The family is an old and prominent one in Baden, where it has long been associated with the villages of Upper and Lower Balbach and the castles midway between those villages. The elder Balbach was forty-four when he came to America to seek an opportunity for applying his knowledge of chemistry and metallurgy. Having decided on Newark, N. J., the center of extensive jewelry manufacturing, as a favorable location, he returned to Germany and brought his eleven-year-old son over. In 1852 he erected a building and started a business for

the treatment of jewelers' sweepings, which formerly had been sent to Europe. After attendance at the Newark public schools, young Balbach at the age of fourteen began to help in the growing business and soon showed that he had inherited his father's technical ability. The business grew, not only in jewelry sweepings but also in the general metallurgy of silver-lead ores, some of which began coming to the Balbach plant from Mexico as early as 1861. The Balbach plant became a leader in lead smelting and refining, and later in copper refining by electrolysis. The Parkes process for the desilverization of lead bullion was first introduced into this country by the Balbachs at the close of the Civil War, and for many years their plant was one of the few sources of refined lead in the United States. The desilverization is accomplished by the addition to the molten bullion of zinc, about sixty per cent of which is recovered by distilling the silver-zinc-lead amalgam in a graphite retort, the zinc vapors being reduced to metal in a condenser attached to the Balbach-Thum desilverizing process. This invention is typical of Balbach's work. It provides an apparatus that is simpler, easier to operate, and more efficient than the rival Moebius process but is somewhat costlier. The older Balbach died in 1890, after which the firm of Edward Balbach & Son was reorganized as the Balbach Smelting & Refining Company, with Edward Balbach, Jr., as president. The company expanded and prospered. The younger Balbach was less German in appearance than his father and more typically an American business man. He was tall and energetic, and had an unusually attractive personality. Although a metallurgist of acknowledged reputation, he never joined the American Institute of Mining Engineers. He was married to Julia Anna Nenninger on Jan. 21, 1869. In later years he maintained a country house at Bernardsville, N. J., and spent his winters at Palm Beach, Fla., where he made valuable investments in property. Balbach's contributions to metallurgy were practical operating methods rather than fundamental changes in theory. He introduced European processes into this country and improved upon them at a time when such processes were kept as secret as possible and when the United States needed such practical methods.

[*Engineering and Mining Jour.*, Jan. 14, 1911; *N. Y. Times*, *N.Y. Tribune*, Jan. 1, 1911.] P. B. M.

BALCH, GEORGE BEALL (Jan. 3, 1821–Apr. 16, 1908), naval officer, was born at Shelbyville, Tenn., son of George Beall Balch and Martha (Rogers) Balch, first cousins. His parents were of English and Scotch ancestors who settled in Maryland about 1650. His mother died in 1823, and his father, after moving the family to Moulton, Ala., died in 1831. The son was appointed midshipman, Dec. 30, 1837, through his uncle, Gen. Alexander Macomb. His aunt suggested West Point, but he declared that nothing would satisfy him until he felt the deck under his feet (Manuscript Reminiscences by George Beall Balch). In the *Cyane*, Capt. "Mad Jack" Percival, of the Mediterranean squadron under Commodore Hull, he made his first cruise, 1838–41. Of his conduct Percival wrote, "He has escaped the too frequent unprofitable habits of young men in the service at this time" (letter to Mrs. Alexander Macomb, March, 1839). Before the Mexican War, he had served on various ships, been promoted fifth in his class to passed midshipman, July 12, 1843, and spent two years under Maury at the Observatory. Joining the *Princeton*, Apr. 5, 1846, he took part in the unsuccessful expedition against Alvarado, Aug. 7, and the occupation of Tampico, Nov. 10–13; and temporarily served as acting master on the *Falcon* of Tattnall's "Mosquito Fleet" which gallantly covered the landing of Gen. Scott's army at Vera Cruz, Mar. 9, 1847. After the war, in the *Princeton* he made an extensive Mediterranean cruise, 1847–49, visiting particularly Italian ports to protect American interests during the revolutions of 1848. Becoming a lieutenant, Aug. 16, 1850, he joined the *Plymouth*, Capt. Kelly, which afterward became one of Commodore Perry's squadron in the diplomatic expedition to Japan. Balch personally assisted in making surveys in the harbor of Yedo, and around the Lew Chew and Bonin Islands. At Shanghai, Apr. 4, 1854, he was wounded in the hip during a conflict between Chinese rebels and Imperialists.

Further service, as executive officer on various ships and as an instructor in seamanship, naval tactics, and gunnery at the Naval Academy, prepared him for responsible commands in the South Atlantic blockading squadron, during the Civil War. On Nov. 1, 1861, while executive officer of the *Sabine*, he fearlessly assisted in the rescue of some 400 marines and sailors from the sinking transport *Governor*, off Georgetown, S. C. As commander of the *Pocahontas*, Nov. 14, 1861–Sept. 8, 1862, and the *Pawnee*, Oct. 21, 1862–Feb. 28, 1865, he reduced Confederate batteries, occupied islands, and opened inland passages, from Jacksonville, Fla., to Georgetown, S. C.; and in particular coöperated with the army on the Stono River in its operations leading up to the evacuation of Charleston. Espe-

cially noteworthy was his engagement July 16, 1863, with the batteries near Grimball's Landing in which the *Pawnee* was hulled thirty-three times but a large body of Gen. Terry's troops saved from capture. Of his services Du Pont wrote, "A more devoted officer our navy does not possess. With the greatest amount of energy and pluck and skill in handling guns, he is always ready, overcomes difficulties, and is ever genial and cheerful" (Rear Admiral Du Pont to Assistant Secretary Fox, Aug. 21, 1862). Dahlgren later declared that he had "always discharged his responsible duties in action and otherwise with alacrity, judgment, and success" (letter of Rear Admiral Dahlgren to Secretary of the Navy Welles, Feb. 27, 1865).

After the war, Balch commanded the *Contoocook* and the *Albany,* flagships of the North Atlantic squadron, was governor of the Naval Asylum in Philadelphia, and sat on important naval boards, meanwhile being promoted captain, July 25, 1866; commodore, Jan. 13, 1873, and rear admiral, June 5, 1878. As superintendent of the Naval Academy, 1879–81, he took steps toward adapting the course of study to the new age of machinery. Having commanded the Pacific fleet for a few months, he was retired, Jan. 3, 1883, after about forty-five years of service in the navy. He resided in Baltimore for twenty-five years after his retirement. He was married twice: to Julia Grace Vinson in 1844, to Mary Ellen Booth in 1865, and had five children by each wife. Dying at the home of one of his daughters at Raleigh, N. C., he was buried in the Naval Academy Cemetery. Of his personal character, Mahan, who was his executive officer on the *Pocahontas,* wrote that he was "a man beloved by all who have known him for his gallantry, benevolence, and piety" (*From Sail to Steam,* 1907, p. 91).

[The chief sources of information about Balch are the official records in the Navy Dept. Lib., some of which have been published in the *Official Records;* letters and papers in the possession of Miss Grace Balch, Concord, N. H.; *Navy Register,* 1839–1909, *Reports Sec. Navy* and *Narr. of the Expedition of an Am. Squadron to the China Seas and Japan, 1852–54, under Command of Commodore M. C. Perry,* vol. II. Biographies of M. C. Perry, S. F. Du Pont, and John A. Dahlgren are important collateral sources. Obituaries in the *Army and Navy Jour.,* Apr. 18 and Apr. 25, 1908.]

C.L.L.

BALCH, THOMAS WILLING (June 13, 1866–June 7, 1927), publicist, was born abroad (Wiesbaden, Germany), where his parents had been living for some six or seven years. His father was Thomas Balch, a Pennsylvania lawyer, who was born at Leesburg, Va., of an old Maryland family. His mother was Emily Swift of an old Philadelphia family. His great-grandfather was Thomas Willing, a prominent Philadelphia merchant of colonial and revolutionary times, who was a member of the First and Second Congresses and president of the Bank of the United States. Balch received his early education in France, but his academic and professional education in the United States. In 1890 he obtained the A.B. degree from Harvard College and five years later the LL.B. degree from the University of Pennsylvania. Although he began the practise of law in 1895, most of his life was devoted to writing and to public-spirited activities. He displayed a penchant for genealogy, publishing *The Brooke Family of Whitchurch, Hampshire, England* (1899), *English Ancestors of the Shippen Family and Edward Shippen, of Philadelphia* (1904), *The Swift Family of Philadelphia* (1906), and the *Balch Genealogica* (1907). His other hobby was international arbitration. Early in the twentieth century he made a trip to Alaska and to St. Petersburg and upon his return wrote and published *The Alasko-Canadian Frontier* (1902) and *The Alaska Frontier* (1903). In 1909 he issued a new edition of *The New Cyneas of Émeric Crucé* (originally published in 1623), and in 1915 a revised edition of *International Courts of Arbitration,* written by his father in 1874 to support his claim that he was "the original recommender of almost precisely the plan of arbitration in the Alabama case, which was finally adopted and carried out to a conclusion at Geneva" (p. 51). The interest of his brother, Edwin Swift Balch, in polar explorations had its counterpart in his own reflections on *The Arctic and Antarctic Regions and the Law of Nations* (1910). He was a member of numerous clubs in Philadelphia and of historical and patriotic societies there and elsewhere, including the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, of which he was one of five vice-presidents. A frequent contributor to the *American Journal of International Law* and the *Revue de droit international et de législation comparée* of Brussels, as well as other scientific, legal, and historical periodicals, he was able, because of his wealth, to indulge his desire for reprints of nearly everything he wrote even to the extent of cloth binding for relatively few pages. On May 26, 1923, he married Dulany Whiting, daughter of Clarence C. Whiting of Roland Park, Baltimore, and a descendant of the Fairfax family of Virginia, who was a little over half his age. Late in 1926 his health began to fail and he went to Atlantic City in the hope that the salt air might speed his recovery. It was there that he died in the following June.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1924–25, gives most of the essential facts. The year of birth is taken from the

Harvard Coll., Class of 1890: Secretary's Report (1915) and is two years earlier than that given by the *Phila. Pub. Ledger,* June 8, 1927, p. 3, col. 3. A rather complete and accurate biog. sketch is given in the *Ledger,* but a number of autobiographical details have been taken from prefaces to his own printed works.] H. F. W.

BALDWIN, ABRAHAM (Nov. 22, 1754–Mar. 4, 1807), statesman, was the son of Michael Baldwin, a blacksmith, who is said to have been a man of powerful, if uncultivated, mind. Born in Guilford, Conn., in 1719, Michael Baldwin was married in 1749 to Lucy, daughter of William and Ruth Strong Dudley, who bore him five children, three of whom survived childhood. Abraham, the third child and second son, was born in North Guilford. His younger sister, Ruth, later married Joel Barlow [*q.v.*]. After the death of his wife, Michael Baldwin married Theodora Wolcot of Coventry, Conn., who bore him seven children. One of these, Henry Baldwin [*q.v.*], later became justice of the United States Supreme Court, and another became prominent in public life in Ohio. The distinction which his children attained was due in considerable part to the ambition and wisdom of the blacksmith father who, in 1775, removed to New Haven to provide more adequate educational opportunities for his already large, and rapidly growing, family. So far as the younger children were concerned, no small share of credit was due to Abraham, for his father's means were not equal to his ambitions. After the death of the latter in 1787, Abraham paid off the debt on the estate, surrendered his own claims, and educated his half-brothers and sisters largely at his own expense.

Abraham, the first of the family to attain distinction, graduated at Yale in 1772. Agreeable to the theological influence of his academic environment, he became a licensed minister in September 1775 and was for four years thereafter a tutor at Yale. Here he won the warm commendation of his colleagues for his learning, piety, modesty, and skilful management of students. In June 1779 he resigned his tutorship to devote himself exclusively to a chaplaincy in the Revolutionary army. From time to time he visited his alma mater, upon one occasion preaching "all day in Chapel," to the satisfaction of President Ezra Stiles, if not of the students. In January 1781 he received a call to return to Yale to assume the professorship of divinity that had been vacated by the death of Napthali Daggett. The unanimous election of one so young was regarded as a great tribute to him, and Stiles anticipated his becoming a learned theologian and a "venerable character." Perhaps his war experiences had modified the young chaplain's point of view and theological ambitions. At any rate, he declined the post, alleging the influence of financial considerations. Stiles thought him influenced also by the prospect of being called "together with a Group or Cluster of Geniuses into a Literary Institution thereafter" (*Literary Diary of Ezra Stiles,* 1901, II, 556). Leaving the army, he returned neither to the ministry nor to education, but entered upon the law, being admitted to the bar in Fairfield County in April 1783. He was destined, however, to contribute very significantly to the educational development of an American state and to carry into public life the conscientiousness, if not the theological emphasis, which was characteristic of New England.

By January 1784, when the General Assembly of Georgia granted his petition to practise in the courts of that state, he had become a resident of the southernmost commonwealth in the young republic. It is uncertain where he first made his home, but in October of this same year he received a grant of land in Wilkes, and in January 1785 he qualified as a member of the House of Assembly from this county. By 1790, when he represented the Middle District in Congress, he was living in Augusta.

The fact that his earliest public activities in his adopted state were connected with an educational project suggests the possibility that his removal to Georgia was made with a view to engaging in some educational work (Henry C. White, *Abraham Baldwin,* 1926, p. 37). At any rate, the General Assembly, a month after his admission to the Georgia bar, set aside a large amount of wild land for the endowment of a college and vested the control of this land in the Governor and seven others, including the newcomer, Baldwin (*Journal of the Georgia Assembly,* Feb. 25, 1784). Although the latter was not a member of this particular Assembly, as has often been said, he probably played a part in the framing of the act. The next Assembly, of which he was a member, adopted a charter, of which he seems unquestionably to have been the author, providing for the organization of a complete educational system in the state (White, *Abraham Baldwin,* p. 157). Authorship of this document entitles him to high rank as an educational pioneer and prophet. He was again appointed a trustee, and shortly afterward elected president, of the yet unestablished university. No funds were available until after the adoption of the constitution of 1798, which required the legislature to make adequate provision for the institution. At length Baldwin, the titular president, now a member of the United States Senate, brought about the organization of the college

(called Franklin College) along the lines of Yale but without the latter's theological emphasis, served on the committee which selected the site, and procured the election of Josiah Meigs, whom he had known at Yale, as president. Baldwin served as chairman of the board of trustees until his death, and more than any one else deserves to be called the Father of the University of Georgia, of which Franklin College is the heart.

In the meantime, the former tutor and chaplain had become a prominent figure in Georgia politics. The records of his political activity prior to the Federal Convention are scanty, but we know that he served in the Congress of the Confederation in 1785, and later, and that because of this fact he was entitled to membership in the Georgia House of Assembly. His initial political prominence may have been in part due to his willingness conscientiously to assume tasks with which other men did not care to be bothered, but it was doubtless chiefly due to an almost immediate recognition of his high personal qualifications. His superior training made him an outstanding man in what was then a pioneer state, and at the same time his accommodating temper and his integrity won him friends and inspired confidence in him. At the Federal Convention, he was regarded as the ablest of the three delegates from Georgia. Never aggressive in debate though a good speaker, he was not conspicuous in the discussions, but in the greatest crisis of the Convention he played a significant part. Originally opposed to equal representation of the states in the Senate and favorable to representation on the basis of property, he later changed his vote, brought about a tie between the large and small states, and served on the committee that framed the compromise which was accepted. His decisive action was due to the conviction, doubtless resulting from his personal association with the Connecticut delegation who forced the issue, that the small states would withdraw if not placated. His conciliatory temper thus served to facilitate the fundamental compromise of the Constitution. After the adjournment of the Convention, he manifested patient fidelity by attending the sessions of the moribund Congress of the Confederation until almost its dying day.

Elected to the first House of Representatives under the Constitution, he served continuously in that body until he entered the Senate in 1799, to remain there until his death. Firmly established in the confidence of the Georgia electorate, he loyally identified himself with the interests of his adopted state and showed little sympathy for the Hamiltonian policies which his native section supported. He opposed the assumption of state debts, supported the position of his party on Jay's Treaty, and protested against the enactment of the Alien and Sedition Laws. Throughout his legislative career, he was a consistent, though a moderate, Democratic-Republican. His speeches were generally connected with the reports of committees to which he belonged, or with questions that involved reference to the deliberations of the Federal Convention.

In 1799, he took his seat in the United States Senate. He served as president *pro tempore,* during the first session of the Seventh Congress. As in the House, his speeches were able, moderate, and relatively infrequent, especially during his last years. A consistent supporter of the administration of Jefferson, he made a long speech in favor of the repeal of the Judiciary Act of 1801 (*Annals of Congress,* 6 Cong., 1 Sess., 99–107), and voted for the conviction of Justice Chase on three of the articles of impeachment. Loyal to his constituency, he opposed the receiving of petitions against slavery.

It was characteristic of him to wait until the congressional session was over before he died. His death came Mar. 4, 1807, after a very short illness. Characteristically, also, he talked of public affairs almost to the end. "Take care," he said, "hold the wagon back; there is more danger of its running too fast than of its going too slow" (C. B. Todd, *Life and Letters of Joel Barlow,* 1886, p. 212). He was buried in Washington, beside the remains of his colleague, James Jackson, who had preceded him by only a year. Joel Barlow, alone of his relatives, attended the funeral, but many of his colleagues remained expressly to do him honor. Resolutions of respect were adopted by the Senate when it reassembled in the autumn.

Baldwin was never married, except to his work. Economical and temperate in his habits, he had the means to assist many, outside his own family, to secure an education and become established in business. His name is perpetuated in his adopted state by Baldwin County, established in 1803, and the University of Georgia stands as a monument to his prophetic vision and educational statesmanship. "He may have wanted ambition to make himself brilliant, but he never wanted industry to make himself useful" (*Georgia Historical Quarterly,* III, 171). Serene, benign, good-humored, moderate though firm amid the violence of party strife, he died probably without an enemy.

[Until the appearance of Henry C. White's *Abraham Baldwin* (1926), a fairly extensive but inadequately an-

notated work, based in part on manuscript materials in Georgia not hitherto utilized, only very brief sketches of Baldwin had appeared in print. The chief contemporary source of all the latter is the article prepared for the press by Joel Barlow immediately after Baldwin's death. This was reproduced, with some additions, in Herring and Longacre, *Natl. Gallery of Distinguished Americans,* IV (1839). See also *Ga. Hist. Quart., III* (1919), 169–73. For information about the family, the authoritative work is C. C. Baldwin, *Baldwin Geneal.* (1881), I. The *Lit. Diary of Ezra Stiles,* ed. by F. B. Dexter (1901), contains considerable information about Baldwin's relations with Yale. For his connections with the University of Georgia, the best works are White's *Abraham Baldwin* (*supra*), C. E. Jones, *Education in Ga.* (1889), and W. B. Stevens, *Hist. of Ga.,* II (1859), though none of these is adequate. For his activities in the Federal Convention and Congress, *Records of the Federal Convention* (1911), ed. by Max Farrand, and the *Annals of Cong.,* 1789–1807, are invaluable. A few letters of his to his sister Ruth and Joel Barlow have been published in C. B. Todd, *The Life and Letters of Joel Barlow* (1886). An etching by Albert Rosenthal (Phila., 1888) is reproduced in Max Farrand, *Fathers of the Constitution* (Chronicles of America), facing p. 160. This is from the original in the Thomas Addis Emmet Collection in the N.Y. Pub. Lib. A painting "after Fulton" in Independence Hall is probably from the same original as Rosenthal's etching.]

D. M.

BALDWIN, ELIHU WHITTLESEY (Dec. 25, 1789–Oct. 15, 1840), Presbyterian clergyman, educator, was the first president of Wabash College, Crawfordsville, Ind., and though he died five years after having assumed that office, his labors helped to assure the permanence of the institution, and his ideas and character did much to shape its spirit and policies. He was born in Durham, Greene County, N. Y., the fourth child and eldest son of Deacon Jonathan Baldwin, and grandson of Abiel and Mehitable (Johnson) Baldwin of Durham, Conn. His mother was Submit, daughter of Deacon Christopher and Patience Lord of Saybrook, Conn. He was a sober-minded boy with little relish for sports but fond of books, and exceedingly careful, it is said, in the selection of his reading. His parents were people of limited means, and he secured his education in the face of many difficulties. He prepared for college under his pastor, Rev. Jesse Townsend, an alumnus of Yale, which college Baldwin entered in 1807. At the opening of his sophomore year he left college to earn money, and spent a year in Bethlehem, Conn., as assistant in the school of Rev. Azel Backus and later took charge of the academy in Fairfield. In 1810 he returned to the next lower class in college, graduating in 1812. After two years more of teaching at Fairfield, he entered Andover Theological Seminary, from which he graduated in 1817. On Sept. 10, of that year, he was ordained as an evangelist at Londonderry, N. H., by the Presbytery of Londonderry. On May 12, 1819, he married Julia, daughter of Elias A. and Elizabeth (Cook) Baldwin of Newark, N. J. He had

expected to take up missionary work in western New York and Ohio, but while visiting in New York City he was persuaded to accept the position of city missionary. The field given him was a populous, destitute, and immoral section of the city, and here he labored with self-forgetting zeal for three years. His activities resulted in the establishment of the Seventh Presbyterian Church, over which he was installed pastor on Dec. 25, 1820. During his ministry, in spite of many difficulties, it grew into a church of 600 members. In 1834, a visitor to the city asked him to become president of a Presbyterian college recently founded on the edge of civilization in the upper Wabash country, and in February of the following year he accepted, leaving his church the first of May. Having spent several months in securing funds for the college, he entered on his duties in November, and was inaugurated in July 1836. He was a gentle, simple, practical man, of sound learning, with no unusual gifts save unflagging energy and an extraordinary capacity for heroic fidelity to duty. He gave himself to the upbuilding of the college without reserve, declining two calls to important city churches. He had to face ecclesiastical divisions and collisions, stringent poverty, the reluctance of men of means in the East to extend aid to new colleges in the West, and the general lack of appreciation of the fact that the educated men needed for teaching, preaching, and other professions in the West ought to be educated in the West. To all these he proved himself superior. From the start, the institution was intended to offer liberal culture to all classes, but in order to get a charter from the legislature, "prejudiced against colleges, pianos, and Yankees," it was necessary to name it "Wabash Manual Labor College and Teachers' Seminary." Baldwin endeavored to make it what it was designed to be, saying in his inaugural address: "The term education is of very extensive import. It relates equally to the moral and physical nature of man, and comprises the development and training of all his powers." In 1839 he was given the degree of D.D. by a rival college at Bloomington, Ind., an institution under the control of the Old School branch of the Presbyterian Church, to which he did not belong. After a tedious journey into the northern part of the state in behalf of the college during the summer of 1840, he was taken ill and died in October of that year. A bibliography of his publications, which are chiefly tracts and sermons, may be found in *Biographical Sketches of the Graduates of Yale College* (1912), VI, by F. B. Dexter.

[E. F. Hatfield, *Patient Continuance in Well-Doing: a Memoir of Elihu W. Baldwin* (1843); E. O. Hovey,

"Hist. of Wabash College" in the *Tuttle Miscellany*, a collection of material concerning Wabash College, made by Joseph Farrand Tuttle, third president of the college; E. H. Baldwin, "Inaugural Address," and other addresses and sermons, in the *Tuttle Miscellany;* Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit* (1858), vol. IV; Rich. G. Boone, *Hist. of Education in Ind.* (1892); Chas. C. Baldwin, *Baldwin Geneal.* (1881); Jas. H. Smart, *The Schools of Ind.* (1876).] J. H. O.

BALDWIN, FRANK STEPHEN (Apr. 10, 1838–Apr. 8, 1925), inventor, was born in New Hartford, Conn., the son of Stephen Baldwin and Julia (Pardee) Baldwin, both of New England stock. In the summer of 1840 his parents moved to Nunda, Livingston County, N.Y. Here he attended the first free school established by the state. He graduated from the Nunda Institute where he specialized in mathematics, surprising his teachers by memorizing the decimal of Pi to 128 places, which he was still able to repeat up to the time of his death. In 1854 he was enrolled at Union College, Schenectady, N. Y., but was prevented from finishing his course by the illness of his father, the management of whose architectural business he was forced to take over.

The following year Baldwin applied for a patent on an arrowhead self-coupler for railroad cars. Five years later, in 1860, he was instrumental in securing a patent on a corn-planting machine which was a pioneer among machines of this class. In 1869 he went to St. Louis where he worked out a number of inventions. The metal lace latch now found on so many shoes he first devised to aid him in quick dressing. He also invented an anemometer, an instrument for recording the direction of the wind; a registering step for street cars, recording the number of passengers carried, and a street indicator geared from the axle showing the name of each street in succession as the car passed. A little later came the recording lumber-measure—a machine which automatically measured and recorded four different kinds of lumber at the same time. The successful operation of this device led to the conception of a calculating machine of an entirely new type, capable of adding, subtracting, multiplying, and dividing, each with equal facility.

In 1872, Baldwin was married to Mary Denniston and moved to Philadelphia, where a small machine-shop was obtained and he started the development of his calculating machine. He conceived the need of a smaller figuring machine and this led to the conception of an arithmometer which he patented on July 28, 1874. This was one of the first adding machines ever sold in the United States. The calculating machine was placed on exhibition at the Franklin Institute of Philadelphia, and in 1875 was awarded the John Scott medal for the most meritorious invention of the year. Baldwin arranged to have his invention perfected and produced by a Philadelphia machine works, but the concern collapsed in the failure of Jay Cooke and the ensuing panic. In 1876, therefore, he started a small shop in St. Louis, where he brought out a permutation drawer lock, a printing-press counter, a mortar mixer, and a three-speed bicycle. During these years he employed to do model work on his calculating machine William S. Burroughs who about 1880 started work on his own adding machine with a keyboard set up. The Baldwin computing engine was invented in 1890, followed in 1902 by the Baldwin calculator very much like the Monroe calculating machine of to-day. In 1911 Baldwin became acquainted with Jay R. Monroe at that time associated with the legal department of the Western Electric Company of New York. Monroe, after demonstration of the machine, saw its possibilities and the two joined hands to redesign the machine and make it as nearly perfect as possible in its adaptation to modern business. The result was the Monroe Calculating Machine Company which Baldwin happily lived to see filling no small place in the fields of science and business.

[Baldwin's early machines are on exhibition at the National Museum at Washington, D. C., at the Museums of the Peaceful Arts, New York City, and at Orange, N. J. (Monroe Calculating Machine Co.). Obituaries in *Typewriter Topics*, May 1925; *N.Y. Times*, Apr. 9, 1925; personal information.] L. L. L.

BALDWIN, HENRY (Jan. 14, 1780–Apr. 21, 1844), justice of the United States Supreme Court, was born in New Haven, Conn., a son of Michael and Theodora (Wolcott) Baldwin and a half-brother of Abraham Baldwin [*q.v.*]. He graduated from Yale College in 1797 where he was distinguished "for the sturdy energy with which he forced his way in the face of great difficulties to an eminent post at the head of his class" (*Pennsylvania Law Journal*, VI, 1). He studied law with Alexander J. Dallas [*q.v.*], and after completing his legal apprenticeship, set out for Ohio, but stopped in Pittsburgh, was admitted to the bar, and began to practise there and in Meadville, Pa. He was a successful lawyer, and quickly acquired a reputation. Of his habits and mode of life reports are not well authenticated. One story is that he fought a duel with pistols, and that his life was saved by a silver dollar. He was an enthusiastic practical joker, but the few sketches of his career draw a veil over the nature of his pranks. He had one of the finest law libraries in the West, with a particularly rich collection of English reports. His studying was done at night, and he smoked

many small black Spanish cigars. "He slept but little, and so thorough was his absorption in his professional studies that for week after week he would study, note, and digest without intermission, and almost without refreshment."

Elected to Congress in 1816, and twice re-elected, he served as chairman of the Committee on Domestic Manufactures, and was a strong advocate of protection. His speech in 1820 on the tariff bill was an effective effort, and was widely circulated. He played a serviceable rôle in the Florida treaty negotiations. The southwestern boundary as agreed to by Monroe's cabinet had caused a conflict between Northern and Southern politicians, and Monroe requested Baldwin to act as a mediator. He managed this commission in a firm and prudent manner. In 1822 he had a serious illness, and resigned from the House. Meanwhile, he had been financially affected by the depression of 1820. His service in Washington had resulted in a lack of oversight of his private affairs. In 1828 he was an active and earnest supporter of Jackson, and expected to be secretary of the treasury, but the appointee was Samuel D. Ingham. In 1830 Jackson made him associate justice of the Supreme Court (*vice* Justice Washington). Baldwin was supported by the bench and bar of Western Pennsylvania and by a majority of the legislature. John Bannister Gibson was favored by Calhoun, and Horace Binney was the candidate of the Philadelphia bar. "My friend Baldwin got it," wrote the latter, "and I saw his letter to my friend Chauncey, in which he did me the honour to say that I deserved it, but that he *wanted* it more" (Charles C. Binney, *Life of Horace Binney*, 1903, p. 94). The appointment was confirmed by the Senate with two dissenting votes—Hayne and Smith of South Carolina—whose opposition was due to Baldwin's view of the constitutional aspects of the tariff question.

Baldwin steered an erratic course on constitutional questions. The first important opinion which he handed down was in the Florida Land Case, U. S. *vs.* Arredondo, 6 *Peters* 691 (1832). "Few decisions of the Court at this period," writes Charles Warren, "had a more permanent effect upon the history of the country; for in this case the Court established the public land policy of the Government on the basis of the most scrupulous respect for treaties" (*The Supreme Court in United States History*, 1922, II, 242). At first, Baldwin followed in the path of Marshall, and had a profound reverence for the opinions of that jurist. Later, he refused to belong to the Marshall school of liberal interpretation, and was, on the other hand, unwilling to

Baldwin

align himself with the strict constructionists. In 1831 he dissented in seven cases, and his resignation was rumored. In several cases he held the casting vote. His statement of the views of the two schools and his professed adherence to a third theory are expressed in *A General View of the Origin and Nature of the Constitution and Government of the United States* (1837), which is made up in large part of his dissenting opinions.

He is said to have been at his judicial best while on the circuit. In 1833 he decided with great learning the case of McGill *vs.* Brown (F. C. Brightly, *Reports of Cases*, 1896, p. 347), which construed a will making a bequest for pious and charitable purposes. He also sat in the noted trial of John F. Braddel of Uniontown for robbing the mails (1840). He is reputed to have been partly insane during his later years. He had certain peculiar habits, but some of these were not evidence of insanity, *e. g.*, carrying candy in his pockets to dole out to children whom he met, and parading home from a grocery store carrying a ham by the hock. Toward the close of his life, however, he was occasionally "violent and ungovernable in his conduct on the bench" (H. L. Carson, *History of the Supreme Court of the United States*, 1902, I, 281). More than this, he was deeply in debt and regarded his dearest friends with suspicion and distrust. For a time he was unable to perform his judicial duties. He died of paralysis in Philadelphia on Apr. 21, 1844. A subscription among his friends was taken up to pay the expenses of his burial.

[References in addition to those given above: *Cong. Globe*, 30 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 67; *Pa. Law Jour.*, III, 330 (1844); *Allegheny County Bar Ass. Addresses*, 1888, p. 23.]

L. R.

BALDWIN, HENRY PORTER (Feb. 22, 1814–Dec. 31, 1892), business man, governor of Michigan, senator, was born at Coventry, R. I. The son of John Baldwin and Margaret (Williams) Baldwin, daughter of Nehemiah Williams, he was the twelfth child in a family of fifteen. On the maternal side he was descended from Robert Williams, who settled in Roxbury, Mass., in 1638, while the Baldwin family in America originated with Nathaniel Baldwin, who came from Buckinghamshire, England, in 1639, and settled at Milford, Conn. The Rev. Moses Baldwin was one of the early graduates of Princeton, in the class of 1757. His son, a graduate of Dartmouth, was the father of Henry P. Baldwin. Both parents having died before he was twelve years old, the boy was forced to earn his living in a country store. In 1837 he visited Detroit and in 1838 settled there and

eventually established a highly successful business as a wholesale dealer in boots and shoes. In 1863 he became president of the Second National Bank (reorganized in 1883 as the Detroit National Bank) and remained president until 1887. On his election to the state Senate in 1861, his business training stood Michigan in good stead in dealing with a treasury emptied by theft and with preparations for sending troops to the Civil War. His health breaking down, Baldwin started for California by way of Panama, but his trip was cut short through the capture of the steamship by Admiral Semmes of the *Alabama*. The prisoners were released at a neutral port. Elected governor of Michigan in 1868, Baldwin gave his attention to securing the resumption of the long dormant geological survey of Michigan, including the copper and iron deposits, and to extending and perfecting the charitable and reformatory institutions of the state. A state public school for dependent children theretofore consigned to county poorhouses; an asylum for insane criminals; an intermediate reformatory for young convicts; and a board of charities and corrections; all, established on his initiative, marked advanced steps in establishing humane relations with and among the classes dependent upon the state. On the death, in 1879, of his political and business associate, Zachariah Chandler, Baldwin was appointed by Gov. Croswell, and afterward elected, to the United States Senate, where he served fifteen months. His monument in Detroit is St. John's Episcopal Church, which exists by reason of his beneficence. He was twice married: in 1835 to Harriet M. Day of Pawtucket, R. I., who died, Jan. 24, 1865; and on Nov. 21, 1866, to Sibyle Lambard of Augusta, Me.

[Chas. Moore, *Hist. of Mich.* (1915), I, 412, 541; Chas. C. Baldwin, *Baldwin Geneal.* (1881); *Compendium of Hist. and Biog. of Detroit and Wayne County* (1909), ed. by C. M. Burton; *Detroit Evening News*, Dec. 31, 1892; H. M. Utley and B. M. Cutcheon, *Mich. as a Province, Terr., and State* (1906), IV, 61; *Rep. Men of Mich.* (1878).]

C. M.

BALDWIN, JOHN (Oct. 13, 1799–Dec. 28, 1884), grindstone manufacturer, university founder, was born at North Branford, Conn., the son of Joseph and Rosanna (Meloy) Baldwin and a descendant of the John Baldwin who came from Buckinghamshire in 1638 and settled in Milford. His father was a blacksmith who had been a captain in the Revolutionary War. His mother, the daughter of an Irish stowaway who had become a prosperous merchant in New Haven, is said to have been well educated for a woman of her day and to have wished to enter Yale. Her son, when a young man, brooding over the exclusion of his mother from that institution, resolved that if ever he attained the means to found a school it should be open to women on the same terms as to men. His parents were poor; he had from an early time to make his own way, and his education was largely self-acquired. His home training was sternly religious and even ascetic. At the age of eighteen he joined the Methodist Church. For a time he attended an academy, where he paid in part for his tuition by chopping wood, building fires and ringing the bell. He picked up enough learning to enable him to teach, his first school being at Fishkill, N. Y., and his next at some place in Maryland. His earnings of several years he invested in a tract of 200 acres of land which he had never seen, at Berea, Ohio. He was married on Jan. 31, 1828, to Mary D. Chappel of New London. The young couple moved to Berea, ending their three weeks' journey to the then mid-western frontier about the first of May. Baldwin erected a grist-mill, a saw-mill, and a carding-mill, all run by water-power, and also the first frame dwelling in the township. A town soon grew up about his settlement. In 1837, with three others, he organized the Lyceum Village and Berea Seminary, which was conducted for five years. About 1842, from a variety of causes, all his enterprises failed and he became bankrupt. Some time afterward he discovered on his land a fragment of sandstone which he used to sharpen a knife. He saw that it was excellent material for grindstones, and he later discovered that a plentiful supply of this rock underlay his land. The incident marked the beginning of the great Berea grindstone industry and the recouping and afterward the immense growth of Baldwin's fortune. He always attributed the discovery to divine response to a special prayer, repeated every day for a month, in which he vowed that if wealth came to him he would devote all but a moderate subsistence for himself and family to God's work.

The ideal of a school open to both sexes and to all races had long possessed him. His first venture toward its realization was made in 1845, when he donated for the purpose thirty acres of land and a brick building at Berea, to the North Ohio Conference of the Methodist Church. The school, known as Berea (sometimes Baldwin) Institute, was opened Apr. 9, 1846. In 1857 it was reorganized as Baldwin University. Baldwin's anti-slavery convictions, which he had held from youth, took him to Kansas in the troublous days of 1858. He carried with him $10,000 in gold. He seems, however, not to have mixed in

the border warfare then being waged. Instead he determined upon founding another school. He selected a spot (now Baldwin) in Douglas County, where he erected a university building which he turned over to the local Methodist Conference and which was opened as a school (now Baker University) in September 1859. He returned from Kansas in the same year. Though he was a strong supporter of the Union, no special activities are recorded of his Civil War days. In 1867 he bought 1,700 acres in St. Mary Parish, La., 105 miles west of New Orleans, and established the Baldwin Seminary (now the Baldwin Public School). As local feeling prevented his opening this to both whites and negroes, he accordingly made it a school for whites, but bought more land and established another school to be devoted solely to negroes. The adjoining land was brought to a high state of cultivation and has been for many years a sugar plantation. He and his wife made it their winter home until his death. In 1880 he founded a high school for boys and another for girls in Bangalore, India, and just before his death he donated an additional forty acres to Baldwin (now Baldwin-Wallace) College at Berea. He died at Baldwin, La. His wife, who had been his active partner in all his enterprises, died at Berea, Apr. 17, 1895.

Baldwin was a man of many idiosyncrasies of mind and manner. In business matters he was unmethodical; he kept no books, but from time to time jotted down memoranda on scraps of paper. He was moody; he went about oddly garmented; "He appeared like a humble pilgrim from a far country," writes his biographer, "with a great mission on his mind and heart in the accomplishment of which he must make haste and lose no time."

[A. R. Webber, *Life of John Baldwin, Sr., of Berea* (1925).]

W. J. G.

BALDWIN, JOHN BROWN (Jan. 11, 1820–Sept. 30, 1873), lawyer, politician, was descended from John Baldwin of Bucks, England, one of the earliest settlers in Milford, Conn. Fifth in descent from the emigrant, Briscoe G. Baldwin, judge of the supreme court of appeals of Virginia, married Martha Steele, daughter of Chancellor John Brown of Staunton, Va. John Brown Baldwin, their eldest son, was born at Spring Farm, Staunton. He obtained his early education at the public schools and Staunton Academy and in 1836 entered the University of Virginia, remaining there three years. He then studied law with his father at Staunton, was admitted to the bar in 1841, and commenced practise in his home town. In 1844, he became actively involved in local politics, working and speaking on behalf of the Whig party, and in 1846 he was elected to the House of Delegates. He there championed the "mixed basis" of representation, opposing the preponderant opinion in his district, and consequently was defeated at the ensuing election. In 1859 he was an unsuccessful candidate for the position of judge of the court of appeals. An earnest supporter of the Union, during 1860 he worked indefatigably for peace and was elected to the state convention of 1861 as a Unionist. He voted against the ordinance of secession and was a member of the Union delegation which went to Washington and interviewed President Lincoln, but when secession had been ratified by the people of Virginia he decided that his duty lay with his state. He became inspector-general of the Virginia troops and was appointed colonel of the 52nd Virginia Infantry, August 1861, seeing active service in West Virginia. While at the front he was elected representative from Augusta County to the first Confederate Congress, being reëlected to the second Congress and serving until the conclusion of the war. In October 1865 he was elected to the House of Delegates under the post-war government and was chosen speaker. In this capacity he showed exceptional ability and the rules of procedure which he evolved are still in use, being known as "Baldwin's Rules." He was president of the state conservative convention which met in 1868, but declined to accept the nomination for governor. The same year he was chairman of the Virginia delegation to the National Democratic Convention at New York which nominated Seymour and Blair. Almost his last public service was rendered as a member of the "Committee of Nine" which went to Washington and induced the Federal Government to defer to the wishes of Virginia in regard to the submission of the Underwood constitution to a vote. His health had become seriously impaired and during his last years he took practically no part in public life. He was married on Sept. 20, 1842, to Susan Madison Peyton, daughter of John Howe Peyton, a prominent Staunton lawyer. He was a man of imposing physique and blunt manners, a man of strong opinions, with the ability to clothe them in appropriately forceful language.

[Baldwin's ancestry is traced in L. G. Tyler, *Encyc. of Va. Biog.* (1915), IV, 523–26. An excellent review of his career appeared in J. L. Peyton, *Hist. of Augusta Co., Va.* (1882), p. 379, and shorter notices will be found in J. A. Waddell, *Annals of Augusta Co., Va.* (1902), and in *Am. Ann. Reg.* (1873).]

H. W. H. K.

BALDWIN, JOHN DENISON (Sept. 28, 1809–July 8, 1883), journalist, was descended from a Buckinghamshire county family through the emigrant, John Baldwin, who arrived in Stonington, Conn., in 1664. Five generations later, at North Stonington, John Denison Baldwin was born, eldest son of Daniel and Hannah (Stanton) Baldwin. Daniel Baldwin was a large landowner, who, suffering reverses, removed, when John was seven, to Chenango County, N.Y., at that time a wilderness. Here John toiled on the farm until, after another seven years, the family returned to North Stonington where he was able to attend the village school. At seventeen he was studying at Yale, while supporting himself by public-school teaching. Unable to complete his college course, he began the study of law, then entered Yale Divinity School, from which he graduated in 1834. Ordained in the same year, he became pastor of the Congregational Church at West Woodstock, Conn., until 1837. Later he held pastorates at North Branford and North Killingly. As a preacher he is said to have shown sagacity and public spirit. Eager for further education, he studied French, German, and especially archæology. While at North Branford he published *The Story of Raymond Hill and Other Poems* (1847), which exhibit melancholy beauty and a moral purpose.

From North Killingly he was elected by the Free-Soil party, which he helped to organize in Connecticut, to the legislature, where he sponsored the law establishing the state's first normal school (1850). Reaching the conviction that his services would be more usefully employed in journalism, he abandoned the ministry in 1849 to become owner and editor of the Free-Soil *Charter Oak* at Hartford. Three years later he removed to Boston, becoming editor of the daily and weekly *Commonwealth*. Sumner, Henry Wilson, and Theodore Parker were frequent visitors to his office and became life-long friends. In 1859 he embraced the opportunity to purchase, with his sons, the *Worcester Spy*, which he made one of the leading newspapers of the state. Identifying himself now with the Republican party, he was influential, as a delegate to the convention of 1860, in securing the nomination of Hannibal Hamlin for vice-president. As a party counsellor, Baldwin was always highly valued for his knowledge of men and his political sagacity regarding the effects of measures. He was elected to the Thirty-eighth Congress (1862), and was twice reëlected, becoming a member of committees on expenditures, public buildings, and library. He made notable speeches on state sovereignty and treason, on reconstruction, and in defense of the negro. His efforts—unfortunately premature—for international copyright, won gratitude from authors. Of Baldwin's two works *Prehistoric Nations* (1869) and *Ancient America* (1872), the first sets forth a now wholly discredited theory of the derivation of Western civilization from the Cushites of Arabia, while the second, a popular presentation of American aboriginal peoples, is rated as among the best books of its class then written. Baldwin later published several volumes on his own ancestry, besides contributing to the *Baldwin Genealogy*. His most influential work, however, was through the *Spy*. Here his industry, business capacity, and literary ability had full play and gave the paper wide influence through the state and beyond. Republicans knew it as the "Worcester County Bible," Democrats dubbed it "The Lying Spy." Baldwin's retentive memory afforded wide range of facts, and his direct, forcible, sincere words were always animated by high ideals. A journal's mission, he believed, was the exercise of an influence for right principles and movements; even news was subordinate. Though not a rapid writer, he was a diligent one, making frequent archæological and kindred contributions to magazines. In later years he largely withdrew from active editorial work on the *Spy*, enjoying in retirement his family and books. He was married in 1832 to Lemira Hathaway of Dighton, Mass., by whom he had four children, two daughters who died in early life and two sons, John Stanton and Charles Clinton, who survived him and carried on the *Spy*. He died in Worcester, Mass.

[Sketches of Baldwin's career are given in his own *Record of the Descendants of John Baldwin, of Stonington, Conn.* (1880); *The Baldwin Geneal.* (1881), ed. by C. C. Baldwin; S. E. Staples, *Memorial of John Denison Baldwin* (1884); *Western Reserve Hist. Tract 65* (in vol. II); *Commemorative Biog. Rec. of Tolland and Windham Counties, Conn.* (1903); *Hist. Homes and Institutions and Geneal. and Personal Memoirs of Worcester Co., Mass.* (1907), ed. by E. B. Crane, vol. I; Charles Nutt, *Hist. of Worcester and Its People* (1919), vol. IV; extended obituary in the *Worcester Daily Spy*, July 9, 1883; an unpublished autobiography in the possession of his grandson, Mr. Robert S. Baldwin of Worcester.]

R. S. B.

BALDWIN, JOSEPH (Oct. 31, 1827–Jan. 13, 1899), educator, author, was born in Newcastle, Pa., of Quaker and Scotch-Irish descent, the son of Joseph and Isabel (Cairns) Baldwin. In early childhood he formed the habit of reading books of solid worth. Even when he was plowing upon his father's farm, a useful book was his companion, and from it he would occasionally read a paragraph or two, upon which he would meditate after he resumed his toil. After attending a district school, he was fitted for college at Bartlett Acad-

emy in his home town. Desirous of preparing himself for the ministry in the Christian Church, he spent four years in Bethany College, receiving the B.A. degree in 1852. Soon after his graduation he was married to Ella Sophronia Fluhart of Ohio. With the advice and consent of his wife, who believed he was a born teacher, he decided to adopt teaching as his life-work. In the fall of 1852 he removed to Platte City, Mo., and conducted an academy for a year, directing in Savannah, Mo., a boarding school for girls the ensuing three years. In 1856 he assisted in founding the Missouri State Teachers' Association, of which he was chosen vice-president. Returning to Pennsylvania for a year, he was a student in the Millersville Normal School and for a short time was principal of the Lawrence County Normal School. Then, for ten years, he was in Indiana, conducting private normal schools for nine years, and serving in the Union army one year. Being urged by friends in Missouri to return to that state, he founded in 1867 a private normal school in Kirksville. This institution became a state normal in 1870, Baldwin remaining as principal until his resignation eleven years later. For a portion of the summer of 1881 he was employed by the General Agent of the Peabody Fund to deliver lectures to teachers' institutes in Texas. One result of this engagement was his election to the principalship of the Sam Houston Normal Institute, located in Huntsville, Tex. Here he served a decade. In 1891 the regents of the University of Texas selected him as the first professor of pedagogy. He was the author of four professional books, three of which were published in the International Education Series, edited by William T. Harris. The titles, together with the respective dates of publication, are as follows: *The Art of School Management* (1881), *Elementary Psychology and Education* (1887), *Psychology Applied to the Art of Teaching* (1892), and *School Management and School Methods* (1897). In Missouri he is regarded as the founder of her normal school system, and Texas is greatly indebted to him for the growth of her first normal, as well as for the conversion of her people to the doctrine that the professional education of teachers is indispensable.

[Biog. sketch by J. M. Greenwood, *Proc. of the Natl. Educ. Ass.*, pp. 234–35; biog. by E. M. Violette, *Hist. of the First District State Normal of Mo.*, pp. 156–60, details of Baldwin's educ. career in Mo. appearing on other pages; obituaries in the *Austin Statesman* and the *Austin Tribune*, Jan. 14, 1899; personal letters from members of his family to the writer.]

W.S.S.

BALDWIN, JOSEPH GLOVER (January 1815–Sept. 30, 1864), jurist, miscellaneous writer, was born at Friendly Grove Factory, near Winchester, Va. His parents, Joseph Clarke Baldwin and Eliza Baldwin, daughter of Dr. Cornelius Baldwin of Winchester, were distant relatives, descendants (through New England settlers) of a race of gentlemen farmers long prominent in Buckinghamshire, England (*New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, XXVI, 294 ff.; XXXVIII, 160 ff., 289 ff., 372 ff.). The advantage he enjoyed in family and birth, however, was partly counterbalanced by the neglect of his early training. Instead of attending school, he was put to work, serving as clerk in a district court at the age of twelve, and editing a newspaper at seventeen (Bancroft, p. 233); yet by diligent study, later in life, he gained a wide acquaintance with history, an appreciation of both ancient and modern literature and a thorough knowledge of the law. He began early to consider the law as his natural profession, and while still in his teens set about mastering Blackstone's *Commentaries*, under the supervision of his uncle, Briscoe G. Baldwin. Finding Virginia society too orderly for the promise of much profitable litigation, and attracted by opportunities in the newly opened Southwest, in 1836 he packed his belongings in saddlebags, mounted on horseback, and set out for Alabama and Mississippi. In this raw and turbulent region he spent the next eighteen years, some of them years of the "flush times," when on all sides he saw wild speculation, frantic resorting to the law, wholesale political confusion. Settling first at De Kalb, Miss., he made a favorable impression in his first case, the creditable handling of which won him the admiration of an older colleague, Gen. Reuben Davis (*Recollections of Mississippi and Mississippians*, 1889, p. 61). In 1839 he moved to Gainesville, Ala., where there were educated New Englanders and numerous signs of wealth and culture. In the same year he further established himself by marrying Sidney White, daughter of Judge John White of the state. Within a comparatively brief period he became prominent as a lawyer, and entered politics. In 1844 he served as a Whig member of the legislature, but in 1849 was defeated for Congress by the Democratic candidate, Samuel W. Inge. In 1850 he moved to Livingston, and in 1853 to Mobile to become a partner of the noted lawyer, Philip Phillips; but partly out of disappointment over political defeat, and partly in response to the call of a newer country, he now gave up his practise, and in 1854 migrated to California.

For some years before quitting Alabama, Baldwin had followed the custom of writing down, at odd moments, his impressions of the unusual men

and scenes around him in court-room, office, tavern. His Virginia training, together with a native shrewdness, enabled him to appreciate the unusualness of the social panorama, while at the same time his own experiences as fortune-seeker led him to sympathize with others who had come hither in quest of wealth or of adventure. As a result, his interpretative volume on backwoods society, *The Flush Times of Alabama and Mississippi* (1853), was entertaining and enjoyed a wide-spread popularity. Encouraged by the reception accorded this, and by praise of an article on Jackson and Clay (in *The Southern Literary Messenger,* September 1853), he published *Party Leaders* (1855), containing sober studies of Jefferson, Hamilton, Jackson, Clay, and Randolph.

His experiences in California were much like those earlier in the Southwest. San Francisco was in the hands of the notorious "Committee of Thirteen," and in the administration of justice all was confusion. As Baldwin himself said, "Law was to be administered almost without a standard" (*Sacramento Union,* May 6, 1863). In helping to establish this standard and so bring order out of chaos, his own labors were noteworthy, and his personal success at the bar was gratifying. On Oct. 2, 1858, he became associate justice of the supreme court, a position he held until Jan. 6, 1862 (*California Blue Book,* 1909, p. 681), when he returned to private practise. His last years, however, were passed under the shadow of misfortune; his six children had all died young, and during the Civil War his aged parents were cooped up in Virginia, beyond his help. At some time in September 1864 he was threatened with lockjaw and underwent an operation, from the effects of which he died.

[The fullest account of Baldwin is by Geo. F. Mellen, in the *Lib. of Southern Lit.,* I (1909), 175–81; Mellen has another account, differing but little from the first, in the *Sewanee Rev.,* II, 171 ff. Still a third commendable sketch is in T. M. Owen's *Hist. of Alabama and Dict. of Alabama Biog.* (1921); III, 80. An excellent appraisal of Baldwin's character, by one of his friends, T. B. Wetmore, appears in *Trans. Alabama Hist. Soc.,* 1897–98, pp. 67–74. Besides those cited in the text, other sources of information are: H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.,* VII (1890), 233; *Southern Lit. Messenger,* XXI, 65; W. Brewer, *Alabama: Her Hist., Resources, War Record, and Pub. Men* (1872); Wm. Garrett, *Reminiscences of Pub. Men in Alabama* (1872); *Hist. and Contemp. Rev. of Bench and Bar in Cal.* (1926); autobiographical passages in *The Flush Times;* S. J. Field, *Personal Reminiscences of Early Days in Cal.* (1893).]

J.H.N.

BALDWIN, LOAMMI (Jan. 21, 1740–Oct. 20, 1807), civil engineer, soldier, was of the third generation of Baldwins born in Woburn, Mass. The first representative of his family in America was Deacon Henry Baldwin (d. 1698), a native of either Devon or Herts, England, and a founder of Woburn, where he became a freeman in 1652, a selectman in 1681, and a deacon of the church in 1686. He is recorded, also, as a subscriber to the "town orders," drawn at Charlestown, although, on this document, his name is spelled "Bolden," and is not in his handwriting. Deacon Henry's wife was Phœbe, daughter of Ezekiel Richardson. Their son, also Henry (1664–1739), married Abigail, daughter of David Fiske of Lexington, and became the father of James Baldwin (1710–91), a carpenter who, in turn, married Ruth, daughter of Joseph Richardson of Woburn. Their son, Loammi Baldwin, was born at New Bridge, or North Woburn, where he was educated, resided, and died. He was early apprenticed to the trade of cabinet making, and worked at it for several years. That he later became a land surveyor and engineer, and, as recorded, "man of learning," was due to his own ambition and his interest in higher education. With his friend, Benjamin Thompson, famous in afterlife as Count Rumford, he was accustomed to walk several times weekly from Woburn to Cambridge, to attend lectures on mathematics and physics by Prof. John Winthrop of Harvard. On their return home the young men constructed rude apparatus to illustrate the principles expounded.

At the beginning of the Revolution, Baldwin was already established in the practise of civil engineering, but responded to the call to arms by enlisting in the 38th Foot, Col. Samuel Gerrish. Within a few weeks he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel and on Gerrish's retirement succeeded him in command. In the reorganization of the army, the regiment was renamed the 26th, and the number of its companies was increased from eight to ten. Its first year of service was in the vicinity of Boston, but in April 1776 it was transferred to Washington's army and ordered to New York City. There Baldwin commanded the main guard, and was in the retreat to the Delaware River, also in the memorable attack on Trenton, Dec. 25, 1776, when Washington surprised and captured the Hessian commander, Col. Rapp, and 1,000 men. In 1777, because of continued ill health, he was honorably discharged and returned home.

During 1778–79, Baldwin was representative for Woburn in the General Court, being the first to hold the dignity, after the adoption of the state constitution (1779). He was high sheriff of Middlesex County for several years after 1780. The outbreak of Shays's Rebellion, in 1786, found him earnest in his support of the state authority, and one of thirty-seven to protest against Woburn's refusal to help suppress the disorder. He

was again a member of the General Court from 1800 to 1804. In the intervals between official engagements, Baldwin probably continued professional practise, although not conspicuously until 1794, when he appeared as a leading projector and chief engineer of the Middlesex Canal. This work, authorized by legislature in 1793, to connect the Charles and Merrimac Rivers, was in process for ten years. During this period Baldwin attained distinction in an entirely new field. While surveying for the canal, near Wilmington, Mass., he encountered a seedling appletree, which according to report had been vigorously assaulted by woodpeckers. The fruit, however, proved so excellent that in the following season Baldwin cut scions for grafting on his own trees. The result was the noted "Baldwin" apple, called also "Pecker," "Woodpecker," and "Steele's Red Winter." The hardiness of the trees, the quantity and good average uniformity of their yield, and the firmness of the fruit enabling it to be readily transported and preserved, render this variety "the standard winter apple of Eastern America" (U. P. Hedrick, *Cyclopedia of Hardy Fruits,* 1922, p. 17). One of Baldwin's other interests was the collection of a large and representative library on civil engineering, increased by his sons, Loammi [*q.v.*] and George R. Baldwin, to about 4,000 volumes and presented, some years since, to the town of Woburn. Baldwin was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and an honorary graduate of Harvard College (A.M., 1785). He married twice: in 1772 Mary Fowle; and in 1791 Margery Fowle, a cousin of his first wife.

[Chas. C. Baldwin, *Baldwin Geneal., from 1500 to 1881* (1881); Geo. L. Vose, *Sketch of the Life and Work of Loammi Baldwin, Civil Engineer* (1885).]

BALDWIN, LOAMMI (May 16, 1780–June 30, 1838) was a civil engineer, lawyer, and author. His biographer, Prof. George L. Vose, says, "No man so well deserves the name of Father of Civil Engineering in America," and his career shows him to have been the possessor of a well-ordered mind and unusual versatility. Born at North Woburn, Mass., a descendant of Deacon Henry Baldwin, an original settler of that town, he was the third son of Loammi Baldwin [*q.v.*], and his wife, Mary Fowle. After completing his preparatory education in Westford Academy, he proceeded to Harvard College and was duly graduated in 1800. His early predilection for mechanics moved his father to write to his friend, Count Rumford (Benjamin Thompson), inquiring as to the possibility of mastering the trade of instrument-making in two or three years. Discouraged by the reply that the term of apprenticeship was seven years, and that indenture cost several hundred pounds, the son began to read law under the preceptorship of Timothy Bigelow of Groton. There, in 1802, he designed and built the town's first fire-engine, a machine capable of throwing a five-eighths-inch stream to the height of seventy-five feet, which was in continuous use for over eighty years (see files of *Fireman's Standard,* Boston, 1884). The first hose, made in sections, was stitched in a harness shop. After his admission to the bar in 1804, he practised for three years in Cambridge. During this period he produced his pamphlet, *Thoughts on Political Economy* (Cambridge, 1809), a suggestive discussion of population, industry, and currency in the United States, in which he points out the danger of over-immigration impairing "national character," and proposes as a remedy for currency irregularities an extension of the capital of the United States Bank.

In 1807 Baldwin abandoned the law for civil engineering, and in preparation for the duties of this profession visited Europe to inspect public works in England and on the Continent. On his return he opened an office in Charlestown, Mass. In 1814 he began work on building Fort Strong, Noddle's Island, Boston Harbor; in 1819 he succeeded Uriah Cotting as engineer of improvements in Boston city, including the extension of Beacon St. beyond the Common; in the meantime, for three years (1817–20), he was engaged on public works in Virginia. In 1821 he entered on his memorable service as engineer of the Union Canal, one of the outstanding projects of the time, extending seventy-nine miles from Reading to Middletown, Pa., and including a tunnel 739 feet in length on the summit level, three large dams, and an artificial lake of 800 acres. One dam, across a gorge on the Swatara River, exceeded in strength and proportions any previously constructed in America. In spite of the excellence of his plans and the thoroughness of his work, Baldwin became involved in a controversy with the president of the company, Samuel Mifflin, over the proposed width of the canal, resigned, and was succeeded by Canvass White. After completion of the work, the original proportions were found to be correct, and alterations were effected at immense cost.

In 1825, after a year in Europe, Baldwin became associated with the committee on the erection of the Bunker Hill Monument, and was assigned the duty of determining the proportions of the shaft. Taking the committee to the Roxbury Mill-dam, whence Bunker Hill was then visible, he exhibited the effects of various heights by affixing small models to the railing of the sidewalk,

so that, at a proper distance away, each would appear to rest upon the hill. Actual proportions were then readily estimated for the accepted model. In the same year, under appointment by the state legislature, he surveyed the route for a proposed canal from Boston Harbor to the Hudson River and the Erie Canal, suggesting a tunnel through the Hoosac Mountain nearly on the line of the present railway tunnel. In 1827 he was again retained to survey for a railroad over the same line, but delegated the work to his brother James. During the next seven years of productive activity he designed and built, simultaneously, large masonry dry docks at the Charlestown (Mass.) and Norfolk (Va.) navy-yards, both completed in 1833. These were works of magnitude at the time, because of the lack of power-driven machinery and the primitive character of many of the appliances used. Pile-drivers were operated by treadmills, a vexation to American spirit, since "reputable workmen" objected to operating them. While on these works Baldwin made surveys for a third naval dry dock in New York Harbor, which was not built until after his death. In 1834 he published an elaborate *Report on the Subject of Introducing Pure Water into the City of Boston,* which listed all neighboring ponds and located all wells in the city as possible sources of supply. He was not destined to complete the work proposed. Another masterly and elaborate work was his *Report on the Brunswick Canal and Railroad, Glynn County, Ga.* (1836), giving details of a proposed inland navigation system, including 900 miles on the Ocmulgee and Oconee Rivers, and opening up an extensive territory. Another project for which he furnished complete plans was a "marine railroad" from Pensacola, Fla. He was a member of the state Executive Committee under Gov. John Davis in 1835, and a presidential elector in 1836.

[Geo. L. Vose, *Sketch of the Life and Works of Loammi Baldwin, Civil Engineer* (1885); *Letters and Documents in Relation to the Dissolution of the Engagement of Loammi Baldwin with the Union Canal Company* (Harrisburg, 1823).]

BALDWIN, MATTHIAS WILLIAM (Nov. 10, 1795–Sept. 7, 1866), manufacturer and philanthropist, was an important figure in the development of the locomotive in America. He was the youngest of five children born to William Baldwin, a carriage maker in Elizabethtown, N. J. The father died when the boy was four years old, the large property which he had accumulated was imprudently lost by his executors, and the family was left to enjoy the doubtful blessings of honorable poverty. Through his mother's efforts, Matthias received a fair schooling, and was then apprenticed to Woolworth Brothers, manufacturing jewelers of Philadelphia, where he eventually became the best workman in their shop. At twenty-four, he set up for himself, but six years later abandoned the jewelry business, deciding that he "could not spend his life making gew-gaws"—especially since the national depression of 1825 made it no longer even financially profitable. He now entered into partnership with one David Mason in a constantly expanding manufacturing business, first producing engravers' and book-makers' tools, next adding hydraulic presses, then copper rolls for printing calico from a steel matrix and forms for new continuous calico color printing; finally in 1827 he constructed a six-horse-power noiseless stationary engine, and the firm began to build engines for sale. At this time, however, Mason became alarmed at these unceasing innovations and withdrew from the business, leaving his more enterprising partner to continue his increasingly successful career alone.

On Apr. 25, 1831, Baldwin exhibited in Peale's Museum a dummy locomotive and two cars, improved from an imported English model and running upon a circular track built for the purpose. He then constructed for the Philadelphia & Germantown Railroad one of the first American locomotives to be actually employed in transportation; he made tools especially designed for the work, and brought his task to completion within six months. The resulting engine, christened "Old Ironsides," was partially of iron and partially of wood, weighed six tons, moved twenty-eight miles an hour, and drew thirty tons. It ran between Philadelphia and Germantown in fair weather—"On rainy days horses will be attached" (advertisement, Poulson's *American Daily Advertiser,* Nov. 26, 1832). During the next ten years, Baldwin constructed many stationary engines and ten more locomotives, introducing continual improvements; after that time he devoted all his energy to locomotives alone. The business prospered, he moved his headquarters from Minor St. to Broad and Hamilton Sts., and successfully weathered several panics, notably that of 1837–40. In 1854 Matthew Baird [*q.v.*] bought an interest in the Baldwin works and became a partner, continuing so until Baldwin's death. A temporary boycott in the South shortly before the war, due to Baldwin's activities on behalf of the colored people, was compensated by the number of engines sold to the Government after hostilities began. Over 1,500 locomotives had been built by his company when Baldwin died in 1866. With remarkable persistence, although suffering great pain, he attended

to his business until within a few days of his death.

Baldwin's interests, however, were by no means confined exclusively to business. As early as 1824 he had aided in the foundation of Franklin Institute for the betterment of labor. About 1826 he underwent religious conversion, became a Sunday-school superintendent, and for the next thirty-five years conducted a Bible class (Rev. George Duffield, Jr., *American Presbyterian,* Sept. 27, 1866). In 1827 he married Sarah C. Baldwin (remotely related), by whom he had one son and two daughters. His home life was never extravagant, while he came to devote more than $10,000 a year to charities. In 1835 he founded a school for colored children, and hired the teachers for two years; at about the same time he contributed to the support of the colored evangelist, Pompey Hunt. To the Civil War Christian Commission his company appropriated ten per cent of its yearly income. He donated about $50,000 for seven churches and chapels in Philadelphia. He was for many years county and city prison inspector, attended the state constitutional convention in 1837, and was a member of the legislature in 1854. Fond of music and art, he visited Europe in 1860 to purchase pictures for his beautiful residence in Wissinoming, Frankford, a suburb of Philadelphia. He was a member of the American Philosophical Society, the American Horticultural Society, the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, and the Music Fund Society. In appearance he was athletic, being an expert archer and enthusiastic horseback rider; the benevolent expression of his face was heightened in later years by his white hair and beard. He practised total abstinence and was reluctant to use the grapes from his country estate even for medicinal wine. His speech was shrewd and concise, his views decided and positive. Doubt was foreign to his nature.

[*Memorial of Matthias W. Baldwin* (1867) with tributes by Rev. Wolcott Calkins, Rev. Daniel S. Miller, Joseph R. Chandler, and Franklin Peale; records of the Franklin Institute, 1832–66, giving detailed accounts of locomotive improvements; address before the Am. Philosophical Soc., Dec. 7, 1866, by Franklin Peale; article by Joseph R. Chandler, *North American U. S. Gazette,* Sept. 14, 1866; brief account of Baldwin's philanthropies, Rev. Llewellyn Pratt, *Am. Presbyterian,* Dec. 22, 1864; press notice of "Old Ironsides," Poulson's *Am. Daily Advertiser,* Nov. 24, 1832; portr., *World's Work,* July 1924.]

F. H. D.
E. S. B.

BALDWIN, ROGER SHERMAN (Jan. 4, 1793–Feb. 19, 1863), lawyer, senator, governor of Connecticut, was the son of Simeon Baldwin [*q.v.*] and Rebecca Sherman, daughter of Roger Sherman [*q.v.*]. He prepared for college first with a teacher in New Canaan, and later at the Hopkins Grammar School in New Haven, under his cousin, Henry Sherman. Even as a boy he was scholarly and had read Virgil to a considerable extent before he was ten. He entered Yale when fourteen years of age and was graduated in 1811. He studied law in New Haven for a time, probably in his father's office, and then entered the Litchfield Law School. When he finished his course Judge Gould wrote to Judge Simeon Baldwin, "I restore your son, somewhat improved, as I hope and believe. At any rate, no student from our office ever passed a better examination." He was admitted to the bar of Connecticut in 1814 and began practise by himself in New Haven. Politically he rose step by step, being successively member of the common council of New Haven, alderman of New Haven, member of the Connecticut Senate, member of the Connecticut General Assembly, and in 1844 and 1845 governor of Connecticut. In 1847 he was appointed by Gov. Bissell to fill the vacancy in the United States Senate caused by the death of Jabez W. Huntington. The following year he was elected by the General Assembly of Connecticut to complete Senator Huntington's unexpired term, which ended in 1851. In 1860 he was one of the electors of the president for the state at large when Lincoln was elected.

In spite of holding high political office, Baldwin's greatest fame was as a lawyer. His name was in every volume of the *Connecticut Reports* for forty-seven years. He was active in the movement for the abolition of slavery, making speeches on the subject at various times. One of his first cases was a writ of *habeas corpus* for the release of a negro seized as a fugitive slave, who had escaped from the service of Henry Clay. Perhaps his most noted case was that of the captives of the *Amistad.* Some negroes captured in Africa were sold to Cubans who started to take them by vessel to Guanaja. They were badly treated and on the second night killed the captain and the cook and attempted to force the Cubans to take them back to Africa. The Cubans managed to bring the boat to the north shore of Long Island, where a government vessel took possession. The negroes were arrested on a charge of murder and piracy. The government vessel libelled the *Amistad,* her cargo and slaves to recover salvage. The Cubans demanded the return of the slaves. A group of persons interested in abolition took up the defense of the slaves. The case went to the United States Supreme Court. Seth P. Staples, Theodore Sedgwick, and John Quincy Adams were associated with Roger Sherman Baldwin for the defense, which was successful. The decision

(United States *vs.* Libellants of the *Amistad*, 1841, 15 *Peters* 518) gave the Africans absolute freedom.

Baldwin was a Whig and helped to organize the Republican party, to which he was loyal but only in so far as he believed in its principles. When he was in the United States Senate he desired reëlection. In the General Assembly was a bare Whig majority, but two or three declined to vote for him because they believed his opinions did not exactly accord with certain party principles as they understood them. A written statement from him would have removed the opposition, but this he refused to give, because he did not wish to be in the position of an office-seeker and believed that members of the Senate should not be bound by pledges of any sort. He was not reëlected. He was eminent in the Senate at a time when Webster, Clay, Benton, Calhoun, and Seward were members. One of his best speeches was on the compromise measures of 1850, especially the Fugitive Slave Law. Another spirited speech was a reply to the Senator from Virginia who compared the Revolutionary history of Connecticut and Virginia in an offensive manner. His last public service was as a delegate from Connecticut to the National Peace Conference at Washington in 1861. He was the state's representative on the Resolutions Committee, which was the most important of the committees. In his later life he resumed practise and had important and lucrative cases. He was frequently in the Federal courts and was often asked for written opinions on difficult questions. He has been considered, by many, the ablest lawyer that Connecticut ever produced. Tall and erect, at sixty-nine he still walked with a firm step. Until the last few years of his life he always wore a full-dress suit of black with the occasional substitution of a blue coat with gilt buttons and buff waistcoat. He was married in 1820 to Emily Perkins, by whom he had six sons and three daughters.

[The most complete accounts of Baldwin's life are found in the article by his son, Simeon Eben Baldwin [*q.v.*], in W. L. Lewis, *Great Am. Lawyers* (1908), III, 493, and in W. S. Dutton, *An Address at the Funeral of Hon. Roger Sherman Baldwin* (1863). Other sketches of his life are in F. B. Dexter, *Yale Biogs. and Annals*, 1805–15, ser. 6 (1912), p. 369; *New Haven Jour.-Courier*, Feb. 21, 1863; Dwight Loomis and J. G. Calhoun, *Judicial and Civil Hist. of Conn.* (1875), p. 252; N. C. Osborn, *Hist. of Conn. in Monographic Form* (1925), III, 230. For other information see *Cat. of the Officers and Grads. of Yale 1701–1924*; *New Haven Colony Hist. Soc. Papers*, IV; *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Rec.*, XLII, 43; B. W. Dwight, *Hist. of the Descendants of John Dwight of Dedham, Mass.* (1874), II, 1108; F. B. Perkins, *Perkins Family of Conn.* (1860), pp. 3, 40, 79, 80; Chas. C. Baldwin, *Baldwin Geneal. from 1500 to 1881* (1881), I, 278, 285; Wm. Prescott, *Prescott Memorial* (1870), pp. 121–23, 172–74; John Quincy Adams, *Memoirs*, ed. by Chas. Francis Adams (1876), X, 287, 358, 360, 395, 401, 429, 430.] M. E. M.

BALDWIN, SIMEON (Dec. 14, 1761–May 26, 1851), jurist, born at Norwich, Conn., was the youngest of the eight children of Ebenezer Baldwin, farmer and blacksmith, and Bethiah (Barker) Baldwin, grand-daughter of a Massachusetts lawyer. His mother died when he was a few weeks old. His father later married Mrs. Esther (Clark) Backus, to whom Simeon was warmly attached. The boy studied with his brother, Rev. Ebenezer Baldwin, in Danbury, Conn., with Rev. Joseph Huntington of Coventry, Conn., and at "Master Tisdale's School," at Lebanon, Conn. He entered Yale College in 1777, from which he was graduated in 1781, the Revolutionary War having interrupted his education. He was a graduate student at Yale for a year, while teaching in New Haven, and the next year was preceptor of the academy, Albany, N. Y. He then returned to Yale as a tutor for three years. After studying law under Judge Charles Chauncey at New Haven, and under Peter W. Yates at Albany, he was admitted to the bar of New Haven in 1786 and gradually built up an extensive practise. For many years there were always a few men studying law under his direction, and often living in his house. On July 29, 1787 he married Rebecca Sherman, daughter of Roger Sherman [*q.v.*]. They had four children, of whom one was Roger Sherman Baldwin [*q.v.*]. After the death of his wife, Rebecca, Simeon Baldwin married her sister, Mrs. Elizabeth (Sherman) Burr, by whom he had five more children. He was clerk of the United States district and circuit courts for Connecticut from 1789 to 1806, also serving at various times as collector of revenue, city clerk, alderman, and mayor of New Haven. In 1803 he was elected to Congress by the Federalists, where he served well, but not brilliantly, until 1805, when he declined a renomination. He was elected a judge of the superior court of Connecticut in 1806, and became a judge of the supreme court of errors of Connecticut in 1808, and continued in office until 1818, when he was replaced by a Democrat. He held the confidence of the people as a fair-minded judge, having a sound knowledge of law. After his retirement from the bench, his law practise was small, consisting mostly of patent work. His grandson, Simeon Eben Baldwin [*q.v.*], said of him, "In every line of action which he undertook to pursue, he outdistanced mediocrity, but nowhere did he attain the highest rank."

[The chief source of information about Simeon Baldwin is Simeon Eben Baldwin, *The Life and Letters of Simeon Baldwin* (1919). Brief accounts of his life are

found in F. B. Dexter, *Yale Biogs. and Annals, 1778–92*, 4th ser. (1907); G. H. Hollister, *Hist. of Conn.* (1855), II, 626; Dwight Loomis and J. G. Calhoun, *Judicial and Civil Hist. of Conn.* (1875); N. G. Osborn, *Hist. of Conn. in Monographic Form* (1925), III, 232. For other information, see C. C. Baldwin, *Baldwin Geneal. from 1500–1881* (1881), I, 273–78; G. S. Hillard, *Memoir, Autobiography and Correspondence of Jeremiah Mason* (1917), pp 15, 17; H. P. Johnston, *Yale in the Am. Revolution* (1888), p. 347; *New Haven Ann. City Reports* (1863), p. 94; Wm. Prescott, *Prescott Memorial* (1870), p. 89.]

M.E.M.

BALDWIN, SIMEON EBEN (Feb. 5, 1840–Jan. 30, 1927), jurist, governor of Connecticut, was the son of Roger Sherman and Emily (Perkins) Baldwin. He married (1865) Susan Winchester of Boston. He was born in New Haven, which continued to be his home throughout his long life; in spite of his participation in activities of national and international importance, he was associated in a peculiar and intimate way with the political, legal, and intellectual life of his native town and state for more than half a century.

As a boy he attended the Hopkins Grammar School in New Haven. Ties of loyalty and interest bound him to this school for the rest of his life. Active in all its alumni work, he was, more specifically, for many years president of its board of trustees; in 1910, on the occasion of the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the founding of the school, he delivered a discourse on its history; when shortly before his death it became necessary to house the school in new quarters, he was one of the largest, if not the largest, of the individual donors whose contributions made possible a set of modern buildings for what he was fond of referring to as the fourth oldest institution of learning in the United States.

From the Grammar School he went to Yale, from which he was graduated with the class of 1861. There is scant information as to his four years at college. During that period he kept a diary from which he read extracts on the fifty-fifth reunion of his class, but this diary is not at present available. That the studious traits which he later manifested were not altogether lacking at this time may be inferred from the fact that he was elected a member of Phi Beta Kappa. Such records as we have do not indicate that there was anything unusual about this young student who had among his classroom contemporaries the poet Edward Rowland Sill, and two others who like himself were later to have much to do with the life of the university, his friends Tracy Peck and Franklin Bowditch Dexter.

For the two years following his graduation from college he studied law at Yale, at Harvard, and in his father's office. In 1863 he was admitted to the bar and began the practise of law. His seventeen years of service as an associate justice and chief justice of the supreme court of his state and his four years as governor, coming as they did in the latter part of his life, may have had a tendency to obscure for his later contemporaries the fact that he was at least as much as anything else an eminently successful lawyer. In the practise of the law he won distinction both in his own state and outside, and with it the financial emoluments that usually accompany success at the bar. He was keenly alive to the practical side of the lawyer's work and never lost his zest for it. Till almost the very end of his life he maintained a law office, which he visited daily as long as his health would permit, and kept adding to his law library. As late as 1919 his book *The Young Man and the Law* revealed him still at heart a lawyer. In 1878 he was one of the founders of the American Bar Association of which he later (1890) became the president, and for twelve years (1907–19) he was the director of its bureau of comparative law.

During the middle portion of his life he was actively engaged in teaching law. Here also he showed ability. One who studied law under him and like him became chief justice of the supreme court of errors of Connecticut says that his old pupils regard his work as a teacher "as more distinctive and weightier in influence upon human life than any other portion of his work. Probably in his day not a half dozen teachers of the law in our country could be placed in his class" (*American Bar Association Journal,* February 1927, p. 74). To the same effect may be interpreted the action of the Association of American Law Schools, which in 1902 elected him its president. In 1869 he was appointed to the faculty of the Yale Law School, then in a moribund condition. His active participation in the affairs of that school was to continue for just fifty years, for it was not until 1919 that he retired as professor emeritus. The revival of the law school was largely his work. He increased the size of the faculty, instituted new courses, developed graduate work, and for a long time carried much of the financial responsibility for the school's existence (*Yale Law Journal,* March 1927, p. 680). It was characteristic of him that when shortly before his retirement the method of teaching was changed to the so-called "case system," to which Judge Baldwin, like most of his contemporaries, objected, he never for an instant changed his attitude of loyalty to the school, which some years later was to be most generously remembered in his will.

In addition to his work as lawyer and teacher he took an active part in the public affairs of

New Haven. He served on the Public Parks commission, on the New Haven common council, and on the board of directors of the New Haven Hospital. Deeply interested in religious work, he was president of the New Haven Congregational Club and of the Y. M. C. A. From 1884 until 1896 he was president of the New Haven Colony Historical Association, for which he wrote many papers mostly on subjects of history.

Even more diversified than his activities in local affairs was his participation in those that concerned the state as a whole. Never a politician, and to the end of his days allowing such honors and offices as came to him to come unsought and unfought for, he nevertheless early became identified with the political life of his state. Starting as a Republican, he was nominated for state senator from the fourth district in 1867, but was not elected. In 1884 he was one of the "independents" who refused to support James G. Blaine, and was chosen president of the Republican organization in Connecticut. The greatest of his political honors came to him when he was an old man. Automatically retired from the position of chief justice of the supreme court, Feb. 5, 1910, because he had reached the age limit of seventy years, he that year was nominated for governor on the Democratic ticket and was elected. At the Democratic National Convention in June 1912 he received twenty votes for the presidential nomination. In November of the same year he was elected governor of his state, nominally strongly Republican, for a second term of two years. He was Democratic candidate for United States senator from Connecticut for the term beginning Mar. 4, 1915. Caught in a Republican landslide and defeated, he nevertheless ran ahead of his party ticket by several thousand votes.

It was inevitable that the high regard in which he was held as a lawyer should lead to his being named on various state commissions of reform. In 1872, less than a decade after he began to practise law, the Connecticut legislature elected him one of a commission of five that made the *Revision of 1875, the General Statutes of the State of Connecticut.* In the same year he was a member of a state commission appointed to revise the education laws. Six years later he was named by the governor of Connecticut acting under a resolution of the state legislature one of a commission of five to inquire into the feasibility of simplifying legal procedure. This commission drew up a set of rules and forms which were approved and adopted by the court as the basis of pleading in civil cases. In

Baldwin

1886 a commission was appointed to report on a better system of state taxation. He was a member of that commission and drew the report. Again in 1915–17 he was chairman of a commission established by the State to revise its system of taxation. But his participation in state affairs was not merely political and legal; he was also actively associated with charitable and religious organizations. At one time or another he was a director of the General Hospital Society of Connecticut and a director of the Missionary Society of Connecticut; he served as moderator of the General Conference of Congregational Churches of Connecticut, and he was a delegate of the Congregational Churches to the national council.

His scholarship and his interest in questions of the day led him into affiliations with many of the learned societies. Nor were these affiliations perfunctory only. He regularly attended the society meetings, wrote papers for them, and rose to the highest places in their councils. He was president of the American Social Science Association (1897), International Law Association (1899), American Historical Association (1905), Political Science Association (1910), American Society for the Judicial Settlement of International Disputes (1911), Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, Connecticut Society of the Archæological Institute of America (1914). He was vice-president of the Archæological Institute of America (1898) and of the social and economic science section of the American Association for the Advancement of Science (1903). He was an associate of the Institute of International Law. He was a member also of the National Institute of Arts and Sciences, American Philosophical Society, American Antiquarian Society, and a corresponding member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, Colonial Society of Massachusetts, and L'Institut de Droit Comparé.

His connections with national and international matters touching law and its ramifications were not restricted to membership in learned societies. In 1899 he was appointed by the State Department a delegate from the United States to the Sixth International Prison Congress, which met the next year at Brussels. Again in 1905 he was United States delegate to a similar congress held at Budapest and was made its vice-president. At this congress he presented his report on the question "By what principles and in what manner may convicts be given work in the fields, or other public work in open air?" In 1904, appointed by President Roosevelt one of the delegates to represent the United States,

he was elected vice-president of the Universal Congress of Lawyers and Jurists held in connection with the St. Louis Exposition of that year.

His writings cover a number of fields. Among his more pretentious works are: *A Digest of All the Reported Cases . . . of Conn.* (2 vols., 1871, 1882), *Cases on Railroad Law* (1896), *Modern Political Institutions* (1898), *American Railroad Law* (1904), *The American Judiciary* (1905), *The Relations of Education to Citizenship* (1912), *Life and Letters of Simeon Baldwin* (1919), *The Young Man and the Law* (1919). He was a most prolific writer of articles and pamphlets. Some ten years before his death he collected and presented to the Yale Law School nearly a hundred of these in four bound volumes which he entitled in order of numbering: *Law and Law Reform, Studies in History, International and Constitutional Law,* and *Studies in Legal Education and Social Sciences.* While these titles very aptly classify his literary output the volumes themselves do not contain all his miscellaneous publications.

He was not above medium height, somewhat slight of figure and seemingly frail in physique, though this frailty was in appearance only as he was a man of tremendous, tireless energy. Although in no sense athletic, he made some sort of exercise in the open air each day almost a religious duty. At one time this took the form of bicycle rides, though he soon gave these up in favor of walking. His rule was to cover at least four miles a day, rain or shine, and there was no part of the less congested portions of New Haven and its environs over which he had not many times traveled as he walked unhurriedly alone, stooping somewhat, buried in thought, compelled by poor eyesight to keep his gaze fixed upon his path a few feet ahead of him. This methodical exercise he kept up until, in his last years, injuries received as the result of a fall confined him to his home.

His personality, externally at least, was cold, dignified, and grave. Some of those who knew him best say that he was in reality warm-hearted but the characteristics that made an impression on every one were his reserve and his austerity; in general he was an object of respect rather than of affection; he had none of the weaknesses that make men lovable. As deeply religious as any of his Puritan ancestors, he was most broadly tolerant of the beliefs of others. His conception of civic duty was Roman, but he was ever willing to oppose even the State in defending what he regarded as the constitutional and legal rights of the individual. He was frugal to such a degree that on one occasion when traveling as governor with his staff, instead of partaking of a sumptuous dinner in a dining car specially provided for them, he rode in a coach and ate a sandwich which he had brought from home. With this frugality he combined a generosity even more marked. Part of his life was lived in the days of high hats. Such hats, when they became old, were usually donated to the missionaries. To quote from one who for many years served with Judge Baldwin on the committee of a missionary society, "He used to turn in his old high hat at the shop for fifteen cents, but he would give $1,500 to the committee for missions." He was unyielding where a principle was involved; but in matters of mere policy he had the remarkable ability, once he was outvoted, to make the policy of the majority his own even though he had strenuously opposed it. Quiet and unassuming in manner he could be aggressive when he deemed it necessary, as he did in his controversy with Roosevelt when the latter dared to ridicule his ability as a judge. Prompt and unfailing in meeting appointments, unimportant though they might be, he demanded the same consideration from others, even refusing to wait for dinner guests who might be late. Both by nature and training he was conservative, but not reactionary; his mind was open as well as active. If his plea for castration and whipping as generally applicable methods of punishing criminals savors of the archaic (*Yale Law Journal,* June 1899), he was capable also of starting nation-wide comment, as on the radically new ideas embodied in his "The Natural Right to a Natural Death" (*Journal of Social Science,* 1889). In January 1910 he published "The Law of the Airship" (*American Journal of International Law*), and in November "Liability for Accidents in Aerial Navigation" (*Michigan Law Review,* IX, 20). At his suggestion the Connecticut legislature (1911) passed a law regulating the use of flying machines, the first law to be enacted on this subject. France shortly afterward modelled her law on that of Connecticut. In 1911 he had two articles on airship law in foreign journals (*Revue de l'Institut de Droit Comparé* and *Zeitschrift für Völkerrecht und Bundesstaatsrecht*). Notwithstanding his work in many fields, his real interest was always in modern law. He has been called an antiquarian, but his studies in this line did not go beyond colonial history, more particularly Connecticut history. Few men have played a more important part in so many activities that concerned their own community. When he was presented for the degree of LL.D. at the Yale Commencement in

1916 he was called, *inter alia*, "the first citizen of Connecticut." No designation could have fitted him better.

[Good likenesses of Baldwin in his later years in *Am. Bar Ass. Jour.*, Feb. 1927, p. 73 and in *Yale Alumni Weekly*, Feb. 11, 1927, p. 555; for an estimate of the man and his achievements see the articles accompanying these and also *Yale Law Jour.*, Mar. 1927, p. 680; *New Haven Jour.-Courier, Hartford Times, Hartford Courant*, Jan. 31, Feb. 1, 2, 1927; *Who's Who in America*, 1899–1927. There is a complete list of his writings in Yale Univ. Lib.; partial lists, together with considerable biog. material, are given in the records of the class of 1861, Yale College, published by the class secretary, esp. those for the years 1888, 1903, 1907, 1916. His legal bibliography, fairly complete through 1901, was printed in *Yale Law Jour.*, Nov. 1901, pp. 14–16. His opinions and decisions written while he was on the bench will be found in *Conn. Reports*, vols. LXIII–LXXXIII. For the facts in regard to his controversy with Roosevelt, see *Outlook*, vol. XCVII, Jan. 1911, pp. 240–44.] G. E. W.

BALDWIN, THERON (July 21, 1801–Apr. 10, 1870), pioneer Western missionary, educator, the son of Elisha and Clarissa (Judd) Baldwin, was born in Goshen, Conn. He entered college comparatively late, being well over twenty-two when he matriculated as a freshman at Yale. The exacting duties of life on a New England farm and the difficulty of finding a well equipped tutor in the neighborhood, had delayed his preparation but could not quench his ambition. Upon graduation from Yale, he entered the theological department of that institution and became one of the leaders of a small group of students who had banded themselves together as the "Illinois Association," or as it is now known in the history of higher education in the Middle West, the "Yale Band." The members of the Association pledged their lives to the cause of education and religion in the West and, in coöperation with a local group in Illinois led by John M. Ellis, became the founders of Illinois College. Baldwin and his intimate friend, Julian M. Sturtevant, led the way to the West, leaving New England in the fall of 1829, going by way of the Erie Canal, Lake Erie, overland across Ohio, by boat down the Ohio and up the Mississippi to St. Louis and finally overland again to Jacksonville, Ill. While his friend became the first instructor in the pioneer college, Baldwin himself settled as a home-missionary in Vandalia, then the capital of the state. Here he not only preached, but exerted a strong influence upon early movements for the improvement of public education in Illinois and was instrumental in securing from the legislature the charter (1835) under which the three oldest colleges of the state (Illinois, Shurtleff, McKendree) are still operating. In 1831 while on a trip to the East for funds, he married Caroline Wilder of Burlington, Vt. Like other members of the "Yale Band," Baldwin became a trustee of Illinois College, and his advice was frequently sought and followed by Edward Beecher, the first president, and Sturtevant, his successor.

When Benjamin Godfrey, a Cape Cod sailor and merchant of means, who had settled in Illinois, determined to establish a seminary for girls, or "females" as they were usually called in those days, he turned to Baldwin for help. The result was the establishment of Monticello Seminary at Godfrey, Ill., in 1838. Baldwin became the first principal of the school, helping to select its site and determining its course of study and general plan of operation. Before instruction began in the spring of 1838, he made an extensive tour of the East, visiting practically all the "female seminaries" in that section and conferring particularly with Mary Lyon [*q.v.*], who was just then supervising the beginnings of Mount Holyoke at South Hadley.

Baldwin continued as principal of Monticello Seminary until the fall of 1843, when he became the so-called corresponding secretary, or in reality, the executive head of the Society for the Promotion of Collegiate and Theological Education at the West. As secretary of this society, with headquarters in New York City, he performed, perhaps, his most significant service for the cause of higher education in the Middle West. Many of the present strong colleges of that part of the country, such as Western Reserve, Oberlin, Illinois, Wabash, Marietta, Knox, Grinnell, and Beloit, were then in their precarious infancy, and it was due in no small measure to the energy and self-sacrificing work of Baldwin that these institutions survived the financial perils of those years. He remained secretary of the Society until his death, and its twenty-six published annual reports, which he wrote, constitute an interesting record of his labors. He died at his home in Orange, N. J.

[The best biog. sketch is by J. M. Sturtevant, published originally in the *Congreg. Quart.* for April and July, 1875, and reprinted separately the same year. See also the *Autobiography of Julian M. Sturtevant* (1896). For Baldwin's connection with Monticello Seminary, see Theron Baldwin, *Hist. Address*, delivered at Monticello, Ill., June 27, 1855.] C. H. R.

BALDWIN, WILLIAM (Mar. 29, 1779–Aug. 31, 1819), physician, botanist, was born in Newlin, Pa., the son of Thomas Baldwin, a Quaker minister, and Elizabeth (Garretson) Baldwin. At the age of twenty-three he attended one term of medical lectures at the University of Pennsylvania, where he met William Darlington [*q.v.*], with whom he formed what proved to be a lifelong friendship. He later became acquainted

with Dr. Moses Marshall, the botanist, and from him acquired an early interest in the biology of plants. He would have liked to continue his botanical studies with Marshall, but his health was poor and he already suspected that he had incipient pulmonary tuberculosis. In 1805, therefore, he enlisted as a ship's surgeon on a merchant ship from Philadelphia to Canton, China. When he returned, he again attended the University of Pennsylvania and was graduated as a doctor of medicine, Apr. 10, 1807. His graduation thesis described his experiences as a physician on the merchant ship (*A Short Practical Narrative of the Diseases which Prevailed among the American Seamen, at Wampoa, in China, in the Year 1805; with some Account of Diseases which Appeared among the Crew of the Ship New Jersey, on the Passage from thence to Philadelphia,* 1807).

He started practise in Wilmington, Del., the next year, and about the same time married Hannah M. Webster. His interest in botany, already stimulated by Marshall, and more especially by Dr. Benjamin Smith Barton, began to show itself. He collected the local flora and started a correspondence with Rev. Henry Muhlenberg of Lancaster, Pa., which lasted until Muhlenberg's death in 1815. In 1811, Baldwin felt that it was necessary to move to a milder climate on account of his health. He therefore went to Georgia, where he made numerous trips on foot into the western part of the state, spending a number of months with the Creek Indians. He was appointed a naval surgeon in 1812 and was stationed at St. Mary's, Ga. Here he spent a number of years doing his duty as a surgeon at the post, but also continually gathering botanical specimens and sending them, or descriptions of them, to his friend, Muhlenberg. Only one observation made at St. Mary's was published by Baldwin (*American Journal of Science,* 1818, I, 355–59). In the winter of 1816–17 he was in East Florida. His descriptions of the flora found there will be found in his letters to his old friend, William Darlington. He went, also, with Rodney, Graham, and Bland, in the frigate *Congress,* to South America in 1817 (H. M. Brackenridge, *Voyage to South America, etc.,* 1819). Although Baldwin's name is rarely mentioned in the official account of the voyage, his botanical experiences are carefully described in his letters.

The next year he returned to Wilmington, where he began to prepare a report on the South American excursion. Only one fragment, however, was published (*Transactions of the American Philosophical Society,* 1825, n. s., II, 167–71). His health by this time was extremely precarious and he therefore requested opportunities for further travel. He was, consequently, chosen to go as botanist on an expedition to the Rocky Mountains commanded by Maj. Stephen H. Long. The expedition left Pittsburgh May 5, 1819, by river steamer. Baldwin was almost too ill to go. He lived on the boat and had botanical specimens, collected by others, brought to him. In spite of the great fatigue caused by any exercise, he proceeded with his work. Maj. Long noted in his journal of July 5 that Baldwin's "devotion to a fascinating pursuit stimulated him to exertions for which the strength of his wasted frame seemed wholly inadequate; and it is not, perhaps, improbable that his efforts may have somewhat hastened the termination of his life" (Edwin James, *Account of an Expedition from Pittsburgh to the Rocky Mountains, etc.,* 1823, I, 83–84). By July 13 the party had reached Franklin, Mo., where Baldwin was taken to the house of Dr. John J. Lowry, in which he died. The best estimate of his character is contained in Darlington's words: "His rare industry and sagacity entitled him to take rank with the most deserving of our pioneers in the field of American botany."

[The chief source of information is the biog. sketch by William Darlington in his *Reliquiæ Baldwinianæ, etc.* (1843). Baldwin's botanical contributions are mostly in books by other writers: Stephen Elliott, *A Sketch of Botany of S. C. and Ga.* (1821); Asa Gray, "A Monograph of the North Am. Species of Rhynchospora," *Annals of the Lyceum of Nat. Hist. of N.Y.,* 1828–36, III, 191–220; John Torrey, "Monograph of North Am. Cyperaceæ," *Ibid.,* III, 239–448. The Baldwin herbarium is now at the Acad. of Natural Sciences, Phila.]

H. R. V.

BALDWIN, WILLIAM HENRY (Feb. 5, 1863–Jan. 3, 1905), railroad executive, was born in Boston, the son of William Henry Baldwin and Mary (Chaffee) Baldwin. The father had given up a successful business to devote himself to the Young Men's Christian Union of Boston, an affiliation which undoubtedly had much to do with his son's interest in social service. The latter received his preparatory training in the Roxbury Latin School, and was graduated from Harvard College with the class of 1885. While not unusual in scholastic achievement, his rank in his senior year was close to distinction, and he won exceptional recognition as a leader in undergraduate activities—as oarsman, editor of the college daily, president of the Dining Association, treasurer of the Coöperative Society, chairman of his class committee, leader of the Glee Club, and a member of five undergraduate clubs. Entering the service of the Union Pacific Railroad in February 1886, he spent a few months in routine training in the account-

ing and traffic departments in Omaha and was then appointed division freight agent at Butte, Mont. Here was first tested his exceptional ability to get along well with men of all types. In 1888 he returned to Omaha as assistant freight agent but in the following year was transferred to the operating department, first as superintendent of the Leavenworth Division and then as general manager of the Montana Union Railroad. His stay there was short as in 1890 he was promoted to the position of assistant vice-president at Omaha. A year later he left the Union Pacific to become general manager of the Pere Marquette Railroad in Saginaw, Mich., and soon was promoted, being placed virtually in charge of everything except finance, with the title of vice-president. In 1894 he was called to the Southern Railway as vice-president and during the greater part of his two years with that company was in charge of operation and traffic. His last position was as president of the Long Island Railroad from October 1896 until his death.

While engaged in the upbuilding of the Southern Railway system Baldwin became intensely interested in the negro question and then and later took an active part in organized movements to better the condition of colored people. He was a warm supporter of Booker T. Washington and Tuskeegee Institute, of which he was a trustee from 1897. His interest and constructive work in that problem and others of a similar nature, brought about close and sympathetic relations between him and President Roosevelt. Shortly after Baldwin became president of the Long Island he began to be active in advocating measures to combat the major social evils in New York City, notably prostitution, Raines-law hotels, and tenement houses. Largely through his personal efforts the Committee of Fifteen was organized in 1900, with Baldwin as chairman. To its work, he gave unstintingly of his time and strength. The report of the Committee, made after an intensive survey, did much to stimulate public interest and to bring about the passage of remedial laws. Baldwin at that time was in a peculiar position. On the one hand he was the executive head of a public service corporation then undertaking an extension into New York City, and, on the other hand, was the leading spirit of a committee combating an evil strongly intrenched politically. The activities of the committee were distasteful to Tammany Hall, which could seriously embarrass the railroad in its plans for extension. Fearing that his personal activities might injuriously affect the legitimate interests of the company, Baldwin tendered his resignation to President Cassatt of the Pennsylvania Railroad (which had secured control of the Long Island in 1901), but Cassatt refused to accept it. Baldwin was told to go ahead with his committee work and also keep his railroad position.

One criticism of Baldwin was that he was often too impulsive and sometimes too unyielding when compromise would have been wiser. An editorial writer in the *Railroad Gazette,* Jan. 6, 1905, refers to his dogged determination but adds: "He was a man of clear and powerful mind, of quick apprehension, of extraordinary rapidity of decision, and absolutely without fear. He would have been a great soldier." His death on Jan. 3, 1905, followed an illness of several months. He was survived by his wife, whom he had married in 1889, Ruth Standish Bowles, daughter of Samuel Bowles [*q.v.*], and by two children.

[John Graham Brooks, *An Am. Citizen—Life of Wm. Henry Baldwin, Jr.* (1910); editorial references in the files of the *Railroad Gazette; Lives of the Class of 1885,* and an article by a classmate, George R. Nutter, in the *Harvard Grad. Mag.,* March 1905.]

W. J. C.

BALESTIER, CHARLES WOLCOTT (Dec. 13, 1861–Dec. 6, 1891), publisher, author, was born in Rochester, N. Y., the eldest of the four children of Henry Wolcott and Anna (Smith) Balestier. His grandfather, Joseph Nerée Balestier, a journalist and lawyer in New York, who was the son of a French planter in Martinique, married Caroline Starr Wolcott, of Middletown, Conn., grand-daughter of Oliver Wolcott, signer of the Declaration of Independence. His maternal grandfather, Erasmus Peshine Smith, was an educator and international lawyer, and became in 1871 adviser to the Mikado of Japan, for whom he negotiated commercial treaties with the great powers. Balestier's father died when he was nine, and his boyhood was spent in his grandfather's home in Rochester. During Mr. Smith's absence in Japan, the family roved about, and Wolcott attended school in Baltimore, Washington, New York, and Denver, as well as in Brattleboro, Vt., the summer home of the older Balestiers. He was graduated from the Rochester Free Academy in 1880, and entered Cornell in 1881; as a freshman, he was president of his class, and a leader in college pranks. The following year was spent in the South and in Leadville, Colo.; Western life impressed him deeply, and furnished the material for his best literary work. He was in charge of the patent collection of the Astor Library, New York, during most of the year 1884.

When he was seventeen he had begun to send

little tales and essays to the *Atlantic Monthly.* In his academy days he served as reporter on the *Rochester Post-Express.* His first novel, *A Potent Philtre,* a story of Canadian life, appeared in the *New York Tribune* in 1884; his next ventures, the love story *A Fair Device,* and a campaign life of James G. Blaine, were published in the same year, by John W. Lovell. In 1886 appeared his story of Moravian life in Bethlehem, Pa., entitled *A Victorious Defeat.* He had early shown an interest in the drama, and had an amateur company of his own before entering college; in 1884 he dramatized the novel *Gwenn* for Maggie Mitchell, but the play was never produced. The connection with Lovell was to control the rest of Balestier's life. In 1885 he was engaged as editor of *Tid-Bits,* a weekly miscellany; in 1886 this was transformed into *Time,* an illustrated humorous paper, to which Balestier attracted many writers and artists of note. The Lovell business consisted largely in the issue of cheap unauthorized reprints of English books. International copyright was, however, in the air, and in 1888 Balestier was sent to England to secure original manuscripts for the firm. He was an ideal ambassador and soon enlisted the pens of the best writers of England. Arriving unknown, within a few months he had made his rooms in Dean's Yard, Westminster, a literary center unparalleled in the London of that day; he knew everybody. Before long he became managing director of Heinemann & Balestier, a partnership formed with William Heinemann, which launched the "English Library" for publishing English and American books on the continent, in rivalry with the ancient house of Tauchnitz. In 1889 Balestier was joined in London by his mother and sisters. He met Kipling soon after the latter's arrival in England, and shortly added his name to the Lovell list; his sister Caroline became Mrs. Kipling in 1892. In spite of engrossing business, Balestier never ceased to be a writer; his inclination was toward the photographic realism of Howells, his friend and ideal. He took to England the proof-sheets of *Benefits Forgot,* a Colorado novel, and polished away at them constantly; it was published serially in the *Century Magazine* after his death, and later (1894) in book form. He also wrote three short stories, "Captain, My Captain, My Captain!," "A Common Story," and "Reffey," collected in the volume called *The Average Woman* (1892). Association with Kipling was a new spur to his literary ambition, and the two collaborated in *The Naulahka* (1892), to which Balestier contributed the American chapters. After a summer in the Isle of Wight, when he showed alarming signs of overwork, he set out for a business trip to Germany; seized with typhoid, he died on Dec. 6, 1891, in a private hospital in Dresden, where he was buried.

Balestier was a man of slight frame, but of great intensity of mind and body. Edmund Gosse describes him as a carefully dressed young-old man, spare and stooping, with smooth dark hair and whimsically mobile mouth; his complexion was pallid, his dark blue eyes deep set. For sport, for money, he cared nothing; success in the literary business which he had undertaken was his one goal. His short and eager life was a promise rather than an achievement. Though his literary gift was unquestioned, it was as a friend and a business man that he made the deepest impression. His name will be kept alive by Kipling's dedicatory lines "To Wolcott Balestier," prefixed to *Barrack-Room Ballads,* in which he welcomes to his company of "gentlemen unafraid" his brother's spirit: "Sits he with those that praise our God for that they served His world."

[Articles by Edmund Gosse, *Cent. Mag.,* Apr. 1892, pp. 923 ff., and Henry James, *Cosmopolitan,* May 1892, pp. 43 ff. (with portrait); *Annals of Brattleboro, 1681–1895* (Brattleboro, 1922), II, 589 ff., 979 ff.; additional facts supplied by Beatty Balestier, Dummerston, Vt.; by John D. Adams, Memphis, N. Y., and by the N. Y. Pub. Lib. A poem, "Wolcott Balestier," by Richard E. Day, appears in his *Dante: A Sonnet Sequence* (New Haven, 1924).]

F. H. C.

BALL, ALBERT (May 7, 1835–Feb. 7, 1927), engineer, inventor, was born on his father's farm at Boylston, Mass., the youngest child of Manasseh Sawyer and Clarissa (Andrews) Ball. His education began at five years of age when he was sent to the district school and ended in his sixteenth year with one term in high school. He immediately began an apprenticeship in the machinist's trade in Worcester, Mass., serving his time with several organizations, the last being L. W. Pond, a machine-tool manufacturer. Here Ball had charge of making planers, and in 1863 devised his first invention, that of a combined repeating and single-loading rifle. He also perfected a polishing machine capable of polishing flat surfaces. His rifle patent was bought immediately by E. G. Lamson, a manufacturer of Windsor, Vt., who also prevailed upon Ball to go with him. Here he superintended the manufacture of his rifle and also devised and patented the first cartridge-greasing machine which afterward came into general use in American and European arsenals. Ball continued with Lamson until 1868, devoting the last two years privately to devising and patenting a diamond-drill chan-

neling-machine for quarrying stone, especially marble. Upon being reprimanded for this, Ball resigned and went to Claremont, N. H., where he interested James Upham in the manufacture of his new device. As soon as Ball prepared the working drawings, the manufacture was begun in Upham's machine works. The first machine was completed in August 1868, and when tried in the quarries of the Sutherland Falls Marble Company in September proved an immediate success. Five years later Upham and Ball with others organized the Sullivan Machine Company and Ball was made chief mechanical engineer, in which capacity he served for the succeeding fifty years, retiring in 1914. It was during this time that his full power as an inventor was attained, his genius being responsible for the development of many important improvements in mining and quarrying machinery. Among these inventions are diamond core-drills for mineral prospecting; direct-acting steel channeling-machines for quarrying; rock-drills; air-driven coal-picking machines; and continuous cutting-chain coal-mining machines. Ball's diamond core-drill, capable of boring a mile deep, brought him lasting fame, particularly as a result of its initial use in opening up the rich gold-fields of the South African Transvaal. In addition to his mining and quarrying machine inventions, Ball perfected a cloth-measuring machine; wood-pulp grinding machines; corn crackers and crushers; presses for making asphalt paving-blocks; and many other ingenious devices, totaling in the neighborhood of 135 patents. After his retirement he turned his attention to the interesting avocation of violin making and made many instruments of beautiful design and wonderful tone, and developed special machinery for executing unique wood patterns. Ball married Nancy Mary Shaw at Worcester, Mass., on May 7, 1857, to whom were born two sons, one of whom survived him at the time of his death at Claremont at the age of ninety-two.

[Sources of information are *Mine and Quarry*, July 1919; obituary in *Claremont Eagle*, Feb. 8, 1927; W. Kaempffert, *A Popular Hist. of Am. Invention* (1924), II; correspondence with family and with Sullivan Machinery Company.]

C. W. M.

BALL, EPHRAIM (Aug. 12, 1812–Jan. 1, 1872), manufacturer, inventor, was born into a large pioneer family of Lake Township, Stark County, Ohio, and grew up in an atmosphere of frugality to learn at an early age the self-dependence that marked his life. Unable to complete even the meager common education of his day, he was compelled to earn his own living when only fourteen. He chose the trade of carpentry and when in his early manhood he felt equal to the task of supporting a family, he married Lavina Babbs of Stark County. Unfortunately, he had overestimated the earning power of his trade and was forced to find something more remunerative. With his brothers he then engaged to manufacture a thresher. The result being unsatisfactory and the construction of a second equally unprofitable, it was decided to build a foundry for the manufacture of the necessary parts, the unsatisfactory purchase of which had caused the first failures. Ball then (1840) showed his versatility by acting in turn as architect, stone-mason, carpenter, painter, purchasing agent, and financier to the establishment which they built in Greentown, Ohio. Having seen molten iron once in his life, he was the logical choice for foundryman, so with patterns of his own construction he molded and cast the first products. After a year or two of indifferent success he designed his "Blue Plough," which sold so extensively that he was financially able to manufacture the "Hussey Reaper," and later a few threshers. In 1851 Ball's partners sold their interest to C. Aultman and David Fouser, and then George Cook and Lewis Miller were added to the firm which became E. Ball & Company. In the same year Jacob Miller became a partner, the firm name was changed to Ball, Aultman & Company, and the business was moved to Canton, where the manufacture of the "Hussey Reaper" was continued. A series of experiments and tests were made which finally resulted in the first "Ohio Mower." This machine, a two-wheeled mower with flexible finger-bar, was due equally to Ball, Aultman, and Lewis Miller, while the application for the patent revealed a prior machine of similar design by Jonathan Haines of Pekin, Ill. When Aultman and Miller invented and patented several improvements and incorporated them in the "Buckeye Machine," Ball sold his interest and patent rights to the others and in 1859 began the manufacture of the "Ohio Mower" from his own new plant. When this machine was outstripped by the "Buckeye," he began the manufacture of his "New American Harvester," of which he made as many as 10,000 in one year (1865). Later when the great combines were formed Ball stayed out, only to find that he could not compete with them, and finally, in his old age, he was defeated by his own patents which were now owned by others, and knew again the poverty to which he had been born. Ball's principal contribution to the development of agricultural machinery was the "Ohio" or "Ball" mower, described in his patent of Dec. 1, 1857. This was an excellent machine and the first of

the two-wheeled flexible or hinged bar mowers to gain a wide reputation as such. Its success and popularity contributed greatly to the change from the single driving-wheel machines to those with double drivers.

[John Danner, *Old Landmarks of Canton and Stark County, Ohio* (1904), p. 902; James L. Bishop, *Hist. of Am. Manufactures from 1608 to 1860* (3rd ed. 1868), pp. 543–44; Robt. L. Ardrey, *Am. Ag. Implements;* U. S. Pat. Recs.]

F.A.T.

BALL, THOMAS (June 3, 1819–Dec. 11, 1911), sculptor, was the son of Thomas Ball and Elizabeth Wyer Hall, who had met at a singing-school—a fact that might be taken as a forecast of the boy's propensities, for his musical ability, often later a means of existence and always a solace to him, declared itself much earlier than his artistic tendencies. His father was a house and sign painter in Charlestown, Mass., when Thomas was born, but the family soon after moved to a house in Leverett Court in Boston. After finishing primary school, Thomas was sent to the Mayhew School for five years. Retiring and shy, he found the school disagreeable and the severity of the masters terrifying. When his father died, he was withdrawn to aid in supporting the fairly numerous family. For many years the father had suffered from lead poisoning and had been able to work but little; so that Thomas's meager help was badly needed. He first worked in a grocery store at one dollar a week, then for a year as errand boy for a tailor. He next secured a place in the New England Museum, an institution somewhat resembling a side-show at a circus. Here he began to copy portraits and to play the violin and sing in the evening for the entertainment of visitors. After three years of such life he apprenticed himself to Abel Bowen, the wood-engraver, still working at the museum in the evenings to support himself. Before his year was up he decided to study painting and began by copying pictures and casts in the studio of the museum superintendent. A position in the choir of St. Paul's Church helped him to earn his expenses. A copy in oils of a print of Lord Byron was successful enough to bring him his first commission—portraits of a family of five, the parents life-size and the children in miniature. He now moved into a small studio of his own, where he executed miniatures at three dollars apiece. After moving into another studio he began painting life-size portraits. A picture of his mother won him a medal at the Exhibition of the Mechanics' Association. He soon moved his studio again, this time to Tremont Row, where he remained for twelve years. Here he painted a number of religious pictures such as the "Holy Family" and "Christ in the Temple." His portrait of Mrs. Richards, editor of the *Transcript,* now in the Boston Museum, also dates from this period. An unfortunate love affair turned him from painting temporarily, and as a diversion he modeled small heads in clay. These were his first attempts at sculpture, which henceforth became his life-work. A small bust of Jenny Lind done from photographs was popular, and he sold many plaster copies of it. Numerous commissions for small portrait-busts now began to pour in. His first life-size bust was of Webster, finished a few days before the statesman's death. He next did a statuette of him, which he sold for five hundred dollars. He had continued his singing and in 1848 sang the title rôle in *Elijah* at its first performance in this country. In one of the church choirs in which he sang he had met Mrs. Wild, in whose home he became a frequent guest, and whose daughter, Ellen Louisa, he married on Oct. 10, 1854. On the following day he and his bride sailed for Italy. They took an apartment and a studio in Florence, which was destined to be Ball's home for the greater part of his creative life. Many American artists were living there at that time, among whom Ball made several friends—Powers, Hart, T. B. Read, and Francis Alexander, whom he had known in Boston. Never having worked from the nude before, he here first began a statue of "Pandora," using a living model. Then came the "Shipwrecked Boy," rather realistic for the fifties. A statuette of Washington Allston and a bust of Napoleon I also date from this time. He likewise did the model for the bas-relief of the "Signing of the Declaration of Independence," copied from Trumbull's painting, for the pedestal of R. S. Greenough's statue of Franklin in front of the City Hall in Boston. This, with the companion piece, the "Signing of the Treaty of Peace in Paris," was his first public commission. The second of these reliefs was made a little later during a stay in Boston, where he occupied a studio on Summer St. Here he modeled also a statuette of Henry Clay and made a bust of Ephraim Peabody for King's Chapel, where it still remains. Other busts of this period were those of President Lord of Dartmouth, Rufus Choate, William H. Prescott, and Henry Ward Beecher.

This stay in Boston was to be marked by the creation of Ball's greatest work, the equestrian statue of Washington in the Public Garden. Some years previously the city had decided to erect a statue of Washington and had designated Crawford as the sculptor, but Crawford had died in 1857. Ball, feeling sure, however, that the project would some time be carried out, modeled a

half life-size statue that was so much liked by his brother artists that they attempted, and successfully, to have him commissioned to enlarge it. Funds were raised, in large part by a fair held in the Music Hall, and Ball set to work. A large studio had been constructed for him on the grounds of Chickering & Sons' factory on Tremont St. Here, for more than three years, he labored on the colossal model. He worked alone, for, though he had finally consented to take as a pupil Martin Milmore, who later made the Soldiers' Monument on Boston Common, he would allow no one but himself to put a hand to the statue. He made the model in plaster, for the temperature of the studio often dropped below the freezing point, which would have ruined a work in clay. In 1864 the model was completed. As the foundries were entirely engaged at that time in turning out arms, the plaster statue was cut into sections and stored. It was finally cast in 1869 by the Ames Manufacturing Company at Chicopee and was erected the same year on a pedestal of Quincy granite designed by Hammat Billings, the architect. It has the dignity and restraint, tempered with a certain amount of realism rather advanced for the period, that mark Ball's best work.

The year after the completion of the model, Ball, with his wife and seven-year-old daughter, returned to Florence after having spent nine years in Boston. On his arrival he took an apartment in the Casa Guidi, where for many years the Brownings had resided. He almost immediately set to work on a small model of Lincoln and a kneeling slave, which he called "Emancipation." The group was suggested by the news of Lincoln's assassination, which Ball received in Munich shortly before reaching Italy. For the figure of the slave he himself posed in front of a mirror at the same time that he continued modeling. About this time he began the model of Edwin Forrest in the rôle of Coriolanus for which he had received an order while in America. The model was finished in 1867, the same year that he began "Eve Stepping into Life." Shortly before this he made his first visit to Rome, where he had long desired to go. Here he met Liszt, who promised to sit for his portrait when he went to Florence, but Ball on his return started to make a bust from memory. With the aid of photographs it was finished and put into marble by the time Liszt finally arrived. From this period also dates a small head, "La Petite Pensée," which became very popular. With a considerable number of other works it forms a group contrasting with his monumental works—a group instinct with Victorian sweetness and tenderness. Florence had now become Ball's permanent home, and at Powers's suggestion he bought land adjoining the latter's at Poggio Imperiale and started building a villa. While waiting for it to be completed he made a trip to Boston in 1868, hoping to be present at the unveiling of his "Washington," but that event occurred after his return to Florence. On this visit he entered a competition for the statue of Gov. John A. Andrew and was awarded the commission. On his return to Florence and after his installation in his villa, he began putting this statue into marble. Like most sculptors of his day, he left that process largely to assistants, so that he was soon free to begin the model for the Chickering monument, which represents the Angel of Death lifting a veil from the eyes of Faith. When completed (1872) it was erected in Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge. To the same period belong others of his sentimental group, "Christmas Morning," "St. Valentine's Day," "Love's Memories." Perhaps the best of his imaginative works is the "St. John the Evangelist" (1875), which he made for Aaron D. Williams of Boston, but which now serves as the Oliver Ditson monument in Forest Hills Cemetery. This same year the Lincoln group, modeled ten years before, was erected in Washington, and two years later a replica was given to Boston.

In 1876 Ball visited the Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia, afterward going to Boston, where he received the commission for a statue of Sumner. He also entered the competition for the Washington Monument to be erected in Philadelphia, but the commission was awarded to Siemering, a German sculptor. This same year Ball's colossal statue of Webster, an enlargement of the statuette of many years before, was unveiled in Central Park, New York. A week before this event he returned to Florence, where he received the order for a statue of Josiah Quincy for Boston. This award was made through the influence of the Quincy family, who preferred his model to Story's. The Sumner statue was sent to Barbedienne in Paris to be cast, but the Quincy was sent to Müller of Munich, whom Ball usually employed to cast his bronze figures. The former statue was erected in 1878 in the Public Garden and the latter a year later in front of the City Hall. Ball during these years had had as a pupil Daniel Chester French and later a young Virginian, William Couper. The latter married Ball's daughter Eliza in 1879. After a visit to America in this same year Ball modeled another of his idealized subjects, a group of Christ and a child, which he enlarged the next year. Another of his numerous visits to America was made in 1883, when he modeled busts of Marshall Jewell and

P. T. Barnum. In 1885 he received a commission for another Webster statue, this time for Concord, N. H. It was set up near the State House the following year. He next modeled a David, which was later put into marble, and a colossal statue of Barnum, which was cast in bronze and erected in Bridgeport after Barnum's death in 1891. It had received a first class medal at the Munich International Exhibition in 1888. During another visit to America in 1889 Ball received from E. F. Searles a commission for his statue of Washington begun in the Philadelphia competition. The statue was finished in 1893 and, after being exhibited at the Columbian Exposition, was put up on the Searles estate at Methuen, Mass. The figure of Washington is dignified and majestic, and the four figures around the pedestal are creditable if not inspired work. In 1891 had appeared Ball's autobiography, *My Threescore Years and Ten,* which well shows his gentle and affable nature, his modesty and uprightness. The same could be read in his mild countenance framed in a wealth of hair and beard. In 1897 he finally returned to America, taking up his residence at Montclair, N. J., with his daughter and son-in-law. In his old age he turned again to painting and in 1907 finished a picture of "Mary and Martha," begun some half-century earlier. His death, hastened by injuries received in a fall, occurred after he had passed his ninety-second birthday.

[W. O. Partridge, *New Eng. Mag.,* May 1895; obituary in *Montclair Times,* Dec. 16, 1911; *Who's Who in America,* 1910–11. The main source, however, is Ball's autobiography.]

E.G.N.

BALLARD, BLAND WILLIAMS (Oct. 16, 1759–Sept. 5, 1853), pioneer, Indian fighter, was born near Fredericksburg, Va., the son of Bland and ——(Williams) Ballard, and grandson of the Bland Ballard who died in Spottsylvania County, Va., in 1791. The birthyear given above (instead of 1761, the year generally accepted) is authenticated by a manuscript (8 J, 150) in the Draper collection at Madison, Wis. Early in 1779 young Ballard and his father went to Boonesborough, Ky. One or both of them took part in Col. Bowman's unsuccessful campaign against the Indians at Chillicothe. They returned to Virginia in the fall, but in the following spring young Ballard was again in Kentucky, and it is probable that his father and the rest of the family arrived at the same time. The son's early life was one of toil and hardship and an eager quest for danger. At a time, says his eulogist, Col. Humphrey Marshall, when most Kentuckians were primarily concerned in getting land, young Ballard had devoted himself to the cause of protecting the settlements from Indians. In 1781 he was with Gen. George Rogers Clark in the indecisive attack on the Pickaway towns in Ohio, where he was wounded. In the same year, in the disastrous battle on Long Run (in the present county of Jefferson), Ky., he escaped by killing an Indian and fleeing on his victim's horse. On the following day he was one of a party that renewed the fight and was again a survivor of a defeat. In 1782 he was once more with Clark in an attack on the Pickaway towns, which this time was successful. It was probably in the following winter that he married Elizabeth Williamson, a woman of great courage and the survivor of an Indian massacre at Lynn Station in September 1781, in which her father and one of her brothers were killed. In 1786 he served as a spy with Clark in the expedition against the Indians on the Wabash.

The Ballards with others settled near the present Shelbyville in 1787, and here on Mar. 31 of the following year they were attacked by Indians. The father, stepmother and several children were killed, but Ballard by a heroic defense, in which he was effectively aided by his wife, succeeded in withdrawing the survivors. The next five years seem to have been uneventful, but in 1793 he joined Gen. Wayne, taking part in the campaign which virtually ended with the victory at Fallen Timbers, Aug. 20, 1794. From 1795 until 1811 Ballard lived on his Shelby County farm, during this time serving five terms in the Kentucky legislature. He fought at Tippecanoe, and in the following year, on the declaration of war against England, he organized and was made captain of a company in Col. John Allen's regiment, subsequently attaining the rank of major. In the defeat at Raisin River (Jan. 22, 1813) he was twice wounded and made a prisoner, but escaped the Indian massacre that followed. On his release he returned to his farm. His first wife died Jan. 12, 1827. He then married Diana Matthews, who died Aug. 17, 1835; on Oct. 28, 1841, he married Mrs. Elizabeth Garrett, who survived him. He died at his home, leaving many descendants in Shelby and Henry counties.

Ballard had little education. He was a man of action, and he possessed to an exceptional degree the qualities needful on the frontier—alertness, courage, fortitude, and patient endurance. The regard in which he and his first wife were held by their fellow citizens is attested by the act of the Kentucky legislature in the winter of 1853–54 in providing for the reinterment of their remains in the State Cemetery at Frankfort. On Nov. 8, 1854, the bodies were reburied with imposing ceremonies.

[Eulogy by Col. Humphrey Marshall in the collection, *Obituary Addresses*, etc. (Frankfort, Ky., 1855); MS. notes compiled by R. C. Ballard Thruston, of Louisville, from many scattered references to Ballard.]

W. J. G.

BALLINGER, RICHARD ACHILLES (July 9, 1858–June 6, 1922), lawyer, secretary of the interior, and center of the insurgent fight for the maintenance of the "Roosevelt Policies," was born at Boonesboro, Ia. He came of American stock, his father, Richard H. Ballinger of Kentucky, having read law in the office of Abraham Lincoln and commanded a regiment of colored infantry in the Civil War; and his forebears having served in both the War of 1812 and the American Revolution. His mother was Mary E. Norton of New York. He was graduated at Williams College in 1884, then went into a law office, and was admitted to the bar in 1886. The legal career of Ballinger took him to the Northwest at the moment when the new State of Washington (admitted in 1890) was in process of formation. Living first at Port Townsend, he soon became identified with Seattle. He was superior judge in Jefferson County in 1894, and reform mayor of Seattle in 1904–06. He became an expert in mining law, wrote *A Treatise on the Property Rights of Husband and Wife under the Community or Ganancial System* (1895), codified the statutes of his young state, and carried on a practise which brought him into close contact with every aspect of land law respecting the public domain. In March 1907 he was appointed commissioner of the General Land Office by Garfield, who at the same time became secretary of the interior in the cabinet of President Roosevelt. Ballinger served at this post for only a year, returning in 1908 to his law business; whence he was summoned by President Taft to become secretary of the interior in 1909. There had been many hopes and much talk of continuing J. R. Garfield at this post, since it was here that the battle for conservation was to be fought. The interests of the United States in the lands, minerals, timber, and water-rights still remaining on the public domain, were at stake; and President Roosevelt had launched his program of conservation in 1908, depending at every point upon the advice of Garfield in the Interior Department and Gifford Pinchot, chief of the Bureau of Forestry in the Department of Agriculture. They had interpreted every obscure point of law in the interest of the new policy. The task, difficult at best, was made heavier by the unscientific organization of the government, whereby the Land Office was in one department and the Forestry Service in another; while the Bureau of Mines was not even formed until 1910. It was further complicated because of real doubts as to the legal authority of the United States, in the absence of proper conservation laws.

The failure of President Taft to retain Garfield was irritating to many enthusiastic friends of conservation, who took sides readily when Louis R. Glavis, a field man of the Land Office, complained over the head of his chief to the President, that Secretary Ballinger was impeding the examinations which were likely to show that a group of coal-land claims in Alaska, filed by one Clarence Cunningham and his associates, were fraudulent. The protest of Glavis was dated a week after President Taft had approved the Payne-Aldrich Tariff, incurring thereby the criticism of the insurgent element in the Republican party. It followed also a conference which Glavis had held with Pinchot at a western conservation meeting. On Sept. 13, 1909, President Taft authorized Secretary Ballinger to dismiss Glavis from the service, on the ground of insubordination; and then and later he upheld the character and disinterestedness of Ballinger's service. Glavis, meanwhile, received the encouragement of many conservationists and insurgents, and retorted with "The Whitewashing of Ballinger," in *Collier's Weekly* (Nov. 13, 1909), a crusading journal which had already declared editorially "Ballinger should go" (Aug. 28, 1909). With this beginning the controversy became a public trial of the conservation policies of the Taft administration.

The fight was carried into Congress at its next session, where a joint committee was appointed to investigate the departments under fire. This committee, presided over by Senator Knute Nelson of Minnesota, took much testimony in the spring of 1900, with Glavis represented by Louis D. Brandeis, and Pinchot by George Wharton Pepper. It was charged by the complainants, among other things, that Ballinger was out of sympathy with conservation, and that he interpreted the law in the interest of the claimant wherever possible; it was even charged by the less restrained of the conservationists that he was corruptly guilty of having served the Cunningham claimants in the interval between his terms as commissioner of the General Land Office and as secretary of the interior, and that he would have advanced and allowed the Cunningham claims had it not been for the patriotic intervention of Glavis. The majority of the committee, in its final *Report* (vol. I, p. 90), declared that "Neither any fact proved nor all the facts put together exhibit Mr. Ballinger as being any-

thing but a competent and honorable gentleman, honestly and faithfully performing the duties of his office with a single eye to the public interest." The decision of the committee was unsatisfactory to the critics, who were now set upon preventing the renomination of President Taft in 1912. The controversy continued, bringing the policies of the administration under general attack. The usefulness of Ballinger in the cabinet was destroyed by the clash of opinion, and he resigned in March 1911, being succeeded by Walter L. Fisher, of Chicago.

He returned to his law business in Seattle, where he died June 6, 1922. He was married in 1886 to Julia A. Bradley and was survived by two sons.

[There is no extended sketch of his life, but all the evil that was alleged against him may be traced through *Collier's Weekly*, the *Outlook*, and the newspapers. The Glavis documents are in *Sen. Doc. 248*, 61 Cong., 3 Sess.; while the Nelson Committee testimony and report comprise thirteen volumes, *Sen. Rep. 719*, 61 Cong., 3 Sess.] F. L. P—n.

BALLOU, ADIN (Apr. 23, 1803–Aug. 5, 1890), Universalist clergyman, reformer, founder of the Hopedale Community, was descended in the sixth generation from Maturin Ballou, American pioneer of an Anglo-Norman family, who shared with Roger Williams in the proprietorship of Providence Plantations in 1646. He was born at Cumberland, R. I., the son of Ariel and Edilda (Tower) Ballou. Seventh of eight children, the boy received an elementary education in Cumberland and near-by schools and a farmer boy's training in hard work. The first excited an irrepressible eagerness for knowledge, the second developed personal responsibility, faithfulness, and self-reliance. Ariel Ballou disapproved his son's earnest desire to enter Brown University, and at seventeen the boy's schooling ceased; but he remained a life-long student. His religious nature asserted itself when he was twelve, and he joined a church of the "Christian Connection" in Cumberland; when eighteen, following what he believed a supernatural call to the ministry, he announced at a religious service his intention to preach at the village church the following Sunday; this he did so acceptably that it led to similar efforts elsewhere, and to his acceptance into fellowship in September 1821. Soon afterward he published an attack on certain Universalist tenets, but further study brought about a change of views and his expulsion from the Christian Church. The Universalists received him gladly, and during 1823 he preached successively in Mendon, Bellingham, Medway, and Boston. In 1824 he was over the Universalist society in Milford, in 1827 over the Prince St. association in New York, and in 1828 back in Milford again. This was a period when the Universalists, although agreed on the central tenet of universal salvation, were much divided on the question whether there is no further punishment or punishment of a limited duration. Ballou, believing strongly that the interests of morality were imperiled by the denial of all future punishment—in this opposing his more celebrated kinsman, Hosea Ballou, editor of the *Universalist Magazine*—and feeling that his coreligionists tended to neglect the practical moral problems of this life, decided to withdraw from the denomination. In 1831 he joined with seven other clergymen to form the "Massachusetts Association of Universal Restorationists," whose doctrines he expounded in the *Independent Messenger* (1831–39). The organization never recruited more than thirty-one ministers and was dissolved in 1841, but Ballou's writings exercised considerable influence on both Universalist and Unitarian thought.

Meanwhile he began to seek a practical outlet for his increasingly radical social views. The outstanding evils of his age, he had come to believe, were war, slavery, and intemperance. The Hopedale Community was his definite protest. This was the first of the Utopian enterprises, such as Brook Farm, Fruitlands, and the Oneida Community, that marked the decade 1840–50. Independently of other movements, Ballou and thirty-one others banded themselves, January 1841, in a joint-stock organization whose object was "to establish an order of human society based on the sublime ideas of the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man, as taught and illustrated in the Gospel of Jesus Christ" (*Hopedale Community*, p. 1). The members bound themselves to abstain from murder, hatred, unchastity, use of liquor as a beverage, and all participation in military or civic activities, including the vote. Each pledged himself "through divine assistance, to promote the holiness and happiness of all mankind."

Hopedale Community, so called from its founders' sanguine expectations, began with a capital of $4,000; 250 acres in the town of Milford were purchased (afterward increased to about 600). Despite some untoward circumstances, the Community prospered for a number of years. All sorts of "queer" persons flocked into it; many withdrew when they found their will could not be law; a few were expelled. With Ballou as president the saner minds held the organization within bounds. Farm work, road-making, building, and various industrial enterprises were carried on. *The Practical Christian*, edited by Ballou, was printed. Reli-

gious services were held regularly in the community chapel. A school and a considerable library were established.

In 1852 Ebenezer D. Draper became the second Community president, Ballou desiring to devote himself to the organization of a "Practical Christian Republic" with constituent communities, and to elucidating his principles in *Practical Christian Socialism* (1854). In 1856 Hopedale's membership had reached 110 and the Community joint-stock property $40,000; but discovery that liabilities exceeded resources caused Ebenezer and George Draper, owning three-fourths of the Community stock, to withdraw this from the enterprise. They invested it instead in the Hopedale Manufacturing Company, attained wealth, and gradually transformed the town from a community of idealists into a modern manfacturing center. The Community lingered on as a moral association until 1868, when it was merged with the Hopedale Parish (Unitarian), of which Ballou remained pastor until 1880. Ballou believed the basic cause of Hopedale Community's failure to be moral rather than financial—a lack of whole-souled consecration. The germ of failure lay also in its material ambitions. Individual capacity for industry, after being encouraged, shrank from subjection to community supervision. During the Civil War Ballou maintained his courageous stand of non-resistance. He spent his later years in pastoral and voluminous literary labors; a powerful and persuasive speaker, his writings, though vigorous, were heavy.

Ballou married, 1822, Abigail Sayles of Smithfield, R. I., who died at Milford, 1829; in 1830 he married Lucy Hunt of Milford. His daughter Abigail and her husband, W. S. Heywood, were active in Hopedale Community affairs, as was also his promising son, Adin Augustus, until his untimely death at the age of nineteen. Physically, Ballou is reported to have been a man of commanding bodily presence, with large, well-balanced head and radiant face. A statue of him was erected at Hopedale in 1900. Too independent to be a follower, by his aggressive personality, boldness of thought, and confidence in his own mission, he was destined to be a leader of separatist movements.

The more important of his works are: *Memoir of Adin Augustus Ballou* (1853); *Practical Christian Socialism* (1854); *Primitive Christianity and its Corruptions* (1870); *History of the Town of Milford* (1882); *An Elaborate History and Genealogy of the Ballous in America* (1888); *Autobiography* (1896) and *History of the Hopedale Community* (1897), both edited by his son-in-law, W. S. Heywood.

[G. L. Cary, "Adin Ballou and the Hopedale Community," *New World*, Dec. 1898; L. G. Wilson, "Hopedale and Its Founder," *New Eng. Mag.*, Apr. 1891; obituaries in the *Milford* (Mass.) *Jour.* Aug. 5, 1890, and in the *Boston Jour.* and *Boston Herald*, Aug. 6, 1890; *In Memoriam, Rev. Adin Ballou*, a sermon by C. A. Staples, Aug. 24, 1890 (Boston, 1890); Ballou's correspondence with Tolstoi, *Arena*, Dec. 1890.]

R. S. B.

BALLOU, HOSEA (Apr. 30, 1771–June 7, 1852), Universalist clergyman, belonged to the fourth generation of descendants from Maturin Ballou, probably of Anglo-Norman origin, who came from England to Rhode Island in 1638. The father of Hosea was another Maturin Ballou who had been a Baptist preacher in Rhode Island, but, objecting to a paid ministry, had lived by teaching school and making spinning-wheels. In 1767 he acquired a farm and founded a church in Richmond, N. H., a neighborhood lately settled by Baptists. Hosea, the eleventh child, when two years old lost his mother, Lydia Harris Ballou, of Rhode Island Quaker family. Reared in frontier poverty intensified by the Revolutionary War, a barefoot boy, even in winter snows, he became a tall and powerful man, erect and shapely, of friendly engaging countenance with luminous eyes; and though, far from any school, he learned to write on birch bark with a charred stick and for books had only a Bible and an almanac, he became an accomplished reasoner, master of a diction which was simple, lucid, fluent, impressive, with a singular gift for coining illustrations and parables. Destined to emancipate the Universalist movement from its Calvinistic origins, and to give it a positive theological principle, his views were formed largely in independence of other men or books.

Home instruction made him early familiar with Calvinistic doctrine, and at the age of eighteen, in a season of religious awakening, he joined his father's church (January 1789). Certain neighbors and a distant kinsman, converts to the view of universal salvation as taught by Caleb Rich, a farmer-preacher of Warwick, brought the youth to the necessity of choosing between universal salvation or partiality in the divine favor. This drove him to close study of the Bible and the discovery of texts that implied universal and impartial grace. In the summer of 1789, working on a farm in Hartford, N. Y., he had a discussion with the local Baptist minister which confirmed his tendency to Universalist reading of Scripture. For the next two years he worked on the farm of his older brother David, who had now begun preaching the new doctrine, and in this period also he had some formal education in a meager private school opened in Richmond,

N. H., and one term in an academy in Chesterfield, N. H. By virtue of sleepless toil, this procured for him a certificate of competency as a school-teacher. In 1791 he was excommunicated, solely on doctrinal grounds, from the Baptist Church, and came in contact for the first time with John Murray [*q.v.*] at the New England General Convention of Universalists in Oxford, Mass. (September), and made his first crude and halting efforts to preach. The reading of some deistical writings made him aware of difficulties in orthodox tradition and his wholly independent examination of Scripture led him now to reject the doctrines of the Trinity, total depravity, and the Atonement.

Rapidly developing effectiveness in public speech, he supported himself by a roving teaching career in short-session schools in more than a dozen towns and villages of Rhode Island and Massachusetts, preaching constantly in schoolhouses, homes or barns, and creating new circles of adherents to Universalist doctrine. His great success inspired Elhanan Winchester, when presiding over the New England Convention of Universalists at Oxford, Mass., in September 1794, to summon the young evangelist to the pulpit for an unsolicited ordination. Laying the pulpit Bible to his bosom, he said, "Brother Ballou, I press to your heart the written Jehovah." Married to Ruth Washburn of Williamsburg, Sept. 11, 1796, Ballou established a home in Dana, Mass., as the center of extensive circuit preaching (1796–1803). His itinerant discourses urged that neither Scripture nor reason could support the doctrines of the Trinity, Christ's full deity, human depravity, or eternal punishment. Acting as a substitute for John Murray in the First Universalist Church in Boston (autumn 1797) Ballou's divergence from Murray's views on the first three of the above points created some disturbance, although certain sympathizers invited him to form a second church in Boston. This was declined from an unwillingness to weaken Murray's society. Another six-year period of circuit riding, 1803–09, had for its center Barnard, Vt., with missionary journeys in 1806 and 1807 extending to western New York where Ballou founded a Western Association of Universalists. The famous Universalist confession of faith adopted at Winchester, N. H., in 1803, was of such breadth and simplicity that Ballou's preaching was exempt from dispute. He speedily became an influential author by his *Notes on the Parables* (1804), and by his *Treatise on the Atonement* (1805), which became normative thought for the whole Universalist movement. As a facile writer of verse, without poetic eminence, he contributed 198 hymns to a *Hymn Book* (1808).

In 1809 he began a settled pastorate in Portsmouth, N. H., a period marked by pamphlet controversy with many opponents, the formation of a Ministerial Association in Gloucester, January 1811, and the founding (1811) of the *Gospel Visitant,* the first Universalist periodical, a quarterly serving as organ of the Association. A vigorous sermon (Aug. 20, 1812) justifying the war with Great Britain, led to withdrawals from his church, Portsmouth being intensely Federalist, and he was obliged to add occupation with a private school with his grandnephew, Hosea Ballou, second [*q.v.*], as assistant. In the summer of 1815 he accepted a call to Salem, where again he was involved in pamphlet controversy. But his period of greatest eminence was in Boston in 1818–52. The Calvinist preaching of Murray came to an end in 1815, and his successor, Paul Dean, had modified Murray's doctrine; in the other societies in Massachusetts, Ballou's thought was regnant; hence he now felt justified in accepting the call to a new second church built on School St. Here he preached three times every Sunday without manuscript to crowded audiences, the schism of Unitarian and orthodox Congregationalism having intensified social interest in doctrinal discussion. Ballou was also in constant service at dedications of churches, ordinations, and installations in a rapidly growing denomination, and, in the absence of a theological school, he acted as a teacher of ministerial students. He was studious in repairing the deficiences of his culture by wide reading of history and gained a practical knowledge of Latin, Greek, and Hebrew. He edited a weekly publication, the *Universalist Magazine,* 1819–28, and from July 1830 a more learned bi-monthly, the *Universalist Expositor,* which later under Hosea Ballou, second, became the *Universalist Quarterly.* In these publications he made profuse exposition of Universalist argument. In the winter of 1821–22 he made a protracted visit to Philadelphia where some of his discourses stenographically reported were published as *Eleven Sermons* (1822). Other sermons preached in Philadelphia in November 1834 appeared as *Nine Sermons* (1835). Other book publications were *Select Sermons* (1832), a series of *Lecture Sermons* (1832), and *Examination of the Doctrine of a Future Retribution* (1834).

Ballou's work of most lasting interest is his early *Treatise on the Atonement.* Like all his productions it is controversial in form but calm, dignified, and fair, and it lifts the Universalist idea to the height of positive affirmation, being

the first effort to develop a theology from the sole premise of God's universal, impartial, everlasting love. The logic of this determined his interpretation of Bible passages, hence much of his exegesis has been rendered obsolete by modern historical criticism, but nevertheless his exposition of many texts remains unaffected. Its terse style, effortless simplicity, argumentative wit, and concrete illustrations gave the book great influence. Reason and Scripture led Ballou to believe that the life after death would so spiritualize man that the experiences of that life could not be viewed as penal retribution. "If any suffered in the future state, it would be because they would be sinful *in that state.*" His final conclusion that the Bible taught no punishment in the future world only became definite through the discussions with Edward Turner in the revised *Gospel Visitant,* 1817.

Ballou was tolerant of divergent views and, desiring union with freedom, refrained from pressing his opinions during the Restorationist Controversy. His elevated character, his noble dignity and patience under attack, his unfailing benevolence and sympathy won for him a reverent devotion. Greatly honored and active to the end, he died June 7, 1852. A statue marks his grave in Mount Auburn Cemetery.

[The chief source on Ballou's early development is an autobiographical fragment contributed to Thomas Whittemore's *Modern Hist. of Universalism* (1830); leading accounts are Maturin Murray Ballou, *Biog. of Hosea Ballou by His Youngest Son* (1853); Thomas Whittemore, *Life of Hosea Ballou,* 4 vols. (1854–55); O. F. Safford, *Hosea Ballou, A Marvelous Life Story* (1889). Estimates are found in J. C. Adams, *Hosea Ballou and the Gospel Renaissance of the Nineteenth Cent.* (1903), which has a print of the splendid portrait painted in 1847; "Hosea Ballou and the Larger Hope," in *Pioneers of Religious Liberty in America* (1903); *The Universalists; The Religious Hist. of New Eng.,* King's Chapel Lectures (1917). Criticism in F. H. Foster, *Hist. of the New Eng. Theology,* ch. XI (1907). Bibliography in Richard Eddy, *Universalism in America,* 2 vols. (1884–86).] F. A. C.

BALLOU, HOSEA (Oct. 18, 1796–May 27, 1861), Universalist clergyman, author, college president, was born in Guilford, Vt. His parents Asahel Ballou, nephew of Hosea Ballou [*q.v.*] and Martha (Starr) Ballou, were early converts to Universalist doctrine. He received his early education in Halifax, Vt., where in 1799 his father settled as a farmer and maker of spinning-wheels and chairs. Notwithstanding marked ability in the district school and under private instruction in Latin from a clergyman in Halifax, he was kept from a college course by the parents' fear of proselyting influences and after three winters of district school-teaching, became assistant at the age of seventeen in the school conducted by his granduncle in Portsmouth, N. H. Having there obtained some theological training, he became a pastor in Stafford, Conn., in 1817, with much itinerant preaching throughout the state. Having married Clarissa Hatch of Halifax, Jan. 26, 1820, he accepted a larger pastorate in the New Universalist Church of Roxbury, Mass., being installed July 26, 1821. Meager salary made it necessary to add the conduct of a private school for boys, a vocation to which he brought genuine scholarship independently acquired. After seventeen years, believing that the church needed another type of ministration, he moved to a pastorate in Medford, Mass., May 1838, where as in Roxbury he was prominent in fostering the public schools. During these pastorates he supervised the theological study of ministerial candidates, attempting a course equal to the full theological curriculum. The most eminent of his pupils were Thomas Starr King, Edwin Hubbell Chapin, Amory Dwight Mayo. He aided in editing the *Universalist Magazine* (1822), the more scholarly *Universalist Expositor* (1830–40), and the *Universalist Quarterly and General Review* (1844–56), contributing to the last two periodicals 121 historical and exegetical articles. In 1829 he published a pioneer American monograph in the field of the history of doctrine, having acquired for the task German, French, and Greek in addition to his command of Latin and Hebrew. This was the *Ancient History of Universalism,* a work which strengthened the confidence of his denomination and ran to four editions. In recognition of his service to scholarship, he was elected to the Board of Overseers of Harvard College, 1843–58. In 1854 he was made a member of the Massachusetts Board of Education.

To his denomination he rendered signal service by efforts to preserve unity in the controversy over future punishment. Although himself believing in retribution beyond death, he resisted the efforts of Rev. Jacob Woods and others to bind the denomination to this view. From the outset also he was urgent for denominational seats of learning and his zeal was rewarded by the incorporation of Tufts College, 1852, over which, after six months' travel in Europe, he was president, 1854–61, combining with that office instruction in history and philosophy. His joy in nature and in friendship and the cheerful humor expressed in his lighter verses are illustrated in the work by Hosea Starr Ballou, *Hosea Ballou, 2nd, D.D., His Origin, Life and Letters* (1896).

[See also Adin Ballou, *An Elaborate Hist. and Geneal. of the Ballous in America* (1888), pp. 293, 755–58;

Hist. of Tufts College, ed. by Alaric B. Start et al. (1896), pp. 15–37; *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* July 1861.] F.A.C.

BALLOU, MATURIN MURRAY (Apr. 14, 1820–Mar. 27, 1895), journalist, traveler, author, was the son of Ruth (Washburn) Ballou and Rev. Hosea Ballou [*q.v.*] a distinguished leader among the Universalists; his grandfather was a Baptist clergyman, and four uncles were preachers. He was born in Boston, the youngest son in a family of nine children; was educated at the English High School; and always sought his native city at the end of his many and far travels. At the age of nineteen he became a clerk in the Boston Post Office, and at about the same time began writing for a minor paper known as the *Olive Branch,* continuing to be an inveterate scribbler in the midst of his many other occupations and diversions. He was married on Sept. 15, 1839 to Mary Anne Roberts. Cruises on sea and journeys on land, during which he wrote letters home for publication descriptive of countries and people, much of this periodical material being later embodied in his books, were followed by employment as deputy navy-agent in the Boston Custom House. His chief distinction in American journalism lies in his founding and editorship of *Gleason's Pictorial,* later called *Ballou's Pictorial,* one of the earliest of American illustrated papers. He was the first editor and manager of the *Boston Daily Globe,* from 1872 to 1874, and during his work in journalism he was actively engaged in numerous business and financial enterprises, the most notable of these being the building of the St. James Hotel in the south end of Boston, which is now, under the designation of the Franklin Square House, one of the largest institutions in the country providing comfortable quarters for working women and girls. In 1882 he circumnavigated the globe, and he took many other tours until his death, which occurred in Cairo, Egypt. The many plays he wrote remain unacted, but one or two of them were published. Under the pseudonym "Lieut. Murray" he produced several romances, whose titles are sufficiently indicative of their character: *Red Rupert, the American Buccaneer* (1845); *The Naval Officer; or The Pirate's Cave* (1845); *The Spanish Musketeer* (1847). His books of travel include *Due West; or Round the World in Ten Months* (1884); *Due South; or Cuba Past and Present* (1885); *Under the Southern Cross; or Travels in Australia, Tasmania, New Zealand, Samoa and Other Pacific Islands* (1888). He wrote also *The Biography of Rev. Hosea Ballou* (1852), and *The History of Cuba* (1854). A reviewer in the *Nation* rightly said of him: "Mr. Ballou can tell a fairly interesting story of personal observations and experiences, but he is not a writer to pin one's faith to in matters of solid information." In other words, his literary work was distinctly journalistic and ephemeral. He was a maker of books rather than a literary man, a writer who looked at everything objectively, a traveler who set down his observations first, and his lasting impressions, if he had any, afterward.

[*Boston Globe,* Mar. 29, 1895; O. F. Adams, *Dict. of Am. Authors* (1897), p. 16; Adin Ballou, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Ballous in America* (1888), pp. 131, 332–33; S. A. Allibone, *Critical Dict. of Eng. Lit.* (1859), I, 109.] E.F.E.

BALTIMORE, CHARLES CALVERT, Third Lord. [See Calvert, Charles, 1629–1715.]

BALTIMORE, GEORGE CALVERT, First Lord. [See Calvert, George, *c.* 1580–1632.]

BANCROFT, AARON (Nov. 10, 1755–Aug. 19, 1839), clergyman, author, embodied the finest traits of New England Puritanism and was the leader of central Massachusetts churches in the movement through Arminianism to Unitarianism. The son of Lydia (Parker) Bancroft and Samuel Bancroft, a farmer and church deacon in Reading, Mass., who was one of the minority protesting against the dismissal of Jonathan Edwards in the Northampton Council in 1750, he had youthful 'throes' of revolt against the Calvinist theology in which the household was systematically disciplined. During his residence in Harvard College (1774–78) he marched with the Minute Men of Reading to Cambridge after Bunker Hill (*Ancestry of John Davis and Eliza Bancroft,* compiled by Horace Davis, San Francisco, 1897). After his graduation he read theology with the Reading pastor, Thomas Haven, and was licensed to preach. Early in 1780, with permission from the Massachusetts authorities and urged by John Barnard, a Loyalist exile, he sought a career in Nova Scotia where his oldest brother was a prominent jurist. There, however, he found the New England colonists too divided to form permanent churches, and the intolerance and extravagance of itinerant preachers confirmed his leanings to Arminian positions. Returning in July 1783, he spent the autumn as substitute for the invalid pastor of the church in Worcester, and there also a year later, having meantime declined a call to Stoughton and being rejected at East Windsor, Conn., because of his Arminian heresies, he preached as a candidate for the now vacant pulpit (October

1784–January 1785). A majority being firm Calvinists, the town, March 1785, refused to settle Bancroft, or to appoint two ministers of divergent views, or to support two societies. The minority, still subject for some years to taxation for the town church, established a voluntary society which had the unpopularity of being, apart from Boston, the first "poll" parish instead of a territorial organization, the first secession from a Congregational Church on doctrinal grounds, and the first church which in its formulas expressly condemned written creeds and accepted only the Bible as the sufficient rule of faith and practise.

Ordained, Feb. 1, 1788, as an avowed Arminian, Bancroft was shunned by church neighbors and only by taking pupils and boarders could eke out a meager support, but gradually his high character, ability, and public spirit won him a widespread esteem which was heightened by his *Life of Washington* (1807), a popular work often reprinted. His parish, having at first only one professed Unitarian member, followed Bancroft's guidance after the outbreak of the Unitarian controversy in 1815, and in 1822 published his *Sermons on Christian Doctrine,* a systematic formulation which had several editions in England and America. Bancroft contributed discussions to the *Christian Register,* and in 1825, aged seventy, overcame a disinclination to church division and joined the younger liberals in organizing the American Unitarian Association which he served as president with executive talent to 1836. By his marriage with Lucretia, daughter of Judge John and Mary (Church) Chandler he had thirteen children, prominent among whom were the historian George Bancroft [*q.v.*] and Mary, wife of John Davis, governor of Massachusetts. His sermons show an unusual grasp of the history of Christianity, and their formulation of doctrine is the best illustration of the thought of his time and circle, a circle not yet affected by the newer tendencies emergent in Channing. Holding the common view that Scripture must be consistent, he accepted the Arian implications of Pauline and Johannine texts as dominant over the humanitarian view of Christ which he considered a possible inference from the earlier gospels.

[Biog. data are found in Bancroft's published sermons for Apr. 8, 1827 and Jan. 31, 1836. The account in Wm. Lincoln, *Hist. of Worcester* (1836), rests also on Bancroft's oral statements, and Jos. Allen, *Hist. of the Worcester Ass.* (1868), adds quotations from Bancroft's private papers. See also Alonzo Hill in *Am. Unitarian Biog.,* ed. by Wm. Ware (1850); and Elam Smalley, *The Worcester Pulpit, with Notices Biog. and Hist.* (1851). An interesting characterization by Geo. Bancroft is added in W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit* (1857), and Samuel A. Eliot's revision of Sprague in *Heralds of the Liberal Faith,* vol. II (1910). Bancroft's publications are listed in Lincoln, Allen, and Eliot. See also Geo. Willis Cooke, *Unitarianism in America* (1902). Manuscript sermons are in the Am. Antiquarian Society, Worcester, and in the N. Y. Pub. Lib.]

F. A. C.

BANCROFT, CECIL FRANKLIN PATCH

(Nov. 25, 1839–Oct. 4, 1901), educator, was born in New Ipswich, N. H., the eldest son of James Bancroft and Sarah (Kendall) Bancroft. In securing an education he was helped by Mr. and Mrs. Patch of the neighboring town of Ashby, where he attended the common schools, later completing his college preparation at Appleton Academy, in New Ipswich. At sixteen he entered Dartmouth College, teaching at Groton during the winter in order to support himself through the remainder of the year. He graduated in 1860, the fourth scholar in his class. During the next four years he was principal of Appleton Academy (later McCullom Institute) at Mont Vernon, N. H. In 1864, however, he resigned in order to study for the ministry at Union Theological Seminary, in New York. His course there was interrupted by some months spent with the Christian Commission, assisting wounded soldiers, after which he transferred in 1865 to Andover Theological Seminary, where he graduated in 1867. During his free hours he taught Latin at Phillips Academy thus becoming favorably known to the trustees of that institution. At this time he was recommended to take charge of a school for Southern whites recently established by C. G. Robert, at Lookout Mountain, Tenn. He was ordained on May 1, 1867, was married a week later to Frances A. Kittredge, one of his former pupils at Mont Vernon, and set out immediately with his bride for the South. In spite of his efforts, the new institution met with difficulties and failed after five stormy years. While Bancroft was resuming his studies in the University of Halle, Germany, he received a cable message offering him the principalship of Phillips Academy. He accepted and reached Andover in July 1873. There he remained until his death.

Bancroft found Phillips Academy at a critical moment in its history, when its future was at stake. Its endowment was inadequate; its reputation in scholarship was declining; its students were decreasing in number; and it had fallen out of touch with modern theories of education. During the twenty-eight years of his administration Bancroft transformed the school both materially and scholastically. After surveying the situation, he seized upon the centennial of the academy in 1878 as an opportunity for arousing the interest of the alumni and the general public; and under his supervision an elaborate celebration was held

on Andover Hill. He persuaded generous benefactors to form the nucleus of what later became a large permanent fund. Before he died, he had added several modern dormitories, a science building, a gymnasium, and other important improvements to the equipment. One of the dormitories has appropriately been named Bancroft Hall, in his honor.

As Bancroft's reputation grew, the academy became more prosperous. When he took office, there were only 237 students; a quarter of a century later there were more than 400. It is estimated that over 9,600 boys were educated under him at Andover. Meanwhile the faculty was enlarged from four to twenty-two. He had remarkable success in securing and retaining able teachers, who added to the prestige of the school. He liberalized the curriculum without lowering the standard of instruction. He replaced the traditional three-year course by one covering four years; he established a system of written examinations; he discarded many useless subjects; and he eventually accomplished his chief object—"to bring the Academy into perfect harmony and working coöperation with the various colleges and scientific schools and hold it there." His period was marked also by the beginning of organized athletics, the formation of secret societies, the spread of alumni associations, the development of school literary publications, and a somewhat greater individual freedom for the undergraduates.

Bancroft—known familiarly as the "Doctor" —was a broad-minded, versatile, tireless, and patient leader. A shrewd judge of men and motives, he seldom erred in choosing his assistants or in making decisions. His keen and contagious sense of humor was always in evidence. As an executive, he had a rare gift for bringing out the best in others. As a speaker on educational matters he was nationally recognized, and he also threw himself whole-heartedly into all the activities of community life, wearing himself out ultimately with hard work. In personal appearance, he was, in his later days, a man of medium height and slender figure, with kind eyes, gray hair and beard, and native dignity of bearing.

[Claude M. Fuess, *An Old New Eng. School* (1917); the *Phillips Bull.*, the quart. publication of Phillips Acad.; information supplied by many teachers and grads. of Phillips Acad.; obituary in *Boston Transcript*, Oct. 5, 1901.]

C. M. F.

BANCROFT, EDGAR ADDISON (Nov. 20, 1857–July 28, 1925), lawyer, orator, diplomat, was born in Galesburg, Ill., of Scotch-Irish-English stock. His ancestors on both sides came to America during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries and several of them fought in the Revolution. Edgar was the eldest of the seven children of Addison Newton and Catharine (Blair) Bancroft. He was educated in the public schools of Galesburg, in Knox College, from which he graduated in 1878, and in Columbia University Law School, from which he graduated in 1880. He practised law in Galesburg until 1892, when he moved to Chicago, where he was solicitor for Illinois of the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fe R. R., 1892–95; vice-president and general solicitor of the Chicago & Western Indiana R. R., and the Belt R. W. Company, 1895–1904, and member of the law firm of Scott, Bancroft, Martin & MacLeish from 1904 to 1924. From 1907 to 1920 he was general counsel to the International Harvester Company, which, with its affiliated companies, he represented in numerous suits in the Federal and state courts. Bancroft early displayed oratorical talent and he made many addresses, patriotic, historical, legal, and memorial. During and after the World War he was often chairman of committees and the orator of the occasion, from the time of Chicago's welcome to Joffre and Viviani, in May 1917 to that of Foch's post-war visit in the autumn of 1921. A volume of his war-time speeches was printed privately in 1927 by his brother under the title of *The Mission of America*, the first speech of the collection. In a memorial pamphlet the America-Japan Society (Imperial Hotel, Tokio) in 1926 published five of his later speeches and addresses in Japan.

A serious race riot began in Chicago on July 27, 1919, and continued for several days. Twenty negroes and fifteen white people were killed and over 500 persons injured before the state militia, assisted by the police, could restore order. On Aug. 20, 1919, Gov. Lowden appointed a Commission on Race Relations, consisting of six representatives of white people, including Bancroft as chairman, and six representatives of the negroes. On Jan. 1, 1921, the Commission submitted an exhaustive report to the Governor, who expressed his appreciation of their services (*The Negro in Chicago; a Study of Race Relations and a Race Riot*, 1922).

In April 1923 the Comité France-Amérique of Paris, an institution organized "to further bonds of sympathy between France and the Nations of America," invited a group of Americans, consisting of Edgar A. Bancroft, George W. Wickersham, former attorney-general of the United States, Prof. William Milligan Sloane of Columbia University, and Samuel Harden Church of the Carnegie Institute of Technology, each with wife or daughter, to visit the French provinces of Morocco and Algiers. The trip occupied six

weeks and was the subject of several publications (*Spring in Morocco and Algiers,* by G. W. Wickersham, 1923, and *Greater France in Africa,* by W. M. Sloane, 1924).

In July 1924 Bancroft was summoned to Washington by Secretary of State Charles E. Hughes, and to his surprise was asked to accept the post of Ambassador to Japan. He did so from a sense of duty and with full appreciation of the risk to his health, which for many years had been precarious. Although he arrived in Japan only a few months after the passage of the Exclusion Act, when that nation felt deeply hurt, his pleasing manners, gentle diplomacy, and large experience in friendly relations with persons in all walks of life, soon won him great popularity. His ready eloquence and sympathetic feelings were quickly appreciated and gave him much influence in helping to restore international good-feeling. Eight months of incessant activity were too much for his frail health. He died at Karuizawa, Japan, July 28, 1925. The official honors paid at the funeral service in Japan were only less than those reserved for the Imperial family, and Bancroft's body was transported in a Japanese battle-ship to San Francisco. He was married in April 1896 to Margaret Healy of Brooklyn, N. Y., who died in December 1923. They had no children.

Bancroft was the author of *The Chicago Strike of 1894* (1895); *The Moral Sentiment of the People* (1896); *Destruction or Regulation of Trusts* (1907).

[Juiji G. Kasai, *Foundations of American-Japanese Friendship and a Tribute to Ambassador Edgar Addison Bancroft* (Tokio, 1925); obituaries in *Chicago Daily News,* July 28, 1925, *Chicago Daily Tribune* and *Chicago Herald and Examiner,* July 29, 1925.]

C. H. B.

BANCROFT, EDWARD (Jan. 9, 1744–Sept. 8, 1821), writer and inventor, better known for his double dealing and dishonorable career in the Revolution, was born at Westfield, Mass. Without regular schooling he became in later years well-educated, and studied medicine in England. He had an adventurous early life; a sailor, and then a settler in Dutch Guiana, where he made valuable observations on the manners, customs, and religion of the natives, afterward published. Settling in England he became a writer on American subjects for the *Monthly Review,* published several works, associated with such men as Franklin and Priestley, and in due time was elected to the Royal Society and to the College of Physicians.

His sinister diplomatic career began at the outset of the Revolution. A natural intriguer, he acted as a spy for Franklin in London. When Silas Deane arrived in France as an American commissioner, he received from Franklin a letter of introduction to Bancroft, and the two men were soon on confidential terms. Bancroft commenced furnishing various items of information to Deane in 1776, aided the commissioners in their correspondence, received pay from the government through Deane, and continued to be a trusted agent down to 1783. Franklin and Deane were never undeceived, although the commissioner Arthur Lee and his brother William at times suspected Bancroft. Letters for Deane were even sent in Bancroft's care. He gained the confidence of Paul Jones, and was highly commended in Deane's personal *Narrative* to Congress. To add to the plausibility of his position, he was arrested in 1777 by the English for corresponding with Deane.

Meanwhile Bancroft was pursuing his parallel career as an English spy. In December 1776 he contracted to supply information; for this he received £400—increased later to £1000—per annum. He assumed the name Edwards, and one of his methods was the placing of correspondence in a bottle concealed in the hole of a tree near the Tuileries. He revealed the dealings of Deane with the French Foreign Minister Vergennes; to the British agent Wentworth he sent abstracts of treaties. Nor was he above speculation, though he sometimes suffered losses. He speculated on advance news of Burgoyne's defeat, and on Jan. 27, 1778, he wrote, giving early information of the treaty between France and the United States, with a plan for private gain. His handwriting was identified in the latter instance, as was the case in a letter which he wrote to Ralph Izard, American diplomatist, Oct. 22, 1778. He was commended by the English officials, although at times under suspicion. In his "Memorial" to the Marquis of Carmarthen he claimed credit for furnishing items about supplies, intercourse, and the movements of ships, instancing the sailing of D'Estaing's fleet.

Bancroft made discoveries of dyes for use in the manufacture of textiles, and he received a patent in England for importing yellow oak-bark for dyeing. This right failed of renewal in 1799, in spite of a pamphlet which he addressed to Parliament. He died at Margate, England. He wrote, besides various articles, *Essay on the Natural History of Guiana* (1769); *Remarks on the Review of the Controversy between Great Britain and Her Colonies* (1769); *Charles Wentworth* (1770), a novel assailing Christianity; *Experimental Researches concerning the Philosophy of Permanent Colours* (1794, enlarged edition

1813). Most of his works are in the British Museum.

["The Deane Papers" in *N. Y. Hist. Soc. Colls.* (1886–90); Samuel F. Bemis in *Am. Hist. Rev.*, XXIX, 474, containing at the end Bancroft's "Memorial."]

E.K.A.

BANCROFT, GEORGE (Oct. 3, 1800–Jan. 17, 1891), historian, diplomat, was born in Worcester, Mass., the eighth of thirteen children. His father, Aaron Bancroft [*q.v.*], a Congregational minister, held a pioneer's place in the Unitarian schism of the Massachusetts clergy, became the first president of the American Unitarian Association, and wrote a life of Washington which enjoyed much popularity. In Worcester he was remembered as the last inhabitant to wear small clothes and a three-cornered hat. He came of early New England stock, and so did his wife, Lucretia Chandler, descended from Capt. Benjamin Church [*q.v.*], soldier and historian of King Philip's War, from the Gardiners of Gardiner's Island, opposite New London, and from a succession of John Chandlers in Worcester County, of whom her father, "Tory John," known in England as "the honest refugee," was the third to hold the title of judge. Strangely unlettered, this mother of thirteen possessed great vigor of mind and spirit. Her husband's constant petition at family prayers, "Give us a teachable temper," may be taken to suggest the blended influences to which a boy of the household was subject.

Through George Bancroft's years of school, college, and university he proved himself teachable to a rare degree. After some schooling at Worcester he went at eleven to Phillips Exeter Academy, Exeter, N. H., where in two years he prepared himself to enter Harvard College at the age of thirteen. He had already exhibited the spirit and capacity that marked him, in the class of 1817, as one upon whom the amplest educational opportunities would not be wasted. In college he won the favor, especially, of President Kirkland, Prof. Andrews Norton, and Edward Everett, tutor in Latin during his freshman year. On his graduation, with high but not the first standing, he remained at Cambridge for a year as a student of divinity. At the end of that year, in June 1818, he sailed for Europe, to pursue at Göttingen his studies of theology and philology, his support ensured from scholarship funds of the College and other sources responsive to Kirkland's call. The nickname of "Doctor" bestowed upon him by his fellow students at Exeter and Harvard was to be ratified by the degree of Doctor of Philosophy and Master of Arts, which he received from the University of Göttingen in September 1820.

Bancroft

Bancroft was thus one of the small company of pathfinders in American scholarship who sought in German universities the fulfilment of their formal education. George Ticknor, Joseph Green Cogswell, and Edward Everett had immediately preceded him, and had made so favorable an impression on the scholars they encountered that Bancroft found a cordial welcome awaiting him. Small of stature, with a slenderness retained through life, quickly expressive both in eye and in speech, he carried with him an appeal of youthfulness, enthusiasm, and ability which led to personal relations of a warmth extending beyond the first greetings. His longest single period of study in Europe was at Göttingen, where he remained for more than two years, applying himself chiefly to Oriental languages and biblical learning, and profiting particularly from his contacts with Eichhorn and Heeren, whose teaching in ethnography had its effect upon Bancroft's historical writing in later years. From Göttingen he proceeded to Berlin, and there for several months attended the university courses of Schleiermacher, Hegel, and others. At his departure, in February 1821, he bore with him a letter of introduction from Baron Karl Wilhelm von Humboldt to his brother Alexander in Paris. On the way thither, Bancroft, at Weimar, paid two visits to Goethe, whom he had previously met at Jena, spent several weeks of study at Heidelberg, and added a traveler's impressions of Leipzig and Frankfort to the knowledge of other places in Germany which he had acquired on holiday walking trips from Göttingen. In Paris the letter to Humboldt opened many doors. The great scholar and traveler took the American of twenty-one to a session of the Institut de France, where he listened to Cuvier and others. For about three months in Paris he profited from all his opportunities to meet such figures as Lafayette, Gallatin, then United States minister to France, and Washington Irving. After a flying visit to London, in August 1821, he went on his way, through Switzerland, to Italy, where he visited more than once Napoleon's sister, the Princess Pauline Borghese, at Rome, and at Leghorn enjoyed a meeting and talk with Lord Byron and the Countess Guiccioli. Not only from the arduous studies which he pursued in Germany, but through a social experience quite beyond the natural scope of a Worcester minister's son, with his achievement still ahead, Bancroft turned his four years of Europe to remarkable account.

His letters to friends and family at home record alike his thoughts and the outward happenings of this time. From Göttingen he wrote to Kirkland, "The plan of life, which I have adopted,

indicates very clearly that I must become, either an instructor at the University, or a clergyman, or set up a high school" (*Life and Letters,* I, 54). It is significant that he attempted each one of these employments before entering upon politics and the writing of history. In Switzerland and in Italy the ministry was evidently uppermost in his mind (*Ibid.,* I, 122, 136). But soon after his return to America in August 1822, the offer of a tutorship in Greek at Harvard for the ensuing academic year led his feet into the paths of teaching, which he was to follow for nearly ten years.

It was not a satisfying period for him. During the year of his Harvard tutorship he accepted invitations to occupy pulpits in and about Boston. The elder clergy would apparently have been glad to see him justify the reputed promise of his powers. At Worcester he seems to have failed to satisfy either his father or the congregation (*Ibid.,* I, 164 *n.*). If one may judge from the fact that his attempts at preaching lasted only a year, he did not satisfy himself. Nor was his tutorship at Harvard a more rewarding experience. Owing so much as he did to President Kirkland and the Harvard Corporation for his years in Europe, he felt that he must make the requital of at least a year's teaching at Cambridge. But before the year was over he was writing to a friend, "I have found College a sickening and wearisome place. . . . My state has been nothing but trouble, trouble, trouble, and I am heartily glad that the end of the year is coming so soon" (*Ibid.,* I, 163). This feeling must have been shared by the authorities and the students, for the foreign manners and views, educational and social, which Bancroft brought home with him from Europe, served only to produce irritation in Cambridge, and even to estrange some of his best friends. As early as December of 1822 he had decided to undertake school rather than college teaching, and was discussing with J. G. Cogswell the plan which took form in their famous Round Hill School at Northampton.

Bancroft's first published book, a thin volume of *Poems,* appeared in 1823, between his quitting Harvard and establishing himself at Round Hill. It must be included, with his preaching and college teaching, in the list of his early failures, for it lacked any distinctive poetic quality, and is believed to have become, in its author's eyes, one of those youthful indiscretions which may best be forgotten. The Round Hill experiment was a more serious matter, involving eight years of effort, and ending, like Bancroft's previous attempts to find his niche, in failure. The project in which he and Cogswell hopefully united their powers was to establish a boys' school embodying methods of teaching and living which had impressed them in Germany and Switzerland. In theory and on paper, as in the quality of the boys whose parents were attracted by the announcements of the school, it was all that one could wish. In reality the shortcomings and disappointments were many—partly, no doubt, because the institution was too far in advance of its time, and partly by reason of Bancroft's limitations as a teacher. The boys called him "the Critter," and the school paper printed a caricature of him in the semblance of a black devil, horned and tailed (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* XLVII, p. 222). In 1831, having sold his interest in the school the year before to Cogswell, he brought his teaching to an end—again with a sense of relief. "That was a kind of occupation," he wrote in a letter of 1832, "to which I was not peculiarly adapted, and in which many of inferior abilities and attainments could have succeeded as well" (*Life and Letters,* I, 201).

But the years at Northampton marked, besides the ending of Bancroft's failures, the beginnings of his successes. Of his two fortunate marriages, the first—to Sarah H. Dwight, daughter of Jonathan Dwight, of Springfield, Mass.—occurred Mar. 1, 1827. At about the same time he was taking his first steps in politics and in prose authorship. Both in his politics and his writing—and the two were closely related—he revealed early the qualities which characterized him through life. Passing over some translations of German text-books of Greek, Latin, and history, which Bancroft wished to make available for his and other schools, it should be noted that a Fourth-of-July oration delivered in Springfield in 1826 is the first considerable piece of prose in his long list of writings. Uttered on the day of Jefferson's death, it was animated with the spirit of his political principles as well as with those of the fiftieth anniversary of July 4, 1776. It was the deliverance of a convinced democrat, and so set the note for much of Bancroft's subsequent writing.

Through the later twenties and the early thirties Bancroft's writing, which was abundant, appeared chiefly in periodicals, and largely in the *North American Review,* under several editors. He was at once a valuable and an uncomfortable contributor. His learning enabled him to deal effectively with many new books calling for review. His political views were so positive that when he wrote for the *North American* in 1831 an exhaustive article on the United States Bank, it had an importance which justified the reprinting of it in pamphlet form. It had also an ending, in the magazine, which the editor supplied without the author's knowledge. Bancroft had a valid

grievance here, but in other instances (*Smith College Studies in History,* Jan. 1917: "Correspondence of George Bancroft and Jared Sparks, 1823–32") his insistence on his rights as a contributor excites sympathy even for an over-zealous editor. The scope of his articles—financial, political, scholarly—was, however, so broad as to mark their writer as destined to count for something in the intellectual life of his time.

Continuing to live at Northampton after quitting the Round Hill School, he began there the preparation of his *History of the United States,* of which the first of the ten volumes was published in 1834. The second, with a second edition of the first, came in 1837; the third, and last before an intermission of twelve years, in 1840. These three volumes were concerned with the "History of the Colonization of the United States." They were written in a vein which characterized Bancroft's work as a whole, though in diminishing degree as the years went on—the vein of the democrat in politics expressing himself as the democrat in theory. Dr. J. F. Jameson, who finds Bancroft's first volume "redolent of the ideas of the new Jacksonian democracy," has written aptly, "the historian caught, and with sincere and enthusiastic conviction repeated to the American people the things which they were saying and thinking concerning themselves." The warm reception accorded to the book was by no means only from the less thoughtful. An enthusiastic review in the *North American* by Edward Everett was notable not so much as the utterance of a friend of many years as because it came from one whose political views were quite at variance with Bancroft's. In a letter to the author he wrote, "I think you have written a Work which will last while the memory of America lasts" (*Life and Letters,* I, 206). Carlyle, more cautious, wrote after the appearance of the second volume in terms of high praise thus qualified, "I should say . . . that you were too didactic, went too much into the origin of things generally known, into the praise of things only partially praisable, only slightly important" (*Ibid.,* I, 226). It remained for Bancroft's brother-in-law, "Honest John" Davis, to make a plea —when the first volume appeared—which Bancroft, for his final standing, would have done well to heed, "Let me entreat you not to let the partisan creep into the work. Do not imbue it with any present feeling or sentiment of the moment which may give impulse to your mind" (*Ibid.,* I, 211). The three volumes of 1834, 1837, and 1840, open as they were to the charge of setting the key for the continuance of Bancroft's writing—in Dr. Jameson's phrase—"to vote for Jackson," possessed nevertheless a vigor, picturesqueness, and authority, as it was then counted, that gave their author a foremost place, both in popularity and in distinction, among the American writers of his time.

It is evident that one in such a position could be of great use to the Democratic party in Massachusetts at a time when the leaders with a background and training like Bancroft's were chiefly Whigs. His pen and his voice, a less effective implement, were placed freely at the disposal of his party—even to the extent of his writing a Thanksgiving proclamation, in 1837, for Gov. William L. Marcy of the neighboring state of New York. The Whig affiliations of the family to which his first wife belonged restrained him for a time from seeking, or holding, public office as a Democrat. Before her death in June 1837, however, he had run unsuccessfully, in 1834, for election as a representative of Northampton in the Massachusetts General Court. At the end of 1837, Bancroft, a widower with three children, was appointed by President Van Buren, in recognition of party services, Collector of the Port of Boston. In August 1838 Mrs. Elizabeth (Davis) Bliss of Boston, a widow with two sons, became his second wife. Her first husband, Alexander Bliss, had been a junior law-partner of Daniel Webster. Except for the social ostracism to which Massachusetts Democrats of the time were subject, Bancroft's life in Boston, covering seven years, had its agreeable aspects—a good house in Winthrop Place, a growing reputation as a writer, the successful administration of his Federal office, and an effective activity in Democratic politics. As a delegate from Massachusetts he attended the National Democratic Convention of 1844, and bore an important part in the nomination of James K. Polk for the presidency. In the same year he was himself defeated in his campaign for the governorship of Massachusetts.

Again his party services deserved recognition, and it came through his appointment as secretary of the navy in Polk's cabinet. Holding this post only for eighteen months from March 1845, he made his secretaryship memorable, especially by meeting a long-recognized national need, through the establishment of the Naval Academy at Annapolis. He interested himself to good purpose also in the work of the Naval Observatory. In other affairs of the Polk administration he was a faithful supporter of his chief, approving strongly of the President's position in the Oregon Boundary controversy with England, signing, as acting secretary of war in May 1845, the order causing Gen. Zachary Taylor to cross the Texas frontier with his troops, and leading directly to

the Mexican War, and, in his own field of the navy, issuing the orders to Commodore Sloat on the Pacific coast which brought about the American occupation of San Francisco and other California towns. Bancroft's identification with an enterprise so unpopular in New England as the Mexican War, and such circumstances as his appearance as the official eulogist of Andrew Jackson soon after his death in June 1845, contributed to the disfavor in which he was held in the dominant circles of Massachusetts—the same circles which looked askance at a later appointee to a cabinet portfolio as one having "merely a national reputation."

Bancroft's national reputation was enhanced in September 1846 by his appointment as United States minister to Great Britain. From the time of Polk's election he would have preferred a foreign post to a seat in the cabinet, for he was bent upon the continuance of his "History," and knew that he could do more, both in research and in writing, as a representative of his country in Europe than as a member of the President's official family at home. While studying in Germany, a young man of twenty, Bancroft had written of himself as "all too American in his ways of thinking." His studies through the intervening years and his experiences in Europe from October 1846 to September 1849, when the work of his English mission came to an end, only confirmed his intense Americanism. In March of 1848, the year of European upheavals, he could write from London, "The world is growing weary of that most costly of all luxuries, hereditary kings," and a fortnight later, "I can only say for myself that my residence in Europe has but quickened and confirmed my love for the rule of the people" (*Ibid.*, II, 31–33). Yet the British liking for the most American of American representatives prevailed in the case of Bancroft, and facilitated the attainment of his diplomatic objects, which were concerned especially with postal and commercial arrangements. He was no less fortunate in his social relations and his historical pursuits. At successive opportunities he went from London to Paris, chiefly in search of the materials of history in the government archives. In England both private and public records were placed at his disposal for transcription. Both there and in France, besides forming personal relations with the holders of the highest political offices, he was much in the society of such historians as Macaulay, Milman, and Hallam in the one country, and Guizot and Thiers in the other. From his three years at the Court of St. James's he returned to the United States enriched for the second time by a rare experience of Europe.

For such a citizen of the world as Bancroft had now become, New York seemed the most appropriate dwelling-place in America, and there he established himself promptly on his return. At about the same time he acquired a summer place at Newport, R. I., which he retained till the end of his life. Here he kept his body and spirit young by the cultivation of roses and by riding. Both in Newport and in New York he took much pleasure, and a distinctive part, in society—a practise which, like his riding, he maintained throughout his days. For eighteen years, from 1849 to 1867, he devoted himself primarily to his "History," and brought out six volumes beyond the three produced before his appointment to London. They were Volume IV (1852), *The American Revolution, Epoch First, The Overthrow of the European Colonial System, 1748–1763;* Volume V (1852), *The American Revolution, Epoch Second, How Great Britain Estranged America, 1763–1774;* Volume VI (1854), *The Crisis*—completing "the history of the American Revolution considered in its causes"; Volume VII (1858) and Volume VIII (1860), *The American Revolution, Epoch Third, America Declares Itself Independent, 1774–1776;* Volume IX (1866), *The American Revolution, Epoch Fourth, The Independence of America Is Acknowledged 1776–1782.* Except that in the seventh volume (1858) Bancroft omitted all footnotes—as if to say that none need question the authority of any statement in his text—these volumes were closely akin, in tone and quality, to those that had preceded them. As a footnote in the second volume, disparaging the accuracy of James Grahame's *History of the Rise and Progress of the United States,* had led to a controversy with President Quincy of Harvard, so the ninth volume, touching frankly on what Bancroft regarded as the shortcomings of several general officers in the Continental Army, involved the historian in what became known as the "War of the Grandfathers"—a conflict of pamphlets between their descendants and the historian. There were valid grounds of objection to some of the statements made by Bancroft. There was some corresponding excess of zeal on the part of the grandsons. If Bancroft gave offense it is clear that certain readers were quick to take it. Orestes A. Brownson [*q.v.*]—for whom, as for Hawthorne, Bancroft, while Collector of the Port in Boston, had found a place in the Custom House—brought a long review of Volume IV to an end with the words, "He would persuade us to condemn our Catholic ancestors and seduce us from allegiance to our Church. We trust no Catholics will suffer themselves to be caught by his insidious flattery" (*Brownson's*

Quarterly Review, October 1852). A New York critic, Gen. John Watts de Peyster declared, "Had Bancroft been born, and reared, and taught in cosmopolitan New York [instead of New England] . . . he would have left a memorial of word-painting such as that of Raphael upon canvas" (*Our Representatives Abroad,* 1874, edited by Augustus C. Rogers, p. 28). Bancroft indeed was so positively himself that differences between him and other positive persons could hardly fail to be violent.

As the Civil War approached, Bancroft took his stand among the Northern Democrats who were opposed to slavery and any dissolution of the Union. Like many Northern Republicans he looked upon Lincoln at first as quite inadequate to the tasks confronting him, but earlier than some of these he realized his misapprehension, and made amends for it by supporting Lincoln and his policies with pen and voice. In the cordial personal relations that came to exist between the two men the President even turned to the historian for counsel on a matter of historical precedent. Lincoln's successor, Andrew Johnson, sought his aid in a more vital matter. Forty years after Johnson delivered his first annual message as President in December 1865, Prof. W. A. Dunning of Columbia made and published the discovery that this message was written by Bancroft (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* XXXIX, 395). On Feb. 12, 1866, it fell to Bancroft, the Democrat both of practise and of theory, to deliver in the House of Representatives his *Memorial Address on the Life and Character of Abraham Lincoln,* even as twenty-one years before he had made the official eulogy of Andrew Jackson. When Andrew Johnson in May 1867 offered him the post of United States minister to Berlin, it was an act more of personal than of party recognition. Bancroft accepted, and Grant continued him in office until 1874.

These seven years of Bancroft's life, during which his social, political, and intellectual gifts could enjoy abundant expression, were among the happiest of his entire career. His early association with Germany and German scholars gave him a sense of a home-coming, and he was received like a returning son or brother. In his diplomatic work he had the satisfactions of accomplishment in important questions of naturalization, trade-marks, and arbitration on the boundary line between British Columbia and the State of Washington. In his historical studies he caused the Prussian and other European archives to be searched for material of which he made use in his tenth volume, published in 1874, the year of his return to the United States. His political and scholastic interests were closely involved in his social relations. With Bismarck and Moltke, with Mommsen and Ranke—to name but four out of many important figures of the time and place—he found himself on terms of such sympathetic intimacy that during the Franco-Prussian War it was natural for the French to regard him as hostile to their interests (see the lines "Bancroft" in the section "Novembre" of Victor Hugo's *L'Année Terrible*). It was a happy circumstance that his German years included the fiftieth anniversary of his receiving his doctorate at Göttingen, for this event was celebrated by an imposing *jubilæum,* which included the bestowal of the honorary degree of LL.D.—a fitting sequel to the academic honors received while he was minister to England, namely, his election as correspondent of the Institute of France and the honorary degree of D.C.L. from Oxford. In Berlin an honor from which he derived a special pleasure was his election, typifying his identification with the intellectual life of Berlin, as the seventeenth, and only Anglo-Saxon, member of the *Mittwochs-Gesellschaft für Wissenschaftliche Unterhaltung,* a society of sixteen German savants of the highest standing. During his seven years of residence at Berlin he made excursions to Eastern Europe, Greece, and Egypt. Returning to America, and to private life, at the age of seventy-four, he brought with him again ripe fruits of European experience.

Still more a cosmopolite than on his return from England in 1849, Bancroft in 1874 settled in Washington, which became his winter home for the seventeen remaining years of his life. Both there and in Newport he relished greatly the pleasures of society. In voting his admission to the floor of the Senate that body gave but one of many tokens of the unique place he held in the eyes of his contemporaries. With his roses in the summer and his riding throughout the year he kept himself in vigorous condition. Especially through his riding, the small, alert figure, easily identified in Bancroft's later life by the long gray beard he wore, became familiar to many outside his immediate circle. The work he accomplished through these final years called for uncommon activity of both mind and body.

The tenth and final volume of his "History," published in 1874, was designated *The American Revolution, Volume IV.* The main title of the first volume, published forty years before, was *A History of the United States from the Discovery of the American Continent to the Present Time.* In the nine succeeding volumes the words "to the Present Time" were dropped. As the tenth volume dealt with the years 1778–

82, and ended with the peace between the United States and Great Britain, the title of the work in its entirety, even as it stood in the nine volumes following the first, was open to question. When Bancroft, at seventy-four, published his tenth volume, he did not regard his work as finished. In 1876 he brought out, in six volumes, a "thoroughly revised edition" called, on its half-title, the "Centenary Edition." In 1882 he produced, in two volumes, his *History of the Formation of the Constitution of the United States,* and in 1883–85 "The Author's Last Revision" of his "History" as a whole, devoting the sixth and last volume to his *History of the Formation of the Constitution.* In these revisions he sought to correct the mistakes of earlier editions, to profit by newly acquired information, and to reduce the floridity of much of his earlier writing. The complete bibliography of his books and pamphlets (*Life and Letters,* II, 331–41) records the translation of his "History" into several languages, the separate publication of many addresses and controversial papers, and two books which should be named here, *Literary and Historical Miscellanies* (1855) and *Martin Van Buren to the End of His Public Career* (1889).

The extraordinary vitality which enabled Bancroft to perform the labors he accomplished during the ninth decade of his life is illustrated in a letter written by him to Oliver Wendell Holmes in January 1885: "On one of the days in which I wrote my little tribute to your *Life of Emerson,* I was yet strong enough to rise in the night, light my own fire and candles, and labor with close application fully fourteen hours consecutively, that is, from five in the morning till eight in the evening, with but one short hour's interruption for breakfast; and otherwise no repast: not so much as a sip of water" (*Ibid.,* II, 303). Dr. Holmes made the characteristic response, "You must be made of iron and vulcanized india-rubber, or some such compound of resistance and elasticity." (*Ibid.,* II, 305). On the death of Mrs. Bancroft in March 1886, he was companioned for the rest of his life by a daughter of his older son, George, and then by the family of his younger son, John Chandler Bancroft. His own daughters, one of each marriage, had died respectively in 1850 and 1845. In his rounded existence his domestic life was always an important element, and it was a part of his good fortune that only for his last five years was it necessary for him to proceed without the wife of forty-eight years—more than half of his long life. When he passed ninety the inevitable feebleness of old age increased, and on Jan. 17, 1891, he died in Washington. By order of President Harrison the flags of the executive departments at Washington and of the public buildings in cities through which Bancroft's body was to pass on its way to interment at Worcester were placed at half-mast until the burial. The feeling that a truly national figure had departed from the American scene was universal.

Bancroft

The many years of Bancroft's life had wrought some fortunate changes in him. At the end the young scholar who came to grief with patrons and pupils, the young writer who quarreled with editors, the aggressive partisan who appeared to court unpopularity, had given place to the mellowed old man of broadly enlarging social experience and intellectual interests. Though he himself could thus change, his "History," for all its revision, was but the unified completion of what he had begun when only about thirty years of age. Now for many years it has suffered from the applications of the standards of one period to the work of another. Bancroft as a writer was very much a man of the time in which he came to maturity. He wrote with the strong bias of an ardent believer in democratic government. He resented Ranke's telling him that his "History" was "the best book ever written from the democratic point of view," maintaining that the democracy in his book was objective, not subjective (*Ibid.,* II, 183). Yet the spirit of the Fourth-of-July orator of Bancroft's earlier days was continually expressing itself in his pages. His scholarly method was also that of a time that has passed. If he had thought it questionable to present as literal quotations of historic documents, mere paraphrased condensations of them, he would not have exposed himself so freely as he did to detection in this course. His rhetorical and highly ornamental style is another reminder of his belonging to a previous age—an age before the divorce of literature from history was contemplated. "Fine writing" was then a term rather of praise than of reproof. Yet of this writer of history—who used to taste a chapter or two of Gibbon before taking up his own pen (*Memories of a Hundred Years,* 1903, by E. E. Hale, II, 58)—there was reason for the *Harvard Graduates' Magazine,* under the editorship of William Roscoe Thayer, to assert, "His position as Father of American History is as unshaken as that of Herodotus among the Greeks." He produced an "epic of liberty" faithful to the spirit of his time. Though he did not use his manuscript material as later historians would have used it, either directly or indirectly, his collections from original sources, preserved in the New York Public Library, are a monument to his zeal in exploration and an example to young-

er investigators of history. His work as a whole has been outmoded. Its permanent value may well be found to lie as much in its preservation of the American point of view in the period in which it took form as in its record of an earlier time.

[*The Life and Letters of George Bancroft,* 2 vols. (1908), by M. A. DeWolfe Howe, a biog. based upon Bancroft's personal papers, is the chief source of information about him. The *Century Mag.* published, Jan. 1887, an intimate sketch, "George Bancroft—in Society, in Politics, in Letters," by William M. Sloane, one of his assistants in Berlin. For this paper Bancroft provided material. See also for later critical estimates, the chapter "George Bancroft" in *The Middle Group of Am. Historians* (1917) by John Spencer Bassett, and *The Hist. of Historical Writing in America* (1891) by J. Franklin Jameson, pp. 100–10.]

M. A. DeW. H.

BANCROFT, HUBERT HOWE (May 5, 1832–Mar. 2, 1918), publisher, historian, was descended from John Bancroft, who came to Massachusetts on the ship *James* in 1632. John's grandson Samuel, born at West Springfield, Mass., in 1768 removed to Granville, Mass. Samuel's son, Azariah, in 1814 joined a New England colony at Granville, Ohio. Here was born H. H. Bancroft, the grandson of Azariah and son of Azariah Ashley. His forebears were usually long lived, and his physical endowment was splendid. When in his seventies he is described as straight and of distinguished appearance. He was about six feet in height and had strong, well-marked features, the nose being aquiline. His mother, Lucy D. Howe, was, like his father, the child of an emigrant from the older to the new Granville. The atmosphere of the home was that of strict puritanism, and the family were abolitionists. In his autobiography (*Literary Industries*) he tells that he could read the Bible at the age of three, that he attended the school in his native village, and that he also began a college preparatory course there. But he chose to enter a business life, and at the age of sixteen went to Buffalo, N. Y., to work for a bookseller who was his sister's husband. A. A. Bancroft was attracted to California by the gold-rush. Thither in 1852 followed the son by way of New York and Panama, at first intending to extend his brother-in-law's business on the Pacific Coast. Young Bancroft joined his father in working a mine above Sacramento. In 1853 he found employment at Crescent City and then became a merchant. In 1856 he established himself in San Francisco and in 1858 founded the firm of H. H. Bancroft & Company. This house was a publishing as well as a mercantile concern. In bringing out a handbook in 1859 Bancroft began to collect books dealing with the Pacific Coast. For some years he planned an encyclopedia, and from this project grew his great work, the preparation of a history of the Pacific States. This came to include not only the states and territories of the Pacific Coast and Rocky Mountain area but also British Columbia and Alaska as well as Mexico and Central America. To the history were devoted twenty-eight volumes, and it was preceded in the same series by five on the native races and followed by six volumes of essays. The method of procedure was unique. Bancroft by 1868 had gathered from all parts a good library of works on Pacific Coast history. In that year he installed as librarian Henry L. Oak, who for nineteen years was his assistant in directing the enterprise. A numerous force of assistants was employed to make notes. Spanish archives, particularly those of California, were searched by a force of copyists. Private papers and other historical collections were acquired. To cover the ground more thoroughly, beginning about 1880, reporters were sent out to receive from dictation narratives of prominent pioneers. In the end 60,000 volumes of historical material were brought together. The intention was to found a history of Western America upon original sources. "He who shall come after me," wrote the founder of the plan with true insight, "will scarcely be able to undermine my work by laying another and deeper foundation" (*Literary Industries,* p. 635). The active preparation of manuscript for the press began in 1871 and ended in 1889. The first volume of the *Native Races* appeared in 1875 and the last essay volume of the series in 1890. The work as it stands is by some ten or twelve writers who worked at the Bancroft library in the employ of its proprietor. His original intention was to do most of the writing himself, but the task was too great, even though vastly expedited by library organization and the work of note-takers. He estimated that the first volume which appeared represented labor equivalent to that of one man for ten years (*Native Races,* I, 13). Bancroft's own writing appears in widely scattered parts of the *Native Races* and the *History,* and is said to have aggregated some four and a half volumes. The essay volumes are largely from his own pen. Toward the work of the other writers his relation was that of organizer and general editor. He planned it, with H. L. Oak's assistance allotted parts to different persons, and edited completed manuscripts. Though a man of strong views, he often toned down the personal feeling of those under his direction, and was successful in eliminating some prevalent elements of popular prejudice. The Bancroft house published

the work until a subsidiary corporation was organized for the purpose in 1886. Bancroft's attitude toward the enterprise has sometimes been criticized as too much that of the business man. He brought out all the volumes in his own name and never allocated credit for the authorship of the large portion written by those in his employ.

Bancroft continued to write until he was eighty-four. The more prominent of his later works are *Resources of Mexico* (1893), *The New Pacific* (1900), *The Book of Wealth* (1909–10), *Retrospection, Political and Personal* (1910), and *In These Latter Days* (1917). He was married in 1859 to Emily Ketchum and in 1875 to Matilda B. Griffing. His later years were divided between his San Francisco home and his country place at Walnut Creek.

[An autobiographical account of the earlier life of H. H. Bancroft and of his great historical enterprise appears in his *Literary Industries* (1890); of his voyage of 1852 to California in his *Popular Tribunals* (1887). Comment upon his plan of historical work, though not quite accurate in detail, occurs in Langlois and Seignobos, *Introduction to the Study of History* (1898). A statement concerning the authorship of the Bancroft history is made by Henry L. Oak in a pamphlet entitled *Literary Industries in a New Light* (1893). Other statements concerning the matter are presented and conclusions drawn in the *Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, IV, 287–364.] W. A. M.

BANDELIER, ADOLPH FRANCIS ALPHONSE (Aug. 6, 1840–Mar. 18, 1914), historian, anthropologist, explorer, was born in Berne, Switzerland. His father was an officer in the Swiss army, and criminal judge of the Berne district; his mother was a Russian. At the fall of the Patrician Government in 1847, the elder Bandelier left Switzerland and went first to Brazil, whence disgust for slavery drove him to New York and finally to Illinois, where he bought a large tract of land near Highland. He sent for his family in 1848. Adolph had attended the Wengern School in Berne from his fourth year. He was eight when he started with his mother on the journey to America. There being no schools at Highland, he was educated at home. As a boy he was an ardent collector of butterflies, minerals, and botanical specimens. In 1855 he went to Switzerland to study geology at the University of Berne under Prof. Streder. At about this time he gained great inspiration from an interview with Alexander von Humboldt. Returning to America in the late fifties, Bandelier entered a bank founded by his father and other Swiss residents of Highland. It failed during the financial depression following the Civil War. In 1860 he married Josephine Huegy, a girl of Swiss parentage. Beginning in 1877, he published, through the Peabody Museum at Harvard, a series of most scholarly and basically important contributions on the ancient Mexicans (*On the Art of War and Mode of Warfare*, 1877; *On the Distribution and Tenure of Lands*, 1878; *On the Social Organization and Mode of Government*, 1879).

In 1880 he was engaged by the newly organized Archæological Institute of America to conduct researches in New Mexico, where he was extraordinarily active in the field until 1889. He made a brief visit to Mexico in 1881, at which time he became a Catholic. His explorations, which were generally undertaken on foot, and often in the face of great danger from Apache raids, covered nearly the whole of New Mexico and Arizona. He also accomplished much archive work in Santa Fé; and lived with the Pueblos in order to study Indian life and mentality. The results of this decade are recorded in a group of publications which appeared in the early nineties (*Final Report of Investigations among the Indians of the Southwestern United States*, Part I, 1890; Part II, 1892; *Contributions to the History of the Southwestern Portion of the United States*, 1890). The year 1892 brought a radical change in the scene of his work. Under the auspices of Henry Villard of New York he went to South America for archeological and historical investigations. After the death of his wife, at Lima, he undertook extensive explorations along the coast and in the highlands of Peru, lasting until late in 1893, when he returned to Lima and there married Fanny Ritter, a native of Zurich. With her, he spent the next ten years in a series of journeys in Peru and Bolivia, with periods of research in government and church records, and in private libraries in La Paz and other cities. In 1903, at the age of sixty-three, he returned to New York, where he worked in the Natural History Museum, served as lecturer on Spanish-American literature at Columbia, and (1906) joined the staff of the Hispanic Society of America. Symptoms of cataract developed in 1907, and from 1909 to 1911 he was almost totally blind. During that period, he continued with the help of his wife, to write, producing his last book (*The Islands of Titicaca and Koati*) in 1910. In 1911 he received an appointment as Research Associate of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, for archival research in Spain. After a year of preliminary investigations in Mexico, he went to Seville, where he died in 1914.

No American archeologist has depended as did Bandelier upon historical sources; and no American historian has checked his work so

fully by a study of archeological materials. He also realized the necessity of collecting from surviving aborigines all possible legendary data, and of imbuing himself with a knowledge of their ways of life and habits of thought. The fields of Bandelier's work—the Southwest, Mexico, South America—were all singularly well-fitted for this type of approach, for in all of them are abundant aboriginal sites; and as to all of them the early Spanish accounts, published and in the archives, are remarkably full. In every case he went directly to original sources, historical or archeological. This, of course, led him to overthrow many generally accepted theories, and resulted in severe controversies with less well-informed or less conscientious writers. His work resulted in the discrediting of the romantic school of American Indian history, and paved the way for scientific, critical research.

[Information from biog. sketch by F. W. Hodge in *Am. Anthropologist*, n. s., XVI, 349–58, 1914 (with bibliography); from friends of Bandelier in Santa Fé; and from letters from Mrs. Bandelier (deposited at Peabody Museum, Harvard). Estimates of Bandelier's work are contained in obituaries by Hiram Bingham, *Nation*, Mar. 26, 1914, and by C. F. Lummis, *El Palacio*, Santa Fé, April, May 1914.]

A. V. K.

BANGS, FRANCIS NEHEMIAH (Feb. 23, 1828–Nov. 30, 1885), lawyer, the son of the Rev. Nathan Bangs [*q.v.*] and Mary (Bolton) Bangs, was born in New York City. He received only an ordinary school education, but in spare hours he earned money by keeping the commercial accounts of his elder brother's firm, and ultimately was enabled to attend the Wesleyan University at Middletown, Conn., and the College of the City of New York, where he graduated in 1845. He then studied for a time at the Yale Law School and was called to the bar of the city of New York in 1850. He commenced practise in that city. At first his progress was slow. His manner was not conciliatory. "At no period of his career, even in its small beginnings, was it possible for him to be obsequious or subservient to any one, however wealthy, influential, or powerful" (E. Randolph Robinson, at meeting of New York City bar, Dec. 12, 1885). Through his early experiences he was equipped with an intimate knowledge of commercial transactions and accounts, and he at first specialized in bankruptcy law. The ability which he displayed when retained on behalf of the assignees of Ketchum, Son & Company, a defaulting firm of New York stock brokers, first brought him into public notice. The various investigations and prosecutions which followed the exposure in 1871 of the operations of the "Tweed Ring" in New York's municipal affairs firmly established his reputation as an able, public-spirited, and fearless advocate. Contemporaneously with the accusations against Tweed and his associates, charges were made reflecting upon the administration of justice in New York City, and Bangs devoted all his energies and ability to the investigation which followed. Owing in great measure to his personal intervention, Judges John H. McCunn of the superior court of New York City, and G. G. Barnard of the supreme court were removed from office, and Judge Albert Cardozo was compelled to resign. Thereafter Bangs was constantly retained as counsel in heavy litigation, more particularly railway and corporation cases. Among the more important suits in which he held briefs were those concerning the Havemeyer and Cesnola estates. From 1873 to the end of his life he enjoyed an increasingly lucrative practise, and was generally recognized as standing at the head of his profession.

One of the secrets of his success was his capacity for concentration and hard work. It was said of him by a distinguished legal contemporary, James C. Carter, that he had on occasions sat down to his work for days for sixteen consecutive hours each day, interrupted only by a hasty meal. Throughout his career he was noted for unremitting toil in the preparation of his cases. Combined with a broad knowledge of law and human nature, unusual acquaintance with commercial and corporation methods, and a rugged yet attractive style of lucid advocacy, his thorough appreciation of every point of his case made him at all times powerful and sometimes irresistible in court. On the other hand his face was not attractive, nor was his manner altogether pleasant. "He was apt to be a little careless as to how he treated people, and at times he might have been regarded as inconsiderate. . . . There were occasions when his impatience and quick temper were somewhat trying" (Theron G. Strong, *post*). Unremitting attention to professional work undoubtedly undermined his health, and he died at Ocala, Fla., at the comparatively early age of fifty-seven. He had few interests outside of his profession, and though a Republican, never aspired to or held public office, "being indifferent to the allurements of pleasure or politics." He was president of the Bar Association of the City of New York 1882–83, and was active in the formation of the Union League Club. He was twice married: on Mar. 12, 1855, to Frances Amelia Bull, who died, Aug. 23, 1868; and, later, to Mary Adams Batcheller.

[His ancestry is set out in detail in *Hist. and Geneal. of the Bangs Family* by Dean Dudley (1896), pp. 9, 233. The best biog. is contained in a pamphlet *In Mem-*

ory of Francis N. Bangs (1885), being a report of a meeting of the bar of the City of New York, held Dec. 12, 1885, on the occasion of his death. Theron G. Strong, in *Landmarks of a Lawyer's Life* (1914), pp. 265–76, surveys the salient features of his career from personal knowledge. A sketch of his life will also be found in *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.*, ed. by D. McAdam *et al.* (1897), I, 253–54.] H. W. H. K.

BANGS, FRANK C. (Oct. 13, 1833–June 12, 1908), actor, son of David Barnwell and Margaret (Cannon) Bangs, was born in Alexandria, Va. His mother educated him strictly, with the idea of his becoming a minister. When only fifteen, he worked on a Washington newspaper, learning typesetting and writing stories; but a performance of the elder Booth as Richard III fired him with a desire to become an actor. Nevertheless, he went to Philadelphia, when eighteen, and began his theological studies. Records state that he was advised by his instructors to give up the ministry. On Sept. 27, 1851, he made his theatrical début at the Washington National, subsequently gaining experience as general-utility actor with Edwin Forrest, Kate and Susan Denin, Charlotte Cushman, Julia Dean, James H. Hackett, and others. He appeared also with the Ravel Troupe (a very popular family of players in the early national period of the American theatre), in *The Miller and His Men,* a pantomime. He then went through the treadmill of experience in Baltimore, Albany, and Washington, as the first walking gentleman and in such so-called juvenile rôles as Romeo, Horatio, and Claude Melnotte. At the Philadelphia Arch Street Theatre, he appeared with Mrs. John Drew and Olive Logan. In 1858–59, through the influence of Joseph Jefferson, he joined the company at Laura Keene's Theatre, making his first New York appearance, Apr. 22, 1858, in J. G. Burnett's *Blanche of Brandywine.* He shared juvenile parts with Lester Wallack, at Wallack's Theatre, N. Y., where he appeared in Boucicault's *Octoroon.*

The war put a stop to his acting for a time; he joined the Confederate army, going into active service with the 3rd Virginia, and was made a prisoner at Hilton's Head. At the close of the war, he returned to the stage, playing in stock at the Washington National. The papers of the time mention that he was unfairly treated by the audiences because of his Southern sympathies. In 1867, however, he met with much success in *After Dark,* at Niblo's Garden, but soon after, owing to a dispute with his managers, Jarrett and Palmer, regarding the casting of *Julius Cæsar,* he retired from the boards, giving most of his time to teaching the art of reading, to coaching amateur dramatic societies, and to lecturing on mental philosophy. In 1870 he was back on the stage, supporting Fechter and Carlotta Leclerq at the Boston Theatre, in *Hamlet* (Feb. 21), *Ruy Blas* (Feb. 28), and *The Lady of Lyons* (Mar. 5). The most notable event in his career was his appearance as Mark Antony opposite Edwin Booth's Brutus and Lawrence Barrett's Cassius, in a revival of *Julius Cæsar* on Dec. 25, 1871. The critic of the *New York Tribune* (Dec. 26, 1871) wrote, "Mr. Bangs achieved good success as Antony. The funeral oration was pronounced with singular discretion and true pathos. A subdued vein of sweetness ran through it, and this set off the fine outburst at the end." Several starring ventures were now attempted, but Bangs was better suited as support than as a star. At various times he appeared in such plays as *The Banker's Daughter, Michael Strogoff, Jim, the Penman,* and *Alabama.* In 1890–91, he was with the Jefferson-Florence company in *The Rivals* and *The Heir-at-law.* In 1892, he revived Boker's *Francesca da Rimini.* Toward the end of his career he was identified with such ephemeral pieces as *The Christian, The Choir Invisible, The Gentleman from Indiana,* and *The Awakening of Helena Ritchie.*

[*Phila. Pub. Ledger,* June 14, 1908; *N. Y. Dram. Mirror,* June 20, 1908; *Green Room Bk.* (Lond., 1908); *N. Y. Clipper,* Apr. 26, 1913; Dean Dudley, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Bangs Family in America* (1896).]

M. J. M.

BANGS, JOHN KENDRICK (May 27, 1862–Jan. 21, 1922), humorist, editor, lecturer, was born in Yonkers, N. Y., the grandson of Nathan Bangs [*q.v.*], and the son of Francis Nehemiah Bangs [*q.v.*] and Frances (Bull) Bangs. In 1883 he graduated from Columbia College. Here he was editor of *Acta Columbiana,* succeeding Nicholas Murray Butler. He married Agnes Lanson Hyde, Mar. 3, 1886, by whom he had four sons. His second wife, Mary Blackeney Gray, he married Apr. 27, 1904. It was in 1884 that as associate editor of *Life* he held his first professional editorial position. He remained in this capacity until 1888, when he was invited by Henry Mills Alden to join the staff of *Harper's Magazine,* and for eleven years he had charge of its humorous department and that of the *Bazaar.* He also wrote the literary notes and many articles, besides contributing to other periodicals. In 1899 he assumed editorship of *Harper's Weekly,* and the same year became the first editor of *Munsey's Weekly,* resigning, however, before the year was up. His earliest book, *The Lorgnette* (with S. W. Van Schaick), was published in 1886. Thereafter, up to 1910, he published over thirty volumes of humor and verse. Perhaps the best known

of these are *Tiddledywink Tales* (1891), *Coffee and Repartee* (1893), *The Idiot* (1895), and *A Houseboat on the Styx* (1895). From the middle eighties until 1904 he lived in Yonkers, and during part of that period was vice-president of the board of education. In 1894 he ran for mayor, his defeat enabling him to write one of his most amusing travesties, *Three Weeks in Politics* (1894). In 1901 he went to Cuba and wrote an influential book on Cuban affairs, *Uncle Sam, Trustee* (1902). The financial difficulties of Harper & Brothers led him, in 1903, to become editor of the *New Metropolitan Magazine,* although he continued to write for *Harper's Weekly.* In June 1904, he took editorial charge of *Puck,* and it was during this year that he produced *Lady Teazle,* with Lillian Russell as Lady Teazle. Later he produced a musical fantasy. These two plays were the extent of his dramatic ventures.

Not until 1907 did he really find himself. Early in the nineties he had lectured on *The Evolution of a Humorist,* to which he later added the subtitle, *from Adam to Ade.* Now, breaking away from his editorial moorings, he left Yonkers for Ogonquet, Me., and became a free lance and lecturer. During the next fifteen years, aided by those he called "Salubrities," and his experience as an editor and writer, coupled with a genial personality, he won wide-spread popularity, and was unquestionably one of the best popular humorous lecturers of his generation. His most famous lecture was entitled *Salubrities I Have Met.* He was tall, spare, unaffected, a thorough gentleman in mind and bearing, with a carrying voice, fund of anecdotes and charm of manner, which made him a humorous speaker of rare distinction and taste. He was a man of warm sympathies. During the activities of the American Committee for Devastated France, he lectured and labored without stint in its behalf, and was made a Chevalier of the Legion of Honor.

He was an enormous worker, and at one time wrote under as many as ten assumed names. Early in his career he was in the habit of writing twenty-five jokes a day, just for relaxation. The whimsicalities created by him during his lifetime were of astonishing variety. Although he lacked the severely critical attitude of a higher type of creative artist, he largely made up for this by his singleness of purpose, and his influence on the formative period to which he belongs was considerable.

[Dean Dudley, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Bangs Family in America* (1896), pp. 253–54; *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Herald,* Jan. 22, 1922; personal information from Francis H. Bangs, son of J. K. Bangs.]

T. L. M.

BANGS, NATHAN (May 2, 1778–May 3, 1862), Methodist clergyman, was born at Stratford, Conn. His first American ancestor, Edward Bangs of Chichester, England, came to Plymouth in the *Anne* in 1623. His father, Lemuel, blacksmith, surveyor, school-teacher, had turned to the Church of England, was severely critical of Methodist preachers as uneducated, and had all his children baptized in the Protestant Episcopal Church. His mother was Rebecca Keeler of Ridgefield, Conn. All but one of the children became members, and four sons ministers in the Methodist denomination. In 1782 the family moved to the town of Fairfield, Conn. Bangs notes as the three most potent influences of his childhood, school with the Bible as text-book, his father's personality and a "resolute mother." He mentions, also, a liberal Puritan parson who encouraged dancing and social games, and an itinerant Methodist preacher. In 1791, the family moved again, to the thinly-settled country near Stamford, N. Y., the boy walking 150 miles. He entered freely into the sports of the primitive community, learned surveying of his father, and picked up enough education to be able to teach in the rural schools. When twenty-one he went to Canada, and took a school in a Dutch community near Niagara. One of the families where he boarded had a small library, and he became familiar with Milton, Bunyan, and Hervey's *Meditations.* An English parson whom he calls "drunken and card-playing," contrasted with James Coleman, a Methodist itinerant, effaced the last trace of his father's anti-Methodism. Bangs joined the Methodist church, discarding "cue" and "ruffles," and soon felt the definite assurance that he was divinely called to preach.

He began opening his school sessions with prayer; and when the Dutch directors objected he gave up his position rather than yield. Licensed to preach in 1801, he entered at once on the laborious service of the early Methodist traveling preachers. For years he rode on horseback through the forests of Upper Canada, sleeping and eating when and where he could find accommodation in a settler's cabin, and preaching when and where he could find a congregation. In 1804 he came into direct contact with Bishop Asbury, "the Apostle of Methodism." He was admitted to Conference, and without the usual two-year delay was made an elder. Assigned to the Province of Quebec, he found his work beset with peculiar difficulties; but is regarded as the founder of Methodism in that district. On Apr. 23, 1806, he married Mary Bolton of Edwardsburg, Upper Canada, daughter of Henry and Margaret (Lateur) Bolton of England. Conditions in

Canada becoming difficult for Americans as the War of 1812 drew near, he returned to the United States; and until 1820 served as pastor and part of the time as presiding elder in the state of New York. His duties taking him into the neighboring parts of Connecticut, he is said to have been influential in the movements which ended the Church and State connection there. In 1820 he was made agent of the Book Concern in New York. He paid the debts of the almost bankrupt institution, and put it on a paying basis. In the years following, he started the system of official church journals, and was himself editor of the *New York Advocate,* the *Methodist Magazine,* and the *Methodist Quarterly Review.* At the same time he had editorial charge of the publications of the Book Concern. Greatly interested in missionary work, he was the founder of the Methodist Missionary Society, for years serving as its secretary without salary. In 1836 he relinquished his connection with the Book Concern in order to give his full time to the Missionary Society. In 1841 he became acting president of Wesleyan University at Middletown, Conn., during the absence on account of illness of President Olin. In the controversy over slavery he took a mediating position, trying in vain to prevent the disruption. Superannuated, according to custom, at the age of seventy-five, he never ceased active participation in church work until his death.

Almost entirely self-educated, Bangs was yet an effective writer. Besides editorials, sermons, and addresses, the list of his published works includes the following: *Christianism* (1809); *Errors of Hopkinsianism* (1815); *Examination of the Doctrine of Predestination* (1817); *The Reformer Reformed* (1818); *Vindication of Methodist Episcopacy* (1820); *Life of Rev. Freeborn Garretson* (1829); *History of Missions* (1832); *Letters to a Young Preacher* (1835); *An Original Church of Christ* (1837); *History of the Methodist Episcopal Church,* in four volumes (1838–40); *Life of James Arminius* (1843); *Present State, Prospects, and Responsibilities of the Methodist Episcopal Church* (1850); *Necessity, Nature, and Fruits of Sanctification* (1851).

[D. Dudley, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Bangs Family in America* (1896); Abel Stevens, *Life and Times of Nathan Bangs* (1863); A. H. Tuttle, *Nathan Bangs* (1909); *Alumni Rec. Wesleyan Univ.* (3rd ed., 1883); *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), May and June 1862.]

C.N.

BANISTER, JOHN (1650–May 1692), botanist, son of John Bannister, was born at Twigworth, Gloucestershire, England. Graduating from Magdalen College, Oxford (B.A. 1671; M.A. 1674), he served several years as clerk and chaplain (J. R. Bloxam, *A Register of St. Mary Magdalen College,* 1853, I, 93); visited the West Indies, presumably as a Church of England missionary; and by 1678 settled in Charles City County, Va., where he devoted himself largely to scientific pursuits. Subsequently he patented land on the Appomattox River and officiated as minister for what was later Bristol Parish. In 1688 he married "a young widow." During his residence in Virginia he studied minutely the plant life of the region; corresponded with such scientists as Ray, Compton, Sloane, Bobart, and Martin Lister, whom he furnished with specimens or drawings of local flora and fauna; and worked at a "Natural History of Virginia," which his premature death terminated. His botanical and entomological articles, some of which appeared posthumously in the *Philosophical Transactions,* include his catalogues of Virginia plants, published in Ray's *Historia Plantarum* and Petiver's *Memoirs; Observations on the Natural Productions of Jamaica; Curiosities of Virginia; Observations on the Musca lupus; On Several Sorts of Snails; The Insects of Virginia;* and *A Description of the Snakeroot, Pistolochia, or Serpentaria Virginiania.* Without being a scientist of major importance, Banister enjoyed considerable reputation with his fellows. The Virginia Council nominated him as an original trustee of William and Mary College; Ray labelled him *"eruditissimus vir et consummatissimus botanicus";* Lister termed him "a very learned and sagacious naturalist"; the historian Campbell ranks him with John Bartram. Linnæus's Genus 573, a tropical plant of the Malpighia family, is named after him (Bentham and Hooker; *Genera Plantarum,* I, 257). He is commonly stated to have been killed, while on a botanical expedition along the Roanoke River, by falling from a bluff, but it now appears that he was accidentally shot by a companion (*Virginia Magazine of History and Biography,* XI, 163–64). His papers were transmitted to Bishop Compton; his herbarium was left to Sir Hans Sloane, whose collection formed the nucleus of the British Museum.

[There is no full or adequate sketch of Banister extant: material concerning him is fragmentary and contradictory, his letters and manuscripts are not readily accessible, and the early records of the Banister family in America are imperfect. Although John Banister is generally believed to have come to Virginia in 1678, in the *Philosophical Trans.,* XVII, 667–72, are extracts from four letters written from Virginia by him to Dr. Martin Lister, whose dates, from May 5, 1668, to May 12, 1692, indicate twenty-four years' residence in America: it is probable, however, that 1668 here was a misprint for 1678, for Lister comments that Banister "had lived fourteen years at least in Virginia." If the botanist was in America as early as 1668, the ancestry, date of birth, and record of attendance at Oxford given by Goodwin in *The Colonial Ch. in Va.,* p. 248, must be

those of a later John Banister—presumably the son of John Banister of Gloucester County, Va. (*Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, XXVIII, 129).] A. C. G., Jr.

BANISTER, JOHN (Dec. 26, 1734–Sept. 30, 1788), Revolutionary patriot, was born in Bristol Parish, Va., the son of John Banister and Willmuth, Wilmet, or Wilmette Banister, and grandson of John Banister, the naturalist [*q.v.*]. He went to England to study law and was admitted to the Middle Temple on Sept. 27, 1753. His first appearance in history was as a member of the Virginia Convention of 1776. He was in the House of Burgesses of the new state in 1777, and in 1778–79 he was a delegate to the Continental Congress. His position in that body is indicated by the fact that he was one of the framers of the Articles of Confederation; and of course he was a signer of that instrument. In the war he was lieutenant-colonel of cavalry in the Virginia line, during the years 1778–81. That he was highly valued by Washington is shown by an intimate letter which the commander-in-chief wrote to him from Valley Forge (*Writings of George Washington*, edited by Jared Sparks, V, 321–31). In the final campaign of 1781 he aided in repelling the British invasion of his state. He contributed supplies to the cause, and suffered losses of property; his home at Battersea, near Petersburg, was a convenient stopping-place for the British force under Gen. Phillips. Banister was first married to Patsy, daughter of Col. Theodoric Bland, and his letters figure frequently in the extensive correspondence of the *Bland Papers* (1840–43); his second marriage was to Anne, daughter of John Blair of Williamsburg. He was a good writer, well informed on current affairs.

[*Vestry Book and Register of Bristol Parish, Va., 1720–89* (1898); Philip Slaughter, *Hist. of Bristol Parish, Va.* (2nd ed., 1879); E. A. Jones, *Am. Members of the Inns of Court* (1924); Frederick Horner, *Hist. of the Blair, Banister, and Braxton Families* (1898); Chas. Campbell, *Hist. of the Colony & Ancient Dominion of Va.* (1860); *Am. Hist. Rev.*, July 1920; *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, XI, 164–65, XX, 283.] E. K. A.

BANISTER, ZILPAH POLLY GRANT (May 30, 1794–Dec. 3, 1874), educator, was born in Norfolk, Conn., the daughter of Joel and Zilpah (Cowles) Grant, of Scotch descent. Both Joel Grant and his wife were sturdy pioneers and stanch Puritans. The rich soil of their farm had only thirty years before been wilderness, and wolves still howled about the one-story house on winter nights. It was in a New England blizzard that Joel Grant lost his life by the fall of his well-sweep, before his daughter was two years old. After learning everything offered in the weather-beaten schoolhouse near by, Zilpah spent several winters at home, sharing the heavy work of the family and reading all available books. Before she was fifteen she had begun her career as a teacher, in the district school of Paug, now East Norfolk, where she taught for two summers. The following two summers she taught at Winchester, and while there went through religious experiences which resulted in her joining the church. For twelve years she taught in the schools of Norfolk and adjacent towns; then came the opportunity to continue her own education. Rev. Ralph Emerson, minister at Norfolk, advised her to use her savings of fifty dollars to go to the seminary at Byfield, Mass., conducted by his brother, Rev. Joseph Emerson. There she became the friend of another student, Mary Lyon [*q.v.*]. After leaving Byfield in 1821 she started a private school at Winsted, but a year later went back as a teacher to Mr. Emerson's school, now removed to Saugus. In 1824 she became principal of the newly endowed Adams Female Academy, at Derry, N. H. She received the school-building without rent but otherwise assumed all responsibility and received all profits. In 1828 she removed her school to Ipswich where she obtained a building on the same terms. Both at Derry and at Ipswich Mary Lyon was her assistant until she left to found Mount Holyoke Seminary, which was modeled after the Ipswich Seminary. In 1839, feeling her health unequal to the work without the help of Miss Lyon, Miss Grant gave up her school.

On Sept. 7, 1841, she was married to William B. Banister, a Dartmouth graduate and former member of the Massachusetts Senate. At her marriage she became the mistress of a Colonial home in Newburyport, where lived also two daughters of her husband by former marriages. The devotion of these step-daughters meant much in her later life, especially after the death of her husband in 1853. A year in France and England, 1860–61, marked the last pronounced activity of her life. The remaining years were quiet, yet full of domestic, religious, and educational interests. A year before her death she visited Mount Holyoke Seminary and spoke before the students. Mrs. Banister's only writings were articles on the education of women. Her chief educational work was as a teacher of girls in days when education for women was not yet formulated. English, the sciences, Bible study, and physical training were stressed in her school, but foreign languages found no place in the curriculum. She was not a learned woman, nor even a wide reader; her wisdom was that of common sense and interest in human beings. As she moved up the aisle to the platform, a tall, erect, figure, with strongly marked features, reflective

dark eyes, and dark hair, partly covered by a white head-dress, she represented to the girls assembled a model of womanly refinement and dignity.

[Linda T. Guilford, *The Use of a Life: Memorials of Mrs. Z. P. Grant Banister* (1885); a biog. sketch, with an account of the schools at Derry and Ipswich, by John P. Cowles, in *Barnard's Am. Jour. of Education*, vol. XXX (Sept. 1880); obituary in *Boston Transcript*, Dec. 4, 1874. Mrs. Banister's educational ideals and the course of study in her school are presented in the *Ipswich Seminary Cat.*, 1839.] S. G. B.

BANKHEAD, JOHN HOLLIS (Sept. 13, 1842–Mar. 1, 1920), senator, was born in Moscow, Ala. His father, James Greer Bankhead, was a farmer and Indian-fighter of South Carolina; his mother, Susan (Hollis) Bankhead, was descended from a favorite aide of the Revolutionary general, Marion. The actual settler in Alabama was his grandfather George, who moved from South Carolina to the piney woods of Marion County and built the first mill. John Hollis was brought up on the farm, with little schooling, but this he made up for by diligent reading. He was not twenty-one when the Civil War began, and he emerged from the war a captain. From 1865 to 1868 he was a member of the Alabama legislature. On Nov. 13, 1866 he was married to Tallulah J. Brockman. He was one of Gen. Forrest's Ku Klux, designed to control the unruly freedmen during Congress's military Reconstruction; was again in the legislature (Senate 1876–77, House of Representatives 1880–81); and was warden of the penitentiary (1881–85). He attracted little public notice, however, as Brewer's *Alabama* and Garrett's *Public Men of Alabama*, published about 1872, do not mention him.

In 1886 the sphere of his activities was widened by election to Congress, where he joined in the passage of the anti-trust laws; but his principal work concerned the Post Office Department and the canalization of the Tombigbee River. This stream rises in the coal regions of Alabama and then waters cotton-fields in that state and in Mississippi before joining its sister river, the Alabama. By its improvement it has become one of the most useful water systems of the Union, but it must not be supposed that Bankhead effected this alone, for he was aided if not inspired by interested activities originating from Mobile. In 1906 a singular situation carried Bankhead yet higher. It was so evident that both Morgan and Pettus, long-time senators, were failing from age that the party adopted a succession primary to fill probable vacancies. Bankhead was successful for the first, and on the death of Morgan next year was elected his successor. His principal service, however, was in improving the roads not only of Alabama but of the whole country. He first secured a trial appropriation of $500,000 for demonstration, and this was so beneficial that on July 11, 1916, he procured the passage of an act whereby the United States should aid the states in the construction of rural post-roads. This carried an annual appropriation through 1921 of $5,000,000 to $25,000,000, and was amended, after Bankhead's death, by granting even larger sums. As a memorial a private association in several southern states has planned a Bankhead Highway, starting at Washington and ending on the Pacific, and much of this has been built.

[The chief authority as to Bankhead is the sketch by Thomas M. Owen, his son-in-law, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), VII, 88–92. The sources as to his road measures are in the *Statutes at Large;* see also the *U. S. Good Roads Bull.*, Dec. 1920, Jan. 1921. Light on his activities as warden is in Conier *vs.* Bankhead, 70 *Alabama*, pp. 116, 493.] P. J. H.

BANKS, NATHANIEL PRENTISS (Jan. 30, 1816–Sept. 1, 1894), congressman, governor of Massachusetts, Union soldier, was born in Waltham, Mass., the eldest of the seven children of Nathaniel P. and Rebecca (Greenwood) Banks. His father was superintendent of the mill in which is said to have been woven the first cotton cloth manufactured in the United States. After only a few years in the common schools the boy had to go to work in the cotton-mill, from which fact in later years there clung to him the nickname, "the Bobbin Boy of Massachusetts." Keenly ambitious, he set to work to remedy the deficiencies in his own education. By his own efforts he obtained some command of Latin, and diligently studied Spanish, early declaring that America some day would be brought into intimate association with peoples of that tongue. He seized every opportunity for practise in public speaking, lecturing on temperance and taking an active part in a local debating society. He soon became a recognized power in town meeting. For a time he studied to become an actor, and made a successful appearance in Boston as Claude Melnotte in *The Lady of Lyons*, but he soon turned to the law. At twenty-three he was admitted to the bar, but he never practised in the courts. He first entered public service as an inspector in the Boston customs house. For three years he was the proprietor and editor of a local weekly newspaper, the *Middlesex Reporter*. In March 1847 he was married to Mary I. Palmer. Seven times he was a candidate for the lower branch of the Massachusetts legislature before he became a member of that body in 1849. By the "coalition" in 1851 Henry

Wilson as a Free-Soiler was made president of the Senate, and Banks as a Democrat was made speaker of the House, and he was reëlected to that office the following year.

At thirty-seven this self-taught man was chosen president of what has been called "the ablest body that ever met in Massachusetts," the constitutional convention of 1853, over which he presided with rare tact and self-control. Entering Congress in 1853, he served—though not continuously—in ten Congresses, representing five different party alignments. In his first term, though elected as a Democrat, he showed his courage and independence by opposing the Kansas-Nebraska bill. In the Thirty-fourth Congress, to which he had been elected as the candidate of the "Americans" (Know-Nothing party), he was put forward for the speakership in the most stubborn contest in the history of that office. Backed by no caucus, he drew votes from the other Know-Nothing candidates because of his uncompromising record in his first term (H. von Holst, *Constitutional History of the United States,* 1885, V, 204 ff.). As the struggle dragged on, he bluntly declared that the repeal of the Missouri Compromise was an act of dishonor, and that under no circumstances whatever would he, if he should have the power, allow the institution of human slavery to derive benefit from the repeal. He thus came to be regarded as "the very bone and sinew of Free-soilism," and his election (Feb. 2, 1856, on the 133rd ballot, and only after the adoption of a resolution calling for election by plurality vote), was hailed as the first defeat of slavery in a quarter of a century, and was later looked back upon as the first national victory of the Republican party. He held that the speaker's office was not political but executive and parliamentary. To the anti-slavery men he gave a bare majority on the various committees, and made several of his most decided opponents chairmen. Historians of the office rate Banks as one of the ablest and most efficient of speakers (M. P. Follett, *The Speaker of the House of Representatives,* 1902, pp. 36, 58–59; H. B. Fuller, *The Speaker of the House,* 1909, pp. 102–11, 116–17). He showed consideration and consummate tact, and his decisions were prompt and impartial. Though his service was in a period of the bitterest partisanship, not one of his decisions was overruled.

In 1856 Banks declined a nomination for the presidency from the convention of "North Americans," anti-slavery seceders from the "American" convention which had nominated Fillmore. Though he had been the candidate of the "Americans" in his second campaign for Congress and

Banks

though he had just received this further evidence of their favor, he had already outgrown that nativist association, and in 1857 he cast aside his promising career in Congress to accept the Republican nomination for governor of Massachusetts. To the dismay of conservatives, he adopted the innovation of stumping the state in person, and against the seemingly invincible incumbent of three terms he won the election by a large majority. He held the governorship for three successive years, 1858–60, and proved an effective and progressive executive. He was a pioneer in urging the humane and protective features of modern probation laws, and displayed a great and intelligent interest in all movements for educational progress. His wise forethought as to the militia enabled his successor, Gov. John A. Andrew, to respond at once to Lincoln's call, sending troop after troop of Massachusetts militia, well trained and fully equipped for service.

At the end of his term (January 1861) Banks removed to Chicago, to succeed George B. McClellan as president of the Illinois Central Railroad. But Sumter had hardly fallen when he tendered his services to President Lincoln, and on May 16 he was commissioned major-general of volunteers. His first service was in the Department of Annapolis, where he coöperated in measures to prevent the seemingly imminent secession of Maryland. He was next assigned to the 5th corps in the Department of the Shenandoah. Here the transference of Shields's division to McDowell left Banks isolated with a command diminished to 10,000 to cope with "Stonewall" Jackson's greatly superior forces. The Confederates' capture of Front Royal, May 23, 1862, left no course open to Banks—his force now outnumbered two to one—but precipitate retreat. A race for Winchester, a vigorous battle, in which Banks's command bore itself well, and then a hasty crossing of the Potomac at Harper's Ferry rescued his army, but with a loss of some 200 killed and wounded and more than 3,000 prisoners (J. W. Draper, *History of the American Civil War,* 1868, II, 393). In June, Banks's force was brought into the new consolidation, the Army of Virginia, placed under Gen. Pope. From Culpeper, Aug. 9, 1862, Pope ordered Banks, in case the enemy approached, to "attack him immediately." Acting upon this explicit order, late in the afternoon, Banks's little army, in mood to avenge the humiliations they had suffered in the Shenandoah Valley, charged the enemy with such suddenness and vehemence that the whole of Jackson's left was driven from its position before his reserves could be brought into action. But some lack of tactical skill, the

wounding of two of Banks's general officers, and the weight of opposing numbers after the first shock of surprise soon turned the tide of battle, and the Federals were forced into disorderly retreat. Banks was severely blamed for making this attack at Cedar Mountain, and Pope denied that his order authorized the action which Banks took ("Report of the Joint Committee on Conduct of the War," *Senate Report No. 142,* 38 Cong., 2 Sess., pt. III, pp. 44–54). But "it will be hard to prove, if language means anything, that he at all transgressed his [Pope's] orders. Of course the order should not have been given" (William Allan, *The Army of Northern Virginia,* 1892, p. 171, *n.*). For a short time in the fall of 1862 Banks was in charge of the defenses of Washington. In the closing months of the year, at New Orleans he succeeded Gen. B. F. Butler in command of the department. He was assigned the tasks of holding New Orleans and the other parts of the state which had been reduced to submission, and of aiding Grant to open the Mississippi. After placing his garrisons he had hardly 15,000 men left for aggressive action. In April 1863 he succeeded in regaining considerable territory for the Union, and in May he reached Alexandria. His next objective was Port Hudson. On May 25 and 27 he made costly attempts to capture the place by assault, bringing into action negro troops, who, he declared, showed the utmost daring and determination. Repulsed with heavy losses, he began siege. Though hard pressed by famine, the garrison repelled another assault, June 13, but within a week after the fall of Vicksburg it found itself forced to unconditional surrender, July 9, with loss of 6,200 prisoners, a large number of guns, and a great mass of military supplies. The thanks of Congress were tendered to Banks and his troops (Jan. 28, 1864) "for the skill, courage, and endurance which compelled the surrender of Port Hudson, and thus removed the last obstruction to the free navigation of the Mississippi River" (*United States Statutes at Large,* 38 Cong., 1 Sess., Resolution No. 7).

The later movements of the year proved ineffective: although with the coöperation of a naval force Banks had advanced along the coast as far as Brownsville, capturing some works of importance, he found his force inadequate to extend the movement and withdrew to New Orleans. Here in the difficult task of dealing with the civilian population he inherited the unpopularity of his predecessor, and his assassination was attempted. He opposed the admission of Confederate attorneys to practise in the courts. With no legal authority for his action, in January and February 1864, Banks issued orders prescribing the conditions of suffrage and other details as to elections, under which state officers and delegates to a constitutional convention were chosen and a constitution adopted. Although hardly one in seven of the voters of the state voted upon the question of ratifying this constitution, Banks went to Washington, where for months he pressed the recognition of the Louisiana state Government (E. L. Pierce, *Memoir of Charles Sumner,* 1893, IV, 215, 221).

In the opening months of 1864 preparations were made for the ill-starred Red River Expedition. Gen. Grant had strenuously opposed this movement, and later declared that it was "ordered from Washington," and that Banks had opposed the expedition, and was in no way responsible, except for the conduct of it (*Personal Memoirs,* 1886, II, 139–40). The State Department insisted that the flag must be restored to some one point in Texas, as a counter to the movements of the French in Mexico; the President was eager to establish a loyal government in Louisiana; and the agents of the Government and speculators were lured by [illegible] stores of cotton along the river. Starting in the early spring, the only season when the Red River was navigable, Banks advanced with a land force of 27,000 men, Admiral Porter being in command of a supporting fleet of gunboats. When within two days' march of his objective, Shreveport, Banks's army, extending for miles along a single road, encountered the main body of the enemy at Sabine Crossroads, Apr. 8, and was routed. On the following day at Pleasant Hill a fierce battle was fought, in which both parties claimed the victory. Failure of his supplies of ammunition, rations, and water compelled Banks to fall back. Meantime the fleet had been placed in imminent peril by the unprecedentedly early subsidence of the Red River, and was saved only by the brilliant engineering feat of Col. Joseph Bailey in constructing a series of dams that secured enough depth of water to send the gunboats over the shallows (J. W. Draper, *History of the American Civil War,* 1870, III, 235–38). The army followed the naval force down the river, repelling rear attacks. Grant's peremptory recall of 10,000 men left Banks facing a serious crisis. On May 13 he evacuated Alexandria. Though left in nominal command, he was soon virtually superseded by the arrival of Gen. E. R. S. Canby, who had been appointed to the command of all forces west of the Mississippi. A majority of the Committee on the Conduct of the War placed upon Banks a large measure of responsibility for the dis-

asters which befell this expedition, but a minority member, D. W. Gooch, defended him on the ground that the major causes of failure, *i. e.* the unforeseeable difficulties of navigation, and the shortness of the time for which nearly half of the force were "lent" by Sherman, were beyond his control (*Senate Report No. 142,* 38 Cong., 2 Sess., pt. II, pp. 3–401). Although repeatedly in this humiliating expedition Banks showed a lack of military skill, in the main he had to "bear the blame of the blunders of his superiors," who for alleged reasons of state ordered a movement which had little military justification, and doomed it to failure by so organizing it that, while four forces were supposed to coöperate, the commander of no one of them had the right to give an order to another (Asa Mahan, *Critical History of the Late American War,* 1877, p. 407).

Honorably mustered out of military service, Aug. 24, 1865, Banks returned to his native city, and was almost immediately elected as a Republican to fill a vacancy in the House, caused by the death of D. W. Gooch, where he continued to serve from the Thirty-ninth to the Forty-second Congress. During this period he voted for the act stopping further contraction of the currency, and was a member of the committee of five to investigate the *Crédit Mobilier* charges. He was chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs at the time Maximilian was in Mexico and war with France seemed likely to follow. He advised a bold policy in regard to the Alabama Claims, advocated our acquisition of Alaska, and reported a bill asserting the right of every naturalized American citizen to renounce all allegiance to his native land, and authorizing the President, if such right should be denied, in reprisal to suspend trade relations with such a Government, and to arrest and detain any of its citizens. In the campaign of 1872, because of a personal quarrel with President Grant, he supported Greeley's candidacy, and as a consequence was himself defeated for reelection. At the beginning of the short session, the month following this defeat, he tendered his resignation from the Committee on Military Affairs in order that the House might be "represented by some member more unequivocably committed to its policy," but the House by a substantial vote refused to excuse him from such service (Dec. 2, 1872, *Congressional Globe,* p. 10). During the two-year interruption of his congressional career he was elected to the Massachusetts Senate for the session of 1874, but in the following November he was returned to Congress as a Democrat. Two years later he was reëlected as a Republican. At the expiration of this term, he was appointed by President Hayes to the position of United States marshal for Massachusetts, and served from Mar. 11, 1879, to Apr. 23, 1888. In that year he was reelected to Congress as a Republican, defeating Col. Thomas W. Higginson. Before the end of the term his health became seriously impaired; he retired to his home in Waltham, where he died, Sept. 1, 1894. He was survived by a son and two daughters, one of whom, Maude Banks, attained some distinction as an actress. By resolution of the Massachusetts General Court provision was made for the erection of a bronze statue of Gen. Banks upon the grounds of the State House. This statue, by Henry H. Kitson, was unveiled Sept. 16, 1908.

[No general biog. of Banks has been published. The story of his early career is told by William M. Thayer in *The Bobbin Boy* (1860). The main features of his military career are presented in the books and reports above cited; see also *Official Records.* Certain phases are discussed by G. F. R. Henderson, in *Stonewall Jackson and the Am. Civil War* (1898), I, 388 ff., and by Geo. C. Eggleston, in *Hist. of the Confederate War* (1910), I, 208. Frank M. Flynn's *Campaigning with Banks in Louisiana* (1887) contains little of value.]

G. H. H.

BANNER, PETER (fl. 1794–1828), architect, was an Englishman who came to Boston in 1794, according to his grandson, George H. Banner of Washington, N. H. (G. N. Gage and others, *History of Washington, N. H.,* 1886). He appeared in the *New York Directory* as house carpenter and master-builder from 1795 to 1798 inclusive, and in 1806 we find him listed in the *Boston Directory* as architect. He seems to have lived in Boston till at least 1828, the date of the last appearance of his name. No will is on record, and the date and place of his death are uncertain. He may have moved to Worcester, for his grandson, George H. Banner (son of Peter Banner, Jr.) was born in Worcester in 1834, and moved later to Washington, N. H. (*Ibid.,* p. 293). Banner's name appears once in the *Boston Directory* as Baner (1822), and it was also occasionally spelled Bonner. It is so spelled in Ellen S. Bulfinch's *Life and Letters of Charles Bulfinch* (1896), who refers on page 118 to the Park Street Church, built in 1810 "from the design of Peter Bonner, an English architect."

W. W. Wheildon, in the *Memoir of Solomon Willard* (designer of the Bunker Hill Monument), published by the Monument Association of Boston in 1865, states on page 29 that Banner had practised his profession in England before coming to this country. The internal evidence apparently bears this out, for the Eben Crafts House in Roxbury, Mass., attributed to him and

built in 1805, shows a developed sense both of composition and technique. The attribution of this design to Banner has been questioned, notably by C. A. Place, in *Charles Bulfinch, Architect and Citizen* (1925), but it appears to be justified. It is made on the basis of Wheildon's statement (*op. cit.*, p. 29), and is followed without question by S. Fiske Kimball (*Domestic Architecture of the American Colonies and of the Early Republic,* 1922). The house is manifestly a work differing from the usual traditional New England mansion of the time; its combination of monumental conception with slimness and extreme refinement of detail seems markedly English; the attribution to Banner is therefore probable.

Banner's great work was the Park Street Church in Boston, in which he was assisted by Daniel Brigham as chief mason, and Solomon Willard (who later himself became an architect) as chief carpenter. The treatment of the front, with high, simple central-entrance motive and the two curved vestibules with a slim colonnade, is unusually fresh, original, beautiful; the whole forms a pleasant foil to the arched windows and severe forms of the church proper. Again, as in the Crafts House, there is a personal note different from the fine New England tradition—a note of finish, monumentality, gracious sophistication. Yet it is the spire which has made the Park Street Church, and Peter Banner with it, famous. Although in one sense it is the final flowering of the tradition of New England spire design, a close examination reveals again and again in the designer a personality and a training different from that of the usual carpenter-architect of the period. The superposed orders are, of course, usual in New England, but the simple way in which the octagonal plan is expressed, and the daring slimness of the columns, with the lightness and delicacy of the detail throughout, reveal a new kind of beauty. Certain critics have found in this steeple the influence of Wren's tower of St. Bride's Church, Fleet St., London (J. Jackson, *The Development of American Architecture, 1783–1830,* 1926, p. 53). Certainly the contrast of plain base and rich spire, and certain tricks in the octagonal plan are the same in each, but nevertheless Banner's interpretation in wood is masterly, and the directness of design and the unassuming expression of the material are even finer than in the Wren example. Of buildings now standing, only the Crafts House at Roxbury and the Park Street Church at Boston can be attributed with any certainty to Banner. It appears, however, that he was the architect of the Old South Parsonage Houses, built in 1809, and long since destroyed. The records of the Old South Church (H. A. Hill, *History of the Old South Church,* 1890, II, 343 ff.) show that Banner won this work over his competitor of the time, Asher Benjamin [*q.v.*]. In fact, after approving the Benjamin plan, the church, at a meeting June 7, 1809, voted to reconsider its former action and to adopt Banner's plan, which was carried into execution, at a total cost of $16,310 (entry of Apr. 11, 1811). In 1819 Banner designed the first building of the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester, Mass., which remained standing until 1910.

[See references in the body of the article.]

T. F. H.

BANNISTER, NATHANIEL HARRINGTON (Jan. 13, 1813–Nov. 2, 1847), playwright, actor, whose birthplace is uncertain, but who was born either in Delaware or Baltimore, Md., made his début in Baltimore at the Front Street Theatre in 1830, as Young Norval. He first appeared in New York at the Chatham Theatre in 1831. He was a popular actor in the South and West, but seems to have been unable to secure a permanent footing in New York. From his many plays he probably made little, although he was one of the most prolific of the early dramatists, and he sold for fifty dollars his most successful piece, *Putnam,* which ran for seventy-eight nights at the Bowery Theatre, New York, where it was first produced, Aug. 5, 1844. It is a vigorous melodrama, in which Washington is a character, but it owed its popularity to the constant danger and thrilling escapes of Israel Putnam, who finally evades Cornwallis by riding down a precipice to the accompaniment of 150 shots. *Putnam* was published in Boston about 1859.

Bannister's other printed plays are *Gaulantus* (1836), produced at the Walnut Street Theatre, Philadelphia, Aug. 31, 1837, a tragedy in rough blank verse dealing with the conquest of Gaul by the Romans; *England's Iron Days* (1837), laid in an indefinite time when Normans and Saxons were at odds, and based on a strife between two brothers; *The Three Brothers* (1840), played at the Chatham Theatre, New York, a more modern but equally illogical melodrama, on Bannister's favorite theme of family quarrels; *The Gentleman of Lyons; or, the Marriage Contract* (1838), played in New Orleans at the Camp Street Theatre in 1837, an obvious imitation of *The Lady of Lyons.* Bannister's unpublished plays as described in contemporary accounts show that he was following the current fashions in playwriting, either by dealing with romantic

themes, reproducing historical characters, or putting on the stage contemporary events. His first play, *Rathanemus* (Camp Street Theatre, Mar. 24, 1835) is known, as are most of his works, only by title. *The Destruction of Jerusalem* (Walnut Street Theatre, Nov. 20, 1837) was a spectacular performance, apparently unsuccessful. *Life in Philadelphia; or, The Unfortunate Author* (Walnut Street Theatre, Jan. 15, 1838) may have revealed the playwright's own tragedy. *Caius Silius* (Walnut Street Theatre, Aug. 27, 1838), laid in Rome, had apparently some merit. On Aug. 27, 1838, at the Franklin Theatre, New York, Bannister appeared as Lucinius in his own tragedy of *The Syracusan Brothers,* and on Aug. 31 he played Alvardo in his play of *The Two Spaniards.* For his benefit on Sept. 7, he chose the part of Julian in his *Gentleman of Lyons.* At the same theatre we find him acting Bob Buckeye in his play of *The Maine Question,* which dealt with the dispute between the United States and England over the Northeastern Boundary. Gen. Scott was the leading character. In the cast was Mrs. Bannister, *née* Amelia Greene, whom he had married in 1835 and who was the widow of the playwright John Augustus Stone. After the production of *Robert Emmett* (New Chatham Theatre, New York, Jan. 6, 1840), Bannister devoted himself to the play dealing with American events. *Richmond Hill* (Greenwich Theatre, New York, May 11, 1846) introduced Washington and André. *The Old Waggoner of New Jersey and Virginia* (Arch Street Theatre, Philadelphia, Feb. 10, 1847) dealt with events in the life of Gen. Morgan. *Murrell, the Land Pirate* (Bowery Theatre, Oct. 30, 1847) took the character of Ichabod Crane into the region of the Mississippi. This play was produced in many parts of the country. *Infidelity* was played at the Arch Street Theatre, Feb. 6, 1847, the year of Bannister's death in New York; and *Oua Costa; or, The Lion of the Forest,* laid during the French and Indian War, was put on at the Arch Street Theatre, Nov. 8, 1850. Other productions of Bannister are difficult to identify. Rees states that his *Wandering Jew* was written in fifteen acts and was represented only in part. *Psammetichus; or, The Twelve Tribes of Egypt* was written for Edwin Forrest, but was not produced by him. The passage quoted in Rees is in better verse than that of any of Bannister's published plays.

[There is a fair account of Bannister in James Rees, *The Dramatic Authors of America* (1845), some slight mention of him in T. Allston Brown, *Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (1903) and *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1870), in Noah M. Ludlow, *Dramatic Life as I Found It* (1880), in R. F. Roden, *Later Am. Plays* (1900); but the record of his activities has to be pieced together largely from Charles Durang, "The Phila. Stage," printed in *The Phila. Sunday Despatch* (series III); see also J. N. Ireland, *Recs. of the N. Y. Stage* (1866), and A. H. Quinn, *Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923).] A.H.Q.

BANVARD, JOHN (Nov. 15, 1815–May 16, 1891), painter, writer, the son of Daniel Banvard, and brother of Joseph Banvard [*q.v.*], was born in New York City. In childhood uncertain health prevented his following outdoor sports, so he amused himself with scientific experiments, verse making, and drawing. His only formal education was received in the New York High School and when he was fifteen he was thrown upon his own resources by the financial failure and death of his father. He went to Louisville, Ky., where he became a drug clerk. When he should have been putting up prescriptions, he was drawing caricatures with chalk upon the walls. Dismissal resulted. Welcoming freedom, he began to paint, but his pictures brought no money and he soon started off with his paint-box after adventure. At New Harmony, Ind., he turned a flatboat into an art gallery and floated down the Wabash River, exhibiting his paintings. A bushel of potatoes, a dozen eggs, or a fowl was an acceptable admission fee to the "show boat." Ignorance of the channel, with its snags and sand-bars, malaria, and scarcity of food made this venture a failure. Pecuniary returns were better when he gave up his boat and painted and exhibited in New Orleans, Natchez, Cincinnati, and Louisville. His ambition was always for size, and he next painted a panorama of Venice, which he had never seen. Having accumulated a small capital, he purchased a museum at St. Louis but lost both capital and museum. Undiscouraged, he peddled goods down the Ohio River to fill his purse. In the spring of 1840, he embarked on the Mississippi River in a skiff, with the project of making drawings for a grand panorama, to be the largest painting in the world. He traveled thousands of miles, exposed to many hardships, drawing incessantly, and sleeping under his skiff with his portfolio for a pillow. With his drawings completed, he erected a building in Louisville and painted the scenes on canvas woven for the purpose at Lowell, Mass. When finished, the "Panorama" was advertised as covering three miles of canvas. The fidelity of the portrayal was testified to by a number of Mississippi River captains and pilots. Its value was geographical; artistic merit it had little or none. It was of the chromo type, and in 1861 Banvard painted the picture, "The Orison," from which the first American chromo was made. "The Panorama of the Mississippi" was exhibited through-

out the United States and in London, where it was admired by Queen Victoria. During the Civil War, Banvard furnished to Generals Frémont and Pope information about Island No. 10 in the Mississippi, which assisted in its capture. He later traveled in Europe, Asia, and Africa, and painted scenes in Palestine and a "Panorama of the Nile." His pictures were always rapidly executed and with a certain crude vigor but without technical skill. Banvard was almost as facile a writer as a painter. He wrote about 1,700 poems, some of which appeared in magazines. He also wrote *A Description of the Mississippi River* (1849), *A Pilgrimage to the Holy Land* (1852), *Amasis, or the Last of the Pharaohs* (1864), *The Private Life of a King, Embodying the Suppressed Memoirs of the Prince of Wales, afterwards George IV* (1876), *The Tradition of the Temple,* a poem (1883), *Carrinia* (1875). The dramas *Amasis* and *Carrinia* were performed respectively at the Boston Theatre and the Broadway Theatre, New York. As a writer, Banvard's claim to artistic excellence is probably no stronger than as a painter. But his personality was rugged and original. In his mature years his appearance was like that of many Mississippi River pilots—a thick-set figure, with heavy features, bushy dark hair, and rounded beard. In 1880 he settled in Watertown, S. Dak., where he lived with his children. He died there May 16, 1891.

[One of the chief sources of information is an anonymous biog. pamphlet, *Banvard; or the Adventures of an Artist* (1851). Articles on his life and his "Panorama" appeared in *Howitt's Jour. of Lit. and Pop. Prog.*, II, 145; *Chambers' Edinburgh Jour.*, VII, 2nd ser., 395; and *Littell's Living Age*, XX, 314. Obituary in the *Sioux Falls* (S. Dak.) *Argus-Leader*, May 20, 1891.]

S.G.B.

BANVARD, JOSEPH (May 9, 1810–Sept. 28, 1887), author, Baptist clergyman, was descended from an old French family, the Bon Verds, whose coat of arms later came into his possession. His grandfather escaped from France on account of persecution, first to Amsterdam, then to America. Daniel Banvard, the father of Joseph, and of John [*q.v.*], was involved in a business partnership which failed, his savings were lost, and at his death, soon after, his family was left in poverty. Joseph, born in New York City, was in his early twenties at the time of his father's death and had completed a course at South Reading Academy. He afterward studied at the Newton Theological Institution, from which he was graduated in 1835. He then became pastor of the Second Baptist Church, Salem, Mass., where he remained eleven years. Pastorates of varying lengths followed: in Boston; West Cambridge, Mass.; New York; Pawtucket, R. I.; Worcester, Mass.; Paterson, N. J.; and Neponset, Mass. In 1866 he was elected president of the National Theological Institute, Washington, D. C., a school for colored preachers and teachers, but resigned within a year.

As early as 1850 his interest began to be divided between his clerical duties and the writing of books, particularly history. His most important works are *The Christian Melodist; a Collection of Hymns* (1850), *Novelties of the New World* (1852), *The American Statesman; or Illustrations of the Life and Character of Daniel Webster* (1853), *Priscilla; or Trials for the Truth. An Historic Tale of the Puritans and the Baptists* (1854), *Wisdom, Wit, and Whims of Distinguished Ancient Philosophers* (1855), *Tragic Scenes in the History of Maryland and the Old French War* (1856), *Old Grips and Little Tidd* (1873), *First Explorers of North America* (1874), *Southern Explorers and Colonists* (1874), *Soldiers and Patriots of the Revolution* (1876), and an eight-volume juvenile collection. He had a keen interest in American history, especially that of the colonial era. In his writing of history he showed some knowledge of the use of sources. In one of his prefaces he said, "We have availed ourselves of the most reliable sources of information from the journals and letters of the first Pilgrims down to historians of a recent date." There seems to have been little sifting and weighing of historical material, but the proportion between important and unimportant events was fairly well preserved. He was susceptible to romance in history and obviously enjoyed relating adventures. He had a readable narrative style, enlivened by many details of action and local color. The moral and religious values of history appealed, perhaps disproportionately, to him. In *The American Statesman* he devoted considerable attention to proving Daniel Webster an intrinsically religious man, a devout believer in prayer and the Bible. He died at Neponset, Sept. 28, 1887, and his funeral took place in the Harvard Street Baptist Church, Boston, where he had formerly been pastor.

[Sources of information about Joseph Banvard are an anonymous biog. pamphlet sketch of his brother, John Banvard, entitled *Banvard; or the Adventures of an Artist* (1851), an article on John Banvard in *Howitt's Jour. of Lit. and Pop. Prog.*, II, 145, and obituaries of Joseph Banvard in the *Boston Transcript*, Oct. 1, 1887, and the *Salem Gazette*, Oct. 7, 1887.]

S.G.B.

BAPST, JOHN (Dec. 17, 1815–Nov. 2, 1887), Jesuit missionary, educator, is chiefly noted among his coreligionists for what he suffered in defense of his principles; for it fell to his lot to

maintain the Jesuit interests in a hostile environment, for three decades of the nineteenth century (1850–80). He was born at La Roche in Fribourg, Switzerland, a canton noted for its catholicity, at the capital of which Canisius, a celebrated Jesuit of the sixteenth century founded the Collège St. Michel. Here young Bapst was educated, entered upon his novitiate in the order Sept. 30, 1835, and was ordained priest on the last day of 1846. He was destined for missionary work in North America, where about the time he arrived at Baltimore, the Abnaki Indians of Oldtown, Me., were asking for the services of a "Black Robe," in memory of the Jesuits, who had visited them two centuries earlier. Bapst was thereupon sent to these Indians, although then ignorant of their language and also of English. After two years' service among them he found it necessary to supplement his meager stipend by ministering to the Catholics of the nearby towns. In 1850 he was at Eastport, and somewhat later he became priest at Ellsworth, an intensely Protestant town, then seething with the excitement that the "Know-Nothing" party was causing in Maine. Bapst felt called upon to protest against the religious exercises used in the public schools in which the children of his parishioners were required to participate. He went so far as to instigate a lawsuit against the school committee, which so wrought upon the feelings of the town meeting that resolutions were passed for the expulsion and punishment of the priest. Whereupon a mob visited him at his home, tarred and feathered him, and drove him from the place (July 1854). This cruel treatment undermined his health, and it was some time before he recovered sufficiently to carry on his work. In 1858 ground had been broken at Boston for a college, which two years later was assigned to the Jesuits as a training-school. Father Bapst was placed in charge, and maintained the institution for scholastics for about three years; then as Boston College, the school was opened for lay students. As first rector he laid the foundation of this college, and gave it the advantage of his scholarly direction until 1869. After this period he served several New England parishes; and built St. Joseph Church, Providence, in 1877. This was his last parish, as his mind began to fail, due, it was believed, to his afflictions. He retired to the home of his order at Woodstock, Md., where he was cared for in his declining years. He was something of a zealot, learned, pious, and entirely devoted to the traditions of his order and to the upbuilding of the church of his choice.

[On his mission to the Indians, see E. Vetromile, *The Abnakis* (1866), p. 102; John G. Shea, *Cath. Missions among the Indian Tribes of the U. S.* (1854), p. 162. His Ellsworth experience may be inferred from the records of that village, yet extant. His connection with the coll. is told in Rev. W. E. Murphy, "Story of Boston Coll.," in *Cath. Builders of the Nation* (1923), V, 249–53. On his parish at Providence, see R. M. Bayles, *Hist. of Providence County, R. I.* (1891), I, 479. His career is narrated in *Records of the Am. Cath. Hist. Soc. of Phila.* (1889), II, 13, 21.] L.P.K.

BARAGA, FREDERIC (June 29, 1797–Jan. 19, 1868), Roman Catholic missionary, was born in the castle of Malavas, near Döbernig. The assertion that he was of noble birth and renounced a vast heritage to devote himself to the life of a missionary is incorrect, for while his parents, Johann Nepomuc Baraga and Maria Katharin Josefa *née* Jencic, were Slovenians of good family, they were not connected with the aristocracy. When Frederic was nine years old he was sent to be educated by a private tutor at Laibach. There he entered the gymnasium in 1809, and afterward took a law course in the University of Vienna. Upon receiving his degree in 1821, he determined to enter the church. Returning to Laibach, he studied at the seminary there, and was ordained priest Sept. 21, 1823. For seven years he served parishes in his native country, but in 1830, after the founding at Vienna of the Leopoldine Society for foreign missions, he offered himself for service in the United States. In his letter he referred to himself as speaking German, Illyrian, French, Latin, Italian, and English. His services were accepted, and on reaching Cincinnati, early in 1831, he began to add the Ottawa language to his other linguistic accomplishments. In May of the same year, he was sent as missionary to the Ottawa village of Arbre Croche, now Harbor Springs, Mich.

Father Baraga was very enthusiastic about this his first Indian mission, where he was cordially received, and where he baptized and taught many neophytes. In the course of his journeys to various villages of the tribe, he visited the islands in Lake Michigan, and Grand River, where, at the site of the modern Grand Rapids, he began a mission in 1833. At this place, however, he incurred the enmity of the traders for his scathing denunciation of the liquor traffic they carried on with the tribesmen, and in 1835 he was transferred from the Ottawa missions to the far shores of Lake Superior. On July 27, 1835, he arrived at La Pointe, the American Fur Company's station, on Madeline Island, opposite Bayfield, Wis. Here was a village of Chippewa Indians, mingled with many retired French-Canadian voyageurs and half-breeds. The church on the island long shown to tourists as Father Marquette's, was in fact built by Baraga about 1837, after a visit the preceding year to

Europe to obtain funds. His youngest sister, Antonia de Hoeffern, came with him on his return to La Pointe, where her gracious presence was remembered long after the severities of the climate had induced her to return home.

During the long winters of this northern clime, Father Baraga applied himself to the study of the Chippewa language, the universal dialect of all the Northwest. He prepared several religious books in this dialect, some of which were published in Paris, others in Detroit and Cincinnati. But his most useful works, still depended upon by all Chippewa scholars, are his *Theoretical and Practical Grammar of the Otchipwe Language* (Detroit, 1850), and his *Dictionary of the Otchipwe Language* (Cincinnati, 1853). His devotional works are still used in the Catholic missions.

In the course of his ministrations to the members of his scattered flock Father Baraga made long journeys by canoe in summer and snowshoe in winter, encountering many difficulties and enduring many hardships. In this way he visited Grand Portage, Fond du Lac (near Superior, Wis.), and L'Anse at the foot of Keweenaw Bay. At this last place, now the seat of Baraga County, Mich., he began a mission in 1843 to which he soon removed his residence. There he built log houses for his Indian converts, and taught them to live in civilized fashion. While at L'Anse he also ministered to the miners, who about this time were flocking to the newly discovered copper mines in the Northern Peninsula, and by his courtesy and kindliness made friends with both Catholics and Protestants. Heedless of personal comfort, he went wherever need called along the bleak shores of Lake Superior, comforting and admonishing tribesmen, traders, and travelers, counting not his life dear unto himself if by these means he might save others. News of his missions spread, and on Nov. 1, 1853, he was consecrated at Cincinnati bishop of Upper Michigan. The seat of the new bishopric was at Sault Ste. Marie, and from there Bishop Baraga continued his ministrations, often visiting his former missions of Lake Superior. "I have had the pleasure," wrote a traveler of the fifties, "once in my life, of conversing with an absolute gentleman . . . kind, serene, urbane, and utterly sincere. This perfect gentleman was a Roman Catholic bishop who had spent thirty years of his life in the woods near Lake Superior." In 1865 a new bishopric was created called the see of Marquette, and to this embryo town of northern Michigan, Baraga removed his residence. Here he built a cathedral, which two and a half years later became his final resting place. A monument to his memory has been erected in the church at Döbernig, the funds for which were largely contributed by the Slovenians of America.

[Father Chrysostomus Verwyst, *Life and Letters of Rt. Rev. Frederic Baraga, First Bishop of Marquette* (1900); Rev. A. I. Rezek, *Hist. of the Diocese of Sault Ste. Marie and Marquette* (1907), I, 1–215, adds to Verwyst's account new material, esp. several letters of Baraga; see also Rev. J. L. Zaplotnik, "Lecture on Bishop Baraga," in *Acta et Dicta* (1917), pp. 99–100. Baraga's linguistic writings are described in J. C. Pilling, *Bibliography of Algonquian Languages* (1891), pp. 24–30.]

L.P.K.

BARANOV, ALEXANDER ANDREEVICH (1746–Apr. 16/28, 1819), an early Alaska fur-trader, was originally a merchant of Kargopol in eastern Russia. In 1780 he emigrated to Siberia, where he became manager of a glass-factory at Irkutsk and later a successful trader. The return of the Bering party from Alaska in 1742 loaded down with sea otter skins started a rush for the fur-bearing Aleutian Islands. In the course of the next forty years the sea otters were killed or driven off from these islands, and it became necessary to go farther and farther in search of good hunting-grounds. The distant expeditions called for a considerable outlay of money and necessitated the formation of companies. G. I. Shelekhov was one of the ablest of Siberian traders. By 1790 he had formed several companies and had established the American headquarters on Kodiak Island. He offered the place of resident director in America to Baranov, who accepted and started for his post in August 1790. He spent altogether twenty-eight years (1790–1818) in Alaska as head of the Russian American Company (organized in 1799). Until 1808 he directed affairs from Kodiak and after that date from Sitka.

Baranov had enormous difficulties but tremendous will-power. He made a reputation for himself and dividends for his company, but it was done at the expense of the natives of western Alaska, who were practically his slaves. He sent them in their frail skin boats to hunt on the exposed coast between Kodiak and Sitka. Many of the hunters were either swallowed up by the rough sea or killed by the savage natives of those shores. When the otter was driven from the Alaskan coast, Baranov hired out the Aleuts to Yankee traders, who took them to hunt along the California shores. In 1811, 1812, 1813 the company received 270,000 rubles as its share of the California catch. One of Baranov's problems was to get food and supplies in and fur out of Alaska. His fleet was quite untrustworthy. Many of his ships were lost on the way to or from Ko-

diak to Okhotsk and those that succeeded in making the voyage spent a year or more in the effort. The Russians associated with him were made up in part of incompetent, coarse, brutal half-breeds or criminals of Siberia who could not be trusted. During the first years the colony was undermanned, half starved, down with scurvy or other diseases. Not only was Baranov short of food but also of things to give the natives of south-eastern Alaska in exchange for their fur. In 1800 he began buying supplies from the Yankees, sometimes the ship and cargo. From that time on to the end of his career he was more or less dependent on the American traders. They helped him in various ways. They took cargoes for him to Canton, to Manila, or to Okhotsk. Occasionally they got the best of him, and he clung to them out of necessity rather than choice. He tried to make a deal with Astor's company in the hope of excluding the individual Boston trader, but this agreement was of short duration.

Baranov was a fur-trader rather than an empire builder. He worked for a company that demanded dividends and asked no questions as to means employed. He satisfied the company by exploiting the country and the natives. In this respect he was no worse than the average trader. He was superior to most of them, however, in that he succeeded against such odds. He had to depend on himself, on his fist, and on his brain. This strenuous life began to tell on his health as he grew older. In 1809 he asked to be relieved, but it was not before 1818 that a successor appeared. Toward the end of that year Baranov set out for Russia in the ship *Kutuzov*. It put in for supplies at the Hawaiian Islands, Guam, and Batavia. At the last-named port Baranov was taken ill, and after leaving this place he grew gradually worse. He died on Apr. 28, 1819, and was buried at sea.

[The material for this sketch is taken from K. Khlebnikov's biog. of Baranov, *Zhizneopisanie Alexandra Andreevicha Baranova* (St. Petersburg 1835), P. Tikhmenev's *Istorichcskoe Obozrenie Obrazovaniia Rossisko-Amerikanskoi Kompanii* (Part I, St. Petersburg 1861), and *Materiali dlia Istorii Russkikh Zaselenii* (St. Petersburg 1861). There are numerous references to Baranov in the published journals of traders who visited Alaska during his lifetime.]

F.A.G.

BARBER, AMZI LORENZO (June 22, 1843–Apr. 17, 1909), capitalist, was the first to exploit the so-called pitch lake on the Island of Trinidad, using the asphalt taken from it in the paving of city streets. He was born at Saxton's River, Vt., the son of Amzi D. and Nancy Irene (Bailey) Barber. His father was of Scotch-Irish, his mother of French-English ancestry. His great-grandfather, Thomas Barber, had settled at Townsend, Vt., before the Revolution. His mother's family had migrated to Oneida County, N. Y., where she was born. The elder Amzi Barber, one of the "Lane Seminary rebels," had studied at Oberlin College, Ohio, in the early years of that institution. There the son was graduated in 1867, the family meanwhile having moved from Vermont to Ohio. He was a teacher for four years at Howard University, the school for colored freedmen started after the Civil War at Washington, D. C. Dealing extensively in real estate in the northwest section of Washington, he had his attention directed to the growing importance of asphalt as paving material. In the extensive street improvements made in the District of Columbia, asphalt came into general use for the first time in the United States. In 1878, Barber engaged in the asphalt-paving business, the chief source of supply for the world being the Trinidad deposit to which reference has been made. Ten years later he formed the Trinidad Asphalt Company to take over leases of the deposit, obtaining from the British Government concessions covering the entire "lake" of 114 acres for a term of forty-two years. He was then in a position to supply asphalt to paving companies in the United States and England. After Washington, Buffalo, N. Y., was the first American city to use a large quantity of asphalt for paving, but other municipalities followed. In the first ten years more than 3,500,000 square yards of pavement were laid in the United States. By 1896 there were thirty asphalt-paving companies at work in America and the Barber Company had laid one-half of all the asphalt pavements in the country. The export of asphalt from Trinidad had increased from 23,000 tons in 1880 to 86,000 in 1895. Within the ensuing five years the quantity nearly doubled. This was a period of expansion and of stock-jobbing among the asphalt companies. In the maze of conflicting statements by various interests and in the absence of any authorized responsible publicity, it is difficult, if not impossible, to ascertain the real sequence of developments. In 1899 and 1900 two great combines of asphalt interests were formed —the Asphalt Company of America and the National Asphalt Company. Early in 1901 Barber disposed of his personal holdings and in December of that year both companies were in the hands of receivers. There were charges and recriminations as to the profits made by the transfer of the stocks of various subsidiary companies to the Asphalt Company of America. Barber retired from the asphalt business, although the Barber Asphalt Paving Company continued in existence and after the formation (in 1903) of the "Trust," known as the General Asphalt Com-

pany, it was the principal operating branch of the main organization. In 1904 Barber himself organized the A. L. Barber Asphalt Company, an independent concern, for the purpose of marketing the asphalt imported from Venezuela. From 1889 until his death Barber was a member of the Board of Trustees of Oberlin College. He was twice married: in 1867 to Celia M. Brodley of Geneva, Ohio; and in 1871 to Julia Louise Langdon of Washington, D. C.

[*Gen. Cat. of Oberlin Coll. 1833–1908*; article by Jas. R. Severance in the *Oberlin Alumni Mag.*, June 1909, pp. 341–46; Gen. Francis V. Greene, "Asphalt and Its Uses," in *Trans. Am. Institute of Mining Engineers*, XVII, 355–75.] W.B.S.

BARBER, DONN (Oct. 19, 1871–May 29, 1925), architect, son of Charles Gibbs Barber and Georgiana Williams, was born in Washington, D. C., but was brought up in New York City, spending his summers with his grandparents on the Hudson. These early surroundings marked his life, for he remained a New Yorker, first and last, a believer in the greatness of his city, enjoying every phase of its life. He was a member of the class of 1893 in the Sheffield Scientific School at Yale. Here, as a member of the Berzelius Society, he took an active part in the life of the University. His music naturally drew him to the Glee Club, his draftsmanship to the *Record*, with both of which he was closely associated. After graduation he returned to New York, entering the office of Carrère & Hastings, and following a special course at the School of Architecture at Columbia University. During this early period of his professional training he was thus brought into close contact with John Carrère [*q.v.*], in whom he found that inspiration to great effort so valuable to the beginner, while on the other hand Carrère recognized in Barber many of the qualities most essential to the successful practise of architecture, valued the opportunity to help a young man of great promise and, until his own untimely death, kept in close touch with his young friend, exercising always a sane and helpful influence.

In the autumn of 1894 Barber went to Paris to continue his studies. He entered the École National des Beaux Arts in the following spring, and throughout his four years did brilliantly, under the great inspiration of French art. On receiving his *diplôme* in 1898, Barber returned to New York, where he plunged at once into hard work with the enthusiasm that was characteristic of his whole life. In Paris he had met and fallen in love with Elsie Yandell of Louisville, Ky. He wanted to marry but had no means other than what he could earn. His talents and perseverance were such, however, that he was able to marry the following year. He presently bought a place at White Plains, N. Y., where his wife and the four children born to them spent long summers.

Barber worked harder than most men, rarely leaving his office before seven, yet he dined out often, was frequently at the theatre or opera and later at a ball or dance, and was always able to be out again next morning ready for his day's work. His strength was remarkable, but his love of life and of people was even more extraordinary. He kept up his interest in Yale as president of his society's New York club throughout his life. He always had time to help a friend with counsel in his work, or to direct the development of teaching in his art by actively participating in the work of the Beaux Arts Society. His professional position as a foremost American architect of his time is attested by the list of great buildings given below. He accomplished all these in the short space of twenty-seven years, for he died at the age of fifty-four. Professionally he was internationally recognized. He was a member of the Architectural League of New York (president 1925); the National Academy of Design; the Society of Beaux Arts Architects (president 1909, 1910); the National Sculpture Society; the Société des Architectes Diplômés; an honorary corresponding member of the Royal Institute of British Architects, and a fellow of the American Institute of Architects. His buildings include the New York Cotton Exchange, the National Park Bank, the Mutual Bank, the Lotus Club, the Institute of Musical Art, the Central Branch Building of the Young Women's Christian Association, and the Hospital for the Feeble Minded, Randall's Island, all in New York City; in Hartford, Conn., the Travelers Insurance Building, the Ætna Life Insurance Building, the Hartford National Bank, the Connecticut State Library, and the Supreme Court Building; in Washington, D. C., the Department of Justice Building (winner of the Government competition).

Donn Barber's architectural work is marked by unfailing good taste. He was in no sense a strict stylist, although the greater part of his work is Renaissance in feeling, and in much of it the influence of his French training is obvious. The National Park Bank is typical of the academic brilliance of the French idealism; the Connecticut State Library and Supreme Court illustrate his skill in straightforward and monumental planning.

[*Yale Univ. Obituary Rec.* (1925); *Am. Architect*, CXXVII, No. 2474, 537; *Jour. Am. Institute of Archi-*

tects, XIII, No. 7, 274; Thomas Hastings in the *Architectural Rec.,* LVIII, No. 1, 86; *Who's Who in America,* 1925–26.]
C.C.Z.
T.F.H.

BARBER, EDWIN ATLEE (Aug. 13, 1851–Dec. 12, 1916), archeologist, the son of William Edwin and Anne Eliza (Townsend) Barber, was born in Baltimore, Md., and was put to school when old enough at Williston Seminary, East Hampton, Mass. He entered Lafayette College in 1869 but left before completing his course and obtained a position as assistant naturalist with the Hayden Survey (1874–75), in whose ranks many men began a brilliant future. With a *flair* for archeology, Barber gave most of his attention to the collection of prehistoric relics, which, in Colorado, Utah, Arizona, and New Mexico, were rather easy to come at. Archeological work, which was begun by Maj. J. W. Powell in 1869, was still in 1874 in a nascent state, when only preliminary surveys without excavations could be made. Much could be gathered of objects of material culture, as pottery, axes, arrowheads, and the like, weathered out on the sites of ruins. To these objects and especially to the decorated pottery, Barber devoted his attention. The study of ancient Pueblo ceramic art in its infancy was contributed to by him in numerous papers. Not only archeology, but the ethnology of the Indians of the region interested him, and one of his most valuable papers was on the subject of Ute Indian dialects. In ceramic art in its various branches he never lost interest, becoming finally a leading authority. He prepared many short articles which appeared in the *American Naturalist* and which embody most of his work with the Hayden Survey. The demands of education led him to return to Lafayette College, where he obtained the degree of B.S. in 1877. On Feb. 5, 1880, he was married to Nellie Louise Parker. From 1879 to 1895 he was postmaster of West Philadelphia. During a part of this time he was also a graduate student in ethnology and philology at Lafayette College, obtaining the degree of Ph.D. in 1893. The lure of ceramics drew him to the curatorship of this branch in the Pennsylvania Museum and School of Industrial Art in Fairmount Park, Philadelphia, where he became director in 1907. While there his energy was given mostly to the history and classification of modern ceramics by periods, countries, and style of art. He was easily first in this branch of his subject and his numerous books on ceramics are constantly consulted. A fair proportion of his 200 archeological articles were on this topic. None of them stands out as of major importance, although the whole contribution is regarded as of value to science. Most of his work on Western archeology was new and therefore superior by this feature. His leading works on ceramics are: *The Pottery and Porcelain of the United States* (1893); *Hispano-Moresque Pottery* (1915); *Maiolica of Mexico* (1908). Especially interesting was his rediscovery of the Pennsylvania German tulip ware of the nineteenth century, products of a quaint folk art in which tulips and German mottoes were used in the decoration (*Tulip Ware,* 1903).

[*Who's Who in America,* 1916–1917; E. A. Barber, *Geneal. Rec. of the Atlee Family* (1884), pp. 104–5; E. A. Barber, *Genealogy of the Barber Family* (1890), pp. 120–21; J. F. Stonecipher, *Biog. Cat. of Lafayette Coll.* (1913), pp. 184, 655; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Dec. 13, 1916.]
W.H.

BARBER, FRANCIS (1751–Feb. 11, 1783), Revolutionary soldier, belonged to a family of Irish origin, and was born at Princeton, N. J. He graduated at Princeton in 1767, and a few years later he took charge as rector of the academy at Elizabethtown, which he conducted until the opening of the war. Here among other subjects he taught English, and had for a few months Alexander Hamilton as a pupil.

Barber fought throughout the war, serving in many important campaigns. He is described as "of striking personal appearance"; his tact and ability in discipline are noted; and doubtless it was because of these qualities and his bravery that he won the esteem of Washington, Greene, and Lafayette. He was commissioned major of the 3rd New Jersey Regiment on Jan. 18, 1776, and lieutenant-colonel on Nov. 28, 1776. In the autumn of that year he was at German Flats, N. Y., returning in time to make the Trenton-Princeton campaign. He served at Brandywine, and was wounded at Germantown. When Gen. Steuben undertook the drilling of the army at Valley Forge, Barber was appointed assistant inspector-general. Wounded through the body at the battle of Monmouth, he was able, however, to accompany Gen. Sullivan's punitive expedition against the Indians of western New York; and in the battle of Newtown in 1779 he was again wounded. In the following year when the British from their base at Staten Island advanced to Springfield, N. J., Barber acted as deputy adjutant-general, conducted the pursuit of the enemy from Elizabeth, and received Gen. Greene's especial commendation. He was transferred to the 1st New Jersey Regiment on Jan. 1, 1781, and was immediately entrusted with a delicate mission. Troops of the Pennsylvania and New Jersey line, disheartened and indignant at their long arrears of pay, mutinied, and Barber

was assigned by Washington to quell the outbreak. The mutiny occurred at one of the darkest periods of the war, soon after Arnold's treason, when the finances were in confusion, and the outlook most unpromising. The quelling of the mutiny was therefore a vital matter. A few months later came the British invasion of Virginia, and Barber served under Lafayette, commanding at the battle of Green Spring (near Williamsburg) a battalion of Continental light infantry. Lafayette's operations culminated in the siege of Yorktown. In the final assault Barber, fighting under the immediate command of Hamilton, led a battalion, "first in the supporting column"—as Lafayette reported to the commander-in-chief. Following the ending of active warfare the army was stationed at Newburgh, and there Barber was accidentally killed by a falling tree. He was twice married: first, to Mary Ogden, daughter of Robert Ogden; and second, to her cousin, Anne Ogden, daughter of Moses Ogden.

[Ebenezer Elmer, *Elogy on Francis Barber* (1783; reprinted 1917); E. F. Hatfield, *Hist. of Elizabeth* (1868); Charlemagne Tower, *Lafayette* (1895); Barber's Order Book (for the Sullivan expedition) is in the possession of the N. J. Hist. Soc.]

E. K. A.

BARBER, JOHN WARNER (Feb. 2, 1798–June 22, 1885), engraver, historian, was born in East Windsor, Hartford County, Conn., the son of Elijah and Mary (Warner) Barber, and a descendant of Thomas Barber, an Englishman who settled at Windsor with the Stiles party in 1685. In his sixteenth year he was apprenticed to Abner Reed, a bank-note engraver of East Windsor, with whom he remained for seven years, and then opened a business of his own in New Haven, in 1823. His work included both wood and copper-plate engraving, neither of which ever improved beyond the point of mediocrity, his chief concern being not so much the production of engravings as the preaching of the Gospel by means of pictures. When still a young man, he conceived the idea of a history prepared from the personal recollections of participants in the stirring scenes incident to the early settlement of the United States. He drove about the country in a one-horse wagon in order to carry out this historical work, and in 1827 he published his first book, *Historical Scenes in the United States.* He also issued numerous other works on various sections of the country, some of which were illustrated by copper plates "Drawn & Engraved by J. W. Barber, N. Haven." With Henry Howe of New Haven, who accompanied him on his travels, he prepared a series of historical works on New York, New Jersey, and Virginia. *Our Whole Country, or the Past and Present of the United States, Historical and Descriptive* (1861) is his largest work, and required five years to compile. William James Linton, the wood engraver, says that Barber engraved about 400 woodcuts, from original drawings in 1856–61, for this work. Among his other numerous historical works may be mentioned the following: *Past and Present of the United States* (1828); *New England Scenes* (1833); *Connecticut Historical Collections* (1836, 1837, 1846); *Elements of General History* (1844); *Massachusetts Historical Collections* (1839, 1844); *History and Antiquities of New England, New York and New Jersey* (1841, 1856); *History and Antiquities of New Haven* (1831); and *The Loyal West in the Times of the Rebellion* (1865). These exhibit a most painstaking method of gathering minute details, the value of which, as historical data, has largely disappeared with the passing of the generation with which Barber was associated. Taken collectively they are very much in the nature of an immense local history of the country. Several of his emblematic books on religious subjects were combined and issued as a thick octavo volume called *The Bible Looking Glass,* of which 175,000 copies were sold in the United States alone, and of which a revised and a German edition were published as late as 1898.

His religious writings are characterized by faith and enthusiasm. Many of his designs and engravings were allegorical, to which he devoted numerous pages of explanatory text. In these writings he presupposed a great amount of credulity on the part of his readers. His principal works of this type were: *Religious Allegories* (1866); *Religious Emblems* (1866); *The Dance of Death* (1846); *The Book of Similitudes* (1860); and *The Picture Preacher* (1880).

Barber was married twice; first to Harriet Lines, who died in 1826, and second to Ruth Green. By his first wife he had one daughter and by his second, two sons and three daughters. He died in New Haven.

[An accurate biog. of Barber as an engraver is given in *A History of Wood Engraving in America,* by W. J. Linton (1882); brief mention in D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers on Copper and Steel* (1907); and in Wm. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (1918 ed.); *New Haven Evening Register,* June 22, 1885; H. R. Stiles, *Hist. and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor, Conn.* (1892).]

R. C. S.

BARBER, OHIO COLUMBUS (Apr. 20, 1841–Feb. 4, 1920), manufacturer, was born in Middlebury (now a part of Akron), Ohio, third of the nine children of George Barber, a cooper from Connecticut, and Eliza Smith Barber, of

Dutch descent. Young Barber attended the public schools until his sixteenth year, when he left school to sell matches. In 1847, his father had started a match manufactory in a barn. After the manner of the times, Ohio Columbus traveled by wagon through Indiana, Michigan, and Pennsylvania, distributing his father's product. The business prospered. In 1862, Ohio Columbus, then twenty-one years of age, took entire charge of it. Two years later, the Barber Match Company, a stock company, was formed. In 1881, early in the movement for the consolidation of competing companies, Barber's company combined with a large number of others in the Diamond Match Company. This combination controlled about eighty-five per cent of the trade of the match industry (John Moody, *The Truth About Trusts,* 1904, p. 245; *Barberton News,* Feb. 6, 1920). Besides the numerous plants in the United States, the Diamond Match Company owned controlling interests in factories in England, Peru, Switzerland, Chile, and Germany. Of this large organization Barber was vice-president from 1881 to 1888, president from 1888 to 1913, and chairman of the board of directors from 1913 until his death. While the development of the match industry was the dominant activity of Barber's business career, his other interests were manifold. In 1891, he laid out and developed the city of Barberton, near Akron, and to that place moved the Akron plant of the Diamond Match Company. In order to supply packing-boxes, he went into the manufacture of strawboard. As a result he later became the organizer of the American Strawboard Company. He also established the Diamond Rubber Company which was later absorbed by the B. F. Goodrich Company. He was one of the founders of the First National Bank of Akron and its president. Upon the consolidation of the latter with the Second National, he was again chosen president. He constructed the Akron Barberton Belt Line Railroad, and in other ways had a large part in the industrial development of Akron and the surrounding community. Through the Diamond Match Company his influence was nation-wide. He was also interested in local philanthropies. He built and equipped a hospital at a cost of $200,000 which he presented to the city of Akron. After providing for his family, he left the rest of his estate, amounting to over $500,000, to be used for education along industrial and agricultural lines.

Barber was a tall, erect, well-proportioned man who gave much care to his physical condition. His character was marked by courage, self-confidence, and persistence. He was twice married; in 1866 to Laura L. Brown who died in 1894, and in 1915 to Mary F. Orr.

[S. A. Lane, *Fifty Years of Akron and Summit County* (1892); *Ann. Rept. Western Reserve Hist. Soc.* 1920; O. E. Olin, *Akron and Environs* (1917); G. Frederick Wright, *Representative Citizens of Ohio* (1913). The last is the best account.] E. J. B.

BARBOUR, JAMES (June 10, 1775–June 7, 1842), statesman, was descended from a Scotch merchant named James Barbour, who in the latter half of the seventeenth century settled in eastern Virginia and there became a prosperous citizen. His son and namesake, dispossessed of his inheritance after his father's death and his mother's second marriage, migrated westward and became, it is said, the first settler in the region between the Blue Ridge and Southwest Mountains, in what was then Culpeper County. His son, Thomas, born near Barboursville village, was for years justice of the peace, served in the House of Burgesses, and was a member of the Virginia conventions of 1774 and 1775. In 1771 he married Mary, daughter of Richard Thomas and Isabella (Pendleton) Thomas. Their third child, James, born at Barboursville, Orange County, Va., was named for his grandfather; their fourth child was named Philip Pendleton [*q.v.*] for his mother's maternal grandfather. The Barbours were one of the chief families of the county, but Thomas Barbour, because of earlier extravagant hospitality and financial reverses, was unable to provide adequately for the education of his two gifted sons. In old age James Barbour stated that he had severely felt the lack of means of obtaining an education. He attended no institution of higher learning, but for a time was the pupil of James Waddel, a blind Presbyterian minister, at the latter's house near Gordonsville. He was admitted to the bar, but attained no such professional distinction as his brother. Chiefly occupied throughout mature life with affairs of state and the management of his plantation, he, like so many other distinguished Virginians of his day, acquired most of his education from his own reading and the political and social life in which he participated.

Entering the Virginia House of Delegates in 1798, he represented Orange County in that body continuously, except for the sessions 1805–7, until 1812. The first moment of his political existence, he said, was that in which he supported the Virginia Resolutions of 1798. In his eloquent speech on this occasion, he showed himself to be a disciple of the Jefferson-Madison school of strict construction and state rights (*The Virginia Report of 1799–1800. . . . Resolutions of Dec. 21, 1798, The Debate and Proceed-*

ings Thereon, 1850, pp. 54–70). Regarding the Alien and Sedition Acts as an usurpation of power by the Federal Government, he asserted the right of the state to declare them unconstitutional. From "absolute consolidated government," he prayed, "Good Lord deliver us!" His prominence in state politics and acceptability to the dominant party are attested by the many marks of preferment he received. Elected speaker of the House of Delegates in February 1809, he continued in this office until his election as governor on Jan. 3, 1812. In 1810 he drew the bill which established the Virginia Literary Fund and laid the foundations for public education in the state (Ruffin's *Farmers' Register,* 1836, III, 688). As governor, his chief activities and recommendations were connected with the prosecution of the War of 1812.

While still governor, he was elected to the United States Senate, following the death of Richard Brent. He took his seat on Jan. 11, 1815, and continued to hold it until appointed to the cabinet in 1825. During part of the first session of the Sixteenth Congress, he was president *pro tem.,* and during his term he served as chairman of the Committees of Military Affairs and Foreign Relations. By supporting the United States Bank and voting for Calhoun's bonus bill, he manifested his sympathy with the nationalistic spirit which immediately resulted from the War of 1812. On the other hand, his advocacy of the indemnification of Matthew Lyon, one of the sufferers under the Sedition Law, was typically Jeffersonian in its characterization of that measure as tyrannical and unconstitutional; and in his conspicuous discussion of the Missouri question, 1820–21, he showed himself to be still an advocate of state rights, though not an apologist for slavery. He proposed in the Senate the linking of Maine and Missouri in one bill (*Annals of Congress,* 16 Cong., 1 Sess., 101–7), consistently opposed the imposition of any conditions upon the admission of Missouri as a state (*Ibid.,* pp. 314–35), and objected at first to any restriction of slavery in the territories. John Quincy Adams stated that, when the conflict was hottest, Barbour informally suggested a convention of states to dissolve the Union (*Memoirs,* V, 13). Ultimately he advocated harmony and mutual concessions, but there can be no question of his loyalty, in this controversy, to state-rights doctrines. His loss of political caste in Virginia was due chiefly to his subsequent association with the nationalistic administration of Adams.

At the beginning of the presidential campaign of 1824, Barbour was one of the warmest champions of a caucus nomination and was accordingly identified with the candidacy of William H. Crawford. At this time, Adams was second only to Crawford in the favor of Virginia. Barbour objected to Jackson, whom he regarded as a mere military man, and his position as chairman of the Senate Committee of Foreign Relations brought him into many contacts with Adams as secretary of state. As the year advanced he came to be regarded as an Adams man, and in due time he was appointed secretary of war by the latter, on the suggestion of Col. R. M. Johnson of Kentucky.

When the attitude of the Adams administration toward the tariff and internal improvements became apparent, the hostility of Virginia, particularly of eastern Virginia, increased. Barbour, however, continued loyal to his chief until 1828 and never indeed broke with him. Already identified with the movement for local internal improvements in Virginia, he stanchly defended the national policy against criticisms emanating from his state. Never a fanatic on the slavery question, he approved of the Panama Congress, which aroused the fears of so many southerners. He conducted the very difficult negotiations with Gov. Troup of Georgia in regard to the Indian question, but seems to have retained the personal esteem of that belligerent advocate of state rights who was so incensed with Adams. The Secretary of War, at first more uncompromising than the President in his attitude toward the defiant state, later consulted frequently with the Georgia delegation in Congress and served as a conciliatory factor. Theories of state rights troubled him little in this controversy, but he manifested on the one hand an appreciation of political considerations and on the other a spirit of benevolence toward the Indians, for whom he finally recommended a territorial government west of the Mississippi. Barbour's identification and sympathy with the administration were so complete that he once thought of becoming a candidate for the vice-presidency with Adams in 1828, but early in that year he expressed the desire to be appointed minister to Great Britain, in succession to Albert Gallatin. Adams felt that his hitherto loyal colleague wanted "to save himself from the wreck" of the administration and rightly thought his retirement from the cabinet would be interpreted as an abandonment of the sinking ship. None the less, he generously made the nomination on May 22, 1828. The appointment came too late to relieve Barbour from political embarrassment and his departure served only to mar somewhat his admirable record of loyalty. Nothing of impor-

tance marked his brief diplomatic career, but he was received with great personal favor. He was succeeded early in the summer of 1829 by the Jackson appointee and returned to America in the autumn bearing with him the honorary degree of D.C.L. from Oxford.

Returning to his native county discredited by his association with the late administration, he sought political vindication by offering himself, in May 1830, as a candidate for the House of Delegates. He made a spirited defense of his political conduct and succeeded in gaining the seat temporarily, after a contested election. In February 1831, however, the committee of privileges and elections decided in favor of his obscure opponent. In a valedictory delivered in the House of Delegates, he stated that a "decree of ostracism" had been pronounced against him because of his opinions and that he would not voluntarily again leave his "native mountains." He lived long enough to witness the revival of Whig fortunes. In 1839, he presided over the convention which nominated Harrison and Tyler, and he actively participated in the ensuing campaign. On one occasion, he made a speech of five hours' length, said to have been remarkably able and eloquent. None the less, the Whigs failed to carry Virginia.

After his retirement from politics, Barbour served as president of the Virginia Agricultural Society, and he long advocated agricultural education. In his native county, he was intimately associated with the Orange Humane Society, which educated hundreds of poor children. He was perhaps the first in Virginia to suggest the establishment of a normal and industrial school. He is said to have been a remarkably handsome man, with the grandeur of a Roman senator in his old age. His oratorical powers were generally held in high esteem, but some regarded him as pompous and bombastic. John Randolph, comparing the two Barbour brothers, once said "that Phil could split a hair but that Jim could not hit a barn door" (W. C. Bruce, *Randolph,* II, 202). Barbour was married in 1792 to Lucy, daughter of Benjamin Johnson of Orange County, and had five children. His mansion, "Barboursville," on the edge of the village of that name, was planned in part by Jefferson and is said to have had the finest interior in Virginia. Built in 1822, it now stands amid gigantic box, a splendid ruin.

[The brief account of the life of James Barbour by W. S. Long in the *John P. Branch Hist. Papers* of Randolph-Macon Coll., vol. IV, no. 2 (1914), pp. 34–64, is immature but in general accurate and well-annotated. The James Barbour Papers, in the N. Y. Pub. Lib., consist of 289 letters, mostly to Barbour. Somewhat less than half of these are calendared in the *Bull. N. Y. Pub. Lib.* (1906), VI, 22–34. A collection of letters written to Barbour during the Missouri controversy were published in the *William and Mary Coll. Quart.* ser. I, vol. X (1901), pp. 7–24. The *Jour. of the Va. House of Delegates, 1798–1815,* and the *Annals of Cong.,* 1815–1825, are indispensable for a study of Barbour's legislative and gubernatorial career. The *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams* give much information about Barbour's services as secretary of war. Items of interest and importance may be gleaned from *Niles' Reg.* W. W. Scott, *Hist. of Orange County, Va.* (1907), gives considerable information about the Barbour family. A genealogy, which contains several glaring inaccuracies, may be seen in Philip Slaughter, *Hist. of St. Mark's Parish, Culpeper County, Va.* (1877), pp. 118–121.]

D. M.

BARBOUR, JOHN STRODE, JR. (Dec. 29, 1820–May 14, 1892), lawyer, congressman, financier, was born in Culpeper County, Va. On the side of his father, also John Strode Barbour, he belonged to a distinguished family of Scottish descent which had long been prominent in Virginia politics; his mother was Eliza A. Byrne of Petersburg. He received his education in private schools of the community, and at the University of Virginia, where he was granted the B.L. degree in 1842. After four years of practise in his native county, he entered politics as the Democratic candidate for the position of delegate to the legislature from Culpeper, and won against strong Whig opposition. His name appears on the rolls of the House of Delegates for the sessions 1847–48, 1848–49, 1849–50, 1850–51. When the Orange & Alexandria Railroad Company was organized in 1849, the State appointed Barbour to represent its interests on the board of directors. Three years later, the directors elected him president of the company, a position which he held for thirty-three years. Under his management the road of sixty miles (later the Virginia Midland) was extended across the state through Danville, and was enlarged by the addition of several subsidiary lines. There was not a single strike during these years, not even in the lean and troublous decade of the seventies—a fine testimony to his ability and to his justice toward his employees. In consequence of a deadlock in a district convention of his party, he was nominated for Congress, without his knowledge, and was subsequently elected. He remained in Congress from Mar. 4, 1881, to Mar. 3, 1887. He refused renomination in 1886. It was during this period that he made his greatest contribution to the commonwealth. He revived the Democratic party which had ceased to exist as an organization in his state, and conducted the campaign which rescued the state from William Mahone's control. A convention in Lynchburg on July 25, 1883, appointed Barbour chairman of the state executive committee

of the reorganized party, a position held by him until 1889 (R. L. Morton, *History of Virginia Since 1861,* 1924, p. 209). His success in defeating Mahone was due to his gift for organization and to the universal confidence and esteem reposed in him. He was a member of the National Democratic Committee from 1884 to 1892. Upon defeating H. H. Riddleberger, Readjuster (Republican), he took his seat in the United States Senate Mar. 4, 1889. Barbour was married in 1865 to Susan Daingerfield of Alexandria, who died in 1886. They left no descendants. Few men in Virginia since the Civil War have enjoyed greater popular confidence and esteem than Senator Barbour, or have been more beloved by their intimate friends and relatives. He was at the day of his death, which came suddenly in his seventy-second year, after a full day's work, a man of fine presence, six feet tall, with sharply cut features, snow-white hair, and dark brown eyes.

[The homesteads of the Barbours were in the path of contending armies during the Civil War, and the family papers were for the most part destroyed. The chief source for the Barbour ancestry is the record written in his family Bible by Gov. James Barbour in 1806. Material from these and other sources may be found in R. T. Green, *Notes on Culpeper County, Va.,* (1900), including a reprint of Slaughter's *Hist. of St. Mark's Parish* (1877), which should be watched for errors in the genealogical notes. See also L. P. duBellet, *Some Prominent Va. Families* (1907), vol. II. Contemporary newspapers, the *Whig,* the *Enquirer,* and the *Dispatch* (all of Richmond), and contemporary legislative journals and debates furnish material. A volume of *Memorial Addresses on the Life and Character of John S. Barbour, Jr.* (1892), contains accounts of his life by Senator John W. Daniel and others, as well as an obituary notice by W. W. Scott, from the *Richmond Dispatch.*]

R. L. M.

BARBOUR, OLIVER LORENZO (July 12, 1811–Dec. 17, 1889), lawyer, author, traced his ancestry to George Barbour, who left England on the *Transport* in 1635, became a freeman in Dedham, Mass., in 1647, and ultimately settled at Medfield; and to William Walworth of London, who came in 1689 to New London, Conn., and located at Groton, Mass. Oliver Lorenzo, youngest son of Oliver and Rosamond (Walworth) Barbour was born in Cambridge, Washington County, N. Y. His early education was received there and at Fredonia Academy from which he graduated in 1827. He took up the study of law, and was called to the New York bar in 1832. On Nov. 19 of the same year he was married to Elizabeth Berry of Whitesboro, N. Y., whose sister, Mrs. Whitcher, was the author of the *Widow Bedott Papers.* He opened an office in Whitesboro, but later moved to Saratoga Springs, N. Y., where his maternal uncle Judge Reuben Hyde Walworth [*q.v.*], chancellor of the state, resided. Entering the Judge's office, he acquired a varied and valuable knowledge of law and practise as his uncle's confidential clerk, eventually relinquishing private practise and devoting himself to legal writing and the work of the chancery office. His first published volume, prepared in collaboration with E. B. Harrington, was an *Analytical Digest of Equity Cases* (1837)—a complete abstract of American, English, and Irish equity reports from Hilary term 1822 to 1836. This was followed by editions of two well-known English treatises, *Collyer on Partnership* (1838) and *Chitty on Bills* (1839), both with American notes by himself. The *Magistrates Criminal Law,* a practical guide to the jurisdiction, duty, and authority in criminal matters of justices of the peace in New York State, and *A Treatise on the Law of Set Off,* appeared in 1841. Barbour began at this time to contribute to the *Saratoga Sentinel* abstracts of the decisions of the chancellor which were published in six volumes (1841–47). Through his contact with the business which passed through the chancellor's hands he had accumulated great stores of practical experiences, which he utilized in the preparation of *A Treatise on the Practise of the Court of Chancery* (1843), immediately recognized by the profession as an authoritative work of great utility. The same year he issued *An Analytical Digest of Equity Cases . . . since . . . 1836.* His next publication was an edition of *Cowen's Civil Jurisdiction of Justices of the Peace* (1844). He now turned to a field in which he was to acquire a more permanent fame. Commencing with the New York court of chancery, abolished by the new state constitution of 1847, he reported the decisions of its last three years in three volumes entitled *Reports of Cases Argued and Determined in the Court of Chancery of the State of New York,* and generally known as "Barbour's Chancery Reports" (1847–49). At the same time he undertook what proved his *magnum opus,* a series of reports of the supreme court of New York, as organized under the 1847 constitution. Commencing in 1848, he continued for thirty years to report its decisions, in a succession of volumes entitled *Reports of Cases in Law and Equity in the Supreme Court of the State of New York,* and generally known as "Barbour's Supreme Court Reports." In all sixty-seven volumes were published (1848–78), embracing the years 1847–77. While engaged in this undertaking he found time to write *A Summary of the Law of Parties to Actions at Law and Suits in Equity* (1864), also preparing a *Condensed Digest of the Decisions of the Court of Appeals and the Commission of Appeals of*

the State of New York (1877), which is a continuation of Tiffany's well-known work. On relinquishing his duties as reporter in 1878, he prepared a *Digest of Barbour's Reports 1847–77,* which was published in 1880. *A Summary of the Law of Payment* appeared in 1888, and *A Treatise on the Rights of Persons and the Rights of Property* (1890) was published posthumously. He died at his home at Saratoga Springs after a long illness.

Continuously engaged in legal study and writing for over forty-five years, his output was enormous. It has been estimated that his published works amount to nearly 100 volumes, and in addition he left a mass of material practically ready for the press which was never made public. He lived in his work, was very retiring, and never sought public office or preferment. Theron G. Strong says: "My mother used to describe him as one of the most homely and crabbed individuals she ever saw, with little personal attractiveness to make him a successful lawyer, but whose industry was unlimited, and whose personal qualities of heart and of mind were such as to endear him to all who became associated with him" (*Landmarks of a Lawyer's Lifetime,* 1914, p. 32). His brother, John Merrett Barbour, also attained high rank in the legal profession, becoming chief justice of the New York superior court.

["Descendants of Capt. Geo. Barbour of Medfield," comp. by Edmund Dana Barbour, MS. in Lib. of Cong.; C. A. Walworth, *The Walworths of America* (1897); brief sketches in *Green Bag,* II, 46; D. McAdam *et al., Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1897), I, 254; *Our County and Its People . . . Saratoga County, N. Y.* (1899), ed. by G. B. Anderson.]

H.W.H.K.

BARBOUR, PHILIP PENDLETON (May 25, 1783–Feb. 25, 1841), lawyer, statesman, jurist, was the son of Thomas and Mary (Thomas) Barbour, and the brother of James Barbour [*q.v.*]. Philip was for a time the pupil of Rev. Charles O'Niel, an Episcopal clergyman, the main ingredient of whose pedagogical system is said to have been flogging. The tradition is that the young Barbour showed great aptitude for languages and became versed in classical literature, as one can easily believe from his later speeches. In 1800, after having read a little law, he removed to Kentucky, where he began the practise of the profession in which he was destined to achieve great distinction. In the summer of 1801, he returned to Virginia, borrowed some money, and spent one session at William and Mary College. In 1802, he resumed the practise of law, to which he devoted himself until he entered active political life in 1812.

Elected representative from Orange County to the Virginia House of Delegates in the latter year, he divided his energies during the rest of his life between politics and law. During approximately half of this time he was a member of a legislative body, two years in the House of Delegates and fourteen years in Congress. The other half of his public service was spent, two years in the state, and ten in the Federal, judiciary. There was a legislative interlude within his judicial service, and during most of his career law and politics joined hands. Always he was true to the dominant local tradition of state rights and strict construction, of which he became a conspicuous protagonist.

He entered Congress in September 1814, taking the seat which had been made vacant by the death of John Dawson, and served in that body continuously until 1825, when he accepted an appointment to the general court of Virginia. He held the speakership from 1821 to 1823, when he was defeated by Henry Clay for that office. Unlike his brother James, he was little affected by the nationalistic spirit which marked the first few years after the War of 1812. He was identified rather with the particularistic reaction which soon manifested itself in opposition to the tariff, internal improvements, and the extension of Federal jurisdiction by the Supreme Court under Marshall. He was one of the most prominent of the "new lights" in the Virginia delegation, who combated the policies championed by Clay and Calhoun and sought to restore the fallen prestige of their state by guarding zealously her constitutional rights against alleged Federal encroachments (C. H. Ambler, *Thomas Ritchie,* p. 73). He must be classified, not with the older school of contemporary Virginia statesmen as represented by Monroe and to some extent by his own brother James, but with the new group which centered in Judge Spencer Roane and his own intimate friend, Thomas Ritchie. The former, doubtless more aware of the practical exigencies of government, were relatively tolerant of the growth of national authority, which the latter viewed with an alarm that bordered on hysteria.

The contributions of the younger Barbour to the state-rights reaction were chiefly in the form of constitutional disputation. His speeches in Congress were marked by a predominant constitutional emphasis and a consistent advocacy of strict construction. He opposed the bonus bill for which his brother voted (*Annals of Congress,* 14 Cong., 2 Sess., 893–99). Like him, he denied the right of Congress to impose terms upon the admission of Missouri, but was more inclined to palliate the evils of slavery (*Ibid.,* 16 Cong., 1 Sess., 2054–80). A close reasoner rather

than an orator, he was inclined to a "subtility in disquisition" which was not relished by loose constructionists but gratified the sensitive palate of such a constitutional epicure as John Randolph of Roanoke. Serving as counsel for the state in the celebrated case of Cohens *vs.* Virginia, he denied the right of appeal from the decision of a state court to the Federal judiciary, and later he reargued the case in Congress (Charles Warren, *Supreme Court in United States History,* 1926, II, 8, 125n.). During the first half of Adams's administration, with which his brother was loyally associated, he was a member of the judiciary of Virginia, but in 1827, upon the request of many of his former constituents, he resigned and was returned to Congress without opposition, in order to combat the nationalistic tendencies which now seemed ascendant. For the Adams administration he had scant respect. He objected to the large expenditure of public money, particularly for internal improvements, and to the imposition of a tariff (1828) which he termed impolitic, oppressive, and unjust. Convinced that there must be "concession to the remonstrances of a minority," he pinned his hopes on the executive veto after Jackson became president and began to wield this hitherto little-used weapon. He opposed nullification as a method of resistance to the tyranny of the majority, but defended the right of a state to secede in case of hopeless extremity. In order to check the extension of Federal power by judicial construction, he presented a bill in 1829 to require the concurrence of five of the seven judges of the Supreme Court in any decision involving a constitutional question (*Ibid.,* p. 177).

His prominence in state affairs and his alignment in local sectional controversy are clearly indicated by his position and attitude in the Virginia constitutional convention of 1829–30, so fateful in the history of the state. In consequence of the illness of Monroe, president of the convention, Barbour was first appointed president *pro tempore,* and then unanimously elected president (*Virginia Debates,* 1829–30, pp. 608–620). In the chief controversies which marked the convention, he identified himself with the conservative eastern slaveholders against the westerners. He opposed apportionment of representation on the basis of white population exclusively, and favored a "compound ratio," based on white population and property combined (*Ibid.,* pp. 90–98). He regarded some landed interest, though not necessarily a freehold, as a necessary qualification for the suffrage (*Ibid.,* pp. 435–36). Like the majority of his associates in the convention, he erred on the side of immediate rather than ultimate public safety, and he is to be condemned no more nor less than they for his failure adequately to sense the just claims of the westerners, who later in a time of crisis settled their ancient grudge by forming a separate state.

His acceptance of an appointment by Jackson, made in the autumn of 1830 as judge of the United States district court of Eastern Virginia, marked the end of his active political career. Politics, however, he abandoned with reluctance. In a valedictory to the citizens of his congressional district, which the Whigs termed unbecoming, he discussed the political situation and emphasized the necessity for continued insistence upon "restricted construction" of the Constitution. After he became a Federal judge, he presided, in 1831, over a free-trade convention in Philadelphia, and in 1832 he was offered by a group of southern strict constructionists as a candidate for the vice-presidency against Van Buren (A. C. Cole, *Whig Party in the South,* 1913, p. 14). Many of his supporters refused to accept the nomination of Van Buren and organized a Jackson-Barbour movement. Notwithstanding the fact that late in the campaign, after a public statement from Van Buren, Barbour announced his withdrawal to preserve party unity, he received some votes in the national election.

As early as 1831, the possibility of his appointment to the Supreme Court had been suggested and had aroused the fears of nationalists. John Quincy Adams dreaded that if Marshall should retire, "some shallow-pated wild-cat like Philip P. Barbour, fit for nothing but to tear the Union to rags and tatters," would be appointed in his place (*Memoirs,* Feb. 13, 1831). In Virginia there was strong desire for the appointment of Barbour, who was regarded by the dominant group as "eminently fitted to adorn the Bench with his talents and enlighten it with his inflexible and uncompromising State-Rights principles" (*Richmond Enquirer,* Mar. 19, 1836). The reconstitution of the Court, which aroused unwarranted Whig fears and Democratic hopes, did not come until 1836, when Taney became chief justice and Barbour succeeded Duval. Shortly after the new justices took their seats at the opening of the 1837 term, three cases of great constitutional importance, which had been pending for several years, were decided, the Bridge Case, the Miln Case, and the Briscoe Case. In the Miln Case, Justice Barbour delivered the opinion of the Court (II *Peters,* 129–42). Although the change made by the reconstituted Court in the lines of construction laid down by Marshall has been often exaggerated, there was some tendency henceforth to give the benefit

of the doubt to the states, and there was greater recognition of economic and social factors. Barbour was a member of the new majority that followed Taney and deserves recognition in connection with this change in emphasis, but his untimely death and relatively short service prevented his exercising his potential influence. His active political life had not been favorable to profound or dispassionate legal scholarship, but he had always retained great interest in his profession. His conscientious study after his appointment to the Supreme Court resulted in the steady increase in his learning and reputation, as Story, who disapproved of the new order, had predicted. His colleagues felt that he would have attained the highest judicial distinction had he lived out his promise of years.

His last association with his fellow justices was in the evening of Feb. 24, 1841, when he attended a conference which lasted until ten o'clock and took part in the deliberations, apparently in good health. The next morning he was found dead in his bed. When the Court assembled that day, the chief justice announced that "Brother Barbour" was dead and that the Court would adjourn. Appropriate resolutions were subsequently adopted by the members and officers of the Court, and a brief sketch of his life, prepared apparently by Story, was incorporated in the records. According to his distinguished colleague, Justice Barbour's "talents were of a high order; but he was distinguished less for brilliancy of effort, than for perspicacious, close, and vigorous reasoning. He sought less to be eloquent than to be accurate" (see 15 *Peters*). Conscientious, upright, and industrious, he was respected by his associates for his talents, virtues, and high sense of duty. Like his brother James, Philip Pendleton Barbour married a daughter of Benjamin Johnson of Orange County. His marriage to Frances Todd Johnson took place in 1804 and had as its fruitage seven children. His mansion, "Frascati," in his native county was built some time before 1830 by workmen who had been engaged in building the University of Virginia, and had a serpentine wall around its garden. Prosperous in his later years, he lived in dignity and comfort as a country gentleman, loyal to the social, as well as the political, traditions of Virginia.

[No adequate account of the life of Philip Pendleton Barbour has yet been published. The sketch by P. P. Cynn in the *John P. Branch Hist. Papers* of Randolph-Macon Coll., IV, no. 1 (1913), pp. 67–77, is much less satisfactory than that of James Barbour in the same publication. The brief accounts of Judge Barbour's life all seem to be based on the obit. notice in Peters's *Supreme Court Reports*, vol. XV, which differs little from the sketch in W. W. Story, *Life and Letters of Joseph Story* (1851), II, 349–50. For his legislative career, the *Annals of Cong.*, continued in the *Reg. of Debates*, are indispensable. The *Va. Debates*, 1829–30 (1831), are valuable, and a considerable amount of source-material, in the form of speeches, etc., is contained in *Niles' Reg.* For his judicial career, see Peters's *Reports*, and for information about the family, see W. W. Scott, *Hist. of Orange County* (1907), and the geneal. in Philip Slaughter, *Hist. of St. Mark's Parish* (1877), pp. 118–21. An engraving of Judge Barbour may be seen in H. L. Corson's *Hist. of the Supreme Court* (1891), I, 295.]

D. M.

BARCLAY, THOMAS (Oct. 12, 1753–Apr. 21, 1830), Loyalist, was born in New York City. His father, Henry Barclay, was rector of Trinity Church; his mother, Mary (Rutgers) Barclay, was the daughter of Anthony Rutgers, a rich brewer. Thomas was educated at King's College (Columbia), and studied law in the office of John Jay. He was married on Oct. 2, 1775, to Susanna De Lancey. As a Loyalist he suffered the loss of his property, estimated at £2,745, and this act is said to have been the first confiscation of Tory property in the state (Flick, pp. 208–9). The Whig committee in charge of operations caused his "hay, forage, stock, and grain, except so much as was necessary to support his family and slaves, to be seized; but it was appraised, sold, and the value deposited in the state treasury until more definite action should be taken" (*Ibid.*, p. 138). Barclay enlisted as captain in the regiment of Loyal Americans in the army of Sir William Howe, was promoted to the rank of major for gallantry at the capture of Forts Clinton and Montgomery, and served until the end of the war. At its close, like so many other Loyalists, he took refuge in Nova Scotia. For over thirty years he held office under the British government. In the colony he was speaker of the Assembly, adjutant-general of militia, and commissary for prisoners. He was consul-general of Great Britain for the northern and eastern states in the decade before the second war with England, and in this important office he exerted his influence toward modifying the harsh measures of the home government (Edward Channing, *Jeffersonian System*, 1906, pp. 182–87). He was also commissioner to carry out the terms of the Jay Treaty (1795), and after the close of the War of 1812 he held a similar position to carry out the provisions of the Treaty of Ghent. His character stood high, and his Loyalist sentiments, as is shown by his correspondence, never wavered. He went to New York as consul-general in 1799 and remained there, with interruptions, until his death in 1830. His *Correspondence* (published in 1894) has thrown light on the strained relations between England and the United States prior to the War of 1812.

Bard

[Lorenzo Sabine, *Biog. Sketches of Loyalists of the Am. Rev.* (1864); A. C. Flick, *Loyalism in N. Y.* (1901); *Selections from the Correspondence of Thos. Barclay*, ed. by Geo. L. Rives (1894).]

E. K. A.

BARD, JOHN (Feb. 1, 1716–Mar. 30, 1799), physician, the first in this country to take part in a systematic dissection for the purpose of instruction, the earliest to report a case of extra-uterine pregnancy, and a pioneer sanitarian of New York, was born in Burlington, N. J. The United States was indebted for this able practitioner, and for his more noted son, Samuel [*q.v.*], to the revocation of the edict of Nantes by Louis XIV, in 1685, when some 300,000 Protestant Frenchmen, artisans, men of science and letters, emigrated to the nearby countries of Switzerland, Prussia, Holland, and England, and thence, some of them, to America. Peter, the father of John, went to London and from there was sent by an uncle on a mercantile venture to Delaware. Finding himself unsuited for business he moved to Burlington, N. J., was appointed a judge of the supreme court and a member of the governor's council, and died at an early age, leaving his widow, a daughter of an English physician named Marmion, to bring up a family of seven children on very slender means. John, the third son, was sent to Philadelphia to be educated and was fortunate in being under the instruction of a Scotch gentleman by the name of Annan, an accomplished Latin scholar and a man of polished manners. When the pupil reached the age of fifteen, he was bound apprentice to a Mr. John Kearsly, an English surgeon of the town, talented but of bad temper, who treated his underlings with great severity and subjected them to the most menial tasks. John submitted through fear of disappointing his mother and because of his affection for Mrs. Kearsly, who had shown him great kindness. For seven tedious years he remained with Mr. Kearsly, taking the hours for study from sleep, when the family had gone to bed. He early formed an intimacy with Benjamin Franklin, ten years his senior; they were members of the same social club and corresponded through life.

John Bard settled in practise in Philadelphia, where he married a Miss Valleau, a niece of Mrs. Kearsly, and like himself a descendant of a refugee from France. When he had been there some seven years (1746) he was induced by Franklin to move to New York, to take the place of Dr. Dubois and Dr. Dupie, who had just died of yellow fever. He soon gained a large practise among the better classes; he had sound professional knowledge, considerable conversational ability, and tact coupled with great cheerfulness. He kept the service of the public in mind, and in 1759, upon the arrival in New York Harbor of a Dutch ship containing cases of a malignant ship-fever, he was employed by the town to take quarantine measures. Every nurse and attendant caught the disease, and Bard was impelled to draw up a memorial to the corporation of the town urging the expediency of providing a pest-house against the occurrence of similar epidemics. The result was the purchase of Bedloe's Island with the building upon it and the appointment of Bard as health officer. He held also the position of surgeon and agent for the sick and wounded seamen of the British navy at New York, retaining the office until he retired from practise.

Concerning the first recorded instructional dissection, in which Bard and Peter Middleton were associated, we have this description from the pen of David Hosack, who was in partnership with Bard's son Samuel: "As early, however, as 1750, the body of Hermannus Carrol, executed for murder, was dissected in this city by two of the most eminent physicians of that day, Drs. John Bard and Peter Middleton, and the blood vessels injected for the instruction of the youth then engaged in the study of medicine; this was the first essay made in the United States for the purpose of imparting medical knowledge by the dissection of the human body, of which we have any record" (*American Medical and Philosophical Register*, 1812, II, 228). In a letter to John Fothergill of London, dated Dec. 25, 1759, Bard reported *A Case of Extra-Uterine Fœtus* that was read to "A society of physicians in London," on Mar. 24, 1760, and published subsequently in *Medical Observations and Inquiries*, London, 1763, vol. II. This was a most interesting case, in which Bard, in the presence of an army surgeon named Huck, opened the abdomen of the mother of two children, nine weeks after the delivery of the second, and evacuated a full-time macerated fetus and much pus, the patient subsequently nursing her live baby and making a good recovery. In the numbers of the *American Medical and Philosophical Register* are to be found several papers on yellow fever by John Bard and, after his death, there was published in that periodical (April 1811, I, 409–21) an essay on the nature and cause of malignant pleurisy, which had been "Drawn up at the request of a weekly society of gentlemen in New York, and addressed to them at one of their meetings, January 1749." This is the only and scanty reference to the earliest medical society in New York, which apparently was patterned after the London society of Fothergill.

Soon after the beginning of the Revolution

(1778) Bard retired to a farm he had purchased at Hyde Park, in Dutchess County, on the Hudson. He and his son Samuel, who had joined with his father in practise, held with the mother country to which they were under many obligations. At the peace of 1783 Bard returned to New York and to practise, for his funds were low. On the organization of the Medical Society of the State of New York, in 1788, he was chosen the first president; in 1795, being then in his eightieth year, he gave an address before this society calling attention to the presence of yellow fever in the city and making suggestions as to its treatment. This caused considerable feeling against him in the community, but he persisted in proclaiming the danger until the inhabitants saw that he was right and took proper measures to prevent the spread of the disease. Three years later he gave up practise and retired to Hyde Park, where he had his children about him. There he died of cerebral hemorrhage at the age of eighty-three, full of honors and with the satisfaction of a life of work well done. Up to the end he maintained his charm of conversation, vivacity of manner, and optimism. The engraving of him in the *American Medical and Philosophical Register* shows us a man of middle age, clothed in the custom of his time, and with a wig terminating in a neat braid on his shoulders; the face indicates determination with a background of geniality.

[The chief sources of information about John Bard are Hosack's and Francis's biog. of him in the *Am. Medic. and Phil. Reg.*, 1811; his letters in John M'Vickar, *Life of Samuel Bard* (1822); *Medical Observations and Inquiries* (London, 1762); and biographies, mainly from these sources, in James Thacher, *Am. Medic. Biog.* (1828), and H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920).]

W.L.B.

BARD, SAMUEL (Apr. 1, 1742–May 24, 1821), physician, writer on midwifery, was born in Philadelphia, where his father John Bard [*q.v.*] was practising medicine. His mother had been a Miss Valleau, niece of Dr. John Kearsly, an English surgeon of that town. In 1746, John Bard moved to New York, where young Bard was given a grammar school education and entered King's College at the age of fourteen during the presidency of Dr. Samuel Johnson. Destined by his father for the study of medicine, on graduation in 1760 he was sent abroad for that purpose, in spite of the fact that his father's circumstances were not opulent. The ship on which he sailed was captured by a French privateer and taken into Bayonne, where he was thrown into prison. There he stayed five months until released through the good offices of Benjamin Franklin, a friend of his father. He went at once to London and through the intercession of Dr. John Fothergill, another of his father's friends, was admitted as an assistant at St. Thomas's Hospital. From London he went to Edinburgh, then in the zenith of its glory, where he came under the instruction of Cullen, Whytt, the Monroes and Hope, and acquired a reputation as an industrious student and a good classical scholar. When he took his M.D. in 1765, his inaugural essay was entitled *De viribus opii*, said to be a well written and timely article; he was also given a prize for the best herbarium of the indigenous vegetables of Scotland, containing specimens of some 500 plants. Fellow students of Bard in Edinburgh were John Morgan of Philadelphia, Percival, the author of the standard work on medical ethics, and Haygarth, a noted physician of Bath.

On returning to New York, Bard began practise with his father and soon acquired a popularity and a clientage that were quite unusual. He married his cousin, Mary Bard, in 1770, and divided his time between the city and his father's house at Hyde Park, on the Hudson. He did no surgery, preferring to devote himself exclusively to what is called to-day "internal medicine." The question of starting a medical school in New York had been in Bard's mind even before he went abroad. The establishment of the University of Pennsylvania school in Philadelphia by John Morgan, soon after his arrival from foreign studies in 1765, stimulated the New York brethren to renewed attempts to elevate the standard of medicine. Bard took an active part. With Clossy, Jones, Middleton, Smith, and Tennent, the school was opened with Bard professor of the theory and practise of physic; the first degrees being conferred in 1769, Bard delivered an address which was instrumental not only in raising funds for the school, but later in founding the New York Hospital (1791). The school was affiliated with King's College, and Bard was connected with it for forty years, the last twenty as dean of the faculty and trustee.

On the opening of the Revolution, it was not unnatural that Bard's sympathies should be with the mother country since his medical training had been obtained in London and Edinburgh. He deemed it prudent to retire to Shrewsbury, N. J., where he engaged unsuccessfully in the manufacture of salt. When the British took possession of New York, he returned to the city. People mistrusted him for his Loyalist leanings, but the mayor of the city, an old friend of Bard's, called him as his private physician, vouched for him to prominent citizens, and thereby restored him to his former extensive practise. By the end of the war he was in comfortable circumstances.

When the American Government was established in New York, Washington selected Bard as his physician. The New York Hospital was opened in 1791 and Bard began his service as visiting physician, devoting much time to obstetrics; in the following year the medical school was united with Columbia College, and he was continued as professor of theory and practise and was appointed dean of the faculty. He helped found the city library and the New York Dispensary. In 1795 he took Dr. David Hosack into partnership and in 1798 retired to Hyde Park. He returned to New York, however, during the latter year to offer his assistance in the yellow-fever epidemic, caught the disease, and henceforth was definitely obliged to give up active practise. He was elected president of the original College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1811. In Hyde Park he was president of the Agricultural Society of Dutchess County, and a founder of the Protestant Episcopal church there. He lived to the age of seventy-nine, and died from an attack of pleurisy the day after the death of his beloved wife who had had the same disease. Of their ten children but three were alive at the time of their parents' passing, with several grandchildren who had been of great solace to their grandparents in their declining years.

As regards the writings of Samuel Bard, he published an article in 1771 entitled: *An Inquiry into the Nature, Cause and Cure of the Angina Suffocativa, or Sore Throat Distemper, as It Is Commonly Called by the Inhabitants of This City and Colony.* Abraham Jacobi, the noted children's expert, said of this (*Archives of Pediatrics,* N. Y. 1917, vol. XXXIV, nos. 1, 2, 3): "Bard's book is wise and accurate. His style is classical and simple and the description of diphtheria in skin, mucous membrane, and larynx is correct and beautiful." Bard's favorite branch of medicine was midwifery, in which he acquired a high reputation. On retiring into the country he found time to write a text-book on this subject which appeared in 1807, entitled: *A Compendium of the Theory and Practise of Midwifery,* which was intended chiefly for midwives and young practitioners. The work went through three large editions and after it had been enlarged into octavo form, two more. In the year 1811 Bard published *A Guide for Young Shepherds,* said to be the best practical treatise of the time on sheep breeding, the result of many experiments with merino and other brands of sheep which he had introduced into his farm at Hyde Park. He wrote several papers on yellow fever for the *American Medical and Philosophical Register* and for the *Transactions of the College of Physicians of Philadelphia,* besides *A Discourse on Medical Education,* published in New York in 1819.

As a frontispiece to the *Life of Samuel Bard,* by the Rev. John M'Vickar, is an engraving from a portrait of Bard. It shows a thick-set man of about forty; a forceful smooth-shaven face in which the chin is prominent, lower lip thick, the forehead wrinkled with care, and a not too happy expression of countenance.

[H. W. Ducachet, *A Biog. Memoir of Samuel Bard, with a Critique upon His Writings* (1821); John M'Vickar, *A Domestic Narrative of the Life of Samuel Bard* (1822); *Lives of Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons of the Nineteenth Cent.,* ed. by Samuel D. Gross (1861).] W.L.B.

BARD, WILLIAM (Apr. 4, 1778–Oct. 17, 1853), pioneer in life insurance, was born in Philadelphia, the grandson of Dr. John and the son of Dr. Samuel Bard. His mother was Mary, the daughter of Peter Bard, and her husband's cousin. William Bard was graduated from Columbia College in 1797, and on Oct. 7, 1802, married Catherine, the daughter of Nicholas Cruger. Of his business career before his entrance into the field of life insurance little is recorded. In 1830 he organized and was made president and actuary of the New York Life Insurance and Trust Company, with a capital stock of $1,000,000. A charter was issued Mar. 9, and business was begun in September. Though several other companies had been chartered to engage, among other activities, in this form of insurance, Bard's company was the first to make it a specialty. Public sentiment was generally either indifferent or hostile, while the other companies neglected it and in some cases discouraged its development. Bard, however, was an enthusiastic advocate and earnestly set himself to the task of converting the opposition. By a judicious use of propaganda and by establishing the agency system he soon brought about a more favorable public attitude. In a booklet published by him in December 1832, which probably was widely circulated, he replied to the current criticisms of life insurance and predicted for it a rapid development. As an evidence of its growth he cited the case of his own company, the New York office of which had had sixty-five policies in force in June and now had 150.

Through his energy and zeal his company prospered. By the end of 1839 it could boast of 694 policies in force, for an amount of $2,451,958. It appears to have been particularly favored, moreover, by the Court of Chancery, which entrusted to it large sums of money. But the competition of other companies—particularly that of the New York Life Insurance Company, organ-

ized in 1845—proved hurtful, and though it continued as a trust company, its life insurance business gradually declined. Some time before 1848 Bard retired. He died at his home on Staten Island.

[G. O. Seilhamer, *The Bard Family* (1908); Chas. Kelley Knight, *Hist. of Life Insurance in the U. S. to 1870* (1920); Jas. M. Hudnut, *Semi-Centennial Hist. of the N.Y. Life Insurance Co., 1845–95* (1895); *Hunt's Merchants' Mag.*, II and VIII; Wm. Bard, *A Letter to David E. Evans on Life Insurance* (1832).]

W.J.G.

BARDEEN, CHARLES WILLIAM (Aug. 28, 1847–Aug. 24, 1924), educator, publisher, author, was born of good New England stock in Groton, Mass., a descendant of William Bardeen who landed in Plymouth in 1637. During the Civil War, young Bardeen ran away from school to join the 1st Massachusetts Volunteers as drummer boy. He kept a diary 1862–64, later published under the title of *A Little Fifer's War Diary* (1910), which contains surprisingly mature observations of human nature. On his return from war, he reëntered high school and on a sudden impulse decided to work his way through Yale College. This he did by obtaining scholarships and by tutoring and teaching throughout his college course. At Yale he belonged to four undergraduate organizations, captured three college prizes and was awarded the honor of being appointed to deliver both the junior and senior orations. At the age of twenty-one, he married Ellen Dickerman of New Haven, by whom he had five children. After graduating from Yale he taught as principal of Weston Boarding School, vice-principal of the Connecticut State Normal School, teacher of English in Kalamazoo College, and superintendent of schools in Whitehall, N. Y. In 1873, he had the agency in the state of New York for Clark & Maynard's educational publications with headquarters in Syracuse. He became managing editor in 1874 of the *School Bulletin* and for nearly half a century was its vigorous and versatile editor. He wrote the editorials, collected personal news, and penned trenchant short stories that made it unique among school journals. Under his editorship the *School Bulletin* gained a national reputation. From 1874 to 1880 he had charge of the publishing department of Davis Bardeen & Company. In 1880 he bought it out and carried it on under his own name until it was sold in 1922. He was chosen head of the department of educational publications for the International Congress at Chicago in 1893. For four years he served as director of The National Educational Association. From 1900 to the end of his life he was president of the Educational Press Association of America. He was a member of the Author's Club of London, the Royal Societies of London, president of The Browning Club when it was first formed in Syracuse, member of the National Institute of Social Sciences, president of the Yale Club of Syracuse 1902–12.

The more important of Bardeen's numerous volumes were *Common School Law,* which ran through several editions (4th ed. 1878), *History of Educational Journalism* (1896), *Teaching as a Business* (1897), and *A Dictionary of Educational Biography* (1901). Among the best of his educational short stories were "Roderick Hume," "The Woman Trustee," "The Shattered Halo," "The Yellow Streak," "The Stolen Payroll," and "Castiron Culver."

[Sketches of career in the *Syracuse Post Standard;* the *Syracuse Herald,* Aug. 20, 1924, the *Yale Obit. Rec.,* pp. 1305–07.]

W.H.M.

BARKER, ALBERT SMITH (Mar. 31, 1843–Jan. 29, 1916), naval officer, descendant of an old New England family, was the son of Josiah and Eliza (Cushing) Barker, and was born at Hanson, Mass. Graduating from the Naval Academy in 1862, he was immediately ordered to duty on board the *Mississippi,* and was in her during the bombardment and passage of Forts Jackson and St. Philip below New Orleans, and during the capture of that city in April 1862. When the *Mississippi,* which had been Commodore M. C. Perry's flagship on his expedition to Japan, went aground and was destroyed by her commander, Capt. Melancthon Smith, during an attack on Port Hudson, to prevent her falling into the hands of the enemy (Mar. 14, 1863), Ensign Barker was transferred to the *Monongahela,* and in her took part in the siege and capture of Port Hudson. On Aug. 9, 1863, he was ordered to the *Niagara* on special service. He was promoted to be lieutenant Feb. 22, 1864, lieutenant commander July 25, 1866, commander Mar. 28, 1877, captain May 5, 1892, and rear admiral Oct. 10, 1905. In 1877 he was given command of the *Alert,* in which he explored many islands near New Guinea in search of a shipwrecked crew. During the years 1882–86, in command of the *Enterprize,* he ran a line of deep-sea soundings round the world. In 1886 he was lighthouse inspector; from 1886 to 1891 he was connected with the Bureau of Navigation; in 1891–92 he was in charge of the Washington navy-yard; and in 1892 he was given command of the *Philadelphia.* At the beginning of the war with Spain in 1898 he was a member of the important Board of Strategy of the Navy, and during that war commanded the cruiser *Newark,* participating in the bombardment of Santiago de

Cuba, July 1, 1898. From Aug. 2 of that year to May 29, 1899, he commanded the battle-ship *Oregon* on special service in the Pacific, and succeeded Admiral Dewey in command of the Asiatic Fleet on that date. He afterward held several important commands ashore, and became commander-in-chief of the North Atlantic Fleet in 1903, retiring for age on Mar. 31, 1905. In 1919 the United States destroyer *Barker,* named in his honor, was launched at Philadelphia. He was married on Oct. 16, 1894, to Mrs. Ellen (Blackmar) Maxwell, widow of a missionary to India.

[Data concerning this officer are to be found at the U. S. Navy Dept. in the office of the Naval Records and Library; see also Barker Newhall, *The Barker Family of Plymouth Colony and County* (1900), pp. 45–58.]

E. B.

BARKER, BENJAMIN FORDYCE (May 2, 1818–May 30, 1891), physician, was born in Wilton, Me., the second son of Dr. John Barker, who served in the War of 1812, and Phœbe (Abbott) Barker. His ancestors had come to America about 1640, settling in Massachusetts. He was graduated from Bowdoin College in 1837. From 1838 to 1840 he worked in the office of Dr. Henry I. Bowditch, in Boston. In 1841, he received the degree of M.D. from the Bowdoin Medical College. Because of a tendency toward pulmonary disease, he moved to Norwich, Conn., where he soon became a successful practitioner. While there he also showed an interest in politics and is said to have stumped the state in a presidential election, making a speech in a different town every night for three months. His fondness for music, begun in his college days, continued; he sang in a church choir and composed some melodies. On Sept. 14, 1843, he married Elizabeth Lee Dwight of Harrisburg, Pa., and on Oct. 1 sailed for France to study at the University of Paris. Before his course was finished, however, in the next year, he was called home on account of illness in his family. While he was in Paris he became intimate with Trousseau. Although Barker never returned to France to finish his studies, he was later granted a degree by the University.

After his year in Europe, he became professor of obstetrics in Bowdoin Medical College for a short period, but soon resigned because of his other activities. In 1848, he was made president of the Connecticut Medical Society and delivered an important address on "Some Forms of Disease of the Cervix Uteri." The next year, at the suggestion of Dr. Willard Parker, he moved to New York and incorporated, with others, the New York Medical College, in which he filled the chair of obstetrics. At about this time he developed a partial paralysis of the vocal cords, which remained with him all the rest of his life; at times he was able to speak only in a hoarse whisper. Within the next few years he was appointed obstetrician to many New York hospitals and, in 1861, succeeded in obtaining a charter, with the aid of his friends, for the Bellevue Hospital Medical School, in which he became professor of obstetrics and diseases of women, a position which he held until his death. His practise in New York was very extensive and during his day he was probably the best-known obstetrician in America. He always inspired confidence in his patients by his sanguine temperament, genial manner, and impressive presence; his counsel was wise and tempered by common sense. His practise was limited to non-operative obstetrics and gynecology. It is reported that he introduced the use of the hypodermic syringe into American medicine.

In 1874, he published his book on *Puerperal Diseases,* a treatise which passed through many editions and was translated into French, German, Italian, Spanish, and Russian. It was an excellent book for its time, especially rich in clinical descriptions of diseases. He was connected with numerous medical societies; he founded and was the first president of the American Gynecological Society. For thirty years he traveled to Europe annually and was intimately acquainted with Dickens, Thackeray, and other notable Europeans.

[A very complete biographic notice of Barker will be found in the *Trans. Am. Gyn. Soc.,* 1891, XVI, 551–58, portr., by Dr. James R. Chadwick of Boston, a close associate; an analysis of his social success and character was written soon after his death by Dr. Henry C. Coe (*N. Y. Jour. Gyn. and Obs.,* 1891, I, 112–18); the best account of his early life in Me. and Conn. is by Dr. W. T. Lusk (*Trans. N. Y. Acad. of Med.,* 1892, 2nd ser., VIII, 286–302).]

H. R. V.

BARKER, GEORGE FREDERICK (July 14, 1835–May 24, 1910), chemist and physicist, son of George and Lydia Prince Pollard Barker, was born at Charlestown, Mass. Their comfortable circumstances enabled his parents to give him the advantages of excellent preparatory schooling; at the Classical Academy of Berwick, Me., at Lawrence Academy in Groton, and finally at Yarmouth Academy, Me. At sixteen he began a five-year apprenticeship to a manufacturer of philosophical instruments which further prepared him for the systematic study of the physical sciences. After two years at Yale, where he specialized in chemistry and physics, he was graduated in 1858. As a member of the varsity crew he added physical fitness to his mental preparation for a long and active career. The

next seven years were spent in teaching at Yale, Harvard, Wheaton College (Illinois), Albany Medical College, and the Western University of Pittsburgh. He returned to Yale in 1865 with an M.D. from Albany, as demonstrator in the Medical College. Later (1867–73), he was head of the department of physiological chemistry and toxicology at Yale, serving also as lecturer at Williams College. His reputation rests mainly upon his achievements during the twenty-seven years (1873–1900) of his service as professor of physics at the University of Pennsylvania. Barker's active career of forty-two years, though largely academic, included work as consultant, investigator, public lecturer, author, and editor. He was the recipient of many honors. In 1881, as commissioner to the International Electrical Exhibition and delegate to the International Congress of Electricians in Paris, he received from the French Government the decoration of the Legion of Honor with the rank of Commander. By presidential appointment he was a commissioner to the Electrical Exhibition in Philadelphia (1884) and served on the Jury of Awards at the Columbian Exposition. He was president (1879) of the American Association for the Advancement of Science and later (1891) of the American Chemical Society. As an electrician, as a toxicologist, and as a municipal chemist, he was an acknowledged expert. Always conversant with the most recent developments in science, he was the first in America to exhibit radium in radio-active bodies (Edgar F. Smith—personal letter, Nov. 1, 1926). His publications on radio-activity, on the "Conversion of Mechanical Energy into Heat by Dynamo-Electric Machines" (*Proceedings of the American Association for the Advancement of Science*, vol. XXVIII), on metals, auroras, and solar eclipses are all valuable contributions to science. He was the editor or associate editor of a number of scientific periodicals. These honors and achievements bear testimony to his unusual versatility. He was married in August 1861 to Mary M. Treadway of New Haven.

[Edgar F. Smith, "Geo. Frederick Barker," *Am. Jour. of Sci.*, CLXXX, 225–32; Elihu Thomson, "Geo. Frederick Barker," *Am. Philosophical Soc. Proc.*, L; *Pop. Sci. Mo.*, Sept. 1879; *Am. Men of Science* (1906); *Who's Who in America* (1908); *Who's Who in Pa.* (1908); *Public Ledger* (Phila.) May 26, 1910.]

H. C.

BARKER, JACOB (Dec. 17, 1779–Dec. 26, 1871), merchant, financier, lawyer, was born on Swan Island, Kennebec County, Me., where his parents had moved from Nantucket in order to escape the dangers incident to the Revolution.

Both parents were distantly related to Benjamin Franklin. The father, Robert, died four months after the boy was born. Sarah (Folger), the mother, was a Friend, and she reared her children in that faith. In April 1785 she brought her family back to Nantucket. Jacob, after attending school for a time at New Bedford, returned home and worked in a store. At sixteen, with $100 saved, determining to become a seaman, he shipped as a green hand on a vessel to New York. His older brother, Abraham, who had preceded him to the metropolis, induced him to give up the sea and to take a clerkship in the commission house of Isaac Hicks. The boy was industrious, shrewd, and ambitious, and while still in the employ of Hicks he acquired a part interest in a fleet of merchant vessels. At the beginning of 1801, having accumulated $5,000, he started a new firm, with two friends as partners. In the same year he married a New Bedford schoolmate, Elizabeth Hazard. Business reverses at this time left him bankrupt, but he immediately began again, and in a few years became wealthy. A Jeffersonian Democrat and one of the founders of Tammany Hall, he yet opposed, in common with the Federalist majority among the merchants of New York City, the party policy making for war with Great Britain. When, however, war was declared (June 18, 1812), he unreservedly supported the administration. Much of his time and effort during the war were expended in raising money for the Government, which was often in desperate straits. His own fortune was wrecked, the British having captured all his ships; his claims against the Government were never fully adjusted; and to cap these disasters, he asserts, he was both discriminated against and calumniated by his Federalist colleagues, who continued to oppose the war and sought to cripple the administration.

Fresh ventures again brought him some measure of success. In 1815 he founded the Exchange Bank, in Wall St., and though it failed in 1819 he continued to extend his operations. The business depression of 1826, however, involved him in various troubles. One of the companies of which he was a director—the Life & Fire Insurance Company—failed, and he and six others were promptly indicted for fraud. A bitter legal contest followed, which was virtually ended, Nov. 14, 1827, by the quashing of the indictment, though a chancery suit dragged on for some months. Barker always maintained that the indictment was the result of a conspiracy on the part of the "moneyed aristocracy" and the Federalists to ruin him; and in numerous let-

ters and articles which from time to time he published during the next thirty-seven years he gave to the world a great mass of details in support of his charge. One result of the trial was his removal from New York. Some of the securities of the bankrupt insurance company consisted of mortgages on plantations in Louisiana, and he was immediately involved in litigation in that state. In 1834, assigning what remained of his New York estate to Fitz-Greene Halleck and two others, he moved to New Orleans, where he studied law and was admitted to the bar. Again he prospered; he became one of the leading capitalists of the South, and was president of the Bank of Commerce when Gen. Butler entered the city. He had opposed secession; but his attitude had apparently not greatly impaired his standing. He came into some prominence again as an opponent of Butler's rigorous rule and, later, of the Congressional measures of reconstruction. In 1869, ill and once more poor, he moved to Philadelphia, to reside with his son Abraham, at whose house he died.

Barker had a stormy and eventful career. One of his chief traits was pugnacity, and circumstances provided him with many opportunities for its exercise. He had an exceptional degree of fortitude; against reverses that would have crushed most men he kept the field, repeatedly making up his losses and regaining his place in the business world. He was proud of his genealogy—particularly that part of it which related him to Franklin—and proud also of his physical resemblance to the great sage. He was not averse to mentioning his own legal and oratorical abilities, or the fact that he had taken part in many historic events and had mixed with many notables. With complacency he records the statement that he had imported the first marine engine used by Robert Fulton and that for twenty years he had had in his employ (before Astor got him) no less a person than Fitz-Greene Halleck. Fate had placed him at the White House in that trying moment after the battle of Bladensburg when Dolly Madison was hastily gathering up her possessions and preparing for flight; and it fell to him and to a New York friend, Robert de Peyster, to carry off and hide, at the behest of Mrs. Madison, the Gilbert Stuart portrait of Washington. Though disavowing any special pride in the act (the honor, as he contended, belonging altogether to Mrs. Madison), he brooked no questioning of his part in it; and when the matter was discussed in the press, thirty-four years afterward, he published long letters about it, proving by the word of Mrs. Madison herself that he and his friend were the actual saviors of the portrait. The fact of which he was most proud was his part in financing the War of 1812, when, he says, he was "the pivot upon which this important nation rested at one of the most important periods of its history." He was an honest man, even though his honesty was often impugned. "As an example of rectitude and upright dealing, carried through the most gigantic operations and disastrous losses," said the *New York Times* on his decease, "there is no brighter page in the merchant annals of our country than his business life."

[Barker Newhall, *The Barker Family of Plymouth Colony and County* (1900); *Incidents in the Life of Jacob Barker of New Orleans, La.* (largely autobiographical, but ostensibly written by a friend, 1855); *The Conspiracy Trials of 1826 and 1827* (also largely autobiographical, but with an introduction by R. D. Turner, 1864); obituaries in *N. Y. Times,* Dec. 27, 1871, and *N. Y. Tribune,* Dec. 28, 1871.] W. J. G.

BARKER, JAMES NELSON (June 17, 1784–Mar. 9, 1858), dramatist and man of affairs, was born in Philadelphia. His versatile career had as its background the personality and life of his father, Gen. John Barker, a soldier and politician of prominence in early Philadelphia, who served as alderman, as major-general of the 1st division of the Pennsylvania militia, and as mayor of Philadelphia in 1808, 1809, and 1812. He resigned as alderman in 1817, when his son was appointed in his place. James Nelson Barker was educated in the Philadelphia schools, trained in the principles of the Democratic party, and given the ideals of a soldier. He possessed the fiery traits of his father's personality with ameliorating polish. He was aided by his father's influence and popularity but had social gifts in his own right which, with his alert, dashing appearance, meant much. His first activities in literature and in politics were nearly simultaneous. He began authorship with an unproduced tragedy, *The Spanish Rover,* in 1804 and, after writing a masque, *America,* that was never printed, reached the stage on Mar. 4, 1807, with *Tears and Smiles,* a deservedly applauded comedy of Philadelphia manners. On Mar. 16, 1808, he confirmed this success with his comic interlude *The Embargo or What News?* upholding the Embargo bills of that and the preceding year. *The Indian Princess, or la Belle Sauvage,* produced Apr. 6, 1808, and advertised as an "operatic melodrama" (*Democratic Press,* Apr. 5, 1808), is important as the first acted play on the Indian by an American, the first on the story of Pocahontas, and the first to be acted in England after a premier production in the United States. Barker's adaptation, at the request of the managers of the Chestnut Street

Theatre, of A. Cherry's *The Travellers, or Music's Fascination,* also won public appreciation. Meanwhile he had become prominent in the political organization of Philadelphia known as "The Democratic Young Men," and in 1809 inaugurated his career as a poet by a song sung at that organization's celebration of the Fourth of July. From Dec. 21, 1809, until the close of March 1810, he was in Washington studying the government, making useful friends, and generally informing himself politically. He was caught up in the gaiety of the capital, entertained by the President, the Secretary of the Treasury, and other officials. In 1811, against the opposition of his father, he married Mary Rogers, who had come to Philadelphia from Connecticut with her brother Edmund, a portrait painter of the day (James Swift Rogers, *James Rogers of New London, Conn. and His Descendants,* 1902, p. 234).

Barker resumed play making in 1812 with *Marmion,* a dramatization of Scott's poem, produced in New York, Apr. 12, as of English origin. On June 1, 1812, he accepted an appointment as captain in the 2nd Artillery and served on the Canadian frontier with a success worthy of his heritage. At the time of his resignation from the army, Apr. 1, 1817, he was assistant adjutant-general with the rank of major (see files, Adjutant-General's Office, Washington). Literature and politics had again claimed his attention in 1816. By July 4 he was active in the "new-school" branch of the Democratic party, composing two poems for the day's ceremonies. On Dec. 18, 1816, he began a series of eleven articles of spirited dramatic criticism in which his attitude toward drama was the same as that which in his plays gives him true significance—"that with a free people and under the liberal care of a government such as ours it might tend to keep alive the spirit of freedom; and to unite conflicting parties in common love of liberty and devotedness to country." (*Democratic Press,* Dec. 18, 1816). He contributed biographies on Jay and Clinton to Delaplaine's one-time much-discussed *Repository;* they are equal to any of the period. Drama, however, was still his favorite literary form; and with *The Armourer's Escape* produced Mar. 21, 1817, and *How to Try a Lover,* written the same year but not then acted, he again illustrated his ability. The slashing eloquence of his political oration of July 4, 1817, aroused much feeling among the Democrats and was widely quoted.

In 1817 Barker became an alderman, in October 1819 he was elected mayor of Philadelphia by the Democratic city council. Always a philanthropist, he used his office on several occasions for charitable purposes, and, through the efficiency of his appointments, stimulated considerable animosity. In the spring of 1820 there were fears of incendiarism in the city; and he, as mayor, organized the citizens for protection. With the split and defeat of his party in the next election he lost the mayoralty but resumed his position as alderman. He made strenuous efforts to harmonize the differences in the ranks of the Democrats, and through 1822 and 1823 was an official of most of the town meetings and a member of every important committee of his party. The finest of his dramas, *Superstition,* was put on at the Chestnut Street Theatre, Mar. 12, 1824. Its theme is taken from New England colonial history and developed with a power that makes it possible to estimate the play as the best drama written in America to that date. Constantly a figure on public occasions in Philadelphia, Barker participated in the reception to Gen. Lafayette in September 1824, and during the parade an ode of his was distributed to the crowds from a press mounted on a wagon (*National Gazette,* Sept. 29, 30, 1824). The annuals of 1825, and for several years following, especially the *Atlantic Souvenir,* contain facile, graceful poetical contributions from his pen deserving a better fate than has been theirs. The most popular were "Little Red Riding Hood" and "The Three Sisters." On Oct. 24, 1825, he delivered an ode, "The Pilgrims of Pennsylvania," before a distinguished audience including John Quincy Adams and the Duke of Saxe-Weimar. His interest in the theatre was continued by way of prologue to Dr. James McHenry's play, *The Usurper,* Dec. 26, 1827, and Richard Penn Smith's *The Eighth of January,* 1829, the second again declaring for American plays by Americans.

Barker was a vigorous participant in Andrew Jackson's campaign for the presidency in 1828, and on Mar. 11, 1829, was appointed collector of the port of Philadelphia, holding that post until 1838. He conducted the custom-house adequately, with attention, at the same time, to political expediency. In 1832 he contributed influential articles to the newspapers on the Bank War, while his oration at the Jackson dinner, Jan. 8, 1835, was an excellent example of aggressive political writing (*Daily Pennsylvanian,* Jan. 16, 1835). His dramatic interests were not entirely submerged by public affairs. On Jan. 13, 1836, he was instrumental in what nearly amounted to a municipal benefit-performance for William B. Wood, Philadelphia actor and manager. On Mar. 26, 1836, his earlier play, *How to Try a Lover,*

never before performed, was given at the Arch Street Theatre with enthusiastic approval under the new title, *A Court of Love* (*Ibid.*, Mar. 26, 1836). This was the only play he ever wrote with which he was satisfied. Partly for political reasons, but largely in recognition of Barker's real ability, Van Buren appointed him comptroller of the treasury, Mar. 1, 1838. With his removal to Washington, his name still remained an influence in Philadelphia, appearing prominently among toasts at political gatherings (see files of the *Daily Pennsylvanian*). Following the change in administration, he lost his office in the treasury on Apr. 19, 1841, but with the advent of Tyler was made acting comptroller of the treasury, on Sept. 14 of the same year. Subsequently, he was clerk in the office of the chief clerk of the treasury and long continued to place his valuable experience at the service of the Government. In spite of heavy routine duties his literary production did not altogether cease, as he contributed to periodicals in Washington. The French Revolution of 1848 was the subject of a poem he read before President Polk's cabinet, copies of which were distributed during the procession to celebrate the French success. His letters to his daughter, at this period, reflect an affectionate and domestic temperament of appealing charm. Through the changing administrations he succeeded in retaining his office, and at his death, Mar. 9, 1858, he was still holding his position in the Treasury Department.

[The facts of John Barker's mil. life are to be found in the *Pa. Archives*, 6th ser., vols. I to X, for which there is a complete index. The best analysis of J. N. Barker's plays and position in Am. drama is in A. H. Quinn, *Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923). The most extended biog. sketch is by Henry Simpson, *The Lives of Eminent Philadelphians* (1859). Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1832), II, 308–16, contains Barker's own story of his plays. His five printed plays are in the Univ. of Pa. Lib. The files of the Phila. *Aurora, Democratic Press, Daily Pennsylvanian*, and *Washington Union* are main sources for biog. facts. Manuscript letters in the Phila. Custom House, Ridgway Lib., and Pa. Hist. Soc. are valuable. Miss Josephine Keys, Barker's grand-daughter, possesses manuscript letters, official commissions, and biog. data.]

P. H. M.

BARKER, JAMES WILLIAM (Dec. 5, 1815–June 26, 1869), merchant, Know-Nothing party candidate for mayor of New York, was born at White Plains, N. Y. He began his business career as a clerk with an extensive mercantile concern in New York City, where he later entered into business for himself, his energy and good management soon making him wealthy. In 1860 he founded a large dry-goods house in Pittsburgh, Pa., one of the first in that city to confine its business exclusively to cloths. He was prostrated by a sunstroke in 1867, and impaired health thereafter obliged him to relinquish active business connections, although the two years of his life that remained found him the president of the Eclectic Life Insurance Company of New York. His chief claim to fame was his activity in New York and national politics. He was an earnest and zealous Whig until the dissolution of that party. In 1854 he was the Know-Nothing party's candidate for mayor of New York City, but was defeated in a closely contested election by Fernando Wood. He always claimed that his defeat was due to an article in the *Tribune*, which claimed that he had set fire to his store for the purpose of cheating the insurance companies (*New York Herald*, June 27, 1869). He brought a libel suit against the *Tribune*, but the case was finally compromised. In 1856, upon the virtual dissolution of the Know-Nothing party and the reëmergence of the anti-slavery agitation (through the repeal of the Missouri Compromise two years before), Barker resumed his political activities, this time as a Republican, and he was a worker in the campaign for Lincoln's election in 1860. Meantime he was a dominant factor in the founding of the "Order of the Star Spangled Banner," a secret organization having for its object the prevention of the political ascendancy of the foreign-born inhabitants of the United States. He became the head of the New York grand council and in 1853 was its principal officer. The resolutions adopted upon his death by the directors of the Eclectic Insurance Company (*New York Times*, June 29, 1869) declared "he left behind an honorable memory for uprightness of character, public spirit, munificence to the poor, liberality to religious enterprises, and diligence in business." He was known for the invariable courtesy of his deportment, and his efficiency and manliness in every place of trust. In heated political campaigns the New York newspapers of his day were not so reliable, and in the eyes of his friends there were no grounds whatsoever for the *Tribune's* charge against him. It was Barker's hatred of litigation and controversy, as well as publicity, that booked largely in the subsequent settlement of the suit. He died while on a visit to Rahway, N. J., and was given a public funeral in New York.

[There are meager accounts of his life in some earlier cyclopedias, but the chief records of him appear in the New York newspapers following his death. All print memorial notices and resolutions in connection with the usual obituaries.]

R. R. R.

BARKER, JEREMIAH (Mar. 31, 1752–Oct. 4, 1835), physician, was the son of Samuel and Patience (Howland) Barker of Scituate, Mass.

He was educated in the common schools and then studied medicine under Dr. Bela Lincoln, a graduate of Aberdeen and Harvard. After an unsuccessful attempt at practising in Gorham, Me., he moved to Barnstable on Cape Cod, where he was at the outbreak of the Revolution. During the war, he served as ship's surgeon, first on a privateer and later in the Penobscot expedition. When this expedition was over, he returned to Gorham and gradually built up a large practise. Later on he practised at Stroudwater but finally retired to Gorham. He was married five times but outlived all of his wives and died at the ripe age of eighty-four.

During his first stay in Gorham, Barker compiled a *Vade Mecum,* containing a digest of current medicine, and *A Book of Anatomy.* He produced a number of well-written papers, on epidemics occurring in Maine, 1790–1810 (published in Mitchill's *Medical Repository*), and planned a history of American epidemics, which apparently was never written. He was a member of the Massachusetts and of the Maine Medical Societies, was an omnivorous reader, and at his death left a medical library of 3,000 volumes.

Barker was a man of many theories. Convinced that much sickness had its origin in inclement weather, he believed that approaching diseases could be predicted from atmospheric conditions. He experimented freely with the use of alkalies as drugs, and supposed that he had found in lime-water a universal panacea. More modest than many of his profession, he habitually carried a favorite text-book, *Rush on Fevers,* to the bedside of his patients and consulted it there. He was an indefatigable worker. It is said that during an epidemic of putrid sore-throat he never entered his own house for more than a month, but drove from patient to patient, eating and sleeping anywhere.

[Mitchill's *Medical Repository;* family records.]

J.A.S.

BARKER, JOSIAH (Nov. 16, 1763–Sept. 23, 1847), ship-builder, was born at Marshfield, Mass., the son of Ebenezer Barker, a blacksmith of Pilgrim descent, and of Priscilla (Loring) Barker (Barker Newhall, *Barker Family of Plymouth Colony and County,* 1901, pp. 33, 46). His Revolutionary service began at thirteen. After four short army enlistments spent chiefly in tedious guard duty, he was at sea on the frigate *Hague* during the last year of the war. A veteran at nineteen, he returned to Pembroke, Mass., where he married Penelope, the daughter of Capt. Seth Hatch, on Dec. 9, 1787. In the meantime he had learned to build ships on the North River, whose numerous yards made it a "cradle of New England shipbuilding." The industry was temporarily dull at home, so he built five ships, between 1786 and 1792, in New Brunswick, where vessels enjoyed the advantages of British registry. The Anglo-French war stimulated the New England demand and in 1795 he settled at Charlestown, Mass. His reputation attracted orders from the ship-owners of Boston, and in the next twenty years, the Barker yard turned out nearly forty vessels. In the War of 1812, Barker built on contract the sloop of war *Frolic,* and served as master carpenter on the *Independence,* the first ship of the line in the United States Navy. It has been erroneously stated that he became naval constructor at the Charlestown yard about 1811. He was still building merchantmen in his own yard in 1816, and not until 1826 does his name first appear as naval constructor, at a salary of $2,000, later $2,300. He served in that capacity for twenty years. Among the ships which he constructed were the ships of the line *Vermont* and *Virginia* and the frigate *Cumberland.* In 1834, he rebuilt the *Constitution* in our first naval dry dock. But he does not seem to have been a creative genius in naval architecture; ordinarily, he built along lines received from the chief constructor. His original work was the designing of the sloop *Portsmouth* in 1843, though even there he followed a French model. With his imposing figure, about six feet tall, and his "dignity, urbanity, and hospitality," he was prominent in the comfortable life of the navy-yard and town, but an octogenarian builder of wooden ships was scarcely equal to the new problems arising from steam and iron. In 1843, he was transferred to Portsmouth, and he was finally dismissed from the service on July 9, 1846, at the age of eighty-three (*Navy Register,* 1847, p. 167). He survived this barely a year, dying at Charlestown on Sept. 23, 1847.

[*Memorial of Josiah Barker, of Charlestown,* by Henry H. Edes (1871), reprinted and amplified from his article in the *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* XXIV, 297–304, based on original family papers; details of Barker's connection with the navy in the *Am. State Papers, Naval Series,* I, 828, 1017, II, 458, III, 272, and in the ann. volumes of the *Navy Reg.,* from 1826 to 1847.]

R.G.A—n.

BARKER, WHARTON (May 1, 1846–Apr. 8, 1921), financier, publicist, the son of Abraham and Sarah (Wharton) Barker, inherited something of the energy and combativeness of his grandfather, Jacob Barker [*q.v.*]. Born in Philadelphia, after attending public schools in that city he entered the University of Pennsylvania. At seventeen he assisted in organizing the 3rd

Regiment (U. S.) of colored troops. In 1866 he graduated from the University with the degree of A.B., and then began work with the banking firm of Barker Brothers & Company, of which two years later he became a member. On Oct. 16, 1867, he was married to Margaret Corlies Baker. In 1878 the Russian Government appointed him its special financial agent in the United States and intrusted him with the building of four cruisers in American shipyards. A year later he was called to Russia to advise on the development of the coal and iron mines north of the Azof, and for his services was knighted by Alexander II. His Russian interests led to his acquirement of interests in the Orient. In 1887 he became associated with Count Mitkiewicz, who professed to have obtained from the Chinese Government, through Li Hung Chang, a $20,000,000 concession, including telegraph, telephone, and banking rights. The project, however, came to naught—according to Barker, because of the antagonism of British capitalists—and resulted in somewhat spectacular litigation between Barker and Mitkiewicz. Barker, while retaining his interest in the family banking firm, organized the Investment Company and also the Finance Company, both of Philadelphia, with a combined capital of $9,000,000. The banking firm was in some difficulty at the time of the Baring failure, but after an assignment in 1890, soon resumed business.

Barker was a student of political, economic, and social questions, and was an active controversialist. To give publicity to his views, he started a weekly periodical, the *American,* which ran from October 1880 to January 1891, was revived in December 1894, and then ran to the end of 1900. Up to 1896 he was nominally a Republican. He had been a leader in the anti-third-term movement against Grant, one of the first to propose the nomination of Garfield, and eight years later an early advocate of the nomination of Harrison. But in 1896 his views on currency reform swung him over to the support of Bryan. He favored what he called an "absolute" money to be issued by the government, and advocated bimetalism only as a temporary makeshift. He later became affiliated with the People's party and supported most of the Populist demands. In 1900, on the same day that the regular Populist convention indorsed Bryan, the "Middle-of-the-Road" Populists chose Barker as their presidential candidate. In the election he received only 50,232 votes. He was not again active in politics. From 1880 till his death he was a trustee of the University of Pennsylvania and was always deeply concerned with its affairs. He was a man of broad social sympathies, was widely informed, and was a voluminous writer of articles and letters on a great range of subjects.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1920–21; obituaries in the *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Tribune,* Apr. 9, 1921; *The Great Issues,* a collection of editorials from the *American,* by Wharton Barker (1902).] W.J.G.

BARKSDALE, WILLIAM (Aug. 21, 1821–July 3, 1863), congressman, Confederate soldier, was born in Rutherford County, Tenn., where his grandfather had settled in 1808, removing from Virginia. The family had been established in the Old Dominion since early in the eighteenth century. He attended the University of Nashville and then studied law at Columbus, Miss. He began the practise of law, but abandoned it to become editor of the *Columbus Democrat,* through which he expressed his strong pro-slavery sentiments. He entered the army in the Mexican War as an enlisted man in the 2nd Mississippi, was appointed captain and assistant-commissary of volunteers in January 1847, and served until August 1848. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention of 1852, and a member of Congress from 1853 to 1861. It is sometimes stated that he assisted Preston Brooks in the latter's assault upon Charles Sumner in the Senate chamber, by preventing interference from bystanders; but no witness examined by the congressional committee of investigation makes any mention of his presence (*Report of Select Committee,* 1856). When Mississippi passed the ordinance of secession, an action which he cordially approved, he resigned his seat in Congress (Jan. 12, 1861), and returned home. He was quartermaster-general of the "Mississippi Army" from March 1861 until he entered the Confederate service as colonel of the 13th Mississippi Regiment, which he commanded at the battle of Bull Run. During the months devoted to organization and training, the following autumn and winter, he acquired a reputation as a competent regimental commander, so that in April 1862 his brigade commander (Griffith) recommended his appointment as brigadier-general. The appointment was not made at that time, and it was in charge of his regiment that he went through the greater part of the Peninsular campaign. In July, the division commander (McLaws) again recommended his promotion. Gen. Lee also urged it, referring to his conduct at Malvern Hill—"seizing the colors himself and advancing under a terrific fire of artillery and infantry"—and declaring that he displayed "the highest qualities of the soldier." The appointment was made in August, and he was regularly assigned to the brigade to which his old regiment belonged; he

had commanded it by virtue of seniority since the battle of Savage Station (June 29), where Gen. Griffith had been mortally wounded. It now formed a part of McLaws's division of Longstreet's corps. He commanded it in all the battles of the Army of Northern Virginia (except second Bull Run, where it was not present), until the next summer—Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, and Gettysburg. On the second day of the battle of Gettysburg he was mortally wounded in the fighting at the Peach Orchard, falling into the hands of the enemy. He died the next day.

[F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1890), I, 107; *Confed. Mil. Hist.*, VII (Miss.), 239; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, III, 331 ff.; *Official Records*, ser. I, vols. V, XIII, XIV, XXVII, XXXI, XXXIX, XLIII, XLIV; unpublished Confed. records in the War Dept.]

T. M. S.

BARLOW, FRANCIS CHANNING (Oct. 19, 1834–Jan. 11, 1896), Union soldier, was born at Brooklyn, N. Y., the son of the Rev. David Hatch Barlow, rector of the First Unitarian Church of that city. His mother had been Almira Penniman of Brookline, Mass., and when he was two years old the family moved to the mother's home town, where young Barlow was raised. At seventeen he entered Harvard, graduating four years later. Soon after, he went to New York, and in the following year commenced the practise of law, being admitted to the bar in May 1858. In 1859 he formed a law partnership with George Bliss, Jr., with whom he remained until the opening of the Civil War. During this time he wrote occasional law reports and editorials for the *New York Tribune*. On the outbreak of war, Barlow's patriotic spirit led him to abandon his profession on the very eve of his marriage. On Apr. 19, 1861, after declining an appointment as a lieutenant, he enlisted as a private in the 12th New York Infantry. The next day he married Arabella Wharton Griffith of Somerville, N. J., with whom unfortunately he was destined to spend but little time. The day following, he departed with his regiment for Washington. His regiment never got to the front, but served three months in the defenses of the capital. On May 2 Barlow accepted an appointment as first-lieutenant, and served until he was honorably mustered out on Aug. 1 of the same year. He reëntered the military service as lieutenant-colonel of the 61st New York Infantry, on Nov. 9, 1861. With this regiment he returned to Washington, near which, under the direction of Gen. McClellan, the winter was spent in severe preparation for the coming campaigns. Barlow went with his regiment to Fort Monroe, where shortly afterward he was promoted to colonel. He served honorably in the Peninsular campaign, especially at the battle of Fair Oaks. Returning from the vicinity of Richmond, he was placed in command of the 2nd brigade, 2nd division, of Howard's corps. He commanded this brigade during the battle of Antietam. Gallantly leading his men in the Bloody Lane, near the Piper House, Barlow at a critical moment checked an attempt of the enemy to flank the Union line. But he was soon after struck down by artillery fire, which severely wounded him in the groin. For his fine conduct in this and preceding battles, he was appointed brigadier-general Sept. 19, 1862. He was returned to duty in time to take part in the Chancellorsville campaign. Here he commanded the left brigade of the 11th corps, and was involved in its rout, when it was attacked by Jackson. His next duty was at Gettysburg. His command was now part of the advance forces of Meade's army. Still a portion of the 11th (Howard's) corps, Barlow, on July 1, 1863, fought north of Gettysburg to prevent the Confederates from seizing the town and the hills to the south, which were the key positions of that great battlefield. The right of the Federal troops being turned by Early's division, and the men commencing to fall back, exposing the town of Gettysburg to the enemy, Barlow valiantly but vainly attempted to rally his command. He himself was shot through the body by a Minié ball, which passed out close to the spine, paralyzing his legs and arms. Left for dead on the field, he was seen by the Confederate Gen. Gordon, who dismounted from his horse and gave him water, and then had him placed in a building near-by. After the Union victory, the Federal troops found their abandoned general. Under the tender care of his devoted wife, he was eventually brought back to health, but only after some ten months in hospitals.

On rejoining the army he was assigned on Apr. 1, 1864, to the command of the 1st division, 2nd (Hancock's) corps. Barlow served throughout the Wilderness campaign. His division was one of two selected by Hancock to attack the Confederate salient at Spottsylvania on May 12. This attack was launched at dawn, without firing a shot. It became very disorderly but so surprised the enemy that no effectual resistance was offered. It was extremely successful, 4,000 prisoners, including two generals, 30 colors, and 20 guns being captured. It was the greatest blow that Lee's army had received in the campaign, destroying any hope that might have existed of stopping Grant's advance. Barlow took part in further operations during the advance to the James River and in the early battles around Pe-

tersburg. But his health broke under the strain of the continued fighting and of the loss of his wife, who died on July 27. He went on an extended trip to Europe, and did not return to duty until Apr. 1 following. During this period he was brevetted major-general "for highly meritorious and distinguished conduct while leading his division in the assault on the enemy's works at Spottsylvania." On Apr. 6, 1865, he was assigned to and assumed command of the 2nd division, 2nd corps. He at once entered into the final fighting of the war. In reserve at Sailor's Creek on Apr. 6, Barlow's division entered line the next day. Near Farmville he seized and held the only bridge to the north side of the Appomattox, which Lee had hoped to destroy to prevent Grant's army from overtaking his retreating troops. The loss of this bridge exposed Lee to simultaneous attacks from front and rear and resulted in his surrender. As a reward for this service, Barlow was appointed major-general on May 25, and assigned to the command of the 2nd corps.

Barlow now entered political life. He accepted the candidacy in New York for secretary of state, and was elected to this office in November 1865. He consequently declined a permanent appointment in the regular army, and resigned his volunteer commission of major-general on Nov. 16. He reëstablished his law partnership with George Bliss, opening offices in New York City in 1866. In 1867 he was married to Ellen Shaw of Boston, who was then living on Staten Island. He was not reëlected as secretary of state. In 1869 President Grant appointed him United States marshal for the southern district of New York. He cleaned out the offices, changing the entire personnel. When called upon for a political contribution assessed on the supposed emoluments of his office, he declined to pay except on the basis of his salary, and carefully eliminated any chances of the receipt by his assistants of any money other than authorized fees. Soon after assuming these new duties, Barlow received from the President command of the combined military, naval, and revenue forces of the Government in the New England states, New York, and New Jersey, under a law of 1818, in order to stop filibustering expeditions against the island of Cuba. He seized a shipload of Cubans, with arms and munitions, and put an end to further movements of this nature.

In 1869, Barlow was again elected secretary of state for New York, and held office during 1870, when he was elected attorney-general of the state, a position he held from 1871 until 1873. His administration was vigorous. In the first year he initiated the prosecution of the infamous "Tweed Ring" and their counsel. About the same time he became one of the founders of the Bar Association. In 1874 he resumed the private practise of law. In 1876 he was appointed to investigate and report upon alleged election irregularities in Florida in connection with the Hayes and Tilden controversy. He made a vigorous report exposing the conditions which had existed before and at the elections. This was his last public service. He continued to practise law until he died at New York, Jan. 11, 1896. He was buried at Brookline, Mass.

Barlow was of medium size, slender, with smooth face, temperamentally enthusiastic and energetic in whatever he undertook. He was not a military genius, but his solid character led to important results in his army career, and these in turn gave him political and business successes. His slight build made him appear younger than he really was, and earned for him in the war the nickname of "boy general." During his life he was greatly respected, and in the important missions which were confided to him he invariably acquitted himself with honor. The State of New York thought so well of him that in 1922 it erected a monument to his memory on the battlefield of Gettysburg.

[E. H. Abbot, "Francis Channing Barlow," in *Harv. Grads. Mag.*, June 1896; *Personal Memoirs of U. S. Grant* (1886), II; F. A. Walker, *Hist. of the Second Army Corps in the Army of the Potomac* (1886); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg.* (1890); *Official Records*, see Index; obituaries in *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 12, 1896; "In Memoriam, Francis Channing Barlow," *N. Y. Monuments Commission* (1923).]

C.H.L—a.

BARLOW, JOEL (Mar. 24, 1754–Dec. 24, 1812), poet, statesman, destined by temperament and circumstance to become one of the most liberal thinkers of his age, was born and reared in the most conservative environment of Federalist Connecticut. His ancestors, of English stock, were in 1653 prosperous farmers in Fairfield; Joel Barlow himself, the fourth child of Samuel and Esther (Hull) Barlow, was born in Redding. Even in his boyhood on the farm, in school in Redding, or under the tutelage, during the years 1772 and 1773, of the Rev. Nathaniel Bartlett, there was evident that energy of thought and action which was to emancipate him from the complacent narrowness of the Hartford circle. After nearly a year at Moor's School, Hanover, N. H., and two months at Dartmouth College, Barlow, never uncertain about his own wishes, became in November 1774 a member of the freshman class of Yale College, together with Oliver Wolcott, Zephaniah Swift, and Noah Webster. Among these distinguished men he was

Barlow

himself quite at ease, studying with his tutors, Timothy Dwight and Joseph Buckminster; writing in 1775 his first poem (not extant); and during his summer vacation of 1776, taking part in the battle of Long Island. On July 23, 1778, he read his first long poem, *The Prospect of Peace,* at the public examination of the senior class, and on Sept. 9, 1778, he received the degree of B.A. at a private commencement of Yale College. Barlow was happily formed by nature for life, and especially for American life of the eighteenth century: he was anxious about his career but he was confident and aggressive. He already had in mind his huge philosophic poem, *The Vision of Columbus,* and despite clouds over his own future and that of his country, he wrote characteristically to Noah Webster in 1779: "You and I are not the first in the world who have broken loose from college without friends and without fortune to push us into public notice. Let us show the world a few more examples of men standing upon their own merit and rising in spite of obstacles." Instead of the despair evident in the writings of some contemporary men of letters, Barlow consistently manifested satisfaction with existing conditions: "The American Republic," he told Webster, "is a fine theatre for the display of merit of every kind. If ever virtue is to be rewarded, it is in America."

This optimism Barlow at once put into practise. Even in these turbulent years (1779–87) the diversity of his activities was amazing. He studied philosophy at Yale; he taught school; he managed a business; he published a journal; he wrote a new version of the Psalms; and he was admitted to the bar (April 1786). Yet such occupations were incidental. His studies were secondary to his gradually growing epic; his connection with the *American Mercury,* which he edited with Elisha Babcock, lasted only from July 12, 1784, to Nov. 14, 1785; and an establishment for stationery and publishing did not hold his interest. He had only a transient satisfaction in his poem, published in 1782, *An Elegy on the Late Honourable Titus Hosmer, Esq.,* and in his curious performance, *Doctor Watts' Imitation of the Psalms of David, Corrected and Enlarged* (1785). Barlow's real interests were in his ambitions as an author and the events of his time. These latter he surveyed from a quasi-military post, having been made, in 1780, through the assistance of Col. David Humphreys and Gen. Greene, chaplain of the 4th Massachusetts brigade. Barlow was a sensitive observer of the thoughts and deeds of men in this struggle for political liberty, and it is probable that some of his later social criticism and theories evolved from what he saw of the American Revolution. His chief concern, however, during the decade after his graduation from college was writing, in accordance with his own special enthusiasms. The traditional meditative mind of the poet was not in him. His prose took form in clear sensible records of what he saw; and his poetry, equally robust, he composed with sound learning and tireless energy. Both prose and poetry he published early, for he was a young man bent on a reputation, but it should be noticed that always in the background of his mind dwelt that indomitable ambition of the larger poem, the vast epic of America. It was known that he was writing this poem, and in 1780 David Humphreys called attention to this "hopeful genius." In the meantime Barlow offered his occasional pieces, and was a contributor in 1786 and 1787 to the famous publication of the "Hartford Wits," *The Anarchiad,* the satire in prose and verse that was appearing in the *New Haven Gazette and Connecticut Magazine.* In the latter year appeared the proof of his boundless, if somewhat absurd, literary dreams, *The Vision of Columbus,* a poem in nine books and more than 5,000 lines. He had written it over a period of eight years, from 1779 to 1787, in leisure stolen from teaching, preaching, publishing, and military service. He had polished and revised, secure in his cheerful egotism that it would be well received. Strangely enough, it was; despite obvious debts to Milton, and stretches of execrable verse, *The Vision of Columbus* won Barlow fame. His contemporaries delighted in the grandiose couplets on the discovery, settlement, and majestic future of America.

Barlow was now thirty-three, and about to embark upon the most romantic period of his career. Personally he was by no means the pompous person who might be pictured from his stately poetry. He had good looks, was agreeable, and was known, on the whole, as the most original of the "Hartford Wits." There was about him a cheerfulness that was both attractive and amusing. In the midst of his busyness he had found time to be in love once or twice. In college days he had been a more or less playful suitor of Elizabeth Whitman, whose pathetic story is described in one of the earliest American novels, Mrs. Hannah Foster's *The Coquette* (1797). The story survives of the meeting of Barlow and Miss Whitman in 1778, at the house of President Ezra Stiles: "Joel and Eliza were ordered to conduct toward each other as man and wife for the whole evening." This they did, "adopting the nine Muses as their children." The incident is interesting as the forerunner of gay

letters which show Barlow in a new light, the Barlow who is effectually concealed in all his poetry, save, perhaps, in *Hasty Pudding*. There has survived another series of charming and graceful letters between Barlow and Ruth Baldwin, who in 1781 became his wife, and whom he loved devotedly to the end of his days. During all his intense endeavor, Barlow had an enviable capacity for living happily.

His departure on May 25, 1788 for Europe, where he remained for seventeen years, began the change of the New England Yankee into the Europeanized Democrat. Unsuccessful as a lawyer, he had become in 1787 associated with the Ohio Company which sold in the West many acres to unhappy Frenchmen. Through this connection he became European agent for the Scioto Company, and it was in their behalf that on June 24, 1788 he arrived at Havre. Only his buoyant spirit carried him over his failure to sell shares in France and the collapse of his own organization, La Compagnie du Scioto, formed in 1789. Concerning this episode in Barlow's life has raged a storm of gossip, but the failure of the company was due primarily to lack of assistance from Barlow's American employers, his own inexperience in business, and the dishonesty of several of his associates. The blow was severe, but Barlow's letters of the time are full of delight at the European scene. Puritan orthodoxy dropped from him like a mantle and, like Franklin, he seemed at once to become part of the democratic thought of the age. For most of the time between 1790 and 1792 the Barlows (Mrs. Barlow ad joined him in 1790) resided in London, living chiefly by his pen. His zeal and intelligence soon made his name known. He became a prominent member of the London Society for Constitutional Information, and was on friendly terms with Horne Tooke, John Frost, Dr. Priestley, and, especially, Thomas Paine. The angry John Adams considered even Paine "not a more worthless fellow" than Barlow. In this intimacy is the true hint of the intellectual change since the Hartford days. When Paine was imprisoned in Paris, it was Barlow who took charge of the manuscript of *The Age of Reason* and achieved its publication. Nor was he a mere echo of the tumult of radicalism. His own works began to appear, full of fearless thinking and touched with his own warm enthusiasms.

The pioneer of these was his *A Letter to the National Convention of France, on the Defects in the Constitution of 1791 and the Extent of the Amendments which ought to be Applied* (1792). As a reward, the farmer's boy of Redding was made a citizen of France. More significant was

Barlow

the first part (1792) of his *Advice to the Privileged Orders*, a stirring political document which disposes of the critics who label Barlow merely as the grandiloquent versifier. In debt, unquestionably, to Paine's greater work, *The Rights of Man*, it is still unique. It forcibly presents the doctrine of the responsibility of the State, a doctrine as admissibly true to-day as it was then heretical to Barlow's college friends. If these in Hartford denounced, there must have been comfort in Fox's eulogy of the book in the House of Commons. The British Government, in compliment to its vigor, suppressed the volume and proscribed the writer. Barlow sought refuge in Paris, where he calmly wrote the second part of this, his greatest prose work, and also his philippic in verse, *The Conspiracy of Kings* (1792). Among the French he was exceedingly popular. He translated Brissot de Warville's *New Travels in the United States;* he wrote, not without an eye to his French reputation, his *Lettre adressée aux habitants de Piémont, sur les avantages de la Révolution française et la nécessité d'en adopter les principes en Italie* (1793); and he judiciously invested in French government consols. To this capacity for friendliness even more than to his native shrewdness he owed the fact that by 1794 he was a rich man. He was even persuaded by friends to act in the exciting drama of French politics: he went to Savoy and stood for election as its deputy to the Convention. This sally was too much even for the ambitious Barlow. He was defeated, but by one of those paradoxes which make this New Englander's life so whimsical, out of the incident emerged his most delightful poem. This was *Hasty Pudding* (written 1793, published 1796), a witty fusion of homely New England memories and European backgrounds. The successful business man was occasionally homesick and in such a mood one evening, "under the smoky rafters of a Savoyard inn," he found himself facing a steaming dish beloved in Connecticut, hasty pudding. Forgetful for once of the solemnity which usually stifled him in verse composition, he poured forth the merriest of mock pastorals. Here was the Barlow known to intimate friends.

His career now became more and more picturesque. Through the influence of David Humphreys he was appointed in 1795 consul to Algiers. Here and during the remaining years in Europe, from 1797 to 1805, he maintained an amazing mastery of his different interests. He effected treaties with Tunis, Algiers, and Tripoli, and he risked his life to free American prisoners in Africa. He wrote to George Washington, urging him to prevent a war between

England and France, and his letter reveals his entire understanding of a complex situation. He made friends with Robert Fulton, and demonstrated his interest in the latter's "plunging boat" and other scientific ventures by financial assistance. A memorial of the intimacy of the philosopher and the scientist is Fulton's portrait of his friend's serene, intellectual face. Yet, most surprising, through all these stormy years Barlow held fast to his literary passions. It was not significant merely that he gathered material for histories of the French Revolution and of the United States, or that he translated Volney's *Ruins* (1802). It was rather that he still toiled over *The Vision of Columbus,* determined to fulfil that intention of his youth to produce the great philosophic epic. He rewrote and revised, and by 1804 had finished that vast and devastating poem, *The Columbiad.* Early in 1805 he was back in America, obeying at last the injunction of his wife, given many years before, "to go home and be respectable." He meant to enjoy that tranquil life of retirement which he always professed to desire but which he renounced, it seems to the bystander, without great suffering. Now he had come home laden with *The Columbiad* and huge projects. One of these was the establishment of a national institution for research and instruction in the arts and sciences, discussed in his *Prospectus of a National Institution to be Established in the United States* (1805). Finally, in 1807, *The Columbiad* appeared, a colossal affair of writing and bookmaking, with an overwhelming elegance of bindings, steel engravings, and ornament, and with a dedication to Robert Fulton, the patron saint of steam navigation. Since the day in which Barlow thus realized his life-long purpose of an epic appropriate to the size of America, this poem has been transfixed with jests—all of them variations on Hawthorne's laughter at "its ponderosity of leaden verses" (*Mosses from an Old Manse,* 1846, pt. II, p. 132) and Byron's query to George Ticknor, "whether we looked upon Barlow as our Homer" (*Life, Letters and Journals of George Ticknor,* 5th end., I, 59). It was a tough volume, but into its ten books and 3,675 couplets had crept some of the strength of Barlow's mind. He does not now arouse the emotions he desired when Hesper, the guardian angel of the Western Continent, shows Columbus from his Spanish prison the future of America, but there are passages of grandeur, notably those concerning the Prison Ship (bk. VI, ll. 35–122). One amusing postscript to this event was a letter to Barlow from his friend, the former Bishop of Blois, censuring the book as an offense against

Christianity. Barlow in his answer declared that he had never renounced Christianity, and added, what seems undeniable, that *The Columbiad* was truly "a moral work."

For five years after his return to America he enacted the rôle of literary and political savant. At his beautiful home near Washington, which he had modestly named Kalorama, he presided with large hospitality over an impressive collection of books, curios, and paintings. His retirement did not prevent his becoming a member of the United States Military Philosophical Society and the American Philosophical Society, or maintaining an active interest in finance as director of the Bank of Washington. His strange career was about to have its proper climax. He was at work, in accordance with a suggestion from Jefferson, on a history of the United States, when President Madison appointed him minister to France. He was to intercede with Napoleon for a more generous treatment of American commerce. In August 1811, he sailed for France with his wife, his nephew, Thomas Barlow, and his niece, Clara Baldwin, on the frigate *Constitution.* On the subject of his mission Barlow found the French officials evasive, but on Oct. 11, 1812, he was informed by Bassano, the minister of foreign affairs, that Napoleon, then engaged in his disastrous invasion of Russia, would meet him at Wilna, Poland, for discussion of a treaty. At the end of October, therefore, Barlow set out, accompanied by his nephew as secretary, on the long, arduous journey to Wilna. Here he remained from Nov. 18 to Dec. 5, hoping to meet the Emperor and to consummate the transaction on which he had labored for more than a year. In the meantime, Napoleon suffered defeat at the Beresina (Nov. 26 to Nov. 28), and Barlow, despairing of his cherished interview, turned back toward Paris. He reached Warsaw safely, after beholding on this journey scenes of great suffering, and being himself imperiled by the hardships. The cold reminded him, he said, of a Connecticut winter. He left Warsaw on Dec. 18 and was soon afterward taken seriously ill. He and his nephew stopped at Zarnowiec, a little village near Cracow, but the exposure and privations of the journey proved fatal. Inflammation of the lungs developed and Barlow died on Dec. 24, 1812. In spite of efforts to restore his body to his birthplace, he still lies in Poland.

[The chief source of information about Joel Barlow is *Life and Letters of Joel Barlow, LL.D.* (1886), by Charles B. Todd. In the unpublished work, "Joel Barlow, His Life and Work to 1790," by Theodore A. Zunder, there is a detailed account of his early life and writings. The best brief sketch of Barlow's life, containing at the end important bibliographical information, was written by Franklin B. Dexter for his

Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll. (1907), IV, 3–16. Interesting facts concerning Barlow were published by Moses Hill in his *Genealogy of the Hill Family from 1632, Including a Biog. Sketch of Joel Barlow* (1879). Contemporary accounts of his life appear in the *Mo. Mag. and British Reg.*, VI, 250–51, and in *Public Characters of 1806*, pp. 152–80. After Barlow's death, P. S. Du Pont (de Nemours) published his "Notice sur la Vie de M. Barlow" in the *Mercure de France*, Apr. 10, 1813, and that same year Konrad E. Oelsner published a longer and better sketch, his *Notice sur la Vie et les Écrits de M. Joel Barlow.* Other sketches of interest can be found in the *Analectic Mag.*, IV, 130–58; in the *Cyc. of Am. Lit.*, I, 391–403; in *The New Englander*, XXXII, 413–37; in Anson P. Stokes, *Memorials of Eminent Yale Men* (1914), I, 126–35. A readable account of Barlow's life, "The Literary Strivings of Mr. Joel Barlow," which was based on Todd's *Life and Letters*, was written by Moses C. Tyler in his *Three Men of Letters* (1895), pp. 131–80. Modern estimates of Barlow's life and work have been given by Vernon P. Squires in "Joel Barlow—Patriot, Democrat, and Man of Letters" in the *Quart. Jour. of the Univ. of N. Dak.*, IX, 299–308, and by Vernon L. Parrington in his "Introduction" to *The Connecticut Wits* (1926), pp. ix-lvii, and in *Main Currents of American Thought* (1927), I, 382–89.]

T. A. Z.
S. T. W.

BARLOW, JOHN WHITNEY (June 26, 1838–Feb. 27, 1914), army engineer, was born in Perry, Wyoming County, N. Y., the son of Nehemiah and Orinda (Steel) Barlow. After attending the public schools and an academy in Wisconsin, he entered the United States Military Academy, from which he was graduated May 6, 1861, as a second-lieutenant of artillery. He fought at Bull Run and throughout the Peninsular campaign, and on May 27, 1862, was brevetted a captain. In July he was transferred to the topographical engineers and in March of the following year to the engineers, four months later reaching the full rank of captain. In 1864 he was transferred to Sherman's army operating against Atlanta, serving temporarily as chief engineer of the 17th army corps. In November he was sent to Nashville, where Thomas placed him in charge of the defenses of the city, and where, for his conduct in the decisive battles of Dec. 15–16, he was brevetted a lieutenant-colonel.

During the first five years after the war he was in charge of various engineering works. In July and August 1871, he commanded the detachment of engineers which, with a party from the Geological Survey under Dr. F. V. Hayden, made the first Government exploration of Yellowstone Park. With the close of this expedition, says Chittenden (*The Yellowstone National Park*), the discovery of the Yellowstone wonderland was made complete; and a result closely following it was the passage of the bill establishing Yellowstone Park, approved Mar. 1, 1872. Though the greater part of his valuable collection of data and photographs was destroyed in the great Chicago fire, Barlow succeeded in finishing an admirable report on the exploration, which was published by the Government in April. In 1879 he was made a major and in 1884 a lieutenant-colonel. In 1886 he was placed in charge of the engineering project at Muscle Shoals, which on Nov. 10, 1890, he completed by the opening of the canal to navigation. In 1892–96 he commanded the party of government engineers which, in coöperation with a similar party from the Mexican Government, placed permanent markers along the whole of the international boundary from El Paso to the Pacific. On May 10, 1895, he was made a colonel, and on May 2, 1901, a brigadier-general and chief of engineers. On the following day, at his own request, he was retired.

Barlow was twice married—on Dec. 26, 1861, to Hessie McNaughton Birnie, of Washington, who died, and on Sept. 17, 1902, to Alice Stanton Turner, of New London. After his retirement he lived in New London. While on a trip with his wife to the Holy Land he fell ill at Jerusalem and died there. The remains were brought to America and after a funeral at Fort Myer, Apr. 20, 1914, were interred at Arlington. Barlow was highly esteemed by those who knew him. Tributes to his memory stressed not merely his gallant record in battle, his many triumphs as an engineer and his exploratory work in Yellowstone Park, but also the modesty and courtesy of his demeanor and the charm of his personality.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.*; H. M. Chittenden, *The Yellowstone National Park* (1920 edition); obituaries in report of the annual reunion (1915) of the Ass. of Grads. of the U. S. Mil. Acad. and in *Army and Navy Jour.*, Mar. 7, 1914.]

W. J. G.

BARLOW, SAMUEL LATHAM MITCHILL (June 5, 1826–July 10, 1889), lawyer, was born in Granville, Hampden County, Mass. The Barlows were among the earliest colonists in New England, having emigrated from England in 1630. Samuel Bancroft Barlow, a Yale graduate and physician, practising at Granville, married the daughter of Jean Brillot-Savarin, a French *emigré* who had fled from France at the time of the Revolution of '89. Samuel Latham Mitchill Barlow was their eldest son. He received his early education at the common schools of his native town. The family in 1842 moved to New York City, and he obtained a situation in the law office of Willett & Greig at one dollar per week. He was called to the New York bar in 1849, at the same time becoming office manager for the firm. He had already impressed people

with his business aptitude, and when, on the death of Greig, he opened an office for himself, he attracted many of the old clientele. A characteristic manifested early in his career was a reluctance to resort to litigation if any other method of achieving the settlement of a claim appeared possible. Consummate tact combined with an almost uncanny knowledge of human nature made him an adept at contriving compromises of dangerous disputes. His first important retainer was on behalf of the claimants under the Mexican Treaty following the War of 1846–47. He soon had more business than he could individually attend to, and in 1852 the firm of Bowdoin, Larocque & Barlow was formed, changed in 1881, when Judge Choate entered the firm to Shipman, Barlow, Larocque & Choate.

Barlow's name became increasingly associated with heavy corporation work involving large financial interests. He made no pretence to being an advocate, and hardly ever appeared in court. His reat successes were achieved at the consultation board, where his unerring judgment and a lightning-like capacity of appreciating the crucial point of a problem made him a commanding figure. His skill as a mediator was well exemplified in the Vanderbilt-Aspinwall case. Commodore Vanderbilt and William H. Aspinwall had become bitter enemies over their conflicting Nicaragua and Panama schemes, and were not on speaking terms. Barlow's interest in the dispute was only as representative of a small number of Pacific Mail shares, the pecuniary value being insignificant, but he determined to intervene. He asked the two enemies to dinner at his house, neither having knowledge that the other would be present, and in a tête-à tête discussion, effected a reconciliation. Another instance of his appearance as *deus ex machina* was in connection with the Garrison contract. During the Franco-German War Commodore Garrison and associates held a contract with Gambetta to supply the French Government with arms, the amount involved being $1,000,000. When Gambetta was driven from office his successor, Thiers, repudiated the contract as exorbitant, thus leaving a ship-load of arms in the hands of the American contractors. Bitter dissensions among the latter threatened disastrous litigation, when Barlow, on behalf of a minor member of the syndicate, intervened, arranged a conference, reconciled the malcontents, induced them to entrust their whole interests to him, and within three months had adjusted the matter with the French authorities, and procured payment of the whole amount involved.

Barlow

The only spectacular event in his career arose in the course of the protracted struggle for control of the Erie Railway, 1872–89. There had been great dissatisfaction with the management of the railway by Jay Gould and James Fisk, Jr., which came to a head after the death of the latter in January 1872. Barlow was retained on behalf of the English Shareholders' Association. Under his advice and with his active participation, the Grand Opera House in New York—headquarters of the company—was forcibly taken possession of, on Mar. 11, 1872, the personnel of the board of directors changed, and Gould ousted, in contempt of an injunction decree obtained by Gould from the court. Barlow also commenced suit against Gould for $9,726,541.26 alleged to have been fraudulently appropriated from the company's funds. The action was compromised, Gould paying $9,000,000 in full settlement, Dec. 18, 1872. On the reconstitution of the Erie Company, Barlow remained the dominant figure in the company's affairs till May 1875 (see E. H. Mott, *Between the Ocean and the Great Lakes: The Story of Erie,* 1899).

Barlow took an active interest in politics. An ardent Democrat, he opposed Tilden and Van Buren and the Free-Soil party in 1848. In 1856 he strongly supported Buchanan, and was the decisive figure in the nomination of Breckinridge as vice-president. Although he opposed the election of Lincoln, he supported the administration whole-heartedly during the war. He was an intimate friend of Gen. McClellan, and assisted his candidature for the presidency in 1864.

An enthusiastic bibliophile and art connoisseur, he assembled a fine library specializing in works on the early history of America. His collection was one of the most valuable in America, since it consisted mainly of original editions and authorities. His collection of paintings and *objets d'art* was equally extensive and more eclectic. The gem of the collection was Van Dyck's "Children of Charles I," purchased by C. P. Huntington for $8,500. In early life he was handsome and fond of dress, but later on became very stout. It is related that he attempted to reduce himself by horseback riding, but after a short trial it was discovered that his horse had lost fifty pounds and he had gained five. Thereafter he allowed nature to take its course. He was very hospitable, a *bon vivant,* and "almost rivalled Sam Ward in his tastes as an epicure." Though he was all his life indefatigable in his attention to business, he reveled in the amenities of his country home, with its gardens and blood-

ed stock. Above all he loved dogs, and for years was a successful exhibitor at the Madison Square Garden dog shows. An expert whist player, he wrote the article on "Whist" in *Appleton's Encyclopædia.* In conjunction with Henry Harrisse he edited *Notes on Columbus* (privately printed 1865), and at his own cost printed for private distribution a number of scarce works on American subjects, dealing chiefly with Columbus. He died suddenly on July 10, 1889, at his country estate, "Elsinore," Glen Cove, L. I. He was married to Mary, daughter of Peter Townsend of Goshen, N. Y.

[*Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.*, ed. by David McAdam, *et al.* (1897), I, 255; *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, XXII, 315; Theron G. Strong, *Landmarks of a Lawyer's Lifetime* (1914), pp. 443–44; *Critic*, XV, 302, XVI, 56–65; *Am. Annual Cyc. and Reg.*, 1889, p. 618; the *N. Y. Times, Sun,* and *Herald* of July 11, 1889.]

H. W. H. K.

BARLOWE, ARTHUR. [See AMADAS, PHILIP, fl. 1584–85.]

BARNABEE, HENRY CLAY (Nov. 14, 1833–Dec. 16, 1917), actor and singer, was born in Portsmouth, N. H. His father was Willis Barnabee, "a noted whip in those palmy days of the stage coach, his route for many years being between Portland and Boston, *via* Portsmouth" (*Reminiscences,* p. 25). It was he who had brought Lafayette, in 1824, rattling into town. He was also an innkeeper, the old Portsmouth Franklin House being under his care, his wife (1799–1885) and even the lad Henry Clay (bearing a Whig name out of respect for his father's political fervor) helping him run the hostelry. At school the boy took part in *tableaux vivants,* and learned, under the care of a French dancing master, the waltz, polka, mazurka, and quadrille. He had no systematic musical training, and all his life he struggled against his lack of knowledge of musical notation. His high-school teacher was tenor in a local church and fired him with ambition to sing. Amateur performances, where he was required to blacken up as a minstrel, or to dress as a Yankee type, in makeshift halls, constituted his early acting experience. He was definitely inspired to stage work by seeing Junius Brutus Booth in John Howard Payne's *Brutus.* But many years were to pass in mercantile pursuits, in various stores of Boston, before he was to enter the theatre. By 1854, however, while still a clerk, he was recognized as a successful entertainer. His voice was trained by J. Q. Wetherbee, and he sang in various churches, though his livelihood depended on the yardstick. His love for the drama and opera was his dominant taste, and he was an active member of the Boston Handel and Haydn Society. On Dec. 1, 1859, he married Clara George (daughter of Maj. Daniel George, of Warner, N. H.), who was identified with his career as light opera comedian; she died, Dec. 25, 1909.

In 1865, Barnabee left business and entered the lyceum field. On Nov. 9, 1866, he made his professional appearance as Toby Winkle, in *All that Glitters is not Gold,* where he also appeared as Cox opposite the Box of Boston's beloved William Warren. He next organized a touring concert company, and won reputation as a spirited songster, his most famous lyrics being "The Cork Leg" and an encore, "The Patent Arm." The Boston Ideals were founded in 1879, the year that heralded in America the first production of Gilbert and Sullivan's opera, *H. M. S. Pinafore.* Barnabee had seen the London production, first given at the Opéra Comique, May 28, 1878, and he was astute enough to study its stage business at the time. Arrangements were made for the production of *Pinafore* by the Ideals, and it was given a first performance in Boston on Apr. 14, 1879. This proved a substantial start for them, and under Barnabee's guidance they won rapid favor. He was "a born mimic with a mastery of the art of grimacing, and he talked with a decidedly Yankee twang." In 1886, he and his company appeared at Manchester-by-the-Sea, in an outdoor performance of *As You Like It,* one of the earliest open-air theatre attempts in America. After some years of conquest, the Ideals slowly died, with a splendid reputation but a steadily decreasing purse. In order to begin afresh, with a new policy to suit new tastes, Barnabee and W. H. MacDonald organized the Bostonians in 1887. Their most famous production was *Robin Hood* (libretto by Harry B. Smith and music by Reginald De Koven), and in this opera Barnabee found his most famous rôle, the Sheriff of Nottingham, which he claimed to have sung over 1,900 times. "It deserves," wrote H. B. Smith, "a full-length portrait in the theatrical Hall of Fame, beside Jefferson's Rip, Raymond's Colonel Sellers, and Florence's Captain Cuttle" (*Reminiscences,* p. 461).

[The chief source of information about Barnabee is his *Reminiscences* (1913). But other data may be found in *Munsey,* Aug. 1892 and Mar. 1895; the *National Mag.,* Feb. 1918; Mrs. Reginald De Koven, *A Musician and His Wife* (1926).]

M. J. M.

BARNARD, CHARLES (Feb. 13, 1838–Apr. 11, 1920), author, was the son of Rev. Charles F. and Sarah (Holmes) Barnard and the grandson of Charles Barnard, a well-known Boston merchant. He was born in Boston, where he was

trained in public and private schools until he was sixteen. Although he looked forward to the ministry and for a time assisted his father at the Warren Street Chapel, he gave up his studies because of ill health. After a brief experience as a florist, he turned to journalism, winning some notice as "Jane Kingsford" by his articles in the *Boston Post* on the Peace Jubilee Concerts. He became assistant editor of the *Boston Journal of Commerce* and editor of *Vox Humana,* Cambridge, Mass. From 1875 to 1884 he conducted the World's Work Department in *Scribner's Monthly* (now the *Century Magazine*), which resulted in his making important contributions on tools and machinery to the *Century Dictionary.* In 1881 he married Mary E. Knight, daughter of Alexander Knight, a New York merchant. Besides serving as superintendent of instruction in the Chautauqua Town and Country Club, he wrote many stories and plays. For several years he lived in New York City, where he became corresponding secretary of the American Dramatists' Club. In 1907 he removed to Darien, Conn., where on a small patch of ground he conducted a Housekeeping Experimental Station. About 1912 he removed to Pasadena, Cal., and spent his declining years in that city.

Barnard's first books, based on his early experiences in intensive agriculture, were *The Strawberry Garden, My Ten-Rod Farm,* and *Farming by Inches.* These were collected (1869) under the title *Gardening for Money* and reprinted (1902) as *$2,000 a Year on Fruits and Flowers.* His other works in this field were *A Simple Flower Garden* (1870) and *My Handkerchief Garden* (1889). As a result of his interest in music he wrote *The Soprano* (1869), *The Tone Masters* (3 vols., 1870–71), and *Camilla, A Tale of a Violin* (1874). Other efforts in fiction were *Legilda Romanief* (1880), *Knights of Today* (1881), *A Dead Town* (1883), and *The Whistling Buoy* (1888). As further evidence of his versatility he produced a book on *Light* (1877) with Alfred M. Mayer; *Coöperation as a Business* (1881); three books (1885–86) on the weather, the soil, and useful plants; *First Steps in Electricity* (1888); and *Graphic Methods in Teaching* (1889). Later he wrote a Bible story-book called *The Door in the Book* (1903) and a technical work on *Tools and Machines* (1903). Throughout his life he engaged in play-writing, producing numerous plays of varying merit. These include *The Triple Wedding* (1883), *The County Fair* (1889), in collaboration with Neil Burgess, who appeared in it with great success for many seasons, and *The Forest Ring* (1901), a fairy drama written with William C. DeMille.

Barnard

His interest in mechanics led to the invention of various labor-saving devices. The clever stage turntable for racing horses perfected for *The County Fair* was in part responsible for the popularity of that play.

[Information furnished chiefly by friends of Barnard or derived from his published works. See, however, *Who's Who in America,* 1916–17, and Oscar Fay Adams, *Dict. of Am. Authors* (1897), p. 19.]

J.L.H.

BARNARD, CHARLES FRANCIS (Apr. 17, 1808–Nov. 8, 1884), Unitarian clergyman, philanthropist, was born on South St., Boston, the eldest son of Charles and Sarah (Bent) Barnard. The boy's delicate health and fondness for open-air sports foreshadowed his largely outdoor career. After studying at the Boston Latin School and under private tutors, he entered Harvard College as a sophomore, graduating in 1828, and then attended the Harvard Divinity School. In 1834 he was ordained as a Unitarian minister at large; William Ellery Channing, delivering the charge, used these words, "The only power to oppose to evil is love, strong, enduring love, a benevolence which no crime or wretchedness can conquer, and which therefore can conquer all." Barnard lived and worked in this spirit. Already he had enlisted in philanthropic work among the poorer classes under the leadership of Dr. Joseph Tuckerman, the pioneer of such service in Boston. It soon appeared that Barnard's talents best adapted him for work among children. In 1832, in the parlors of Dorothea Dix, he gathered a class of three waifs, which rapidly grew. After temporary connection with Hollis Street Church, and inadequate accommodation elsewhere, Barnard, failing to enlist support from the Benevolent Fraternity of Churches (Unitarian) under which he had been serving, appealed to the public for funds for a suitable building. In January 1836 Warren Street Chapel, "the Children's church," was opened, with 730 children in attendance. Here for thirty years Barnard preached and educated children. He was a pioneer in seeking and winning street boys and girls, surrounding them in the chapel with music, pictures, and flowers; giving them outings, establishing evening classes and a free public library. He originated children's Fourth-of-July floral processions, and personally financed a public greenhouse on the Back Bay marshes, where, largely because of his efforts, Boston's Public Garden now blooms. During the Civil War, Warren Street Chapel became under Barnard's superintendence a recruiting center; to it the Union Army owed 500 soldiers. In 1866 the strain of his work affected his mind; thereafter, except

for a brief period of service for children at the Harvard Church, Charlestown, Mass., he lived in retirement at West Newton. In 1884 he voluntarily entered the McLean Asylum, Somerville, where he died. In 1889 Warren Street Chapel was renamed Barnard Memorial Chapel. Barnard was twice married: in May 1834 to Adeline M. Russell, who died within a month; and in January 1837 to Sarah Holmes, by whom he had six children.

[Francis Tiffany, *Charles Francis Barnard; A Sketch of His Life and Work* (1895) is the chief source. The *Ann. Reports of Warren Street Chapel*, 1837–64, give Barnard's own record of his work and plans. The 49th (1885) and 54th (1890) *Ann. Reports* contain tributes to him. Obituary in *Boston Transcript*, Nov. 10, 1884. *Harv. Class of 1828 Scrap Book* and *Misc. Recs.* also contain material.]

R. S. B.

BARNARD, DANIEL DEWEY (Sept. 11, 1796–Apr. 24, 1861), lawyer, statesman, was born at East Hartford, Conn. In 1809 his parents, Timothy Barnard of Hartford, Conn., and Phebe Dewey of Sheffield, Mass., removed from the latter place in Berkshire County, to a farm in Mendon, a part of Ontario County, N. Y., which later became Monroe County. Through the influence of his father, who was a county judge, he spent two years in the office of the county clerk at Canandaigua, and then was sent to prepare for college at Lenox Academy, Berkshire County, Mass. In 1818 he graduated from Williams College, a tall, slim, delicate young man, and in 1821 commenced to practise law in Rochester, N. Y. Four years later he was elected prosecuting attorney for Monroe County and in 1827 was sent to Congress, where for one term he participated in the discussions of slavery, the tariff, and the Cumberland Road. Never in robust health, during 1830–31 he spent five months recuperating in Europe, where he studied the Revolution of 1830 and wrote letters for a Rochester newspaper. Changing his residence to Albany in 1832 he took a deep interest in state and national politics. Firm in his convictions and an intense partisan, he was yet in no sense a demagogue. Defeated as a Whig for Congress in 1834, he was elected to the state Assembly in 1837, where he was recognized as an authority on finance, education, and internal improvements. Returned to Congress as a Whig in 1839, he served for six years and in 1845 declined reëlection. His interest centered in such problems as internal improvements, finance, the annexation of Texas, and the tariff, and for four years he was chairman of the judiciary committee. In public life he was trusted by his party friends and respected by his opponents. Upon returning to Albany he devoted himself to the legal profession in which he attained eminence, and

to the writing of historical brochures which brought him considerable reputation. From his pen appeared *Lecture on the Character and Services of James Madison* (1837), *Discourse on the Life, Character, and Services of Stephen Van Rensselaer* (1839), *The Colony of Rensselaerwyck* (1839), *The Anti-Rent Movement* (1846), *Treatment of General Scott* (1848), *Discourse on the Life of Ambrose Spencer* (1849), and *Trinity Church* (1857). The crowning honor of his career came in 1850, when President Fillmore sent him as minister to Prussia, a post he filled for three years. While abroad he studied the results of the Revolution of 1848 and wrote a book on the *Political Aspects and Prospects in Europe* (1854). His ablest legal argument was on "The Sovereignty of the States over Their Navigable Waters" in connection with the Albany Bridge Case in 1860. He died at Albany just as the Civil War was breaking out. His acquaintances spoke of him as a man gracious and cultured, attractive in personal intercourse, and of an amiable disposition. He was twice married, first to Sara Livingstone at Rochester in 1825 and secondly to Catherine Walsh at Albany in 1832.

[A brief sketch of Barnard's life, accompanied by a picture in the *Am. Rev.*, VII, 521–32; an appraisal of his life and character in Edward Everett's *Orations and Speeches* (1892), IV, 339–44; letters, letter books, dispatch books, diaries, etc., in the N. Y. State Lib., Albany, N. Y.]

A. C. F.

BARNARD, EDWARD EMERSON (Dec. 16, 1857–Feb. 6, 1923), astronomer, was born in Nashville, Tenn., the posthumous son of Reuben Barnard. His mother, Elizabeth Jane (Haywood) Barnard, was a woman of culture, helpful and inspiring to her sons, whom she was obliged to support. Barnard's early education, with the exception of a few weeks in common school, came from her. At the age of nine he entered the studio of a photographer in Nashville, where he was employed for over sixteen years. This work was undertaken as a mere "job," but the attention to detail, the training in photographic processes and the acquirement of a knowledge of lenses was of great value to him in his pioneer work in astronomical photography. A stray copy of Dr. Thomas Dick's *Practical Astronomer* came into his hands in 1876 and furnished him with his first instruction in astronomy. From this book he learned the names of many of the stars which he already knew by sight. In the same year, a one-inch lens from a broken spy-glass found in the street was fitted in a paper tube to form his first telescope. A little later he and his mother were able to spare enough from

Barnard

his earnings to enable him to buy a real telescope of five-inch aperture. His meeting with Simon Newcomb in 1877 was a turning-point in his career. Newcomb told him that to do real research in astronomy he must be well grounded in mathematics. From then on Barnard devoted what time he could to retrieving the education which he had of necessity missed. In 1881 he married Rhoda Calvert, born in Yorkshire, England, who encouraged and helped him in his education. In May 1881 he discovered his first comet. He observed it again the next night but failed to find it afterward. This discovery was the beginning of his life-long interest in comets. H. H. Warner had offered a prize of two hundred dollars for each unexpected comet discovered by an American observer. The timely winning of five of these prizes made it possible for Barnard to own the little house which he was building. It is still known in Nashville as the "Comet House." Barnard discovered many more comets. His intimate knowledge of the heavens made it easy for him to recognize an intruder.

A serious decision confronted him when he was offered a fellowship in Vanderbilt University, with a stipend of three hundred dollars. He gave up his work in the studio and devoted his whole time to his studies. He received the degree of Bachelor of Science in 1887, at the age of thirty. In the meantime he had become remarkably familiar with the sky, had made a special study of Jupiter and independently discovered the red spot, and had communicated several papers to the astronomical journals. His skill as an observer had become well enough recognized to secure his appointment as an astronomer at the new Lick Observatory with Holden, Burnham, Schaeberle, and Keeler. Here, as junior astronomer, he was assigned to the twelve-inch telescope and the comet-seeker. During this period he made his striking series of observations of the eclipse of the satellite Japetus by the ring-system of Saturn, measuring its changing brightness in the sunlight which filtered through between the separate particles of the crape ring. During the summer of 1889 he began his photography of the Milky Way, securing the first of those beautiful photographs of its intricate structure. After the resignation of Burnham he was allotted one night a week at the thirty-six-inch. It was natural that he should turn to Jupiter, which he had so often observed with lesser instruments. In the search of its neighborhood he saw a tiny point of light which he at once guessed to be a satellite. Subsequent measures verified the discovery of the fifth satellite of Jupiter. This discovery was recognized by the French Academy of Sciences with the award of the Lalande gold medal. It probably also gave added zest to the search for other satellites which resulted in the discoveries of the faint and distant sixth, seventh, eighth, and ninth satellites. At the Lick Observatory, and later at Yerkes, Barnard devoted much time to the measurement of the diameters of planets, and of the larger asteroids, and of both the diameter and positions of satellites. His observations in 1904, 1906, and in 1912–13 of the very faint ninth satellite of Jupiter are apparently the only visual observations ever made of this difficult object.

Barnard never lost an opportunity to photograph comets and during his nights at the big telescopes he measured their positions. It was his delight to study these photographs and trace the history of the changes in the comets' tails. He secured no less than 350 photographs of Comet Morehouse (1908 IV), each one an exciting promise of fresh developments. Forty-two of Barnard's comet plates and ninety-two of his photographs of the Milky Way are beautifully reproduced in Volume XI of the *Publications* of the Lick Observatory. The volume did not appear until nearly twenty years after the photographs were taken, owing to Barnard's dissatisfaction with ordinary means of reproduction—he could not bear to see any of the fine, beautiful details lost. He accepted a position at the Yerkes Observatory in 1895, and in 1897 plunged into observing with the greatest telescope in the world. He began about this time a micrometric triangulation of some of the globular clusters. This work he continued for nearly twenty-five years, hoping to detect motions of the individual stars. His observation of novæ was frequent and minute. He estimated their brightness and examined them carefully. A record of the focus at which the image was sharpest was a record of the change in spectrum. He discovered visually the nebulous ring about Nova Aurigæ in 1892.

The acquisition of the 10-inch Bruce photographic telescope in 1904 was a fresh delight to Barnard in the photography of comets and in the mapping of the Milky Way. His great collection of 1,400 negatives of comets and of nearly 4,000 plates of the Milky Way and other star-fields will be of great value when they can be properly evaluated. Nebulous regions were always of great interest to him, especially the dark markings devoid of stars. Gradually he formed the opinion, now generally held, that these are dark nebulæ, rather than vacancies. No attempt can be made in this article even to mention all the classes of observation to which Barnard's interest led him. His published papers number at least 900. He

had two regular observing nights a week with the forty-inch but sometimes worked with it on three or four nights. Many stories are told of his pacing back and forth and of the acuteness of his nervous cough as his night approached with the prospect of clouds. When he was denied the use of the forty-inch he was to be found making long exposures with the Bruce telescope. Frost writes that it was one of his most serious duties as director to keep Barnard from overworking. One of the greatest trials of the latter's life was the refraining from the use of the forty-inch for an entire year on the orders of his doctor.

Barnard had no children and the loss of his wife in 1921 left a great void in his life. His home was always a center of generous hospitality and friendship. Many honors came to him. He was very modest and was often nervous before giving a lecture, but after he was well started and had forgotten himself he was a delightful lecturer. He would take any amount of trouble to be helpful to other astronomers and to laymen interested in astronomy. He was thoroughly beloved by his many friends.

[Edwin B. Frost, "Edward Emerson Barnard" in the *Astrophysical Jour.*, July 1923, pp. 221–35; Robt. G. Aitken, "Edward Emerson Barnard 1857–1923," in *Pub. Astronomical Soc. of the Pacific*, Apr. 1923, pp. 87–94; Philip Fox, "Edward Emerson Barnard," in *Pop. Astronomy*, Mar. 1923, pp. 195–200; obituaries in *Nashville Banner* and *Nashville Tennessean*, Feb. 7, 1923.]

R. S. D.

BARNARD, FREDERICK AUGUSTUS PORTER (May 5, 1809–Apr. 27, 1889), college president, the son of Robert Foster Barnard and Augusta (Porter) Barnard, was born in Sheffield, Mass. His early education was at the village school, at the Saratoga (New York) Academy, and at the academy in the neighboring Stockbridge, where one of his schoolmates was Mark Hopkins [*q.v.*]. Of his subsequent four years at Yale (1824–28), distinguished by high scholarship, Barnard said: "Although I was apparently surrounded by many educational influences, and enjoying, or supposed to enjoy, the instruction of many eminent educators, it was to me a period of almost literal self-education" (Fulton, *Memoirs of Frederick A. P. Barnard*, p. 33). Immediately after graduation, he became a teacher in the Hartford Grammar School, the first of many educational positions. In the next eight years, he was in succession a teacher in the American Institution for the Deaf and Dumb at Hartford (Barnard had become somewhat deaf, an affliction from which he did not recover), a teacher of mathematics at Yale, and also a member of the faculty of the New York Institution for the Deaf and Dumb. In 1837 he was elected to the professorship of mathematics and natural history in the University of Alabama (1837–48), but was later transferred to the chair of chemistry and of natural history (1848–54). On Dec. 27, 1847, he was married to Margaret McMurray of Mississippi. In 1854, he was chosen to the professorship of mathematics and of natural philosophy in the University of Mississippi (1854–56). He became president of the University of Mississippi in 1856 (1856–58), and chancellor in the latter year (1858–61). He was elected president of Columbia University in 1864, a position which he held until his death. This rich, diverse, and unique record was further made notable by many avocations. Among these were his presidency of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, service as astronomer to the Alabama and Florida Boundary Commission, membership in the United States Coast Survey, editorship of Johnson's *Cyclopædia*, much and diverse writing on science and on the administrative problems of the College, and the taking of orders in the Protestant Episcopal Church.

This diverse yet orderly career was, however, divided by a fundamental and unique experience. In the last months of 1860 and the first months of 1861, the causes and conditions long working to make the Civil War came to their head. Of these conditions, as chief executive of the chief university in one of the chief seceding states, Barnard had been an observer. The students of the University of Mississippi, early in 1861, organized themselves into a military company, the University Greys, and asked the governor to muster them into service. The application was accepted. After their departure, the University was broken up. Barnard's situation became difficult. His work of many years was essentially ruined. He loved the Union, loving it far more than he hated slavery. To the institution of slavery he gave little thought in comparison with his loyalty to the Union. The tendering of his resignation, which he speedily made, was declined by the University trustees, under the belief that the war would be a short one. The resignation was withdrawn for a time, but presently, under the active development of the war, was accepted. The University, in fact, became a military school. Barnard was soon offered, by Jefferson Davis, an office as an investigator of the natural resources of the Confederate States, an invitation which he at once refused. He and his wife presently found their way to Virginia, and lived at Norfolk till May 1862. At that time, Norfolk was captured by the Federal troops. Late in 1863, Barnard published his famous *Letter to*

Barnard

the President of the United States by a Refugee. This letter, declamatory in form, fierce and vehement in content, against the Confederate States, was an argument and plea for the support of Lincoln. It created great public interest, and seems to have called special and immediate attention of the trustees of Columbia to his worth and availability as president.

To these various offices and affairs, technical and executive, academic and semi-academic, Barnard brought knowledge, rich and broad, a real affection for students, and a deep appreciation of their needs. He possessed an acute intellect, an alert sense of the worth of general culture, a deep feeling of personal duty, and a genuine understanding of the conditions necessary for making every college and university an integral part of the whole educational system. He was, by nature and training, both a conservative and a progressive, but rather a progressive than a conservative. Having as his specialty mathematics and the allied sciences, he was yet a scholar in Latin and Greek, and knew, in a general way, several modern languages. Above most college presidents, he appreciated the content and relationships of the instruction given by his professorial associates. His intellectual sympathies were warm. He was avaricious of new ideas, both to create and to acquire, to assimilate and to propagate. His spirit was missionary. Born with an instinct for persistent faithfulness, he persevered in the teeth, at times, of strong opposition against his measures. His current portraits indicate a man of dignity, of reserve, and of force, yet of a temperament kindly and sympathetic. He was a prophet, and a prophet to whom was given the privilege of seeing the fulfilment of many of his early teachings and visions.

The educational philosophy, which lay behind his administration of Columbia, and of his other historic, and formative, offices, was at least twofold. First, he held that mental discipline was the primary purpose of the first half of the four-year college course. He also held that the promotion of scholarship should be the primary and formative purpose of the second half. In the changes of academic opinion of his long term, the ideal of mental discipline became less conspicuous, and the idea of culture became more prevailing. This change was also connected with his constantly and urgently held plan for the development of the University in and through Columbia College. In his *Annual Report* of June 1866, he said: "She is the nucleus of what will one day be the great university of the city—possibly of the continent; and it should be an encouragement to all who have any ambition to see our city as preëminent in its literary and scientific character as it is in its population, its commerce, and its wealth, that she is a nucleus so substantial already—so sound and solid at the core, that all future accretions will adhere to her firmly, and constitute the elements of a healthy growth" (*President's Annual Report* for 1866, p. 29. See also, President Butler's *Annual Report,* 1925, p. 11).

Till his death in 1889, Barnard, in report and letter and speech, by arguments formal and informal, urged the development of the university spirit and organization in Columbia. It was an opportune time. Harvard, under Eliot, was promoting a similar growth, and Johns Hopkins, opened in 1876, was developing the first of the great graduate schools. Barnard sought for liberty in the choice of studies, a method which Eliot was introducing and emphasizing. He worked for an inclusive curriculum. He felt that the enlargement of the general field of knowledge, especially of science, should result in an enlargement of the number and subject of collegiate studies. He also did not depreciate the value of the highly specialized courses. He recognized, furthermore, that the change which comes over many students, in the midway period of their course, a change from intellectual boyishness to the beginning of intellectual maturity, should be recognized in the subjects pursued. He also believed in the adjustment of a proper curriculum to public opinion and interpretation, and to the needs of the people.

In his *Annual Report* for 1879, Barnard said: "The principle of elective study is the key which solves the whole difficulty. By limiting the student to a certain number of subjects, sufficient time may be allowed him to perfect himself in each, and sufficient time may be allowed the teacher to do his subject justice. The college may at the same time enlarge the scope of its teaching, and embrace in its general scheme of instruction every subject of literary and scientific interest, without in any degree diminishing the thoroughness with which each branch is taught. And it is only in this way that, in the present age, any college can hope to secure and maintain a really high character as an institution of learning" (Fulton, p. 393).

Barnard's early opinion, however, of the value of the free elective system was in the later years somewhat modified, becoming sympathetic with the judgments of other college presidents. The modification applied to two points: first, he emphasized more fully the duty and the right of the student to seek the counsel of his teachers in making his choice of studies, and secondly, he

came to appreciate the value of a certain grouping of studies, or of so-called paralleling or coordinating courses. Through this second method, especially, the peril of intellectual dissipation, he felt, might be largely avoided.

In Barnard's work for the enlargement of Columbia, his two most important services were first, the establishment of the School of Mines, already projected at the time of his election, and at the beginning of his term formally installed, and second, the foundation of collegiate instruction for women which finally resulted in Barnard College. As early as the year 1879, the subject of the education of women by Columbia was first formally brought to the attention of the board of trustees. In the succeeding years, the subject was constantly and urgently discussed. Diverse methods were proposed. In 1882, Barnard almost abandoned hope for the admission of women on an equality with men. But on June 8, 1883, under his constant argument and vigilant appeal, and under a certain degree of public pressure, the trustees voted that a course of collegiate study, equivalent to the course given to young men in Columbia College, should be offered to such women as might desire to avail themselves of it. This course was to be pursued outside the College, but under the direction of the Faculty. Though women were not to be admitted to any of the College classes, they were to be allowed to take the regular examinations, and when they should have successfully passed all examinations during a period of four years, they were to receive the bachelor's degree. During the next five years twenty-eight women were enrolled under these conditions; but the system, if it could be called a system, was a signal failure (*Ibid.*, p. 420).

After five years of this persistent and unavailing effort, in March 1888, "a memorial was presented to the Trustees, proposing the establishment of an institution in connection with the College and on the same general plan as the 'Annex' at Harvard University. The memorial was carefully and favorably considered, and the request of the memorialists was granted, substantially on the following conditions: The students of the Annex were to pursue their collegiate studies in a building, near the College, to be provided by the friends of the movement at their own expense and to be used exclusively for purposes of instruction, not for the boarding or lodging of students" (*Ibid.*, p. 421).

The method thus outlined did not, by any manner of means, meet the full wish of Barnard. Yet an act of incorporation was presently secured. Six months after his death, a college for women, fittingly and gratefully made to bear his name, was opened. Its prosperity for almost forty years is proof and justification of the wisdom of his long-continued and earnest endeavors for the education of women through Columbia University. It is probable that Barnard College constitutes his most significant and distinctive memorial.

Barnard's published writings cover some sixty titles. They are largely pamphlets. The complete collection is found in the Library of Congress and in the Library of Columbia University, each collection supplementing the other. These writings are easily classified in five divisions: educational, economic, scientific, political, sermonic. Of these five the educational is by far the most important. Among its chief titles are: *Improvements Practicable in American Colleges* (1855); *Should Study in College be Confined to a Uniform Curriculum, or Should it be Made to Any Extent Elective?* (1872); *Outline of a Plan for the Instruction of Graduate Classes* (1880); *Should American Colleges be Open to Women as well as to Men?* (1882). Among the economic titles are: *Report on the Principles which should Govern the Tolerance of Deviations from Standard Weight of Coins Weighed in Parcels* (1872); *The Silver Question, & the International Monetary Conference of 1881; The World's Stock of the Precious Metals* (1882). The scientific titles (fewer than one would expect) contain: *On the Pendulum, with a Description of an Electric Block* (1863); *Balance for Determining Specific Gravities by Inspection* (1888). The political writings are represented by one important item: *No Just Cause for a Dissolution of the Union* (Tuscaloosa, Ala., 1851). The sermonic titles include *Gratitude for National Blessings,* delivered at Oxford, Miss., Thanksgiving Day, Nov. 20, 1856 (Memphis, (1857); and *Brevity of Life* (Memphis, 1859).

[*Memoirs of Frederick A. P. Barnard,* by John Fulton (1896); *Hist. of Columbia Univ., 1754–1904; Ann. Report of the President of Columbia Univ.* for 1925; personal letters in the Lib. of Columbia Univ.]

C.F.T.

BARNARD, HENRY (Jan. 24, 1811–July 5, 1900), educationist, shares with Horace Mann [*q.v.*] the distinction of stimulating and directing the revival of popular education which began in this country in the first half of the nineteenth century. Born in Hartford, Conn., the fourth child of Chauncey and Elizabeth (Andrus) Barnard, he embodied the traits of character, regard for learning, and sense of civic responsibility, which characterized the best New England stock. In his boyhood days Hartford was hardly more

than a country village, but it was one of the capitals of the state, and its very smallness made it impossible for the townspeople to be unaware of the coming and going of prominent persons and the machinery of legislation operating in their midst, so that young Barnard grew up in the atmosphere of politics and public service. His mother died when he was four years old, but he was fortunate in his father, who had followed the sea, become a farmer, and was a man of some means. Because of this latter fact the son had ample opportunity for schooling and travel, and was able in after years to carry out educational projects which otherwise would have been impossible. More important still, Chauncey Barnard was a man of good sense and tact. One night he heard Henry, then thirteen years old and "the victim of a miserable district school," plotting, with a fellow sufferer, to escape from its tyranny by running away and going to sea. The next morning, without disclosing his knowledge of the plot, he informed the boy that it was time for him to leave the district school, and that he might go to a boarding-school or to sea. Henry chose the former alternative and entered Monson Academy, Monson, Mass. Here he received good instruction, became interested in books and debating, and acquired a love for nature which Wordsworth, whom he visited later, urged him never to lose. Returning to Hartford, he prepared for college at the Hopkins Grammar School, first having been tutored by Rev. Abel Flint, and in 1826 he entered Yale.

Here he attained creditable rank in the required courses, but probably got far more out of his general reading, which was extensive, especially in English literature, and from the literary society, Linonia, to which he belonged, than from the prescribed courses. To the free commingling of the members of the different classes in such societies and to the incentive of their weekly debates, more than to any other source, he once said, he owed his usefulness in public life (*American Journal of Education,* I, 664). Certain it is that while in college he became an excellent writer and a vigorous, resourceful speaker. In his junior and senior years he was librarian of Linonia, and displaying the spirit which characterized his whole life, he used his salary in the purchase of books for the library. Awakened perhaps by his own experience, a lively interest in popular education had already taken possession of him. He had known both the poor teaching and inadequate facilities of the common school, and the excellent training of the select academy. The former institution, he recognized, had one supreme advantage—it was "a school of equal rights, where merit, and not social position, was the acknowledged basis of distinction." It was the school, therefore, in which American boys should be trained, and it should be brought, he felt, to the highest possible degree of excellence. While he was on an enforced visit home due to his participation in the "Bread and Butter Rebellion," a student agitation for better food in the commons, Dr. Eli Todd [*q.v.*], the family physician, awakened in him an interest in Pestalozzi's work. During vacation trips he visited schools in various places, and in 1828 and 1829 published descriptive sketches in the *New England Review.*

He graduated from college in 1830, resolved to give his life to public service, not with any thought of personal aggrandizement, for he seems always to have been extraordinarily indifferent to his own interests, but from an almost apostolic devotion to his country and human welfare. Although he taught for a year in an academy at Wellsboro, Pa., and later made the statement, "So far back as I have any recollection, the cause of true education, of the complete education of every human being without regard to the accidents of birth or fortune, seemed most worthy of the concentration of all my powers, and, if need be, of any sacrifice of time, money, and labor, which I may be called upon to make in its behalf," he appears at first to have had no idea of devoting himself exclusively to the field of education. On the contrary, he turned to the legal profession as likely to afford opportunity for public service, read law with Willis Hall of New York and with William H. Hungerford of Hartford, and in 1833–34 studied in the Yale Law School. In the winter of 1834–35 he was admitted to the bar. He also became active in politics. A strong anti-Jackson man, he was a delegate to the National Whig Convention in 1831, and the following year addressed the state convention and took a prominent part in the presidential campaign. Throughout this period he found time for much general reading and extensive travel. In 1833 he spent two months in Washington, where he met many prominent people, and watched with critical interest the doings of Congress. Later in the year he journeyed through the South, and, the year following, through the West. In 1835–36 he spent nearly a year traveling about Europe. Here he discussed education with Lord Brougham, visited Carlyle, De Quincey, Wordsworth, and Lockhart, conferred with Fellenberg and other Swiss educators, and lived for a time in Paris with Forrest the actor.

The year after his return, the voters of Hartford sent him to the General Assembly as one of

their two representatives, and reëlected him in 1838 and 1839. Here he was active in promoting humanitarian legislation. In 1838 he introduced a bill "to provide for the better supervision of the common schools," and supported it in a notable speech. It provided for a state board of commissioners and a secretary chosen by them. Due to his carefully prepared campaign, it was unanimously passed. Naturally, he was one of the commissioners appointed, and when the board organized he secured the election of Dr. T. H. Gallaudet as secretary. The latter declined the position, and Barnard himself was urged to take it. He hesitated, partly because the office had been created through his efforts, and partly because he was not sure he ought to turn from the profession for which he had fitted himself. As a matter of fact, however, he had no great taste for law or politics and in the end he accepted. The work of carrying out the intent of the law and improving the state system of education fell, therefore, largely upon him.

The conditions which he faced would have discouraged a less optimistic and energetic person. There was no centralization or uniformity in the management of the schools. Each was controlled, not by the town, but by an independent school society, which as a rule endeavored to make its allotment from the state school fund suffice to meet its educational needs, and thus avoid taxation. Only the poorer classes availed themselves of free instruction, people of means sending their children to academies. It was estimated that at least 5,000 children did not attend any school. The condition of the schoolhouses was deplorable; there was practically no equipment; the teachers, untrained and inefficient, changed with the seasons. The evils of the situation were not unrecognized, but a general apathy prevailed. It fell to Barnard's lot to wake up the state and start movements which later bore much fruit. In his official capacity he addressed a letter to the people, outlining the plans of the new board; he sent out questionnaires and personally visited schools in all the counties; he presented the facts ascertained in reports to the legislature and addressed public meetings; he started and edited the *Connecticut Common School Journal;* he secured some changes in the school laws; he emphasized the need of trained teachers and started teachers' institutes, which were among the first, if not the first, in the country. After four years of almost incredible activity, he was legislated out of office. Such a campaign as he had waged was bound to awaken some opposition and disturb local politicians. Furthermore, he had formerly been an outspoken Whig. In 1842 the Democrats came into power in the state, and on the alleged ground that the results attained did not warrant further expenditure of funds, direct supervision of schools by the State was abolished.

Barnard's next field of labor was Rhode Island. Here an act had been passed requiring the governor to appoint an "agent" who should collect and disseminate information regarding defects and possible improvements in the school system and elevate the sentiment with respect to public education. Prejudice against it due to the feeling that education like religion did not properly belong to the "civil things" to which government activity should be confined, and that to compel a citizen to support schools was a violation of his freedom, still persisted, and the condition of the schools was even worse than in Connecticut. Appointed agent in 1843, Barnard pursued methods similar to those he had employed in his own state. In a comparatively short time he had revolutionized public sentiment. At his suggestion, early in 1845, the Rhode Island Institute of Instruction was established. The same year he secured the passage of a school act, which, prior to its enactment, Horace Mann declared would give to Rhode Island "one of the best systems of public instruction in the world." When he resigned in 1849 because of ill health, he had put it into successful operation.

By this time he had become widely known, his reports having created a literature of education read abroad as well as in America. He was in demand as a speaker, and had addressed gatherings in all the states then in the Union with the exception of Texas. On a trip West in 1846 he met Josephine Desnoyers of Detroit, whom he married Sept. 6, 1847, and by whom he had five children.

Calls now came to him from different directions. Professorships in at least two colleges were offered him, and he declined school superintendencies in Boston, New York, Cincinnati, and New Orleans, and the presidencies of the Universities of Indiana and of Michigan. Connecticut again sought his leadership. The sentiment in favor of better public schools which he had created there had not died, and with the return of the Whigs to power, legislation was finally effected establishing a normal school at New Britain and stipulating that its principal should also be superintendent of the common schools of the state. Elected Aug. 7, 1849, Barnard undertook the work of this dual position. He planned the work of the normal school, but did no teaching, its immediate management being in the hands of an assistant, leaving him free to give much of his time to the interests of the

public schools. During his term of service he drew up a revised code of school legislation which was enacted in 1849, prepared a *History of the Legislation of Connecticut Respecting Common Schools Down to 1838,* which served as his report for 1853, and the next year published in final form his *School Architecture, or Contributions to the Improvement of Schoolhouses in the United States.* In 1852 he took a trip abroad, primarily for his health, though he also gathered much valuable information, and in 1854, the governor commissioned him delegate to the International Exposition of Educational Methods, London, where much respect was shown him. In 1855 he resigned because of ill health, and that he might devote himself to "certain educational undertakings of a national character," the publication of the *American Journal of Education.*

Although this work was to be his major interest for the rest of his life, for brief periods he held three more official positions. From 1858 to 1860 he was Chancellor of the University of Wisconsin and agent of the board of regents of the normal-school fund. Because of poor health and frequent absences his connection with the university was hardly more than a nominal one, and though he did some hard work in the interest of teacher training, he was unable to do for the school system what it had been hoped he might accomplish. For a short time in 1866–67 he was president of St. John's College, Annapolis, Md., resigning to become the first United States Commissioner of Education. Whatever taste for politics he may have had in his youth, he had now lost. His interest, furthermore, had come to be centered in educational literature rather than in administrative work. As a result his experience in Washington was not an altogether happy one. At its close he complained that his office had been changed from place to place without his being consulted; that he had not been able to get authority to print, and that his work had not had adequate support from Congress. In 1868 a bill was passed abolishing the *Department* of Education and creating in its place an *Office* (later changed to *Bureau*) of Education, attached to the Department of the Interior, and reducing the Commissioner's salary from $4,000 to $3,000. Before he relinquished the work of his office, Mar. 15, 1870, he prepared at the call of Congress two reports of especial value, one on the condition and improvement of the public schools in the District of Columbia, a book of 912 pages, printed by the government in 1871; and the other a report on technical education, which was not printed, but appears in a revised form in the *American Journal of Education,* volume XXI.

Barnard

Barnard's contribution to the furtherance of education in the United States was manifold. Whatever conditions seemed to demand he advocated and worked for with indefatigable energy. His achievements in Connecticut and Rhode Island were of lasting consequence there, and in some degree served as models elsewhere. His counsel and help were given in all parts of the country. He was an effective speaker and his faith and enthusiasm awakened the same wherever he went. His chief service, however, was rendered through the information which he disseminated. From his early years he recognized the great need of enlightening the public and especially those in charge of the schools, and the main purpose of his life was to do this by giving them a complete history of education in all ages and countries. This he did in a remarkable degree in his *American Journal of Education,* a monumental work of thirty-two large octavo volumes of over 800 pages each. It appeared at irregular intervals, the first number in August 1855, the last in 1882. Into its publication he put his whole fortune, thereby impoverishing his later years. It is not a journal of review, as the name might suggest, but a great encyclopedia of educational literature, dealing with every possible phase of its subject. He also published a *Library of Education* in fifty-two volumes, consisting of special treatises taken from the *Journal.*

After leaving Washington in 1870, he made his home in Hartford, living and dying in the house in which he had been born. With his white hair, long, flowing white beard, and benign countenance, he presented in his latter years a patriarchal appearance. He was a man of unostentatious goodness, kindly and generous, unsparing of himself, and willing to give all he had to the cause to which he was devoted. When in 1835 he started out on his western trip, Dr. T. H. Gallaudet urged him to make a public profession of religion. It is not recorded that he did or that he was ever a churchman, but those who knew him intimately gave testimony to his deep religious faith. His wife was a devout French Catholic, but difference in race and belief never disturbed the peace and happiness of their union. Literature and nature were his chief sources of recreation. He was noticeably fond of animals, and in later days it was his habit to spend a part of each morning working in his garden, and the remainder in his study, frequently with two or three kittens playing round him. He was a professional reformer of the better variety with none of the narrowness or intolerance so common to the class. He may have been visionary at times, and some of the projects he recommended were impractical, but the principal things which he ad-

vocated have now been incorporated into educational systems. His method was scientific. He first investigated, giving the greatest possible publicity to the facts discovered, and then endeavored, not to revolutionize, but to make such changes and improvements as at the moment seemed expedient. He had a sincere love for humanity and a Jeffersonian faith in the people. He believed that if they were properly informed they could be trusted in the long run to do the right thing, and that in an educated democracy lay the sole hope of a righteous, peaceful, and prosperous world.

[Will S. Monroe has published a *Bibliography of Henry Barnard* (1897); the footnotes in B. C. Steiner's "Life of Henry Barnard" in the U. S. Bur. of Ed. *Bull., 1919, No. 8*, contain many references. For ancestry, see R. R. Hinman, *A Cat. of the Names of the Early Puritan Settlers of the Colony of Conn.* (1852); his educ. work is presented in Noah Porter's "Henry Barnard, His Labors in Conn. and R. I.," reprinted from *Conn. Common School Jour.*, Jan. 1855, in *Amer. Jour. of Ed.*, I (1855–6); A. D. Mayo, "Henry Barnard," *Report of the Commissioner of Ed.*, I, 1896–7; W. S. Monroe, *Educ. Labors of Henry Barnard* (1893); and in memorial addresses in *Addresses and Proc. of the Nat. Ed. Ass.* (1901).]

H. E. S.

BARNARD, JOHN (Nov. 6, 1681–Jan. 24, 1770), Congregational clergyman, was born in Boston, the son of John and Esther Barnard. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1700, resolved to enter the ministry. After six years of study and occasional preaching, in 1707 he was appointed by Gov. Dudley one of the chaplains to the army which was fitted out in Massachusetts to reduce Port Royal and Acadia. This expedition returned within three months without having accomplished anything but the lessening of the reputation of its leaders. Barnard returned to his itinerant preaching, but in 1709 enlisted as chaplain on a large ship sailing for Barbadoes and London. He remained in England for nearly a year, frequently preaching, making many friends, and incidentally taking an active part in the appointment of Jeremiah Dummer as agent for New England. He also interested himself in worldly affairs, recording in his autobiography that he drank a glass of sack with an aged gentlewoman who was surprised that he had learned to speak English in so short a stay; obtained the receipt of some excellent currant wine from the housekeeper of one of his patrons; shared burnt claret with his traveling companions on the way to Litchfield; drank wine with many clergymen, several of whom tried to induce him to find posts for them in New England, and visited Burton, where he found the "best, stoutest and finest ale in England."

Returning to New England in November 1710, he resumed preaching, but because of internal jealousies among the ruling Congregational clergy and his friendship with the unpopular Gov. Dudley, he did not succeed in securing a permanent church. Finally in 1714 he was nominated, with Edward Holyoke [*q.v.*] as candidate for the church at Marblehead, to follow the aged Samuel Cheever as pastor. Since the congregation could not agree upon either candidate, the church finally split, a new meeting-house was erected, and both ministers came to Marblehead. Barnard was ordained in the old church July 18, 1716, having officiated as assistant to Cheever for eight months previous. Here he labored for the remainder of his long life, taking charge of a large and growing congregation and building up a reputation as a fearless and forceful preacher. In 1718 he married Anna Woodbridge of Ipswich. In 1737 he was instrumental in having Edward Holyoke selected as president of Harvard College. For himself, however, he declined all outside honors. In the affairs of the town he took an active interest. From a poor community with no trade and with the people largely dependent upon Boston for their needs and supplies, Marblehead grew to a thriving and prosperous town. Largely through his zeal and suggestion, it improved its natural advantages as a place of commerce, especially in marketing its fish, until by 1766 it had nearly forty vessels engaged in foreign trade, with a resultant increase in wealth and importance.

Barnard died on Jan. 24, 1770. William Whitwell (in his *Funeral Discourse,* Salem, 1770) said: "As a scholar, he was acquainted with the Hebrew, Greek and Latin languages; besides which, in his leisure hours, for mere amusement, he had made great proficiency in the mathematicks. He thoroughly studied the nature of architecture and ship-building and . . . was a master of music in all its parts. . . . As to his person, he was somewhat taller than the common size, and well proportioned. His stature was remarkably erect, and never bent under the infirmities of eighty-eight. His countenance was grand, and his mien majestick, and there was a dignity in his whole deportment." Rev. Charles Chauncy, in a letter written May 6, 1768 (*Massachusetts Historical Society Collections,* ser. I, vol. X, p. 157) said of him: "I esteem him to have been one of our greatest men. Had he turned his studies that way, he would perhaps have been as great a mathematician as any in this country, I had almost said in England itself. He is equalled by few in regard either of readiness of invention, liveliness of imagination, or strength and clearness in reasoning." He printed more than twenty sermons; three volumes of

religious doctrine; *Ashton's Memorial, an History of the Strange Adventures and Signal Deliverances of Mr. Philip Ashton* (1725), and *A New Version of the Psalms of David* (1752).

[The chief source of information regarding Barnard's life is the long autobiography written in 1766 and printed in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, ser. III, vol. V, pp. 177–245; other references of value are Samuel Dana, *Discourse on the Hist. of the First Christian Church and Society in Marblehead* (1816); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, I, 252; and Joseph Sabin, *Dict. of Books Relating to America* (1868–92), I, 460.] C. S. B.

BARNARD, JOHN GROSS (May 19, 1815–May 14, 1882), Union soldier, son of Robert Foster Barnard and Augusta (Porter) Barnard, and younger brother of Frederick Augustus Porter Barnard [*q.v.*], was born at Sheffield, Mass., in the Berkshire Hills. From one of his relatives, Peter Buel Porter, secretary of war under President John Quincy Adams, he received an appointment to the United States Military Academy at West Point, and entered that institution on July 1, 1829; four years later he graduated second in a class of forty-three. He was assigned as second-lieutenant to the corps of engineers of the army, which was charged with the construction of coast defenses, the improvement of rivers and harbors, and the supervision of the Military Academy. In this corps he served through the various grades to that of colonel, and on his retirement for age in 1881 was president of the Permanent Board of Engineers for Fortifications and River and Harbor Improvements. He was nominated by President Lincoln as chief of his corps in 1864 but at his own request his name was withdrawn, probably to allow an officer of longer service to enjoy that honor. He also served as superintendent of the Military Academy 1855–56.

When he joined the corps of engineers its officers were engaged in the construction of a system of defenses on the Atlantic and Gulf coasts to supplement the few old works constructed immediately after the Revolutionary War. In this work he served as superintending engineer of the fortifications of some of our important ports—Portland and New York on the Atlantic coast, Mobile and the mouth of the Mississippi River on the Gulf coast, and San Francisco on the Pacific coast. All of these works were designed to meet the attacks of wooden vessels armed with muzzle-loading cannon. With the introduction of rifled guns and armored vessels, about the time of the Civil War, the coast defenses had to be modified, and after that war Barnard was charged with the study of this problem. On this work he was sent abroad in 1870 to ascertain the progress made in Europe in the development of iron for defensive purposes. In connection with his work on seacoast defenses he wrote the following: *Dangers and Defences of New York* (1859); "Memoir on National Defences" (in *Proceedings of the Military Association of the State of New York*, 1860, pp. 55–71); *Notes on Seacoast Defence* (1861); *Report on the Fabrication of Iron for Defensive Purposes and its Uses in Modern Fortification especially in Coast Defence*, in collaboration with Lieutenant-Colonel Wright and Capt. Michie of the Corps of Engineers (1871–72).

In the field of river and harbor improvement, Barnard served as superintending engineer on the construction of the Delaware breakwater, the improvement of the Hudson River and New Jersey harbors, and as chairman of boards considering numerous projects. An important service was that in connection with the improvement of the mouth of the Mississippi River. In 1852 Congress appropriated $75,000 for this improvement and a board, of which Barnard was a member, was appointed to recommend the best method of utilizing this sum. In 1871 Congress directed that plans and estimates for further improvement should be prepared by an engineer officer. These plans were completed early in 1873 and a board was convened to report on them. After prolonged controversy, Congress finally accepted Barnard's recommendation that the South Pass be improved by the construction of parallel jetties, and directed that a contract be made with James B. Eads and his associates to carry out this improvement, payment to be conditional on success. Mr. Eads, who had said of Barnard, "His reputation among both civil and military engineers is acknowledged in Europe and America to be equal to that of any other living," appointed him chairman of his board of advisory engineers. Time has confirmed Barnard's views in the matter of improving the mouth of the Mississippi River and the jetty method has since been applied to the wider Southwest Pass. His published works on waterways were: *Outlets and Levees of the Mississippi River* (1859); *Report on the North Sea Canal of Holland* (1872).

In the Mexican War he was assigned the construction of the defenses of the base at Tampico, and later to the survey of the battlefields about the City of Mexico. This last duty probably led to his selection by the Tehuantepec Railroad Company of New Orleans in 1850 as chief engineer to make a preliminary survey for a railway across that isthmus. Such was Barnard's reputation as a military engineer that at the out-

break of the Civil War he was charged with the construction of the defenses of the National Capital. He served as chief engineer of McDowell's army in 1861 and on his reconnaissance the first battle of Bull Run was planned. Of this battle Sherman, who took part in it, says, "It is now generally admitted that it was one of the best planned battles of the war but one of the worst fought." Barnard was chief engineer of the Army of the Potomac in McClellan's Peninsular campaign in which he conducted the siege of Yorktown and directed the engineering operations on the front of Richmond. From the Peninsular campaign until Grant took command of the armies in Virginia he remained in charge of the defenses of Washington and was a member of various defense boards. In June 1864 he was made chief engineer of the armies in the field on the staff of Gen. Grant. Wishing to withdraw one of the corps serving under Gen. Butler south of the James River to reinforce his troops north of the James, Grant sent Barnard to examine Butler's position to see if this could be safely done and on his report the corps was brought across the river. When Sherman's army reached Savannah, Grant sent Barnard there to explain the situation in Virginia and North Carolina so that Sherman could decide on a plan for coöperation. For his military services in time of war Barnard received the brevets of major in the regular army in the Mexican War and of colonel, brigadier-general, and major-general in the Civil War. He was commissioned brigadier-general of volunteers in the Civil War and received the brevet of major-general of volunteers. His contributions to the history of the Civil War were: *The Confederate States of America and the Battle of Bull Run* (1862); *The Peninsular Campaign and its Antecedents . . . as Developed by the Report of Maj. Gen. George B. McClellan and other Published Documents* (1864); *Report of the Engineer and Artillery Operations of the Army of the Potomac from its Organization to the Close of the Peninsular Campaign,* in collaboration with Gen. William F. Barry (1863); *A Report on the Defenses of Washington* (1871).

Notwithstanding his professional occupations Barnard still found time to indulge his love for mathematical and scientific investigation. He was one of the fifty incorporators of the National Academy of Sciences and his published scientific writings indicate a wide field of research: *The Phenomena of the Gyroscope Analytically Examined* (1858); *Problems of Rotary Motion Presented by the Gyroscope, the Precession of the Equinoxes and the Pendulum* (1873); *On the Internal Structure of the Earth Considered as Affecting the Phenomena of Precession and Nutation* (1877); *An Alleged Error in Laplace's Theory of the Tides* (1877); *Some Remarks on the Use and Interpretation of Particular Integrals which "Satisfy" General Differential Equations Expressive of Dynamic Problems in Cases where General Integration is Impossible* (1877). He also wrote for Johnson's *Universal Cyclopedia* (1874–77) some seventy articles on engineering, mathematical, and scientific subjects.

For his personality we have the following from the pen of Gen. Henry L. Abbot of the corps of engineers: "In his personal characteristics Gen. Barnard was a thoughtful, self-contained, and earnest soldier. Under fire he seemed to have no sense of exposure, and in his frequent reconnaissances he was wont to push aside advanced pickets attempting to advise him as to the position of the enemy's sharpshooters, apparently trusting more to his own intuitions than to their local knowledge. His inherited deafness rendered social intercourse somewhat difficult, and to those who did not know him intimately this circumstance perhaps conveyed the idea of coldness and formality; but such was far from his nature. As an aide-de-camp during the Peninsular campaign, I often saw evidences of the warm interest he took in the success of many young officers serving under his orders, and of cordial appreciation of good work done by them. . . . He had a keen sense of humor and a passionate love of music. Indeed he composed many pieces—among others a *Te Deum* that still survives" (*Professional Memoirs, Corps of Engineers,* V, 89).

While stationed in New Orleans, Barnard married Jane Elizabeth Brand, daughter of William Brand and sister of Rev. William F. Brand of Maryland, one of the noted clergymen of that state. She died in 1853, and in 1860 he married Mrs. Anna E. (Hall) Boyd, daughter of Maj. Henry Hall of Harford County, Md.

[H. P. Andrews, *Descendants of John Porter of Windsor, Conn.* (1882); James B. Eads, *Mouth of the Mississippi* (1874); J. J. Williams, *Isthmus of Tehuantepec* (1852); *Report of the Chief of Engineers for 1874,* App. R. 15.]

G. J. F.

BARNES, ALBERT (Dec. 1, 1798–Dec. 24, 1870), Presbyterian clergyman and author, was a prominent figure in the contentions immediately preceding the division between the Old and New Schools of American Presbyterianism in 1837. He was born in Rome, N. Y. His parents, Rufus and Anna Barnes, were connected with the Methodist denomination. Albert was early

persuaded by a country schoolmaster, with the reluctant consent of his parents, to leave home for a course of study looking toward the legal profession. After preparatory work at an academy in Fairfield, Conn., he entered Hamilton College. Here his youthful tendency to religious skepticism yielded intellectually to the arguments of Dr. Chalmers in the *Edinburgh Encyclopedia,* and emotionally to the influence of a college friend during a time of special religious interest. He joined the Presbyterian denomination, and decided to make his life-work the ministry instead of the law. After graduating from Hamilton in 1820, he spent the next four years at Princeton Theological Seminary, and then became pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Morristown, N. J.

At this time there was still in operation the so-called "Plan of Union" of 1801 which permitted mixed congregations of Presbyterians and Congregationalists under ministers of either sect. This arrangement had worked to the advantage of the Presbyterians numerically, but at the same time had tended toward decentralization with an accompanying relaxation of dogma, tendencies fiercely resisted by the Old School party in the Presbyterian Church. Barnes, by nature one of the most peaceable of men, now unintentionally became for a time the storm center of this controversy. In a sermon called "The Way of Salvation," delivered Feb. 8, 1839, he denied that the sin of Adam is imputed to his posterity, thus opposing the position of Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*] and coming into at least verbal disagreement with the Westminster Confession. When he was called soon after, in 1830, to the important First Church in Philadelphia, a minority of the Presbytery, led by Dr. Ashbel Green [*q.v.*], opposed his installation, because of this sermon, and appealed to the Synod, which ordered the Presbytery to make an examination of the offending document. The examiners in due course condemned it as "manifestly, in some of its leading points, opposed to the doctrines of the Confession of Faith" (R. E. Thompson, *History of the Presbyterian Churches in the United States,* 1895, being vol. VI of the American Church History series, p. 106). Summoned to retract, Barnes refused, and laid his case before the Assembly of 1831, which while mildly disapproving of the sermon, upheld Barnes's right to his pastorate.

But Barnes's orthodoxy was now definitely suspect, and on the appearance of his *Notes, Explanatory and Practical on the Epistle to the Romans,* in 1835, Dr. George Junkin [*q.v.*], an Old School leader, at once preferred charges against him. Barnes denied that he held any of the erroneous doctrines of which he was accused, and the Presbytery upheld him, but Junkin appealed to the Synod, which forthwith suspended him from the ministry until he should retract these errors. As Barnes could not well retract views which he had never expressed, he sat quietly for a year, a hearer in his own church, until the Assembly of 1836, in which the New School was predominant, vindicated him and restored him to his position.

In 1837 occurred the formal separation between the Old and New Schools, which divided the Presbyterian Church into two almost equal bodies for thirty-three years. Brethren more pugnacious than Barnes now came into the foreground of controversy while he went a more peaceful way with his work as pastor and writer. He usually rose at four in the morning and devoted the hours until nine to writing. Of this habit he said in later years, "In the recollection now of the past portions of my life, I refer to these morning hours,—to the stillness and quiet of my room in this house of God when I have been permitted to 'prevent the dawning of the morning' in the study of the Bible—I refer, I say, to these scenes as among the happiest portions of my life" (*Life at Three-Score,* 1859, pp. 54–55). Of his eleven volumes of commentaries on the New Testament, Isaiah, and the Psalms, issued as *Notes: Explanatory and Practical* (1832–53), it is said that more than 1,000,000 copies were sold. In them, as well as in his *Scriptural Views of Slavery* (1846) and *The Church and Slavery* (1857), he especially endeavored to prove that the Bible condemned slavery. This was accomplished by a rather free interpretation of scriptural texts. He also wrote numerous other works, mainly on Christian theology and ethics. The *Schaff-Herzog Religious Encyclopedia* (vol. I, 1882, p. 215) credits him with a "directing influence" on four movements: abolition; prohibition; the Sunday-school; New School Presbyterian doctrine. He served as a director of the Union Theological Seminary almost from its beginnings and in 1867 delivered the first course of lectures on the Ely Foundation, afterward published as *Lectures on the Evidences of Christianity* (1868). When the union of the Old and New Schools was broached in 1869, there was a faint revival of old animosities, and Barnes was regarded by some as "an unvenerable relic of an abandoned past" (Thompson, p. 179). To facilitate union, he now withdrew all his publications from the Presbyterian publication committee and transferred them to private publishers. In the year of his death he had

the satisfaction to see the first united Assembly of both factions held in his own church, the scene of so many past dissensions. He died suddenly of heart failure, while visiting a bereaved family in his congregation, Dec. 24, 1870. He was survived by his wife, Abby (Smith) Barnes. G. L. Prentiss said of him, "He had a countenance marked in an unusual degree by moral thoughtfulness, benignity, sweetness, refinement, and manly dignity. I never heard him speak in loud or excited tones" (*Fifty Years of Union Theological Seminary,* 1889, p. 169). Shortly before his death Barnes himself wrote, with serene faith, "I shall close my eyes in death with bright and glorious hopes in regard to my native land, to the church, and to the world at large" (*Life at Three-Score and Ten,* 1871, p. 137).

[Autobiographical material in Barnes's *Life at Three-Score* (1859) and *Life at Three-Score and Ten* (1871). E. H. Gillett, *Hist. of the Presbyt. Ch.* (1864); S. J. Baird, *Hist. of the New School* (1868); George Junkin, *The Vindication, Containing a Hist. of the Trial of the Rev. Albert Barnes* (1836); *N. Y. Observer,* 1830–40, containing full reports of proceedings of Assembly, Synod, Presbytery, and statements from both sides in the controversy.] C. N.

BARNES, CHARLES REID (Sept. 7, 1858–Feb. 24, 1910), botanist, came of pioneer stock, from Madison, Jefferson County, Ind. From the first his interest in nature was strong, and his studies, prosecuted with a single-minded thoroughness, took him to Hanover College, from which he was graduated with the degree of A.B. in 1877. During his years at Hanover he was a classmate of Dr. John Merle Coulter, subsequently head of the department of botany at the University of Chicago, and thus began a lifelong friendship between the two. Barnes was principal of the High School at Hanover, 1877–78, principal of the High School at Utica, Ind., 1878–79, and a teacher in the High School at Lafayette, Ind., 1879–80. During the summers of 1879 and 1880 he studied at Harvard under Asa Gray, then the acknowledged leader of American botany, whose work, though largely systematic, was nevertheless original in its day in the stress laid upon the science, then new, of vegetable physiology. Barnes returned to Hanover to gain his degree of M.A. in 1880, and then taught natural science at Purdue University, where he was promoted to a professorship in 1882. In 1887 he took his Ph.D. at Hanover, and immediately thereafter accepted a teaching post at the University of Wisconsin. This he left in 1898 to become plant physiologist with the University of Chicago, then just organizing, where he remained until his death from apoplexy twelve years later.

Barnes's achievements were not in the more spectacular botanical field in which older botanists worked, that of exploration and the description of new species. On the contrary, in his labors the laboratory and its precise equipment, the mechanistic view-point, and the experimental method superseded the observational attitude of the older naturalists. Interest in physiology as the chief aspect of botany was largely created by his text-books and by his great influence over the host of teachers who went forth from the University of Chicago in the first decade of this century. As co-editor, with Dr. Coulter, of the *Botanical Gazette* during its most influential years, Barnes established, by his interest in physiology, his passion for scientific precision, and his love of good English, the high standing of the magazine, and largely imparted to it its physiological and morphological emphasis. In his position as a critic and as a teacher of teachers, he upheld a rigidly high standard and in his thought was relentlessly severe and logical. His earliest work was his "Analytical Key to the Genera of Mosses" (*Purdue University Bulletin,* 1886), followed by other works with similar titles, that were essentially improved editions of the first, in which he for the first time removed the systematic study of mosses from a highly technical sphere, going as far to popularize the Bryophytes as Asa Gray the flowering plants and Eaton the ferns. His most famous papers were on the status of modern botanical research, on the progress of plant physiology, and on the theory of the ascent of water in trees, a problem peculiarly fascinating and one still not completely solved. In collaboration with J. M. Coulter and others he prepared several text-books which have been of great pedagogic influence on the experimental and morphological method of botanical instruction.

[A brief appreciation by H. C. Cowles in *Science,* XXXI, 532–33; sketch in *Gen. Cat. Alumni Hanover Coll.* (1883), p. 46; obituary in *Chicago Daily Tribune,* Feb. 26, 1910.] D. C. P.

BARNES, CHARLOTTE MARY SANFORD (1818–Apr. 14, 1863), actress and playwright, was the daughter of John and Mary (Greenhill) Barnes, English actors who made their appearance at the Park Theatre, New York, in April 1816. For many years Mrs. Barnes was the leading actress both in tragedy and comedy at the Park Theatre, and her husband was a successful low comedian. On Mar. 22, 1822, Charlotte Barnes, at the age of three, was brought on as the child of her mother who was acting in *The Castle Spectre.* When her own début was made at the Tremont Theatre in Bos-

ton, it was as Angela in the same play, and her first appearance on the New York stage, Mar. 29, 1834, was in that part. At Philadelphia in the same year she played Juliet to her mother's Romeo. Charlotte Barnes, however, never succeeded in reaching the position as an actress to which her mother had attained. Ireland tells us that physical defects in eyes, voice, and figure prevented her from ultimate success. Yet her training and ambition led her to attempt tragic rôles like Juliet, and in 1840 she played Thérèse to the Carwin of Edwin Forrest at the Bowery Theatre, New York. In 1842 she visited England, where her performance of Hamlet was well received. She returned in 1846, married Edmon S. Conner, a well-known actor-manager, in 1847, and acted as leading woman in his company. During his managerial career at the Arch Street Theatre in Philadelphia, they raised the standard of production and of behavior in the theatre, being supported by the public press.

Her playwriting began with the tragedy *Octavia Bragaldi; or, The Confession,* performed at the National Theatre, New York, Nov. 8, 1837, Miss Barnes acting in the title rôle. This romantic tragedy in blank verse has a singular interest in dramatic history. It was based on a murder which occurred in Frankfort, Ky., in 1825. Jeroboam O. Beauchamp killed Solomon P. Sharp, solicitor-general of Kentucky, upon discovering that he had seduced his wife before her marriage. T. H. Chivers and Edgar Poe had written closet dramas upon the theme, but Miss Barnes, a girl of eighteen, wrote the first play to be put on the stage, in which she acted with success in the United States and in London (Surrey Theatre, 1863) and Liverpool. In accordance with the literary fashion of the day, she changed the scene to Milan in the fifteenth century and deepened the sympathy of the audience for the heroine by a secret marriage between Octavia Bragaldi and the villain, Count de Castelli. (No marriage had taken place in Kentucky.) Believing Castelli dead, Octavia has married Bragaldi, and, on Castelli's return and repudiation of her, she demands that Bragaldi kill her betrayer. After the murder, Bragaldi kills himself, and Octavia takes poison. Miss Barnes showed some skill in transferring the actual scenes to the new setting, especially in the murder of Castelli, which she surrounded with the glamour of romance in the court-yard of Castelli's palace in the moonlight. (In real life, Beauchamp called Sharp to his own front door and shot him.) The play held the stage as late as 1854, when the author and her husband acted in it at the Bowery Theatre.

Her play of *La Fitte,* a dramatization of the novel of the same name by J. H. Ingraham (Caldwell's New Theatre, New Orleans, 1838), in which she played a young man's part, that of Theodore, seems also to have been a stage success. About the time of her marriage, Miss Barnes attempted a version of the Pocahontas story, which Barker, Custis, and Owen had already put on the stage. *The Forest Princess; or, Two Centuries Ago* was first played at Burton's Arch Street Theatre, Philadelphia, Feb. 16, 1848. Mrs. Barnes had played Pocahontas in Custis's *Pocahontas* in 1830, and possibly her daughter was inspired to write this drama by seeing her in the part. Mrs. Conner's dramatic sense is shown in her statement in the introduction to the printed play, that the defect of the story lies in its division of interest. She endeavored to overcome this by taking Pocahontas to England, where she dies after Rolfe has been accused and cleared of treason. Mrs. Conner also adapted a melodrama, *A Night of Expectations,* from the French. It was played at the Arch Street Theatre, Apr. 9, 1850, where she took the leading part of Madame de Virely, but it may have been performed earlier, as Durang states that she acted in it in England and Ireland with great success. She also adapted *Charlotte Corday* from the French of Dumanoir and Clairville with some assistance from Lamartine's *Histoire des Girondins* (Arch Street Theatre, April 1851). *Octavia Bragaldi* and *The Forest Princess* were published, together with some verse and short stories of a romantic character under the title of *Plays, Prose and Poetry* (Philadelphia, 1848).

[The best accounts of Mrs. Conner are given in Charles Durang, "The Phila. Stage," printed in *The Phila. Sunday Dispatch* (ser. 3, chs. 90, 94, 98, 102), and in J. N. Ireland, *Records of the N. Y. Stage* (1867), II. See also T. Allston Brown, *Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (1903), I; James Rees, *Dramatic Authors of America* (1845); the introductions to the *Plays, Prose and Poetry;* and A. H. Quinn, *Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923).]

A. H. Q.

BARNES, JAMES (Dec. 28, 1801–Feb. 12, 1869), Union soldier and engineer, was born in Boston, Mass., the son of Jane and Capt. William Barnes. After graduating at the Latin School of Boston he entered commercial life, but, ardently desirous of a military career, gained admission to West Point, from which he graduated in 1829 as number five in a class containing such distinguished men as Robert E. Lee and Joseph E. Johnston. Assigned to the artillery, he served at Fort McHenry and later at West Point. He was promoted first-lieutenant in 1836. Visualizing little prospect of active ser-

vice he resigned his commission in 1836 and entered the engineering field, where he achieved distinguished success, first as chief engineer and railroad superintendent and later in railroad construction. Between 1852 and 1857 he built six railroads.

With such a record of achievement he was appointed, upon the outbreak of the Civil War, colonel of the 18th Massachusetts Volunteers which, in August 1861, proceeded to Washington for training until March 1862. During McClellan's Peninsular campaign Barnes's regiment formed part of Fitz-John Porter's division, participating in the siege of Yorktown and in the battle of Mechanicsville, June 26, 1862. At the battles of Groveton and Antietam he successfully commanded a brigade in Morell's division of Porter's corps. With this brigade he marched in October and November 1862 to Falmouth, where he received his appointment as brigadier-general of volunteers on Nov. 29. In the Rappahannock campaign which followed, he led his brigade at Fredericksburg, being cited in orders by his division commander and at Chancellorsville, May 2–4, 1863, where, after gallantly participating in the battle, his brigade covered the retirement of the army over the Rappahannock. In May 1863 he was placed in temporary command of the 1st division, 5th corps, which guarded the Rappahannock fords until June 13, when the Union army moved northward paralleling Lee's march into Pennsylvania. Barnes's division arrived at Gettysburg and participated in the fighting of July 2 and 3. On the first day one brigade of his division (Vincent's), by seizing and holding Little Round Top, materially contributed to the Union victory. Barnes has been criticized for his seeming absence from the battlefield in the evening of July 2. Justice to him demands the statement that late in the afternoon of July 2 he was wounded in the left leg by a piece of shell. Unable to move, yet unwilling to leave, he remained on the field, turned over his command on July 3 to Gen. Charles Griffin, the permanent division commander who had returned to duty, and on July 9 was granted sick leave. He returned to his home at Springfield and, after the expiration of a twenty days' extension granted him, rejoined his division Aug. 18, 1863. Thereafter he commanded the defenses of Norfolk and Portsmouth and, in June 1864, the district of St. Mary's and the prisoners' camp at Point Lookout, Md., receiving there his brevet as major-general of volunteers for meritorious services during the Rebellion. He was mustered out Jan. 15, 1866. His health much impaired, he returned to civil life, but did not again take up the duties of his profession. He died in 1869 at Springfield, Mass.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.*, I; Old Files Section, A. G. O.; *Official Records*, vols. XI, XIX, XXI, XXV, XXVII, XL; O. W. Norton, *The Attack and Defence of Little Round Top* (1913); Old Records Div., A. G. O.; S. O. 184, Hdqrs. Army of the Potomac; S. O. 422 War Dept., Sept. 21, 1863; G. O. 148 War Dept., Oct. 14, 1865.]

C. A. B.

BARNES, JOSEPH K. (July 21, 1817–Apr. 5, 1883), surgeon-general, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Judge Joseph Barnes, a native of New England. He received an academic education at Round Hill School at Northampton, Mass., and entered upon a collegiate course at Harvard University. Compelled by ill health to leave college before graduation, he began the study of medicine with Dr. Thomas Harris of the Navy and received his medical degree from the University of Pennsylvania in 1838. He was appointed to the medical corps of the Army in 1840. His first three years of service were with the forces operating against the Seminole Indians in Florida. During the Mexican War, he was with a cavalry column that crossed the Rio Grande with the "Army of Occupation" and later with Gen. Scott's command he participated in every engagement until the capture of the City of Mexico. The outbreak of the Civil War found him at Vancouver Barracks. He was ordered east and served the first year of the war with the forces operating in Missouri. In May 1862 he was detailed as attending surgeon in the city of Washington. Here he fell under the eye of Secretary of War Stanton and when in September 1863 Gen. Hammond was relieved from his position as surgeon-general, Barnes was assigned as acting surgeon-general, and was appointed surgeon-general in August 1864, after the dismissal of Gen. Hammond. As chief of the medical department, Barnes gathered around him a group of brilliant officers and his régime was marked by the production of the voluminous *Medical and Surgical History of the War of the Rebellion* and by the development of the Army Medical Library and Army Medical Museum. It fell to his lot to share in the professional care of two murdered presidents. At the time of the assassination of President Lincoln and the attempted assassination of Secretary Seward, he attended the death-bed of the one and ministered to the successful restoration of the other. During the long illness of President Garfield, he was one of the surgeons who for weeks served in the chamber of the dying president. He reached the age of retirement in 1882 and died the following year. His remains lie in Oak Hill Cemetery, Georgetown, D. C. He was mar-

ried to Mary Fauntleroy, daughter of Judge Fauntleroy of Winchester, Va.

[*The Surgeon General of the Army,* by James Evelyn Pilcher (Carlisle, Pa., 1905), contains a biog. sketch with portrait. *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920), ed. by Kelly and Burrage, also contains a sketch. A fine portrait in oil hangs in the Army Medic. Lib.] J.M.P.

BARNES, MARY DOWNING SHELDON (Sept. 15, 1850–Aug. 27, 1898), educator, was born at Oswego, N. Y., the daughter of Edward Austin Sheldon and Frances (Stiles) Sheldon. Two years previous to her birth her father had started a "Ragged School" in Oswego and had introduced into it the methods and the spirit of the great Swiss schoolmaster, Pestalozzi. This institution later became the Oswego Normal School and Edward Sheldon its principal. Mary Sheldon was educated in the public schools of Oswego and then in the Oswego Normal School, where she was imbued with her father's enthusiasm for better methods of education. From Oswego she went to the University of Michigan, one of the first women to attend a coeducational institution of higher learning. In a poem written during this period of her life she paid tribute to President Angell as the champion who had opened the gates of knowledge to women. She graduated from the University of Michigan in 1874. During the next two years she taught at the Oswego Normal School, leaving it in 1876 to become professor of history at Wellesley College, then in its infancy. While her work at Wellesley was highly successful, as pupils of hers have enthusiastically testified, she felt the need of broadening her experience and knowledge, and from 1880 to 1882 she traveled and studied in Europe. After her return she again taught at the Oswego Normal School, as instructor in history. In 1884 she married Earl Barnes, professor of history at the University of Indiana, and spent the next seven years of her life in studying, traveling, and writing. In 1891, however, both she and her husband accepted positions at Leland Stanford University, she to teach history, he as professor of education. She was the first woman to be appointed a member of the faculty of Leland Stanford University and her success more than justified the confidence that had been placed in her. In 1897 she left for Europe with her husband, intending to spend two years in study and travel. After more than a year spent in France and Italy, they went to London, where she began to delve among the treasures of the British Museum. Severe illness intervened, however, ending in her death.

In attempting to appraise her work it should be remembered that Mrs. Barnes seems to have placed more emphasis on method than on content. "Her teaching . . ." a former pupil of hers has said, "did not give us enough historical reading, I think, as she had, under the Normal School influences of her rearing, more interest in training the mind to draw right conclusions from data furnished than in enriching our stores of information." It was probably her most important and enduring contribution to the teaching of history that she was one of the first to have her pupils use historical sources and study them critically. She embodied her ideas in several books and many articles. Her *Studies in American History* (1891), written in collaboration with her husband, and her *Sheldon's General History* are filled with extracts from historical sources; and her theories are set forth in detail in her *Studies in General History* (1885) and *Studies in Historical Method* (1896). In appearance she was "small and delicate," according to one of her former pupils, "but agile and graceful, with beautiful, flashing blue eyes. She was in her manner gay and informal." If her success as a teacher was due in part to the inspiration of her father, to her training, travel, study, and experience, it was due also to her buoyant, esthetic personality.

[Katherine Lee Bates, "In Memoriam," *Wellesley Coll. Mag.,* Oct. 1898; Will S. Monroe, *Hist. of the Pestalozzian Movement in the U. S.* (1907), Will S. Monroe, sketch in *Jour. of Ed.,* Sept. 15, 1898; and A. P. Hollis, *The Contribution of the Oswego Normal School to Educ. Progress in the United States* (1898); letters from Miss Katherine L. Bates and Miss Ethel Roberts of Wellesley Coll., from Mr. O. L. Elliott, formerly of Stanford Univ., and from Prof. Teggart of the Univ. of California.] J.F.S.

BARNEY, JOSHUA (July 6, 1759–Dec. 1, 1818), naval officer, was the seventh of the fourteen children of Frances (Holland) Barney and William Barney, whose father, the first William, came from England to Baltimore County, Md., about 1695. Joshua, with an inborn passion for the sea, was allowed to leave school at the age of ten, but was for three years restrained from following his natural bent, his father compelling him to enter commercial life, the drudgery of which he bore with increasing signs of impatience. Yielding at last to his plainly adventurous nature and his steadfast desire to follow the sea, his father, early in the year 1771, entrusted him to a Baltimore pilot, aboard whose craft he enjoyed a short but useful experience. The next year he was regularly apprenticed to Capt. Thomas Drysdale, his brother-in-law, who commanded a small brig in the Liverpool trade. Here the boy's extraordinary aptitude for his chosen profession became at once apparent. In January 1775, while on a voyage to Nice with a cargo of

wheat, the captain died, and, there being no mate, Barney, at the age of fifteen, took command of the vessel, which, in a leaky condition on account of continued storms, he took safely into Gibraltar. Here he successfully negotiated the loan of a large sum for repairs and proceeded to Nice, where he sold his cargo to advantage in spite of the intrigues and extortions of the Sardinian officials. To circumvent these he made the arduous journey across the mountains to appeal personally to the British minister at Milan, who, astonished and delighted at the lad's boldness, interfered effectively in his behalf. On his way back to his native land, Barney took advantage of the opportunity to earn money for his employer by chartering his ship as a transport to the Spanish army, and was a witness of its defeat at Algiers, afterward conveying some of the defeated troops back to Alicante. Then, recrossing the Atlantic in the month of October, he appeared before his astonished employer, who with difficulty believed his romantic story.

In the same month, October 1775, Barney entered the service of the Colonies as sailing-master (master's mate) of the sloop *Hornet,* belonging to Commodore Hopkins's squadron, and so distinguished himself at the capture of New Providence in the West Indies, as well as in an engagement of Hazzlewood's flotilla with two strong British ships, acting on this occasion as a volunteer, that, in June 1776, he was commissioned lieutenant in the regular navy by Robert Morris, president of the Marine Committee of Congress, "in consequence of his good conduct with the flotilla." Serving gallantly in the sloop *Wasp* and afterward in the sloop *Sachem,* he was captured by a British ship while taking a prize into port, but was soon exchanged. In December 1777 he was appointed lieutenant of the frigate *Virginia,* and early in the next year he captured and took into Baltimore a large enemy sloop and a barge, his humane and courteous treatment of his prisoners earning him a letter of thanks, together with a present of English cheese and porter, from the British naval commander in those waters. On Apr. 1 the *Virginia,* in attempting to get to sea, was captured by the British, and Barney, together with a large number of other prisoners, was sent to New York in the *St. Albans,* after a bold and almost successful effort on his part to organize the prisoners and overpower the ship's crew. He was again exchanged in August 1778. As the activities of the American navy at sea were reduced at this time to almost nothing, owing to the complete control of the coasts by the British shipping, Barney accepted the command of several armed merchant vessels, more than once beating off the attacks of enemy privateers of greater tonnage and heavier armament than his own. In March 1780, in his twenty-first year, he married Anne, the daughter of Alderman Gunning Bedford [*q.v.*] of Philadelphia. Soon after he was ordered as first-lieutenant to the *Saratoga,* 16 guns, which, after capturing a number of enemy vessels, herself fell a victim to the British battle-ship *Intrepid.* Taken to England and confined for nearly a year in the Mill Prison near Plymouth, he escaped only to be retaken, but at the second attempt succeeded, through a series of romantic adventures and disguises, in reaching France and, late in December 1781, arrived at Boston, where John Hancock and Samuel Adams "paid him the honor of their special notice and flattering civilities."

The Messrs. Cabot of Beverly, well-known ship-builders, offered him the command of a new privateer of 20 guns, with the privilege of choosing his own cruising ground, but he was loath to make a definite engagement before seeing his family again, and in March 1782 he arrived at Philadelphia, where he found his wife and the little son born during his imprisonment. At this time the State of Pennsylvania, irritated at the annoying depredations of the many British "refugee barges and privateers" along her coast, began to fit out, at her own expense, a number of lightly armed vessels to operate in her own waters. Of one of these, the *Hyder-Ally,* a hastily converted merchantman mounting 16 six-pounders and carrying a crew of only 110 men, Barney was placed in command, with orders to convoy a fleet of merchant ships to the Capes, but on no account to proceed to sea. On Apr. 8, the fleet being anchored off Cape May awaiting a favorable wind, Barney observed the approach, with evidently hostile intent, of three British war-ships, and signaled for the convoy to stand up the Bay, while the *Hyder-Ally* covered the retreat. The fleet obeyed and eventually escaped with the exception of two vessels which ran aground. One of the enemy ships, the privateer *Fair American,* ran down the *Hyder-Ally,* but, as Barney held his position, she sheered off, at the same time firing a broadside, to which Barney did not reply, wishing to reserve himself for the ship astern which was coming up fast, and which afterward proved to be the *General Monk,* 20 guns, commanded by Capt. Rodgers, an officer of reputation. To fight this ship broadside to broadside would have been inviting disaster. Instead, the resourceful Barney, waiting for the enemy to get quite near, threw in his own broadside, righted his helm and kept away. The enemy stood boldly on when Barney, using, it is said, the ruse of shouting

false orders to his helmsman who had been informed of the stratagem, placed his vessel in such a position that the jib-boom of the British ship became entangled in the fore-rigging of the *Hyder-Ally,* with the result that the guns of the *General Monk* could not bear and were useless, while those of the *Hyder-Ally* raked the *Monk* fore-and-aft. In twenty-six minutes the British ship, more than twice as powerful in men and metal as her adversary, struck her colors, and Barney, skilfully avoiding the other enemy vessels, took his prize triumphantly into Philadelphia. The American loss was only four killed and eleven wounded, while the loss aboard the *General Monk* was at least three times as heavy. "The action," says Cooper (*History of the Navy,* 1839, I, 237–38), "has been justly deemed one of the most brilliant that ever occurred under the American flag.... The steadiness with which Capt. Barney protected his convoy, the gallantry and conduct with which he engaged, and the perseverance with which he covered the retreat of his prize, all are deserving of high praise. Throughout the whole affair this officer discovered the qualities of a great naval captain; failing in no essential of that distinguished character." For this exploit, so heartening to the Colonial cause just at this time, Barney received the thanks of the State of Pennsylvania, which also presented him with a special sword of honor. Later in the year he was commissioned to bear official dispatches to Dr. Franklin in Paris, where he was made much of by the American Commissioners and by the French officers who had served in America, including Lafayette.

In 1783 came the peace with Great Britain. The navy was practically disbanded and the ships laid up or sold, though Barney continued in service until May 1784, longer than any other officer of the Revolutionary navy. There followed for him ten years of various peaceful activities, including commercial ventures by land and by sea, farming and exploration, in the course of which he visited parts of the South and the frontiers of Kentucky, where he found the rough, adventurous life much to his taste, and where he afterward purchased an estate. In 1787 and 1788 he took an active and influential part as an ardent Federalist, in the debates on the adoption of the Constitution, and had the honor of being for a week Washington's guest at Mt. Vernon. In November 1789 he was appointed Vendue Master by the General Assembly of Maryland, an office of profit which, however, he soon abandoned in order to embark in a commercial undertaking in the West Indies, which, though promising success at first, was eventually ruined by the disorders resultant from the French Revolution and the British "Orders in Council" of June 1793, under which Barney's ship, the *Sampson,* was condemned and confiscated by the Admiralty Court in Jamaica.

In 1794 Barney was named one of the captains to command the six new frigates constructed by Congress in consequence of the depredations of the Barbary corsairs, his name being placed third on the list but after that of Silas Talbot, who was ranked only by John Barry [*q.v.*]. Talbot, though connected with the sea in his youth and commissioned a captain in the navy in 1779, had never served aboard a ship in time of war, and Barney, actuated by a sensitive conception of pride and honor, declined the appointment which he had so hoped to receive, on the ground that he could not serve under an officer who had been junior to him in rank. Though it was pointed out to him that Talbot's rank dated from 1779 and the ranking was technical and implied no slight, Barney persisted in his resolution, though his title of captain was conferred upon him by the State of Pennsylvania and not by the Congress. There can be no question that an injustice was done Barney, who, as Cooper remarks (*Ibid.,* p. 239), "ought to have been presented with the commission of a captain in the American navy for the capture of the *Monk.*" This unfortunate episode, which caused the temporary retirement from his country's naval service of one of her most distinguished officers, was characteristic of the "general irregularities" (*Ibid.,* p. 239) then obtaining in the navy, growing out of the political exigencies of the times.

Returning to the merchant service, Barney took command of the *Cincinnatus,* out of Baltimore, and on July 30 arrived at Havre, having on board as a passenger the new American minister to France, James Monroe. The object of the journey was to recover the value of certain drafts on French officials given Barney in lieu of payment at St. Domingo, and to represent an American firm engaged in shipping flour to France. Accompanying Monroe to Paris, he was paid the compliment of being selected by the Minister to present an American flag to the National Convention, on which occasion he received the ceremonial "fraternal embrace." Soon after this he was offered the command of a 74-gun line-of-battle ship recently taken from the British, but declined, wishing first to carry out his commercial engagements. Bringing these to a close, he held himself at the disposal of the French Minister of Marine, and in the meantime fitted out a small privateer which preyed successfully on British commerce. In 1796 he was appointed captain and

chef de division (commodore) in the French navy, in which he served with distinction until, after several attempts to resign, he was, in 1802, discharged and placed on the pension list of the Republic. The most brilliant feature of his French service was the manner in which while being watched by a much superior British force at St. Domingo, he succeeded in getting to sea with two frigates. Returning to Baltimore, he soon found his financial situation improved by the payment of certain long-outstanding debts, and, while continuing to engage in business, he permitted himself to be twice nominated for Congress by one of the Democratic factions, being defeated on each occasion. In 1805 he refused the superintendency of the new navy-yard at Washington offered him by President Jefferson. In 1809 he tendered his services to the new president, Madison, being highly indignant at the so-called "Chesapeake incident" (*vide* James Barron), but he does not seem to have reëntered the regular navy even at the breaking out of the war with Great Britain in 1812. Instead he embarked in privateering enterprises on a large scale, numerous and valuable prizes being taken by the armed vessels under his control, and often under his personal command, during the next two years.

Called to Washington by the secretary of the navy in July 1814, for consultation in regard to the protection of that capital, then seriously threatened by a combined sea and land attack, Barney was placed in command of a flotilla of barges carrying heavy guns, together with a few galleys and several schooners, manned by sailors and marines, and for several weeks held the British forces at bay, their repeated attacks being smartly repulsed. On Aug. 16 he reported to the Navy Department that the British were ascending the Patuxent in force, and he was directed to disembark his men and retire to Washington, which, however, he left early on the morning of Aug. 24, proceeding by a forced march to Bladensburg to meet the advance of the British detachment. There his little body of some 500 men were placed at the center of Gen. Winder's position, Barney himself directing the artillery (2 eighteens and 3 twelve-pounder ship's guns mounted on carriages), while Capt. Miller of the marines commanded the rest of Barney's company, seventy marines and 370 seamen armed as infantry. As at Bunker Hill, the two first attacks of the British were bloodily repulsed, chiefly by Barney's guns, but the enemy assaults on the American militia to right and left found such feeble resistance that the little band of sailors and marines was soon flanked and at length forced to abandon the field, leaving both Barney and Miller wounded and in the hands of the enemy, who lost no time in pressing his advance and seizing the national capital. This heroic resistance of the force under Barney alone saved the combat at Bladensburg from being an unqualified disgrace to American arms. He was presented by the city of Washington with a sword of honor, and was afterward appointed Naval Officer at Baltimore, a position which he held for a short time only. He died at Pittsburgh on Dec. 1, 1818, while returning from a visit to his Kentucky estate. "Capt. Barney," says Cooper, "is said to have engaged in twenty-six combats, all of which were against the English, and in nearly all of which he was successful."

[Besides the MSS. in the Office of Naval Records and Lib. at Washington and the several histories of the Am. navy, the following volumes may be consulted: *A Biog. Memoir of the Late Commodore Joshua Barney: from Autobiographical Notes and Journals*, ed. by Mary Barney (1832); *Commodore Joshua Barney* (1912), compiled by W. F. Adams; Ralph D. Paine, *Joshua Barney, a Forgotten Hero of Blue Water* (1924).] E.B.

BARNUM, FRANCES COURTENAY BAYLOR. [See Baylor, Frances Courtenay, 1848–1920.]

BARNUM, HENRY A. (Sept. 24, 1833–Jan. 29, 1892), Union soldier, was born at Jamesville, Onondaga County, N. Y. Descent has been claimed from an English titled family Barnham; the American ancestor was Thomas Barnum (1625–95). Henry's parents were Alanson Levi and Beersheba (Pixley) Barnum. He was educated at Syracuse Institute, and prior to the Civil War was a teacher, studied law and was admitted to the bar, and belonged to the Syracuse militia. He enlisted at the outset of the war, and on May 13, 1861, was chosen captain of company I in the 12th New York Volunteers which he had helped to organize. With this regiment he participated in the first Bull Run campaign, and took part in the preliminary engagement at Blackburn's Ford on July 18, 1861. According to the usual accounts, his company remained firm, and he was particularly commended by Gen. Tyler (according to William Swinton, *Campaigns of the Army of the Potomac*, 1866, p. 48, the 12th New York was completely "disrupted"). He was commissioned major on Nov. 1, 1861, and was a member of Gen. Wadsworth's staff. He fought in various battles of the Peninsular campaign, but his chief distinction came in the concluding one at Malvern Hill on July 1, 1862. At first on the staff of Gen. Butterfield, later in the day he led a charge at the head of his regiment, and was shot through the body. "Surgeons pronounced the wound fatal,

and he was left for dead on the field that night, and the official reports of the battle gave his name among the killed" (*New York Tribune,* Jan. 30, 1892). A eulogy on his career was delivered at Syracuse, and the city sent a committee to bring home the body. "Union soldiers built a rough fence around the grave of a buried officer at Harrison's Landing on the James River and set up a headboard with this roughly inscribed legend, 'Major Henry A. Barnum, 12th New York Volunteers. Killed July 1, 1862, at Malvern Hill'" (New York *Sun,* Jan. 30, 1892). In reality, "He was captured by the enemy, and for eight days was in the battlefield hospital, whence he was carried in an old express wagon to Libby Prison. . . . On July 18 he was exchanged" (*New York Tribune,* Jan. 30, 1892). Or, according to another and different account: "Contrary to many reports of this incident, he was not abandoned on the field as dead, but was conveyed by a special detail of his own men to the Malvern House and put under care of surgeons. After the National forces had withdrawn to Harrison's Landing, and while a sufferer at the Malvern House, he, with many others of the wounded under treatment there, was captured by the Confederates and taken to Libby Prison, where he was confined till July 18 following, when he was exchanged" (*Appleton's Annual Cyclopædia,* 1892, p. 533).

Because of his wound Barnum obtained several leaves of absence. Meanwhile he recruited the 149th New York, a cosmopolitan regiment, containing companies of Germans, Irish, and Jews, and was commissioned its colonel on Sept. 17, 1862. He took good care of his men, but his absences were considered unfortunate for the regiment. He fought at Gettysburg, and at Lookout Mountain he was shot in the arm. While on the journey to Washington with the Confederate flags captured in that battle, his old wound reopened, and required heroic treatment. "His wound . . . was considered one of the most remarkable wounds of the war. The government published a history of it, with his portrait, in the surgical and medical history of the war" (*New York Tribune,* Jan. 30, 1892). Recovering, he took part in Sherman's Georgia campaign, was wounded again at Peachtree Creek on July 20, 1864, and commanded the 3rd brigade of the 20th corps in the march to the sea. He led the advance into Savannah, conducting a picked force over the parapets, and guarded the vast stores of cotton from destruction. He was brevetted brigadier-general of volunteers on Jan. 12, 1865, and major-general of volunteers on Mar. 13; he was commissioned brigadier-general of volunteers on May 31, and was for a short time in command of a provisional brigade in the military district of Vermont, New Hampshire, and Massachusetts. Declining a colonelcy in the regular army, he resigned on Jan. 9, 1866.

After the war Barnum practised law in New York City, and held various public offices. In succession he was inspector of prisons in the state, to which position he was elected in 1865; deputy tax commissioner 1869–72; harbor master and port warden from 1888 until his death in New York. He had also served as Republican assemblyman in the legislature. With a high reputation for bravery and patriotism, he was a friend of Grant, Sherman, and other noted men, and was prominent in various military organizations, being Past Commander of the G. A. R. of the Department of New York. He delivered an oration at Detroit before the Society of the Army of the Cumberland on Nov. 15, 1871. From the War Department he received the medal of honor on July 16, 1889, and a gold medal was awarded to him by Congress (*Appleton's Annual Cyclopædia,* 1892). He was twice married: first to Lavina King, and second to Josephine Reynolds.

[Geo. K. Collins, *Memoirs of the 149th Regt. N. Y. Vol. Inf.* (1891); Franklin H. Chase, *Syracuse and Its Environs* (1924); N. Y. newspapers of Jan. 30, 1892; Geo. J. Hagar (?) in *Appleton's Annual Cyc.* (1892); Eben L. and Francis Barnum, *Geneal. Rec. of the Barnum Family* (1912), p. 92.]

E. K. A.

BARNUM, PHINEAS TAYLOR (July 5, 1810–Apr. 7, 1891), "the great American showman," was himself the greatest of his shows, and knew it. When Mme. Tussaud's representative asked him if he was willing to be immortalized in wax for her famous London museum, he replied: "Willing?—Anxious! What's a show without notoriety!" And he sent her an outfit of his clothing from socks to waistcoat. For more than fifty years his name was connected with public entertainment. He openly declared that the public desired to be humbugged, and his hoaxes and impudence were unlimited. He found the American public without easy means of innocent diversion, and left it changed in habit, taught to play, and served with entertainment of complex variety. In this change he played perhaps the leading part.

His ancestors were American, of Yankee stock; his father, Philo F. Barnum, of Bethel, Conn., ran the range of farming, store-keeping, and some of the simpler crafts, without leaving to his son an inheritance of great financial

value. His mother was named Irena Taylor. The young Barnum had an aversion to manual labor, and was willing to use his wits to save his muscles; but until he was twenty-five years of age he found no route to prosperity that suited his taste and talent. He kept store and tended bar, ran an abolition newspaper and did odd jobs, sold tickets for a theatre and thus drifted into his career. It was Joice Heth who pointed the way to fortune, and led Barnum to it from the moment of his opening of her receptions in Niblo's Garden, a New York place of entertainment, on Aug. 10, 1835. Joice was a negress, old, wizened, and vituperative, who, when Barnum first learned of her existence, was being exhibited unprofitably in Philadelphia as the nurse of George Washington, 161 years of age. Accompanying her were yellowed papers, including what purported to be an original bill of sale from Augustine Washington, the father of George, dated Feb. 5, 1727, and describing her as then fifty-four years of age. She had been coached to remember all the details of the nursing of the illustrious infant; including with the memories of his youth the famous cherry-tree incident (which, however, she related to a peach-tree). "She has been a member of the Baptist Church for upwards of one hundred years, and seems to take great satisfaction in the conversation of ministers who visit her," wrote Barnum in her advertisement. He bought the rights in her as a curio, and exhibited the woman against a background of patriotic press notices, as long as nature would allow. When she died, too soon for Barnum, and the unkind autopsy showed her age to have been about eighty years, he buried her in his family lot and capitalized her again by running a series of newspaper articles attacking her authenticity and defending his own good faith. Bennett of the *New York Herald* was taken in by the second phase of his hoax, as he had been by the first, and gave much space in his paper to this exposure of the imposture (Sept. 8, 13, 17, 24, 1836). Thus, said Barnum, when age had turned him to reflection, the "least deserving of all my efforts in the show line was the one which introduced me to the business" (*Struggles and Triumphs,* 1874, p. 73).

After Joice Heth there was a period of unprofitable effort in Barnum's life, but there was a persistent drift toward the show business, with acrobatic troupes and a few wild animals on the bill. In 1841 he was in New York dickering with the owners of Scudder's American Museum, who were running a losing race with Peale's Museum. Both concerns had their halls of curios and specimens, and their plaintive advertisements called in vain for public favor. Without gold, but with, as he said, "much brass," Barnum bought first Scudder's and then Peale's, and opened early in 1842 an institution that for a generation was to delight the children of New York and the country visitors. "The American Museum was the ladder by which I rose to fame," he later said. "Keep it before the public," he advertised; " . . . this magnificent establishment has passed into new hands. . . . The place is nightly crowded with the élite of the city. . . . Instruction is blended with amusement." Twice burned down (July 13, 1865, and Mar. 3, 1868), but fully reported each time, the American Museum provided a durable medium for ingenious hoax. There was Niagara Falls, the woolly horse, the Feejee Mermaid, and the bearded lady, whom the skeptics believed to be no lady at all. There was the "Egress," in pursuit of which many an eager patron hurried through the halls, until he found himself outside the Museum. There was a genuinely interesting and diversified collection of museum material, consisting of minerals, fossils, and natural-history specimens. There were playlets on the stage, and freaks on the platforms of the showroom. Above all, there was for many years Gen. Tom Thumb (Charles Sherwood Stratton, 1838–83, *q.v.*), an engaging dwarf whom Barnum found as a lad, and whom he developed into a great celebrity.

With Tom Thumb under his management, Barnum first invaded Europe in 1844, exhibiting his protégé to Victoria and her young family. In Paris he gained the favor of the court, and display space for Tom Thumb and his miniature coach in the imperial enclosure at Longchamps. He was back in England again in 1858, when he lectured at St. James's Hall, Regent St., on "The Science of Money Making, and the Philosophy of Humbug." Since he was a prime exhibit for both, he was a great success, and launched the vogue for American humorists in England, which Mark Twain kept afloat in 1873 with his famous monologue on "Our Fellow Savages of the Sandwich Islands." While in England, Barnum was captivated by the pavilion erected by George IV at Brighton. It was a residence in Indian style, decorated with endless columns and arches, and was novel enough for a showman's home. He had the house copied; and he erected from the drawings a home, "Iranistan," at Bridgeport, Conn., near the field where he maintained an elephant to pull a plow whenever a train passed along the railroad near-by. The housewarming of this curiosity of domestic architecture was another occasion for wide advertising; but its complete destruction by fire

(Dec. 18, 1857) had even greater salvage in the way of publicity.

In the spirit of the impresario, rather than that of the ordinary showman, Barnum brought Jenny Lind to America for a long concert tour in 1850. At the height of her fame in Europe, the Swedish singer had just turned away from opera and its demoralizing influences, to spend the rest of her career on the concert stage. Barnum, with no introduction but his nerve, offered her a profitable contract, which she accepted on a chance. He met her at quarantine, when she arrived in New York, Sept. 1, 1850, and of course had a reporter there to note how he climbed up the ladder "with a choice bouquet carefully stuck in the bosom of his white vest." Bayard Taylor had already written a prize poem for her to sing at her first recital at Castle Garden ten days later. Her tour made Jenny Lind a rich woman, and a sort of "America's sweetheart" two generations ahead of Mary Pickford. It started a long procession of European artists to America.

In the later sixties Barnum sat in the legislature of Connecticut, and even ran for Congress. He determined to retire from the museum business, adjusted his affairs, took a private car of guests over the Union Pacific Railroad, newly opened in 1869; and returned to Connecticut to yearn for the old life and to organize "The Greatest Show on Earth."

With a fully developed circus, which soon had three rings under the main top, he opened this last great speculation in Brooklyn, Apr. 10, 1871; and thereafter for twenty years its opening, generally at Madison Square Garden, marked the official arrival of outdoor spring. "Can a public be satisfied with only eleven camels?" asked the *New York Times,* in a quizzical mood the day after the show began. There was no giraffe in the original menagerie, but the press agent improvised a sad tale of feeding one to the lions to keep them alive on a hard voyage of the animal ship across the Atlantic; and there were four to be burned to death when the menagerie, in connection with the Museum which was still functioning, burned down on Dec. 24, 1872. The papers suggested, quite without foundation it appears, that the numerous fires were only part of the advertising campaign; but Barnum bore it all. He wrote to the editor of the *New York Tribune* in 1877: "I don't care much what the papers say about me, provided they will say something." He had one more fire to reckon with; which on Nov. 20, 1887, destroyed the winter quarters of his circus at Bridgeport.

The first decade of "The Greatest Show on Earth" witnessed the transition of the circus from the wagon show to the railroad show, and the substitution of electricity for the gasoline flares and the calcium lights of the older period. But there was little to be added in the way of organizing skill, or dexterity of the artists. As Barnum grew older, and the competition of the young men who copied his methods became more fierce, he combined forces with the keenest of his rivals, launching the firm of Barnum & Bailey as the result, and opening under the new name in New York, Mar. 28, 1881. To the United States in the following spring he brought Jumbo, who ranked with Tom Thumb and Jenny Lind as the greatest of his exploits in pure showmanship. Jumbo was a huge African elephant, long the pride of the Royal Zoological Society in London. He was sold to Barnum & Bailey in a moment of financial strait, to be regretted instantly when the British press broke out into frantic protest against this American vandalism. Barnum encouraged the protests, but imported the elephant; technically "for breeding purposes," to escape the payment of duty; and he flooded the press with cuts of "The Only Mastodon on Earth," "The Gentle and Historic Lord of Beasts," feeding from third-story windows as he walked along the circus parade. Jumbo earned his cost in his first few weeks in America, and kept up his artistic character to the end, dying a hero's death Sept. 15, 1885, when he was run down by a locomotive. The press agent told how the courageous brute sacrificed himself to save the baby elephant, "Tom Thumb," from destruction. And three days later Barnum was already inquiring of the publishing house of Harper whether they would like to publish an illustrated life of Jumbo for the holidays. Subsequently a female elephant, Alice, was imported from the Royal Zoological Society to take Jumbo's place, was advertised as the widow of Jumbo, and took her station between the stuffed hide of her lord and his articulated skeleton. Later, after she perished in the Bridgeport fire, the remnants of Jumbo were turned over to the natural-history museum of Tufts College, of which Barnum was a benefactor.

In 1889 Barnum rounded out his long career by going to London, where his show exhibited at Olympia and maintained its prestige as an institution. No feature of the circus was more applauded than the circuit of the arena made by Barnum himself in an open carriage; and young Prince George, now George V, was so enthralled that he announced his determination to see the show through "until they sing God Save Grandmother."

Barnum was twice married; in 1829 to Charity Hallett, who died in 1873; and in 1874 to Nancy Fish; but he left no heir to carry on the showman's trade.

[Barnum published his *Life of P. T. Barnum Written by Himself* (1855), as part of his prolific advertising. Thereafter it was often revised, reprinted, and continued to date. It is generally accurate in matters of fact, and can be checked from date to date in the daily press. Many copies he deposited, with autograph letters of gift, in the libraries of the United States. He wrote, or had written, various circus stories for boys. M. R. Werner, *Barnum* (1923) utilized the *Life*, the special collections of Barnum material in the N. Y. Pub Lib. and the Harvard theatrical collection, and the private collections of Leonidas Westervelt and Harry Houdini. See also Joel Benton, *Life of Hon. Phineas T. Barnum* (1891); Chas. J. Finger, *Life of Barnum* (1924); Harvey W. Root, *The Unknown Barnum* (1928).]

F. L. P—n.

BARNUM, ZENUS (Dec. 9, 1810–Apr. 5, 1865), railroad builder, hotel keeper, capitalist, was born near Wilkes-Barre, Pa., the son of Richard and Roseanna (Jemison) Barnum. Of his youth and schooling little is recorded except that he was educated to be a civil engineer. He became a contractor and builder, taking part in the construction of several of the early railroads in Pennsylvania and Maryland. In 1840 he moved to Baltimore to become a partner with his uncle, David Barnum, owner of Barnum's City Hotel, established in 1826. As the associate of David he succeeded, after an interval of some years, his cousin Theron (1803–78) who later became widely known as the owner of Barnum's Hotel in St. Louis. Baltimore was preeminently the convention city of America; the first six National Democratic Conventions (1832–52), the anti-Masonic Convention of 1831, and the Whig Conventions of 1831, 1844, and 1852 met there, and as Barnum's Hotel was the most popular gathering place for the delegates, the fame of uncle and nephew as hospitable Bonifaces was carried to the remotest parts of the nation. On May 10, 1844, David died, and Zenus became sole owner. He was married, Mar. 9, 1848, to Annie B. McLaughlin. About the same time, with two friends, he organized the North American Telegraph Company and contracted with Alexander Bain for the use of his patents in telegraphy on a line to be run from Washington to New York. This line, popularly known as the "Bain Line," was hastily built, reaching New York in December, and under the vigorous presidency of Barnum the company became a strong competitor to the Magnetic Telegraph Company, owned by the group headed by Samuel F. B. Morse. In an infringement suit brought by Morse against Bain the priority of the Morse patents was completely established and on Jan. 1, 1852, the Bain Line was incorporated into the Magnetic Telegraph with Barnum as president. Somewhat later Barnum accepted the presidency of the Baltimore Central Railroad and soon brought it out of a state of insolvency. Another consolidation in the field of telegraphy came on Nov. 1, 1859, when a rapidly growing competitor, the American Telegraph Company, took over the Magnetic properties, Barnum again being chosen as president. His management of Barnum's Hotel had for several years been merely nominal, and in 1857 he had turned over the property to Andrew McLaughlin (probably a brother-in-law). A few years later he seems to have withdrawn from active business, but on McLaughlin's death, Jan. 29, 1863, he resumed the management of the hotel, which he retained until his death. "He was distinguished," said the *Baltimore Sun*, "for his eminently sound judgment and enlarged practical views." In both telegraphy and railroading he was a pioneer, and he came to be known as an organizer and executive of marked ability. He was public-spirited, especially in all that related to the welfare of Baltimore. He was also a "friendly man," of generous disposition and of a winning geniality of manner.

[E. L. and Francis Barnum, *Geneal. Rec. of the Barnum Family* (1912); S. I. Prime, *Life of Samuel F. B. Morse* (1875); J. D. Reid, *The Telegraph in America* (1886); obituaries in the *Sun* and the *Gazette* of Baltimore, Apr. 6, 1865. References to Barnum's City Hotel in Jacob Frey, *Reminiscences of Baltimore* (1893); J. Thos. Scharf, *Hist. of Baltimore City and County* (1881) and *Chronicles of Baltimore* (1874); John C. Gobright, *City Rambles, or Baltimore as It Is* (1857). A sketch of Theron Barnum appears in *Edwards's Great West* (1860), by Richard Edwards and M. Hopewell.]

W. J. G.

BARNWELL, JOHN (*c.* 1671–June 1724), Carolinian officer and colonial agent, was a native of Ireland who emigrated to South Carolina in 1701. By the time of the Tuscarora outbreak he had become a trusted official in the colony of South Carolina, serving as deputy secretary, clerk of the council, and comptroller. He had also taken part as a volunteer against the French and Spaniards in Queen Anne's War. The Tuscaroras in North Carolina, alarmed by the establishment of a Swiss colony at New Bern, had perpetrated an appalling massacre in 1711. Aid was summoned from Virginia and South Carolina, and the latter province responded by sending Col. Barnwell. He conducted a skilful forest march from Charleston to the Neuse River, at the head of a small body of militia and several hundred Indians. He assaulted the palisaded fort in January 1712, and inflicted a considerable blow upon the Tusca-

roras. For this service he was thanked by the authorities of North Carolina, though a few months later the government of that colony was dissatisfied with his conduct. The grounds of criticism appear to have been that he made a treaty with the Indians, and then allowed the treaty to be violated. The matter has proved a subject of controversy among local historians. Barnwell was, however, apparently highly esteemed throughout the region for many years after, and was known popularly as "Tuscarora John." In 1715 he was employed in his own colony in warfare with the Yemassee Indians.

In 1720 Barnwell was in London as the agent of the temporary government, since South Carolina had just overthrown the rule of the Proprietors. He coöperated with the other agent Boone in urging action upon the Board of Trade and Plantations, showing the need of protection from natives, Spaniards, and pirates. He was consulted on the preparation of a report on the new form of government, and his advice was asked especially on the establishment of a frontier post. Returning with the new governor, Nicholson, he built in 1721 a post named Fort King George on the Altamaha River, thereby giving offense to the Spaniards. He was regarded as well-informed in military affairs, and commanded the troops in the southern part of the colony. His last public office was as a member of the committee of correspondence to confer with agents on colonial matters. He was married to Anne Berners, according to tradition a sister of an English merchant residing in Charleston.

[Christoph von Graffenried, *Account of the Founding of New Bern,* a contemporary record ed. by Vincent H. Todd (1920); "The Tuscarora Expedition: Letters of Col. John Barnwell" in *S. C. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.* (1908), pp. 28–54; *Ibid.* (1901); Francis L. Hawks, *Hist. of N. C.* (1857), II, 537–42; Edward McCrady, *Hist. of S. C. under the Royal Government* (1899); E. B. Greene, *Provincial America* (1905); also the local histories by R. D. W. Connor, John W. Moore, for North Carolina, and Yates Snowden for South Carolina.] E. K. A.

BARNWELL, ROBERT WOODWARD (Aug. 10, 1801–Nov. 5, 1882), educator, Confederate statesman, was connected by blood with many leading Carolina families. Son of Robert, Revolutionary veteran and member of Congress (1791–93), and Elizabeth Wigg Hayne Barnwell, he was born near Beaufort, center of many Barnwell plantations (Harriette Leiding, *Historic Houses of South Carolina,* 1921, p. 233). After preliminary training in private schools of Beaufort and of Charleston, he entered Harvard, where he graduated in 1821 with highest honors. Having settled in Beaufort, he married on Aug. 9, 1827, Eliza Barnwell, a second cousin. Already he had entered upon a public career, having been chosen a member of the South Carolina House of Representatives in 1826; and in 1829 he was elected, without opposition, to Congress, where he sat until 1833. He signed the Ordinance of Nullification, Nov. 24, 1832. After retiring to his plantation, he was, in 1835, named president of South Carolina College (now the state university), succeeding Thomas Cooper, whose radicalism had damaged the prestige of the school. Barnwell restored public confidence, increased enrolment, added two dormitories, enlarged the library, and materially strengthened the institution.

After 1841, when he retired because of poor health, he lived again upon his plantation until June 4, 1850, when, by special appointment of Gov. Seabrook, he entered the Senate as Calhoun's successor. During his brief term, which expired in December 1850, he was active in defending the Southern position but his spirit was magnanimous. Opposed to the admission of California, for example, he nevertheless presented the credentials of Frémont, first senator from that state. As private citizen again, Barnwell interested himself in the varied efforts to define and enforce the slaveholders' view, though his attitude was moderate rather than extreme. He was in the convention which passed the ordinance of secession, was one of a committee of seven to draw up a "Declaration of Immediate Causes," was one of three commissioners appointed to treat with President Buchanan, and was named a delegate to the Southern Congress in Montgomery, February 1861. He was elected temporary chairman of this body; and he signed the Confederate constitution. Davis, who esteemed Barnwell highly, offered him the portfolio of state but Barnwell's modesty led him to decline. He represented South Carolina in the Confederate Senate.

His property destroyed during the war, Barnwell moved early in 1865 to Greenville, but in December of that year, through the interest of Gov. Perry, he was appointed chairman of the faculty of the University of South Carolina. Removed in 1873 by the mixed board of trustees, he conducted in Columbia a school for girls until 1877, when he was named by Gov. Hampton librarian of the University. He remained in this position until his death.

[For the Barnwell family, see *S. C. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.,* II, 56, 73–74; for Barnwell's career as educator, Maximilian La Borde, *Hist. of the S. C. Coll:* (1859), pp. 236–44, and Edwin L. Green, *Hist. of the Univ. of S. C.* (1916), pp. 45, 49, 105; for his record and speeches as senator, *Cong. Globe,* vol. XXI; for his

relation to the secession movement, Yates Snowden, *Hist. of S. C.*, vol. II (1920); for brief biog. sketch and eulogy, B. F. Perry, *Reminiscences of Public Men* (1883).]

F. P. G.

BARR, AMELIA EDITH HUDDLESTON (Mar. 29, 1831–Mar. 10, 1919), author, was born in Ulverston, Lancashire, England, the daughter of the Rev. William Henry Huddleston and his wife Mary. The Huddlestons were of good English stock, and Amelia's father possessed an income in addition to his salary, so that the child had a chance to grow up in an environment favorable to ambition and ideals. She was sent to a dame's school in Shipley, and to private schools in Penrith, Ripon, and elsewhere. When her father lost most of his money through the treachery of a friend, Amelia was forced to prepare to make her own living. She was sent, at the age of sixteen, as a second teacher to a Miss Berner's school; then she went to the Normal School at Glasgow to learn to teach in a general school. Here she met Robert Barr, whom she married, on July 11, 1850, at the age of nineteen. She met Henry Ward Beecher and Harriet Beecher Stowe, on a visit of theirs to England, and they suggested that she come to America, Beecher offering to give her friendly aid if she did so. In 1853, her husband having become bankrupt, she suggested that they leave England and settle in America. They landed in New York Sept. 5, 1853, and at first located in Chicago, where Mrs. Barr opened a school for girls, but because of a political controversy in which her husband became involved, they left hurriedly and started for Texas. On the way they stopped in Memphis, Tenn., where Mrs. Barr was moved by a scene in the slave market. Leaving Memphis suddenly because of an outbreak of yellow fever, they took passage to Texas on a slave ship, where Mrs. Barr's compassion was further aroused. When they arrived at Galveston, they learned that yellow fever was there, too, so they proceeded to Austin. Here she met Sam Houston and other leaders of the new State. Robert Barr was employed as a professional accountant to straighten out the records of the Republic of Texas. Later the Barrs moved to Galveston, where Robert Barr and two sons died in the yellow-fever epidemic of 1867. Just at that time, another child was born to Mrs. Barr, which also died. She and her three daughters continued to make their home in Texas until 1868, when they came to New York and established themselves, with only $5.18 on hand, in rooms in Amity St., once occupied by Poe. Mrs. Barr now took up the profession of authorship, under the encouragement of Henry Ward Beecher, who helped her to find a market for her writings in the *Christian Union* and elsewhere. General recognition came to her with the publication of her *Jan Vedder's Wife* (1885). She wrote in all about eighty books, novels, poetry, miscellanies. Her best-known works, besides *Jan Vedder's Wife*, are *A Bow of Orange Ribbon* (1886), *The Maid of Maiden Lane* (1900), *The Strawberry Handkerchief* (1908), and *The House on Cherry Street* (1909). Mrs. Barr wrote many love stories, tales of married life as well as of young love, but stressed romance rather than the sex element, so that her work could safely be put in the hands of children and young people. She frequently introduced historical material into her fiction, recording various struggles for liberty in European and American history. Her work shows a strong tinge of religion, as she had a good deal of the mystic in her mental make-up. Her books were written too fast to be other than superficial, but they had a wide audience in their day, and some of them are still read.

[Autobiographical writings by Amelia E. Barr: *All the Days of My Life* (1913), and "My Work and Health at 83," in *Ladies' Home Jour.*, XXXII; Hildegarde Hawthorne, "Amelia E. Barr, Some Reminiscences," *Bookman*, LI, 283; H. E. Blake, "Mrs. Barr and Her Story," *Ibid.*, XXXVII, 617; "Amelia E. Barr and the Novice," *Ibid.*, LVIII, 172; articles in the *Dial*, LV, 76; *Nation*, XCVII, 144; *Review of Reviews*, LIX, 548.]

D. S.

BARR, CHARLES (July 11, 1864–Jan. 24, 1911), captain of racing yachts, was born in Scotland at Gourock on the Firth of Clyde. His nautical experience, as was usual in that neighborhood, began early. For a while he was apprenticed to a grocer, and one cold, hard winter he spent on a flounder trawler. What finally made a yachtsman of him was doubtless the success of his brother John, who early became a noted skipper. In 1884 he and John took the forty-foot cutter *Clara* to the United States and sailed her in a number of races. Charles liked America so well that he decided to stay, and in 1889 became a naturalized citizen. For the rest of his life he was in the employment of wealthy yacht owners. His career, unmatched by any other racing skipper, was a series of almost unbroken successes. During his first years in America he was in command of the *Shona, Minerva,* which he brought over from England, *Oweene, Wasp, Gloriana, Navahoe, Vigilant,* and *Colonia.* In 1899 he commanded the *Columbia* in her races with *Shamrock I.* In 1901 he beat *Shamrock II* with the *Columbia,* and in 1903 beat *Shamrock III* with the *Reliance.* Sailing the old schooner *Shamrock* he won the $1,000 Lipton Cup for Frederick Thompson in a race off Cape May. In 1904 he took Morton

F. Plant's *Ingomar* across the Atlantic and won nineteen out of twenty-two races with her in English and German waters. In 1905, with the three-masted schooner yacht *Atlantic,* owned by Wilson Marshall, he won the German Emperor's Cup for a race across the ocean. Barr's time to the Lizard, the finishing point, was twelve days, four hours—3,013 miles at an average speed of 10.31 knots. Thereafter he had charge of two seventy-foot yachts: August Belmont's *Mineola* and Cornelius Vanderbilt's *Rainbow.* In 1910 he took Alexander Smith Cochran's *Westward* to Europe and at Cowes and Kiel made a perfect record. In eleven races of the A class the *Westward* finished first every time. The following winter Barr spent with his wife and family at Southampton, which was Mrs. Barr's native place. He died of heart failure one morning while eating breakfast. In America Barr had lived for the last seven years in New London, Conn. Intelligence, daring, and constant study made Barr the king of racing skippers. "Wee Charlie," as he was sometimes called, was five feet three inches tall. He was dark almost to swarthiness, had keen black eyes and bushy brows, and was habitually taciturn. Watchful of wind, water, and every movement of his opponents, he lost no chance to gain an inch. He took every advantage that a timid rival would give him, and sometimes frightened his crew by the huge spread of sail that he would order on. At first he was unpopular with the American public because of his foreign birth, but his success quieted the murmurers. Among yachtsmen he was universally admired.

[*N. Y. Herald, N. Y. Times, London Times,* Jan. 25, 1911; *Yachting,* Mar. 1911, p. 216; H. L. Stone, *The "America's" Cup Races* (1914); W. M. Thompson and T. W. Lawson, *The Lawson Hist. of the America's Cup* (1902).]

G. H. G.

BARRADALL, EDWARD (1704–June 19, 1743), lawyer, came of good stock as is indicated by the inscription on his tombstone in Burton Church, Williamsburg, which describes him as "armiger," *i.e.,* having a vested right to use coat armor. The place of his birth is not known, nor is the exact date, but it may be confidently assumed that his parents were Henry Barradall and Catherine Blumfield, who were married in England, June 6, 1696. His education was received in England, and he was called to the bar at the Inner Temple. He emigrated to Virginia with his two brothers and two sisters, commenced the practise of law at Williamsburg, and married, Jan. 5, 1735/6, Sarah, daughter of William Fitzhugh of Stafford, Va., and grand-daughter of Col. William Fitzhugh. The early legal reports indicate that he enjoyed a large practise. In 1734 he became legal adviser to Lord Fairfax, Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia, and drafted the act for the quieting of titles to land in the colony, which had been endangered owing to the dubious provisions of the will of Catherine Culpeper, Lady Fairfax (F. Harrison, *Virginia Land Grants,* 1925, pp. 104–8). He was appointed attorney-general of Virginia, Nov. 18, 1737, becoming also judge of the court of vice admiralty, and representative in the General Assembly for William and Mary College. He continued a member of the General Assembly at the sessions of November 1738, May 1740, August 1740, and May 1742, and retained his official position till his death, which occurred at Williamsburg, June 19, 1743. He died childless, neither of his brothers or sisters married, and the family therefore became extinct.

Barradall was the author of "Cases Adjudged in the General Court of Virginia from April 1733 to October 1741." They consist of notes of judicial decisions during the time he was practising law in the colony. It is doubtful if they were assembled with a view to publication, though great care is evinced in the statements of material facts, and the exact points decided. As had theretofore been the custom in the English reports, there are no head notes, and, since the General Court never delivered written opinions, there are almost invariably no stated reasons for the decisions, neither are the arguments dealt with adequately. Despite these defects the reports are very instructive, dealing with construction of wills or deeds relating to land, actions of trespass involving ownership of real estate, actions of detinue relative to ownership of slaves, and occasional suits for slander, thus giving a vivid picture of the course of litigation in the early days of the colony. After Barradall's death his manuscript passed through a number of hands, and the original is lost. The text, taken from a copy in the Virginia State Library, was published in *Virginia Colonial Decisions,* edited by Robert T. Barton.

[All that is known concerning Barradall has been collected by R. T. Barton in *Va. Colonial Decisions* (1909), vol. I, Hist. Intro., p. 243. It has been frequently stated incorrectly that he was the earliest Virginia reporter; both Randolph and Hopkins were prior to him. Other references are *Va. Heraldica* (1908), ed. by W. A. Crozier, and W. Meade, *Old Churches, Ministers and Families of Va.* (1861).]

H. W. H. K.

BARRELL, JOSEPH (Dec. 15, 1869–May 4, 1919), geologist and engineer, was descended from George Barrell, a cooper by trade, who came to Boston in 1637 from Saint Michaels in Suffolk, England, where others of the name still reside. In the early days the family, it is said, were in the main a sea-going people, ship-owners, and mer-

Barrell

chants. Joseph Barrell was born in New Providence, N. J., the fifth of nine children and the fourth son. His father, Henry Ferdinand Barrell, was born in New York City, but lived the life of a farmer first in Warwick, Orange County, N. Y., and later in New Providence. His mother Elizabeth (Wisner) Barrell was of Swiss descent. Joseph was named after his paternal grandfather, a wealthy resident of Boston, who, thrice-married, became the father of twenty children. That the boy is father of the man was never better exemplified than in the case of Joseph. He early developed a studious turn of mind, but was more interested in the natural sciences, astronomy, and history than in general literature. It is stated that when but a mere lad he would sit for hours wholly wrapped in reading the *Encyclopædia Britannica.* When tired from sitting in one position he would turn around, put his book on the chair, kneeling before it, and continue his reading. When about ten years of age he was given a planisphere and at night with a lantern and a book on astronomy would lie on his back gazing at the stars and learning their names. His studies also early took a geological trend; as a youth plowing on the home farm he would stop his team to examine every peculiar stone that was turned up. Until sixteen years of age he attended public schools in New Providence, where under excellent principals he was fitted for college. The finances of the family not permitting his entering college immediately, he passed a teacher's examination and taught at a small school near his home during the years 1886–87. In the following year he was in attendance at the Stevens Preparatory School at Hoboken, N. J., and also won a scholarship at the Stevens Institute but did not avail himself of it, preferring Lehigh University, which he entered in 1888, graduating four years later. He received the degree of E.M. from the University in 1893, in 1897 that of M.S., and in 1916 the honorary degree of Sc.D.

Barrell's first university position was that of instructor in mining and metallurgy in Lehigh University, a position which he held for four years, teaching mechanical drawing, metallurgy, and design, and practising surveying in the anthracite mines. The years of 1898–1900 were devoted to advanced study in Yale University, his summers being spent in field work with parties from the United States Geological Survey in Montana, where he devoted himself especially to questions relating to mining. He remained teaching geology with biology as a side issue at Lehigh for three years, spending three months of the summer of 1901 in Europe traveling on foot and bicycle or third-class trains, with the object of studying the geology of the land rather than that of seeing the cities. In 1903 he was appointed assistant professor of geology at Yale and in 1908 promoted to a full professorship, one-third of his time to be devoted to teaching geology to undergraduates, one-third to the graduate school, and one-third to research. In this position he remained until his death. How well he improved his opportunity for research is shown by his bibliography.

As a clear scientific thinker Barrell had few equals, and it was a pleasure to listen to his delivery, however abstruse his subject. His words were well chosen, his sentences well balanced. His merit along these lines was early recognized and he was frequently called to the lecture platform of other institutions. His early publications, as a natural result of his training, had to do with mining. From these, however, he soon graduated and we find him dealing with the most profound and complex of geological subjects. He attacked each and every problem confident of solution and his ability to handle it. He had the rare gift of generalizing from the publications of others and the still rarer power of analyzing his own methods of reasoning and thus, in a wholly impersonal manner, determining their value and the reliance to be placed upon them.

As stated, his first studies and publications dealt mainly with subjects relating to mining, but as in the case of his report on the Marysville mining district of Montana his interests led him on to a discussion of the then little-known subject of magmatic stoping which resulted in the production of a paper that has become a classic in the literature relating to igneous intrusions. It very early became evident that mining geology was not his most promising field. He grew with remarkable rapidity, as is shown in his progressive publications dealing with regional geology, geological processes, geological time, isostasy, evolution, and the genesis of the earth. A very considerable portion of his later writings were upon the subject of isostasy—the problem of the relative stability of the earth's crust under the changing conditions of erosion and sedimentation. It was in problems of this nature that his engineering training served him to good purpose and here he displayed to greatest advantage his philosophic trend of mind. Of equal importance and magnitude were his writings on rhythms in geological processes and measurements of geological time, a single paper on which subject covers nearly 160 pages of the *Bulletin of the Geological Society of America.*

He was married in 1902 to Lena Hopper Bailey. He was a fellow of the Geological Society of

America, the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and the National Academy of Sciences, the last honor coming to him but a few days before his death. In appearance he was rather striking. His height was five feet ten and one-half inches, but his spare build conveyed the impression that he was really considerably taller. His features were fairly large and rugged; with abundant light-brown hair and blue eyes. He impressed one as being a strong man both physically and mentally and with abundance of self-confidence although not in the least egotistical; in fact, modesty was one of his prevailing characteristics. Nevertheless it was over-confidence in his own physical and mental powers that led to his undoing. He prided himself on the longevity of his ancestors and believed that he too would live to great age, discovering only too late that he had overdrawn his resources to a fatal extent.

[Charles Schuchert, *Am. Jour. Science*, ser. 4, vol. XLVIII (1919), whole number CXCVIII, with full bibliography of Barrell's publications, pp. 277–80.]

G. P. M.

BARRETT, BENJAMIN FISKE (June 24, 1808–Aug. 6, 1892), preacher and writer of the New Church, was born in Dresden, Me., where his parents, Oliver and Elizabeth (Carleton) Barrett, supported their family of six boys and three girls by hard work on a farm and by the father's carpentering. Benjamin was eager for education, and as a boy found delight in thoroughly reviewing his school studies. The family was religious, but in no formal way. With difficulty the means were found for Benjamin to attend Bowdoin College, where he graduated in 1832. The first serious consideration of Christian doctrines led him to regard the common idea of three persons in the Godhead as unreasonable, and he found himself in sympathy with Unitarians. He become a student in the Harvard Divinity School, graduated in 1838, and was ordained as a Unitarian minister. The years of study in Cambridge brought association with broad-minded men and encouraged honest research. The instruction, however, did not satisfy Barrett. Toward the close of his course, the teachings of Swedenborg were brought to his attention. He did not accept them immediately, but they became increasingly satisfying to him. A winter was spent in association with the Boston New-Church Society and the students of New-Church teachings which it counted among its members. In the spring of 1840, Barrett accepted an invitation to preach for the New-Church Society in New York City and was ordained as a minister of the New Church. In the same year he married Elizabeth Allen of Bath, Me. A ministry of eight years in New York was followed by two years with the New-Church Society in Cincinnati, Ohio. In 1850 health seemed to require a release from indoor confinement and a change of climate. Opportunity came to engage in a roofing business, and the outdoor life proved useful in restoring health. The year 1854 found Barrett again preaching and writing. In 1864 he became minister of the First New Jerusalem Society of Philadelphia and served that Society until 1871. He was the leading spirit in the formation of the American New-Church Tract and Publication Society and later in forming the Swedenborg Publishing Association. For short periods he edited several periodicals, and in Philadelphia the *New Christianity* was published in the interest of the Swedenborg Publishing Association. Barrett's last years were spent in Germantown, Philadelphia, peacefully active in the work he loved and in the sunshine of his home circle. As a preacher and writer, Barrett was clear and forceful. His style was doctrinal and at times polemic. He opposed the practise of rebaptism in receiving members into the New Church and the disposition to limit the New Church to a religious organization. He encouraged ministers convinced of the truth of New-Church doctrine to continue their usefulness, when allowed to do so, in their existing church connections. Among his more important publications are: *Life of Emanuel Swedenborg* (1841); *Lectures on the New Dispensation* (1842); *Beauty for Ashes* (1855); *The Golden Reed* (1855); *Binding and Loosing* (1857); *Catholicity of the New Church* (1863); *Letters to Beecher on the Divine Trinity* (1860); *Letters to Beecher on the Future Life* (1872); *The Golden City* (1874); *The New Church, Its Nature and Whereabouts* (1877); *The Swedenborg Library*, 12 vols. (1876–81); *Swedenborg and Channing* (1878); *The Question (What Are the Doctrines of the New Church?) Answered* (1883); *The Apocalyptic New Jerusalem* (1883); *Footprints of the New Age* (1884); *Heaven Revealed* (1885); *Ends and Uses* (1887); *The True Catholicism* (1886); *The New View of Hell* (1870); *Autobiography* (1890); *A Cloud of Independent Witnesses* (1891); *Maximus Homo* (1892).

[*Benjamin Fiske Barrett, an Autobiography*, revised and supplemented by his daughter, Gertrude A. Barrett (1890); J. R. Irelan, *From Different Points of View: Benjamin Fiske Barrett, Preacher, Writer, Theologian, and Philosopher: A Study* (1896); W. Barrett, *Geneal. of Some of the Descendants of Thomas Barrett, Sen., of Braintree, Mass., 1635* (1888); list of published writings, *Bowdoin Coll. Lib. Bibliog. Contributions* (1891); *Bowdoin Coll. Lib. Bull.*, I–IV (1891–95), p. 138.]

W. L. W.

BARRETT, GEORGE HORTON (June 9, 1794–Sept. 5, 1860), actor, was born in Exeter, England, of a theatrical family. His father, Giles Leonard Barrett, made his American appearance at the Boston Haymarket Theatre, Dec. 28, 1796; his mother delivered the monody on Washington's death, Jan. 10, 1800, at the Federal Street Theatre, of which Giles soon became manager (W. W. Clapp, *A Record of the Boston Stage,* 1853). Master George about this time (variously stated as 1796, 1798, and definitely by Ireland as Oct. 14, 1799) appeared on the stage of the Federal as Cora's Child in *Pizarro,* though, according to Ireland, at an earlier date, Dec. 10, 1798, at the Park Theatre, New York, he was one of the children in Dunlap's version of Kotzebue's *The Stranger,* in the cast with his father, Mr. Cooper, Mr. Hallam, Jr., Mr. Jefferson, and Mrs. Melmoth. He was thus reared in the oldest tradition of the American Theatre, and continued in it to the end. After his first real essay, as Young Norval, May 5, 1806, for his mother's benefit, Barrett won great applause as a "genteel comedian," his "fine appearance and manly beauty" being best seen in such rôles as Rover, Young Marlow, and Bob Handy. He was popularly known as "Gentleman George." Ireland states that at the New York Park he was Belcour in *The West Indian,* Mar. 5, 1822, and that he also played such rôles as Leon in *Rule a Wife,* Beverly in *The Gamester,* Jeremy Didler (wherein he exhibited delightful vivacity), Charles Surface, and others. He was, asserts Ireland, "indisputably the best light comedian in America."

On June 24, 1825, he married Mrs. Anne Jane Henry (1801–53), who had made her appearance as a dancer in Boston during 1813 and her New York appearance as an actress in the rôle of Letitia Hardy in 1824. Ireland claims that "in the lines of gay, graceful and refined comedy, and the gentler grades of tragedy, the lady has been seldom equaled"; while Fanny Kemble declared her "a faultless piece of mortality in outward loveliness." By a former marriage to W. C. Drummond (1817) she had two children; by Barrett she had a daughter, Georgiana, born in February 1829 (Wemyss, *Chronology*), who for a time acted with her father, but retired on her marriage in 1852 to Phillip Warren, treasurer of the Broadway Theatre. In later years Mrs. Barrett drank to such excess that in 1840 Barrett divorced her.

Meanwhile Barrett's career was a checkered one. In 1828 or 1829, with Gilfert, he ventured as manager of the Bowery Theatre, but, meeting with no success, returned to the stage, from 1830 to 1833 appearing in various capacities. Under

Alfred Bunn, at the Drury Lane Theatre, London, he was playing Puff in 1837. At about 1842 (according to William Winter, *The Wallet of Time,* 1913, I, 50) he was keeping a restaurant in St. Louis. In 1847, he was manager of the Broadway Theatre, and thereafter returned to Drury Lane for an engagement. On Dec. 7, 1848 (L. Hutton, *Plays and Players,* 1875) Simpson of the New York Park gave a "star" revival of *The School for Scandal,* Barrett playing Charles Surface to the Sir Peter of Henry Placide and the Sir Oliver of W. E. Burton. He also at this time appeared in a stage version of *Dombey and Son.* In 1852–53, he was stage manager of a theatre in Charleston, S. C., while during the season of 1854–55 he was playing at Burton's Theatre. Soon after this ill health forced him to retire from the stage. At the New York Academy of Music, Nov. 20, 1855, a farewell benefit was tendered him. Part of *The Merchant of Venice* was given, with Wallack, Placide, and Madame Ponisi in the cast. As an apology for accepting the benefit Barrett presented two little girls, offspring of a second marriage with a Miss Mason, then deceased. He delivered a farewell address, and then a scene from *The School for Scandal* closed the program, with Blake, Brougham, Charles Fisher, Lester Wallack, and T. Placide playing. Five years later he died in New York, a teacher of elocution, poor and unknown. Joe Cowell, the pioneer manager of the South, said of him that "as an actor in smart, impudent servants, eccentric parts, bordering on caricature, and light comedy, where the claims to the gentleman do not exceed those required for Corinthian Tom, he is excellent" (*Thirty Years Among the Players,* 1844, p. 74). Laurence Hutton thought even more highly of him: "His manners both on and off the stage were elegant; he had a courtly old-fashioned style about him that was inimitable. . . . He was also a good low comedian, and made some decided hits in low comedy parts, but this was a line of business which he rarely consented to touch, considering it beneath the dignity of so refined and intellectual an artist" (*Plays and Players,* 114).

[*Spirit of the Times,* Sept. 15, 1860; W. D. Adams, *Dict. of the Drama* (1904); J. N. Ireland, *Records of the N. Y. Stage* (1866); F. C. Wemyss, *Chronology of the Stage* (1852).] M.J.M.

BARRETT, KATE WALLER (Jan. 24, 1858–Feb. 23, 1925), philanthropic worker, was born at Clifton, Stafford County, Va., the home of her paternal ancestors for over 200 years; her parents were Withers and Ann Eliza (Stribling) Waller; she was related to Gen. Robert E. Lee. Her general education was received at Arlington Institute, Alexandria, Va. In 1876 she married

the Rev. Robert South Barrett of Atlanta, for some years dean of the cathedral there, who sympathized with her desire for further education. With his assistance she was able to complete a course in nursing at the Florence Nightingale Training School and St. Thomas's Hospital, London. In 1892 she received the M.D. degree from the Medical College of Georgia. Her husband died in 1896 and she was left with three sons and three daughters, the youngest only three years old. During his final illness her husband, with her aid, had completed his book *The Reason for the Hope,* which, she said, helped to form her own philosophy of life, "Bread, Beauty, and Brotherhood." Mrs. Barrett identified herself with the National Florence Crittenton Mission for wayward girls, of which she became vice-president and general superintendent in 1897 and president from 1909 until her death. She was also drawn more and more into other philanthropic and sociological work. She held many offices in connection with the Conference for the Care of Delinquent Children (1909), the National and International Councils of Women, the National Congress of Mothers and Parent-Teacher Associations, the Conference of Charities and Corrections, the Daughters of the American Revolution, the Commission on Training Camp Activities during the World War, and other organizations. In 1914 and 1919 she was a representative of the United States Government in Europe in connection with immigration problems. With all her public activities and offices, Mrs. Barrett remained a very human woman, free from the official and institutional attitude. Her book, *Some Practical Suggestions on the Conduct of a Rescue Home* (before 1904) and her chapter in *Fourteen Years' Work among Street Girls as Conducted by the National Florence Crittenton Mission* (1897) show her belief in friendship, work, and religion as the chief influences in rescue homes. She was opposed to separating unmarried mothers from their babies, holding that motherhood is a means of regeneration. A gentle, unaffected, yet forceful woman, she often dispensed good advice to girls in the Crittenton Homes and to mothers who brought them there. Her strong, clear-cut profile, crowned by white hair, was a familiar sight at her desk in the Mission Headquarters in Washington. She died, after a brief illness from acute indigestion, on Feb. 23, 1925, at her home in Alexandria, Va.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1924–25; *Woman's Who's Who of America,* 1914–15; *World's Work,* XLIX; *New International Year Bk.* for 1925; *Evening Star* (Washington), Feb. 24, 1925; *Alexandria Gazette* (Alexandria, Va.), Feb. 24, 1925.]

S.G.B.

Barrett

BARRETT, LAWRENCE (Apr. 4, 1838–Mar. 20, 1891), actor, won by his energy, persistence, patience, capacity for study and hard work, a place among the leading actors of the nineteenth century. He was born in Paterson, N. J., the son of Thomas Barrett, an Irishman. Practically nothing of his early years is anywhere recorded until a family pilgrimage westward took him to Detroit, where, after a brief experience as an errand boy in a dry-goods store, chance and the necessity of earning his living turned him toward the stage. At the age of fourteen he began an association with the theatre that was continuous until his death. His first engagement was as call boy at the Metropolitan Theatre in Detroit at a salary of $2.50 a week, and his first appearance as an actor was made within a year as Murad in *The French Spy.* Two years as a minor member of a stock company at the Grand Opera House in Pittsburgh followed, and thenceforward his advance was rapid even in a profession of sudden rises to fame. During this period he traveled through the midwestern states in support of various stars, among whom was Julia Dean. He then went to New York, and without the advantage of belonging to a stage family or other influence, he began at once to act leading characters.

His first appearance there was on Jan. 20, 1857, at Burton's Chambers Street Theatre, as Sir Thomas Clifford in *The Hunchback* (a part he had previously acted in the West), in support of an ambitious young woman, Mrs. Dennis McMahon, who was vainly striving to rise out of the amateur into professional ranks. During an engagement of four weeks with her, he also acted the title character in *Fazio,* the Stranger in the play of that name, Armand in *Camille,* Lord Townly in *The Provoked Husband,* Claude Melnotte in *The Lady of Lyons,* and Ingomar, all familiar stage heroes of that time and for many years after. In March of the same year he became leading man with William E. Burton at the Metropolitan, afterward the Winter Garden, making his début there as Matthew Bates in Douglas Jerrold's comedy, *Time Tries All.* While at that theatre he supported Edwin Booth (who had recently returned from California, and was henceforth to be his personal friend and frequent professional associate), Burton himself, James E. Murdoch, Charlotte Cushman, Charles Mathews, James H. Hackett, and Edward L. Davenport. Then he went to Boston, where in the autumn of 1858 he became a member of the Boston Museum Company, opening as Frederick Bramble in *The Poor Gentleman,* with William Warren as Dr. Ollapod, and remaining with that organization two seasons. He was playing at the Howard

Athenæum in Boston, under the management of Edward L. Davenport, when the Civil War broke out, and he responded to an early call for volunteers, becoming captain of company B in the 28th Massachusetts Regiment, and serving from Oct. 8, 1861, to Aug. 8, 1862. Except for brief periods occasioned by illness in his later years, this was the only interruption in his arduous labors as actor and manager during forty years. His style was by that time well formed. He was in no wise magnetic in personality, and he had little in manner, figure, or voice of the romantic stage hero. He was a careful, a painstaking, and a very dependable actor. There was both art and nature in his work, and his art was often unconcealed. By the kind and friendly hand of William Winter he is described as an interpreter of character rather than an impersonator, and especially as an actor who made the elocutionary element in his acting conspicuous and important. He was always a student, and he never left anything to chance.

Immediately after the Civil War ended, his work began to assume a national phase. He acted with Booth and other stars at the Winter Garden Theatre in New York in 1862–63 and 1863–64, and his travels from year to year took him to Philadelphia, to management in New Orleans, back to New York now and then, to Cincinnati, and eventually to San Francisco, where in 1869, in partnership with John McCullough, he gained exceptional popularity. He had visited England in the summer of 1866, but did not act there, returning the next year for a brief engagement in Liverpool. In the season of 1870-71 he played opposite parts to Edwin Booth at Booth's Theatre in New York, and taking over the management of that house in April 1871, he produced *The Winter's Tale,* with himself as Leontes, for a run of six weeks. On many occasions during the ensuing seasons, he played Cassius with Booth and others so often that he became firmly established as the leading representative of that Roman hero on the American stage. His Cassius, in fact, is the Shakespearian part by which he became best known in his own day, and by which he is best remembered. In the seventies and eighties he starred in the principal American cities, and his many tours covered practically the entire country. All the standard plays of that era had become a part of his repertory, and he did his best to enlarge the restricted scope of the American theatre by the production of new works. Among them were *Harebell, or the Man o' Airlie,* adapted by W. G. Wills from the German, in 1871; *Dan'l Druce,* by W. S. Gilbert, in 1876; *A Counterfeit Presentment,* by W. D. Howells, in 1877; *Yorick's Love,* adapted by Howells from the Spanish, in 1878; *Pendragon,* by William Young, in 1881; a revival of George H. Boker's *Francesca da Rimini,* in 1882; Browning's *A Blot in the 'Scutcheon,* in 1884; an English version of Victor Hugo's *Hernani,* in 1885; *Ganelon,* by William Young, in 1889; and Oscar Wilde's *Guido Ferranti,* in 1891, within a few weeks of his death. It will be noted that all these are poetic plays, far removed in scene and theme from any association with the time of their acting, but in presenting them he was simply following the rule of the American theatre. The time had not come when the stage was to be a reflection of the spirit and life of the moment. During Henry Irving's first visit to this country, Barrett took over that actor's Lyceum Theatre in London for seven weeks in the spring of 1884, and although his engagement there was productive of no finanical success, he was received cordially in professional and artistic circles, and was the recipient of many social attentions, including a banquet given in his honor.

The final stage of his career began in 1886, when he entered into a partnership with Edwin Booth that continued until his death four and a half years later, acting leading parts, and taking the entire burden of business and stage details upon his own shoulders. During their first season, 1886–87, they toured separately, but under Barrett's direction. Their first season together began in Buffalo, Sept. 12, 1887, Booth appearing as Brutus and Barrett as Cassius, and their repertory including *The Merchant of Venice, King Lear, Hamlet, Macbeth, Othello, Katharine and Petruchio, Don Cæsar de Bazan, Richelieu, The King's Pleasure, David Garrick,* and *The Fool's Revenge.* Booth played Shylock, Lear, Hamlet, Macbeth, Petruchio, Don Cæsar, Richelieu, and Bertuccio; Barrett played Bassanio, Edgar, Laertes, Macduff, De Mauprat, Gringoire and Garrick; they alternated Othello and Iago. When the famous testimonial performance of *Hamlet* was given to Lester Wallack in the Metropolitan Opera House, New York, May 21, 1888, Barrett played the Ghost, with Booth as Hamlet, Modjeska as Ophelia, and Joseph Jefferson as the First Gravedigger. While Booth was touring with Modjeska the following season, Barrett sought relief in Europe from a glandular trouble in the throat that had been slowly coming upon him. They acted together during a portion of the winter of 1890–91, and in New York, on March 18, during a performance of "Richelieu," at the Broadway Theatre, he found himself unable to finish acting De Mauprat. Two days later, his chronic disease had so sapped his vitality that he

was unable to rally from an attack of pneumonia. He died in his apartment at the Windsor Hotel, and his remains were buried in the cemetery in the little Massachusetts shore town of Cohasset, where he had made his summer home for many years. His determination, his mental and physical vigor, his ability to surmount all obstacles gave him by right a high position in his profession. To see him on the stage was to witness thoroughly efficient visualizations of many of the greatest of dramatic characters. In stature he was above the middle height, his features were of classic mold, his eyes were dark, deeply sunken and alert with mental significance, his bearing was dignified and graceful, his voice was sonorous in its wide range of expression, and both on and off the stage he gave the impression of a man of dominant personality and exceptional intellectual powers.

Among his Shakespearian rôles, in addition to those already noted, were Cardinal Wolsey, Richard III, Romeo, King Lear, Benedick, Hamlet, Shylock, and Macbeth. He also, among many other characters, acted Richelieu, Raphael in *The Marble Heart,* Elliot Grey in *Rosedale,* Lanciotto, Evelyn, the Duke Aranza and Rienzi. His published writings include the biography of Edwin Forrest in the *American Actor Series,* and the sketch of Edwin Booth in the fifth volume of *Actors and Actresses of Great Britain and the United States.* He was married in Boston in 1859 to Mary Mayer, and she with three daughters survived him—Edith, who married Marshall Lewis Perry Williams; Mary Agnes, who became the wife of Baron Hermann von Roder; and Gertrude, who married Joseph Anderson, brother of Mary Anderson. Of his grandchildren, two have followed his profession: Edith, daughter of his daughter Edith; and Lawrence, son of his daughter Gertrude.

[The authorities are Wm. Winter, *Life and Art of Edwin Booth* (1893); Winter's sketch of Barrett and specific criticisms of his acting in *Shadows of the Stage* (3 vols., 1892–95); Elwyn A. Barron, *Lawrence Barrett; a Professional Sketch* (1889); an article by B. E. Woolf in *Famous Am. Actors of Today,* ed. by F. E. McKay and C. E. L. Wingate (1896); an article by W. M. Laffan in the fifth volume of *Actors and Actresses of Gt. Britain and the U. S.,* ed. by Brander Matthews and Laurence Hutton (1886); T. Allston Brown, *Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (1903); Edwina Booth Grossman, *Edwin Booth, Recollections by His Daughter* (1894); and information from members of the Barrett family.]

E. F. E.

BARRINGER, DANIEL MOREAU (July 30, 1806–Sept. 1, 1873), lawyer, congressman, diplomat, eldest son of Gen. Paul Barringer and Elizabeth (Brandon) Barringer, was born at "Poplar Grove," near Concord, N. C. Educated at the University of North Carolina, he graduated in 1826 and remained at the University another year improving his knowledge of Spanish. He then studied law in Hillsboro, N. C., under Chief Justice Thomas Ruffin, and, admitted to the bar in 1829, was immediately successful in practise. Politically ambitious, he also began his public career in 1829 when he was elected to represent Cabarrus County in the House of Commons. He served seven terms by annual election, but was compelled by illness to resign in 1835, in which year he also served as a delegate in the constitutional convention. After some years of ill health, he was again elected to the House and served two terms of two years each. In 1843 he was elected as a Whig to the United States House of Representatives, taking his seat on Dec. 4, 1843, and serving until Mar. 4, 1849, declining reëlection. While in Congress he was active, serving at various times on the Committees on Naval Affairs, Indian Affairs, Revolutionary Pensions, and Revision of the Rules of the House. Though he spoke seldom he was effective on the floor both as a speaker and as a parliamentarian. During Abraham Lincoln's term in the House they shared a desk together and became close friends. In 1849 President Taylor appointed him minister to Spain, and after Taylor's death President Fillmore renewed the appointment. Barringer went to Spain with a keen hope of being instrumental in securing the cession of Cuba to the United States, a thing which he had long favored, but the conditions of his ministry made it impossible, President Fillmore being convinced that the annexation of Cuba would be a fatal mistake. On account of American filibustering expeditions to Cuba, the period was one of rather strained relations between Spain and the United States, and Barringer's post was one of much difficulty. But he established excellent relations with the Spanish court and foreign office, his knowledge of the language stood him in good stead and, poised and tactful, he handled his duties with entire satisfaction to the President and the State Department. When his successor was appointed in 1853, Barringer, after traveling for a time in Europe, returned to North Carolina. In 1854 he was again in the House of Commons for one term. He then temporarily retired from public life, moving to Raleigh and spending most of his time in reading and in social intercourse with his numerous friends. Abundant means made him independent of his profession and he found delight in taking care of his home place. He was strongly opposed to secession. A Union man, he did not approve of it in theory, and, familiar with the economic power of the North, he was

convinced that a successful outcome was, at best, highly unlikely. A close friend of Robert E. Lee, he wrote him during the crisis, urging him to use his influence to keep Virginia in the Union, and he himself, in North Carolina, exerted all the influence he possessed in the direction of delay. He was sent by the legislature as a delegate from the state to the Peace Conference in Washington in February 1861. He became convinced at Washington, however, that no compromise would be accepted by the North, and with the call for troops and the secession of North Carolina he yielded, and, as the close, though unofficial, adviser of Gov. Ellis and Gov. Clark, he played a considerable part in public affairs with complete devotion to the Confederate cause. At the close of the war he favored President Johnson's policy and was a delegate to the National Union Convention of 1866. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention in 1872, where he advocated the nomination of Horace Greeley, and in the state and national campaigns which followed he was chairman of the state Conservative executive committee. His health failed soon afterward, and he died a year later at White Sulphur Springs, W. Va. He was married to Elizabeth Wethered, daughter of Lewin Wethered of Baltimore, Md.

[The chief sources are the N. C. newspapers of his day, the *Cong. Globe*, 1843–49, and the journals of the N. C. legislature. A brief sketch appears in J. Livingston, *Portraits and Memoirs of Eminent Americans* (1853), p. 51, and a more extended one by Daniel M. Barringer, Jr., is to be found in the *Biog. Hist. of N. C.* (1905), I, 100–110.] J. G. deR. H.

BARRINGER, RUFUS (Dec. 2, 1821–Feb. 3, 1895), Confederate soldier, was the grandson of one Paulus Behringer, who in 1743 came from Würtemberg to Philadelphia, removing after a few years to "Poplar Grove," Cabarrus County, N. C. Paulus Barringer's son, Paul Barringer—the name was promptly Anglicized—was active in politics, and served as a brigadier-general of militia during the War of 1812. Rufus Barringer, son of Paul and his wife Elizabeth Brandon, was born at "Poplar Grove." After graduating from the University of North Carolina in 1842, he studied law, and took up the practise of his profession at Concord, N. C. He was a member of the Assembly in 1848 and 1850, and a presidential elector in 1860. A Whig in politics and a Union man in principle, he opposed secession but accepted the decision of his state and immediately volunteered for military service. He was appointed a captain in the 1st North Carolina Cavalry, and followed its fortunes in the Army of Northern Virginia—the Peninsular campaign, second Bull Run, Antietam, Fredericksburg, and Chancellorsville. He was still a captain at the action at Brandy Station in June 1863, where, as Wade Hampton reported, he "bore himself with marked coolness and good conduct," and was severely wounded in the face; but promotion then came to him rapidly. He was a major in August 1863, and lieutenant-colonel soon after, and in June 1864, was appointed brigadier-general. He was assigned to the command of a brigade in Gen. W. H. F. Lee's cavalry division, and led it until its destruction on Apr. 3, 1865, while covering Lee's withdrawal from Richmond. Barringer himself was captured by scouts serving with the 15th New York Cavalry, which was commanded by Col. John J. Coppinger, afterward a brigadier-general in the regular army, and, during the war with Spain, a major-general of volunteers. Barringer was sent to Fort Delaware for confinement, and released in July, upon taking the oath of allegiance. So ended his military service, during which, it is said, he had fought in seventy-six actions, been three times wounded, and had two horses shot under him. As a soldier, he was "prudent, methodical and cautious," —so wrote an officer who served under him; his courage was shown on many occasions. Returning to North Carolina, he resumed the practise of law at Charlotte. Recognizing the results of the war as fully and ungrudgingly as he had accepted the secession of his state, he favored loyal coöperation with the policies of the national Government, negro suffrage included. Joining the Republican party, whose principles an old Whig could accept more readily than a Democrat, he took an active part in political life. He was a member of the constitutional convention in 1875, and his party's candidate for lieutenant-governor in 1880. He retired from law practise in 1884, and spent the rest of his life on his estate, writing occasional papers on historical subjects, chiefly relating to the Civil War, and taking a keen interest in educational matters. He was married three times: first, in 1854 to Eugenia Morrison, who died in 1858; second to Rosalie Chunn of Asheville, N. C.; third, to Margaret Long of Orange County, N. C.

[*Confed. Mil. Hist.*, IV, 294–98; *Hists. of the Several Regiments and Battalions from N. C.* (1901); *Official Records*, vol. LXVI (pt. 1).] T. M. S.

BARRON, JAMES (1769–Apr. 21, 1851), naval officer, was the younger son of James Barron, a merchant captain who commanded a part of the naval forces of Virginia during the Revolution, and his wife, Jane Cowper. As an

apprentice on his father's ship, the younger James saw service during the latter part of that war, proving himself a lad of courage and dash. Following the example of his elder brother, Samuel, he entered the United States Navy as lieutenant, his commission being dated Mar. 9, 1798, and so distinguished himself as an officer of the frigate *United States* under Commodore John Barry, that he was promoted to be captain in 1799. He commanded the frigate *Essex* in the squadron under the broad pennant of his brother, which was sent to the Mediterranean to cooperate with Commodore Preble's fleet; and received the command of the larger frigate *President* when his brother succeeded Preble as commander-in-chief of the forces in European waters. He was actively engaged in operations in the Mediterranean until the year 1805, and was considered an officer of uncommon ability. In 1807, the European tour of duty of the frigate *Constitution* drawing to a close, the *Chesapeake,* 38 guns, then laid up, was chosen to relieve her and was placed under the command of Barron as commodore. The *Chesapeake,* hastily and carelessly equipped, and manned by a new and untrained crew, with Charles Gordon as captain, sailed for her new station on June 22, 1807. A few miles off the coast she was hailed by the British frigate *Leopard,* 50 guns, which sent an officer aboard the *Chesapeake* to demand the surrender of three alleged deserters from the British Navy. This demand being refused by Commodore Barron, the *Leopard* opened a severe fire on the *Chesapeake,* killing three and wounding eighteen men, Barron himself among the latter, besides doing great damage to hull and rigging. Desperate efforts were made by the crew of the American vessel to clear the ship for action, but in a short time Barron, believing that resistance would only subject his crew to massacre and his ship to destruction, hauled down his colors, firing one shot "in honor of the flag." The alleged deserters were then taken off the *Chesapeake,* and the captain of the *Leopard,* having refused to regard the *Chesapeake* as a lawful prize, in spite of her surrender, proceeded on his way, while the *Chesapeake* returned to Hampton Roads to report the occurrence and to repair damages.

This act of unlawful violence was eventually disavowed by the British government. Barron, however, was brought before a court martial in January 1808, largely on the initiative of an address drawn up by Lieut. William Allen [*q.v.*] and signed by six officers of the *Chesapeake,* which requested the arrest of Barron for the disgraceful and premature surrender of his vessel. The court, presided over by Capt. John Rodgers and counting among its members such distinguished officers as Bainbridge and Decatur, while acquitting Barron of cowardice and most of the minor charges, nevertheless, "for neglecting, on the probability of an engagement, to clear his ship for action," sentenced him to suspension from the service without pay for five years. Most of this time he spent abroad as a high officer in the French navy, but on the expiration of his sentence he returned to his native country and reëntered the service. His efforts to obtain active service were, however, systematically blocked by the protests of his brother officers, and he continued on shore duty until his death. In 1820, chafing under what he considered to be the unjust attitude of his colleagues, he sent a challenge to Commodore Stephen Decatur [*q.v.*], whom he charged with being the head of a cabal formed for the purpose of persecuting him. The encounter took place at Bladensburg on Mar. 22, 1820, with Commodores Elliott and Bainbridge as the respective seconds of Barron and Decatur, and resulted in the death of Decatur and the severe wounding of Barron in the thigh. On account of the universal popularity of Decatur, this affair caused all sympathy to be withdrawn from Barron, who was forced to remain on "waiting orders" for the rest of his unhappy life. He died at Norfolk in 1851, the senior officer of the navy at the time.

[Records in the Office of Naval Records and Library, Washington; J. H. Brown, *Am. Naval Heroes* (1899); *The Court-Martial of Commodore James Barron,* pub. by the Navy Dept. (1882); J. F. Cooper, *Hist. of the Navy* (1839).]

E. B.

BARRON, SAMUEL (Nov. 28, 1809–Feb. 26, 1888), Confederate naval officer, was born at Hampton, Va., of distinguished naval ancestry, the son of the commodore of the same name and of Jane Sawyer of Norfolk. Recognition of the service of his father, who died in 1810, doubtless accounts for his admission into the navy at the unparalleled age of a little over two years, his appointment as midshipman dating from Jan. 1, 1812. His first cruise was in his eleventh year, in the Mediterranean, and he was in the frigate *Brandywine* which carried Lafayette to France in 1825. For four years, 1849–53, he commanded the *John Adams* on the African coast; and, with the rank of captain (promoted Sept. 14, 1855), the steam frigate *Wabash,* flagship of Commodore Lavalette, in the Mediterranean, 1858–59. During this cruise his ship remained some time at Constantinople, despite British protests that she was larger than was permitted through the Straits (see narrative of the cruise in the *Auto-*

biography of Admiral Dewey, then a midshipman in the *Wabash*). Just before the Civil War, Barron was assigned to the Mare Island navy-yard, but before going west he was sent to Pensacola to prevent hostilities between naval vessels and shore fortifications occupied by Florida troops. His resignation from the Navy, Apr. 22, 1861, was not accepted, and he is recorded as dismissed. As a captain in the Confederate States Navy he took a leading part in the distribution of ordnance and the organization of naval defense. From April to July 20, 1861, he was chief of the Bureau of Orders and Detail (see his report, June 10, *Official Records of the Union and Confederate Navies,* V, 803), and was then put in charge of the naval defenses of Virginia and North Carolina. He brought up reinforcements during the attack on Hatteras Inlet, Aug. 28–29, 1861, took command of Fort Hatteras, and after its surrender was a prisoner for eleven months until his exchange. On Nov. 3, 1862, he was appointed "to command the naval forces in all the waters of Virginia" (*Ibid.,* VIII, 844). In the summer of 1863 he was sent to England with subordinate officers to bring to America two ironclad rams then under construction at Birkenhead. Upon their seizure in November by the British Government, he went to Paris with his staff, and remained there, as "Flag Officer Commanding Confederate States Naval Forces in Europe," until his resignation from this duty, Feb. 28, 1865. While abroad he was active in fitting out and directing the operations of Confederate commerce destroyers, especially the *Stonewall* and *Georgia.* Of distinguished bearing, courtly, and punctilious, often referred to in Washington as "the navy diplomat," Barron carried the customs and ideals of the old navy into his personal life. After the war his home was at "Malvern," near Loretto, Essex County, Va. He was married, Oct. 31, 1832, to Imogen Wright of Norfolk, and was the father of three sons and three daughters.

[In addition to the references cited above, see J. D. Bulloch, *Secret Service of the Confed. States in Europe* (1884); T. H. S. Hamersly, *Gen. Reg. of the U. S. Navy* (1882); and J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of the Confed. States Navy* (1887). Many of Barron's letters are in the *Official Records;* see especially vols. I–III, on operations of the cruisers. Other material in a manuscript memoir by his son-in-law, Capt. E. R. Baird, Occupacia, Va. Obituary in the *Army and Navy Jour.,* Mar. 3, 1888.]

A. W.

BARROW, WASHINGTON (Oct. 5, 1817–Oct. 19, 1866), editor, congressman, was born in Davidson County, Tenn., the son of a North Carolina emigrant, one of the early settlers of the Middle Tennessee region. After a few years of so-called "classical education" in Davidson Academy, he "read law" as was then the custom and was admitted to the bar. Soon forsaking the practise of law, he turned to politics, in which he was at first a Jacksonian Democrat but later joined the increasing number of Tennesseans who were dissatisfied with the long and rigid domination of Andrew Jackson's followers in Tennessee politics and were then engaged in organizing the Whig party in the state. In 1835 the Whigs gained control of the state and in 1840 a Whig president was elected. Barrow was then rewarded for his political activities by an appointment as American chargé d'affaires at Lisbon, where he served from 1841 to 1844. When he returned to his native state he became editor of the *Republican Banner* of Nashville, the chief newspaper of the opposition party, and in 1847 he was elected and served one term as a Whig member of Congress from the Hermitage, Andrew Jackson's own district. Barrow next appeared in public life as a state senator, and with Gustavus A. Henry and A. O. W. Totten was appointed by Gov. Isham G. Harris to negotiate a "Military League" with the Confederacy. The commissioners agreed with Henry W. Hilliard of Alabama, Confederate agent, upon an arrangement which was ratified on the same day (May 7, 1861) by the legislature (*Acts of Tennessee,* 2nd Extra Session, 1861, p. 21) and Tennessee thus became a virtual member of the Confederacy, a month before the ordinance of secession was adopted by popular vote. Barrow took no further active part in the Civil War but remaining in Nashville as a neutral when it was occupied by the Federal troops, he was placed under arrest by Andrew Johnson, then military governor by President Lincoln's appointment. After a brief detention in the state penitentiary he was released by direction of President Lincoln and later went to St. Louis, where he died soon after the close of the Civil War. A man of great ability, Barrow was apparently destined to an important political career, which was frustrated by the disruption of the Whig party in the fifties and by his own failure to take an active part on one side or the other in the Civil War.

[W. W. Clayton, *Hist. of Davidson County* (1880); Jas. Phelan, *Hist. of Tenn.* (1888), p. 375; *Hist. of Nashville, Tenn.* (1890), ed. by John Wooldridge, pp. 344–45; W. T. Hale and Dixon Merritt, *Hist. of Tenn. and Tennesseans* (1913), II, 512; John T. Moore and Austin P. Foster, *Tenn. the Volunteer State* (1923), I, 471.]

W. L. F—g.

BARROWS, JOHN HENRY (July 11, 1847–June 3, 1902), Congregational clergyman, college president, came of New England ancestry

which moved West with the national frontier. His father, John Manning Barrows, was a well-educated preacher and teacher in the new states of Ohio and Michigan. His mother, Bertha Anthony Butler, was a woman of intellectual ability who was one of the early students at Oberlin College, where she became proficient in Greek, Hebrew, and French. Both parents were deeply religious and suffered for their anti-slavery sentiments. John Henry Barrows was born in a log cabin five miles from Medina, Mich. His family traditions as well as his natural abilities made him a good student and at sixteen he entered Olivet College, a newly founded, incomplete, but stimulating institution. After graduating from college he entered Yale Divinity School, where he remained for a year, and in 1868 he entered Union Theological Seminary. The next year he was forced by ill health to give up study, and for something like three years he was a pastor in Kansas. He there gave evidence of his subsequent abilities as a preacher and was called to a temporary pastorate at Springfield, Ill. In 1873 he traveled for a considerable time in Europe and on his return entered Andover Seminary, but left before graduating. On May 6, 1875, he married Sarah Eleanor Mole and became pastor of a Congregational church at Lawrence, Mass. His success in that field led to his becoming pastor of the important First Presbyterian Church of Chicago, a position which he held from 1881 to 1896. During this long pastorate he showed himself an effective preacher, an enemy of religious intolerance, and a pioneer in various undertakings looking toward civic and religious advance.

When Chicago organized the World's Columbian Exposition, he became chairman of its Committee on Religious Congresses. It was under the auspices of this committee that the Parliament of Religions was held. Its purpose was to bring together in conference representatives of all the historic religions for the expression of their similarities and differences, as well as for possible influence upon social, economic, and international life. Much of the immediate success of this remarkable gathering, attended by 150,000 persons, was due to Barrows. Seen in retrospect the World's Parliament of Religions appears less resultful than was foretold. But as an adventure in religious tolerance and an incentive to world brotherhood it was of no small significance. The missionary interests of the time had hardly begun to give justice to non-Christian religions and especially among the more orthodox religious leaders the proposal to bring upon one platform representatives of the great religions of the world aroused anxiety, even suspicion. But the Parliament attracted widespread attention, and Barrows became an outstanding representative of the new interest in the ethnic religions. Whatever else the Parliament may have accomplished, it developed respect for non-Christian religions on the part of intelligent religious persons.

Partly as a result of this new interest, Barrows induced Mrs. Caroline E. Haskell not only to present to the University of Chicago a sum to be used in erecting a building for the study of Oriental history and religion, but also to endow in the University of Chicago the Haskell Lectures of Comparative Religion and the Barrows Lectureship on the relations of Christianity and other religions. The first of these two foundations provided for lectures in the institution itself. The second provided for lectures to be given in India. Barrows was the first lecturer on both of these foundations, giving seven Haskell series, 1895–1901. In 1896 he resigned his pastorate in Chicago and lectured, not only in India but in Japan. His reception was cordial. He went not as a missionary but as a sympathetic expounder of Christianity. His lectures as published do not give the impression of technical scholarship, but are colored by an intelligent interest in all religious faiths. Returning after fifteen months in the Orient, he became president of Oberlin College on Nov. 29, 1898. This institution had long stood for evangelical Christianity and had been a strong influence in the religious life of the Middle West. Barrows brought to his new position the same administrative imagination he had shown in other relations, and immediately undertook the task of giving Oberlin a much wider influence and more complete educational resources. During his brief administration the college added $600,000 to its endowment, erected several new buildings, and gained new prominence in the educational world. His work was brought to an untimely close by his death from pneumonia, after a brief illness, on June 3, 1902. He was the author of *The World's Parliament of Religions* (1893); *Henry Ward Beecher, the Shakespeare of the Pulpit* (1893); *Christianity, the World Religion* (1897); *A World Pilgrimage* (1897); *Spiritual Forces in American History* (1889); *The Christian Conquest of Asia* (1899).

[*John Henry Barrows, A Memoir* (1904) by his daughter, Mary Eleanor Barrows; *Cleveland Plain Dealer*, June 4, 1902; *Congreg. Yr. Bk.*, 1903, pp. 14–15; *Oberlin Coll. Annual Reports*, 1898–1902.]

S. Ma—s.

BARROWS, SAMUEL JUNE (May 26, 1845–Apr. 21, 1909), Unitarian clergyman, editor, reformer, was born in New York, the third

son of Richard and Jane (Weekes) Barrows. In early childhood the death of his father left the family in poverty, and Barrows went to work before he was nine years old as errand boy in the printing-press establishment of his cousin, Richard Hoe. He taught himself shorthand and telegraphy, and operated the first private telegraph line in New York. A professional stenographer at eighteen, he became a reporter on the *New York Tribune* three years later. On June 28, 1867, he married Isabel Hayes Chapin. They had one daughter, Mabel Hay, and an adopted son, William Burnet. During 1868 Barrows acted as private secretary to William H. Seward, then secretary of state. In 1871 he entered the Harvard Divinity School, interspersing three years of theological study with summers on the western plains as newspaper correspondent with Stanley and Custer. After a year's further study in Leipzig, he was in 1876 installed as pastor of the First Church in Dorchester, Mass., which he served for four years. From 1880 to 1896 he was editor of the *Christian Register,* the Unitarian national weekly. During these years he traveled widely, both in this country and abroad, and his many-sided interests made him a frequent attendant upon the meetings and a constant contributor to the proceedings of the National Conference of Charities and Correction, the National and International Prison Congresses, the Society for International Law, the Society of Biblical Research, the Lake Mohonk Conferences on the Indian and on International Arbitration, and numerous other organizations. He was one of the earliest friends of Tuskegee Institute, and he had an unfailing interest in the education of the negro and the Indian, in woman suffrage, total abstinence, prison reform, international understanding—in short, every reform that promised better conditions of living anywhere. An indefatigable student of the Greek language and literature, he had the good fortune to be working alongside Dörpfeld at the very time when the actual Homeric Troy was unearthed. In 1896 he was elected to Congress from the tenth district in Boston. During his single term, he interested himself particularly in civil service reform and in parole for Federal prisoners and opposed entrance into the Spanish War up to the very hour of the declaration.

In 1900 he became corresponding secretary of the Prison Association of New York, a position which he held until his death. He made the Association a power for prison reform in New York and throughout the nation, himself drafting and securing the passage of New York's first probation law, and being largely instrumental in the

Barrows

enactment of the Federal parole law. The long series of reports which he wrote and compiled as secretary of the Prison Association and as International Prison Commissioner for the United States, an office to which he was first appointed by President Cleveland in 1895, are among the most valuable documents of American penological literature. During nine years of ceaseless activity, he did an immense amount of work for the improvement of legislation at Albany and Washington, at the same time helping personally hundreds of men at liberty on probation, as well as other needy persons, conducting an enormous correspondence with all parts of the world, carrying on literary and reform activities of the most varied sorts in a dozen different fields. He made repeated trips abroad for the study of prisons and prison methods, coming back in 1907, for example, when a new prison to replace Sing Sing was under contemplation, with detailed plans and descriptions of no less than thirty-six of the best prisons in fourteen different countries. As International Prison Commissioner for the United States, he had much to do with the development of the International Prison Congress, and in 1905 he was elected its president. Always deeply interested in peace, during his term in Congress he was made official American representative on the Interparliamentary Union for International Arbitration, and up to his death he labored zealously in that cause. An accomplished linguist, an enthusiastic worker in copper and brass, a musician of no mean attainments, a public speaker in constant demand, a prolific writer, he was at the same time a man of genial personality, to whom friends and strangers alike turned for personal aid and counsel.

The literary results of his religious and theological studies are to be found chiefly in the files of the *Christian Register* and in magazine articles, and the fruits of his prison studies in his reports and articles (especially "The Criminal Insane in the United States and in Foreign Countries," *Senate Document No. 273,* 55 Cong., 2 Sess.; "The Reformatory System in the United States," *House Document No. 459,* 56 Cong., 1 Sess.; "Prison Systems of the United States," *House Document No. 566,* 56 Cong., 1 Sess.; "Children's Courts in the United States. Their Origin, Development, and Results," *House Document No. 701,* 58 Cong., 2 Sess.). He was also the author of numerous magazine articles on general subjects. In addition, he wrote *The Doom of the Majority* and *A Baptist Meeting House* (1890), two short religious and theological books; *The Shaybacks in Camp* (1887), a description of the life in the Barrows camp on

Lake Memphremagog, written jointly with Mrs. Barrows; and *The Isles and Shrines of Greece* (1898), a product of his long-continued Greek studies.

[The chief source is *A Sunny Life* (1913), a biog. written by his wife, Isabel C. Barrows, which contains an extensive bibliography. See also Guillaume Louis, *Dr. Samuel J. Barrows, Ancien Président de la Commission Pénitentiare Internationale* (Berne, 1909); *Unit. Yr. Bk.*, 1909; *Biog. Cong. Dir.* (1903); *Christian Reg.*, Apr. 21, 29, May 6, 13, 20, 27, 1909; *Survey*, May 29, 1909; *N. Y. Evening Post*, Apr. 22, 1909.] H.R.M.

BARRY, JOHN (1745–Sept. 13, 1803), naval officer, was born at Tacumshane, County Wexford, Ireland, the son of Catherine Barry and John Barry, a clerk in a malt-house. He went to sea in early youth and about the year 1760 settled at Philadelphia, where he became a well-to-do shipmaster and owner. Enthusiastically espousing the cause of the Colonies at the outbreak of the Revolution, he offered his services to the Continental Congress, and was placed in command, independently of Commodore Hopkins's squadron, of the brig *Lexington*, in which, on Apr. 17, 1776, he took the British tender *Edward*, which was the first capture in actual battle of a British war-ship by a regularly commissioned American cruiser. By a resolution passed by the Congress on Oct. 10, 1776, Barry was placed seventh on the list of captains, and was soon after given command of the *Effingham*, 32 guns; but the occupation of Philadelphia by the British in 1777 and the presence of an overwhelming enemy force in the Delaware prevented this vessel from going to sea. This, however, did not condemn the enterprising commander to idleness, and during this year he performed a handsome exploit in the lower Delaware. With four small boats he cut out an armed British schooner without the loss of a man, at the same time capturing a number of transports and a large quantity of supplies destined for the British army, receiving the personal congratulations of Washington on his "gallantry and address" (Jared Sparks, *The Writings of George Washington*, 1834, V, 271). He then volunteered for service with the American army and took part in the Trenton campaign with distinction. In 1778 his vessel, the *Effingham*, against Barry's will, was burnt to prevent her falling into the enemy's hands. He then obtained command of the *Raleigh*, 32 guns, and in her fought a gallant and obstinate battle against superior forces, finally being obliged to beach his ship, but saving most of his crew from capture. In 1781, in command of the *Alliance*, 32 guns, having taken many valuable prizes, he attacked and captured after an obstinate fight the British vessels *Atalanta* and *Trepassy*, being severely wounded in the action.

Later in the same year he carried to France the Marquis de Lafayette and the Count de Noailles, and in 1782, while continuing his series of captures of enemy ships, he fought, in the *Alliance*, his last important battle, which he was obliged to break off on the appearance of powerful enemy reinforcements.

In 1794, when the depredations of the Algerine pirates had become insupportable, and Congress ordered the construction of six frigates, Barry was named senior captain and placed in command of the *United States*, 44 guns, being, as Cooper says (*History of the Navy*, 1839, I, 267), "of all the naval captains that remained . . . the one who possessed the greatest reputation for experience, conduct, and skill." During the hostilities with France, after a somewhat unsatisfactory cruise to the West Indies (1798), Barry was placed in command of all the naval forces in those waters, remaining there until the beginning of May 1799. In December of that year he escorted to France the American envoys appointed to treat with the French Republic, and upon his return took command of the Guadaloupe station in the West Indies, which position he retained until 1801. He died two years later at the head of the navy. Cooper, an excellent judge, when mentioning "the naval names that have descended to us, from this war [the Revolution], with the greatest reputation" (*Ibid.*, p. 252), places Barry second only to John Paul Jones, and says, "Commodore Barry, as an officer and a man, ranked very high" (*Ibid.*, p. 374).

He was twice married. The identity of his first wife is uncertain; she was either Mary Burns or Mary Cleary; his second wife was Sarah Austin, whom he married July 7, 1777. Both marriages were childless.

[Records of the Lib. of the Navy Dept.; the Barnes papers in the Lib. of the N. Y. Hist. Soc.; Martin I. J. Griffin, *Commodore John Barry* (1897); John Frost, *Am. Naval Biog.* (1844).] E.B.

BARRY, JOHN STEWART (Jan. 29, 1802–Jan. 14, 1870), governor of Michigan, was born at Amherst, N. H., the son of John and Ellen (Stewart) Barry. His parents early removed to Rockingham, Vt., where he grew to manhood. For two years, beginning in 1824, he conducted an academy at Georgia, Vt., meanwhile studying law, which he afterward practised for several years. In early manhood he married Mary Kidder, of Grafton, Vt., who died in 1869; the union proved childless. He migrated to White Pigeon, Mich., in 1831, and in 1834 removed to Constantine, Mich., which remained his home until his death. He prospered in business and during his later years was regarded as a wealthy man.

Barry was of stern and austere character, wholly lacking in the arts of the politician, and master of but few of the graces of social intercourse. Yet it was his good fortune to come to the front when even his defects were accounted virtues, and he played a notable rôle in the political history of Michigan. His first important public service was as a member of the state constitutional convention of 1835. During the next few years the most extravagant boom Michigan has ever witnessed ensued. It was accompanied by an era of wild-cat banking and a craze for state-constructed internal improvements which could only end in disaster both moral and financial. The bubble burst during the Whig régime of 1840–41, and Barry, who was a Democrat of conservative principles, was elected governor in the latter years, on the wave of a reaction against the policies which had brought the commonwealth to the verge of bankruptcy. It was his task to salvage what might be saved from the general financial wreck, and to restore the state to the pathway of solvency and prosperity. This proved difficult and thankless enough, but the personal qualities of the Governor, reinforced by his substantial business ability, admirably fitted him for its performance. He was reelected in 1843 and during his four years in office (1842–46), the task was substantially accomplished. The state constitution forbade a second successive reëlection to the governorship, but the verdict of the electorate upon Barry's administration was seen in his election to the office for a third term in 1849, a precedent not repeated in Michigan for almost sixty years. Barry was a firm believer in the Jeffersonian principles of constitutional interpretation, and when the sectional dispute progressed to the stage of civil war, his adherence to views which his state had discarded relegated him to political oblivion.

[*Early Hist. of Mich. with Biographies of State Officers, Members of Cong., Judges and Legislators* (Lansing, 1888), pp. 73–74; files of *Detroit Free Press* for 1841, 1843, 1849; obit. notices preserved in the Burton Hist. Coll. of the Detroit Pub. Lib.; Thos. M. Cooley, *Mich.: A Hist. of Governments* (1885), *passim;* Henry M. Utley (and associates), *Mich. as a Province, Territory, and State* (1906), vols. II, III, IV, *passim.*]

M.M.Q.

BARRY, PATRICK (May 24, 1816–June 23, 1890), horticulturist, was the son of a farmer and was born near Belfast, Ireland. He received a liberal education and when eighteen years old became a teacher in the national schools. In 1836 he came to the United States and worked for four years in the Princes' nurseries at Flushing, L. I., where he obtained a thorough knowledge of a large-scale nursery business. He then moved to Rochester, N. Y., and was associated with George Ellwanger in the founding of the Mt. Hope nursery, which became the largest nursery establishment in this country. Many varieties of fruits and other plants were imported from France and Germany, and tested particularly with reference to their adaptability for use in Western New York. Under Barry's guidance fruit-growing was introduced and largely developed in that region. From 1845 to 1853 he was horticultural editor of the *Genesee Farmer,* and later was editor of the *Horticulturist* until 1855. He was also a frequent contributor to the *American Agriculturist* and other journals. In 1851 he published *The Fruit Garden,* an illustrated treatise on the physiology of fruit trees, theory and practise of fruit growing, preserving of fruits, control of diseases and insects, the use of implements. This book was written in a clear and systematic style, with special reference to requirements of small plantations on farms or in villages and towns. With revisions it passed through a number of editions. From 1872 it was called *Barry's Fruit Garden.* He was a secretary of the national convention of fruit growers in 1848, out of which grew the American Pomological Society in 1852. As chairman of a committee he helped prepare the society's classified *Catalogue of Fruits* in 1862, which he revised and enlarged in succeeding years, making it the standard authority on this subject. Under his leadership the Fruit Growers Society of Western New York was organized in 1855 and he was chairman of its executive committee until its name was changed in 1870 to Western New York Horticultural Society. He was also president of the New York State Agricultural Society in 1877 and from 1882 to 1889 member of the first board of control of the New York State Agricultural Experiment Station at Geneva. With increasing wealth he engaged in banking and other commercial activities and was also prominent in the civic life of Rochester. In 1847 he married Harriet Huestis of Richfield, Otsego County, N. Y., by whom he had six sons and two daughters. His son, William C. Barry, succeeded his father in the nursery business and other enterprises.

[*Proc. Western N. Y. Horticultural Soc.* (1891), pp. 6–7; *Proc. Am. Pomological Soc.* (1890); L. R. Doty, *Hist. of Genesee County* (1925), III, 48–53; *Am. Agriculturalist,* Aug. 1890, p. 434; *Garden and Forest,* July 2, 1890, p. 328; *Rochester Morning Herald,* June 24, 1890.]

A.C.T.

BARRY, WILLIAM FARQUHAR (Aug. 18, 1818–July 18, 1879), Union soldier, was born in New York City. His father died while his son was still very young. Under his mother's tutelage the boy grew up, attended the New York High School from 1826 to 1831 and thereafter

received from a tutor an unusual knowledge of the classics (Old Files, Adjutant-General's Office). Admitted to the United States Military Academy, he graduated in 1838. His assignment to the 2nd Artillery took him to the Canadian border to enforce our neutrality during the "Patriot War," then in progress in Canada. The headquarters of the regiment were at Buffalo. Here Barry met Kate McNight and married her in 1840 (*Records,* Fort Monroe, Va.). During the Mexican War in 1847, he accompanied his regiment to Tampico, where he became seriously ill. After his recovery he was designated acting assistant adjutant-general of Patterson's division at Vera Cruz and later, on reaching the City of Mexico, aide-de-camp to Gen. Worth, which position he filled until the termination of hostilities (G. W. Cullum, *Biographical Register*). Thereafter, until the beginning of the Civil War, he followed the routine of army duties. Promoted to captain in 1852, he fought the Seminole Indians in Florida; in 1857–58 he was in Kansas attempting, during its troublous *ante bellum* days, to maintain a difficult peace. His outstanding qualifications as an artilleryman were recognized by his detail in 1858–59 on a board to revise the "System of Light Artillery Tactics" (F. F. Rodenbaugh, *The Army of the United States,* 1896).

His services in the Civil War began with the defense of Fort Pickens, Florida, Apr. 19, 1861. On May 14 he was promoted major and, in July, assigned as chief of artillery of the army commanded by his classmate McDowell (*Official Records,* ser. I, vol. V, p. 575). With this army he participated in the battle of Bull Run. Subsequently assigned as chief of artillery of McClellan's Army of the Potomac, he labored tirelessly to increase and improve the artillery, a task which, with the aid of the Ordnance Department, he accomplished. When he took up this work most of the ore for the guns was underground, the lumber for the carriages still growing in the forests, the leather for the harness yet covering the animals, the artillerists a mob of militia. By prodigious exertions the thirty guns on hand in July 1861 had been increased to 520 when McClellan moved in March 1862, the 400 horses to 11,000, the 650 men to 12,500 drilled artillerists, and the whole molded into an artillery organization (*Ibid.,* p. 68). The man who wrought these changes was at this time in the fulness of his powers. Tall, athletic, well-built, with keen eyes, aquiline nose, and rather marked features, he was a noticeable personage. Much of his success may be ascribed to his unusual ability as an organizer, with which he combined a genial, kindly manner and buoyant spirits. By hard work he had accomplished much, yet much remained to be done when the Army of the Potomac took the field, Mar. 14, 1862.

In the Peninsular campaign which followed, Barry, now a brigadier-general of volunteers, took an active part in all the battles and movements of this unfortunate expedition. After the evacuation of the Peninsula he was, at his own request, relieved as chief of artillery, Army of the Potomac, and transferred to Washington as inspector of artillery of the Armies of the United States and chief of artillery of the defenses of Washington. In addition, he served as a member of numerous armament, fortification, and defense boards. In March 1864 he was relieved and appointed chief of artillery, first on the staff of Gen. Grant (*Ibid.,* vol. XXXIII, p. 617) and then, upon the latter's promotion, on the staff of Gen. W. T. Sherman, commanding the Military Division of the Mississippi (*Ibid.,* vol. XXXVIII, pt. 4, p. 23), containing the three armies, of the Cumberland, of the Tennessee, and of Ohio. As Sherman's chief of artillery he engaged in most of the battles of the four-months' advance, which terminated in the capture of Atlanta; in the two-months' operation which had for its object the expulsion of Hood's army from Georgia and northeastern Alabama; in the three-months' campaign from Savannah through the two Carolinas, which terminated in the surrender of Johnston's army at Durham, N. C., on Apr. 26, 1865. He received the brevet rank of major-general of volunteers and colonel in the United States Army, Sept, 1, 1864, for his admirable conduct during the Atlanta campaign, and the brevets of brigadier and major-general in the United States Army, Mar. 13, 1865, for service in the campaign which embraced Sherman's "March to the Sea," and for "gallant and meritorious services in the field throughout the Rebellion" (Old Records Section, Adjutant-General's Office). On Dec. 11, 1865, he was promoted colonel of the 2nd Artillery. Mustered out of the volunteer service in January 1866, Barry was given a special command on the northern frontier during the Fenian troubles of that year. In the fall of 1867 he was selected to organize and conduct the Artillery School at Fort Monroe, Va., where he labored assiduously and successfully for ten years. In 1877, his health then much impaired, he was assigned to the command of Fort McHenry, where he died.

[In addition to the references above, see *Ass. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad. Ann. Reunion,* 1880, and *Baltimore Sun,* July 19, 1879.]

C.A.B.

BARRY, WILLIAM TAYLOR (Feb. 5, 1785–Aug. 30, 1835), lawyer, statesman, was

born in Lunenburg, Va., the son of John and Susannah (Dozier) Barry, and while yet a boy became a part of the great migration of hungry land-seekers and lawyers looking for fortune and fame in Kentucky. Like the Clays and Breckenridges, his family settled in Lexington, the most cultured city west of the mountains. He received his higher education at William and Mary College and his legal training at Transylvania College then entering on a period of remarkable usefulness to the West. Early in the century he began the practise of law in Lexington and in due time became a leader of the Democratic forces in the state. In 1806 he was elected to the Kentucky House of Representatives and again in 1809. As the troubles with England became more exasperating, he took a belligerent stand on the question of war and with his power of oratory stirred up the Kentuckians for the struggle. When the conflict began in 1812, he enlisted, but his only war service of note was in the battle of the Thames, where, as an aide to Gov. Shelby, he won the praise of Gen. Harrison. Barry was more interested in politics than in war, so in 1814 he stood for reëlection to the House and won. His popularity procured for him the next year an election to the United States Senate. The new position seems to have made little appeal to him. He appeared in Washington to take his seat two weeks late (Dec. 18, 1815) and throughout the whole session he did not make a single speech. He attended strictly to his duties of voting, however, and now and then offered a resolution. At the end of the session he resigned and returned to Kentucky.

He entered the state Senate in 1817 and remained there until 1821. By this time the state, having passed through the evanescent and buoyant prosperity following the war, was in the throes of hard times. Forty state banks had been "littered," and had died a speedy death. The state was divided into two bitterly contesting camps, the relief and anti-relief parties. Barry believed in the people and sympathized with them in their troubles. He had no time to study such intricate questions as banks and money while the people were sinking in despair under their heavy debts. He became a leader in the relief party and in 1821 was made their candidate for lieutenant-governor. In the election that followed he defeated W. B. Blackburn, the anti-relief candidate, 33,000 to 22,000. For the next four years he aided Gov. John Adair in putting through relief and replevin laws and in getting more worthless paper money printed. Barry was not a demagogue; he was a true democrat and his interest in the welfare of the people was genuine. One of his most constructive tasks was his effort to supply Kentucky with an effective educational system. As chairman of the committee appointed to investigate this subject he brought before the legislature a comprehensive report of an educational system which bore the approval of Jefferson, John Adams, and Robert Y. Hayne. It was debated but never adopted.

Barry's four years in the state House served to dispel none of Kentucky's distress. Relief measures, it is true, had been passed, but the court of appeals, the state's supreme judicial tribunal, had promptly declared them to be unconstitutional. With this turn to events, the anger of the relief party scarcely knew bounds. Under pressure the legislature voted the court out of existence in 1824, and early the following year it set up a "New Court" with Barry as the chief justice. But the "Old Court" refused to disband, and for two years the state was on the verge of anarchy. In December 1826 the anti-relief party or "Old Court" party, as it was now called, gained control of the state and voted Barry and his associates out of office.

The times were now ripe for the first great national contest in Kentucky. Clay and Jackson were fighting for supremacy. Barry, who had formerly been a close friend of Clay's, deserted him after the Adams alliance and was now seeking to gain Kentucky for Jackson. As part of the plan he ran for governor in 1828 and was defeated by the Clay candidate by only 709 votes out of a total vote of 77,171. In the presidential election he won the state for Jackson by almost 8,000 majority. As a reward for his valuable service Barry was slated for a justiceship in the United States Supreme Court; but because John McLean, the hold-over postmaster general, desired that position, an exchange was made and Barry became postmaster general Mar. 9, 1829. Before two years had passed the Senate was agitating an investigation of the department. A special committee was appointed in December 1830 and in the following March it produced a voluminous report, which was, however, not printed. But Barry was not to be allowed to rest in peace; the agitation, which was continued against him, resulted in 1834–35 in both houses instituting investigations. He was charged with favoritism in making contracts for carrying the mails, with increasing payments to contractors far beyond the published schedules, with sweeping dismissals from office, with illegally borrowing money, and with general looseness in his bookkeeping. Barry successfully refuted the charges which in any way reflected on his own honesty or represented any radical departures from the established customs

of the department. He truthfully claimed that the investigations were largely caused by partisan spite, and that it was not only against himself but also against Jackson. Weary of mind and sick of body, he resigned in April 1835, and his steadfast friend President Jackson appointed him minister to Spain. He died in Liverpool on the way to his new mission. Nineteen years later his body was brought back and buried in the Frankfort Cemetery and in 1865 the Kentucky legislature erected a marker over his grave. Barry was twice married: first, to Lucy Overton, and second, to Catherine Mason.

[A sketch may be found in Lewis and Richard H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.* (1874). Barry's part in the "Old Court" and "New Court" struggle is set forth to a considerable length in W. E. Connelley and E. M. Coulter, *Hist. of Ky.* (1922), II. The following works are also useful: *The Lawyers and Lawmakers of Ky.* (1897), ed. by H. Levin; *Lexington* [Ky.] *Reporter,* Oct. 30, 1813; G. W. Ranck, *Hist. of Lexington, Ky.* (1872); *Encyc. of Va. Biog.* (1915), II, ed. by L. G. Tyler; *Biog. Cong. Dir.* (1903); *Biog. Encyc. of Ky.* (1878).]

E. M. C.

BARRY, WILLIAM TAYLOR SULLIVAN (Dec. 10, 1821–Jan. 29, 1868), Confederate statesman and soldier, was the son of Richard and Mary (Sullivan) Barry, who moved from Virginia and established their home on the Tombigbee River, at the present site of Columbus, Miss., in the latter part of the second decade of the nineteenth century. The son was born in the new home a few months after the Jackson Military Road from Nashville to New Orleans had been completed through Columbus and a post office had been established in the village. After finishing a preparatory course in the home academy, young Barry attended Yale College, where he graduated in 1841. He then returned to Columbus and studied law in the office of Harrison & Harris. After his admission to the bar he formed a partnership with Judge J. S. Bennett. But he soon became "weary of professional monotony," and retired to his farm in Oktibbeha County (1847). Two years later he entered politics, and was twice elected to the lower house of the legislature. Reuben Davis, who knew Barry well, says that he enjoyed the excitement of a political campaign, but "abhorred the labors and responsibilities of office," and "could rarely be induced to work in harness." He was a man of imposing personality and of ability as a stump speaker, though his style was somewhat turgid and sophomoric. The same writer says that as a speaker Barry was in some respects the equal of Jefferson Davis and in others the equal of Sargent S. Prentiss "but in the aggregate inferior to both" (Reuben Davis, *Recollections of Mississippi and Mississippians,* 1889, pp. 97–98, 324–25, 336–37). In 1852 Barry removed to what is now Leflore County, in the Mississippi Delta, and in the following year was elected to the national House of Representatives. In a speech on "Civil and Religious Toleration," which he delivered in Congress, Dec. 18, 1854, he made a strong assault on the policy and principles of the Know-Nothing party. He declined reëlection at the end of his term in Congress, and resumed the practise of law in Columbus.

A few months later he reëntered politics, was elected to the legislature and made speaker of the House. He became a leader in the disunionist wing of the Democratic party in the state, and was among the delegates who withdrew from the Charleston convention in 1860 and nominated Breckenridge and Lane in the Baltimore convention. He was later chosen president of the Mississippi secession convention of 1861. It is said that he never again used the pen with which he signed the ordinance of secession, but carefully preserved it as a family heirloom. He was also chosen as one of the seven Mississippi delegates to the Montgomery convention which organized the Government of the Confederate States, and was then elected a member of the Provisional Congress of the Confederacy. At the inauguration of Jefferson Davis as Provisional President of the Confederacy, Barry made an extempore speech which according to James D. Lynch was "more happily conceived, more eloquently delivered and more highly applauded" than that of any other speaker on that occasion. In 1862 he resigned from the Confederate Congress and organized the 35th Regiment of Mississippi Infantry, of which he became colonel. He served in many engagements in Mississippi from the battle of Corinth to the fall of Vicksburg; also in the Georgia campaign, being wounded at Allatoona. He was finally captured at Mobile, Apr. 9, 1865. After the war he retired to his home, saying to a friend, "My thinking in the past has not been profitable—my hopes for my country have all been blasted, and as far as I can, I will quit thinking and for a while lead a negative existence." His despondency caused a rapid decline of his health, and he died in the house of his sister, Mrs. J. D. Bradford, of Columbus, Miss., Jan. 29, 1868. Shortly before his death he sent the following biographical note to the authorities of Yale College: "Originally a Democrat, then a states rights man, during the war a conscious rebel (so called), and at this time a pardoned reconstructed Johnson man." He then added that he was "Practising law in Columbus, trying to gather from the wreck which

the war had made of all our fortunes whatever may be left, and to make a support for my family by my profession. As to religion, by education a Presbyterian; by taste an Episcopalian; in practise, nothing." He was married, Dec. 20, 1851, to Sally Fearn, daughter of Dr. Thomas Fearn, of Huntsville, Ala.

[The principal sources of information on the life of William S. Barry are the newspapers of Mississippi, 1849–68, and the *Cong. Globe* for the 33rd Congress. Biog. sketches will be found in *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of Miss.* (1891), I, 353–54; James D. Lynch, *Bench and Bar of Miss.* (1881), pp. 295–301; Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907), I, 215–16; *Biog. Cong. Dir.* (1903), p. 379.]

F. L. R.

BARRYMORE, GEORGIANA EMMA DREW (1856–July 2, 1893), actress, was a daughter of John Drew [*q.v.*] and Louisa (Lane) Drew [*q.v.*] and member of a theatrical family of English origin (see genealogical table in M. J. Moses, *Famous Actor Families of America,* 1906, and Parker's *Who's Who in the Theatre,* 1925). From her parents she inherited a wit, a fineness, a polish which gave her great appeal. Like most of the Drews, she grew up and was educated in Philadelphia and there entered into her theatrical career under the direction of her mother, beloved of all actresses. This began with a small rôle in Scribe's *The Ladies' Battle* in 1872, at the Philadelphia Arch Street Theatre where she remained for several years. But her brother, John Drew, having, in 1875, joined Augustin Daly, she followed in 1876, making her début as Mary Standish in *Pique* on Apr. 17, taking the place of Jeffreys Lewis. While with Daly, Miss Drew assumed such rôles as Mrs. Torrens in *The Serious Family,* Helen in H. J. Byron's *Weak Women,* Celia in *As You Like It* (to the Rosalind of Fanny Davenport and the Orlando of Charles Coghlan), Louise in *Frou-Frou,* Grace in *Divorce,* Mrs. Gresham in *Life,* Maria in an elaborate revival of *The School for Scandal* (Dec. 4, 1876), and Agnete in *The Princess Royal.* Maurice Barrymore [*q.v.*] was in the company. The two were married, Dec. 31, 1876, the children by this union being Ethel, Lionel, and John—all three with present distinction on the stage. Mrs. Barrymore's natural vivacity and quickness of intellect, her wit and sense of the comic, marked her both on the stage and in society—"a woman with a voice that is thin and that breaks . . . a woman with a fund of animal spirits and *fin de siècle* repartee." She next joined Palmer's stock company; for a while she supported her husband's venture as a star, and at brief periods was in support of Edwin Booth, Lawrence Barrett, and John McCullough. At various times she was also seen in *Diplomacy, The Wages of Sin, Moths, L'Abbé Constantin,* and *Mr. Wilkinson's Widow.* When her husband went to California in support of Madame Modjeska, she and her children joined him there, and it was while living under the sway of Modjeska's charm and devotion that Mrs. Barrymore, whose own family, as well as that of her husband, were Episcopalians, became Catholic. Serious illness cut short her career in 1892, her last Boston appearances being in Bisson's *Settled Out of Court,* Sept. 26, 1892, and Lestocq's *The Sportsman,* Oct. 17, 1892. In May 1893 she journeyed with her daughter Ethel to Santa Barbara, and it was there that she died. Critics of the time drew attention to the contagious humor of her look and gesture, to what they called her *élan.* She had a way, so it was claimed, of saying anything that came into her head. When she supported W. H. Crane in *The Senator,* she was described as being "as handsome as a picture, exquisitely dressed, brimming over with fun and an actress to the tips of her fingers." As to her appeal, the same review declared that "she captured her audience at once and kept them in roars of laughter." Miss Barrymore calls her mother gay and gallant, and designates the association of husband and wife as "a game of battledore and shuttlecock, his amazing brain against her native wit."

[*Ann. Cyc.,* 1893, p. 539; Ethel Barrymore, "Reminiscences," *Delineator,* Sept. 1923; John Barrymore, *Confessions of an Actor* (1926); J. F. Daly, *Life of Augustin Daly* (1917).]

M. J. M.

BARRYMORE, MAURICE (1847–Mar. 26, 1905), actor, whose real name was Herbert Blythe, "was born underground at Fort Agra (India), during those troublous '40's, when the Crown was fighting for control" (Ethel Barrymore, *Delineator,* September 1923). His father was a surveyor for the East India Company. Young Blythe was sent to England to study at Harrow and Oxford, first with the intention of entering the Indian Civil Service and then of becoming a lawyer. But instead the boy became a devotee of boxing and, in 1872, won the Queensberry cup and the amateur championship. In the same year he was induced to go on the stage, much to the consternation of his family. He chose the professional name of Barrymore, for some time retaining Herbert as his middle name. He began his career in a revival of *London Assurance,* and then received an engagement at the London Prince of Wales Theatre in Bulwer Lytton's *Money.* In 1875, with Charles Vandenhoff, he came to America, having previously toured the provinces with that actor.

His début was made in Boston in *Under the Gaslight.* Augustin Daly engaged him for summer stock during 1875, and then for two regular seasons at the New York Fifth Avenue Theatre. There now began a long career of excellent support of famous actors. Barrymore possessed grace of person and keenness of intellect, and these were noticeable as early as 1877, when he supported Jefferson and Fanny Davenport, and was commended by the critics for his Orlando and Orsino. But his many attempts to attain stardom were never successful. In 1878–79, a road company formed by Barrymore included his brother-in-law, John Drew, and his wife. It closed suddenly on Mar. 19, 1879, due to an unfortunate fracas in Texas. A long list of rôles demanded of Barrymore the exercise of his various abilities when he joined Lester Wallack's stock company in such pieces as *Our Girls, Old Heads and Young Hearts, She Stoops to Conquer,* and *The Shaughraun.* In playing parts like George Hastings, or Captain Absolute in *The Rivals,* Barrymore was in his element. In 1881 he went to England. Here, it is said, he offered to the Court Theatre as an original production of his own, a play named *Honour,* which, after acceptance, was discovered to be a mere translation of *L'Honneur de la Maison* by Léon Battu and Maurice Desvignes (*The Theatre,* London, Nov. 1, 1881, p. 301). Barrymore's work was extensively rewritten by dramatists in the employ of the theatre and was produced with proper acknowledgment to the French authors, on Sept. 24. The play was generally stigmatized by the critics as "dreary" and "repulsive," but was immensely successful, enjoying a run of 100 nights. Then began a long association with Madame Modjeska, and for her Barrymore wrote the Polish drama, *Nadjeska,* produced in Baltimore, Feb. 8, 1884. For four seasons he was the ideal Armand, Romeo, and Orlando for Modjeska. And with her, on Apr. 30, 1883, he appeared in *Romeo and Juliet,* the last performance to be given at the famous Booth Theatre in New York. He returned to England in November 1884, appearing at the London Haymarket in such plays as *Diplomacy, Masks and Faces, Engaged,* and *Jim the Penman.* Once more in 1886 he associated himself with Modjeska, ably supporting her in *Mary Stuart* and *Adrienne Lecouvreur.*

In rapid succession he supported such players as Mrs. Langtry, Mrs. Bernard Beere, Katharine Clemmons, Olga Nethersole, and Mrs. Fiske, with the latter creating in finished manner the rôle of Rawdon Crawley, in *Becky Sharp* (Fifth Avenue Theatre, Sept. 12, 1898). He was engaged by Belasco for *The Heart of Maryland,* both in New York (Oct. 22, 1895) and in London (Apr. 8, 1898). Interspersed between these various engagements were his associations with A. M. Palmer, with his mother-in-law, Mrs. John Drew, in *The Rivals* (1893), with numberless summer stock companies, and even with vaudeville. It was worry incident upon a theatrical warfare waged between "The White Rats" (a vaudeville organization with which he was identified) and the vaudeville managers that led to a mental breakdown in a New York music hall, during what proved to be his last appearance. From 1901 to the day of his death, he was in confinement in a sanitarium.

Barrymore's personality was attractive, pervasive. He was witty, possessed a rich voice and a magnetic presence. His intellect was keen, though his memory was poor. Augustus Thomas, in several of whose early plays Barrymore appeared, thus describes him (*The Print of My Remembrance,* 1922): "In romantic costume or in evening dress on the stage, he had the grace of a panther. On the street or in the club, or coffee-house, he was negligent and loungy and deplorably indifferent to his attire. In the theatre, a queen could be proud of his graceful attention. Outside, a prize-fighter or a safe-blower was of absorbing interest to him unless some savant was about to discuss classical literature or French romance." During his various London residences, Barrymore was the center of that brilliant coterie which, beginning with Oscar Wilde, included such wits as the Trees, the Asquiths, and Mrs. Langtry. He was twice married: in 1876, to Georgiana Drew [*q.v.*], who died in 1893; and, the year after her death, to Mary Floyd.

[*Dram. Mirror,* Apr. 1, 1905; *Theatre Mag.,* May 1905; J. B. Clapp and E. F. Edgett, *Players of the Present* (1899–1901); *Memories and Impressions of Helena Modjeska* (1910); Joseph F. Daly, *Life of Augustin Daly* (1917); *Famous Am. Actors of Today* (1896), ed. by F. E. McKay and C. E. L. Wingate; John Drew, *My Years on the Stage* (1922).]

M. J. M.

Date Due

MAR 1 -

BABSON INSTITUTE,

WELLESLEY HILLS, MASS.

HORN LIBRARY, BABSON COLLEGE
E176.D56 ref CIRC.
American Council of Learned Societies.
Dictionary of American biography.

3 2120 00114 9077